



HISTORY

OF

SACERDOTAL CELIBACY

IN THE

CHRISTIAN CHURCH

BY

HENRY CHARLES LEA, LL.D., S.T.D.

THIRD EDITION, REVISED

Ὁὐ γὰρ θεοῦ ἐστὶ κινεῖν ἐπὶ τὰ παραφύσιν

ATHENAGORÆ pro Christianis Legatio

.....
IN TWO VOLUMES
.....

VOL. I

Reproduced in electronic form

1998

Bank of Wisdom

P.O. Box 926

Louisville, KY 40201

U.S.A.

1907

Reproduced in electronic form
1998

Bank of Wisdom
P.O. Box 926
Louisville, KY 40201
U.S.A.

The purpose of the Bank of Wisdom
is to again make the United States the
Free Marketplace of Ideas that the
American Founding Fathers
originally meant this Nation to be.
Emmett F. Fields

PREFACE

THE following work was written several years since, simply as an historical study, and with little expectation of its publication. Recent movements in several portions of the great Christian Church seem to indicate, however, that a record of ascetic celibacy, as developed in the past, may not be without interest to those who are watching the tendencies of the present.

So far as I am aware, no work of the kind exists in English literature, and those which have appeared in the Continental languages are almost exclusively of a controversial character. It has been my aim to avoid polemics, and I have therefore sought merely to state facts as I have found them, without regard to their bearing on either side of the questions involved. As those questions have long been the subject of ardent disputation, it has seemed proper to substantiate every statement with a reference to its authority.

The scope of the work is designedly confined to the enforced celibacy of the sacerdotal class. The vast history of monachism has therefore only been touched upon incidentally when it served to throw light upon the rise and progress of religious asceticism. The various celibate communities which have arisen in this country, such as the Dunkers and Shakers, are likewise excluded from the plan of the volume. These limitations occasion me less regret since the appearance of M. de Montalembert's "Monks of the West" and Mr. W. Hepworth Dixon's "New America," in which the student will probably find all that he may require on these subjects.

Besides the controversial importance of the questions connected with Christian asceticism, it has seemed to me that a brief history like the present might perhaps possess interest for the general reader, not only on account of the influence which ecclesiastical celibacy has exerted, directly and indirectly, on the progress of civilisation, but also from the occasional glimpse into the interior life of past ages afforded in reviewing the effect upon society of the policy of the Church as respects the relations of the sexes. The more ambitious historian, in detailing the intrigues of the court and the vicissitudes of the field, must of necessity neglect the minuter incidents which illustrate the habits, the morals, and the modes of thought of bygone generations. From such materials a monograph like this is constructed, and it may not be unworthy the attention of those who deem that the life of nations does not consist exclusively of political revolutions and military achievements.

PHILADELPHIA, *May* 1867.

During the forty years which have elapsed since the appearance of the first edition of this work, and the twenty-three since that of the second, much has been added to our knowledge of the past and many changes have occurred in the present. Not anticipating a demand for a third edition, the author had made no special preparation for recording and incorporating this new material, but he has endeavoured to respond to the call by such revision and alteration as his other engagements have permitted. In the later portions of the book these have been extensive, and he hopes that in its present shape the work may commend itself to the kindly consideration of those who feel an interest in the important questions suggested by the subject.

PHILADELPHIA, *March* 1907.

CONTENTS

A.D.		PAGE
	Influence of the Church on modern civilisation	1
I. ASCETICISM		
	Character of early Judaism	4
	Oriental and Hellenic influences	6
	Growth of asceticism	7
	Pauline Christianity	11
	Admission that celibacy is of post-apostolic origin	13
II. THE ANTE-NICENE CHURCH		
	Early ascetic tendencies	17
	Exaggerated in the heresies	20
	Influence of Buddhism	22
	Objection to second marriages	23
c. 150	“Digami” rejected from the ministry	25
	Application of the Levitical rule	27
	Growth of asceticism—self-mutilation	29
	Vows of virginity and their results	31
c. 280	Influence of Manichæism	33
	Condemnation of marriage	36
305	First injunction of celibacy, by the Council of Elvira	43
314	Disregarded elsewhere	44
III. THE COUNCIL OF NICÆA		
	Growing centralisation of the Church	45
325	The first general council	46
	It prohibits the residence of suspected women	46
	The story of Paphnutius	50
325—350	Married priests not as yet interfered with	52

IV. LEGISLATION

A.D.		PAGE
348—400	Enforcement of voluntary vows	55
	Prohibition of female ministry	56
362	Reaction—the Council of Gangra	58
384	Celibacy adopted by the Latin Church	59
385	Decretal of Siricius	63

V. ENFORCEMENT OF CELIBACY

	Resistance to enforced asceticism	66
390	Jovinian	67
404	Vigilantius	70
390—419	The Church of Africa yields	74
401	Compromise of the Cis-Alpine Church	77
	Popular assistance in enforcing celibacy	79
	Effect of enforced celibacy on clerical morals	81
	General demoralisation of society	84

VI. THE EASTERN CHURCH

	Divergence between the East and the West	87
381	Compulsory celibacy unknown in the East	88
400	Council of Constantinople—Antony of Ephesus— Synesius	89
430	First enforcement of celibacy in Thessaly	91
	Celibacy not obligatory	92
528—548	Legislation of Justinian	93
680	The Quinisext in Trullo—Discipline unchanged	94
900	Final legislation of Leo the Philosopher	97
	The Nestorians—clerical marriage permitted	98
	The Abyssinian Church	99

VII. MONACHISM

	Buddhist model of monachism	101
	Apostolic order of widows	103
	Devotees in the primitive Church—novows irrevocable	105
250—285	Paul the Thebæan and St. Antony	105

CONTENTS

ix

A.D.		PAGE
350—400	Increase of monachism	106
	Early systems—vows not irrevocable	109
	Greater strictness required of female devotees	109
c. 400	Marriages of nuns still valid	115
450—458	Conflicting legislation	116
	Strictness of the Eastern Church—Political necessity of controlling monachism	117
390—456	Monks confined to their convents	119
532—545	Justinian renders monastic vows irrevocable	120
	Disorders of Western monachism	120
528	St. Benedict of Nursia—vows not irrevocable under his rule	123
590—604	Gregory I. enforces the inviolability of vows	126
	Continued irregularities of monachism	129

VIII. THE BARBARIANS

	The Church and the Barbarians	130
	The Merovingian bishops	132
	The Spanish Arians	135
589—711	Neglect of discipline in Spain	135
557—580	State of discipline in Italy	136
	Dilapidation of ecclesiastical property	137
590—604	Reforms of Gregory the Great	139

IX. THE CARLOVINGIANS

	Demoralisation of the VII. and VIII. centuries	141
	Reorganising efforts of the Carolingians	142
742—755	Labours of St. Boniface	145
	Resistance of the married clergy	147
755	Pepin-le-Bref undertakes the reform	148
	Sacerdotal celibacy re-established	149
	Reforms of Charlemagne and Louis-le-Débonnaire— Their inefficiency	153
840—912	Increasing demoralisation under the later Carlo- vingians	154
874	Legal procedures prescribed by Hincmar	159
893	Sacerdotal marriage resumed	162

X. THE TENTH CENTURY

A.D.		PAGE
	Barbarism of the tenth century—Debasement of the papacy	164
	Tendency to hereditary benefices—Dilapidation of Church property	165
938	Lco VII. vainly prohibits sacerdotal marriage	169
952	It is defended by St. Ulric of Augsburg	171
925—967	Unsuccessfully resisted by Ratherius of Verona and Atto of Vercelli	172
	Opposing influences among prelates	177
	Relaxation of the canons	178
942—1054	Three Archbishops of Rouen	179
	Indifference of Silvester II.	181
	Celibacy practically obsolete	182

XI. SAXON ENGLAND

	Corruption of the ancient British Church	183
	Asceticism of the Irish and Scottish Churches	184
597	Celibacy introduced among the Saxons by St. Augustin	185
	Disorders in the Saxon nunneries	188
747, 787	Councils of Clovesho and Chelsea	189
	Neglect of discipline in the ninth and tenth centuries	191
964	St. Dunstan undertakes a reformation	192
964—974	Energy of Edgar the Pacific	192
975	Reaction after the death of Edgar	197
1006	Failure of Dunstan's reforms	199
1009	Council of Enham—Sacerdotal polygamy	200
1032	Legislation of Cnut	201
	Sacerdotal marriage established	202

XII. PETER DAMIANI

1022	Council of Pavia—Efforts to restore discipline	206
1031	Council of Bourges	207
	Clerical marriage and profligacy	208

CONTENTS

xi

A.D.		PAGE
	Revival of asceticism—San Giovanni Gualberto	213
1046	Henry III. undertakes the reformation of the Church —Clement II.	214
	St. Peter Damiani	216
1049	Leo IX.	218
	Damiani's <i>Liber Gomorrhianus</i>	219
	Reformatory efforts of Leo—Councils of Rheims and Mainz	220
1051—1053	Attempts to reform the Italian clergy	221
	Failure of the Reformation	222
1058	The Papacy independent—Damiani and Hildebrand	223
1059	Appeal to the laity for assistance	228
1059	Council of Melfi—Deposition of Bishop of Trani	231
1060	Damiani endeavours to reform the prelates	233
	The persecuted clergy organise resistance	235
1061	Schismatic election of Cadalus	235
	He is supported by the married clergy	236
1063	Renewed efforts of Alexander II. and Damiani	237
	Their failure	240

XIII. MILAN

	Milan the centre of Manichæism	244
1045	Election of an archbishop—four disappointed com- petitors	245
	Marriage universal among Milanese clergy	247
	Landolfo and Arialdo excite the people	249
1056	Popular tumults—Plunder of the clergy	250
1058	The Synod of Fontaneto defends the married priests	250
	A furious civil war results	251
1059	Damiani obtains the submission of the clergy	252
1061	Milan embraces the party of Cadalus	253
	Death of Landolfo—Erlembaldo takes his place	254
1062	His success	255
1066	Excommunication of Archbishop Guido—Martyrdom of Arialdo	256
1067	Compromise and temporary truce	257
1069	Guido forced to resign—War between Gotefrido and Azzo for the succession	257

A.D.		PAGE
1075	Death of Erlembaldo—Tedaldo archbishop in spite of Gregory VII.	259
	Influence of celibacy on the struggle	260
1093—1095	Triumph of sacerdotalism	261
	Similar trouble throughout Tuscany	262

XIV. HILDEBRAND

1073	Election of Gregory VII.—His character	264
	Necessity of celibacy to his scheme of theocratic supremacy	265
1074	Synod of Rome—Repetition of previous canons	269
	Attempts to enforce them throughout Europe— Resistance of the clergy	270
	Three bishops—Otho of Constance—Altmann of Passau—Siegfrid of Mainz	271
1074	Gregory appeals to the laity	276
	Resultant persecution of the clergy	279
1077	Violent resistance of the married clergy	281
	Political complications	282
1085	Papalists and Imperialists both condemn sacerdotal marriage	285

XV. CENTRAL EUROPE

	Depression of the Catholic party—Sacerdotal marriage connived at	287
1089	Urban II. renews the persecution	288
1094	Contumacy of the German priesthood	290
1105	Deposition of Henry IV.—Germany restored to Catholic unity	291
1118—1175	Sacerdotal marriage nevertheless common	292
1092—1257	First introduction of celibacy in Hungary	296
1197—1279	Introduction of celibacy in Poland	300
1213—1248	Disregard of the canons in Sweden	301
1117—1266	Their enforcement in Denmark	303
1219—1271	Their neglect in Friesland	303

XVI. FRANCE

A.D.		PAGE
1056—1064	Efforts to introduce sacerdotal celibacy	306
1074—1078	Contumacy of the clergy	307
1080	William the Conqueror intervenes—First allusion to licences to sin	308
	Successful resistance of the Norman and Breton clergy	310
1076—1094	Troubles in Flanders	312
	Confusion caused by the attempted reform	313
1095	Council of Clermont—Its canons disregarded	317
	Condition of the monastic establishments	318
	Hereditary transmission of benefices	320
	Miracles invoked in aid of the reform	321
1119	Calixtus II. commences a new reform	322
	Resistance of the Norman priesthood	323
	Abelard and Heloise—Standard of morals erected by the Church	324
1212	Continuance of clerical marriage	326

XVII. NORMAN ENGLAND

1066	Canons not enforced by William I.	328
1076	First effort made by the Council of Winchester	329
1102	St. Anselm undertakes the reform—Council of London	331
	Resistance of the priests—Failure of the movement	333
1104	Henry I. uses the reform as a financial expedient	334
1108	He enforces outward obedience	335
1126	Stubborn contumacy of the priesthood	336
1129	Henry again speculates on clerical immorality	337
1138—1171	Disorders of the English church	338
	Consorts of priests no longer termed wives	339
1208	King John discovers their financial value	344
	Venality of the ecclesiastical officials	345
	“Focariæ” still universal	346
1215	Indignation of the clergy at the reforms of Inno- cent III.	347
1237	Cardinal Otto and the Council of London	350
	Popular poems concerning the reform	351

A.D.		PAGE
1250—1268	Gradual extinction of clerical marriage in England	354
	Robert Grosseteste, Bishop of Lincoln	356
	Fruitless legislation against concubinage	357
12th—15th C.	Sacerdotal marriage in Wales	358

XVIII. IRELAND AND SCOTLAND

	Degradation of the Irish Church prior to the twelfth century	360
1130—1149	Reforms of St. Malachi—Influence of Rome	361
	Monastic character of the reformed Church	362
1186—1320	Condition of the Church in the English Pale	364
	Degeneration of the Scottish Culdees	366
1124—1153	David I. reforms the Church and re-establishes celibacy	367
1225—1268	Immorality of the Scottish clergy	368

XIX. SPAIN

11th Cent.	Independent barbarism of the Spanish Church—Marriage universal	369
1068—1080	Encroachments of Rome—sacerdotal marriage condemned	371
1101—1129	Reforms of Diego Gelmirez—Marriage not interfered with	373
1260	Legislation of Alfonso the Wise—Concubinage universal	378
1323	Concubinage organised as a safeguard by the laity	380
	Corruption throughout the middle ages	382

XX. GENERAL LEGISLATION

1123	Marriage now first dissolved by Holy Orders	385
1130	The innovation not as yet enforced	386
1139	Sacerdotal marriage formally declared void by the Second Council of Lateran	388
1148	Confirmed by the Council of Rheims—Denied by Gratian—Implication of vows in Orders	389
1150	The new doctrine receives no obedience	390

CONTENTS

A.D.		PAGE
1158—1181	Alexander III. insists upon it	393
	But excepts immoral ecclesiastics	394
	Conflict of rules and exceptions	395
1206—1328	Cases of Bossaert d'Avesnes and Piero di Corbario .	
	Alexander III. proposes to restore clerical marriage	398
1187—1198	Efforts of the Popes to enforce the canons	403
1215	Fourth Council of Lateran—Triumph of sacer- dotalism	405

XXI. RESULTS

	Recognition of the obligation of celibacy	408
	Increase of immorality	409
13th—15th C.	Fruitless attempts to restrain corruption—Neutralised by papal dispensations	411
1231	Recognition of children of ecclesiastics	417
1225—1416	Efforts to restrict hereditary transmission	418
1317	Recognition of concubinage	420
	Successful resistance to reform	422
12th—15th C.	Morals of the papal court	424
	Influence on society of sacerdotal celibacy	430
	Influence of monachism	445

XXII. THE MILITARY ORDERS

1120	Knights of St. John vowed to celibacy	451
1128	Knights of the Temple vowed to celibacy	451
1175	Knights of Santiago allowed to marry	453
1441	Marriage permitted to the Orders of Calatrava and Montesa	454
1496	And to the Orders of Avis and Jesus Christ	455
1167	Order of St. Michael allowed to marry once	456
	Reforms attempted in the Order of St. John	457
	The Teutonic Knights	457

XXIII. THE HERESIES

	Asceticism of mediæval Manichæism	459
	Difficulty of combating it	461

	PAGE
1146	Antisacerdotalism—The Petrobrusians and Henricians 463
1148	Eon de l'Etoile 465
c. 1160	The Waldenses 466
	Begghards—Brethren of the Free Spirit 469
	The Apostles—John of Pirna—Jean de Varennes 472
1377	Wickliffe 474
1394	The Lollards denounce clerical celibacy 476
1415—1438	The Hussites—They maintain ascetic celibacy 477

SACERDOTAL CELIBACY

THE Latin Church is the great fact which dominates the history of modern civilisation. All other agencies which moulded the destinies of mediæval Europe were comparatively isolated or sporadic in their manifestations. Thus in one place we may trace the beneficent influence of commerce at work, in another the turbulent energy of the rising Third Estate; the mortal contests of the feudal powers with each other and with progress are waged in detached and convulsive struggles; chivalry casts only occasional and evanescent flashes of light amid the darkness of military barbarism; literature seeks to gain support from any power which will condescend to lend transitory aid to the plaything of the moment. Nowhere do we see combined effort, nowhere can we detect a pervading impulse, irrespective of locality or of circumstance, save in the imposing machinery of the Church establishment. This meets us at every point, and in every age, and in every sphere of action. In the dim solitude of the cloister, the monk is training the minds which are to mould the destinies of the period, while his roof is the refuge of the desolate and the home of the stranger. In the tribunal, the priest is wrestling with the baron, and is extending his more humane and equitable code over a jurisdiction subjected to the caprices of feudal or customary law, as applied by a class of ignorant and arbitrary tyrants. In the royal palace, the hand of the ecclesiastic, visible or invisible, is guiding

the helm of state, regulating the policy of nations, and converting the brute force of chivalry into the supple instrument of his will. In Central Europe, lordly prelates, with the temporal power and possessions of the highest princes, joined to the exclusive pretensions of the Church, make war and peace, and are sovereign in all but name, owing no allegiance save to Emperors whom they elect and Popes whose cause they share. Far above all, the successor of St. Peter from his pontifical throne claims the whole of Europe as his empire, and dictates terms to kings. At the other extremity of society, the humble minister of the altar, with his delegated power over heaven and hell, wields in cottage as in castle an authority hardly less potent, and enforces on the populations the behests of his superiors. Even art offers a willing submission to the universal mistress, and seeks the embodiment of its noblest aspirations in the lofty poise of the cathedral spire, the rainbow glories of the painted window, and the stately rhythm of the solemn chant.

This vast fabric of ecclesiastical supremacy presents one of the most curious problems which the world's history affords. Through its perfected organisation the Church wielded its wide and absolute authority, deriving its force from moral power alone, marshalling no legions of its own in battle array, but permeating everything with its influence, walking unarmed through deadly strife, rising with renewed strength from every prostration, triumphing alike over the savage nature of the barbarian and the enervated apathy of the Roman tributary, blending discordant races and jarring nations into one great brotherhood of subjection—such was the Papal hierarchy, a marvel and a mystery. Well is it personified in Gregory VII., a fugitive from Rome, without a rood of ground to call him master, a rival Pope lording it in

the Vatican, a triumphant Emperor vowed to internecine strife, yet issuing his commands as sternly and as proudly to prince and potentate as though he were the unquestioned suzerain of Europe, and listened to as humbly by three-fourths of Christendom. The man wasted away in the struggle; his death was but the accident of time: the Church lived on, and marched to inevitable victory.

The investigations of the curious can hardly be deemed misapplied in analysing the elements of this impalpable but irresistible power, and in examining the causes which have enabled it to preserve such unity of action amid such diversity of environment, presenting everywhere by turns a solid and united front to the opposing influences of barbarism and civilisation. In detaching one of these elements from the group, and tracing out its successive vicissitudes, I may therefore be pardoned for thinking the subject of sufficient interest to warrant a minuteness of detail that would otherwise perhaps appear disproportionate. It was by no means the least of the factors in the conquering career of the Church that it required of all, to whom it granted the supernatural powers conferred in holy orders, that they should surrender themselves to it unreservedly and irrevocably, that they should sunder all human ties, should have no aspirations beyond its service, no family affections to distract their loyalty, no family duties on which to waste its substance, and no ambitions save for the rewards which it alone could bestow.

CHAPTER I

ASCETICISM

THE most striking contrast between the Mosaic Dispensation and the Law of Christ is the materialism of the one, and the pure spirituality of the other. The Hebrew prophet threatens worldly punishments, and promises fleshly rewards: the Son of Man teaches us to contemn the treasures of this life, and directs all our fears and aspirations towards eternity. The exaggeration of these teachings by the zeal of fervent disciples led to the ascetic efforts to subjugate nature, which present so curious a feature in religious history, and of which those concerning the relation of the sexes form the subject of our consideration.

This special phase of asceticism was altogether foreign to the traditions of Israel, averse as they were from all restrictions upon the full physical development of man. Enjoying, apparently, no conception of a future existence, the earlier Hebrews had no incentive to sacrifice the pleasures of the world for those of a Heaven of which they knew nothing; nor was the gross polytheism, which the monotheistic prophets combated, of a nature to lead to ascetic practices. The worship of Ashera—probably identical with the Babylonian Beltis or Mylitta—undoubtedly consecrated the sacrifice of chastity as a religious rite, and those who revered the goddess of fertility as one of the supreme deities were not likely to impose any restrictions on the exercise of her powers.¹ We see,

¹ Amos II. 7.—Deut. XXIII. 18.—Micah I. 7.—Herod. I. 199.—Cf. Kuenen, *Religion of Israel*, I. 92-3, 368.—Rawlinson's *Essay X. on Herod. I.*—Luciani de *Syria Dea vi.*

indeed, in the story of Judah and Tamar, and in the lamentation of the daughter of Jephthah, that virginity was regarded almost as a disgrace, and that child-bearing was considered the noblest function of woman; while the institution of levirate marriage shows an importance attributed to descendants in the male line as marked as among the Hindu Arya. The hereditary character of the priesthood, moreover, both as vested in the original Levites and the later Tsadukim and Baithusin, indicates conclusively that even among the orthodox no special sanctity attached to continence, and that the temporary abstinence from women required of those who handled the hallowed articles of the altar (I. Sam. XXI. 4-5) was simply a distinction drawn between the sacerdotal class and the laity; for in the elaborate instructions as to uncleanness there is no allusion made to sexual indulgence, though the priest who had partaken of wine was forbidden to enter the Tabernacle, and defilement arising from contact with the dead was a disability (Levit. x., XXI., XXII.),¹ while the highest blessing that could be promised as a reward for obedience to God was that "there shall not be male or female barren among you" (Deut. VII. 14). In fact, the only manifestation of asceticism as a religious ordinance, prior to the Second Temple, is seen in the vow of the Nazirites, which consisted merely in allowing the hair to remain unshorn, in the abstinence from wine, and in avoiding the pollution arising from contact with the dead. Slender as were these restrictions, the ordinary term of a Nazirate was only thirty days, though it might be assumed for life, as in the cases of Samson and Samuel; and the vows for long terms were deemed sufficiently pleasing to God to

¹ When the Church assumed that marriage was incompatible with the ministry of the altar, it was somewhat puzzled to reconcile the hereditary character of the high priesthood with the morning and evening sacrifice required of the high priest (Exod. xxx. 7-8). For ingenious special pleading to explain this away, see St. Augustin, Quæstt. in Pentateuch. III. lxxxii. and Retractt. II. lv. 2.

serve as means of propitiation, as in the case of Hannah, who thus secured her offspring Samuel, and in that of Helena, Queen of Adiabene, who vowed a Nazirate of seven years if her son Izaces should return in safety from a campaign.¹ The few references to the custom in Scripture, however, show that it was little used, and that it exercised no visible influence over social life during the earlier periods.

When the conquests of Cyrus released the Hebrews from captivity, the close relations established with the Persians wrought no change in this aspect of the Jewish faith. Mazdeism, in fact, was a religion so wholesome and practical in its character that asceticism could find little place among its prescribed observances, and the strict maintenance of its priesthood in certain families, who transmitted their sacred lore from father to son, shows that no restrictions were placed upon the ministers of Hormadz, or athravas,² though in the later period of the Achæmenian empire, after the purity of ancient Mazdeism had become corrupted, the priestesses of the Sun were required to observe chastity, without necessarily being virgins.³ With the conquests of Alexander, however, Judaism was exposed to new influences, and was brought into relation at once with Grecian thought and with the subtle mysticism of India, with which intercourse became frequent under the Greek empire. Beyond the Indus the Sankhya philosophy was already venerable, which taught the nothingness of life, and that the supreme good consisted in the absolute victory over all human wants and desires.⁴ Already Buddha had reduced this philo-

¹ Num. vi. 2-21.—Judges XIII.—XVI.—I. Sam. i. 11.—Lament. iv. 7-8.—Amos II. 11-12.—I. Macc. III. 49.—Mishna, Tract. Nazir.

² Yasht—Kordah 10.—Bahram Yasht 46.—Sad-der, Porta C.—Philost. de Vit. Sophist. I. 10.

³ Justin. *Historiar.* x. ii.

⁴ Kapila's Aphorisms I. 1 (Ballantyne's Translation).—Sankhya Karika XLV., LXVI., LXVIII. (Colebrook & Wilson's Translation).—For the intercourse between

sophy into a system of religion, the professors of which were bound to chastity—a rule impossible of observance by the world at large, but which became obligatory upon its innumerable priests and monks, when it spread and established itself as a Church, thus furnishing the prototype which was subsequently imitated by Roman Christianity.¹ Already Brahmanism had invented the classes of Vanaprasthas, Sannyasis, and others—ascetics whose practices of self-mortification anticipated and excelled all that is related of Christian Antonys and Simeons—although the ancestor worship which required every man to provide descendants who should keep alive the Sraddha in honour of the Pitris of his forefathers postponed the entrance into the life of the anchorite until after he should have fulfilled his parental duties :² and we know from the references in the Greek writers to the Hindu gymnosophists how great an impression these customs had made upon those to whom they were a novelty.³ Already the Yoga system had been framed, whereby absorption into the Godhead was to be obtained by religious mendicancy, penances, mortifications, and the severest severance of self from all external surroundings.⁴ All this had been founded on the primæval doctrine of the Vedas with respect to the virtue of *Tapas*, or austere religious abstraction, to which the most extravagant powers were attributed, conferring upon its votaries the authority of

India and the West, see A. Weber, "Die Verbindungen Indiens," etc., in "Indische Skizzen."

¹ Surangama Sutra (Beal's Catena, pp. 348-9).—Davids and Oldenberg's Vinaya Texts, Part I. p. 4.—Hodgson's Essays on the Languages, etc., of Nepal and Tibet, pp. 63, 68-70.—Hardy's Eastern Monachism, pp. 50 sqq.

² Manava Dharma Sastra IV. 257; VI. 1-81. Yet the Sutta Nipata, a Buddhist scripture of unquestioned antiquity, states that of old the Brahmans practised celibacy up to the forty-eighth year. (Sir M. C. Swamy's Translation, p. 81.) Cf. Strabon. Lib. xv., and Clement. Alexand. Stromat. Lib. III.

³ See Bisse's edition of Palladius de Gentibus Indiae.—Diog. Laert. Procem.—Philost. de Vit. Apollon. Tyan.—Porphy. de Abstinens. IV. 17.

⁴ A. Weber, Hist. Ind. Lit., pp. 163, 237-9.—Wilson's Vishnu Purana, I. 164.—Garrett's Class. Dict. India, p. 753.

gods.¹ With all the absurdities of these beliefs and practices, they yet sprang from a profound conviction of the superiority of the spiritual side of man's nature, and if their theory of the nothingness of mortal existence was exaggerated, yet they tended to elevate the soul, at the expense, it must be confessed, of a regard to the duties which man owes to society.

The influences arising from this system of religious philosophy, so novel to the Semitic races, were tardy in making themselves felt upon the Hebrews, but they became gradually apparent. The doctrine of a future life with rewards and punishments, doubtless derived from Chaldean and Mazdean sources during the Captivity and under the Persian Empire, slowly made its way, and though opposed by the aristocratic conservative party in power—the Tsadukim or Sadducees (descendants of Zadoc, or just men)—it became one of the distinctive dogmas of the Beth Sopherim or House of Scribes, composed of religious teachers, trained in all the learning of the day, sprung from the people, and eager to maintain their nationality against the temporising policy of their rulers.² At the breaking out of the Maccabean revolt against Antiochus Epiphanes we find the nation divided into two factions—the Sadducees, disposed rather to submit to the Hellenising tyranny of Antioch, and the Chassidim (the Assideans of the Vulgate), democratic

¹ Rig Veda, VIII. VIII. 48 (Langlois' Translation).—Muir's Sanskrit Texts, IV. 160 sqq.—Harivansa Lect. xxxii.—Hitopadesa (Lancereau's Translation, pp. 178–9, and note to p. 160). The same follies were common to Buddhism. See Fah-Hian (Beal's Buddhist Pilgrims, pp. 101–2).—Eitel's Handbook of Chinese Buddhism, pp. 33, 76.—Rogers's Buddhaghosa's Parables, p. 59.—How nearly Christian mysticism reached these altitudes may be seen by reference to the Umbilicarii or Quietist monks of Mt. Athos, in the fourteenth century, who became suffused with divine light after prolonged contemplation of their navels (Basnage, in Canisii Thes. Monument. Eccles. IV. 366–7.—Dupin, Bibl. des Auteurs Eccles. XI. 96.—Beal's Catena, p. 151).

² A very good exposition of the Pharisaic revolution will be found in Cohen, *Les Phariséens*, 2 vols. 8vo, Paris, 1877.

reformers, ready for innovation, and prepared to die in defence of their faith. In the triumph of the Hasmonean revolution they obtained control of the State, and in the development of the Oral Law by the Scribes, supplementing the Torah or Written Law, they engrafted permanently their doctrines upon the ancestral belief. With the tenet of spiritual immortality there followed, as a necessary consequence, the subordination of the present existence to life hereafter, which is the direct incentive to asceticism. The religious exaltation of the stormy period which intervened between the liberation from Antioch and the subjugation to Rome afforded a favourable soil for the growth of this tendency, and rendered the minds of the devout accessible to the influences both of Eastern and of Western speculation. How powerful eventually became the latter upon the Alexandrian Jews may be estimated from the mysticism of Philo.

With their triumph over Antioch, the name of the Chassidim disappears as that of an organised party, and in its place we find those of two factions or sects—the Perushim (Pharisees) or Separatists, who maintained an active warfare, temporal and theological, with the Sadducees, and the Essenes, mystics, who bound themselves by vows, generally including the Nazirate, and withdrew from active life for the benefit of spiritual growth and meditation.

The Essenes cultivated the soil and sometimes even lived in cities, but oftener dwelt as anchorites, using no artificial textures as clothing, and no food save what was spontaneously produced. They mostly practised daily ablutions and admitted neophytes to their society by the rite of baptism after a novitiate of a year, followed by two years of probation. Among those who did not live as hermits, property was held in common, and marriage was abstained from, and it is to this latter

practice doubtless that reference was made by Christ in the text "There be eunuchs which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake." The Essenes enjoyed high consideration among the people; their teachings were listened to with respect, and they were regarded as especially favoured with the gifts of divination and prophecy. There can be no doubt that John the Baptist was an Essene; James of Jerusalem, brother of Jesus, was a Nazirite and probably an Essene, and Christ himself may reasonably be regarded as trained in the principles of the sect. His tendencies all lay in that direction, and it is observable that, while he is unsparing in his denunciations of the Scribes and Pharisees and Sadducees, he never utters a word of condemnation of the Essenes.¹

It is thus easy to understand the refined spirituality of Christ's teachings, and the urgency with which he called the attention of man from the gross temptations of earth to the higher things which should fit him for the inheritance of eternal life. Yet his profound wisdom led him to forbear from enjoining even the asceticism of the Essenes. He allowed a moderate enjoyment of the gifts of the Creator; and when he sternly rebuked the Scribes and Pharisees for imposing, in their development of the Oral Law, burdens upon men not easily to be borne by the weakness of human nature, he was far indeed from seeking to render obligatory, or even to recommend, practices which only the fervour of fanaticism could render endurable. No teacher before him had ventured to form so lofty a conception of the

¹ Josephi Vit. 2.—Ejusd. Antiq. xv. x. 5; xvii. xiii. 3; xviii. i. 5.—Ejusd. Bell. Jud. ii. viii. 2, 3, 4, 5, 7, 12.—Euseb. H. E. ii. 23, ex Hegesippo.—Hippol. Refut. Omn. Hæres. ix. xiii.—xxii.—Philastr. Lib. de Hæres. ix.—Matt. xix. 12.—Porphy. de Abstinent. iv. 11–13.—Philo probably obtained from the Essenes the ideal which he embodied in his account of the supposititious Therapeutæ (Philon. Lib. de Vit. Contempl. pp. 690–1, Ed. 1613).

marriage-tie. It was an institution of God himself whereby man and wife became one flesh. "What therefore God hath joined together let not man put asunder;" and though he refrained from condemning abstention from wedlock, he regarded it as possible only to those whose exceptional exaltation of temperament might enable them to overcome the instincts and passions of humanity.¹

When the broad proselyting views and untiring energy of Paul, the apostle of the Gentiles, were brought to bear upon the little circle of mourning disciples, it was inevitable that a rupture should take place. No one in the slightest degree familiar with the spirit of Judaism at that day can have difficulty in understanding how those who still regarded themselves as Jews, who looked upon their martyr, not as the Son of God, but, in the words of Peter, as "Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you, by miracles and wonders and signs which God did by him in the midst of you," and who held, as is urged in the Epistle of James, firmly to their Master's injunction to preserve every jot and tittle of the Law, should regard with growing distrust and distaste the activity of the Pharisee Paul, who, like other Pharisees, was ready to encompass land and sea to gain one proselyte, and, more than this, was prepared to throw down the exclusive barriers of the Law, in order to invite all mankind to share in the glad tidings of Salvation.² The division came in time, and as the Gentile Church spread and flourished, it stigmatised as heretics those who adhered to the simple monotheistic reformed Judaism which Christ had taught. These became known as the Ebionim, or Poor Men, Essenes, and others, who followed Christ as a

¹ Matt. xxiii. 3.—Luc. xi. 46.—Matt. xi. 4-10.

² Acts II. 44-6.—James II. 10.—Matt. v. 17-19; xxiii. 15.—Cf. Galat. II. 7.

prophet inspired by God, who accepted all of the apostles save Paul, whom they regarded as a transgressor of the Law, holding their property in common, honouring virginity rather than marriage, but uttering no precept upon the subject, and observing the Written Law with rigid accuracy. They maintained a quiet existence for four centuries, making no progress, but exciting no antagonism save on the part of vituperative heresiologists, whose denunciations, however, contain no rational grounds for regarding them otherwise than as the successors of the original followers of Christ.¹

Meanwhile, Pauline Christianity, launched on the tumultuous existence of the Gentile world, had adapted itself to the passions and ambitions of men, had availed itself both of their strength and of their weakness, and had become a very different creed from that which had been taught around the Sea of Galilee, and had seen its teacher expiate on Calvary his revolt against the Oral Law. In its gradual transformation through the ages, from Essenic and Ebionic simplicity to the magnificent sacerdotalism of the Innocents and Gregories, it has felt itself bound to find or make, in its earliest records, some precedent for every innovation, and accordingly its ardent polemics in modern times have endeavoured to prove that the celibacy of its ministers was, if not absolutely ordained, at least practised from the earliest period. Much unnecessary logic and argument have been spent upon this subject since the demand which arose for clerical marriage at the Reformation forced the champions of the Church to find scriptural

¹ Irenæi contra Hæres. I. xxvi. 2.—Hippol. Refut. Omn. Hæres. VII. xxii.—Tertullii Præscript. xlvii.—Euseb. H. E. III. xxvii.—Epiphan. Panar. Hæres. XXX.—Hieron. Comment. in Matt. II. xii. 2.—Origenis de Princip. IV. 22; Ejud. contra Celsum II. 1; v. 65.—It is possible that "them which say they are Jews and are not," condemned in Rev. II. 9; III. 9, were Ebionites. The Talmud represents the Jewish doctors, after the destruction of Jerusalem, as consorting familiarly and disputing with the Ebionite Christians (Cohen, II. 238-9).

authority for the canon which enjoins celibacy. The fact is that prior to the sixteenth century the fathers of the Church had no scruple in admitting that in primitive times the canon had no existence and the custom was not observed. The reader may therefore well be spared a disquisition upon a matter which may be held to be self-evident, and be contented with a brief reference to some of the authorities of the Church who, prior to the Reformation, admitted that in primitive times marriage was freely permitted to the ministers of Christ.

No doctor of the Church did more than St. Jerome to impose the rule of celibacy on its members, yet even he admits that at the beginning there was no absolute injunction to that effect; and he endeavours to apologise for the admission by arguing that infants must be nourished with milk and not with solid food.¹ In the middle of the eleventh century, during the controversy between Rome and Constantinople, Rome had no scruple in admitting that the celebrated text of St. Paul (I. Cor. ix. 5) meant that the apostles were married, though subsequent commentators have exhausted so much ingenuity in explaining it away.² A century later Gratian, the most learned canonist of his time, in the "Decretum," undertaken at the request of the papal court, which has ever since maintained its position as the foundation of the canon law, felt no hesitation in admitting that, before the adoption of the canon, marriage was everywhere undisturbed among those in orders, as it continued to be in the Greek Church.³ St. Thomas Aquinas admits that Christ could not properly require men to leave their wives, and that he did not enforce it on St. Peter.⁴

¹ Hieron. adv. Jovin. I. 34.

² Gratiani Decret. P. I. Dist. xxxi. c. xi.

³ Gratiani Comment. in Can. 13. Dist. lvi. See also Comment. in Dist. xxxi.

⁴ Summæ II. ii. Quæst. 186 Art. 4 ad 1.

There were in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries few more learned men than Giraldus Cambrensis, whose orthodoxy was unquestioned, and who, as Archdeacon of St. David's, vigorously sought to enforce the rule of continence upon his recalcitrant clergy. Yet in a strenuous exhortation to them to mend the error of their ways in this respect, he admits that clerical celibacy has no spiritual or apostolic warrant.¹ That this was universally admitted at the time is manifested by Alfonso the Wise, of Castile, about the middle of the thirteenth century, asserting the fact in the most positive manner, while forbidding marriage to the priests of his dominions, in the code known as *Las Siete Partidas*.²

Gerson, indeed, who, like most of the ecclesiastics of his time, attributes to the Council of Nicæa the introduction of celibacy, seems inclined to justify the change assumed to have been then made, by alluding to the forged donation of Constantine. That the temporalities of the Church could only be entrusted to men cut off from family ties was an axiom in his day, and though he does not himself draw the conclusion, he clearly regarded the supposed accession to the landed estates of the Church as a satisfactory explanation of the prohibition of marriage to its ministers in the fourth century.³ Shortly afterwards, Pius II., one of the most learned of the popes, had no scruple in admitting that the Primitive Church was administered by a married clergy.⁴ Just before the Reformation, Geoffroi Boussard, dean of the faculty of theology of Paris, published, in

¹ *Gemma Eccles.* II. vi.

² *Casar solien todos los clérigos antiguamente en el comienzo de la nuestra ley, segunt lo facien en la ley vieja de los judíos: mas despues deso los clérigos de occidente, que obedecieron siempre á la eglesia de Roma, accordaron de vevir en castidat.*—*Las Siete Partidas* I. vi. 39.

³ *Dial. Sophiae et Naturæ Act.* 4.

⁴ *Non erravit ecclesia primitiva quæ sacerdotibus permisit uxores, nec errat moderna quæ subtrahit.*—*Ænei Sylvii Epist.* CXXX. (Ed. 1571, p. 670).

1505, a dissertation on priestly continence, in which he positively assumes, as the basis of his argument, that the use of marriage was universally permitted to those in holy orders, from the time of Christ to that of Siricius and Innocent I.; and this may be assumed to be the opinion of the University of Paris, for Boussard formally submitted his tract to that body, and its approbation is to be found in the fact that he was subsequently elevated to its chancellorship, and was sent as its delegate to the Council of Pisa.¹ The future antagonist of Luther, the learned Dr. John Eck, in 1512, had no hesitation in instancing celibacy as an example of the laws which the Church had altered to suit the changes of the times.²

Even after the Reformation, unexceptionable orthodox authority is found to the same effect. In 1564, Pius IV. admitted it in an epistle to the German princes, and explained it by the necessity of the times.³ Zaccaria, probably the most learned of Catholic polemics on the subject, endeavours to reconcile his belief in the Apostolic origin of clerical celibacy, with the indubitable practice of the primitive Church, by suggesting that while the Apostles commanded the observance of the rule by the clergy in general, yet in special cases they discreetly dispensed with it to avoid greater scandals; and that with the gradual increase of these dispensations the clergy came at length to assume the indulgence as a matter of course without asking for special licenses.⁴ More logical is the argument brought for-

¹ Boussard's tract "De continentia Sacerdotum sub hac quæstione nova. Utrum papa possit cum sacerdote dispensare ut nubat," was several times reprinted. The edition before me is that of Nürnberg, 1510.

² *Disce hic non male facere ecclesiam dum pro temporum opportunitate aliquid in consuetudinibus et legibus suis mutat et variat. Quondam conjugatus poterat sacerdotari, nunc non item.*—Jo. Eckii Homiliarum T. I. p. 650 (*s.l.*, 1534).

³ Le Plat, *Concil. Trident. Monument.* VI. 337.

⁴ Zaccaria, *Storia Polemica del Celibato Sacro*, p. 65 (Roma, 1775). It is curious to observe how, in his anxiety to explain the neglect of the Church for these assumed

ward by a priest named Taillard, resisting in 1842 some efforts made to introduce priestly marriage in Prussian Poland. He coolly reasons that if celibacy was not enforced in the primitive Church, it ought to have been —“if the celibacy of the priesthood be not from the beginning of Christianity, it ought to have been there, for, as our holy religion comes from God, it should contain in itself all the means possible to elevate the nations to the highest point of liberty and happiness.”¹

Apostolic commands, Zaccaria proceeds to show that the orders of the Apostles were never received as absolutely binding, as for instance in regard to the prohibition of eating blood and animals dead through strangulation (Ib. p. 116).

¹ Taillard, *Le Célibat des Prêtres*, Gnesen, 1842.

CHAPTER II

THE ANTE-NICENE CHURCH

ALTHOUGH no thought existed in the mind of Paul, and of his co-labourers in founding the Church of the Gentiles, of prohibiting to his disciples the institution of marriage, there was a distinct flavour of asceticism in some of his teachings, which might readily serve as a warrant to those whose zeal was greater than their discretion, to mortify the flesh in this as in other ways. The Apostle, while admitting that the Lord had forbidden the separation of husband and wife, said of the unmarried and widowers: "It is good for them if they abide even as I. But if they cannot contain let them marry, for it is better to marry than to burn."

And though in one passage he seems to indicate a belief that woman could only be saved by maternity from the punishment incurred by the disobedience of Eve, in another he formally declares that "he that giveth her in marriage doeth well; but he that giveth her not in marriage doeth better," thus showing a marked preference for the celibate state, in which the devout could give themselves up wholly to the service of the Lord.¹

The Apostle's discussion of these subjects shows that already there had commenced a strong ascetic movement, raising questions which he found hard to answer, without on the one hand repressing the ardour of serviceable disciples, and on the other, imposing burdens on neophytes too grievous to be borne. He

¹ I. Cor. VII. 8-9, 38.—I. Tim. II. 14-15.

foresaw that the former would soon run beyond the bounds of reason, and he condemned in advance the heresies which should forbid marriage;¹ but that the tendency of the faithful lay in that direction was inevitable. In those times, no one would join the infant Church who did not regard the things of earth as vile in comparison with the priceless treasures of heaven, and the more fervent the conviction, the more it was apt to find expression in mortifying the flesh and purchasing salvation by the sacrifice of passions and affections. Such especially would be the tendency of the stronger natures which lead their fellows; and the admiration of the multitude for their superior virtue and fortitude would soon invest them with a reputation for holiness which would render them doubly influential.

There was much, indeed, in the teaching of the Church, and in its relations with the Gentiles, to promote and strengthen this tendency. The world into which Christianity was born was hopelessly corrupt. Licentiousness, probably, has never been more defiant than amid the splendours of the early Empire. The gossip of Suetonius and the denunciations of Juvenal depict a society in which purity was scarce understood, and in which unchastity was no sin and hardly even a reproach. To reclaim such a population needed a new system of morality, and it is observable that in the New Testament particular stress is laid upon the avoidance of fornication, especially after the faith had begun to spread beyond the boundaries of Judea. The early Christians thus were a thoroughly puritan sect, teaching by example as well as by precept, and their lives were a perpetual protest against the license which reigned around them.² It therefore was natural that converts,

¹ I. Tim. iv. 3.

² Quid enim enumeremus infinitam multitudinem eorum qui ab incontinenti intemperataque vita abducti sunt quum hæc ipsa didicissent?—Just. Mart. Apol. II.

after their eyes were opened to the hideous nature of the prevailing vices, should feel a tendency to plunge into the other extreme, and should come to regard even the lawful indulgence of human instincts as a weakness to be repressed. Civilisation, indeed, owes too much to the reform which Christianity rendered possible in the relations of the sexes, for us to condemn too severely even the extravagances into which it was sometimes betrayed.

That it was becoming not uncommon for Christians to follow a celibate life is shown by various passages in the early fathers. St. Ignatius alludes to abstinence from marriage in honour of God as a matter not uncommon, but which was wholly voluntary and to be practised in humility and secrecy, for the virtue of continence would be much more than counterbalanced by the sin of pride.¹ The Apologists, Justin Martyr about the year 150, Athenagoras about 180, and Minucius Felix about 200, all refer to the chastity and sobriety which characterised the sect, the celibacy practised by some members, and the single marriage of others, of which the sole object was the securing of offspring and not the gratification of the passions. Athenagoras, indeed, condemns the exaggerations of asceticism in terms which show that already they had made their appearance among the more ardent disciples, but that they were strongly disapproved by the wiser portion of the Church. Origen seems to regard celibacy as rather springing from a desire to serve God without the interruptions arising from the cares of marriage than from asceticism, and does not hesitate to condemn those who abandoned their wives even from the

¹ "Si gloriatur, perditur: et si videri velit plus Episcopo, corruptus est."—Ad Polycarp. cap. v. (Cureton's Corpus Ignat. p. 10.) This is the received Latin text, but the weight of authority seems to incline rather to the reading *πλήν του επισκόπου* than *πλέον* (Cureton, p. 228—Petermann's Ignatius, 274-5). The difference, however, is of little moment to our present purpose.

highest motives.¹ The impulse towards asceticism, however, was too strong to be resisted. Zealots were not wanting who boldly declared that to follow the precepts of the Creator was incompatible with salvation, as though a beneficent God should create a species which could only preserve its temporal existence by forfeiting its promised eternity. Ambitious men were to be found who sought notoriety or power by the reputation to be gained from self-denying austerities, which brought to them followers and believers venerating them as prophets. Philosophers were there also, who, wearied with the endless speculations of Pythagorean and Platonic mysticism, sought relief in the practical morality of the Gospel, and perverted the simplicity of its teachings by interweaving with it the subtle philosophy of the schools, producing an apparent intoxication which plunged them either into the grossest sensuality or the most rigorous asceticism. Such were Julius Cassianus, Saturnilus, Marcion, the founder of the Marcionites, Tatianus, the heresiarch of the Encratitians, and the unknown authors of a crowd of sects which, under the names of Abstinentes, Apotactici, Excalceati, etc., practised various forms of self-mortification, and denounced marriage as a deadly sin.² Such, on the other hand, were Valentinus and Prodicus, who originated the mystic libertinism of the Gnostics; Marcus, whose followers, the Marcosians, were accused of advocating the most disgusting practices; Carpocrates, who held that the soul was obliged to have experience of all manner of evil before it could be elevated to God;

¹ Just. Mart. Apol. II.—Athenagor. pro Christianis Legat.—M. Minuc. Felicis Octavius.—Origenis Comment. in Matt. XIV. 24-5.

² So widely spread had these doctrines become by the end of the second century that Clement of Alexandria devotes the third book of his Stromata to their discussion and refutation. It is not worth while to examine their peculiarities minutely here. The curious reader can find all that he is likely to want concerning them in Irenæus, Hippolytus, Clement, Epiphanius, and Philastrius, without plunging further into the vast sea of controversial patristic theology.

Basilides, whose sectaries honoured the passions as emanating from the Creator, and taught that their impulses were to be followed. Even the Ebionites did not escape the taint, if Epiphanius is to be believed; and there was also a sect advocating promiscuous intercourse, to whom the name of Nicolites was given in memory of the story of Nicholas, the deacon of the primitive Church, who offered to his fellow-disciples the wife whom he was accused of loving with too exclusive a devotion—a sect which merited the reproof of St. John, and which has a special interest for us, because in the eleventh century all who opposed clerical celibacy were branded with its name, thus affording to the sacerdotal party the inestimable advantage of stigmatising their antagonists with an opprobrious epithet of the most damaging character, and of invoking the authority of the Apocalypse for their destruction.¹

The Church was too pure to be led astray by the libertinism of the latter class of heresiarchs. The time had not yet come for the former, and men who, in the thirteenth century, might perhaps have founded powerful orders, and have been revered by the Christian world as almost equal to Christ himself, were, through their anachronism, stigmatised as heretics, and expelled from the communion of the faithful. Still, their religious fervour and rigorous virtue had a gradually increasing influence in stimulating the development of the ascetic principle, if not in the acknowledged dogmas, at all events, in the practice of the Church, as may be seen when, towards the close of the second century, Dionysius

¹ Apocalyp. II. 6, 14, 15, 20.—Irenæi contr. Hæres. I. xxvi.—Hippolyti Ref. omn. Hæres. IV. xxiv.—Clem. Alex. Stromat. Lib. III.—Epiphan. Hæres. xxv.—The injustice thus inflicted on the memory of the worthy Nicholas is recognised by the Apostolic Constitutions (Lib. IV. c. viii.). In 1679, E. P. Rothius published a dissertation (*De Nicholaitis*), in which a vast mass of curious learning is brought to the vindication of the apostolic deacon.

of Corinth finds himself obliged to reprove Pinytus, Bishop of Gnosus, for endeavouring to render celibacy compulsory among his flock, to the manifest danger of those whose virtue was less austere.¹ In all this, unquestionably, the ascetic ideas of the East had much to do, and these were chiefly represented by Buddhism, which, since the reign of Asoka, in the third century B.C., had been the dominant religion of India. A curious allusion in St. Jerome to Buddha's having been born of a virgin,² shows a familiarity with details of Buddhist belief which presupposes a general knowledge of that faith; and though the divinised Maya, wife of Suddhodana, is not absolutely described as a virgin in Eastern tradition, yet she and her husband had taken a vow of continence before Buddha, from the Tushita heaven, to fulfil his predestined salvation of mankind and establishment of the kingdom of righteousness, had selected her as the vehicle of his incarnation. Much in the legend of his birth, of the miracles which attended it, of his encounter with the Tempter, and other details of his life, is curiously suggestive of the source whence sprang the corresponding legend of the life of Christ, more particularly as related in the pseudo-gospels.³ Not only this, but many of the

¹ Rufin. Hist. Eccles.—Euseb. IV. 23.

² Hieron. adv. Jovin. Lib. I. c. 42.

³ Compare Beal's "Romantic Legend of Sakhya Buddha from the Chinese Sanscrit," pp. 32 sqq., with the Protevangelion, the Gospel of the Infancy, the Gospel of Nicodemus, etc.

Somewhat similar to the Buddhist legend is the assertion of the Jainas that their great Tirthankara, Mahavira, selected the womb of Brahmani Devanandi, wife of Rishabha Datta, as his place of birth; but Sakra, indignant that he should be born in the Brahman caste, caused him to be transferred to Trisala, wife of the Kshatriya Siddhartha (Kalpa Sutra, Bk. I. ch. i. Stevenson's Translation, pp. 24, 38). Concerning the comparative priority of Jainism and Buddhism, see Thomas's "Jainism, or the early Faith of Asoka," London, 1877.

In this connection, it is perhaps worth while to note the Mazdean belief in Saoshyans, the future Messiah, who, as in Judaism, is to overcome the evil powers at the end of the world, and preside over the resurrection of mankind, and who is to be born of a virgin, Eredhat Fedri. (Vendidad, Fargard XIX. 18; Bundeshesh

observances of Latin Christianity would seem explicable by derivation from Buddhism, such as monasticism, the tonsure, the use of beads, confession, penance, and absolution, the sign of the cross, relic-worship, and miracles wrought by relics, the purchase of salvation by gifts to the Church, pilgrimages to sacred places, etc. etc. Even the nimbus which in sacred art surrounds the head of holy personages, is to be found in the sculptures of the Buddhist Topes, and the Sangreal, or Holy Cup of the Last Supper, which was the object of lifelong quest by the Christian knight, is like the Patra or begging-dish of Buddha, which was the subject of many curious legends.¹ It is no wonder that when the good Jesuit missionaries of the sixteenth century found among the heathen of Asia so much of what they were familiar with at home, they could not decide whether it was the remains of a pre-existing Catholicism, or whether Satan, to damn irrevocably the souls of men, had parodied and travestied the sacred mysteries and ceremonies, and introduced them in those distant regions.² We may therefore, perhaps, ascribe to Buddhist beliefs at least a portion of the influence which led the Church into the extravagances of asceticism.

The first official manifestation of this growing tendency, applied to the relations of the sexes, is to be seen in the legislation with regard to second marriages. In the passages alluded to above from Athenagoras and Minucius Felix, the fact is referred to that second marriages were already regarded as little better than adulterous, while Justin Martyr denounces them as sinful, in spite of the permission so freely granted by St. Paul

xxx. xxxii. 8, 9; Haug's Essays, Ed. 1878, pp. 313-14.) The mode of his conception as related in the Bundeesh, may be compared with the less decent speculations of Sanchez as to that of Christ.

¹ Beal's Buddhist Tripitaka, pp. 114-5.

² Marini, Missioni di Tumkino, Roma, 1663, pp. 125, 481, 490 sq.

for such unions.¹ Though this opinion was branded by the Church as heretical when it was elevated into an article of belief by the Montanists and Cathari, or Puritans, and though even the eminence and piety of Tertullian could not save him from excommunication when he embraced the doctrine, yet the orthodox came very near accepting it, for the Council of Neocæsarea, in 314, forbade priests from honouring with their presence the festivities customary on such occasions, as those who married a second time were subject to penance, and that of Laodicea, in 352, deemed it a matter of indulgence to admit to communion those who contracted such unions, after they had redeemed their fault by fasting and prayer for a certain time—a principle repeated by innumerable councils during the succeeding centuries. So far did this prejudice extend that as late as 484 we find the Pope, St. Gelasius, obliged to remind the faithful that such marriages are not to be refused to laymen.² It is by no means impossible that this opposition to repeated wedlock may have arisen, or perhaps have been intensified, by a similar feeling which existed among the Pagans, at least with regard to the second marriages of women. Moreover, in Rome the Flamen Dialis was restricted to a single marriage with a virgin, and such was the strictness with which this was observed that, as the assistance of the Flaminica,

¹ "Quare vel ut natus est unusquisque nostrum manet, vel nuptiis copulatus unicis, secundæ enim decorum quoddam adulterium sunt." Athenag. pro Christ. Legat.—"Unius matrimonii vinculo libenter inhæremus, cupiditate procreandi aut unam scimus aut nullam." M. Minuc. Felicis Octavius.—"Ut ii qui lege humana bis conjugium ineunt peccatores sunt apud præceptorem nostrum." Justin. Mart. Apol. II.—I. Cor. VII. 39.

² Concil. Neocæs. ann. 314 c. 7.—Concil. Laodicens. ann. 352 c. 1.—Gelasii PP. I. Epist. IX. Rubr. ad cap. xxii.—Cf. Hieron. Epist. XLVIII. apologeticus, c. 18.—Ejusd. Comment. in Jeremiam Prolog. Even in modern times the priest who pronounces the nuptial benediction on a second marriage commits an offence subjecting him to punishment (Rodriguez, Nuova Somma de' Casi di Coscienza, Venez. 1609. P. I. cap. CCXL. No. 4).

his wife, was necessary to the performance of some religious rites, he was obliged to resign when left a widower.¹

Although the Church forbore to prohibit absolutely the repetition of matrimony among the laity, it yet, at an early though uncertain period, imitated the rule enforced on the *Flamen Dialis*, and rendered it obligatory on the priesthood, thus for the first time drawing a distinct line of separation between the great body of the faithful and those who officiated as ministers of Christ. It thus became firmly and irrevocably established that no "digamus" or husband of a second wife was admissible to holy orders. As early as the time of Tertullian we find the rule formally expressed by him, and he even assures us that the whole structure of the Church was based upon the single marriages of its ministers. Indeed, the holy rites came to be regarded as so entirely incompatible with repetition of wedlock that the Council of Elvira, in 305, while admitting that in cases of extreme necessity a layman might administer baptism, is careful to specify that he must not be a "digamus."²

Yet this restriction on the priesthood was not easily enforced, and already we begin to hear the complaints, which have followed uninterruptedly for more than fifteen hundred years, of the evasion or disregard of the regulations whereby the Church has sought to repress the irrepressible instincts of humanity. In the early part of the third century Hippolytus, Bishop of Portus, in his enumeration of the evil ways of Pope Calixtus, taxes the pontiff with admitting to the priesthood men who had been married twice, and even thrice, and with

¹ Val. Max. II. i. 3.—Plut. Quæstt. Roman. 105.—Diod. Sicul. XII. 14.—Tertull. Lib. de Exhort. Castit. xiii.—Auli Gellii x. 15.

² Tertull. Lib. de Exhort. Castit. VII. ; de Monogam. xi.—Concil. Eliberit. xxxviii

permitting priests to marry while in orders. Even the great apostle of celibacy, St. Jerome, expresses surprise that Oceanus should object to Carterius, a Spanish bishop, on the ground that he had had a wife before baptism, and a second one after admission to the Church. The world, he adds, is full of such prelates, not only in the lower orders but in the episcopate, the digamous members of which exceed in number the three hundred prelates lately assembled at the Council of Rimini. Yet this was the formal rule of the Church as enunciated in the Apostolic Constitutions and Canons—bodies of ecclesiastical law not included, indeed, in the canon of Scripture, but yet so venerable that their origin was already lost sight of, and they were everywhere received as authoritative expositions of primitive discipline.¹

The introduction of this entering-wedge is easily explicable. St. Paul had specified the monogamic condition—"unius uxoris vir"—as a prerequisite to the diaconate, priesthood, and episcopate, and the temper of the times was such as to lead irresistibly to this being taken in its literal sense, rather than to adopt the more rational view that it was intended to exclude those among the Gentiles who indulged in the prevalent vice of concubinage, or who among the Jews had fallen into the sin of polygamy—or those among either race who had taken advantage, either before or after conversion, of the disgraceful laxity prevalent with regard to divorces, for, as we learn from Origen, the rule was by no means obeyed which forbade a divorced person to marry during the lifetime of the other spouse.²

¹ Hippol. Ref. omn. Hæres. IX. vii.—Hieron. Epist. LXIX. ad Occanum.—Constit. Apostol. VI. 17.—Canon. Apostol. xvii., xviii., xix.

² I. Tim. III. 2, 11, 12—Tit. I. 6.—Origenis Comment. in Matt. XIV. 23. The polygamy practised by the Jews from the earliest times was continued after the Dispersion. Justin Martyr taxes them with it (Dial. cum Tryphone), and Theodosius,

When once this principle was fairly established, and when at the same time the efforts of the Montanists to render it binding on the whole body of Christian believers had failed, a distinction was enforced between the clergy and the laity, as regards the marriage-tie, which gave to the former an affectation of sanctity, and which was readily capable of indefinite expansion. It is therefore easy to comprehend the revival, which shortly followed, of the old Levitical rule requiring the priesthood to marry none but virgins—a rule which was early adopted, though it took long to establish it in practice, for as late as 414 we find Innocent I. complaining that men who had taken widows to wife were even elevated to the episcopate, and Leo I. devoted several of his epistles to its enforcement.¹ A corollary to this speedily followed, which required a priest whose wife was guilty of adultery to put her away, since further commerce with her rendered him unfit for the functions of his office; and this again, as subsequent authorities were careful to point out, afforded a powerful reason for requiring absolute celibacy on the part of the clergy,

in 393, endeavoured to suppress it (Const. 7 Cod. Lib. II. Tit. ix.) by a law, the preservation of which by Justinian, after an interval of nearly a century and a half, shows that the necessity for the prohibition still existed. Even among some of the eastern Christians the precept was required, if we may believe some ancient Arabic canons, which pass under the name of the Council of Nicæa (Decret. ex quatuor Regum libris can. v. *ap.* Harduin. Concil. I. 511).

This explanation of St. Paul's injunction is adopted by Theophylact (Comment. in I. Epist. ad Timoth.) and is expressed in the paraphrase "non plures habens uxores quam unam," in a tract of uncertain date, attributed to St. Cyprian or St. Augustin (De XII. Abusionibus Seculæ cap. x. *ap.* Opp. S. Cypriani Mantissa, p. 49, Oxon. 1682). This is likewise the view put forward by the Church of Geneva in 1563, when replying to certain queries of the Huguenot Synod of Lyons (Cap. XXI. Art. x. *ap.* Quick, Synodicon in Gall. Reform. I. 49). Origen's discussion of the matter (Comment. in Matt. XIV. 23-4) shows how doubtful he considered it.

In fact, if the text is to be construed with rigorous exactness, it would exclude all unmarried men from the episcopate, and this seems to be the sense attributed to it in the Apostolic Constitutions (Lib. II. c. ii.), which in commenting upon it do not appear to contemplate bachelors as eligible.

¹ Levit. XXI. 13-14.—Innocent. PP. I. Epist. xxii. c. 1.—Epistt. Leon. PP. I. *ap.* Harduin. Concil. I. 1767, 1772, etc.

for, in view of the fragility of the sex, no man could feel assured that he was not subject to this disability, nor could the faithful be certain that his ministrations were not tainted with irregularity.¹ We thus reach the state of ecclesiastical discipline at the close of the third century, as authoritatively set forth in the Apostolical Constitutions and Canons—bishops and priests allowed to retain the wives whom they may have had before ordination, but not to marry in orders; the lower grades, deacons, subdeacons, etc., allowed to marry after entering the Church; but all were to be husbands of but one wife, who must be neither a widow, a divorced woman, nor a concubine.²

Meanwhile, public opinion had moved faster than the canons. Ascetic sects multiplied and increased, and the highest authorities in the Church could not always resist the contagion. A fresh incitement, indeed, had been found in the neo-platonic philosophy which arose in the beginning of the third century. Ammonius Saccas, its founder, was a Christian, though not altogether orthodox, and his two most noted disciples, Origen and Plotinus, fairly illustrate the influence which his doctrines had upon both the Christian and the Pagan world. As to the latter, neo-platonism borrowed from Christian and Indian as well as Greek philosophy, evolving out of them all a system of elevated mysticism in which the senses and the appetites were to be controlled as severely almost as in the Sankhya and Buddhist schools. Commerce between the sexes was denounced as a pollution degrad-

¹ Concil. Eliberit. can. 65.—Concil. Neocæsarens. c. 8.—Concil. Tarraconens. ann. 516. can. 9.—Boussardus de Continent. Sacerdot. Prop. 6, Nuremb., 1510.

² Constit. Apostol. VI. 17.—Canon. Apostol. VI. XVII. XVIII. XIX. XXVII.

This latter prescription has continued to be the law of the Church, but in establishing this fanciful purity it conveniently excuses immorality. A married man who commits adultery is not thereby rendered ineligible to the priesthood on the death of his wife.—Casus Conscientiæ Benedicti XIV., Dec. 1738, c. ii. (Ferrariæ, 1764, p. 84).

ing to the soul, and the best offering which a worshipper could bring to the Deity was a soul absolutely free from all trace of passion.¹ Although neo-platonism engaged in a hopeless struggle to stay the advancing tide of Christianity, and thus became its most active opponent, yet the lofty asceticism which it inculcated could not be without influence upon its antagonists, were it only through inflaming the emulation of those who were already predisposed to regard the mortification of the flesh as a means of raising the soul to communion with God.²

How these motives worked upon an ardent and uncompromising temperament is seen in the self-sacrifice of Origen, showing how absorbing was the struggle, and how intense was the conviction that nature must be conquered at all hazards and by any practicable means, although he himself afterwards condemned this practical rendering of the text (Matt. XIX. 12) on which it was founded. Origen was by no means the first who had sought in this way to gain the kingdom of heaven, for he alludes to it as a matter by no means unexampled, and before him Justin Martyr had chronicled with approbation a similar case. In fact, there is said to have been an obscene sect which, under the name of Valesians, followed the practice and procured proselytes by inflicting forcible mutilation upon all who were unhappy enough to fall into their hands; and though their date and locality are unknown to those who allude to them, it would be rash, in view of similar eccentricities existing in more modern times, to pronounce them wholly apocryphal. The repeated prohibitions of the practice, in the canons of the succeeding century, show how

¹ Porphyr. de Abstinens. II. 46, 61; IV. 20.—Cf. Jambl. de Mysteriis IV. xi.—Damasceni Vit. Isidori 311.

² For the influence of Buddhism on Neo-platonism, Gnosticism, and Manichæism, see A. Weber, Indische Skizzen, pp. 63, 91.

difficult it was to eradicate the belief that such self-immolation was an acceptable offering to a beneficent Creator. Sextus Philosophus, an ascetic author of the third century, whose writings long passed current under the name of Pope Sixtus II., did not hesitate openly to advocate it, and though his arguments were regarded as heretical by the Church, they were at least as logical as the practical application given to the texts commonly cited in defence of the prohibition of marriage.¹

Not all, however, who sought the praise or the merits of austerity were prepared to pay such a price for victory in the struggle with themselves. Enthusiastic spirits, exalted with the prospect of earthly peace and heavenly rewards promised to those who should preserve the purity of virginity and live abstracted from the cares and pleasures of family life, frequently took the vow of continence which had already become customary. This vow as yet was purely voluntary. It bound those who assumed it only during their own pleasure, nor were they, during its continuance, in any way segregated from the

¹ Origenis Comment. in Matt. xv. 1-3.—Just. Martyr. Apolog. II.—Epiphan. Hæres. LVII.—Can. Apostol. XXII. XXIII. XXIV.—Concil. Nicæn. c. i.—Concil. Arelatens. II. ann. 452 c. vii., etc.—Sexti Philos. Sent. ix.—At the close of the twelfth century the canons were relaxed by Clement III. in favour of a priest of Ravenna whose ascetic ardour had led him to follow the example of Origen, and who was permitted to retain all the functions of the priesthood except the ministry of the altar (Can. iv. Extra, I. xx.). Thomas of Cantimpré (De Bono Universali, Lib. II. c. 53) tells a similar story of a friar of his acquaintance, who barely escaped with his life. The practice has perpetuated itself to the nineteenth century in a Russian sect, which Catherine II. and her successors endeavoured in vain to repress. In 1818 Alexander II. ordered the enthusiasts to be banished to Siberia, but the ardour with which they courted martyrdom rendered their zeal dangerously contagious and they were left in obscurity, in the hope of their dying out (Pluquet, Dict. des Hérésies, s. v. *Mutilés de Russie*). This proved equally ineffectual, for a recent traveller describes them under the name of *Skopsis* as a large tribe inhabiting the Caucasus, where they flourish in spite of the most energetic measures of repression on the part of the government—imprisonment, banishment to Siberia, conscription, and even the death penalty being powerless to overcome their fanaticism (Brugsch, Reise der Preussischen Gesandtschaft nach Persien, 1860-1, *ap.* London "Reader," Jan. 3, 1863). Buffon (Hist. Nat. de l'Homme, *ap.* Helsen, Abus du Célibat des Prêtres, p. 52) states that he was acquainted with a priest who had adopted this mode as the only one to preserve his virtue.

world. So untrammelled, indeed, were their actions that Cyprian is forced to rebuke the holy virgins for frequenting the public baths in which both sexes indiscriminately exposed themselves, and he does not hesitate to attribute to this cause much of the ruin and dishonour of its votaries which afflicted the Church.¹ Yet this was by no means the severest trial to which many of them subjected their constancy. Perhaps it was to court spiritual martyrdom, and to show to their admirers a virtue robust enough to endure the most fiery trials, perhaps it was that they found too late that they had overestimated their strength, and that existence was a burden without the society of some beloved object—but, whatever may have been the motive, it became a frequent custom to associate themselves with congenial souls of the other sex, and form Platonic unions in which they aspired to maintain the purity which they had vowed to God. At the best, the sensible members of the Church were scandalised by these performances, which afforded so much scope for the mockery of the heathen; but scandal frequently was justified, for Nature often asserted her outraged rights, to the shame and confusion of the hapless votaries of an artificial and superhuman perfection. Tertullian does not hesitate to assert that the desire of enjoying the reputation of virginity led to much secret immorality, the effects of which were concealed by resort to infanticide.² Cyprian chronicles, not with surprise but sorrow, the numerous instances which he had known of ruin resulting to those who had so fatally miscalculated their power of resistance: with honest indignation he denounces the ecclesiastics who abandoned themselves to practices which, if not absolutely criminal,

¹ Cyprian. de Habit. Virgin.—That such laxity was indulged in by professed virgins is the more remarkable since promiscuous bathing was forbidden to every one by the Apostolic Constitutions, Lib. I. c. x.

² Tertull. de Virgin. veland. c. xv.

were brutally degrading: and with a degree of common-sense hardly to be looked for in so warm an admirer of the perfection of virginity, he advises that those whose weakness rendered doubtful the strict observance of their vows, should return to the world and satisfy their longings in legitimate marriage.¹ The heresiarch Paul of Samosata affords, perhaps, the most conspicuous example of the extent to which these and similar practices were sometimes carried, and, in condemning him, the good fathers of the Council of Antioch lamented the general prevalence of the evils thence arising.² Cyprian's prudent consideration for the weakness of human nature was as yet shared by the ecclesiastical authorities. In the order of widows professed, which was recognised by the early Church, the Apostolic Constitutions enjoin that none should be admitted below the age of sixty, in order to avoid the danger of their infringing their vows by a second marriage, but the writer is careful to add that such a marriage is not to be condemned for itself, but only on account of the falsehood which it occasioned. These widows and virgins were supported out of the tithes of the Church, and were, therefore, necessarily subjected to its control, so that it is evident that there was nothing irrevocable in the vows wherewith they were bound. The change is marked by the end of the century, when widows who thus forsook their order were unrelentingly and irrevocably condemned, deprived of communion, and expelled from social intercourse.³

While the Christian world was thus agitated with

¹ Cyprian. Epist. iv. ad Pomponium.

² Concil. Antioch (Harduin. Concil. I. 198). Cf. Lactant. Divin. Institut. vi. xix.—Extravagances of this kind long continued to be a favourite exercise with enthusiasts. In 450 the anchorites of Palestine are described as herding together without distinction of sex, and with no garments but a breech-clout; while others who frequented the cities exhibited their self-control by appearing in the public baths with women. (Niceph. Callist. H. E. xiv. 50.)

³ Constit. Apost. II. i. ii.—Statut. Eccles. Antiq. civ.

the speculative doctrines and practical observances of so many enthusiasts, heretical and orthodox, who seemed to regard the relations between the sexes as the crucial test and most trustworthy exponent of religious ardour, a new dogma arose in the East and advanced with a rapidity which shows how much progress the ascetic spirit had already made, and how ripe were the unsettled minds of zealots to welcome whatever system of belief promised to trample most ruthlessly upon nature, and to render the path of salvation inaccessible to all save those capable of the sternest self-mortification. Towards the end of the third century, the Persian Manes made his advent in the Empire, proclaiming himself as the Paraclete and as a new and higher Apostle. Though his career as an envoy of Christ was stoutly resisted by the orthodox, and though, after a chequered life, he was flayed alive, and his followers in Persia were slaughtered by Varahran I.,¹ his western disciples were more fortunate, and the hateful name of Manichæan acquired a sinister notoriety which maintained its significance for a thousand years. His system was a compound of several faiths, and though it failed in its comprehensive design to bring all mankind together in one form of belief, it yet had features which won for it the enthusiastic adhesion of men of diverse races. The way was already prepared for its reception among both Gentiles and Christians by the prevalence on the one hand of the Mithraic worship, and on the other of Gnosticism. The Dualistic theory was attractive to those who were disheartened in the vain attempt to reconcile the existence of evil with an omnipotent and all-merciful Creator; the Platonic identity of the soul with

¹ Chronique de Tabari, Ed. Rothenberg, II. 90. It is curious to observe that Persian tradition represented Manes as a Chinese magician and an excellent painter, who constructed figures that were able to move, and thus deceived the people. After gaining the confidence of the monarch, he was vanquished in controversy with the chief Mobed, and was flayed alive. (Mohl's *Livre des Rois*, V. 379-81.)

the Godhead was a recommendation to the schoolmen; the Brahmanical and Buddhist views as to abstinence from meat and marriage won adherents among the remains of the ascetic sects, and were acceptable even to those among the orthodox who were yielding to the increasing influence of asceticism. The fierce temporal persecution of the still Pagan emperors, and the unavailing anathemas of the Church, as yet confined to mere spiritual censures, seemed only to give fresh impetus to the proselyting energy of the Elect, and to scatter the seed more widely among the faithful. After this period we hear but little of the earlier ascetic heresies; the system of Manes, as moulded by his followers, was so much more complete, that it swallowed up its prototypes and rivals, and concentrated upon itself the vindictiveness of a combined Church and State. So thorough was this identification that in 381 an edict of Theodosius the Great directed against the Manichæans assumes that the sects of Encratitæ, Apotactitæ, Hydroparastitæ, and Saccofori were merely nominal disguises adopted to elude detection.¹

That Manichæism, in fact, exercised a substantial influence over orthodoxy is shown in other directions besides that of asceticism. The Eucharist was thus diverted from its original form of a substantial meal—one of the means by which the charity of the Church was administered to the poor—into the symbolical wafer and wine which assimilated it so closely to the Izesne sacrifice, the most frequent Mazdean rite, and one which, like the Mass, was customarily performed for the benefit

¹ Lib. XVI. Cod. Theod. Tit. v. l. 7.—Cf. Concil. Quinisext, c. 95.

Scythianus, the precursor of Manes, is said by Epiphanius (*Hæres. LXVI.*) to have visited India and to have brought from there certain books of magic, which must have been Buddhist, as Buddhism was at that period supreme in the Peninsula. His disciple, Terbinthus, the link between him and Manes, assumed the name of the Buddha.

of departed souls.¹ Manes, in combining Mazdeism with Christianity, had adopted the Eucharist in the Mazdean form, and had confined the use of the cup to the priesthood; and this lay communion in one element became so well recognised as a test of Manichæism that Leo the Great ordered the excommunication of all who received the sacrament after that fashion.² It may therefore be remarked as a curious coincidence that when Manichæism was revived by the Albigenes, in the eleventh and twelfth centuries, the Church, which until then had preserved its ancient custom, adopted the lay communion in one element and adhered to it so rigidly that, as we shall see hereafter, not even the dread of the Hussite schism nor the earnest requests of those who remained faithful during the perils of the Reformation, could induce it to grant the cup to the laity. Lay communion in one element drew a line of distinction between the priest and his flock which the former would not willingly abandon.

Although, in the region of asceticism, the Church might not be willing to adopt the Manichæan doctrine that man's body is the work of the Evil Principle, and that the Soul as partaking of the substance of God was engaged in an eternal war with it, and should thus abuse and mortify it,³ yet the general tendencies of the religious enthusiasm of the time made the practical result common to all, and there can scarce be doubt that the spreading belief in Manes exercised a powerful influence in accelerating progress of orthodox asceticism. The fact that as yet the Church was persecuted and

¹ Thomas's Sassanian Inscriptions, p. 65.—Mainyo-i-khard, West's Ed. xvi. 16 sq. and West's note, p. 160; Glossary, p. 64.—Haug's Essays, Bombay Ed., p. 239.—Shayast la-Shayast xvii. 2 (West's Pahlavi Texts, Pt. I. p. 382, and West's note, p. 284).—Dadistan-i-Dinik, ch. xxviii.—xxx. (Pahlavi Texts, II. 58 sqq.).—Plutarch de Isid. et Osirid. 46.—Justin Mart. Apolog. II.

² Leon. PP. I. Serm. XLII. cap. 5.

³ Epiphanius. Hæres. LXVI.—The same doctrine was held by the Patricians, according to Philastrius, P. III. No. 15.

had no power of imposing its yoke on others bound it to the necessity of maintaining its character for superior sanctity and virtue; and ardent believers could not afford to let themselves be outdone by heretics in the austerities which were popularly received as the conclusive evidence of religious sincerity. We may therefore easily imagine a rivalry in asceticism which, however unconscious, may yet have powerfully stimulated the stern and unbending souls of such men as St. Antony, Malchus, and Hilarion, even as Tertullian, after combating the errors of Montanus, adopted and exaggerated his ascetic heresies. It would be easy to show from the hagiologies how soon the Church virtually assented to the Manichæan notion that the body was to be mortified and macerated as the only mode of triumphing in the perennial struggle with the evil principle, but this would be foreign to our subject. It is sufficient for us here to indicate how narrowly in process of time she escaped from adopting practically, if not theoretically, the Manichæan condemnation of marriage. This is clearly demonstrated by the writings of the orthodox Fathers, who in their extravagant praise of virginity could not escape from decrying wedlock. It was stigmatised as the means of transmitting and perpetuating original sin, an act which necessarily entailed sin on its participants, and one which at best could only look for mercy and pardon and be allowed only on sufferance. It is therefore not surprising if those who were not prepared to join in the progress of asceticism should habitually stigmatise the mortifications of their more enthusiastic brethren as Manichæism in spirit if not in name. Jovinian, it would seem, did not neglect this ready means of attack; nor was he alone, for Jerome complains that the worldly and dissolute sheltered themselves behind the same excuse, and derided as Manichæans all who were pallid and faint

from maceration and fasting.¹ The comparison, indeed, became a not untruthful one, when the Christian and the heretic both adopted the plan of restricting their sacred class from the pleasures of the world—when the Manichæan Elect, who remained unmarried and fasted upon vegetable food, were equivalent to the priesthood, while the Auditors, to whom a larger liberty was allowed, represented the orthodox laity. It is by no means improbable that the tenets of the Manichæans have been exaggerated by their opponents in controversy, and that in process of time, when the Church became avowedly ascetic, there was practically little difference on this point between Manichæism and Orthodoxy. St. Augustin, indeed, represents the Manichæan Faustus as arguing that both in doctrine and practice his sect only followed the example of the Church. He ridiculed the idea that it could prohibit marriage, and asserts positively that it only encouraged those who manifested a desire to persevere in continence. If this is to be received as an authentic exposition of Manichæan principles, it will be seen that the Church was not long in outstripping the heretics.²

In fact, even as early as the time of Cyprian, that saint, in allusion to the parable of the sower, had rated the comparative merits of martyrdom to virginity as one hundred to sixty; while, after martyrdom had gone out of fashion, St. Patrick, in the fifth century, undertook a more elaborate classification in which bishops and doctors of the Church, monks and virgins, were rated at one hundred, ecclesiastics in general and widows professed at sixty, while the faithful laity stand only at thirty.³ It was therefore a heresy for Jovinian to

¹ Hieron. adv. Jovin. I. 3.—Ejusd. Epist. ad Eustoich. c. 5.

² Augustin. Epist. LXXIV. ad Deuterium.—Ejusd. contra Faustum Lib. xxx. c. iv.

³ Cyprian. de Habit. Virgin.—Synod. II. S. Patric. c. 18.

claim equal merit for maidens, wives, and widows; and though St. Jerome, in controverting this, commenced by carefully denying any intentional disrespect towards marriage, still his controversial ardour carried him so far in that direction, that he aroused considerable feeling among reasonable men and was obliged formally and repeatedly to excuse himself. His contempt for marriage, indeed, was so extreme that in spite of the recognised primacy of St. Peter, he considered that apostle as decidedly inferior to St. John, because the one had a wife and the other was a virgin—apparently not observing that, as he denied the marriage of all the apostles save Peter, he was thus relegating the head of the Church to the last place among the holy twelve.¹ St. Augustin recognised the difficulty of reconciling the current views of his time with the necessities of humanity when he wrote a treatise for the purpose of proving the difference between the good of marriage and the evil of carnal desire, which, while it perpetuated the species, likewise perpetuated original sin; and he gave a signal example of the manner in which enthusiastic asceticism sought to improve upon the work of the Creator when he uttered the pious wish that all mankind should abstain from marriage, so that the human race might the sooner come to an end.² St. Martin of Tours was somewhat less extravagant when he was willing to admit that marriage was pardonable, while licentiousness was punishable and virginity glorious; and he was far behind the enthusiasts of his time, for, while he deploras the miserable folly of those who consider marriage to be equal

¹ Hieron. adv. Jovin. I. 2, 26.—Ejusd. Epistt. L. LI, LII.

² Augustin. de Concupisc. et de Nuptiis.—Ejusd. de Bono Conjugali c. x.—Panzini (Confessione di un Prigioniero, p. 193) is not far wrong in suggesting that the learned doctors who thus decri marriage are guilty of the blasphemy of addressing their creator—"Vergognatevi di avere inventato un modo così turpe per darci l'esistenza!"

to virginity, he is likewise obliged to reprove the error of those who were willing only to compare it to lechery—the former belief being evidently much more erroneous than the latter in the Saint's estimation.¹ So a treatise on chastity, which passes under the name of Sixtus III., barely admits that married people can earn eternal life; and it apparently is only the dread of being classed with Manichæans that leads the author to shrink from the conclusions of his own reasoning, and to state that he does not absolutely condemn wedlock or prohibit it to those who cannot restrain their passions.² Not a little Manichæan in its tendency is a declaration of Gregory the Great to Augustine the Apostle of England that connubial pleasures cannot possibly be free from sin; and quite as decided is another assertion of the same Pope that the strictness of monastic life is the only possible mode of salvation for the greater portion of mankind.³ It was the natural practical deduction from this which is drawn by the Penitential of Theodore, when it commands those who contract a first marriage to abstain from entering a church for thirty days, after which they are to perform penance for forty more; while a digamus is subjected to penance for a year, and a trigamus, or one oftener married, for seven years.⁴ When marriage was thus regarded as a sin, we can scarcely be surprised at the practical Manichæism of Epiphanius, who declares that the Church is based upon virginity as on its corner-stone.⁵

This ascetic development, however, was not destined to triumph without occasional efforts at repression. At the close of the third century, the highest authorities

¹ Sulpic. Sever. Dial. II.

² In Mag. Bib. Pat. T. V. P. II. pp. 652, 658.

³ Gregor. P.P. I. Regist. Lib. XI. Epist. lxiv. Respons. 10; Lib. III. Epist. lxxv.

⁴ Theodor. Penitent. Lib. I. c. xiv. 1, 2, 3. (Haddon & Stubbs's Councils, III. 187.)

⁵ Epiphanius. Exposit. Fid. Cathol.

of the Church still condemned the ruthless asceticism, which was subsequently glorified as the loftiest achievement of Christian virtue. Thus in the Apostolic Constitutions, the influence of Manichæism and its kindred sects is as yet only manifested by the opposition aroused to their doctrines; and the necessity of that opposition is indicated by the careful and repeated declaration of the purity and sanctity of the marriage-tie, both as regards the priesthood and the laity. Not less instructive is the bare toleration almost grudgingly extended to vows of celibacy, and the cautious restriction which declares that such vows are not to be held as justifying a disparagement of matrimony.¹ No stronger contrast can be looked for than that produced by little more than a century between the rational piety of these provisions and the extravagant rhapsodies of Jerome, Augustin, and Martin. The calm good sense of Lactantius also takes occasion to reprove the extravagance which regarded all indulgence of the natural affections as a sin requiring repentance and pardon. He assumes indeed that perpetual continence, as being opposed to the law of nature, is not recommended, but only permitted by the Creator, thus reversing the maxims of the zealots.² Equally suggestive are the Apostolic Canons. The sixth of these pronounces deposition on the bishop or priest who separates himself from his wife under pretext of religion; while the fiftieth threatens equally rigorous punishment on the clerk or layman who shall abstain from marriage, from wine, or from meat, not for the purpose of devoting himself to piety, but on account of holding them in abomination—such belief being a slander on the goodness of God, and a calumny on the perfection

¹ *Constit. Apostol.* Lib. IV. c. 14; VI. 11, 14, 26, 27, 28; VIII. 30.

² *Lactant. Instit. Divin.* VI. xvi. xxiii.

of His works.¹ Even a hundred years later there is still an occasional protest to be heard, showing how the more moderate section of the Church still felt the danger to which she was exposed by intemperate ascetic zeal, and how narrow was the path which she had to trace between orthodoxy and heresy. The Fourth Council of Carthage, in 398, prescribing the examination to which all bishops-elect were to be subjected, specifies for inquiry among other points of faith questions as to whether the candidate disapproves of marriage, or condemns second marriages, or prohibits the use of meat.² It shows how readily Manichæism or Catharism might lurk in the asceticism of the most devout.

The tide, however, was fairly on the flood, and the resistance of the more reasonable among ecclesiastics was unavailing. It is true, that the influences which were now so powerful could evidently not be applied to the whole body of believers, as they would only result in gradual extinction or in lawless licentiousness; but as the ecclesiastical body was perpetuated by a kind of spiritual generation, it could, without hazarding a decrease of numbers, be subjected to regulations which should render obligatory the asceticism which as yet had been optional. The only wonder, in fact, is that this had not been earlier attempted. Such a rule, by widening the distinction between laymen and ecclesiastics, would be grateful to the growing sacerdotalism which ere long was to take complete possession of the Church. Such a rule, moreover, was not only indicated by the examples of Buddhism

¹ The fiftieth canon was omitted by Dionysius Exiguus, but was subsequently admitted by the Church, notwithstanding that it proves in the clearest manner the full enjoyment of marriage by all grades of the clergy. The sixth canon (numbered fifth in the full collection), which prohibits the separation of ecclesiastics from their wives, was likewise accepted, although in the eighteenth century Cabassut stigmatises it as heretical.

² Conc. Carthag. IV. c. 1.

and Manichæism, but had abundant precedent among the Pagans of the Empire. More than one passage in classical writers shows that abstinence from women was regarded as an essential prerequisite to certain religious observances, and the existence of this feeling among the primitive Christians, based upon the injunction of Ahimelech, is indicated by St. Paul¹—and this custom, as sacerdotalism developed, and formalism rendered the life of the minister of the altar a ceaseless round of daily service, would practically separate husband and wife. Moreover, much of the Pagan worship subjected its officials to general restrictions of greater or less severity. Diodorus Siculus states that the Egyptian priests were permitted to have but one wife, although unlimited polygamy was allowed to the people; while Chæremon the Stoic, according to St. Jerome, and Plutarch indicate that they were obliged to observe entire continence. The castration of the Galli, the priests of Rhea at Hierapolis, though explained by the myth of Attys, was evidently only a survival of the fierce asceticism which counterbalanced the licentiousness of the older Phœnician worship. The rites of the Gaditanian Hercules were conducted by ministers obliged to observe chastity, and the foot of woman was not permitted to pollute the sacred precincts of the temple; while the priestesses of Gea Eurysternus at Ægæ were required to preserve the strictest celibacy.² The hierophants of Demeter in Athens, were obliged to

¹ Thus Tibullus (Lib. I. El. I.)—

“ Vos quoque abesse procul jubeo, discedite ab aris,
 Quis tulit hesterna gaudia nocte Venus.
 Casta placent Superis.”

Cf. Juvenal. vi. 534-5.—Ælii Lamprid. Alex. Sever. xxix.—Porphy. de Abstinent. II. 50; IV. 6, 7.—Arriani de Epictet. Disertt. Lib. III. c. xxi.—I. Cor. vii. 5.

² Diod. Sicul. I. 80.—Hieron. adv. Jovin. II. 13.—Plut. de Isid. et Osirid. 2.—Lucian. de Syria Dea xv.—Sil. Ital. Punicor. III. 21-8.—Cf. Virg. Æneid, vi. 661.—Pausan. vii. xxv. 8. Egyptian customs in this respect may perhaps be traced to the vow of continence made by Isis after the death of her husband-brother, Osiris (Diod. Sicul. I. 27). The Emperor Julian's neo-platonic explanation of the Syrian asceticism (Orat V.) is not without analogy to some of the rhapsodies of the fathers in the praise of virginity.

maintain unsullied continence. The priestesses of the Delphic Apollo, the Achaian Hera, the Scythian Artemis, and the Thespian Heracles were virgins. In Africa, those of Ceres were separated from their husbands with a rigour of asceticism which forbade even a kiss to their orphaned children; while in Rome the name of Vestal has passed into a proverb, although it is true that while they were only six or seven in number, the distinguished honours and privileges accorded to them were insufficient to induce parents to devote them to the holy service, and there was difficulty in keeping the ranks filled.¹

The earliest recorded attempt by the Church to imitate these restrictions, was made in 305 by the Spanish Council of Elvira, which declared, in the most positive manner, that all concerned in the ministry of the altar should maintain entire abstinence from their wives under pain of forfeiting their positions. It further endeavoured to put an end to the scandals of the *Agapetæ*, or female companions of the clergy, which the rigour of this canon was so well fitted to increase, by decreeing that no ecclesiastic should permit any woman to dwell with him, except a sister or a daughter, and even these only when bound by a vow of virginity.² This was simply the legislation of a local synod, and its canons were not entitled to respect or obedience beyond the limits of the churches directly represented. Its action may not improbably be attributed to the commanding influence of one of its leading members, Osius, Bishop of Cordova, and that action had no result in inducing the Church at large to adopt the new rule, for some ten years

¹ Juliani Imp. Orat. V.—Tertull. de Monogam. xvii. ; ad Uxorem I. 6 ; de Exhort. Castit. xiii.—Hieron. adv. Jovin. I. 26.—Pausan. IX. xxvii. 5.—Sueton. Octav. xxxviii.

² Concil. Eliberit. can. 27, 33.—The 29th canon of the first council of Arles, held in 314, if genuine, marks the extension of the movement eastward, but as it is contained in but one MS., Mansi supposes it probably to belong to some subsequent and forgotten synod. It is almost identical with Concil. Telensis ann. 386 can. 9 ; and, whatever be its date, its phraseology evidently indicates that it records the first introduction of the rule in its locality.

later were held the more important Councils of Ancyra and Neocæsarea, and the absence of any allusion to it in their proceedings seems to fix for us the discipline of the period in this respect, at least in the East. By the canons of Ancyra we learn that marriage in orders was still permitted, as far as the diaconate, provided the postulant at the time of ordination declared his desire to enjoy the privilege and asserted his inability to remain single. This is even less stringent than the rule quoted above from the Apostolic Constitutions, and proves incontestably that there was no thought of imposing any restriction upon the intercourse between the married clergy and their wives. By the Council of Neocæsarea it was provided that a priest marrying in orders should be deposed, but a heavier punishment was reserved for what was then, in reverse of the standard of later times, regarded as the greater sin of licentiousness. That no interference was intended by this with the relations existing between those who had married in the lower grades and their wives, is shown by another canon which deprives of his functions any priest who submitted to the commission of adultery by his wife without separating from her—being a practical extension of the Levitical rule, now by common consent adopted as a portion of ecclesiastical discipline.¹ Yet, even in the East, there was a growing tendency to more rigid asceticism than this, for, about the same period, we find Eusebius stating that it is becoming in those who are engaged in the ministry of God, to abstain from their wives, though his argument in justification of this is based upon the multiplicity of occupation, which in civilised society rendered it desirable for those enlisted in the service of the Church to be relieved from family cares and anxieties.²

¹ Concil. Ancyran. ann. 314 can. 9.—Concil. Neocæsar. ann. 314 can. 1, 8.

² Euseb. Demonstr. Evang. I. ix.

CHAPTER III

THE COUNCIL OF NICÆA

THUS far the Church had grown and strengthened without any recognised head or acknowledged legislative power. Each patriarch or metropolitan, surrounded by his provincial synod, established regulations for his own region, with no standard but the canon of Scripture, being responsible only to the opinion of his compeers, who might refuse to receive his clergy to communion. Under this democratic autonomy the Church had outlived persecution, had repudiated and cast out innumerable successive heresies, and, thanks to external pressure, had managed to preserve its unity. The time, however, had now come for a different order of things. Constantine, following the dictates of his unerring political sagacity, allied himself with the Christians and professed conversion; and Christianity, powerful even when merely existing on sufferance, became the religion of the state. As such, the maintenance of its unity seemed to be a political necessity, to accomplish which required some central power entitled to general respect and implicit obedience. The subtle disputations concerning the fast-spreading Arian heresy were not likely to be stilled by the mere *ipse dixit* of any of the Apostolic Sees, nor by the secular wisdom of crown lawyers and philosophic courtiers. A legislative tribunal, which should be at once a court of last appeal and a senate empowered to enact laws of binding force, as the final decisions of the Church Universal, was not an unpromising suggestion. Such an assemblage had hitherto been impossible, for the distances

to be traversed and the expenses of the journey would have precluded an attendance sufficiently numerous to earn the title of Œcumenic; but an imperial rescript which put the governmental machinery of posts at the service of the prelates could smooth all difficulties, and enable every diocese to send its representative. In the year 325, therefore, the FIRST GENERAL COUNCIL assembled at Nicæa. With the fruitlessness of its endeavours to extinguish the Arian controversy we have nothing to do, but in its legislative capacity its labours had an influence upon our subject which merits a closer examination than would appear necessary from the seemingly unimportant nature of the proceedings themselves.

With the full belief that the canons of a general council were the direct operation of the Holy Ghost, they were of course entitled to unquestioning reverence, and those of Nicæa have always been regarded as of special and peculiar authority, cutting off all debate on any question to which they might be applicable. The third of the series has been the main reliance of sacerdotal controversialists, and has been constantly appealed to as the unanswerable justification for enforcing the rule of discipline which enjoined celibacy on all admitted to holy orders. Its simple phraseology would hardly seem to warrant such conclusion. "The Great Synod has strictly forbidden to bishop, priest, and deacon, and to every ecclesiastic, to have a 'subintroductam mulierem,' unless perhaps a mother, a sister, an aunt, or such person only as may be above suspicion."¹

¹ I give the version of Dionysius Exiguus: "Interdixit per omnia magna synodus, non episcopo, non presbytero, non diacono, nec alicui omnino qui in clero est, licere subintroductam habere mulierem; nisi forte matrem, aut sororem, aut amitam, vel eas tantum personas quæ suspiciones effugiunt."

An Arabic version of the Nicene canons specially limits the prohibition to bishops, and to unmarried priests and deacons.—"Decernimus ut episcopi non habitent cum mulieribus. . . . Idem decernitur de omni sacerdote cœlibe, idemque de diaconis qui sine uxore sunt." (Harduin. Concil. I. 463.)—This expresses nearly the discipline of the Greek Church.

This is the only allusion to the subject in the Nicene canons. As it does not include wives among those exempted from the prohibition of residence, we can hardly be surprised that those who believe celibacy to be of apostolic origin should assume that it was intended to pronounce an absolute separation between husband and wife. As the Council of Elvira, however, contains the only enunciation of such a rule, previous to that of Nicæa, and as those of Ancyra and Neocæsarea and the Apostolic Constitutions and Canons, directly or indirectly, allow the conjugal relations of ecclesiastics to remain undisturbed, we are certainly justified in assuming the impossibility that an innovation of so much importance would be introduced in the discipline of the universal Church without being specifically designated and commanded in terms which would admit of no misunderstanding. That the meaning of the canon is really and simply that alone which appears on the surface—to put an end to the disorders and scandals arising from the improper female companions of unmarried priests—is, moreover, I think, susceptible of easy demonstration.

The term “subintroducta mulier”—*γυνή συνεισακτος*—is almost invariably used in an unfavourable sense, and is equivalent to the “*fœmina extranea*,” and nearly to the “*focaria*” and “*concubina*” of later times, as well as to the “*agapeta*” and “*dilecta*” of earlier date. We have already seen how Cyprian, seventy-five years before, denounced the *agapetæ* who even then were so common, and whose companionship proved so disastrous to all parties, but the custom continued, and its evil consequences became more and more openly and shamelessly displayed. In 314 the Council of Ancyra denounced it in terms implying its public recognition.¹ At the close of the same century, Jerome still finds in it ample

¹ Concil. Ancyran. can. 18.

material for his fiery indignation; and his denunciations manifest that it was still a corroding cancer in the purity of the Church, prevailing to an extent that rendered its suppression a matter of the utmost importance.¹ The testimony of Epiphanius is almost equally strong, and shows that it was a source of general popular reproach.² Such a reform was therefore well worthy the attention of the Nicene fathers, and that this was the special object of the canon is indicated by Jerome himself, who appeals to it as the authority under which an ecclesiastic refusing to separate himself from his agapeta could be punished; it was to be read to the offender, and if he neglected obedience to its commands, he was to be anathematised.³

That it had no bearing upon the wives of priests can moreover be proved by several reasons. The restriction on matrimony has never at any time extended below the subdiaconate, the inferior grades of the secular clergy having always been free to live with their wives, even in the periods of the most rigid asceticism. The canon, however, makes no distinction. Its commands are applicable “alicui omnino qui in clero est.” To suppose, therefore, that it was intended to include wives in its restriction is to prove too much—the *reductio ad absurdum* is complete.⁴ Equally convincing is the fact

¹ Pudet dicere, proh nefas! triste sed verum est. Unde in ecclesias Agapetarum pestis introiit? unde sine nuptiis aliud nomen uxorum? immo unde novum concubinarum genus? Plus inferam. Unde meretrices univiræ? eadem domo, uno cubiculo sæpe tenentur et lectulo: et suspiciosos nos vocant si aliquid extimemus. Frater sororem virginem deserit, cœlibum spernit virgo germanum, fratrem quærit extraneum: et cum in eodem proposito esse se simulent, quærent alienorum spiritale solatium, ut domi habeant carnale commercium. (Epist. xxii. ad Eustoch. c. 5.) It should be observed that celibacy had become the rule of the Church at the time when Jerome wrote thus.

² Accusant nimirum eos qui in ecclesia dilectas appellatas, aliunde introductas ac habitantes fœminas habent.—Panar. Hæres. LXIII.

³ Hieron. Epist. ad Oceanum de Vit. Cleric.

⁴ When, during the demoralisation of the tenth century, the council of Augsburg made a spasmodic effort to revive the neglected rule of celibacy, it endeavoured to include the lower orders of the clergy within its scope. Ratramnus of Corvey also does not fail to point out that such was the incontrovertible meaning of the Nicene canon, which in his time was universally considered to refer to marriage.

that when, towards the close of the century, the rule of celibacy and separation was introduced, and Siricius and Innocent I. ransacked the Gospels for texts of more than doubtful application with which to support the innovation, they made no reference whatever to the Nicene canon.¹ Had it been understood at that period as bearing on the subject, it would have been all-sufficient in itself. The reverence felt for the Council of Nicæa was too great, and the absolute obedience claimed for its commands was too willingly rendered, for such an omission to be possible. That Siricius and Innocent should not have adduced it is therefore proof incontrovertible that it was as yet construed as directed solely against the improper companions of the clergy. If further evidence to the same effect be required, it may be found in a law of Honorius, promulgated in 420, in which, while forbidding the clergy to keep "*mulieres extraneæ*" under the name of "*sorores*," and permitting only mothers, daughters, and sisters, he adds that the desire for chastity does not prohibit the residence of wives whose merits have assisted in rendering their husbands worthy of the priesthood.² The object of the law is evidently to give practical force and effect to the Nicene canon, and the imperial power under Honorius had sunk to too low an ebb for us to imagine the possibility of his venturing to tamper with and overrule the decrees of the most venerable council.³ Even in the sixth century the Nicene canon was not yet considered to have the meaning subsequently attributed to it, for otherwise there would have been no necessity of inserting a provision prohibiting the marriage of priests

¹ Siricii Epist. 2.—Innocent. ad Victricium, ad Exuperium, &c.

² Lib. XVI. Cod. Theod. Tit. ii. l. 44.

³ The learned and orthodox Zaccaria concludes that the Nicene canon was only intended to forbid the irregular connexions with *agapetæ*, whence he ingeniously argues that as the Council of Nicæa did not in any way forbid priestly marriage, the origin of the rule of celibacy is to be assigned to the Apostles.—*Storia Polemica*, p. 90.

in the account forged at that time of a Roman council said to have been held by Silvester I.¹

If the proof thus adduced be as convincing as it appears to me, the story of Paphnutius is not so important as to deserve the amount of controversy that has been expended upon it, and a brief reference is all that seems necessary. Socrates and Sozomen relate that while the canons of the council were under consideration, some of the fathers desired to introduce one interdicting all intercourse between those in orders and their wives. Whereupon Paphnutius, an Egyptian bishop, protested against the heavy burden to be thus imposed upon the clergy, quoting the well-known declaration of St. Paul to the Hebrews respecting the purity of the marriage-bed. The influence of St. Paphnutius was great, for he was a confessor of peculiar sanctity; the loss of his right eye bore testimony to the severity of the persecutions which he had endured, and his immaculate chastity, preserved from boyhood in a monastery, rendered his motives and his impartiality on the subject unimpeachable. The bishops, who had been on the point of accepting the proposed canon, were convinced, and the project was abandoned.²

If this account be true, it of course follows that the third canon has no bearing on the wives of ecclesiastics, and that the enforcement of celibacy dates from a later period than that of the council. Accordingly, when the Nicene canon was found necessary to give authority to the rule, it became requisite to discredit the story of Paphnutius. The first attempt to do this, which has come under my observation, occurred during the fierce contentions aroused by the efforts of Gregory VII. to restore the almost forgotten law of celibacy. Bernald of Constance has left a record of a discussion held by him

¹ Pseudo-Concil. Roman. sub. Silvest. can. xix. (Migne's Patrol. VIII. 840).

² Socrat. H. E. Lib. I. c. 11.—Sozomen. H. E. Lib. I. c. 22.

in 1076 with Alboin, a zealous defender of sacerdotal marriage, in which the authenticity of the story is hotly contested.¹ Bernald's logic may be condensed into the declaration that he considered it much more credible that Sozomen was in error than that so holy a man as St. Paphnutius could have been guilty of such blasphemy. No reason whatever was vouchsafed when Gregory VII. caused the story to be condemned in the Synod of Rome of 1079.² In spite of this, Pius IV., in 1564, admitted its authenticity in his epistle to the German princes who had requested of him the concession of sacerdotal marriage.³ Later writers, from Bellarmine down, have, however, entered into elaborate arguments to prove its impossibility. They rest their case principally on the assertion of the existence of celibacy as a rule anterior to the council, and on its enforcement afterwards; on the fact that Socrates and Sozomen flourished a little more than a century after the council, and that they are therefore untrustworthy; and that the name of St. Paphnutius does not appear in the acts of the council. To the first of these objections the preceding pages afford, I think, a sufficient answer; to the second it can only be replied that we must be content with the best testimony attainable, and that there is none better than that of the two historians, whose general truthfulness and candour are acknowledged;⁴ and to the third it may be remarked that of the 318 bishops present,

¹ Bernald. *Altercat. de Incont. Sacerd.*

² *Monumenta Gregoriana* (Migne's *Patrol. T. CXLVIII.* p. 1378).

³ *Verum quidem est, quod ob ministrorum Dei defectum in primitiva ecclesia conjugati admittebantur ad sacerdotium, ut ex canonibus apostolorum et Paphnutii responso liquet, et in Concilio Nicæno.*—(Respons. Pii. IV. *ap. Le Plat, Concil. Trident. Monument. VI.* 337.)

⁴ *Sed præ cæteris omnibus Socrates et Sozomeus ac Theodoretus totius antiquitatis judicio celebrati sunt, qui ab iis temporibus exorsi, in quibus Eusebius scribendi finem fecerat, ad Theodosii junioris tempora opus suum perduxerunt.*—*H. Valesii Præfat.*

but 222 affixed their signatures to the acts, while Rufinus and Theodoret both expressly assert that Paphnutius was present.¹ That the statement was not discredited until controversialists found it desirable to do so, is shown by its retention in the full account of the proceedings of the council by Gelasius of Cyzicus, in the fifth century, and also by its repetition in the "Historia Tripartita," a condensation of the narratives of Socrates, Sozomen, and Theodoret, compiled in the sixth century by Cassiodorus, whose irreproachable orthodoxy would hardly have permitted him to give it currency if it had then been considered as blasphemous as the writers of the eleventh century would have us believe. In fact, the learned and orthodox Christian Wolff, in his great work on the Councils, rejects as trifling the assertion that the story of Paphnutius is fictitious. His theory of the whole matter is that the Western Church endeavoured to subject the Eastern to its views on the celibacy required of the priesthood; that the effort failed, in consequence of the opposition of Paphnutius, and that the canon adopted had reference merely to the scandals of the Agapetæ.²

Various indications have been collected by controversialists to show that for some time after the Council of Nicæa no interference was attempted with married priests. Of these, one or two will suffice.

St. Athanasius, whose orthodoxy it would not be prudent for any one to question, and whose appearance during his diaconate at the Council of Nicæa first attracted general attention to his commanding abilities, has left us convincing testimony as to the perfect freedom allowed

¹ Theodoret. *Hist. Eccles. Lib. i. c. 7.*

So also Rufinus (*Hist. Eccles. Lib. x. c. 4*): "Fuit præterea in illo concilio et Paphnutius homo Dei, episcopus Ægypti partibus, confessor, etc.," but he makes no allusion to the incident related by Socrates and Sozomen.

² *Act. Concil. Nicæn. II. xxxii.* (Harduin. I. 438).—*Hist. Tripart. II. 13.*—*Chr. Lupi Opp. I. 239* (Venet. 1724).

during his time to all classes of ecclesiastics. An Egyptian monk named Dracontius had been elected to an episcopate, and hesitated to accept the dignity lest its duties should prove incompatible with the fulfilment of his vows. To remove these scruples, Athanasius addressed him an epistle containing various arguments, among which was the declaration that in his new sphere of action he would find no difficulty in carrying out whatever rules he might prescribe for himself. "Many bishops," said the Saint, "have not contracted matrimony, while, on the other hand, monks have become fathers. Again, we see bishops who have children, and monks who take no thought of having posterity."¹ The tenor of the whole passage is such as to show that no laws had yet been enacted to control individual action in such matters, and while rigid asceticism was largely practised, it was to be admired as the result of private conviction, and not as mere enforced submission to an established rule.

Testimony equally unequivocal is afforded by the case of St. Gregory Theologos, Bishop of Nazianzum. He relates that his father, who was likewise a St. Gregory Bishop of Nazianzum, was converted about the period of the Nicene Council, and was shortly afterwards admitted to the priesthood and created bishop. His mother, St. Nonna, prayed earnestly for male issue, saw her future son St. Gregory in a prophetic vision, and devoted him, before his birth, to the service of God. That this occurred after his father's admission to orders is shown by the address which he represents the latter as making to him, "I have passed more years in offering the sacrifice than measure your whole life,"²

¹ Epist. ad Dracontium.

² Οὐπω τοσούτον ἐκμετρηκας βιον,
'Ὅσος διηλθε θυσιαων ἐμοι χρονος.

while the birth of a younger son, Cæsarius, shows that conjugal relations continued undisturbed. St. Gregory evidently felt that neither shame nor irregularity attached to his birth during the sacred ministry of his father.

seem to me successfully controverted by Calixtus. (*De Conjug. Cleric.* Ed. 1783, pp. 261-74.) The chapter devoted to this question by Zaccaria (*Storia Polem.* Lib. I. cap. vii.) is an example of desperate special pleading.

CHAPTER IV

LEGISLATION

THUS far the progress of asceticism had been the result of moral influence alone. Those who saw in the various forms of abstinence and mortification the only path to salvation, and those who may have felt that worldly advantages of power or reputation would compensate them for the self-inflicted restrictions which they underwent, already formed a numerous body in the Church, but as yet had not acquired the numerical ascendancy requisite to enable them to impose upon their brethren the rules which they had adopted for their own guidance. The period was one of transition, and for sixty years after the Council of Nicæa there was doubtless a struggle for supremacy, not perhaps the less severe because at this late date we can but dimly trace its outlines amid the records of the fierce Arian controversy which constitutes the ecclesiastical history of the time, and which absorbed the attention of writers almost to the exclusion of everything else.

The first triumph of the ascetic party was in establishing recognised restrictions on those who had voluntarily assumed vows of celibacy. With them, at least, the case was clear. Aspiring to no rank in the Church, they simply dedicated themselves to God, and pledged themselves to lives of abstinence. Their backsliding caused scandal to the Church, which, if it were held responsible in the eyes of men for their conduct, must necessarily assume the power to control their mode of life, while the fact of simply holding them to the per-

formance of vows solemnly undertaken could not reasonably be regarded as an arbitrary stretch of authority. These voluntary vows, which speedily led to the establishment of the vast fabric of monachism, will form the subject of a subsequent chapter, and need not be further alluded to here.

Another move in the direction of asceticism was the prohibition by the Council of Laodicea in 352 of women serving as priests or presiding over the churches.¹ Although in later Judaism the Temple service was confined to men, the examples of Deborah and Huldah show that in earlier times women were considered as capable of inspiration and were sometimes revered as prophets; the Gentiles, among whom the infant Churches were founded, had priestesses almost everywhere actively employed in the duties of worship and sacrifice; and it would have been strange if women, to whom the propagation of the Gospel was so greatly owing, had not been sometimes admitted to the function of conducting the simple services of the primitive Church. We learn from St. Paul that Phœbe was a deacon (*διάκονος*) of the Church at Cenchrea;² the Apostolic Constitutions contain a regular formula for their ordination;³ and the canon of Laodicea shows that until the middle of the fourth century they still occasionally occupied recognised positions in the active ministry of the Church. They could not have been numerous, or the references to them in the history of the period would have been more frequent, and the enforcement of their disability for divine service would have required constant repetition in the canons of the general and local synods; but unquestion-

¹ Concil. Laodicens. can. xi.

² Romans XVI. 1. The number of women alluded to by St. Paul in this chapter shows how active they were in disseminating the faith. Junia he dignifies with the title of Apostle.

³ Constitt. Apostol. Lib. VIII. c. xxvi.

ably the growth of the veneration of the Virgin and of female saints would have sufficed to prevent the inconsistency of regarding women as absolutely unfitted for any function in public worship, had it not been for the rising influence of asceticism, which demanded the separation of the sexes, and insisted upon an artificial purity in all concerned in the ministry of the altar. Even in the tenth century, so good a celibatarian as Atto of Vercelli was perfectly willing to assert that in the early Church, when the labourers were few, women were admitted to share in the ceremonies of divine worship;¹ and, as late as the fourteenth, Bishop Alvaro Pelagio complains that women take orders, though they cannot legally do so, fulminate excommunications and hear confessions.²

Still, as yet, the secular clergy were at liberty to follow the dictates of their own consciences, and if an attempt was made to erect the necessity of ascetic abstinence into an article of either faith or discipline, the Church was prompt to stamp it with the seal of unequivocal reprobation. Eustathius, Bishop of Sebastia, in Cappadocia, himself the son of the Bishop of Cappadocian Cæsarea, Eulalius, carried his zeal for purity to so great an excess that his exaggerated notions of the inferiority of the married state trenched closely upon Manichæism, although his heretical rejection of canonical fasting showed that on other points he was bitterly opposed to the tenets of that obnoxious sect. His

¹ Atton. Vercell. Epist. viii.—Epiphanius (Hæres. LXXIX.) denies that women had ever been permitted to rise beyond the diaconate, and asserts that their functions in that grade were simply to render to women such offices as decency forbade to men. In the West, the ordination of deaconesses was prohibited by Concil. Arausican. I. ann. 441 can. xxvi.; Concil. Epaonens. ann. 513 can. xxi., and Concil. Aurelianens. II. ann. 533 can. xviii., on account of disorders arising through the fragility of the sex, as was perhaps not unnatural, after the adoption of enforced celibacy. It was probably for the sake of order that St. Paul forbade women from teaching or asking questions in church (I. Cor. XIV. 34, 35; I. Tim. II. 11, 12).

² Alvar. Pelag. de Planctu Ecclesiæ, Lib. II. Art. xlv. Nos. 61, 72.

horror of matrimony went so far as to lead him to the dogma that married people were incapable of salvation; he forbade the offering of prayer in houses occupied by them; and he declared that the blessings and sacraments of priests living with their wives were to be rejected, and their persons treated with contempt.¹

There were not wanting those to whom even these extreme opinions were acceptable, and Eustathius speedily accumulated around him a host of devotees whose proselyting zeal threatened a stubborn heresy. The excesses attributed to their inability to endure the practical operation of their leader's doctrines may be true, or may be merely the accusations which are customarily disseminated when it becomes necessary to invest schismatics with odium. Be this as it may, the orthodox clergy felt the importance of promptly repressing opinions which, although at variance with the creed of the Church, were yet dangerously akin to the extreme views of those who were regarded as pre-eminently holy. Eulalius, the father of the heresiarch, himself presided at a local synod held at Cæsarea, and condemned his son. This did not suffice to repress the heresy, and about the year 362 a provincial council was assembled at Gangra, where fifteen bishops, among whom was Eulalius, pronounced their verdict on Eustathius and his misguided followers, and drew up a series of canons defining the orthodox belief

¹ Declaratum est enim hos eosdem nuptias accusare et docere quod nullus in conjugali positus gradu spem habeat apud Deum. . . . In domibus conjugatorum nec orationes quidem debere celebrari, persuasisse in tantum ut easdem fieri vetent. . . . Presbyteros vero qui matrimonia contraxerunt sperni debere dicunt, nec sacramenta quæ ab eis conficiuntur, attingi.—Concil. Gangrens. Procem.

So also Socrates—"Benedictionem presbyteri habentis uxorem, quam lege cum esset laicus duxisset, tanquam scelus declinandum præcepit."—Hist. Eccl. Lib. II. c. 33.

After the specific condemnation of this latter doctrine by the undoubtedly orthodox council of Gangra, it is somewhat remarkable to see it enunciated and erected into a law of the Church by Gregory VII. in his internecine conflict with the married priests. Thus the heresy of one age becomes the received and adopted faith of another.

on the questions involved. That they were received by the Church as authoritative is evident from their being included in the collections of Dionysius and Isidor. These canons anathematise all who refuse the sacraments of a married priest, and who hold that he cannot officiate on account of his marriage; also those who, priding themselves on their professed virginity, arrogantly despise their married brethren, and who hold that the duties of wedlock are incompatible with salvation.¹ The whole affords a singularly distinct record of the doctrines accepted at this period, showing that there was no authority admitted for imposing restrictions of any kind on the married clergy. It probably was an effort on the part of the conservatives of the Church to restrain their more progressive brethren, and they no doubt gladly availed themselves of the wild theories of Eustathius to stigmatise the extravagances which were daily becoming more influential. At the same time, they were careful to shield themselves behind a qualified concession to the ascetic spirit of the period, for in an epilogue they apologetically declare their humble admiration of virginity, and their belief that pious continence is most acceptable to God.²

In little more than twenty years after this emphatic denunciation of all interference with married priests, we find the first absolute command addressed to the higher orders of the clergy to preserve inviolate celibacy. So abrupt a contrast provokes an inquiry into its possible

¹ Concil. Gangrens. c. 4.—Si quis decernit presbyterum conjugatum tanquam occasione nuptiarum quod offerre non debeat, et ab ejus oblatione ideo se abstinet, anathema sit.—I give the Isidorian version adopted by Gratian, Dist. XXVIII. c. 15, and by Burchard, Lib. III. 75. That of Dionysius Exiguus is somewhat different.

Can. 10.—Si quis propter Deum virginitatem professus in conjugio positos per arrogantiam vituperaverit, anathema sit.—Can. 1 and 9 are directed against those who condemn marriage, and teach that it affords no chance of heaven.

² Concil. Gangrens. Epilog.

causes, as no records have reached us exhibiting any special reasons for the change.

While the admirers of ascetic virginity became louder and more enthusiastic in their praises of that blessed condition, it is fair to presume that they were daily more sensible of a lower standard of morality in the ministers of the altar, and that their susceptibilities were more deeply shocked by the introduction and growth of abuses. While the Church was kept purified by the fires of persecution, it offered few attractions for the worldly and ambitious. Its ministry was too dangerous to be sought except by the pure and zealous Christian, and there was little danger that pastors would err except from over-tenderness of conscience or unthinking ardour. When, however, its temporal position was incalculably improved by its domination throughout the empire, it became the avenue through which ambition might attain its ends, while its wealth held out prospects of idle self-indulgence to the slothful and the sensual. A new class of men, dangerous alike from their talents or their vices, would thus naturally find their way into the fold, and corruption, masked under the semblance of austere virtue, or displayed with careless cynicism, would not be long in penetrating into the Holy of Holies. Immorality must have been flagrant when, in 370, the temporal power felt the necessity of interfering by a law of the Emperor Valentinian, which denounced severe punishment on ecclesiastics who visited the houses of widows and virgins.¹ When an increasing laxity of morals thus threatened to overcome the purity of the Church, it is not surprising that the advocates of asceticism should have triumphed over the more moderate and conservative party, and that they should improve their victory by seeking a remedy for existing evils in such laws as

¹ Lib. XVI. Cod. Theod. Tit. ii. 1. 20.

should render the strictest continence imperative on all who entered into holy orders. They might reasonably argue that, if nothing else were gained, the change would at least render the life of the priest less attractive to the vicious and the sensual, and that the rigid enforcement of the new rules would elevate the character of the Church by preventing such wolves from seeking a place among the sheep. If by such legislation they only added fresh fuel to the flame; if they heightened immorality by hypocrisy, and drove into vagabond licentiousness those who would perhaps have been content with lawful marriage, they only committed an error which has ever been too common with earnest men of one idea to warrant special surprise.

Another object may not improbably have entered into the motives of those who introduced the rule. The Church was daily receiving vast accessions of property from the pious zeal of its wealthy members, the death-bed repentance of despairing sinners, and the munificence of emperors and prefects, while the effort to procure the inalienability of its possessions dates from an early period.¹ Its acquisitions, both real and personal, were of course exposed to much greater risk of dilapidation when the ecclesiastics in charge of its widely scattered riches had families for whose provision a natural parental anxiety might be expected to override the sense of duty in discharging the trust confided to them. The simplest mode of averting the danger might therefore seem to be to relieve the churchman of the cares of paternity, and, by cutting asunder all the ties of family and kindred, to

¹ So great was the influx of wealth to the Church from the pious legacies of the faithful that it became an evil of magnitude to the state, and in 370 a law of Valentinian pronounced null and void all such testamentary provisions made by those under priestly influence (*Lib. xvi. Cod. Theod. Tit. ii. l. 20*)—a provision repeated in 390 (*Ibid. l. 27*) with such additional details as show its successful evasion during the interval. Godefroi, in his notes to these laws (*T. VI. pp. 48-50, 60-64*), has collected much curious matter bearing on the subject.

bind him completely and for ever to the Church and to that alone. This motive, as we shall see, was openly acknowledged as a powerful one in later times, and it no doubt served as an argument of weight in the minds of those who urged and secured the adoption of the canon.

It appears to me not unreasonable to suppose that all these various motives lent additional force to the zeal for the purity of the Church, and to the undoubting belief in the necessity of perpetual celibacy, which impelled the popes, about the year 385, to issue the first definite command imposing it as an absolute rule of discipline on the ministers of the altar. The question evidently was one which largely occupied the minds of men, and the conclusion was reached progressively. A Roman synod, to which the date of 384 is conjecturally assigned, answered a series of interrogatories propounded by the bishops of Gaul, among which was one relating to the chastity of the priesthood. To this the response was rather argumentatory and advisory in its character than imperative; the continence of the higher grades of ecclesiastics was insisted on, but no definite punishment was ordered for its violation¹—and no maxim in legislation is better understood than that a law without a penalty expressed is practically a dead letter. Allusion was made to previous efforts to enforce the observance in various Churches; surprise was expressed that light should be sought for on such a question—for the Gallic prelates had evidently been in doubt respecting it—and numerous reasons were alleged in a manner to show that the subject was as yet open to argument, and could not be assumed as proved or be decided by authority alone. These

¹ Synod. Roman. ad Gallos Episc. Respons. c. 3.—The date of this synod is not certain, but the year mentioned in the text is the earliest to which it is assigned. By some authorities it has been attributed to 398, and Hardouin suggests that it may even have been held under Innocent I.

reasons may be briefly summed up as consisting of references to the well-known texts referred to in a previous chapter, together with a vague assertion of the opinion of the Fathers to the same effect. Allusion was made to the inconsistency of exhortations to virginity proceeding from those who themselves were involved in family cares and duties, a reasonable view when we consider how much of ecclesiastical machinery by this time turned on monachism; and the necessity was urged of bishops, priests, and deacons preserving the purity requisite to fit them for the daily sacrifice of the altar and the ministration of the sacraments. This latter point was based upon the assumption of a similar abstinence being imposed by the old law on the Levites during their term of service in the Temple, and the example of the pagan priesthood was indignantly adduced to shame those who could entertain a sacrilegious doubt upon a matter so self-evident.¹ The conclusion arrived at was definite, but, as I have already remarked, no means were suggested or commanded for its enforcement.

Not many months later Pope Damasus died, but the cause was safe in the hands of his successor. Scarcely had Siricius ascended the pontifical throne, when, in 385, he addressed an epistle to Himerius, Archbishop of Tarragona, expressing his grief and indignation that the

¹ "Certe idololatræ, ut impietates exercent et dæmonibus immolent, imperant sibi continentiam muliebrem, et ab escis quoque se purgari volunt, et me interrogas si sacerdos Dei vivi spiritualia oblaturus sacrificia purgatus perpetuo debeat esse, an totus in carne carnis curam debeat facere?"

If all the postulates be granted, the reasoning is unanswerable, and as the precedents of the Old Testament have been relied upon in all arguments since the time of Siricius, it may be worth while to refer to the caution of Ahimelech before giving the shew-bread to David (I. Sam. 21) as one of the texts most constantly quoted, and to the residence of Zacharias in the Temple during his term of ministration (Luke i. 23), which was frequently instanced. These are certainly more germane to the matter than the linen breeches provided for Aaron and his sons (Exod. xxviii. 42-3), by which the Venerable Bede assures us (De Tabernac. Lib. III. c. 9) "significatum esse sacerdotes Novi Testamenti aut virgines esse, aut contracta cum uxoribus fœdera dissolvisse."

Spanish clergy should pay so little regard to the sanctity of their calling as to maintain relations with their wives. It is evident from the tenor of the decretal that Himerius had been unable to enforce the new discipline, and had appealed to Rome for assistance in breaking down the stubborn resistance which he had encountered, for allusion is made to some of the refractory who had justified themselves by the freedom of marriage allowed to the Levites under the old law, while others had expressed their regret and had declared their sin to be the result of ignorance. Siricius adopted a much firmer tone than his predecessor. He indulged in less elaboration of argument; a few texts, more or less apposite; an expression of wonder that the rule should be called in question; a distinct assertion of its application to the three grades of bishops, priests, and deacons; a sentence of expulsion on all who dared to offer resistance, and a promise of pardon for those who had offended through ignorance, allowing them to retain their positions as long as they observed complete separation from their wives, though even then they were pronounced incapable of all promotion—such was the first definitive canon, prescribing and enforcing sacerdotal celibacy, exhibited by the records of the Church.¹

The confident manner in which the law is thus laid down as incontrovertible and absolute might almost make us doubt whether it were not older than the preceding pages have shown it to be, if Siricius had not confessed the weakness of the cause by adopting a very different tone within a year. In 386 he addressed the Church of Africa, sending it certain canons adopted by a Roman synod. Of these the first eight relate to observances about which there was at that time no question, and

¹ Siricii Epist. i. c. 7.—It would seem from this decretal (cap. 8, 9, 10, 11) that even the rule excluding digami was wholly neglected. Siricius further (cap. 13) urges the admission of monks to holy orders, for the purpose of providing a priesthood vowed to chastity.

they are expressed in the curtest and most decisive phraseology. The ninth canon is conceived in a spirit totally different. It persuades, exhorts, and entreats that the three orders shall preserve their purity; it argues as to the propriety and necessity of the matter, which it supports by various texts, but it does not assume that the observance thus enjoined is even a custom, much less a law, of the Church; it urges that the scandal of marriage be removed from the clergy, but it threatens no penalty for refusal.¹ Siricius was too imperious and too earnest in all that he undertook for us to imagine that he would have adopted pleading and entreaty if he had felt that he possessed the right to command; nor would he have condescended to beg for the removal of an opprobrium if he were speaking with all the authority of unquestioned tradition to enforce a canon which had become an unalterable part of ecclesiastical discipline.

It is observable that in these decretals no authority is quoted later than the Apostolic texts, which, as we have seen, have but little bearing on the subject. No canons of councils, no epistles of earlier popes, no injunctions of the Fathers are brought forward to strengthen the position assumed, whence the presumption is irresistible that none such existed, and we may rest satisfied that no evidence has been lost that would prove the pre-existence of the rule.

¹ Præterea, quod dignum, pudicum et honestum est, suademus ut sacerdotes et levitæ cum uxoribus suis non coeant, quia in ministerio divino quotidianis necessitatibus occupantur. . . . Qua de re hortor, moneo, rogo, tollatur hoc opprobrium quod potest etiam jure gentilitas accusare.—Concil. Teleptens. c. 9 (Siricii PP. Epist. v. § 3).

CHAPTER V

ENFORCEMENT OF CELIBACY

CELIBACY was but one of the many shapes in which the rapidly progressing sacerdotalism of Rome was overlaying religion with a multitude of formal observances. That which in earlier times had been the spontaneous expression of fervid zeal, or the joyful self-sacrifice of ardent asceticism, was thus changed into a law, bearing upon all alike, and taking no count of the individual idiosyncrasies which might render the burden too heavy for the shoulders of the less fiery though not less conscientious Christian. That it should meet with resistance was to be expected when we consider that the local independence of primitive times had not as yet been crushed under the rapidly growing preponderance of the Roman see. In fact energetic protests were not wanting, as well as the more perplexing stubbornness of passive resistance.

St. Ambrose admits that although the necessity of celibacy was generally acknowledged, still, in many of the remoter districts, there were to be found those who neglected it, and who justified themselves by ancient custom, relying on precautions to purify themselves for their sacred ministry.¹ In this he gives countenance to the tradition of the Leonistæ, simple Christians whose refusal to adapt themselves to the sacerdotalism, which was daily becoming more rigorous and indispensable, caused their expulsion from Rome, and who, taking

¹ Quod eo non præterii quia in plerisque abditioribus locis, cum ministerium gererent, vel etiam sacerdotium, filios susceperent, et id tanquam usu veteri defendunt, quando per intervallo dierum sacrificium deferebatur.—Ambros. de Officiis Lib. i. c. 50.

refuge in the recesses of the Cottian Alps, endeavoured to preserve the unadulterated faith of earlier times in the seclusion and privation of exile.

All who revolted against the increasing oppression of the hierarchy were not, however, content to bury themselves in solitude and silence, and heresiarchs sprang up who waged a bold but unequal contest. Bonosus, Jovinian, and Vigilantius are the names which have reached us as the most conspicuous leaders in the unsuccessful attempt to turn back the advancing spirit of the age, and of these Jovinian is the foremost figure. Bonosus, who was Bishop of Sardica, acquired a peculiarly sinister notoriety, for, in his opposition to the ascetic spirit, he adopted a heresy of Tertullian and Photinus, and assailed one of the chief arguments of the admirers of celibacy by denying the perpetual virginity of the Virgin; whence his followers acquired the euphonious title of Bonosiacs.¹ For this he was naturally denounced by Pope Siricius,

¹ Tertullian has no scruple in asserting—"Et Christum quidem virgo enixa est, semel nuptura post partum" (De Monog. c. 8). This belief was founded on the words of Matthew (I. 25), "καὶ οὐκ ἐγίνωσκεν αὐτὴν ἕως οὗ ἔτεκετον υἱὸν αὐτῆς τὸν πρωτότοκον, καὶ ἐκάλεσε τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦν."—"And he knew her not till she had brought forth her first-born son; and he called his name JESUS." The restrictive "till" and the characterisation of Jesus as the first-born of the Virgin (though the latter is omitted in the Sinaitic and Vatican MSS.) are certainly not easily explicable on any other supposition; nor is the difficulty lessened by the various explanations concerning the family of Joseph, by which such expressions as *ἡ μήτηρ αὐτοῦ καὶ οἱ ἀδελφοὶ αὐτοῦ*—fratres et mater ejus (Marc. III. xxxi.), or the enumeration of his brothers and sisters in Matt. XIII. 55-6, Mark VI. 3, or the phrase *ἰάκωβον τὸν ἀδελφὸν τοῦ κυρίου*—Jacobum fratrem Domini (Galat. I. 19)—are taken by commentators in a spiritual sense, or are eluded by transferring to the Greek a Hebrew idiom which confounds brothers with cousins. In the *Constitutiones Apostolicæ* occurs a passage—"Et ego Jacobus frater quidem Christi secundum carnem, servus autem tanquam Dei"—which seems to place it in an unmistakable light, if it be an extract from some forgotten Gospel, although it may only reflect the opinions of the third century when the collection was written or compiled.

The Bonosiacs were also sometimes called Helvidians.—S. Augustin. de Hæresibus § 84.—Isidor. Hispalens. Etymolog. Lib. VIII. c. v. § 57.

In an age which was accustomed to such arguments as "per mulierem culpa successit, per virginem salus evenit" (Rescript. Episcop. ad Siricium), it is easy to appreciate the pious horror evoked by such blasphemous heresies.

St. Clement of Alexandria alludes to a belief current in his day that after the Nativity the Virgin had to submit to an inspection *ab obstetrice* to prove her purity

and his followers were duly condemned by the Council of Capua in 389, while the tireless pen of St. Jerome was called into requisition to refute errors so unpardonable.¹ Notwithstanding this they continued to flourish, for an epistle of Innocent I. to Laurence, Bishop of Segna, proves that the error was openly taught on the eastern shores of the Adriatic in the early part of the fifth century;² in 443 the Council of Arles shows their existence in France by promising reconciliation to those who should manifest proper repentance, and that of Orleans as late as 538 still contains an allusion to them;³ even as late as the middle of the seventh century St. Ildefonso of Toledo wrote a treatise on the subject in which he overwhelmed Jovinian and Helvidius with opprobrious epithets.⁴ About the same period the Bonosiacs are the only heretics referred to by name in a canon of the Penitential of St. Columban, as though they were the most prominent misbelievers of the time.⁵ The belief even extended to Arabia, where a sect professing it is stigmatised by Epiphanius as Antidicomarianitarians, whose conversion that worthy bishop endeavoured to secure by a long epistle, in which his laboured explanations of the stubborn text of Matthew are accompanied with hearty objurgations of the blasphemous dogma, and an illustrative comparison of the Virgin to a lioness bearing but one whelp.⁶

(Stromat. Lib. vii.)—a story which continued to trouble the orthodox until the seventeenth century.

The Buddhists eluded all these troublesome questions by making Queen Maya die seven days after the birth of Sakyamuni, and asserting that this was the case with the mothers of all the Buddhas.—Rgya Tch'er Rol P (Ed. Fou-a aux, p. 100).

¹ Siricii PP. Epist. ix. § 3 (Migne's Patrol. XIII. 1177).—Hieron. de Perpet. Virgin. B. Mariæ adv. Helvidium.

² Epist. xx.

³ Concil. Arelatens. II. can. 17.—Concil. Aurelian. III. can. 31.

⁴ S. Ildefonsi Toletani Lib. de Virgin. perpet. S. Mariæ, c. i. ii.

⁵ Pœnitent. Columban. B. cap. 25 (Wasserschleben, Bussordnungen, p. 359).

⁶ Panar. Hæres. 78.—At the time of the Reformation the Bonosiac heresy naturally was revived. In 1523, at the Diet of Nuremberg, the Papal orator accused

While Jovinian shared in this particular the error of Bonosus and Helvidius, he did not attach undue importance to it. More practically inclined, his heresy consisted principally in denying the efficacy of celibacy, and this he maintained in Rome itself, with more zeal than discretion. Siricius caused his condemnation and that of his associates in a synod held about the year 390,¹ and succeeded in driving him to Milan, where he had many proselytes. There was no peace for him there. A synod held under the auspices of St. Ambrose bears testimony to the wickedness of his doctrines and to the popular clamour raised against him, and the wanderer again set forth on his weary pilgrimage.² Deprived of refuge in the cities, he disseminated his tenets throughout the country, where ardent followers, in spite of contumely and persecution, gathered around him and conducted their worship in the fields and hamlets. The laws promulgated about this time against heresy were severe and searching, and bore directly upon all who deviated from the orthodox formulas of the Catholic Church, yet Jovinian braved them all. The outraged Church called upon its most unscrupulous polemic, St. Jerome, who indulged in the customary abuse which represented the schismatics as indulging in the grossest promiscuous licentiousness and Jovinian as teaching them that all things were permitted to those baptized in Christ, in contradiction to St. Augustin, who admits the sobriety and virtue of

Osiander "quod prædicasset Beatam Virginem Mariam post Christi partum non mansisse Virginem" (Spalatini Annal. ann. 1523), but Osiander found few followers. At the Colloquy of Poissy, in 1561, the learned Claude d'Espence, doctor of Sorbonne in arguing that there were many things the authority of which rested solely on tradition, and yet which were admitted as undoubted by all parties, instanced "que la Vierge Marie demoura vierge après l'enfantement, et plusieurs autres semblables par conséquent; ce qui a esté baillé de main en main par nos pères, ores qu'il ne soit escript, n'est pourtant moins certain et approuvé que s'il estoit temoigné par l'Esriture" (Pierre de la Place, Liv. VII.).

¹ Siricii PP. *Epist.* vii. (Migne, *op. cit.*, p. 1168).

² Rescript. *Episcop.* ad Siricium. (Harduin. *Concil.* I. 853.)

Jovinian, in spite of his denying the efficacy of celibacy.¹ All this was insufficient to put down the stubborn schismatics, who maintained their faith until the Church, wearied out with their obstinacy and unable to convert or to silence them, appealed to the secular power for more efficient assistance. Perhaps Jovinian's long career of successful resistance may have emboldened him; perhaps his sect was growing numerous enough to promise protection; at all events, despite the imperial rescripts which shielded with peculiar care the Apostolic city from the presence of heretics, Jovinian in 412 openly held assemblages of his followers in Rome to the scandal of the faithful, and made at least sufficient impression to lead a number of professed virgins to abandon their vows and marry.² The complaints of the orthodox were heard by the miserable shadow who then occupied the throne of Augustus, and Honorius applied himself to the task of persecution with relentless zeal. Jovinian was scourged with a leaded thong and exiled to the rock of Boa, on the coast of Dalmatia, while his followers were hunted down, deported, and scattered among the savage islands of the Adriatic.³

Nor was this the only struggle. A wild shepherd lad named Vigilantius, born among the Pyrenean valleys, was fortunate enough to be the slave of St. Sulpicius Severus, whose wealth, culture, talents, and piety rendered him prominent throughout Southern Gaul. The earnest character of the slave attracted the attention of the master; education developed his powers; he was manu-

¹ Hieron. adv. Jovin.—Augustin. de Hæres. No. lxxxii.

² Augustin. Retract. II. xxii. 1.

³ Lib. XVI. Cod. Theod. Tit. v. l. 53. It is generally assumed from this law that Jovinian lived until 412. An expression of St. Jerome, however (adv. Vigilant. cap. i.), would seem to show that he was already dead in 406, and critics have suggested either that there is an error in the date of the law or that another heresiarch is referred to.

mitted, and the people of his native Calagurris chose him for their priest. Sent by Sulpicius as bearer of letters to his friends St. Paulinus at Nola, and St. Jerome in his Bethlehem retreat, Vigilantius had the opportunity of comparing the simple Christianity of his native mountains with the splendid pageantry of Rome, the elegant retirement of Nola, and the heated controversialism which agitated the asceticism of Bethlehem. Notwithstanding the cordiality of their first acquaintance, his residence with Jerome was short. Both were too earnestly dogmatic in their natures for harmony to exist between the primitive Cantabrian shepherd and the fierce apostle of Buddhist and Mazdean Christianity, who devoted his life to reconciling the doctrines of the Latin Church with the practices of Manichæism. Brief friendship ended in a quarrel, and Vigilantius extended his experiences by a survey of Egypt, where the vast hordes of Nitrian anchorites were involved in civil strife over the question of Origenism. Returning through Italy, he tarried in Milan and among the Alps, where he found the solution of his doubts and the realisation of his ideas in the teaching of Jovinian. He had left Gaul a disciple; he returned to it a missionary, prepared to do battle with sacerdotalism in all its forms. Not only did he deny the necessity of celibacy, but he pronounced it to be the fertile source of impurity, and in his zeal for reform he swept away fasting and maceration, he ridiculed the veneration of relics, and pronounced the miracles wrought at their altars to be the work of demons; he objected to the candles and incense around the shrines, to prayers for the dead, and to the oblations of the faithful.¹

¹ Exortus est subito Vigilantius, seu verius Dormitantius, qui immundo spiritu pugnat contra Christi spiritum, et martyrum neget sepulchra veneranda, damnandas dicat esse vigiliis; nunquam nisi in Pascha alleluia cantandum; continentiam hæresim; pudicitiam libidinis seminarium. Et quomodo Euphorbus in Pythagora renatus esse perhibetur, sic in isto Joviniani mens prava surrexit; ut et in illo et in hoc diaboli respondere cogamur insidiis.—Hieron. adv. Vigilant. c. 1.

No doubt the decretals of Siricius had rendered compulsory the celibacy of the priesthood throughout Gaul and Spain. The machinery of the hierarchy may readily have stifled open opposition, however frequent may have been the secret infractions of the rule. This may perhaps have contributed to the success of Vigilantius. Even his former master, St. Sulpicius Severus, and St. Exuperius, Bishop of Toulouse, were inclined to favour his reforms. That they spread with dangerous rapidity throughout Gaul from south to north is shown by the fact that in 404 Victricius, Bishop of Rouen, and in 405 St. Exuperius of Toulouse applied to Innocent I. for advice as to the manner in which they should deal with the new heresy. It also counted numerous adherents throughout Spain, among whom even some bishops were enumerated. The alarm was promptly sounded, and the enginery of the Church was brought to bear upon the hardy heretic. The vast reputation and authority of Jerome lent force to the coarse invective with which he endeavoured to overwhelm his whilom acquaintance, and though the nickname of Dormitantius which he bestowed on Vigilantius was a sarcasm neither very severe nor very refined, the disgusting exaggeration of his adversary's tenets, in which he as usual indulged, had doubtless its destined effect.¹ Pope Innocent was not backward in asserting the authority of Rome and the inviolable nature of the canon. In his epistle to Victricius, he repeated the decretal of Siricius, but in a somewhat more positive form ;²

¹ *Proh nefas ! episcopus sui sceleris dicitur habere consortes : si tamen episcopi nominandi sunt qui non ordinant diaconos nisi prius uxores duxerint ; nulli celibi credentes pudicitiam, immo ostendentes quam sancte vivant qui male de omnibus suspicantur ; et nisi pręgnantes uxores viderint clericorum, infantesque de ulnis matrum vagientes, Christi sacramenta non tribuant. . . . Hoc docuit Dormitantius, libidini fręna permittens, et naturalem carnis ardorem, qui in adolescentia plerumque fervescit, suis hortatibus duplicans, immo extinguens coitu fęminarum, ut nihil sit quo distemus a porcis, etc.*—Hieron. adv. Vigilant. c. 2.

² *Pręterea quod dignum, pudicum et honestum est, tenere ecclesia omnino debet, ut sacerdotes et livitę cum uxoribus non misceantur. . . . Maxime ut vetus*

while in the following year (405) he confirmed the vacillating faith of Exuperius by declaring that any violation of the strictest celibacy on the part of priest or deacon subjects the offender to the deprivation of his position.¹ As in the previous effort of Siricius, however, ignorance is admitted as an excuse, entitling him who can plead it to retain his grade without hope of preferment—and the test of this ignorance is held to be the canon of 385. This latter point is noteworthy, for it is a tacit confession of the novelty of the rule, although Innocent laboured at great length to prove both its antiquity and necessity from the well-known texts of St. Paul and the Levitical observances. Yet no intermediate authority was quoted, and punishment was only to be inflicted on those who could be proved to have seen the decretal of Siricius.

The further career of Vigilantius and his sectaries is lost in the darkness and confusion attendant upon the ravages of the Alans and Vandals who overran Gaul during the following year. We only know that Sulpicius and Exuperius, frightened by the violence of Jerome and the authority of Innocent, abandoned their protégé, and we can presume that, during the period of wild disorder which followed the irruption of the Barbarians, what little protection Rome could afford was too consoling to the afflicted Churches for them to risk its withdrawal by resisting on any point the daily increasing pretensions of the Apostolic See to absolute command.²

regula hoc habet ut quisquis corruptus baptizatus clericus esse voluisset, spondeat uxorem omnino non ducere.—Innocent. PP. I. Epist. ii. c. 9, 10.

¹ *Ut incontinentes in officiis talibus positi, omni ecclesiastico honore priventur, nec admittantur ad tale ministerium, quod sola continentia oportet impleri.*—As for those who could be proved to have seen the epistle of Siricius—“*illi sunt modis omnibus submovendi.*”—Innocent. PP. I. Epist. iii. c. 1.

² The observance of the rule and its effects are well illustrated in the story of Urbicus, Bishop of Clermont, and his unhappy wife, as naïvely related by Gregory of Tours (*Hist. Franc. L. I. c. 44*).

The victory was won, for with the death of Vigilantius and Jovinian ended the last organised and acknowledged attempt to stay the progress of celibacy in the Latin Church, until centuries later, when the regulation was already too ancient and too well supported by tradition and precedent to be successfully called in question.

In Africa we find no trace of open resistance to the introduction of the rule, though time was evidently required to procure its enforcement. We have seen that Siricius, in 386, addressed an appeal to the African bishops. To this they responded by holding a council in which they agreed "*conscriptio quodam*" that chastity should be preserved by the three higher orders. This apparently was not conclusive, for in 390 another council was held in which Aurelius, Bishop of Carthage, again introduced the subject. He recapitulated their recent action, urged that the teaching of the Apostles and ancient usage required the observance of the rule, and obtained the assent of his brother prelates to the separation from their wives of those who were concerned in administering the sacraments.¹ The form of these proceedings shows that it was an innovation, requiring deliberation and the assent of the ecclesiastics present, not a simple affirmation of a traditional and unalterable point of discipline, and, moreover, no penalty is mentioned for disobedience. Little respect, probably, was paid to the new rule. The third and fourth Councils of Carthage, held in 397 and 398, passed numerous canons relating to discipline, prescribing minutely the qualifications and duties of the clergy, and of the votaries of the monastic profession. The absence from among

¹ *Ab universis episcopis dictum est : Omnibus placet, ut episcopi, presbyteri et diaconi, vel qui sacramenta contrectant, pudicitie custodes etiam ab uxoribus se abstineant.*—Concil. Carthag. II. can. 2 (Cod. Eccles. African. can. 3).

these canons of any allusion to enforced celibacy would therefore appear to prove that it was still left to the conscience of the individual. If this be so, the triumph of the sacerdotal party was not long delayed, as might be expected from the rising influence and authority of St. Augustin, whose early Manichæism led him, after his conversion, to be one of the most enthusiastic admirers and promoters of austere asceticism. We may not unreasonably assume that it was through his prompting that his friend St. Aurelius, at the fifth Council of Carthage in 401, proposed a canon, which was adopted, ordering the separation of the married clergy of the higher grades from their wives, under pain of deprivation of office.¹ As before, the form of the canon shows it to be an innovation.

That the rule was positively adopted and frequently submitted to is shown by St. Augustin, who, in his

¹ Aurelius episcopus dixit: Addimus fratres carissimi præterea, cum de quorundam clericorum, quamvis lectorum, erga uxores proprias incontinentia referretur, placuit, quod et in diversis conciliis firmatum est, ut subdiaconi, qui sacra mysteria contrectant, et diaconi et presbyteri, sed et episcopi, secundum priora statuta etiam ab uxoribus se contineant, ut tanquam non habentes videantur esse: quod nisi fecerint, ab ecclesiastico removeantur officio. Ceteros autem clericos ad hoc non cogi, nisi maturiori ætate. Ab universo concilio dictum est: Quæ vestra sanctitas est juste moderata, et sancta et Deo placita sunt, confirmamus.—Concil. Carthag. V. c. 3 (Cod. Eccles. Afric. c. 25).

The councils thus alluded to are probably the Roman Synods under Damasus and Siricius.

I give the version most favoured by modern critics, but it should be observed that there is doubt concerning several important points. In the older collections of councils (e.g. Surius, Ed. 1567, T. I. pp. 519–20) the canon indicates no compulsion for the orders beneath the diaconate, commencing "Placuit episcopus et presbyteros et diaconos," and ending "Cæteros autem clericos ad hoc non cogi sed secundum uniuscujusque ecclesiæ consuetudinem observari debere," and this has probability in its favour, since the subdiaconate was not included in the restriction for nearly two centuries after this period, and the lower grades were never subjected to the rule.

The expression "secundum priora statuta" is probably the emendation of a copyist for "secundum propria statuta," which latter is the reading given by Dionysius Exiguus. That this is the correct one is rendered almost certain by the Greek version, which is *κατὰ τοὺς ἰδίους ὁρῶν* (Calixt. Conjug. Cleric. p. 350), which would seem to leave the matter very much to the preëxisting customs of the individual churches.

treatise against second marriages, states that, in arguing with those desirous of entering upon those unhallowed unions, he was accustomed to strengthen his logic by citing the continence of the clergy, who, however unwillingly they had in most cases been forced to undertake the burden, still, by the aid of God, were enabled to endure it to the end.¹ Yet it is evident that its enforcement was attended with many difficulties and much opposition, for, twenty years later, at another Council of Carthage, we find Faustinus, the Papal Legate, proposing that the three higher orders shall be separated from their wives, to which the fathers of the council somewhat evasively replied that those who were concerned in the ministry of the altar should be chaste in all things. No attempt, however, was apparently made to strengthen the resolution by affixing a penalty for its infringement. It was a simple declaration of opinion, and nothing more.²

Symptoms of similar difficulty in the rigid enforcement of the canon are observable elsewhere. The proceedings of the first Council of Toledo, held in the year 400, shows not only that it was a recent innovation which continued to be disregarded, but that it had given rise to a crowd of novel questions which required im-

¹ De Adulterin. Conjug. Lib. II. c. 20.

² Faustinus episcopus ecclesiæ Potentinae, provinciæ Piceni, legatus Romanæ ecclesiæ, dixit: Placet ut episcopus, presbyter et diaconus vel qui sacramenta contrectant pudicitiae custodes ab uxoribus se abstineant. Ab universis episcopis dictum est: Placet ut in omnibus pudicitia custodiatur qui altari inserviunt (Cod. Eccles. African. can. iv.).

That strict rules were not enforced in the African Church is rendered probable by another circumstance. Faustus the Manichean, in defending the tenets of his sect on the subject of marriage and celibacy, enters into an elaborate comparison of their doctrines and practices with those of the Catholic Church. In ridiculing the idea that the Manicheans prohibited marriage to their followers, he could not have omitted the argument and contrast derivable from prohibition of marriage by the Catholics, had such prohibition been enforced. His omission to do this is therefore a negative proof of great weight.—See Augustin. contra Faust. Manich. Lib. xxx. c. iv.

peratively to be settled, as to the status of the several grades of clerks who were guilty of various forms of disobedience¹—the prototype and exemplar of innumerable similar attempts at legislation which continued for more than a thousand years to occupy a good part of the attention of almost every council and synod. The prelates of Cis-Alpine Gaul, assembled in the Council of Turin in 401, could only be brought to pronounce incapable of promotion those who contravened the injunction which separated them from their wives.² The practical working of this was to permit those to retain their wives who were satisfied with the grade to which they had attained. Thus the priest, who saw little prospect of elevation to the episcopate, might readily console himself with the society of his wife, while the powerful influence of the wives would be brought to bear against the promptings of ambition on the part of their husbands. The punishment thus was heaviest on the lower grades and lightest on the higher clergy, whose position should have rendered the sin more heinous—in fact, the bishop, to whom further promotion was impossible, escaped entirely from the penalty.

Even as late as 441 the first Council of Orange shows how utterly the rule had been neglected by ordering that for the future no married man should be ordained deacon without making promise of separation from his wife, for contravention of which he was to suffer degradation; while those who had previously been admitted to orders were only subjected to the canon of the Council of Turin, incurring merely loss of promotion.³ This evidently indicates that the regulation was a novelty,

¹ Concil. Toletan. I. ann. 400 can. 1, 3, 4, 6, 7, 18, 19.

² *Hi autem qui contra interdictum sunt ordinati, vel in ministerio filios genuerunt, ne ad majores gradus ordinum permittantur synodi decrevit auctoritas.*—Concil. Taurinens. c. 8.

³ Concil. Arausic. I. c. 22, 23, 24.

for it admits the injustice of subjecting to the rigour of the canon those who had taken orders without being aware of the obligations incurred; and it is a fair conclusion to suppose that this was a compromise by which the existing clergy gave their assent to the rule for the benefit of their successors, provided that they themselves escaped its full severity. In fact, it seemed to be impossible to make the Church of Gaul accept the rule of discipline. About 459, we find Leo I., in answer to some interrogatories of Rusticus, Bishop of Narbonne, laboriously explaining that deacons and subdeacons, as well as bishops and priests, must treat their wives as sisters.¹ Rusticus had evidently asked the question, and Leo expresses no surprise at his ignorance.

The Irish Church, founded about the middle of the fifth century, although it was to a great extent based on monachism, apparently did not at first order the separation of the sexes. A century later an effort seems to have been made in this direction; but the canons of a synod held in the early part of the eighth century show that priests at that time were not prevented from having wives.²

Even where the authority of the decretals of Siricius and Innocent was received with respectful silence, it was not always easy to enforce their provisions. An epistle of Innocent to the bishops of Calabria shows that, within territory depending strictly upon Rome itself, a passive resistance was maintained, requiring constant supervision and interference to render the rule imperative. Some priests, whose growing families rendered their disregard of discipline as unquestionable as it was defiant, remained

¹ Leon. PP. I. Epist. clxvii. Inquis. iii.

² *Catalogus Sanctt. Hibern.* (Haddan & Stubbs II. 292)—*Confessio S. Patricii* (*Ibid.* 308, 310)—*Epist. S. Patricii* (*Ibid.* 317)—*Synod. S. Patricii can. 6* (*Ibid.* 329). The date of all these documents is of course somewhat conjectural, but I have assumed it safe to follow the conclusions of the painstaking and lamented Mr. Haddan.

unpunished. Either the bishops refused to execute the laws, or their sympathies were known to be with the offenders, for the pious layman whose sensibilities were wounded by the scandal felt himself obliged to appeal to the Pope. Innocent accordingly ordered the accused to be tried and to be expelled, while he expressed no little surprise at the negligence of the prelates who were so remiss.¹ It is more difficult to understand the edict of 420, issued by Honorius, to which allusion has already been made (p. 49). This law expressly declares that the desire for purity does not require the separation of wives whose marriage took place before the ordination of their husbands.

These disconnected attempts at resistance were unsuccessful. Sacerdotalism triumphed, and the rule which forbade marriage to those in orders, and separated husband and wife, when the former was promoted to the ministry of the altar, became irrevocably incorporated in the canon law. Throughout the struggle the Papacy had a most efficient ally in the people. The holiness and the necessity of absolute purity was so favourite a theme with the leading minds of the Church, and formed so prominent a portion of their daily homilies and exhortations, that the popular mind could not but be deeply impressed with its importance, and therefore naturally exacted of the pastor the sacrifice which cost so little to the flock. An instance or two occurring about this period will show how vigilant was the watch kept upon the virtue of ecclesiastics, and how summary was the process by which indignation was visited upon even the most exalted, when suspected of a lapse from the rigid virtue required of them. Thirty years after the ordination of St. Brice, who succeeded St. Martin in the diocese of Tours, rumour credited him with the paternity of a child unseasonably

¹ Innocent. P.P. I. Epist. v.

born of a nun. In their wrath the citizens by common consent determined to stone him. The saint calmly ordered the infant, then in its thirtieth day, to be brought to him, and adjured it in the name of Christ to declare if it were his, to which the little one firmly replied, "Thou art not my father!" The people, attributing the miracle to magic, persisted in their resolution, when St. Brice wrapped a quantity of burning coals in his robe, and pressing the mass to his bosom carried it to the tomb of St. Martin, where he deposited his burden, and displayed his robe uninjured. Even this was insufficient to satisfy the outraged feelings of the populace, and St. Brice deemed himself fortunate in making his escape uninjured, when a successor was elected to the bishopric.¹ Somewhat similar was the case of St. Simplicius, Bishop of Autun. Even as a layman, his holy zeal had led him to treat as a sister his beautiful wife, who was inspired with equal piety. On his elevation to the episcopate, still confident of their mutual self-control, she refused to be separated from him. The people, scandalised at the impropriety, and entertaining a settled incredulity as to the superhuman virtue requisite to such restraint, mobbed the bishop's dwelling, and expressed their sentiments in a manner more energetic than respectful. The saintly virgin called for a portable furnace full of fire, emptied its contents into her robe, and held it uninjured for an hour, when she transferred the ordeal to her husband, saying, that the trial was as nothing to the flames through which they had already passed unscathed. The result with him was the same, and the people retired, ashamed of their unworthy suspicions.² Gregory of Tours, who relates these legends, was sufficiently near in point of time for them to have an historical value, even when

¹ Greg. Turon. Hist. Franc. Lib. II. c. 1.

² Greg. Turon. de Glor. Confess. c. 76.

divested of their miraculous ornaments. They bring before us the popular tendencies and modes of thought, and show us how powerful an instrument the passions of the people became, when skilfully aroused and directed by those in authority.

The Western Church was thus at length irrevocably committed to the strict maintenance of ecclesiastical celibacy, and the labours of the three great Latin Fathers, Jerome, Ambrose, and Augustin, were crowned with success. It is perhaps worth while to cast a glance at such evidences as remain to us of the state of morals about this period and during the fifth century, and to judge whether the new rule of discipline had resulted in purifying the Church of the corruptions which had so excited the indignation of the anchorite of Bethlehem, and had nerved him in his fierce contests with those who opposed the enforced asceticism of the ministers of Christ.

How the morals of the Church fared during the struggle is well exhibited in the writings of St. Jerome himself, as quoted above, describing the unlawful unions of the *agapetæ* with ecclesiastics and the horrors induced by the desire to escape the consequences of incautious frailty. Conclusions not less convincing may be drawn from his assertion that holy orders were sometimes assumed on account of the superior opportunities which clericulture gave of improper intercourse with women;¹ and from his description of the ecclesiastics, who passed their lives in female companionship, surrounded by young female slaves, and leading an existence which differed from matrimony only in the absence of the marriage ceremony.²

¹ *Sunt alii (de mei ordinis hominibus loquor) qui ideo presbyteratum et diaconatum ambiunt ut mulieres licentius videant.*—*Epist. XXII. ad Eustoch. cap. 28.*

² *Epist. CXXV. ad Rusticum, cap. 6.*

But a short time after the recognition of the rule appeared the law of Honorius, promulgated in 420, to which reference has already been made. It is possible that the permission of residence there granted to the wives of priests may have been intended to act as a partial cure for evils caused by the enforcement of celibacy; and this is rendered the more probable, since other portions of the edict show that intercourse with improper females had increased to such a degree that the censures of the Church could no longer restrain it, and that an appeal to secular interference was necessary, by which such practices should be made a crime to be punished by the civil tribunals.¹ That even this failed lamentably in purifying the Church may be gathered from the proceedings of the provincial councils of the period.

Thus, in 453, the Council of Anjou repeats the prohibition of improper female intimacy, giving as a reason the ruin constantly wrought by it. For those who thereafter persisted in their guilt, however, the only penalty threatened was incapacity for promotion on the part of the lower grades, and suspension of functions for the higher²—whence we may conclude that practically an option was afforded to those who preferred sin to ambition. The second Council of Arles, in 443, likewise gives an insight into the subterfuges adopted to evade the rule and to escape detection.³ About this period a newly-appointed bishop, Talasius of Angers, applied to Lupus of Troyes and Euphronius of Autun for advice concerning various knotty points, among which were the rules respecting the celibacy of the different grades. In their reply the prelates advised their brother that it would be well if the increase of priests' families could be prevented,

¹ Lib. XVI. Cod. Theod. Tit. ii. l. 44.

² Concil. Andegav. ann. 453 c. 4.

³ Nullus diaconus vel presbyter vel episcopus ad cellarii secretum intronittat puellam vel ingenuam vel ancillam.—Concil. Arelatens. II. c. 4.

but that such a consummation was almost impossible if married men were admitted to orders, and that if he wanted to escape ceaseless wrangling and the scandal of seeing children born to his priests, he had better ordain those only who were single.¹ The subject was one of endless effort. In fact, of the numerous councils whose canons have reached us, held in Gaul and Spain during the centuries which intervened until the invasion of the Saracens and the decrepitude of the Merovingian dynasty caused their discontinuance, there is scarcely one which did not feel the necessity of legislating on this delicate matter. It would be tedious and unprofitable to detail specifically the innumerable exhortations, threats, and ingenious devices resorted to in the desperate hope of enforcing obedience to the rules and of purifying the morals of the clergy. Suffice it to say that the constantly varying punishments enacted, the minute supervision ordered over every action of the priesthood, the constant attendance of witnesses whose inseparable companionship should testify to the virtue of each ecclesiastic, and the perpetual iteration of the rule in every conceivable shape, prove at once the hopelessness of the attempt, and the incurable nature of the disorders of which the Church was at once the cause and the victim. In short, this perpetual legislation frequently betrays the fact that it was not only practically impossible to maintain separation between the clergy and their wives, but that at times marriage was not uncommon even within the prohibited orders.²

¹ Epist. Lupi et Euphronii. (Harduin. II. 792.)

² Whatever interest there might be in exhibiting in detail the varying legislation and the expedients of lenity or severity by turns adopted, it would scarcely repay the space which it would occupy, or relieve the monotony of retracing the circle in which the unfortunate fathers of the Church perpetually moved. I therefore content myself with simply indicating such canons of the period as bear upon the subject, for the benefit of any student who may desire to examine the matter more minutely.

Concil. Turon. I. (ann. 460) c. 2, 3.—Agathens. (506) c. 9.—Aurelianus. I. (511)

Perhaps this may not move our surprise when we glance at the condition of morality existing throughout the Empire in the second quarter of the fifth century, as sketched by a zealous churchman of the period. Salvianus, Bishop of Marseilles, was a native of Trèves. Three times he witnessed the sack of that unfortunate city by the successive barbarian hordes which swept over Western Europe, and he lifts up his voice, like Jeremiah, to bewail the sins of his people, and the unutterable misfortunes which were the punishment but not the cure of those sins. Nothing can be conceived more utterly licentious and depraved than the whole framework of society as described by him, though we may charitably hope that holy indignation or pious sensibility led him to exaggerate the outlines and to darken the shades of the picture. The criminal and frivolous pleasures of a decrepit civilisation left no thought for the absorbing duties of the day or the fearful trials of the morrow. Unbridled lust and unblushing indecency admitted no sanctity in the marriage-tie. The rich and powerful established harems, in the recesses of which their wives lingered, forgotten, neglected, and despised. The banquet, the theatre, and the circus exhausted what little strength and energy were left by domestic excesses. The poor aped the vices of the rich, and hideous depravity reigned supreme and invited the vengeance of Heaven. Such rare souls as could remain pure amid the prevailing

c. 13.—Tarraconens. (516) c. 1.—Gerundens. (517) c. 6, 7.—Epaonens. (517) c. 2, 32.—Ilerdens. (523) c. 2, 5, 15.—Toletan. II. (531) c. 1, 3.—Aurelianens. II. (533) c. 8.—Arvernens. I. (535) c. 13, 16.—Aurelianens. III. (538) c. 2, 4, 7.—Aurelianens. IV. (541) c. 17.—Aurelianens. V. (549) c. 3, 4.—Bracarens. I. (563) c. 15.—Turonens. II. (567) c. 10, 12, 13, 15, 16, 20.—Bracarens. II. (572) c. 8, 32, 39.—Autissiodor. (578) c. 21.—Matiscon. I. (581) c. 1, 2, 3, 11.—Lugdunens. III. (583) c. 1.—Toletan. III. (589) c. 5.—Hispalens. I. (590) c. 3.—Cæsarangustan. (592) c. 1.—Toletan. (597) c. 1.—Oscensis (598) c. 2.—Egarens. (614) c. unic.—Concil. loc. incert. (a. 613) c. 8, 12.—Toletan. IV. (633) c. 42, 44, 52, 55.—Cabilonens. (649) c. 3.—Toletan. VIII. (653) c. 4, 5, 6, 7.—Toletan. IX. (655) c. 10.—Toletan. XI. (675) c. 5.—Bracarens. III. (675) c. 4.—Augustodunens. (690) c. 10.

contamination would naturally take refuge in the contrast of severe asceticism, and resolutely seek absolute seclusion from a world whose every touch was pollution. The secular clergy, however, drawn from the ranks of a society so utterly corrupt, and enjoying the wealth and station which rendered their position an object for the ambition of the worldly, could not avoid sharing to a great extent the guilt of their flocks, whose sins were more easily imitated than eradicated. Nor does Salvianus confine his denunciations to Gaul and Spain. Africa and Italy are represented as even worse, the prevalence of unnatural crimes lending a deeper disgust to the rivalry in iniquity. Rome was the sewer of the nations, the centre of abomination of the world, where vice openly assumed its most repulsive form, and wickedness reigned unchecked and supreme.

It is true that the descriptions of Salvianus are intended to include the whole body of the people, and that his special references to the Church are but few. Those occasional references, however, are not of a nature to exempt it from sharing in the full force of his indignation. When he pronounces the Africans to be utterly licentious, he excepts those who have been regenerated in religion—but these he declares to be so few in number that it is difficult to believe them Africans. What hope, he asks, can there be for the people when even in the Church itself the most diligent search can scarce discover one chaste amid so many thousands: and when imperial Carthage was tottering to its fall under the assaults of the besieging Vandals, he describes its clergy as wantoning in the circus and the theatre—those without falling under the sword of the barbarian, those within abandoning themselves to sensuality.¹ This, be it remembered, is that African Church which had just been so carefully nurtured in the

¹ Salvian. De Gubernat. Dei Lib. VI. VII.

purest asceticism for thirty years, under the unremitting care of Augustin, who died while his episcopal city of Hippo was encircled with the leaguer of the Vandals.

Nor were these disorders attributable to the irruption of the Barbarians, for Salvianus sorrowfully contrasts their purity of morals with the reckless dissoluteness of the Romans. The respect for female virtue, inherent in the Teutonic tribes, has no warmer admirer than he, and he recounts with wonder how the temptations of luxury and vice, spread before them in the wealthy cities which they sacked, excited only their disgust, and how, so far from yielding to the allurements that surrounded them, they sternly set to work to reform the depravity of their new subjects, and enacted laws to repress at least the open manifestations which shocked their untutored virtue.

When corruption so ineradicable pervaded every class, we can scarce wonder that in the story of the trial of Sixtus III., in 440, for the seduction of a nun, when his accusers were unable to substantiate the charge, he is said to have addressed the synod assembled in judgment by repeating to them the story of the woman taken in adultery, and the decision of Christ. Whether it were intended to be regarded as a confession, or as a sarcasm on the prelates around him, whom he thus challenged to cast the first stone, the tale whether true or false is symptomatic of the time that gave it birth.¹

As regards the East, if the accusations brought against Ibas, Metropolitan of Edessa, at the Synod of Berytus in 448,² are worthy of credit, the Oriental Church was not behind the West in the effrontery of sin.

¹ *Expurgat. Sixti Papæ c. VI.* (Harduin. *Concil. II.* 1742).—Pagl (ann. 433, No. 19) casts doubt on the authenticity of the proceedings of this trial, and modern criticism (see "Janus," *The Pope and the Council*, p. 124) assumes it to be a fabrication of the early part of the sixth century, made for the purpose of vindicating the immunity of the clergy from secular law.

² *Concil. Chalcedon. Act. X.* (Harduin. *II.* 518-9).

CHAPTER VI

THE EASTERN CHURCH

DURING the period which we have been considering, there had gradually arisen a divergence between the Christians of the East and of the West. The Arianism of Constantius opposed to the orthodoxy of Constantine lent increased development to the separation which the division of the Empire had commenced. The rapid growth of the New Rome founded on the shores of the Bosphorus gave to the East a political metropolis which rendered it independent of the power of Rome, and the patriarchate there erected absorbed to itself the supremacy of the old Apostolic Sees, which had previously divided the ecclesiastical strength of the East. In the West, the Bishop of Rome was unquestionably the highest dignitary, and when the separation relieved him of the rivalry of prelates equal in rank, he was enabled to acquire an authority over the churches of the Occident undreamed of in previous ages. As yet, however, there was little pretension of extending that power over the East, and though the ceaseless quarrels which raged in Antioch, Constantinople, and Alexandria enabled him frequently to intervene as arbiter, still he had not yet assumed the tone of a judge without appeal or of an autocratic lawgiver.

Though five hundred years were still to pass before the Greek schism formally separated Constantinople from the communion of Rome, yet already, by the close of the fourth century, the characteristics which ultimately led to that schism were beginning to develop themselves with

some distinctness.¹ The sacerdotal spirit of the West showed itself in the formalism which loaded religion with rules of observance and discipline enforced with Roman severity. The inquiring and metaphysical tendencies of the East discovered unnumbered doubtful points of belief, which were argued with exhaustive subtlety and supported by relentless persecution. However important it might be for any polemic to obtain for his favourite dogma the assent of the Roman bishop, whose decisions on such points thus constantly acquired increased authority, yet when the Pope undertook to issue laws and promulgate rules of discipline, whatever force they had was restricted to the limits of the Latin tongue. Accordingly, we find that the decretals of Siricius and Innocent I. produced no effect throughout the East. Asceticism continued to flourish there as in its birthplace, but it was voluntary, and there is no trace of any official attempt to render it universally imperative. The canon of Nicæa of course was law, and the purity of the Church required its strict observance, to avoid scandals and immorality;² but beyond this and the ancient rules excluding digami and prohibiting marriage in orders no general laws were insisted on, and each province or patriarchate was allowed to govern itself in this respect. How little the Eastern prelates thought of introducing compulsory celibacy is shown by the fact that at the second general council, held at Constan-

¹ *Vide* "The Churches separated from Rome," by Mgr. L. Duchesne, London, 1907.

² The strictness with which the Nicene canon was enforced is shown by an epistle of St. Basil, about the middle of the fourth century, in which he sternly reproves a priest named Paregorius, who at the age of 70 had thought himself sufficiently protected against scandal to allow to his infirmities the comfort of a housekeeper. The unlucky female is ordered to be forthwith immured in a convent, and, until this is accomplished, Paregorius is forbidden to perform his priestly functions. The whole is based on the authority of the Council of Nicæa.—"Nec primo nec soli (tibi Paregori) sancivimus, non debere mulierculas cohabitare viris. Lege canonem, a sanctis patribus nostris in Nicæna synodo constitutum: qui manifeste interdixit, ne quis mulierculam subintroductam habeat. Celibatus autem honestatem suam in eo habet, si quis a nexu mulieris secesserit."

tinople in 381, only four or five years before the decretals of Siricius, there is no trace of any legislation on the subject; and this acquires increased significance when we observe that although this council has always been reckoned Œcumenical, and has enjoyed full authority throughout the Church universal, yet out of one hundred and fifty bishops who signed the acts, but one—a Spanish prelate—was from the West.

This avoidance of action was not merely an omission of surplusage. Had the disposition existed to erect the custom of celibacy into a law, there was ample cause for legislation on the subject. Epiphanius, who died in the year 403 at a very advanced age, probably compiled his “Panarium” not long after this period; he belonged to the extreme school of ascetics, and lost no opportunity of asserting the most rigid rule with regard to virginity and continence, which he considered to be the base and cornerstone of the Church. While assuming celibacy to be the rule for all concerned in the functions of the priesthood, he admits that in many places it was not observed, on account of the degradation of morals or of the impossibility of obtaining enough ministers irreprehensible in character to satisfy the needs of the faithful.¹

That Epiphanius endeavoured to erect into a universal canon rules only adopted in certain Churches is rendered probable by an allusion to St. Jerome, who, in his controversy with Vigilantius, urged in support of celibacy the custom of the Churches of the East (or Antioch), of Alexandria, and of Rome.² He thus omits the great exarchates of Ephesus, Pontus, and Thrace, as not lending strength to his argument. Of these the first is perhaps explicable by the latitudinarianism of its metro-

¹ Hæres. LIX. c. 4.

² Quid faciunt Orientis ecclesiæ? Quid Ægypti et sedis Apostolicæ, quæ aut virgines clericos accipiunt, aut continentes: aut si uxores habuerint, mariti esse desistunt.—Lib. adv. Vigilant. c. 2.

politan, Anthony, Bishop of Ephesus. At the Council of Constantinople, held in 400, this prelate was accused of many crimes, among which were simony, the conversion to the use of his family of ecclesiastical property and even of the sacred vessels, and, further, that after having vowed separation from his wife, he had had children by her.¹ Even Egypt, the nursery of monachism, affords a somewhat suspicious example in the person of Synesius, Bishop of Ptolemais. This philosophic disciple of Hypatia, when pressed to accept the bishopric, declined it on various grounds, among which was his unwillingness to be separated from his wife, or to live with her secretly like an adulterer, the separation being particularly objectionable to him, as interfering with his desire for numerous offspring.² Synesius, however, was apparently able to reconcile the incompatibilities, for after accepting the episcopal office we find, when the Libyans invaded the Pentapolis and he stood boldly forth to protect his flock, that two days before an expected encounter he confided to his brother's care his children, to whom he asked the transfer of that tender fraternal affection which he himself had always enjoyed.³

It is easy to imagine what efforts were doubtless made to extend the rule, and to render it as imperative throughout the East as it was becoming in the West, when we read the extravagant laudations of virginity uttered about this time by St. John Chrysostom, who lent the sanction of his great name and authority to the assertion that it is as superior to marriage as heaven is to earth, or as angels are to men.⁴ Strenuous as these

¹ Sextum, quod dimissa uxore sua cum ea rursus congressus est, filiosque ex ea procreasset.—Palladii Dial. de Vit. S. Joan. Chrysost. cap. xiii.

² Synesii Epist. cv.

³ Ejusd. Epist. cviii.

⁴ Et si placet, quanto etiam melior sit addam, quanto cœlum terra, quanto hominibus angeli.—Lib. de Virgin. c. x.

efforts may have been, however, they have left no permanent record, and their effect was short-lived. Within thirty years of the time when Jerome quoted the example of the Eastern Churches as an argument against Vigilantius, Socrates chronicles as a novelty the introduction into Thessalia of compulsory separation between married priests and their wives, which he says was commanded by Heliodorus, Bishop of Trica, apparently to compensate for the amatory character of the "Æthiopica," written in his youth. The same rule, Socrates informs us, was observed in Greece, Macedonia, and Thessalonica, but throughout the rest of the East he asserts that such separation was purely voluntary, and even that many bishops had no scruple in maintaining ordinary intercourse with their wives¹—a statement easy to be believed in view of the complaints of St. Isidor of Pelusium, about the same time, that the rules of the Church enjoining chastity received little respect among the priesthood.²

The influence of Jerome, Chrysostom, and other eminent Churchmen, the example of the West, and the efforts of the Origenians in favour of philosophic asceticism, doubtless had a powerful effect during the first years of the fifth century in extending the custom, but they failed in the endeavour to render it universal and obligatory, and the testimony of Socrates shows how soon even those provinces which adopted it in Jerome's time returned to the previous practice of leaving the matter to the election of the individual. The East thus preserved the traditions of earlier times, as recorded in the Apostolic Constitutions and Canons, prohibiting marriage in orders and the ordination of digami, but imposing no compulsory separation on those who had been married previous to ordination.

¹ Socrat. H. E. Lib. v. c. 21.

² S. Isidor. Pelusiot. Epist. Lib. III. No. 75.

Even these rules required to be occasionally enunciated in order to maintain their observance. In 530 a constitution of Justinian calls attention to the regulation prohibiting the marriage of deacons and subdeacons, and, in view of the little respect paid to it, the Emperor proceeds to declare the children of such unions spurious (not even *nothi* or *naturales*), and incompetent to inherit anything; the wife is likewise incapacitated from inheritance, and the whole estate of the father is escheated to the Church—the severity of which may perhaps be a fair measure of the extent of the evil which it was intended to repress.¹ Five years later Justinian recurs to the subject, and lays down the received regulations in all their details. Any one who keeps a concubine, or who has married a divorced woman or a second wife, is to be held ineligible to the diaconate or priesthood. Any member of those orders or of the subdiaconate who takes a wife or a concubine, whether publicly or secretly, is thereupon to be degraded and to lose all clerical privileges; and though the strongest preference is expressed for those who, though married, preserve strict continence, the very phrase employed indicates that this was altogether a matter of choice, and that previous conjugal relations were not subject to any legislative interference.² These same regulations were repeated some ten years later in a law, promulgated about 545,³ which was preserved throughout the whole period of Greek jurisprudence, being inserted by Leo the Philosopher in his

¹ Constit. 45 Cod. I. 3. This law is preserved by Photius (Nomoc. Tit. IX. c. 29), but Balsamon (Schol. ad. loc.) says that it is omitted in the Basilicon.

² “Nihil enim sic in sacris ordinationibus diligimus quam cum castitate viventes, aut cum uxoribus non cohabitantes, aut unius uxoris virum, qui vel fuerit vel sit, et ipsam castitatem eligentem.” The lector could, by forfeiting his prospects of promotion, marry a second time, if pressed by overmastering necessity, but he was not allowed, under any excuse, to take a third wife.—Novell. VI. c. 5.—These provisions were repeated the following year in Novell. XXII. c. 42.

³ Novell. CXXIII. c. 12.

Basilicon,¹ quoted by Photius in the Nomocanon, and referred to as still in force by Balsamon in the thirteenth century.² At the same time Justinian tacitly admits the failure of previous efforts when he adds a provision by which an unmarried postulant for the diaconate is obliged to pledge himself not to marry, and any bishop permitting such marriage is threatened with degradation.³

Bishops, however, were subjected to the full severity of the Latin discipline. As early as 528, Justinian ordered that no one should be eligible to the episcopate who was burdened with either children or grandchildren, giving as a reason the engrossing duties of the office, which required that the whole mind and soul should be devoted to them, and still more significantly hinting the indecency of converting to the use of the prelate's family the wealth bestowed by the faithful on the Church for pious uses and for charity.⁴ It is probable that this was not strictly observed, for in 535, when repeating the injunction, and adding a restriction on conjugal intercourse, he intimates that no inquiry shall be made into infractions previously occurring, but that it shall be rigidly enforced for the future.⁵ The decision was final as regards the absence of a wife, for it was again alluded to in 548, and that law is carried through the Nomocanon and Basilicon.⁶ The absence of children as a prerequisite to the episcopate, however, was not insisted upon so pertinaciously, for Leo the Philosopher, after the compilation of the Basilicon, issued a constitution allowing the ordination of bishops who had legitimate offspring, arguing that brothers and other relatives were equally prone to withdraw them from the duties of their position.⁷

¹ Basilicon III. i. 26.

² Balsamon Schol. ad Nomocanon. Tit. I. c. 23.

³ Novell. CXXIII. c. 14.

⁴ Const. 42 § 1. Cod. I. 3.—Basilicon III. i. 26.

⁵ Novell. VI. c. 1.

⁶ Novell. CXXXVII. c. 2.—Basilicon III. i. c. 8.—Balsamon Schol. ad Nomocan. Tit. i. c. 23.

⁷ Leonis Novell. Constit. II.

It is not worth while to enter into the interminable controversy respecting the council held at Constantinople in 680, the canons of which were promulgated in 692, and which is known to polemics as the *Quinisext in Trullo*. The Greeks maintain that it was Œcumenical, and its legislation binding upon Christendom; the Latins, that it was provincial and schismatic: but whether Pope Agatho acceded to its canons or not; whether a century later Adrian I. admitted them; or whether their authentication by the second Council of Nicæa gave them authority over the whole Church or not, are questions of little practical importance for our purpose, for they never were really incorporated into the law of the West, and they are only to be regarded as forming a portion of the received ecclesiastical jurisprudence of the East. In one sense, however, their bearing upon the Latin Church is interesting, for, in spite of them, Rome maintained communion with Constantinople for more than a century and a half, and the schism which then took place arose from altogether different causes.¹ In the West, therefore, celibacy was only a point of discipline, of no doctrinal importance, and not a matter of heresy, as we shall see it afterwards become under the stimulus afforded by Protestant controversy.

The canons of the *Quinisext* are very full upon all the questions relating to celibacy, and show that great relaxation had occurred in enforcing the regulations embodied in the laws of Justinian. *Digami* must have become numerous in the Church, for the prohibition of their ordination is renewed, and all who had not released themselves from such forbidden unions by June 15th of the preceding year are condemned to suffer deposition. So marriage in orders had evidently become frequent, for all guilty of it are enjoined to leave their wives, when,

¹ *Vide* "The Beginnings of the Temporal Sovereignty of the Popes," by Mgr. Duchesne, London, 1907.

after a short suspension, they are to be restored to their position, though ineligible for promotion.¹ A much severer punishment is, however, provided for those who should subsequently be guilty of the same indiscretion, for all such infractions of the rule are visited with absolute deposition²—thus proving that it had fallen into desuetude, since those who sinned after its restoration were regarded as much more culpable than those who had merely transgressed an obsolete law. Even bishops had neglected the restrictions imposed upon them by Justinian, for the council refers to prelates in Africa, Libya, and elsewhere, who lived openly with their wives; and although this is prohibited for the future under penalty of deposition, and although all wives of those promoted to the episcopate are directed to be placed in nunneries at a distance from their husbands, yet the remarkable admission is made that this is done for the sake of the people, who regarded such things as a scandal, and not for the purpose of changing that which had been ordained by the Apostles.³

With regard to the future discipline of the great body of the clergy, the council, after significantly acknowledging that the Roman Church required a promise of abstinence from married candidates for the diaconate and priesthood, proceeds to state that it desires to adhere to the Apostolic canon by keeping inviolate the conjugal relations of those in holy orders, and by permitting them to associate with their wives, only stipulating for continence during the time devoted to the ministry of the sacraments. To put an end to all opposition to this privilege, deposition is threatened against those who shall presume to interfere between the clergy and their wives,

¹ Quinisext can. 3.

² Ibid. c. 6.

³ Ibid. can. 12, 48.—“Hoc autem dicimus non ad ea abolenda et evertenda quæ Apostolice antea constituta sunt, sed . . . ne status ecclesiasticus ullo probro efficiatur.”

and likewise against all who, under pretence of religion, shall put their wives away. At the same time, in order to promote the extension of the Church in the foreign provinces, this latter penalty is remitted, as a concession to the prejudices of the "Barbarians."¹ How thoroughly in some regions sacerdotal marriage had come to be the rule we learn from a reference to Armenia, where the Levitical custom of the Hebrews was imitated, in the creation of a sacerdotal caste, transmitted from father to son, and confined to the priestly houses. This limitation is condemned by the council, which orders that all who are worthy of ordination shall be regarded as eligible.²

The Eastern Church thus formally and in the most solemn manner recorded its separate and independent discipline on this point, and refused to be bound by the sacerdotalism of Rome. It thus maintained the customs transmitted from the early period, when asceticism had commenced to show itself, but it shrank from carrying out the principles involved to their ultimate result, as was sternly attempted by the inexorable logic of Rome. The system thus laid down was permanent, for throughout the East the Quinisext was received unquestioningly as a general council, and its decrees were authoritative and unalterable. It is true that in the confusion of the two following centuries a laxity of practice gradually crept in, by which those who desired to marry were admitted to holy orders while single, and were granted two years after ordination during which they were at liberty to take wives, but this was acknowledged to be

¹ Quinisext c. 13, 30.

² Quinisext c. 33.—The Armenian Church in the middle ages was excessively severe as to the chastity of its ministers. A postulant for orders was obliged to confess, and if he had been guilty of a single lapse, he was rejected. So priests in orders, if yielding to the weakness of the flesh out of wedlock, were expelled, though they were not obliged to part with their wives, and the Greek rule permitting marriage in the lower orders was maintained.—Concil. Armenor. ann. 1362 Art. 50, 53, 93 (Martene Ampl. Collect. VII. 366-7, 403).

an abuse, and about the year 900 it was formally prohibited by a constitution of Leo the Philosopher.¹ Thus restored, the Greek Church has preserved its early traditions unaltered to the present day. Marriage in orders is not permitted, nor are digami admissible, but the lower grades of the clergy are free to marry, nor are they separated from their wives when promoted to the sacred functions of the diaconate or priesthood. The bishops are selected from the regular clergy or monks, and, being bound by the vow of chastity, are of course unmarried and unable to marry. Thus the legislation of Justinian is practically transmitted to the nineteenth century. Even this restriction on the freedom of marriage renders it difficult to preserve the purity of the priesthood, and the Greek Church, like the Latin, is forced occasionally to renew the Nicene prohibition against the residence of suspected women.²

The strongly marked hereditary tendency, which is so distinguishing a characteristic of mediæval European institutions, has led, in Russia at least, since the time of Peter the Great, to the customary transmission of the priesthood, and even of individual churches, from

¹ Leonis Novell. Constit. III.—It is not improbable that this custom resulted from the iconoclastic schism of Leo the Isaurian and Constantine Copronymus, which occupied nearly the whole of the eighth century. These emperors found their most unyielding enemies in the monks. In the savage persecutions which disgraced the struggle, Constantine endeavoured to extirpate monachism altogether. The accounts which his adversaries have transmitted of the violence and cruelties which he perpetrated are doubtless exaggerated, but there is likelihood that his efforts to discountenance celibacy, as the foundation of the obnoxious institution, are correctly reported. “Publice defamavit et dehonestavit habitum monachorum in hippodromo, præcipiens unumquemque monachum manutenere mulierem, et taliter transire per hippodromum, sumptis injuriis ab omni populo cumulatis” (Baronii Annal. ann. 766, No. 1). He ejected the monks from the monasteries, which he turned into barracks; some of the monks were tortured, others fled to the mountains and deserts, where they suffered every extremity, while others again succumbed to threats and temptations, and were publicly married—“alii corporeis voluptatibus addicti, suas etiam uxores circumducere non erubescabant” (Ibid. No. 28, 29).

² Synod. Montis Libani ann. 1736 P. II. c. v. No. 16, 17, Tab. I. No. 11; P. III. c. i. No. 11; P. IV. c. ii. No. 16.—Synod. Ain-Traz ann. 1835 c. xii. (Concil. Collect. Lacens. II. 134, 138, 262, 263, 366, 367, 585).

father to son, thus creating a sacerdotal caste. To such an extent has this been carried that marriage is obligatory on the parish priest, and custom requires that the wife shall be the daughter of a priest. Some of the results of this are to be seen in a law of 1867, forbidding for the future the aspirant to a cure from marrying the daughter of his predecessor or undertaking to support the family of the late incumbent as a condition precedent to obtaining the preferment. It shows how entirely the duties of the clergy had been lost in the sense of property and hereditary right attaching to benefices, leading inevitably to the neglect or perfunctory performance of ecclesiastical duties.¹ We shall see hereafter how narrowly the Latin Church escaped a similar transformation, and how prolonged was the struggle to avoid it.

One branch of the Eastern Church, however, relaxed the rules of the Quinisext. In 431, Nestorius, Patriarch of Constantinople, was excommunicated for his heretical subtleties as to the nature of the Godhead in Christ. Driven out from the empire by the orthodox authorities, his followers spread throughout Mesopotamia and Persia, where, by the end of the century, their efforts had gradually converted nearly the whole population. About the year 480, Barsuma, Metropolitan of Nisibis, added to his Nestorian heresy the guilt of marrying a nun, when to justify himself he assembled a synod in which the privilege of marriage was granted not only to priests, but even to monks. In 485, Babueus, Patriarch of Seleucia, held a council which excommunicated Barsuma and condemned his licentious doctrines; but, about ten years later, a subsequent patriarch, Babeus, in the Council of

¹ London "Academy," Nov. 13th, 1869, p. 51.—See also "The Russian Clergy," by Father Gagarin, London, 1872 (London "Athenæum," No. 2334, pp. 72-3).

Seleucia, obtained the enactment of canons conferring the privilege of marriage on all ranks of the clergy, from monk to patriarch. Some forty years later a debate recorded between the Patriarch Mar Aba and King Chosroes shows that repeated marriages were common among all orders, but Mar Aba subsequently issued a canon depriving patriarchs and bishops of the right, and subjecting them to the rules of the Latin and Greek Churches.¹

The career of the Nestorians shows that matrimony is not incompatible with mission-work, for they were the most successful missionaries on record. They penetrated throughout India, Tartary, and China. In the latter empire they lasted until the thirteenth century; while in India they not improbably exercised an influence in modifying the doctrines of ancient Brahmanism,² and the Portuguese discoverers in the fifteenth century found them flourishing in Malabar. So numerous were they that during the existence of the Latin kingdom of Jerusalem they are described, in conjunction with the monophysite sect of the Jacobites, as exceeding in numbers the inhabitants of the rest of Christendom.³

Another segment of the Eastern Church may properly receive attention here. The Abyssinians and Coptic Christians of Egypt can scarcely in truth be considered a part of the Greek Church, as they are monophysite

¹ For these details from the collection of Asseman I am indebted to the Abate Zaccaria's *Nuova Giustificazione del Celibato Sacro*, pp. 129-30.

² The strange similarity between some of the teachings of the Bhagavad-gita and Christianity, and the apparent identity of the name and of some of the story of Krishna with those of Christ, would seem to need some such explanation as the above. The problem, however, is too complicated for discussion here.—See Weber's *Indian Literature*, p. 238, and Monier Williams's *Indian Wisdom*, p. 136. For the question of St. Thomas's Indian Apostolate see Hohlenberg's learned tract, "*De Originibus et Fatis Eccles. Christ. in India Orientali.*" Havniæ, 1822.

³ *Hi omnes Nestoriani . . . cum Jacobinis longe plures esse dicuntur quam Latini et Græci.*—Jac. de Vitriaco *Hist. Hierosol.* cap. lxxvi.

in belief, and have in many particulars adopted Jewish customs, such as circumcision, &c. Their observances as regards marriages, however, tally closely with the canons of the Quinisext, except that bishops are permitted to retain their wives. In the sixteenth century, Bishop Zaga Zabo, who was sent as envoy to Portugal by David, King of Abyssinia, left behind him a confession of faith for the edification of the curious. In this document he describes the discipline of his Church as strict in forbidding the clericature to illegitimates; marriage is not dissolved by ordination, but second marriage, or marriage in orders, is prohibited, except under dispensation from the Patriarch, a favour occasionally granted to magnates for public reasons. Without such dispensation, the offender is expelled from the priesthood, while a bishop or other ecclesiastic convicted of having an illegitimate child is forthwith deprived of all his benefices and possessions. Monasteries, moreover, were numerous, and monachal chastity was strictly enforced.¹ These rules, I presume, are still in force. A recent traveller in those regions states that "if a priest be married previous to his ordination, he is allowed to remain so; but no one can marry after having entered the priesthood"—while a mass of superstitious and ascetic observances has overlaid religion, until little trace is left of original Christianity.²

¹ Calixt. de Conjug. Cleric. p. 415.—Osorii de Rebus Emmanuelis Regis. Lusit. Lib. IX. (Colon. 1574, p. 305a).

² Parkyns's Life in Abyssinia, chapter xxxi.—Mr. Parkyns sums up about 260 fast days in the year, most of them much more rigid than those observed in the Catholic Church.

CHAPTER VII

MONACHISM

THE Monastic Orders occupy too prominent a place in ecclesiastical history, and were too powerful an instrument both for good and evil, to be passed over without some cursory allusion, although the secular clergy is more particularly the subject of the present sketch, and the rise and progress of monachism is a topic too extensive in its details to be thoroughly considered in the space which can be allotted to it.

In this, as in some other forms of asceticism, we may look to Buddhism for the model on which the Church fashioned her institutions. Ages before the time of Sakyamuni, or the Buddha, the life of the anchorite had become a favourite mode of securing the *moksha*, or supreme good of absorption in Brahma. Buddhism, in throwing open the way of salvation to all mankind, popularised this, and thus multiplied enormously the crowd of mendicants, who lived upon the charity of the faithful, and who abandoned all the cares and duties of life in the hope of advancing a step in the scale of being, and of ultimately obtaining the highest bliss of admission to Nirvana. In the hopeless confusion of Hindu chronology, it is impossible to define dates with exactness, but we know that at a very early period these Bhikshus and Bhikshunis, or mendicants of either sex, were organised in monasteries (Viharas or Sangharamas) erected by the piety of the faithful, and were subjected to definite rules, prominent among which were those of poverty and chastity, which subsequently became the

foundation of all the Western orders. Probably the oldest existing scripture of Buddhism is the Pratimoksha, or collection of rules for observance by the bhikshus, which tradition, not without probability, ascribes to Sakyamuni himself. In this, infraction of chastity falls under the first of the four Parajika rules; it is classed, with murder, among the most serious offences, entailing excommunication and expulsion without forgiveness. The solicitation of a woman comes within the scope of the thirteen Sanghadisesa rules, entailing penance and probation, after which the offender may be absolved by an assembly of not less than twenty bhikshus. Other punishments are allotted for every suspicious act, and the utmost care is shown in the regulations laid down for the minutest details of social intercourse between the sexes.¹

Under these rules, Buddhist monachism developed to an extent which more than rivals that of its Western derivative. The remains of the magnificent Viharas still to be seen in India testify at once to the enormous multitudes which found shelter in them and to the munificent piety of the monarchs and wealthy men who, as in Europe, sought to purchase the favour of Heaven by founding and enlarging these retreats for the devotee. In China, Buddhism was not introduced until the first century A.D., and yet, by the middle of the seventh century, in spite of repeated and severe persecutions, the number of monasteries already amounted to 3716, while two hundred years later the persecuting Emperor Wu-Tsung ordered the destruction of no less than 4600; and at the present day it is estimated that there are 80,000 Buddhist monks in the environs of

¹ Davids & Oldenberg's *Vinaya Texts*, Part I. pp. 4, 8, 14, 16, 32, 35-7, 42, 47, 56.—Cf. Beal's *Catena*, pp. 209-14.—Burnouf, *Introduction à l'histoire du Bouddhisme indien*. 2e Éd. pp. 245-8.

Pekin alone. When, in the seventh century, Hiouen-Thsang visited India, he describes the Sangharama of Nalanda as containing ten thousand monks and novices; and the later pilgrim, Fah-Hian, found fifty or sixty thousand in the island of Ceylon. In the fourteenth century, the city of Ilchi, in Chinese Tartary, possessed fourteen monasteries, averaging three thousand devotees in each; while in Tibet, at the present time, there are in the vicinity of Lhasa twelve great monasteries, containing a population of 18,500 lamas. In Ladak, the proportion of lamas to the laity is as one to thirteen; in Spiti, one to seven; and in Burmah, one to thirty.¹ Great as were the proportions to which European monachism grew, it never attained dimensions such as these.

Whether the West may have borrowed from the East in this matter of monachism, or was independently inspired by similar impulses, is a question which we are not called upon to answer. As an historical fact, the first rudimentary development of a tendency in such direction is to be found in the vows, which, as stated in a previous section, had already, at an early period in the history of the Church, become common among female devotees. In fact an order of widows, employed in charitable works and supported from the offerings of the faithful, was apparently one of the primitive institutions of the Apostles. To prevent any conflict between the claims of the world and of the Church, St. Paul directs that they shall be childless and not less than sixty years of age, so that on the one hand there might be no neglect of the first duty which he recognised as owing to the family, nor, on the other hand, that the devotee should

¹ Beal's Chinese Pilgrims, pp. xxxviii., xl., 155-9.—Schlagintweit's Buddhism in Tibet, pp. 164-5.—Wheeler's History of India, III. 270.—Proc. Roy. Geog. Society, in London "Reader," Nov. 17, 1866.

be tempted by the flesh to quit the service which she had undertaken.¹

This admirable plan may be considered the germ of the countless associations by which the Church has in all ages earned the gratitude of mankind by giving to Christianity its truest practical exposition. It combined a refuge for the desolate with a most efficient organisation for spreading the faith and administering charity; and there was no thought of marring its utility by rendering it simply an instrument for exaggerating and propagating asceticism. St. Paul, indeed, expressly commands the younger ones to marry and bring up children;² and he could little have anticipated the time when this order of widows, so venerable in its origin and labours, would, by the caprice of ascetic progress, come to be regarded as degraded in comparison with the virgin spouses of Christ, who selfishly endeavoured to purchase their own salvation by shunning all the duties imposed on them by the Creator.³ Nor could he have imagined that, after eighteen centuries, enthusiastic theologians would seriously argue that Christ and his Apostles had founded regular religious orders, bound by the three customary vows of chastity, poverty, and obedience.⁴

¹ I. Tim. v. 3-14, cf. Act. ix. 39-41.—In the time of Tertullian these women were regularly ordained (*Ad Uxor. Lib. I. c. 7*). This was forbidden by the Council of Nicaea (can. 19) and by that of Laodicea (can. 11) in 372. In 451, however, we see by the Council of Chalcedon (can. 15) that the ancient practice had been revived. The authorities on the question will be found very fully given by Chr. Lupus (*Scholia in Can. 15 Concil. Chalced.*—Opp. II. 90 sqq.). Even as late as the middle of the ninth century stringent rules were promulgated to punish the marriage of deaconesses (*Capitul. Add. III. Cap. 75.*—Baluz. I. 1191).

² *Volo ergo juniores [viduas] nubere, filios procreare, matresfamilias esse, nullam occasionem dare adversario*—I. Tim. v. 14.

³ See Leon. I. *Epist. lxxxvii. cap. 2* (*Harduin. I. 1775*). This was not so in the earlier periods. Tertullian (*De Præscription. iii.*), in alluding to the various classes of ecclesiastics, places the widows immediately after the order of deacons, and before the virgins.

⁴ Nothing is so illogical as the logic resorted to in order to prove foregone conclusions. Donato Calvi (*apud Panzini, Pubblica Confessione di un Frigioneiro,*

In the early Church, as has been already shown, all vows of continence and dedication to the service of God were a matter of simple volition, not only as to their inception, but also as to their duration. The male or female devotee was at liberty to return to the world and to marry at any time;¹ although during the purer periods of persecution, such conduct was doubtless visited with disapprobation and was attended with loss of reputation. As, moreover, there was no actual segregation from the world and no sundering of family ties, there was no necessity for special rules of discipline. When, under the Decian persecution, Paul the Thebæan, and shortly afterwards St. Antony, retired to the desert in order to satisfy a craving for ascetic mortification which could only be satiated by solitude, and thus unconsciously founded the vast society of Egyptian cenobites, they gave rise to what at length became a new necessity.²

Torino, 1865, p. 111) quotes the texts Matt. XIX. 12, Luke XIV. 33, and Matt. XIX. 21, 27, and then triumphantly concludes—"Ben lice conchiudere chiaramente da'sacri Vangeli raccogliersi fossero gli Apostoli veri religiosi coi tre voti della religione legati."

¹ If further proof of this be required, beyond what has already been incidentally adduced, it is to be found in the 19th canon of the Council of Ancyra, held about the year 314. By this, the vow of celibacy or virginity when broken only rendered the offender incapable of receiving holy orders. He was to be treated as a "digamus," showing evidently that no punishment was inflicted, beyond the disability which attached to second marriages.

Even in the time of St. Augustin monks were frequently married, as we learn from his remarks concerning the heretics who styled themselves Apostolici and who gloried in their superior asceticism—"Eo quod in suam communionem non reciperent utentes conjugibus et res proprias possidentes; quales habet Catholica [ecclesia] et monachos et clericos plurimos."—Augustin. de Hæresib. No. XL.

Even Epiphanius, the ardent admirer of virginity, when controverting the errors of the same sect, declares that those who cannot persevere in their vows had better marry and reconcile themselves by penitence to the Church rather than sin in secret—"Melius est lapsum a cursu palam sibi uxorem sumere secundum legem et a virginitate multo tempore poenitentiam agere et sic rursus ad ecclesiam induci, etc."—Panar. Hæres. LXI.

We shall see hereafter how long it took to enforce the strict segregation of the cenobite from the world.

² St. Jerome vindicates for Paul the priority which was commonly ascribed to Antony, but he fully admits that the latter is entitled to the credit of popularising the practice—"Alii, autem, in quam opinionem vulgus omne consentit, asserunt

The associations which gradually formed themselves required some government, and the institution of monachism became too important a portion of the Church, both in numbers and influence, to remain long without rules of discipline to regulate its piety and to direct its powers. As yet, however, a portion of the Church, adhering to ancient tradition, looked reprovingly on these exaggerated vagaries. Lactantius, for instance, in a passage written subsequent to the conversion of Constantine, earnestly denounces the life of a hermit as that of a beast rather than of a man, and urges that the bonds of human society ought not to be broken, since man cannot exist without his fellows.¹

It was in vain to attempt to stem the tide which had now fairly set in, nor is it difficult to understand the impulsion which drove so many to abandon the world. No small portion of pastoral duty consisted in exhortations to virginity, the praises of which were reiterated with ever-increasing vehemence, and the rewards of which, in this world and the next, were magnified with constantly augmenting promises. Indeed, a perusal of the writings of that age seems to render it difficult to conceive how any truly devout soul could remain involved in worldly duties and pleasures, when the abandonment of all the ties and responsibilities imposed on man by Providence was represented as rendering the path to heaven so much shorter and more certain, and when every pulpit resounded with perpetual amplifications of the one theme. Equally efficacious with the timid and slothful was the prospect of a quiet retreat from the confusion and strife

Antonium hujus propositi caput, quod ex parte verum est: non enim tam ipse ante omnes fuit, quam ab eo omnium incitata sunt studia," etc.—Hieron. Vit. Pauli cap. 1.—Epist. xxii. ad Eustoch. cap. 36.

Jerome also asserts that monachism was unknown in Palestine and Syria until it was introduced there by Hilarion, a disciple of St. Antony.—Vit. Hilarion. cap. 14

¹ Instit. Divin. Lib. vi. cap. 10.—Cf. c. 17.

which the accelerating decline of the empire rendered every day wilder and more hopeless; while the crushing burdens of the state drove many, in spite of all the efforts of the civil power, to seek their escape in the exemptions accorded to those connected with the Church. When to these classes are added the penitents—prototypes of St. Mary of Egypt, who retired to the desert as the only refuge from her profligate life, and for seventeen years waged an endless struggle with the burning passions which she could control but could not conquer—it is not difficult to understand how vast were the multitudes unconsciously engaged in laying the foundations of that monastic structure which was eventually to overshadow all Christendom.¹ Indeed, even the Church itself at times became alarmed at the increasing tendency, as when the Council of Saragossa, in 381, found it necessary to denounce the practice of ecclesiastics abandoning their functions and embracing the monastic life, which it assumes was done from unworthy motives.²

Soon after his conversion, Constantine had encouraged the prevailing tendency by not only repealing the disabilities imposed by the old Roman law on those who remained unmarried, but by extending the power of making wills to minors who professed the intention of celibacy.³ His piety and that of subsequent emperors speedily attributed to all connected with the Church certain exemptions from the intolerable municipal burdens which were eating out the heart of the empire. An enormous premium was thus offered to swell the ecclesi-

¹ As early as the commencement of the fourth century, we find Faustus, in his "tu quoque" defence of Manichæism, asserting that in the Christian Churches the number of professed virgins exceeded that of women not bound by vows.—Augustin. contra Faust. Manich. Lib. xxx. c. iv.

² Propter luxum vanitatemque præsumptam.—Concil. Cæsaraug. I. ann. 381 c. vi. —Disobedience to the prohibition is threatened with prolonged suspension from communion.

³ Cassiod. Hist. Tripart. Lib. I. c. 9

astical ranks, while, as the number of the officiating clergy was necessarily limited, the influx would naturally flow into the mass of monks and nuns, on whose increase there was no restriction, and whose condition was open to all, with but slender examination into the fitness of the applicant.¹ The rapidly increasing wealth of the Church and the large sums devoted to the maintenance of all orders of the clergy offered additional temptations to those who might regard the life of the ascetic as the means of securing an assured existence of idleness, free from all care of the morrow. If, therefore, during a period when ridicule and persecution were the portion of those who vowed perpetual continence, it had been found impossible to avoid the most deplorable scandals,² it can readily be conceived that allurements such as these would crowd the monastic profession with proselytes of a most questionable character, drawn from a society so frightfully dissolute as that of the fourth century. The fierce declamations of St. Jerome afford a terrible picture of the disorders prevalent among those vowed to celibacy, and of the hideous crimes resorted to in order to conceal or remove the consequences of guilt, showing that the asceticism enforced by Siricius had not wrought any improvement.³

¹ See Lib. xvi. Cod. Theod. Tit. ii. ll. 9, 10, 11, 14, etc. This evil had become so great by the time of Valens that in 365 that emperor declares "Quidam ignavia sectatores desertis civitatum muneribus, captant solitudines ac secreta, et specie religionis cœtibus monizonton congregantur." The most vigorous measures were requisite, "erui e latebris consulta præceptione mandavimus," and he orders the culprits to be subjected again to their municipal duties under pain of forfeiture of all their property (Lib. xii. Cod. Theod. Tit. i. l. 63). In 376 the same emperor endeavoured to enforce the obligation of military service on the crowds of vigorous men who filled the monasteries, and on their resistance a persecution arose in which many were killed.—Hieron. Euseb. Chron. ann. 378.

² The lamentations of St. Cyprian have already been alluded to. In 305 the Council of Elvira found it necessary to denounce perpetual excommunication against the "virgines sacratæ" who abandoned themselves to a life of licentiousness, while those guilty only of a single lapse were allowed restoration to communion on the deathbed, if earned by continual penitence (Concil. Eliberit. c. 13).

³ Piget dicere quot quotidie virgines ruant, quantas de suo gremio mater perdat ecclesia: super quæ sidera inimicus superbus ponat thronum suum; quot petras

The necessity of subjecting those bound by vows to established rules must therefore have soon become generally recognised; and although, as we have already seen, they were free at any time to abandon the profession which they had assumed, still, while they remained as members, the welfare of the Church would render it imperative to establish rules of wholesome discipline. The first authoritative attempt to check disorders of the kind is to be found in the first Council of Carthage, which in 348 insisted that all who, shunning marriage, elected the better lot of chastity, should live separate and solitary, and that none should have access to them under penalty of excommunication; and in 381 the Council of Saragossa sought to remedy the evil at its root by forbidding virgins to take the veil unless they could furnish proof that they were at least forty years of age.¹

Although the Church, in becoming an affair of state, had to a great extent sacrificed its independence, still it enjoyed the countervailing advantage of being able to call upon the temporal power for assistance when its own authority was defied, nor was it long in requiring this aid in the enforcement of its regulations. Accordingly, in 364, we find a law of Jovian forbidding, under pain of actual or civil death, any attempt to marry a sacred virgin,² the extreme severity of which is the best indication of the condition of morals that could justify a resort to penalties so exaggerated. How great was the necessity for reform, and how little was actually accomplished by

excavet et habitet coluber in foraminibus earnm. Videas plerasque viduas antequam nuptas, infelicem conscientiam mutata tantum veste protegere. Quas nisi tumor uteri, et infantum prodiderit vagitus, sanctas et castas se esse gloriantur, et erecta cervice et ludentibus pedibus incedunt. Aliæ vero sterilitatem præbunt, et necdum sati hominis homicidium faciunt. Nonnullæ cum se seuserint concepisse de scelere, abortii venena meditantur, et frequenter etiam ipsæ commortuæ, trium criminum reæ, ad inferos producuntur, homicidæ suæ, Christi adulteræ, necdum nati filii parricidæ.—Hieron. Epist. xxii. ad Eustoch. c. 5.

¹ Concil. Carthag. I. c. 3.—Concil. Cæsaraugust. I. c. 8.

² Lib. ix. Cod. Theod. Tit. xxv. l. 2.

these attempts, may be estimated from an effort of the Council of Valence, in 374, to prevent those who married from being pardoned after too short a penance,¹ and from the description which ten years later Pope Siricius gives of the unbridled and shameless license indulged in by both sexes in violation of their monastic vows.²

Thus definite rules for the governance of these constantly increasing crowds of all stations, conditions, and characters, who were obviously so ill-fitted for the obligations which they had assumed, became necessary, but it was long before they assumed an irrevocable and binding force. The treatise which is known as the rule of St. Orsiesius is only a long and somewhat mystic exhortation to asceticism. That which St. Pachomius is said to have received from an angel is manifestly posterior to the date of that saint, and probably belongs to the commencement of the fifth century. Minute as are its instructions, and rigid as are its injunctions respecting every action of the cenobite, yet it fully displays the voluntary nature of the profession and the lightness of the bonds which tied the monk to his order. A stranger applying for admission to a monastery was exposed only to a probation of a few days, to test his sincerity and to prove that he was not a slave; no vows were imposed, only his simple promise to obey the rules being required. If he grew tired of ascetic life, he departed, but he could not be again taken back without penitence and the consent of the archimandrite.³ Even female travellers applying for hospitality were not refused admittance,

¹ Concil. Valent. I. ann. 374 can. ii.

² Postea vero in abruptum conscientiae desperatione producti, de illicitis complexibus libere filios procreaverint, quod et publicæ leges et ecclesiastica jura condemnant.—Siricii Epist. I. c. 6.

³ Regul. S. Pachom. c. 26, 79, 95.—The Rule which passes under the name of John, Bishop of Jerusalem, I believe is universally acknowledged to be spurious, and therefore requires no special reference.

and an inclosure was set apart for them, where they were entertained with special honour and attention; a place was likewise provided for them in which to be present at vespers.¹

A similar system of discipline is manifested in the detailed statement of the regulations of the Egyptian monasteries left us by John Cassianus, Abbot of St. Victor of Marseilles, who died in 448. No vows or religious ceremonies were required of the postulant for admission. He was proved by ten days' waiting at the gate, and a year's probation inside, yet the slender tie between him and the community is shown by the preservation of his worldly garments, to be returned to him in case of his expulsion for disobedience or discontent, and also by the refusal to receive from him the gift of his private fortune—although no one within the sacred walls was permitted to call the simplest article his own—lest he should leave the convent and then claim to revoke his donation, as not unfrequently happened in institutions which neglected this salutary rule.² So, in a series of directions for cenobitic life, appended to a curious Arabic version of the Nicene canons, the punishment provided for persistent disobedience and turbulence is expulsion of the offender from the monastery.³

As a temporary refuge from the trials of life, where the soul could be strengthened by seclusion, meditation, peaceful labour, and rigid discipline, thousands must have found the institution of monachism most beneficial who had not resolution enough to give themselves up to a life of ascetic devotion and privation. These facilities

¹ *Ibid.* c. 29. This is in particularly striking contrast with mediæval monachism, which, as we shall see hereafter, considered the sacred precincts polluted by the foot of woman.

² *Cassian. de Cœnob. Institut. Lib. iv. c. 3, 4, 5, 6, 13.*—Cassianus declares chastity to be the virtue by which men are rendered most like angels.

³ *De Monach. Decret. can. x. (Harduin. Concil. I. 498).*

for entrance and departure, however, only rendered more probable the admission of the turbulent and the worldly; and the want of stringent and effective regulations must have rendered itself every day more apparent, as the holy multitudes waxed larger and more difficult to manage, and as the empire became covered with wandering monks, described by St. Augustin as beggars, swindlers, and peddlers of false relics, who resorted to the most shameless mendacity to procure the means of sustaining their idle and vagabond life.¹

It was this, no doubt, which led to the adoption and enforcement of the third of the monastic vows—that of obedience—as being the only mode by which, during the period when residence was voluntary, the crowds of devotees could be kept in a condition of subjection. To what a length this was carried, and how completely the system of religious asceticism succeeded in its object of destroying all human feeling, is well exemplified by the shining example of the holy Mucius, who presented himself for admission in a monastery, accompanied by his child, a boy eight years of age. His persistent humility gained for him a relaxation of the rules, and father and son were admitted together. To test his worthiness, however, they were separated, and all intercourse forbidden. His patience encouraged a further trial. The helpless child was neglected and abused systematically, but all the perverse ingenuity which rendered him a mass of filth and visited him with perpetual chastisement failed to excite a sign of interest in the father. Finally, the abbot feigned to lose all patience with the little sufferer's moans, and ordered Mucius to cast him in the river. The obedient monk carried him to the bank and threw him in with such

¹ Nusquam missos, nusquam fixos, nusquam stantes, nusquam sedentes. Alii membra martyrum, si tamen martyrum, venditant; alii fimbrias et phylacteria sua magnificent . . . et omnes petunt, omnes exigunt, aut sumptus lucrosæ egestatis, aut simulatæ pretium sanctitatis, etc.—Augustin. de Opere Monachor. cap. 28.

promptitude that the admiring spectators were barely able to rescue him. All that is wanting to complete the hideous picture is the declaration of the abbot that in Mucius the sacrifice of Abraham was completed.¹ This epitomises the whole system—the transfer to man of the obedience due to God—and shows how little, by this time, was left of the hopeful reliance on a beneficent God which distinguished the primitive Church, and which led Athenagoras, in the second century, to argue from the premises “God certainly impels no one to those things which are unnatural.”

The weaker sex, whether from the greater value attached to the purity of woman or from her presumed frailty, as well as from some difference in the nature of the engagement entered into, was the first to become the subject of distinct legislation, and the frequency of the efforts required shows the difficulty of enforcing the rule of celibacy and chastity. Allusion has already been made to a law of Jovian which, as early as 364, denounced the attempt to marry a nun as a capital crime. Subsequent canons of the Church show that this was wholly ineffectual. The Council of Valence, in 374, endeavoured to check such marriages. The Synod of Rome, in 384, alludes with horror to these unions, which it stigmatises as adultery, and drawing a distinction between virgins professed and those who had taken the veil, it prescribes an indefinite penance before they can be received back into the Church, but at the same time it does not venture

¹ Cassian. Lib. v. c. 27, 28. The extravagant lengths to which this implicit subjection was habitually carried are further illustrated by Cassianus in Lib. iv. c. 10.

The same spirit is shown in the story told of St. Francis of Assisi, who took with him into the garden two novices to assist him in planting cabbages. He commenced by setting out the vegetables with their heads in the earth and their roots in the air. One of the novices ventured to remonstrate—“Father, that is not the way to make cabbages grow”—“My son,” interrupted the Saint, “you are not fitted for our order,”—and he dismissed the incautious youth on the spot.

to order their separation from their husbands.¹ A year later, the bolder Siricius commands both monks and nuns guilty of unchastity to be imprisoned, but he makes no allusion to marriage.² Notwithstanding the fervour of St. Augustin's admiration for virginity and the earnestness with which he waged war in favour of celibacy, he pronounces that the marriage of nuns is binding, ridicules those who consider it as invalid, and deprecates the evil results of separating man and wife under such circumstances, but yet his asceticism, satisfied with this concession to common sense, pronounces such unions to be worse than adulterous.³ From this it is evident that these infractions of discipline were far from uncommon, and that the stricter Churchmen already treated such marriages as null and void, which resulted in the husbands considering themselves at liberty to marry again. Such view of monastic vows was not sustained by the authorities of the Church, for about the same period Innocent I., like St. Augustin, while condemning such marriages as worse than adulterous, admitted their validity by refusing communion to the offenders until one of the partners in guilt should be dead; and, like the Synod of 384, he considered the transgression as somewhat less culpable in the professed virgin than in her who had consummated her marriage with Christ by absolutely taking the veil.⁴ It

¹ Synod. Roman. ann. 384 c. 1, 2.

² Siricii Epist. 1, c. 6.—A rather curious episode in monastic discipline is a law promulgated in 390 by Theodosius the Great prohibiting nuns from shaving their heads under severe penalties. "*Feminae quæ crinem suum contra divinas humanasque leges instinctu persuasæ professionis absciderint ab ecclesiæ foribus arceantur,*" and any bishop permitting them to enter a church is threatened with deposition.—Lib. XVI. Cod. Theod. Tit. ii. l. 27.

³ De Bono Viduit. c. 10, 11.—It will be seen hereafter that in the twelfth century the Church adopted as a rule of discipline the practices condemned by St. Augustin, and that in the sixteenth century the Council of Trent elevated it into a point of faith.

⁴ Innocent. Epist. ad Victricium. c. 12, 13.—The difficulty of the questions which arose in establishing the monastic system is shown in an epistle of Leo I. to the Mauritanian Bishops concerning some virgins professed who had suffered

was probably this assumed marriage with Christ—a theory which St. Cyprian shows to be as old as the third century, and which is very strongly stated by Innocent—which rendered the Church so much more sensitive as to the frailty of the female devotees than to that of the men. As yet, however, the stability of such marriages was generally accepted throughout the Church, for, a few years before the epistle of Innocent, we find it enunciated by the first Council of Toledo, which decided that the nun who married was not admissible to penitence during the life of her husband, unless she separated herself from him.¹

It is evident from all this that an effort had been made to have such marriages condemned as invalid, and that it had failed. We see, however, that the lines had gradually been drawn more tightly around the monastic order, that the vows could no longer be shaken off with ease, and that there was a growing tendency to render the monastic character ineffaceable when once assumed. Towards the middle of the fifth century, however, a reaction took place, possibly because the extreme views may have been found impracticable. Thus Leo I. treats recalcitrant cenobites with singular tenderness. He declares that monks cannot without sin abandon their profession, and therefore that he who returns to the world and marries must redeem himself by penitence, for however honourable be the marriage-tie and the active duties of life, still it is a transgression to desert the better path. So professed virgins, who throw off the habit and

violence from the Barbarians. He decides that they had committed no sin, and could be admitted to communion if they persevered in a life of chastity and religious observance, but that they could not continue to be numbered with the holy maidens, while yet they were not to be degraded to the order of widows; and he further requires that they shall exhibit their sense of shame and humiliation. The problem evidently was one which transcended the acuteness even of Leo to solve.—Leonis I. Epist. Episcop. per Cæsarien. Mauritan. cap. ii. v. (Harduin. I. 1775-6).

¹ Concil. Toletan. I. c. 16.

marry, violate their duty, and those who in addition to this have been regularly consecrated commit a great crime—and yet no further punishment is indicated for them;¹ and the little respect still paid to the indelible character claimed for monachism is shown by the manner in which the civil power was ready to interfere for the purpose of putting an end to some of the many abuses arising from monastic institutions. In 458 Majorian promulgated a law in which he inveighs with natural indignation against the parents who, to get rid of their offspring, compel their unhappy daughters to enter convents at a tender age, and he orders that, until the ardour of the passions shall be tempered by advancing years, no vows shall be administered. The minimum age for taking the veil is fixed at forty years, and stringent measures are provided for insuring its observance. If infringed by order of the parents, or by an orphan girl of her own free will, one-third of all the possessions of the offender is confiscated to the State, and the ecclesiastics officiating at the ceremony are visited with the heavy punishment of proscription. A woman forced into a nunnery, if her parents die before she reaches the age of forty, is declared to be free to leave it and to marry, nor can she be disinherited thereafter.² Fruitless as this well-intentioned effort proved, it is highly suggestive as to the wrongs which were perpetrated under the name of religion, the stern efforts felt to be requisite for their prevention, and the power exercised to annul the vows.

In the East, the tendency was to give a more rigid and unalterable character to the vows, nor is it difficult to

¹ Leo. Epist. ad Rusticum c. 12, 13, 14. So the second Council of Arles, in 443 (can. 52), excommunicates the nun who marries until due penance shall have been performed, but does not indicate separation.

² Novell. Majorian. Tit. vi. This law continued in force for but five years, being abrogated in 463 by Severus.—Novell. Severi. Tit. 1.

understand the cause. Both Church and State began to feel the necessity of reducing to subjection under some competent authority the vast hordes of idle and ignorant men who had embraced monastic life. In the West, monachism was as yet in its infancy, and was to be stimulated rather than to be dreaded, but it was far otherwise in the East, where the influence of the ascetic ideas of India was probably much more direct and immediate. The examples of Antony and Pachomius had brought them innumerable followers. The solitudes of the deserts had become peopled with vast communities, and as the contagion spread, monasteries arose everywhere and were rapidly filled and enlarged.¹ The blindly bigoted and the turbulently ambitious found a place among those whose only aim was retirement and peace; while the authority wielded by the superior of each establishment, through the blind obedience claimed under monastic vows, gave him a degree of power which rendered him not only important but dangerous. The monks thus became in time a body of no little weight which it behoved the Church to thoroughly control, as it might become efficient for good or evil. By encouraging and directing it, she gained an instrument of incalculable force, morally and physically, to consolidate her authority and extend her influence. How that influence was used, and how the monks became at times a terror even to the State is written broadly on the history of the age. Even early in the fifth century the hordes of savage Nitrian cenobites were the janizaries of the fiery Cyril, with which he lorded it over the city of Alexandria, and almost openly bade defiance to the imperial authority. The tumult in which Orestes nearly lost his life, the banishment of the Jews,

¹ For the ascetic extravagances which accompanied the development of monachism the reader is referred to the vigorous summary by Mr. Lecky in his *History of European Morals*.

and the shocking catastrophe of Hypatia show how dangerous an element to society they were even then, when under the guidance of an able and unscrupulous leader.¹ So the prominent part taken by the monks in the deplorable Nestorian and Eutychian controversies, the example of the Abbot Barsumas at the Robber Synod in Ephesus, the exploits of Theodosius of Jerusalem and Peter of Antioch, who drove out their bishops and usurped the episcopal chairs, the career of Eutyches himself, the bloodthirsty rabble of monks who controlled the Synod of Ephesus and endeavoured to overawe that of Chalcedon, and, in the succeeding century, the insurrections against the Emperor Anastasius which were largely attributed to their efforts—all these were warnings not lightly to be neglected. The monks, in fact, were fast becoming not only disagreeable but even dangerous to the civil power; their organisation and obedience to their leaders gave them strength to threaten seriously the influence even of the hierarchy, and the effort to keep them strictly under subjection and within their convent walls became necessary to the peace of both Church and State.

At the Council of Chalcedon, in 451, the hierarchy had their revenge for the insults which they had suffered two years before in the Robber Synod. A large portion of the monks, infected with Eutychianism, came into direct antagonism with the bishops, whom they defied. With the aid of the civil power, the bishops triumphed, and endeavoured to put an end for the future to monastic insubordination, by placing the monasteries under the

¹ Socrat. Hist. Eccles. Lib. VII. c. 13, 14, 15.—Even before this, in the province of Africa, the political utility of such enthusiastic disciples had been recognised and acted on. At the Council of Carthage, in 411, where the Donatists were condemned, the Imperial Commissioner, in pronouncing sentence, warned the Donatist bishops that they must restrain the turbulent monks within their dioceses—"Ii autem qui in præsiidiis suis circumcellionum turbas se habere cognoscunt, scient nisi eorum insolentiam omnimodis comprimere et refrenare gestierint, maxime ea loca fisco mox occupanda."—Concil. Carthag. ann. 411 Cognit. III. cap. ult. (Harduin. I. 1190).

direct control and supervision of the secular prelates. A series of canons was adopted which declared that monks and nuns were not at liberty to marry; but while excommunication was the punishment provided for the offence, power was given to the bishops to extend mercy to the offenders. At the suggestion of the Emperor Marcian, the council deplored the turbulence of the monks who, leaving their monasteries, stirred up confusion everywhere, and it commanded them to devote themselves solely to prayer and fasting in the spot which they had chosen as a retreat from the world. It forbade them to abandon the holy life to which they had devoted themselves, and pronounced the dread sentence of the anathema on the renegades who refused to return and undergo due penance. No monastery was to be founded without the license of the bishop of the locality, and he alone could give permission to a monk to leave it for any purpose.¹

This legislation was well adapted to the end in view, but the evil was too deep-seated and too powerful to be thus easily eradicated. Finding the Church unable to enforce a remedy, the civil power was compelled to intervene. As early as 390 Theodosius the Great had ordered the monks to confine themselves strictly to deserts and solitudes.² Two years later he repealed this law and allowed them to enter the cities.³ This laxity was abused, and in 466 the Emperors Leo and Anthemius issued an edict forbidding for the future all monks to go beyond the walls of their monasteries on any pretext, except the apocrisarii, or legal officers, on legitimate business alone, and these were strictly enjoined not to engage in religious disputes, not to stir up the

¹ Concil. Chalced. c. 4, 7, 16. The most important of these, the fourth canon, was laid before the council by the Emperor in person.

² Lib. xvi. Cod. Theod. iii. 1.

³ Lib. xvi. Cod. Theod. iii. 2.

people, and not to preside over assemblages of any nature.¹

History shows us how little obedience this also received, nor is it probable that much more attention was paid to the imperial rescript when, in 532, Justinian confirmed the legislation of his predecessors, and added provisions forbidding those who had once taken the vows from returning to the world under penalty of being handed over to the *curia* of their municipality, with confiscation of their property, and personal punishment if penniless.² Had the effort then been successful, he would not have been under the necessity of renewing it in 535 by a law making over to the monastery, by way of satisfaction to God, the property of any monk presuming to abandon a life of religion and returning to the cares of the world.³ The prevalent laxity of morals is further shown by another provision according to which the monk who received orders was not allowed to marry, even if he entered grades in which marriage was permitted to the secular clergy, the penalty for taking a wife or a concubine being degradation and dismissal, with incapacity for serving the State.⁴ Ten years later, further legislation was found necessary, and at length the final expedient was hit upon, by which the apostate monk was handed over to the bishop to be placed in a monastery, from which if he escaped again he was delivered to the secular tribunal as incorrigible.⁵ The trouble was apparently incurable. Three hundred and fifty years later, Leo the Philosopher deploras it, and orders all recalcitrant monks to be returned to their convents as often as they may escape. As for the morals of monastic life, it may be sufficient to refer to the regulation of

¹ Const. 29 Cod. i. 3.

³ Novell. v. c. 4, 6.

² Const. 53 § 1 Cod. i. 3.

⁴ Novell. v. c. 8.

⁵ Novell. CXXIII, c. 42.

St. Theodore Studita, in the ninth century, prohibiting the entrance of even female animals.¹

Thus gradually the irrevocable nature of monastic vows became established in the East, more from reasons of State than from ecclesiastical considerations. In the West, matters were longer in reaching a settlement, and the causes operating were somewhat different. Monachism there had not become a terror to the civil power, and its management was left to the Church; yet, if its influence was insufficient to excite tumults and seditions, it was none the less disorganised, and its disorders were a disgrace to those on whom rested the responsibility.

The Latin Church was not by any means insensible to this disgrace, nor did it underrate the importance of rendering the vows indissoluble, of binding its servants absolutely and forever to its service, and of maintaining its character and influence by endeavouring to enforce a discipline that should insure purity. During the period sketched above, and for the two following centuries, there is scarcely a council which did not enact canons showing at once the persistent effort to produce these results and the almost insurmountable difficulty of accomplishing them. It would lead us too far to enter upon the minutiae of these perpetually reiterated exhortations and threats, or of the various expedients which were successively tried. Suffice it to say that the end in view was never lost sight of, while the perseverance of the wrongdoer seems to have rivalled that of the disciplinarian. The anvil bade fair to wear out the hammer, while the confusion and lawlessness of those dismal ages gave constantly increasing facilities to those who desired to escape from the strictness of the ascetic life to which they had devoted themselves. Thus arose a crowd of vagabond

¹ S. Theod. Studit. Testament. v. (Max. Bib. Pat. IX. i. 276).

monks, *gyrovagi*, *acephali*, *circilliones*, *sarabaitæ*, who, without acknowledging obedience to any superior, or having any definite place of abode, wandered over the face of the country, claiming the respect and immunities due to a sacred calling, for the purpose of indulging in an idle and dissolute life—vagrants of the worst description, according to the unanimous testimony of the ecclesiastical authorities of the period.¹

Thus, up to the middle of the fifth century, no regular system of discipline had been introduced in the monastic establishments of the Latin Church. About that period Cassianus, the first abbot of St. Victor of Marseilles, wrote out, for the benefit of the ruder monasticism of the West, the details of discipline in which he had perfected himself among the renowned communities of the East. He deploras the absence of any fixed rule in the Latin convents, where every abbot governed on the plan which suited his fancy; where more difficulty was found in preserving order among two or three monks than the Abbot of Tabenna in the Thebaïd experienced with the flock of five thousand committed to his single charge; and where each individual retained his own private hoards, which were carefully locked up and sealed to keep them from the unscrupulous covetousness of his brethren.² How little all these efforts accomplished is clearly manifested when, in 494, we find Gelasius I.

¹ St. Benedict of Nursia, the real founder of Latin monachism, who quitted the world in 494, thus describes the wandering monks of his time: "Tertium vero monachorum teterrimum genus est Sarabaitarum . . . qui bini aut terni, aut certe singuli sine pastore, non Dominicis sed suis inclusi ovilibus, pro lege eis est desideriorum voluptas; cum quidquid putaverint vel elegerint, hoc dicunt sanctum, et quod noluerint putant non licere. Quartum vero genus est monachorum quod nominatur gyrovagum, qui tota vita sua per diversas provincias ternis aut quaternis diebus per diversorum cellas hospitantur, semper vagi et nunquam stabiles, et propriis voluptatibus et gulæ illecebris servientes, et per omnia deteriores Sarabaitis: de quorum omnium miserrima conversatione melius est silere quam loqui."—Regul. S. Benedicti c. 1.

² Cassiani de Cœnob. Instit. Lib. II. c. 3; Lib. v. c. 1, 15.

lamenting the incestuous marriages which were not uncommon among the virgins dedicated to God, and venturing only to denounce excommunication on the offenders, unless they should avert it by undergoing public penance. As for widows who married after professing chastity, he could indicate no earthly chastisement, but only held out to them the prospect of eternal reward or punishment, and left it for them to decide whether they would seek or abandon the better part.¹ Still, the irrevocable nature of the vow of celibacy was so little understood or respected that in 502 Cæsarius, who had just been translated from the abbacy of a monastery to the bishopric of Arles, wrote to Pope Symmachus asking him to issue a precept forbidding marriage to nuns, to which the pontiff promptly acceded.²

A new apostle was clearly needed to aid the organising spirit of Rome in her efforts to regulate the increasing number of devotees, who threatened to become the worst scandal of the Church, and who could be rendered so efficient an instrument for its aggrandisement. He was found in the person of St. Benedict of Nursia, who, about the year 494, at the early age of sixteen, tore himself from the pleasures of the world, and buried his youth in the solitudes of the Latian Apennines. A nature that could wrench itself away from the allurements of a splendid career dawning amid the blandishments of Rome was not likely to shrink from the austerities which awe and attract the credulous and the devout. Tempted by the Evil Spirit in the guise of a beautiful maiden, and finding his resolution on the point of yielding, with a supreme effort Benedict cast off his simple garment and threw himself into a thicket of brambles and nettles, through

¹ Gelasii PP. I. Epist. IX. cap. xx., xxi.

² Symmachi PP. Epist. VI.

which he rolled until his naked body was lacerated from head to foot. The experiment, though rude, was eminently successful; the flesh was effectually conquered, and Benedict was never again tormented by rebellious desires.¹ A light so shining was not created for obscurity. Zealous disciples assembled around him, attracted from distant regions by his sanctity, and after various vicissitudes he founded the monastery of Monte Cassino, on which for a thousand years were lavished all that veneration and munificence could accumulate to render illustrious the birthplace and capital of the great Benedictine Order.

The rule promulgated by Benedict, which virtually became the established law of Latin Monachism, shows the more practical character of the Western mind. Though pervaded by the austerest asceticism, yet labour, charity, and good works occupy a much more prominent place in its injunctions than in the system of the East. Salvation was not to be sought simply by abstinence and mortification, and the innate selfishness of the monastic principle was relaxed in favour of a broader and more human view of the duties of man to his Creator and to his fellows. This gave to the institution a firmer hold on the affections of mankind and a more enduring vitality, which preserved

¹ Greg. Mag. Vit. S. Benedicti c. 2.—Juan Cirita, a Spanish saint of the twelfth century, was exposed to the same temptation as St. Benedict, the devil visiting him in the shape of a lovely woman who sought refuge from her pursuers in his cell. During a sleepless night, feeling his resolution giving way, he roused his fire and with a glowing brand burned his arm to the bone, whereupon the devil vanished, loading him with reproaches (Henriquez Vit. Joannis Cirita, cap. ii.). Legends of this nature are not uncommon, nor are there wanting those of another class in which the immediate and visible agency of the Evil Spirit is not called into play. Thus the holy Godric, a Welsh saint of the twelfth century, endeavoured to subdue his rebellious flesh in the manner which St. Benedict found so effectual, but without success. He then buried a cask in the earthen floor of his cell, filled it with water and fitted it with a cover, and in this receptacle he shut himself up whenever he felt the titillations of desire. In this manner, varied by occasionally passing the night up to his chin in a river of which he had broken the ice, he finally succeeded in mastering his fiery nature.—Girald. Cambrens. Gemm. Eccles. Dist. II. c. x.

its fortunes through the centuries, in spite of innumerable aberrations and frightful abuses.

Still there were as yet no irrevocable vows of poverty, chastity, and obedience exacted of the novice. After a year of probation he promised, before God and the Saints, to keep the Rule under pain of damnation, and he was then admitted with imposing religious ceremonies. His worldly garments were, however, preserved, to be returned to him in case of expulsion, to which he was liable if incorrigibly disobedient. If he left the monastery, or if he was ejected, he could return twice, but after the third admission, if he again abandoned the order, he was no longer eligible.¹ Voluntary submission was thus the cornerstone of discipline, and there was nothing indelible in the engagement which bound the monk to his brethren.

Contemporary with St. Benedict was St. Cæsarius of Arles, whose Rule has been transmitted to us by his nephew, St. Tetradius. It is very short, but is more rigid than that of Benedict, inasmuch as it requires from the applicant the condition of remaining for life in the convent, nor will it permit his assumption of the habit until he shall have executed a deed bestowing all his property either on his relatives or on the establishment of his choice, thus insuring the rule of poverty, and depriving him of all inducement to retire.² The Rule of St. Aurelian of Arles, which dates from about 550, likewise insists on similar conditions.³

The Rule of St. Benedict, however, overcame all rivalry, and was at length universally adopted; Charlemagne, indeed, inquired in 811 whether there could be any monks except those who professed obedience to it.⁴

¹ Regul. S. Benedicti c. 58, 28, 29.

² Tetradius. Regul. c. 1.

³ Regul. S. Aurel. Arelatens. c. ii, iii. (Migne Patrol. LXVIII. 389).

⁴ Capit. Car. Mag. I. ann. 811 cap. xi. He also asks whether there were any monks in Gaul before the rule of St. Benedict was brought there, and is naturally not a little puzzled when told that St. Martin of Tours was a monk long anterior to the time of Benedict.—Capit. II. ann. 811 cap. xii. (Baluz. I. 331-2, Ed. Venet.).

Under it were founded the innumerable monasteries which sprang up in every part of Europe, and were everywhere the pioneers of civilisation ; which exercised a more potent influence in extending Christianity over the Heathen than all other agencies combined ; which carried the useful art into barbarous regions, and preserved to modern times whatever of classic culture has remained to us. If they were equally efficient in extending the authority of the Roman curia, and in breaking down the independence of local and national Churches, it is not to be assumed that even that result was an unalloyed misfortune, when the centrifugal tendencies of the Middle Ages were to be neutralised. Until the thirteenth century the Benedictines were practically without rivals, and their numbers and holiness may be estimated by the fact that in the fifteenth century one of their historians computed that the order had furnished fifty-five thousand five hundred and five blessed members to the calendar of saints.¹

Yet it could not but be a scandal to all devout minds that a man who had once devoted himself to religious observances should return to the world. Not only did it tend to break down the important distinction now rapidly developing itself between the clergy and the laity, but the possibility of such escape interfered with the control of the Church over those who formed so large a class of its members, and diminished their utility in aiding the progress of its aggrandisement. We cannot be surprised, therefore, that within half a century after the death of St. Benedict, among the reforms energetically inaugurated by St. Gregory the Great, in the first year of his ponti-

¹ *Quinquaginta quinque millia quingenta quinque
Omnes canonizati a te sunt translati.*

Est monachus sanctus. Caput vero Benedictus.—

(*Birek de Monast. Campidonens. c. 25.*)

Abbot Trithemius is more moderate, his estimate amounting to only 15,559.
(*Miræi Orig. Benedict.*)

ficcate, was that of commanding the forcible return of all who abandoned their profession—the terms of the decretal showing that no concealment had been thought necessary by the renegades in leading a secular life and in publicly marrying.¹ Equally determined were his efforts to reform the abuses which had so relaxed the discipline of some monasteries that women were allowed perfect freedom of access, and the monks contracted such intimacy with them that they openly acted as godfathers to their children;² and when, in 601, he learned that the monks of St. Vitus, on Mount Etna, considered themselves at liberty to marry, apparently without leaving their convent, he checked the abuse by the most prompt and decided commands to the ecclesiastical authorities of Sicily.³

By the efforts of Gregory the monk was thus, in theory at least, separated irrevocably from the world, and committed to an existence which depended solely upon the Church. Cut off from family and friends, the door closed behind him for ever, and his only aspirations, beyond his own personal wants and hopes, could but be for his abbey, his order, or the Church, with which he was thus indissolubly connected. There was one exception, however, to this general rule. No married man was allowed to become a monk unless his wife assented, and likewise became a nun. The marriage-tie was too sacred to be broken, unless both parties agreed simultaneously to em-

¹ Gregor. PP. I. Lib. I. Epist. 42.—Six years later he had to repeat his commands in stronger terms. (Cf. Lib. VII. Epist. 35. Lib. II. Epist. 28. Lib. IV. Epist. 27. Lib. X. Epist. 8.) Yet when the offender was a man of rank and power, as in the case of Venantius, Patrician of Syracuse, Gregory could lay aside the tone of lofty command and condescend to tender entreaty and earnest exhortation (Lib. I. Epist. 34), without even a threat of excommunication, and remain for years on the friendliest terms with him (Lib. XI. Epist. 30, 35, 36), showing that the rule was as yet by no means firmly established. In another case, however, nothing can be more indignant and peremptory than his commands (Lib. VIII. Epist. 8, 9).

² Gregor. PP. I. Lib. IV. Epist. 42.

³ Gregor. PP. I. Lib. X. Epist. 22, 23.—He states, “*ut etiam monachis ibidem degentibus mulieribus se jungere sine metu sit licitum,*” which he characterises as “*res . . . omnino detestabilis et nefanda.*”

brace the better life. Thus, on the complaint of a wife, Gregory orders her husband to be forcibly removed from the monastery which he had entered and to be restored to her. We shall see hereafter how entirely the Church in time outgrew these scruples, and how insignificant the sacrament of marriage became in comparison with that of ordination or the vow of religion.¹

The theory of perpetual segregation from the world was thus established, and it accomplished at last the objects for which it was designed, but it was too much in opposition to the invincible tendencies of human nature to be universally enforced without a struggle which lasted for nearly a thousand years. To follow out in detail the vicissitudes of this struggle would require too much space. Its nature will be indicated by occasional references in the following pages, and meanwhile it will be sufficient to observe how little was accomplished even in his own age by the energy and authority of Gregory. It was only a few years after his death that the Council of Paris, in 615, proves to us that residence in monasteries was not considered necessary for women who took the vows, and that the civil power had to be invoked to prevent their marriage.² Indeed, it was not uncommon for men to turn their houses, nominally at least, into convents, living there surrounded with their wives and families, and deriving no little worldly profit from the assumption of superior piety, to the scandal of the truly religious.³ St. Isidor of Seville, about the same period, copies the words of St. Augustin in describing the wandering monastic impostors who lived upon the credulous charity of the

¹ Gregor. PP. I. Lib. XI. Epist. 50.

² Concil. Parisiens. V. ann. 615 c. xiii.—In the decree of Clotair II., confirming the acts of this council, we find—"Puellas et viduas religiosas, aut sanctimoniales, quæ se Deo voverunt, tam quæ in propriis domibus resident, quam qua in monasteriis positæ sunt, nullus nec per præceptum nostrum competat, nec trahere nec sibi in conjugio sociare penitus præsumat, etc."—Edict. Chlot. II. ann. 615 c. xviii. (Baluze).

³ S. Fructuosi Bracarens. Regul. Commun. cap. 1.

faithful ;¹ and he also enlarges upon the disgraceful license of the *acephali*, or clerks bound by no rule, whose vagabond life and countless numbers were an infamy to the western kingdoms which they infested.² The quotation of this passage by Louis-le-Débonnaire, in his attempt to reform the Church, shows that these degraded vagrants continued to flourish unchecked in the ninth century ;³ and, indeed, Smaragdus, in his Commentary on the Rule of St. Benedict, assures us that the evil had rather increased than diminished.⁴

Monachism was but one application of the doctrine of justification by works, which, by the enthusiasm and superstition of ages, was gradually built into a vast system of sacerdotalism. Through it were eventually opened to the mediæval Church sources of illimitable power and wealth, under the sole control of the central head, to which were committed the power of the keys and the dispensation of the exhaustless treasure of the merits of the Redeemer and of the saints. To discuss these collateral themes, however, would carry us too far from our subject, and I must dismiss them with the remark that at the period now under consideration there could have been no anticipation of these ulterior advantages to be gained by assuming to regulate the mode in which individual piety might seek to propitiate an offended God. Sufficient motives for the assumption existed in the evils and aspirations of the moment, without anticipating others which only received their fullest development under the skilful dialectic of the Schoolmen.

¹ De Ecclesiast. Offic. Lib. II. cap. xvi. § 7.

² Solutos atque oberrantes, sola turpis vita complectitur et vaga, . . . quique dum, nullum metuentes, explendæ voluptatis suæ licentiam consectantur, quasi animalia bruta, libertate ac desiderio suo feruntur, habentes signum religionis, non religionis officium, hippocentauris similes, neque equi neque homines, . . . quorum quidem sordida atque infami numerositate satis superque nostra pars occidua pollet.—Ibid. Lib. II. c. iii.

³ Ludov. Pii de Reform. Eccle. cap. 100. (Goldast. Const. Imp. III. 199.)

⁴ Smaragd. Comment. in Regul. Benedict. c. 1.

CHAPTER VIII

THE BARBARIANS

WHILE the Latin Church had thus been engaged in its hopeless combat with the incurable vices of a worn-out civilisation, it had found itself confronted by a new and essentially different task. The Barbarians who wrenched province after province from the feeble grasp of the Cæsars had to be conquered, or religion and culture would be involved in the wreck which blotted out the political system of the Empire. The destinies of the future hung trembling in the balance, and it might not be an uninteresting speculation to consider what had been the present condition of the world if Western Europe had shared the fate of the East, and had fallen under the domination of a race bigoted in its own belief and incapable of learning from its subjects. Fortunately for mankind, the invaders of the West were not semi-civilised and self-satisfied; their belief was not a burning zeal for a faith sufficiently elevated to meet many of the wants of the soul; they were simple barbarians, who, while they might despise the cowardly voluptuaries on whom they trampled, could not fail to recognise the superiority of a civilisation awful even in its ruins. Fortunately, too, the Latin Church was a more compact and independently organised body than its Eastern rival, inspired by a warmer faith and a more resolute ambition. It faced the difficulties of its new position with consummate tact and tireless energy; and whether its adversaries were Pagans like the Franks, or Arians like the Goths and Burgundians, by alternate pious zeal and artful energy it

triumphed where success seemed hopeless, and where bare toleration would have appeared a sufficient victory.

While the celibacy, which bound every ecclesiastic to the Church and dissevered all other ties, may doubtless be credited with a considerable share in this result, it could only lead, in the confusion of the time, to additional corruption of morals, already sufficiently corrupt. The chaste purity of the Barbarians at their advent aroused the wondering admiration of Salvianus, as that of their fathers four centuries earlier had won the severe encomium of Tacitus ;¹ but the virtue which sufficed for the simplicity of the German forests was not long proof against the allurements accumulated by the cynicism of Roman luxury. At first the wild converts, content with the battle-axe and javelin, might leave the holy functions of religion to their new subjects, their strength scarcely feeling the restraint of a faith which to them was little more than an idle ceremony ; but as they gradually settled down in their conquests, and recognised that the high places of the Church conferred riches, honour, and power, they coveted the prizes which were too valuable to be monopolised by an inferior race. Gradually the hierarchy thus became filled with a class of warrior bishops, who, however efficient in maintaining and extending ecclesiastical prerogatives, were not likely to shed lustre on their order by the rigidity of their virtue, or to remove, by a strict enforcement of discipline, the scandals inseparable from endless civil commotions.

Reference has been made above (p. 83), to the perpetual iteration of the canon of celibacy, and of the ingenious devices to prevent its violation, by the numerous councils

¹ De Mor. German. c. 18, 19. It is a little singular that Salvianus names the Alemanni as the only exception to the character for chastity which he bestows on the Barbarians in general.

held during this period, showing at once the disorders which prevailed among the clergy and the fruitlessness of the effort to repress them. The history of the time is full of examples illustrating the various phases of this struggle.

The episcopal chair, which at an earlier period had been filled by the votes of the people, and which subsequently came under the control of the Papacy, was at this time a gift in the hands of the untamed Merovingians, who carelessly bestowed it on him who could most lavishly fill the royal coffers, or who had earned it by courtly subservience or warlike prowess. The supple Roman or the turbulent Frank, who perchance could not recite a line of the Mass, thus leaped at once from the laity through all the grades;¹ and as he was most probably married, there can be no room for surprise if the rule of continence, thus suddenly assumed from the most worldly motives, should often prove unendurable. Even in the early days of the Frankish conquest we see a cultured noble, like Genebaldus, married to the niece of St. Remy, when placed in the see of Laon ostensibly putting his wife away and visiting her only under pretext of religious instruction, until the successive births of a son and a daughter—whom he named Latro and Vulpecula in token of his sin—and we may not unreasonably doubt the chronicler's veracity when he informs us that the

¹ From such chance allusions as are made by Gregory of Tours, this would almost seem to be the general rule, and not the exception. Thus he mentions that Apollinaris obtained the see of Rhodéz at the solicitation of his wife and sister (*Hist. Franc. Lib. III. c. 2*), and shortly afterwards the same episcopate is filled by the appointment of "Innocentius Gabalitanorum comes" (*Ibid. Lib. VI. c. 38*). Sulpitius, when nominated to that of Bourges, "ad clericatum deductus, episcopatum . . . suscepit" (*Ibid. Lib. VI. c. 39*). Badegisilus, Clotair's mayor of the palace, received the bishopric of Le Mans "qui tonsuratus, gradus quos clericis sortiuntur ascensus," was duly installed (*Ibid. Lib. VI. c. 9*). Indeed, in his catalogue of the Bishops of Tours, Gregory specifies of Euphronius, the eighteenth bishop, that he was "ab ineunte ætate clericus," showing how unusual it was to be regularly bred to the Church.

remorse of Genebaldus led him to submit to seven years' imprisonment as an expiatory penance.¹ Equally instructive is the story of Felix of Nantes, whose wife, banished from his bed on his elevation to the episcopate, rebelled against the separation, and, finding him obdurate to her allurements, was filled with jealousy, believing that only another attachment could account for his coldness. Hoping to detect and expose his infidelity, she stole into the chamber where he was sleeping and saw on his breast a lamb, shining with heavenly light, indicative of the peaceful repose which had replaced all earthly passions in his heart.² A virtue which was regarded as worthy of so miraculous a manifestation must have been rare indeed among the illiterate and untutored nominees of a licentious court, and that it was so in fact is indicated by the frequent injunctions of the councils that bishops must regard their wives as sisters; while a canon promulgated by the Council of Macon, in 581, ordering that no woman should enter the chamber of a bishop without two priests, or at least two deacons, in her company, shows how little hesitation there was in publishing to the world the suspicions that were generally entertained.³ How the rule was sometimes obeyed by the wild prelates of the age, while trampling upon other equally well-known canons, is exemplified by the story of Macliaus of Brittany. Chanao, Count of Brittany, had made away with three of his brothers; the fourth, Macliaus, after an unsuccessful conspiracy, sought safety in flight, entered the Church, and was created Bishop of Vannes. On the death of Chanao, he promptly seized the vacant throne, left the Church, threw off his episcopal robes, and took back to

¹ Hincmari Vit. S. Remigii c. 42, 43. For the legend of the exemplary penitence and obedience of Genebaldus, see Alvar. Pelag. de Punctu Ecclesiæ, Lib. II. Art. 53, fol. 171b (Ed. 1517).

² Greg. Turon. de Glor. Confess. c. 78.

³ Concil. Matiscon. I. c. 3.

himself the wife whom he had quitted on obtaining the see of Vannes—for all of which he was duly excommunicated by his brother prelates.¹

When such was the condition of morals and discipline in the high places of the Church, it is not to be wondered at if the second Council of Tours, in 567, could declare that the people suspect, not indeed all, but many of the arch-priests, vicars, deacons, and subdeacons, of maintaining improper relations with their wives, and should command that no one in orders should visit his own house except in company with a subordinate clerk, without whom, moreover, he was never to sleep; the clerk refusing the performance of the duty to be whipped, and the priest neglecting the precaution to be deprived of communion for thirty days. Any one in orders found with his wife was to be excommunicated for a year, deposed, and relegated among the laity; while the arch-priest who neglected the enforcement of these rules was to be imprisoned on bread and water for a month. An equally suggestive illustration of the condition of society is afforded by another canon, directed against the frequent marriages of nuns, who excused themselves on the ground that they had taken the veil to avoid the risk of forcible abduction. Allusion is made to the laws of Childebert and Clotair, maintained in vigour by Charibert, punishing such attempts severely, and girls who anticipate them are directed to seek temporary asylum in the Church until their kindred can protect them under the royal authority, or find husbands for them.²

¹ Greg. Turon. Hist. Franc. Lib. IV. c. 4. At this period the Church of Brittany was rather British than Frankish. See Haddan & Stubbs, II. 72 sqq.

² Concil. Turon. II. c. 19, 20.—A remark of Gregory of Tours (Hist. Franc. Lib. VIII. cap. 19) has been assumed to indicate that priests could legitimately have commerce with their wives. By comparing it with the canons cited above, however, it evidently can at the most have reference to the lower orders of the clergy.

Morals were even worse among the Arian Wisigoths of Spain than among the orthodox believers of France. It is true that priestly marriage formed no part of the Arian doctrines, but as the heresy originated prior to the Council of Nicæa, and professed no obedience to that or any other council or decretal, its practice in this respect was left to such influence as individual asceticism might exercise. Having no acknowledged head to promulgate general canons or to insist upon their observance, no rule of the kind, even if theoretically admitted, could be effectually enforced. How little, indeed, the rule was obeyed is shown by the proceedings of the third Council of Toledo, held in 589 to confirm the reunion of the Spanish kingdom with the orthodox Church. It complains that even the converted bishops, priests, and deacons are found to be publicly living with their wives, which it forbids for the future under threat of degrading all recalcitrants to the rank of lector.¹ The conversion of the kingdom to Catholicism did not improve matters. The clergy continued not only to associate with their wives, but also to marry openly, for the secular power was soon afterwards forced to interfere, and King Recared I. issued a law directing that any priest, deacon, or subdeacon connecting himself with a woman by marriage or otherwise, should be separated from his guilty consort by either the bishop or judge, and be punished according to the canons of the Church, while the unfortunate woman was subjected to a hundred lashes and denied all access to her husband. To ensure the enforcement of the edict, the heavy mulct of two pounds of gold was levied on any bishop neglecting his duty in the premises.² Recared also interposed to put a stop to

¹ Concil. Toletan. III. c. 5.

² L. Wisigoth. Lib. III. Tit. iv. l. 18. This law is preserved in the *Fuero Juzgo*, or mediæval Romance version of the code (Lib. III. Tit. iv. ley 18).

the frequent marriages of nuns, whose separation from their husbands and condign punishment were decreed, with the enormous fine of five pounds of gold exacted of the careless ecclesiastic who might neglect to carry the law into effect—a fair measure of the difficulties experienced in enforcing the rule of celibacy.¹ This legislation had little effect, for half a century later the eighth Council of Toledo, in 653, shows us that all ranks of the clergy, from bishops to subdeacons, had still no scruple in publicly maintaining relations with wives and concubines.² Such was the state of discipline in Spain when the Saracen conquest, in 711, overwhelmed the Wisigothic monarchy.

Italy was almost equally far removed from the ideal purity of Jerome and Augustin. In the early part of the sixth century was fabricated an account of a supposititious council, said to have been held in Rome by Silvester I., and the neglect of celibacy is evident when it was felt to be necessary to insert in this forgery a canon forbidding marriage to priests, under penalty of deprivation of functions for ten years.³ Even in this it is observable that there was no thought of annulling the marriage, as subsequently became established in orthodox doctrines. Nothing can be more suggestive of the demoralisation of the Italian Church than the permission granted about the year 580 by Pelagius II., for the elevation to the diaconate of a clerk at Florence, who while a widower had had children by a concubine. What renders the circumstance peculiarly significant is the fact that the Pope pleads the degeneracy of the age as his apology for this laxity.⁴

¹ L. Wisigoth. Lib. III. Tit. v. l. 2.

² Concil. Toletan. VIII. ann. 653 can. iv. v. vi.—These measures were as fruitless as the preceding. Cf. Concil. Toletan. IX. ann. 655 can. x.

³ Concil. Roman. sub Silvest. can. xix. (Migne's Patrol. VIII. 840).

⁴ Pelagii PP. II. Epist. xiv.

Such was the condition of the Christian world when Gregory the Great, in 590, ascended the pontifical throne. He was too devout a Churchman, and too sagacious a statesman, not to appreciate thoroughly the importance of the canon in all its various aspects—not only as necessary to ecclesiastical purity according to the ideas of the age, but also as a prime element in the influence of the Church over the minds of the people, as well as an essential aid in extending ecclesiastical power, and in retaining undiminished the enormous possessions acquired by the Church through the munificence of the pious. The prevailing laxity, indeed, was already threatening serious dilapidation of the ecclesiastical estates and foundations. How clearly this was understood is shown by Pelagius I. in 557, when he refused for a year to permit the consecration of a bishop elected by the Syracusans. On their persisting in their choice he wrote to the Patrician Cethegus, giving as the reason for his opposition the prelate's wife and children, by whom, if they survive, the substance of the Church is wont to be jeopardised;¹ and his consent was finally given only on the condition that the bishop-elect should provide competent security against any conversion of the estate of the diocese for the benefit of his family, a detailed statement of the property being made out in advance to guard against attempted infractions of the agreement. That this was not a merely local abuse is evident from a law of the Wisigoths, which provides that on the accession of any bishop, priest, or deacon, an accurate inventory of all Church possessions under his control shall be made by five freemen, and that after his death an inquest shall be held for the purpose of making good any deficiencies out of the estate of the decedent, and forcing the restoration of anything that might have been alienated.²

¹ Superstes uxor aut filii, per quos ecclesiastica solet periclitari substantia.—Pelagii PP. I. Cethego Patricio.

² L. Wisigoth. Lib. v. Tit. i. l. 2.

There evidently was ample motive for a thorough reformation, and Gregory accordingly addressed himself energetically to the work of enforcing the canons. In his decretals there are numerous references to the subject, showing that he lost no opportunity of reviving the neglected rules of discipline regarding the ordination of digami,¹ the residence of women, and abstinence from all intercourse with the sex.² In his zeal he even went so far as to decree that any one guilty of even a single lapse from virtue should be for ever debarred from the ministry of the altar³—a law nullified by its own severity, which rendered its observance impossible. In 587, his predecessor Pelagius had ordered that in Sicily the Roman rule should be followed of separating subdeacons from their wives, but it appeared cruel to Gregory that this should be enforced on those who had no warning of such rigour when accepting the subdiaconate, and one of the earliest acts of his pontificate was to allow them to resume relations with their wives; but he ordered that they should abstain from all service of the altar, and that in future no one should be admitted to that grade who would not formally take a vow of continence.⁴ There is not much trace in con-

¹ Gregor. PP. I. Lib. XIII. Epist. 6.—This rule had come to be very generally neglected. The importance attached to it, however, by strict disciplinarians is well illustrated in the firmness displayed by John, Patriarch of Alexandria, a contemporary of Gregory, whose bountiful charity had earned for him the title of *Eleemosynarius*. In a time of extreme famine, a wealthy aspirant offered him 200,000 bushels of corn and 100 pounds of gold for the grade of deacon. He had unluckily been twice married, and John refused the dazzling bribe, although the episcopal treasury had been exhausted in relieving the necessities of the suffering people (Thomassin, *Discip. de l'Église*, Pt. II. Liv. 3, c. 15).

² Gregor. PP. I. Lib. XIII. Epist. 35, 36.

³ *Ibid.* Lib. IV. Epist. 26; Lib. V. Epist. 3; Lib. VIII. Epist. 24.—Similar attempts had previously been made by sundry provincial councils. In the case of Andrew, Bishop of Tarentum, who was accused of maintaining relations with a former concubine, Gregory, recognising the impossibility of obtaining proof, leaves it to his own conscience. If he has had any commerce with her since his ordination, he is commanded at once to resign his position as the only mode of insuring his salvation (*Ibid.* Lib. III. Epist. 45, 46).

⁴ *Ibid.* Lib. I. Epist. 44; Lib. IV. Epist. 5, 36.

temporary history of any improvement resulting from these efforts, and towards the very close of his pontificate, in 602, we find him entreating Queen Brunhilda to exercise her power in restraining the still unbridled license of the Frankish clergy—a task which he assures her is essential if she desires to transmit her possessions in peace to her posterity.¹ He also endeavoured to reform the perennial abuse of the residence of women, a reform which the Church had been vainly attempting ever since the canon of Nicæa.² That Gregory's zeal, however, exercised some influence is manifested by the fact that tradition in the Middle Ages occasionally associated his name with the introduction of celibacy in the Church. The impression which he produced is shown by the wild legend which relates that, soon after issuing and strictly enforcing a decretal on the subject, he happened to have his fish-ponds drawn off, when the heads of no less than six thousand infants were found in them—the offspring of ecclesiastics, destroyed to avoid detection—which filled him with so much horror that he abandoned the vain attempt.³ Yet in Italy the residence of wives was still permitted to those in orders, under the restriction that they should be treated as sisters;⁴ and Gregory relates as worthy of all imitation the case of a holy priest of Nursia who, following the example of the saints in depriving himself of even lawful indulgences, had persistently relegated his wife to a distance. When at length he lay on his death-bed, to all appearance inanimate, the wife came to bid him a last farewell, and placed a mirror to his lips to see whether life was yet extinct. Her kindly ministrations roused the dominant asceticism in his expiring

¹ Gregor. PP. I. Lib. XI. Epist. 69.

² Ibid. Lib. IX. Epist. 106.

³ Udalic. Bamberg. Cod. Lib. II. Epist. 10.

⁴ Gregor. PP. I. Lib. I. Epist. 52; Lib. IX. Epist. 60.

soul, and he gathered strength enough to exclaim, "Woman, depart! Take away the straw, for there is yet fire here"—which supreme effort of self-immolation procured him on the instant a beatific vision of St. Peter and St. Paul, during which he lapsed ecstatically into eternity.¹

In considering so thoroughly artificial a system of morality, it is perhaps scarcely worth while to inquire into the value of a virtue which could only be preserved by shunning temptation with so scrupulous a care.

¹ Gregor. PP. I. Dial. Lib. iv. cap. xi.

CHAPTER IX

THE CARLOVINGIANS

EVEN the energy and authority of Gregory the Great were powerless to restore order in the chaos of an utterly demoralised society. In Spain, the languishing empire of the Wisigoths was fast sinking under the imbecility which invited the easy conquest of the Saracens. In France, Brunhilda and Fredegonda were inflaming the fierce contentions which eventually destroyed the Merovingian dynasty, and which abandoned the kingdom at once to the vices of civilisation and the savage atrocities of barbarism.¹ In Italy, the Lombards, more detested than any of their predecessors, by their ceaseless ravages made the Ostrogothic rule regretted, and gleaned with their swords such scanty remnants of plunder as had escaped the hordes which had successively swept from the gloomy forests of the North across the rich valleys and fertile plains of the mistress of the world. Anarchy and confusion everywhere scarce offered a field for the exercise of the humbler virtues, nor could the Church expect to escape the corruption which infected every class from which she could draw her recruits. Still, among the crowd of turbulent and worldly ecclesiastics, whose only aim was the gratification of the senses or the success of criminal ambition, some holy men were to be found who sought the mountain and forest as a refuge from the ceaseless and all-pervading disorder around them. St. Gall and St.

¹ In 649 we find Amandus, Bishop of Maestricht, resigning his office on account of the impossibility of enforcing the canons among his priests and deacons. Martin I. endeavoured to dissuade him from his purpose, and urged his proceeding with the utmost rigour against all transgressors (Hartzheim Concil. German. I. 28).

Columba, Willibrod and Boniface, were types of these. Devoted to the severest asceticism, burying themselves in the wilderness and subsisting on such simple fare as the labour of their hands could wring from a savage land, the selfishness of the anchorite did not extinguish in them the larger aims of the Christian, and by their civilising labours among the heathen they proved themselves worthy disciples of the Apostles.

Thicker grew the darkness as Tarik drove the Gothic fugitives before him on the plains of Xeres, and as the house of Pepin d'Heristel gradually supplanted the long-haired descendants of Clovis. The Austrasian Mayors of the Palace had scanty reverence for mitre and crozier, and it is a proof how little hold the clergy had gained upon the respect and affection of the people, when the usurpers in that long revolution did not find it necessary to conciliate their support. In fact, the policy of these shrewd and able men was rather to oppress the Church and to parcel out its wealth and dignities among their warriors, who made no pretence of piety nor deigned to undertake the mockery of religious duties. Rome could interpose no resistance to these abuses, for, involved alternately in strife with the Lombards and the Iconoclastic Emperors, the Popes implored the aid of the oppressor himself, and were in no position to protest against the aggressions which he might commit at home.

In Italy, the condition of discipline may be inferred from the fact that, in 721, Gregory II. considered it necessary to call a synod for the special purpose of condemning incestuous unions and the marriages of nuns, which he declared were openly practised,¹ and the canons then promulgated received so little attention that they had to be repeated by another synod in 732.² In fact, the vow of chastity was frequently taken by widows that

¹ Concil. Roman. ann. 721.

² Chron. Gradensis Supplement.

they might escape a second marriage and thus be able to live in shameless license without being subject to the watchful control of a husband; and an edict of Arechis, Duke of Beneventum, about the year 774 orders that all such godless women shall be seized and shut up in convents.¹ That the secular clergy should consider ordination no bar to matrimony need therefore excite little surprise. There is extant a charter of Talesperianus, Bishop of Lucca, in 725, by which he confirms a little monastery and hospital to Romuald the priest and his wife —“presbytera sua.” The document recites that this couple had come on a pilgrimage from beyond the Po; that they had settled on the lands of the Convent of St. Peter and St. Martin in the diocese of Lucca, where they had bought land and built the institution which the good bishop thus confirms to them with certain privileges. He evidently felt that there was nothing irregular in their maintaining the connection, and he lays upon them no conditions of separation.²

In France, it may be readily believed that discipline was even more neglected. For eighty years scarce a council was held; no attempts were made to renew or enforce the rules of discipline, and the observances of religion were at length well-nigh forgotten. In 726, Boniface even felt scruples as to associating in ordinary intercourse with men so licentious and depraved as the Frankish bishops and priests, and he applied to Gregory II. for the solution of his doubts. Gregory, in reply, ordered him to employ argument in endeavouring to convince them of their errors, and by no means to withdraw himself from their society,³ a politic toleration of vice contrasting strangely with his fierce defiance of the iconoclastic

¹ Capitul. Arechis Benevent. cap. XII. (Canciani I. 262).

² Muratori Antiq. Med. Ævi Dissert. LXXIV.

³ Gregor. PP. II. Epist. 14 cap. 12.

heresy of Leo the Isaurian, when he risked the Papacy itself in his eagerness to preserve his beloved images.

When, however, the new dynasty began to assume a permanent position, it sought to strengthen itself by the influence of the Church. Like the modern Charlemagne, it saw in a restoration of religion a means of assuring its stability by linking its fortunes with those of the hierarchy. A Radical in opposition becomes of necessity a Conservative in power; and the arts which had served to supplant the hereditary occupants of the throne were no longer advisable after success had indicated a new line of policy. As Clovis embraced Christianity in order to consolidate his conquests into an empire, so Carloman and Pepin-le-Bref sought the sanction of religion to consecrate their power to their descendants, and the Carolingian system thenceforth became that of law and order, organising a firm and settled government out of the anarchical chaos of social elements.

It was the pious Carloman who first saw clearly how necessary was the aid of the Church in any attempt to introduce civilisation and subordination among his turbulent subjects. Immediately on his accession, he called upon St. Boniface to assist him in the work, and the Apostle of Germany undertook the arduous task. How arduous it was may be conceived from his description of the utterly demoralised condition of the clergy, when he appealed to Pope Zachary for advice and authority to assist in eradicating the frightful promiscuous licentiousness which was displayed with careless cynicism throughout all grades of the ecclesiastical body.¹ The details are

¹ *Modo autem maxima ex parte episcopales sedes traditæ sunt laicis cupidis ad possidendum, vel adulteratis clericis, scortatoribus et publicanis sæculariter ad perfruedum. . . . Si invenero inter illos diaconos quos nominant, qui a pueritia sua semper in stupris, semper in adulteriis et in omnibus semper spurcitiis vitam ducentes, sub tali testimonio venerunt ad diaconatum, et modo in diaconatu concubinas quatuor vel quinque vel plures noctu in lecto habentes, evangelium tamen legere et diaconos se nominare non erubescunt, nec metuunt : et sic in talibus incestis ad ordinem presby-*

unfit for translation, but the statement can readily be believed when we see what manner of men filled the controlling positions in the hierarchy.

Charles Martel had driven out St. Rigobert, Archbishop of Rheims, and had bestowed that primatial see on one of his warriors named Milo, who soon succeeded in likewise obtaining possession of the equally important archiepiscopate of Trèves.¹ Milo was himself an indication of the prevailing laxity of discipline, for he was the son of Basinus, his predecessor in the see of Trèves.² He is described as being a clerk in tonsure, but in every other respect an irreligious laic, yet Boniface, with all the aid of his royal patrons, was unable to oust him from his inappropriate dignities, and in 752, ten years after the commencement of his reforms, we find Pope Zachary, in response to an appeal for advice, counselling him to leave Milo and other similar wolves in sheep's clothing to the divine vengeance.³ Boniface, apparently, found it requisite to follow this advice, and the divine vengeance did not come until Milo had enjoyed his incongruous dignities for forty years, when at length he was removed by an appropriate death, received from a wild boar in hunting.⁴ He was only a type of many others who openly defied all attempts to remove them. One, who is described as "pugnator et fornicator," gave up, it is true, the spiritu-

teratus venientes, in iisdem peccatis perdurantes, et peccata peccatis adjicientes, presbyteratus officio fungentes, dicunt se pro populo posse intercedere, et sacras oblationes offerre. Novissime, quod pejus est, sub talibus testimoniis per gradus singulos ascendentes, ordinantur et nominantur episcopi. Si usquam tales invenero inter illos, rogo ut habeam præceptum et conscriptum auctoritatis vestræ, quid de talibus diffiniatis, ut per responsum Apostolicum convincantur et arguantur peccatores.—Bonifacii Epist. 132.

¹ Milo quidam, tonsura clericus, moribus, habitu, et actu irreligiōsis laicus, episcopia Remorum ac Trevirorum usurpans insimul, per multos annos pessum dederit.—Hincmar. Epist. xxx. c. 20.—Sola tonsura clericus, qui secum processerat ad bellum.—Flodoard. Hist. Remens. Lib. II. c. 12.—Nihilque in eo de clericali honore vel vita nisi sola tonsura enituit.—Hist. Trevirens. (D'Achery Spicileg. II. 212).

² Hist. Trevirens. loc. cit. ³ Bonifacii Epist. 142. ⁴ Hist. Trevirens. loc. cit.

alities of his see, but held to the temporalities with a grip that nothing could loosen; another utterly disregarded the excommunications launched at his head, and Zachary and Boniface at last were fain to abandon him to his evil courses.¹ Somewhat more success, indeed, he had with Gervilius, son and successor to Geroldus, Bishop of Mainz. The latter, accompanying Carloman in an expedition against the Saxons, was killed in battle. Bishop Gervilius, in another foray, recognised his father's slayer, invited him to a friendly interview, and treacherously stabbed him, exclaiming, in the rude poetry of the chronicler, "Accipe jam ferrum quo patrem vindico carum." This act of filial piety was not looked upon as unclerical, until Boniface took it up; Gervilius was finally forced to abandon the see of Mainz, and it was given to Boniface himself.² When such were the prelates, it is not to be supposed that rules of abstinence and asceticism received much attention from their subordinates. Boniface admits, in an epistle to King Ecgberht, that, in consequence of the universal licentiousness, he was compelled to restore the guilty to their functions after penitence, as the canonical punishment of dismissal would leave none to perform the sacred offices.³ What the Church, however, could not prevent on earth, it at least had the satisfaction of seeing punished in the future life. It was principally for the support given to Milo of Rheims among his many other similar misdeeds, that Charles Martel was condemned to eternal torture, which was, as a wholesome example, made manifest to the most incredulous. St. Eucherius, in a vision, saw him plunged into the depths of hell, and on consulting St. Boniface and Fulrad, Abbot of St. Denis, it was resolved to open Charles's tomb. The only tenant of the sepulchre was

¹ Bonifacii loc. cit.

² Othlon. Vit. S. Bonifac. Lib. I. c. 44.

³ Bonifacii Epist. 85.

found to be a serpent, and the walls were blackened as though by fire, thus proving the truth of the revelation, and holding out an awful warning to future wrongdoers.¹

How much of the license complained of was indiscriminate concubinage, and how much was merely intercourse with legitimate wives, we have no means of ascertaining. The latter Boniface succeeded in suppressing, for the Church could control her sacraments.² The former was beyond his power.

Armed with full authority from Pope Zachary, Carloman and Boniface commenced the labour of reducing to order this chaos of passion and license. Under their auspices a synod was held, April 23rd, 742, in which all unchaste priests and deacons were declared incapable of holding benefices, were degraded, and forced to do penance. Bishops were required to have a witness to testify to the purity of their lives and doctrines, before they could perform their episcopal functions. For all future lapses from virtue, priests were to be severely whipped and imprisoned for two years on bread and water, with prolongation of the punishment at the discretion of their bishops. Other ecclesiastics, monks, and nuns were to be whipped thrice and similarly imprisoned for one year, besides the stigma of having the head shaved. All monasteries, moreover, were to adopt and follow rigidly the rule of St. Benedict.³

The stringency of these measures shows not only the extent of the evil requiring such means of cure, but the fixed determination of the authorities to effect their purpose. The clergy, however, did not submit without

¹ Flodoard. Hist. Remens. Lib. II. cap. 12.—Capit. Caroli Calvi Tit. xxvii. cap. 7 (Baluze).

² Et tam laicorum injusta concubinarum copula partim exhortante sancto viro separata est, quam etiam clericorum nefanda cum uxoribus conjunctio sejuncta ac separata.—Willibald. Vit. S. Bonifac. c. 9.

³ Capit. Caroloman. ann. 742 c. 1, 3, 6.

resistance. It is probable that they stirred up the people, and that signs of general disapprobation were manifested at a rigour so extreme in punishing faults which for more than two generations had passed wholly unnoticed, for during the same year Zachary addressed an epistle to the Franks with the object of enlisting them in the cause. The ill-success of their arms against the Pagans he attributes to the vices of their clergy, and he promises them that if they show themselves obedient to Boniface, and if they can enjoy the prayers of pure and holy priests, they shall in future have an easy triumph over their heathen foes.¹ Yet many adulterous priests and bishops, noted for the infamy of their lives, pretended that they had received from Rome itself dispensations to continue in their ministry—an allegation which Zachary of course repelled with indignation.²

Carloman, however, pursued his self-imposed task without flinching. On March 1st, 743, he held another synod at Leptines, where the clergy promised to observe the ancient canons, and to restore the discipline of the Church. The statutes enacted the previous year were again declared to be in full vigour for future offences, while for previous ones penitence and degradation were once more decreed.³

These regulations affected only Austrasia, the German portion of the Frankish empire, ruled by Carloman. His brother, Pepin-le-Bref, who governed Neustria, or France, was less pious, and had not apparently as yet recognised the policy of reforming out of their possessions the warrior vassals whom his father had gratified with ecclesiastical benefices. At length, however, he was induced to lend his aid, and in 744 he assembled a synod at Soissons for the purpose. So completely had the discipline of the

¹ Bonifacii Epist. 137.

² Ibid. Epist. 132, 142.

³ Capit. Caroloman. ann. 743 c. 1.

Church been neglected and forgotten, that Pepin was obliged to appeal to Pope Zachary for an authoritative declaration as to the grades in which marriage was prohibited.¹ Yet his measures were but lukewarm, for he contented himself with simply forbidding unchastity in priests, the marriage of nuns, and the residence of stranger women with clerks, no special punishment being threatened, beyond a general allusion to existing laws.²

Thus assailed by both the supreme ecclesiastical and temporal authorities, the clergy still were stubborn. Some defended themselves as being legitimately entitled to have a concubine—or rather, we may presume, a wife. Among these we find a certain Bishop Clement described as a pestilent heresiarch, with followers, who maintained that his two children, born during his prelacy, did not unfit him for his episcopal functions; and a synod held in Rome, October 31st, 745, was required for his condemnation, the local authorities apparently proving powerless. Even this was not sufficient, for in January, 747, we find Zachary directing Boniface to bring him before a local council, and if he still proved contumacious, to refer the matter again to Rome.³ Others, again, unwilling to forgo their secular mode of existence, or to abandon the livelihood afforded by the Church, were numerous and hardy enough to ask Pepin and Carloman to set apart for them churches and monasteries in which they could live as they were accustomed to do. So nearly did they succeed in this attempt, that Boniface found it necessary to appeal to Zachary to prevent so flagrant an infraction of the canons, and Zachary wrote to the princes with instructions as to the mode of answering the petition.⁴ Others, still more audacious, assailed Boniface in every

¹ Zachar. PP. Epist. 8 c. 11, 18.

² Pippini Capit. ann. 744 c. 4, 8, 9.

³ Bonifac. Epistt. 135, 139 (Zachar. PP. Epist. 9).

⁴ Othlon. Vit. S. Bonif. Lib. II. c. 11.

way, endeavoured to weary him out, and even, rightly regarding him as the cause of their persecution and tribulations, made attempts upon his life.¹

That he should have escaped, indeed, is surprising, when the character of the age is considered, and the nature of the evils inflicted on those who must have regarded the reform as a wanton outrage on their rights. As late as 748, Boniface describes the false bishops and priests, sacrilegious and wandering hypocrites and adulterers, as much more numerous than those who as yet had been forced to compliance with the rules. Driven from the churches, but supported by the sympathising people, they performed their ministry among the fields and in the cabins of the peasants, who concealed them from the ecclesiastical authorities.² This is not a description of mere sensual worldlings, and it is probable that by this time persecution had ranged the evil disposed on the winning side. Those who thus exercised their ministry in secret and in wretchedness, retaining the veneration of the people, were therefore men who believed themselves honourably and legitimately married, and who were incapable of sacrificing wife and children for worldly advantage or in blind obedience to a rule which to them was novel, unnatural, and indefensible.

Boniface escaped from the vengeful efforts of those who suffered from his zeal, to fall, in 755, under the sword of the equally ungrateful Frisians. It is probable that up to the time of his death he was occupied with the reformation of the clergy in conjunction with his missionary labours, for in 752 we find him still engaged in the hopeless endeavour to eject the unclerical prelates, who even yet held over from the iron age of Charles Martel. His disappearance from the scene, however,

¹ Bonifacii Epist. 135.—S. Ludgeri Vit. S. Bonifacii.

² Bonifacii Epist. 140.

made but little change in the movement which had owed so much to his zeal.

In 747 Carloman's pious aspirations had led him from a throne to a cloister, and the monastery of Monte Cassino welcomed its most illustrious inmate. Pepin received the whole vast kingdom, and his ambitious designs drew him daily closer to the Church, the importance of whose support he commenced to appreciate. His policy, in consolidating the power of his house and in founding a new dynasty, led him necessarily to reorganise the anarchical elements of society. As an acknowledged monarch, a regularly constituted hierarchy and recognised subordination to the laws, both civil and ecclesiastical, were requisite to the success of his government and to the establishment of his race. Accordingly, we find him carrying out systematically the work commenced by Carloman and Boniface, to which at first his support had been rather negative than positive.

Six weeks after the martyrdom of Boniface, Pepin held a synod in his royal palace of Verneuil, in which this tendency is very apparent. Full power was given to the bishops in their respective dioceses to enforce the canons of the Church on the clergy, the monks, and the laity. The monasteries were especially entrusted to the episcopal care, and means were provided for reducing the refractory to submission. The Rule of Benedict was proclaimed as in force in all conventual establishments, and cloistered residence was strictly enjoined. All ecclesiastics were ordered to pay implicit obedience to their bishops, and this was secured by the power of excommunication, which was no longer, as in earlier stages, the simple suspension from religious privileges, but was a ban which deprived the offender of all association with his fellows, and exposed him, if contumacious, to

exile by the secular power. By the appointment of metropolitans, a tribunal of higher resort was instituted, while two synods, to be held each year, gave the opportunity both of legislation and of final judgment. Submission to their decisions was ensured by threatening stripes to all who should appeal from them to the royal court.¹

Such are the main features, as far as they relate to our subject, of this Capitulary, which so strikingly reveals the organising system of the Carolingian polity. Carried out by the rare intelligence and vigour of Charlemagne, it gave a precocious development of civilisation to Europe, transitory because in advance of the age, and because it was based on the intellectual force of the ruler, and not on the virtue and cultivation of a people as yet too barbarous to appreciate it.

The organisation of the Church, moreover, received at the same time an efficient impulse by the institution of the order of canons, founded virtually in 762, the year in which St. Chrodegang, Bishop of Metz, promulgated the Rule for their government. This Rule of course entirely forbids all intercourse with women, and endeavours to suppress it by punishing transgressors with stripes, incarceration, and deposition.² The lofty rank of St. Chrodegang, who was a cousin of Pepin-le-Bref, and the eminent piety which merited canonisation, gave him wide influence, which doubtless assisted in extending the new institution, but it also had recommendations of its own which were sufficient to ensure success. By converting the cathedral clergy into monks, bound by implicit obedience towards their superiors, it brought no little increase of power to the bishops, and enabled them to exert new authority and influence. It is no wonder,

¹ Capit. Pippini ann. 755.

² Regul. S. Chrodegangi, cap. 29, 56, 68, 70.

therefore, that the order spread rapidly, and was adopted in most of the dioceses.

For a century we hear nothing more of sacerdotal marriage—and yet it may be doubted whether clerical morality had really been improved by the well-meant reforms of Boniface. These were followed up by Charlemagne with all his resistless energy, and the importance which he attached to the subject is shown by an epistle of Adrian I. denying certain assertions made to the Frankish sovereign, inculcating the purity of the Roman clergy. Adrian, in defending his flock, assumes that the object of the slanders can only have been to produce a quarrel between himself and Charlemagne, who must evidently have made strong representations on the subject to the Pontiff.¹ Under such pressure perhaps there was something less of shameless licentiousness; the episcopal chairs were no longer defiled by the cynical lubricity of unworthy prelates; but in the mass of the clergy the passions, deprived of all legitimate gratification, could not be restrained in a race so little accustomed to self-control, and unchastity remained a corroding ulcer which Charlemagne and Louis-le-Débonnaire vainly endeavoured to eradicate. The former, indeed, we find asking in 811 whether the only difference between clerk and layman is that the former does not bear arms and is not publicly married;² while Ghaerbald, Bishop of Liège, a few years before had ordered that all priests maintaining intercourse with their wives should be deprived of their benefices and be subjected to penitence until death.³

¹ Cod. Carolini Epist. lxiv. (Patrolog. T. 98, p. 319). Yet even in 772 we find that a council in Bavaria found it necessary to prohibit the marriage of nuns.—Concil. Dingolwing. can. 2 (Hartzheim Concil. German. I. 129).

² Capit. Car. Mag. II. ann. 811 cap. iv. (Baluz. I. 329—Ed. Venet.).

³ Ghaerbaldi Judicia Sacerdotalia de Criminibus, c. 13 (Martene Ampl. Coll. VII. 31).

It would be an unprofitable task to recapitulate the constantly repeated legislation prohibiting the residence of women with the clergy and repressing the disorders and irregularities of the monastic establishments. It would be but a reiteration of the story already related in previous centuries, and its only importance would be in showing by the frequency of the edicts how utterly ineffectual they were. When Louis-le-Débonnaire, in 826, decreed that the seduction of a nun was to be punished by the death of both the partners in guilt; that the property of both was to be confiscated to the Church; and that the count in whose district the crime occurred, if he neglected its prosecution, was to be degraded, deprived of his office, undergo public penance, and pay his full *wer-gild* to the fisc;¹ the frightful severity of the enactment is the measure of the impossibility of effecting its purpose, and of the inefficiency of the reformation which had been so elaborately prepared and so energetically promulgated by Louis in 817.²

But perhaps the most convincing evidence of the debased morality of the clergy, and of the low standard which even the most zealous prelates were forced to adopt, is to be found in a curious fabrication by the authors of the *False Decretals*. The collection of decretals which they put forth in the names of the early popes embodied their conception of a perfect Church establishment, as adapted to the necessities and aspirations of the ninth century. While straining every point to throw off all subjection to the temporal power, and to obtain for the hierarchy full and absolute control over all ecclesiastical matters and persons, they seem to have felt it necessary to relax in an important point

¹ Ludov. Pii. Capit. Ingelenheim. c. 5.

² Capit. Aquisgran. ann. 817. Cf. *Miræi Cod. Donat. Piar.* c. 13.—This Capitulary regulating monastic life was generally adopted as a supplement to the rule of Benedict (*Leo. Ostiens. Chron. Cassinens. Lib. 1. c. 16*).

the rigour of the canons respecting sacerdotal purity. Gregory the Great had proclaimed in the clearest and most definite manner the rule that a single lapse from virtue condemned the sinner to irrevocable degradation, and rendered him for ever unfit for the ministry of the altar.¹ Yet "Isidor Mercator" added to a genuine epistle of Gregory a long passage elaborately arguing the necessity of forgiveness for those who expiate by repentance the sin of impurity, "of which, among many, so few are guiltless."² The direct testimony is notable, but not less so is the indirect evidence of the prevalent laxity which could induce such a bid for popularity on the part of high Churchmen like those concerned in the Isidorian forgeries.

Evidence, also, is not wanting, that the denial of the appropriate and healthful human affections led to the results which might be expected, of fearful and unnatural crimes. That the inmates of monasteries, debarred from female society, occasionally abandoned themselves to the worst excesses, or, breaking through all restraint, indulged in less reprehensible but more open scandals, is proclaimed by Charlemagne, who threatened to vindicate the outrage upon religion with the severest punishment.³ Nor were the female convents more successfully regu-

¹ See ante, p. 138. Cf. Pseudo-Hormisdæ Epist. Encyc. (Migne's Patrol. T. LXIII. p. 527).

² Quid enim est gravius carnale delictum admittere *sine quo in multis pauci inveniuntur*, an Dei filium timendo negare? in quo uno ipsum beatum Petrum apostolorum principem, ad cuius nunc corpus indigni sedemus, lapsum esse cognoscimus, sed post negationem poenitentia secuta, et post poenitentiam misericordia data.—Pseudo-Gregor. Epist. ad Secundinum.

Isidor Mercator also includes two canons from the sixth century forgery of the Roman Council said to have been held under Silvester I. (see p. 136). Of these, one prohibits bishops from celebrating the marriage of nuns under seventy years of age; the other forbids priests from marrying, under a penalty of ten years' suspension, with a threat of perpetual deprivation for contumacy. (Constit. Pseudo-Silvestri, cap. x. xix.) The adoption of these in the False Decretals would seem at least to be superfluous.

³ Capit. Carol. Mag. I. ann. 802 c. 17.

lated, for the Council of Aix-la-Chapelle, in 836, states that in many places they were rather brothels than houses of God; and it shows how close a supervision over the spouses of Christ was thought requisite when it proceeds to direct that nunneries shall be so built as to have no dark corners in which scandals may be perpetrated out of view.¹ The effect of these efforts may be estimated from a remark in a collection of laws which bears the name of Erchenbald, Chancellor of Charlemagne, but which is rather attributable to the close of the ninth century, that the licentiousness of nuns commonly resulted in a worse crime, infanticide;² and, as this is extracted textually from an epistle of St. Boniface to Ethelbald, King of Mercia,³ it is presumable that the evil became notorious simultaneously with the reform under the early Carovingians, and continued unabated throughout their dynasty. One device to subjugate nature, adopted in the monasteries, was to let blood at stated intervals, in the hope of reducing the system and thus mitigating the effects of prolonged continence—a device prohibited by Louis-le-Débonnaire, but long subsequently maintained as part of monastic discipline.⁴ As regards the secular clergy, even darker horrors are asserted by Theodulf, Bishop of Orleans, and other prelates, who forbade to their clergy the residence of mother, aunt, and sister, in consequence of the crimes so frequently perpetrated with them at the instigation of the devil;⁵

¹ Concil. Aquisgran. ann. 836, de vit. et doc. infer. ordin. can. xii. xiv.—De monasteriis puellarum quæ in quibusdam locis lupanaria potius videntur esse quam monasteria.

² Capitul. add. iv. cap. clx. (Baluze, I. 1227).

³ Bonifacii Epist. 19.

⁴ Capit. Aquisgran. ann. 817 c. xi.—Chavard, Céliat des Prêtres, Genève, 1874, p. 35. See also "The Life and Times of Hildebrand," London, 1907, by the Abbé O. Délarc.

⁵ Quia, instigante diabolo, etiam in illis scelus frequenter perpetratum invenitur, aut etiam in pedissequis earum. Nec igitur matrem, neque amitam, neque sororem permittimus ultra habitare in domo una cum sacerdote.—Theodulf. Aurelian. Capit. Secund. (Baluz. et Mansi II. 99).

and the truth of this hideous fact is unfortunately confirmed by the declarations of councils held at various periods.¹

If, under the external polish of Carolingian civilisation, such utter demoralisation existed, while the laws were enforced by the stern vigour of Charlemagne, or the sensitive piety of Louis-le-Débonnaire, it is easy to understand what was the condition of society when the sons of the latter involved the whole empire in a ceaseless tumult of civil war. Not only was the watchful care of the first two emperors withdrawn, but the state was turned against itself, and rapine and desolation became almost universal. The royal power was parcelled out, by the rising feudal system, among a crowd of nobles whose energies were solely directed to consolidating their position, and was chiefly employed, as far as it affected the Church, in granting abbeys and other

He had previously (Epist. c. 12) promulgated the prohibition, assigning for it the more decent reason, in imitation of St. Augustin, of the danger arising from female attendants. In this he was imitated, about 850, by Rodolf of Bourges (Capit. Rodulf. Bituricens. c. 16), and about 871 by Walter of Orleans (Capit. Walteri Aurelian. c. 3).

In 889, however, Riculfus of Soissons declares the lamentable truth without reserve: "Nos vero etiam a matribus, amitibus, sororibus vel propinquis cavendum dicimus, ne forte illud eveniat quod in sancta scriptura legitur de Thamar sorore Absalon . . . de Loth etiam . . . Quod si aliquis vestrum matrem, sororem vel amitam ad convescendum vocaverit, expleto convivio ad domos suas vel ad hospitium a domo presbyteri remota, cum luce diei eas faciat remeare; periculosum quippe est ut vobiscum habitent."—Riculfus Suess. Const. c. 14.

¹ Thus the Council of Mainz in 888—"Quod multum dolendum est, sæpe audivimus per illam concessionem plurima scelera esse commissa, ita ut quidam sacerdotum, cum propriis sororibus concumbentes, filios ex eis generassent, et ideo constituit hæc sancta synodus, ut nullus presbyter ullam feminam secum in domo propria permittat quatenus occasio malæ suspitionis vel facti iniqui penitus auferatur" (Concil. Mogunt. ann. 888 c. 10). In the same year the third canon of the Council of Metz repeats the prohibition; while in 895 the Council of Nantes declares—"Sed neque illas quas canones concedunt; quia instigante diabolo, etiam in illis scelus frequenter perpetratum reperitur, aut etiam in pedissequis illarum, scilicet matrem, amitam, sororem."—Concil. Namnetens. ann. 895 c. 3.

It is true that some authorities, including the great name of Pagi, attribute to this Council of Nantes the date of 660, but this is unimportant as regards the canon in question, for its necessity during the period under consideration is shown by its insertion in the Capitularies of Benedict the Levite (Lib. VII. c. 376), and in the collection of Regino of Pruhm (Lib. I. c. 104).

ecclesiastical dignities to worthless laymen, whose support could only be secured by bribes which the royal fisc could no longer supply. Pagan Danes and infidel Saracens were ravaging the fairest provinces of the empire, and their blows fell with peculiar weight on the representatives of a hated religion. For seventy years previous to the treaty of Clair-sur-Epte no mass resounded in the walls of the cathedral church of Coutances, so fierce and unremitting had been the incursions of the Northmen. It is therefore no wonder that, as early as 845, the bishops assembled at the Council of Vernon confess that their ecclesiastical authority is no longer sufficient to prevent the marriage of monks and nuns, and to suppress the crowds who escaped from their convents, and wandered over the country in licentiousness and vagabondage. To restrain these disorders they are obliged to invoke the royal power to cast into prison these reprobates and force them to undergo canonical penance.¹

During this period of anarchy and lawlessness, the Church was skilfully emancipating itself from subjection to the temporal power, and was laying the foundation of that supremacy which was eventually to dominate Christendom. While its aspirations and ambitions were thus worldly, and its ranks were recruited from a generation trained under such influences, it is easy to believe that the disorders which Charlemagne himself could not repress, grew more and more flagrant. Even the greatly augmented power of the papacy added to the increasing license, although Nicholas I. in 861 had ordered the deposition and degradation of all priests convicted of immorality,² for the appellate jurisdiction claimed by Rome gave practical immunity to those against whom

¹ Capit. Carol. Calvi Tit. III. cap. 4, 5.

² Martene Ampliss. Collect. I. 151.

the enforcement of the canons was attempted. About the year 876, Charles-le-Chauve, in a spirited argument against the pretensions of the popes, calls attention specially to the exemption thus afforded to unchaste priests, who, after due conviction by their bishops, obtained letters from Rome overruling the judgments; the distance and dangers of the journey precluding the local authorities from supporting their verdicts by sending commissioners and witnesses to carry on a second trial beyond the Alps.¹

This shows that the effort to enforce purity was not as yet abandoned, however slender may have been the success in eradicating an evil so general and so deeply rooted. The nominal punishment for unchastity—loss of benefice and deposition—was severe enough to induce the guilty to hide their excesses with care, when they chanced to have a bishop who was zealous in the performance of his duties. Efforts at concealment, moreover, were favoured by the forms of judicial procedure, which were such as to throw every difficulty in the way of procuring a conviction, and to afford, in most cases, practical immunity for sin, unless committed in the most open and shameless manner. Hincmar, Archbishop of Rheims, the leading ecclesiastic of his day, whose reputation for learning and piety would have rendered him one of the lights of the Church, had not his consistent opposition to the innovations of the papacy caused his sanctity to be questioned in Rome, has left us elaborate directions as to the forms of prosecution in such matters. Notwithstanding his earnest exhortations and arguments in favour of the most ascetic purity, he discourages investigation by means of neighbours and parishioners, or irreverent inquiries on the subject. Only such testimony was admissible as the laws allowed, and the laws were

¹ Hincmari Epist. xxxii. c. 20.

very strict as to the position and character of witnesses. In addition to the accusers themselves, seven witnesses were necessary. Of these, one was required to substantiate the oaths of the rest by undergoing the ordeal, thus exposing himself and all his fellows to the heavy penalties visited on perjury, upon the chance of the red-hot iron or cold-water trial, administered, perhaps, by those interested in shielding the guilty. If, as we can readily believe was generally the case, these formidable difficulties could not be overcome, and the necessary number of witnesses were not ready to sacrifice themselves, then the accused could purge himself of the sins imputed to him by his own oath, supported by one, three, or six compurgators of his own order; and Hincmar himself bears testimony to the associations which were formed among the clergy to swear each other through all troubles.¹ Even simpler, indeed, was the process prescribed not long before by Pope Nicholas I., who ordered that, when legal evidence was not procurable, the accused priest could clear himself on his own unsupported oath.²

Under these regulations, Hincmar orders an annual investigation to be made throughout his province, but the results would appear to have been as unsatisfactory as might have been expected. In 874, at the Synod of Rheims, he complains that his orders have been neglected and despised, and he warns his clergy that proof of actual criminality will not be required, but that undue famili-

¹ Hincmari Capit. Presbyteris data. cap. XXI.-XXV.

Hincmar repeats his instructions, with some amplifications, in another document, in which he declares them to be the received traditional rules—"a majoribus nostris accepimus" (De Presbyt. criminos. c. XI.-XVIII.). That they were generally practised is shown in their almost literal repetition by the Council of Trosley in 909—with the exception that in some cases fourteen or twenty-one witnesses were required for conviction (Concil. Troslei. c. ix.).

² Martene Ampl. Collect. I. 151.

arity with women, if persisted in, will be sufficient for condemnation when properly proved.¹

In the presence of facilities for escape such as were afforded by the practice of ecclesiastical law as constructed by the decretalists, and as expounded by Hincmar himself, the threats in which he indulged could carry but little terror. We need not wonder, therefore, if we meet with but slender indications of priestly marriage during all this disorder, for there was evidently little danger of punishment for the unchaste priest who exercised ordinary discretion in his amours, while the penalties impending over those who should openly brave the canonical rules were heavy, and could hardly be avoided by any one who should dare to unite himself publicly to a woman in marriage. Every consideration of worldly prudence and passion therefore induced the priest to pursue a course of illicit licentiousness—and yet, as the century wore on, traces of entire neglect or utter contempt of the canons began to manifest themselves. How little the rule really was respected by the ecclesiastical authorities, when anything was to be gained by its suppression, is shown in the decision made by Nicholas I., the highest of high Churchmen, when encouraging the Bulgarians to abandon the Greek Church, although the separation between Rome and Constantinople was not, as yet, formal and complete. To their inquiry whether married priests should be ejected, he replied that though such ministers were objectionable, yet the mercy of God was to be imitated, who causes His sun to shine on good and evil alike, and as Christ did not dismiss Judas, so they were not to be dismissed. Besides, laymen were not to judge priests for any crime, nor to make any investigation into their lives, such inquiries being reserved for bishops.² As no

¹ Capit. Synod. Remens. ann. 874 c. 3.

² Nicholai I. Respons. ad Consult. Bulgar. c. 70.

bishops had yet been appointed by Rome, the answer was a skilfully tacit permission of priestly marriage, while avoiding an open avowal.

It need awaken no surprise if those who united recklessness and power should openly trample on the canons thus feebly supported. A somewhat prominent personage of the period was Hubert, brother of Teutberga, Queen of Lotharingia, and his turbulent conduct was a favourite theme for animadversion by the quiet monastic chroniclers. That he was an abbot is perhaps no proof of his clerical profession, but when we find his wife and children alluded to as a proof of his abandoned character, it shows that he was bound by vows or ordained within the prohibited grades, and that he publicly violated the rules and defied their enforcement.¹

The earliest absolute evidence that has reached us, however, of marriage committed by a member of the great body of the plebeian clergy, subsequent to the reforms of Boniface, occurs about the year 893. Angelric, priest of Vasnau, appealed to the Synod of Chalons, stating that he had been publicly joined in wedlock to a woman named Grimma. Such an attempt by a priest, the consent of the woman and her relatives, and the performance of the ceremony by another priest, all show the prevailing laxity and ignorance, yet still there were found some faithful and pious souls to object to the transaction, and Angelric was not allowed to enjoy undisturbed the fruits of his sin. Yet even the synod was perplexed, and unable to decide what ought to be done. It therefore only temporarily suspended Angelric from communion, while Mancio, his bishop, applied for advice to Foulques of Rheims, metropolitan of the province, and the ignorance

¹ Efficitur ad hæc uxorius, liberos procreans, et ad suæ damnationis cumulum nil sibi clericale præter tonsuram præferens.—Folcuin, de Gest. Abbat. Laubiens. c. 12.

and good faith of all parties are manifested by the fact that Angelric himself was sent to Foulques as the bearer of the letter of inquiry.¹

With the ninth century the power, the cultivation, and the civilisation of the Carlovingians may be considered virtually to disappear, though for nearly a hundred years longer a spectral crown encircled the brows of the ill-starred descendants of Pepin. Centralisation, rendered impossible in temporal affairs by feudalism, was transferred to the Church, which, thenceforth, more than ever independent of secular control, became wholly responsible for its own shortcomings; and the records of the period make only too plainly manifest how utterly the power, so strenuously contended for, failed to accomplish good amid the ignorance and the barbarism of the age.

¹ Manton. *Episc. Catalaun. Epist. ad Fulc. Remens.* (Migne's *Patrol.* T. 131, p. 23).

CHAPTER X

THE TENTH CENTURY

THE tenth century, well characterised by Cave as the "Sæculum Obscurum," is perhaps the most repulsive in Christian annals. The last vestiges of Roman culture have disappeared, while the dawn of modern civilisation is as yet far off. Society, in a state of transition, is painfully and vainly seeking some form of security and stability. The marauding wars of petty neighbouring chiefs become the normal condition, only interrupted when two or three unite to carry destruction to some more powerful rival. Though the settlement of Normandy relieved Continental Europe to a great extent from the terror of the Dane, yet the still more dreaded Hun took his place and ravaged the nations from the Danube to the Atlantic, while England bore the undivided fury of the Vikings, and the Saracen left little to glean upon the shores of the Mediterranean.

When brutal ignorance and savage ferocity were the distinguishing characteristics of the age, the Church could scarce expect to escape from the general debasement. It is rather a matter of grateful surprise that religion itself was not overwhelmed in the general chaos which engulfed almost all previously existing institutions. When the crown of St. Peter became the sport of barbarous nobles, or of a still more barbarous populace, we may grieve, but we cannot affect astonishment, at the unconcealed dissoluteness of Sergius III., whose bastard, twenty years later, was placed in the pontifical chair by the influence of that embodiment of all possible vices, his mother

Marozia.¹ The last extreme of depravity would seem attained by John XII., but as his deposition in 963 by Otho the Great loosened the tongues of his accusers, it is possible that he was no worse than some of his predecessors. No extreme of wickedness was beyond his capacity; the sacred palace of the Lateran was turned into a brothel; incest gave a flavour to crime when simple profligacy palled upon his exhausted senses, and the honest citizens of Rome complained that the female pilgrims who formerly crowded the holy fanes were deterred from coming through fear of his promiscuous and unbridled lust.²

With such corruption at the head of the Church, it is grotesque to see the popes inculcating lessons of purity, and urging the maintenance of canons which they set the example of disregarding so utterly. The clergy were now beginning to arrogate to themselves the privilege of matrimony; and marriage, so powerful a corrective of indiscriminate vice, was regarded with peculiar detestation by the ecclesiastical authorities, and awoke a far more energetic opposition than the more dangerous and corrupting forms of illicit indulgence. The pastor who intrigued in secret with his penitents and parishioners was scattering the seeds of death in place of the bread of life, and was abusing his holy trust to destroy the souls confided to his charge, but this worked no damage to the temporal interests of the Church at large. The priest who, in honest ignorance of the canons, took to himself a wife, and endeavoured faithfully to perform the duties of his humble sphere, could scarcely avoid seeking the comfort and worldly welfare of his offspring, and this exposed the common property of all to dilapidation and embezzlement. Disinterested virtue perhaps would not

¹ Liutprand. Antapod. Lib. III. c. 43.

² Liutprand. Hist. Otton. c. 4, 10.—Chron. Benedict. S. Andreæ Monach. c. 35.

be long in making a selection between the comparative evils, but disinterested virtue was not a distinguishing characteristic of the age.

Yet a motive of even greater importance than this rendered matrimony more objectionable than concubinage or licentiousness. By the overruling tendency of the age, all possessions previously held by laymen on precarious tenure were rapidly becoming hereditary. As the royal power slipped from hands unable to retain it, offices, dignities, and lands became the property of the holders, and were transmitted from father to son. Had marriage been openly permitted to ecclesiastics, their functions and benefices would undoubtedly have followed the example. An hereditary caste would have been established, who would have held their churches and lands of right; independent of the central authority, all unity would have been destroyed, and the collective power of the Church would have disappeared. Having nothing to gain from obedience, submission to control would have become the exception, and, laymen in all but name, the ecclesiastics would have had no incentive to perform their functions, except what little influence, under such circumstances, might have been retained over the people by maintaining the sacred character thus rendered a mockery.

In an age when everything was unsettled, yet with tendencies so strongly marked, it thus became a matter of vital importance to the Church to prevent anything like hereditary occupation of benefices or private appropriation of property, and against these abuses its strongest efforts were directed. The struggle lasted for centuries, and it may perhaps be fortunate for our civilisation that sacerdotalism triumphed, even at the expense of what at the moment was of greater importance. I cannot here pause to trace the progress of the contest in its long and

various vicissitudes. It will be found constantly re-appearing in the course of the following pages, and for the present it will suffice to group together a few evidences to show how rapidly the hereditary tendency developed itself in the period under consideration.

The narrowness of the escape from ecclesiastical feudalisation is well illustrated by an incident at the Council of Tours, in 925, where two priests, *father and son*, Ranald and Raymond, appeared as complainants, claiming certain tithes detained from them by another priest. They gained the suit, and the tithes were confirmed to them and their successors for ever.¹ Even more suggestive is the complaint, some thirty years later, of Ratherius, Bishop of Verona, who objects strenuously to the ordination of the children sprung from these illegal marriages, as each successive father made his son a priest, thus perpetuating the scandal indefinitely throughout the Church; and as he sorrowfully admits that his clergy could not be restrained from marriage, he begs them at least to bring their children up as laymen.² This, however, by his own showing, would not remove the material evil, for in another treatise he states that his priests and deacons divided the Church property between them, that they might have lands and vineyards wherewith to provide marriage portions for their sons and daughters.³ This system of appropriation also forms the subject of lamentation for Atto, Bishop of Vercelli, whose clergy insisted on publicly keeping concubines—as he stigmatises those who evidently were wives—to whom they left by will everything that they could gather from the possessions of the Church, from the alms of the pious, or from any other source, to

¹ Concil. Turon. ann. 925 (Martene Thesaur. IV. 73).

² Ratherii de nuptu cujusdam illicito, c. 4.

³ Ratherii de contemptu canon. P. I. c. 4.

the ruin of ecclesiastical property and to the deprivation of the poor.¹ How well founded were these complaints is evident from a document of the eleventh century concerning the churches of St. Stephen and St. Donatus in Aretino. The priests in charge appropriated to themselves all the possessions of the churches, including the revenues of the altars, the oblations, and the confessional. These they portioned out among each other and handed down from father to son as regularly as any other property, selling and exchanging their shares as the interest of the moment might suggest, and the successive transmission of each fragment of property is detailed with all the precision of a brief of title. The natural result was that for generations the religious services of Aretino were utterly disregarded. Sometimes the priestly owners would hire some one to ring the bells, light the candles, and minister to the altar, but in the multitude of ownerships the stipends were irregularly paid, and the officiator refused continually to serve, candles were not furnished, bell-ropes were not renewed, and even the leathers which attached the clappers to the bells were neglected. The church of St. Stephen was the cathedral of Aretino, yet the bishops were powerless to correct these abuses. The marriages of their priests they do not seem to have even attempted to repress, and were quite satisfied if they could occasionally get a portion of the revenues devoted to the offices of religion.² The same condition of affairs existed among the Anglo-Saxons. "It is all the worse when they have it all, for they do not dispose of it as they ought, but decorate their wives with what they should the altars, and turn everything to their own worldly pomp. . . . Let those who before this had the evil custom of

¹ Atton. Vercell. Epist. ix.

² *Enarratio eorum quæ perverse gesta sunt, etc.* (Muratori, *Antiq. Med. Ævi Diss.* LXII.).

decorating their women as they should the altars, refrain from this evil custom, and decorate their churches, as they best can; then would they command for themselves both divine counsel and worldly worship. A priest's wife is nothing but a snare of the devil, and he who is ensnared thereby on to his end, he will be seized fast by the devil."¹

It will be observed that, as the century advanced, sacerdotal marriage became more and more common. Indeed, in 966, RATHERIUS not only intimates that his clergy were all married, but declares that if the canon prohibiting repeated marriages were put in force, only boys would be left in the Church, while even they would be ejected under the rule which rendered ineligible the offspring of illicit unions;² and, in spite of his earnest asceticism, he only ventures to prohibit his clergy from conjugal intercourse during the periods likewise forbidden to laymen, such as Advent, Christmas, Lent, etc.³ It was not that the ancient canons were forgotten,⁴ nor that strenuous efforts were not made to enforce them, but that the temper of the times created a spirit of personal independence so complete that the power of the ecclesiastical authorities seemed utterly inadequate to control the growing license. About the year 938, Gerard, Archbishop of Lorsch and Papal Legate for Southern Germany, laid before Leo VII. a series of questions relating to various points in which the ancient canons were set at naught throughout the region under his supervision. Leo answered by a decretal addressed to all the princes and potentates of Europe, in which he

¹ Institutes of Polity, Civil and Ecclesiastical, c. 19, 23 (Thorpe, Ancient Laws, &c. of England, II. 329, 337).

² Ratherii Itinerar. c. 5.

³ Ratherii Synodica, c. 15.

⁴ Gunzo the Grammarian, in his learned treatise, makes use of the recognised celibacy of the clergy as a comparison. "Non enim una eademque res bona, licet æque omnibus conceditur. Siquidem nuptiæ, laicis concessæ, sacris ordinibus dene-gantur."—Gunzonis Epist. ad Angienses.

laments over Gerard's statement of the public marriages of priests, and replies to his inquiry as to the capacity of their children for ecclesiastical promotion. The first he pronounces forbidden by the canons, and those guilty of it he orders to be deprived of their benefices. As for the offspring of such marriages, however, he says that they are not involved in the sins of their parents.¹

The unusual liberality of this latter declaration, however, was not a precedent. The Church always endeavoured to prevent the ordination of the children of ecclesiastics, and Leo, in permitting it, was only yielding to a pressure which he could not withstand. It was a most dangerous concession, for it led directly to the establishment of the hereditary principle. An effort was soon after made, by an appeal to the temporal power, to recover the ground lost, and about the year 940 Otho the Great was induced to issue an edict prohibiting the sons of deacons, priests, and bishops from occupying the positions of notary, judge, or count²—the bare necessity of which shows how numerous and powerful the class had already become.

Although, as early as 925, the Council of Spalatro seemed to find nothing to condemn in a single marriage, but threatened excommunication against those who so far forgot themselves as to contract a second,³ and though by the middle of the century the practice had become generally established, yet some rigid prelates

¹ Leon. PP. VII. Epist. 15.

² Constit. Otton. ann. 940 c. 12.

³ Quod si sacerdotes incontinenter propter ipsam continentiam primam quam sortitus est, separati a consortio cellæ, teneat uxorem; si vere aliam duxerit, excommunicetur.—Concil. Spalatens. ann. 925 c. 15.

The passage is evidently corrupt, but its intention is manifest. The reading suggested by Batthyani may be reasonably accepted. "Quod si sacerdotes incontinentes propter ipsam continentiam quam quis primam sortitus est, separati a consortio cellæ, teneant uxorem, tolerantur; si vero aliam duxerint, excommunicentur." (Batthyani Legg. Eccles. Hungar. I. 333-4.)

continued to keep alive the memory of the ancient canons by fruitless protests and ineffectual efforts at reform. In 948 the Synod of Engelheim, under the presidency of Marino, Bishop of Ostia and Papal Vicar, condemned such marriages as incestuous and unlawful.¹ In 952, at the Council of Augsburg, the assembled German and Italian prelates made a further and more desperate effort. Deposition was pronounced against the subdeacon, deacon, priest, or bishop who should take to himself a wife; separation of those already married was ordered, and even the lower grades of the clergy, who had not previously been subjected to any such rule, were commanded to observe the strictest continence. An attempt was also made to prevent concubinage by visiting suspected women with stripes and shaving; but there evidently was some difficulty anticipated in enforcing this, for the royal power is invoked to prevent secular interference with the sentence.²

This stringent legislation of course proved utterly nugatory, but, futile as it was, it yet awakened considerable opposition. St. Ulric, in whose episcopal town of Augsburg the council was held, addressed a long epistle to the Pope remonstrating against his efforts to enforce the rule of celibacy, and arguing the question, temperately but forcibly, on the grounds both of scriptural authority and of expediency. He pointed out how much more obnoxious to Divine wrath were the promiscuous and nameless crimes indulged in by those who were foremost in advocating the reform than the chaste and single marriages of the clergy; and the violent distortion of the sacred texts, by those who sought authority to justify the canon, he not unhappily

¹ Richeri Hist. Lib. II. c. 81. The canons of the council, however, as they have reached us, are silent on the subject.

² Concil. Augustan. ann. 952 c. 1, 4, 11.

characterised as straining the breast of Scripture until it yielded blood in place of milk.¹

Despite the inefficiency of these attempts, the clergy were not always allowed to enjoy their unlawful domestic ties in peace, and, where the votaries of asceticism were bold and determined, the contest was sometimes severe. The nature of the struggle is well illustrated by the troubles which arose between Ratherius of Verona and the ecclesiastics of his diocese. In April, 967, John XIII. held a council at Ravenna which commanded those who were in holy orders to give up at once either their wives or their ministry, and Otho the Great was induced to issue a precept confirming this peremptory decree. Ratherius had long been vainly wishing for some authority on the subject more potent than the ancient and now obsolete canons, and on his return from Ravenna he summoned a synod for the purpose of promulgating the new regulations. His clergy got wind of his intention; very few of them obeyed the summons, and most of those who came boldly declared that they would neither be separated from their wives nor abandon their functions—in fact, they did not scruple to maintain that marriage was not only permissible, but even necessary to protect the Church from the most hideous

¹ Cod. Bamberg. Lib. II. Epist. 10.

St. Ulric is noteworthy as the first subject of papal canonisation, having been enrolled in the calendar by the Council of Rome in 993. That priestly marriage should be advocated by so pious and venerable a father was of course not agreeable to the sacerdotal party, and his evidence against celibacy has not infrequently been ruled out of court by discrediting the authenticity of the epistle. The compiler of the collection containing it, made in 1125, prefixed the name of Nicholas as that of the pope to whom it was addressed, and as St. Ulric was about equidistant between Nicholas I. in the ninth and Nicholas II. in the eleventh century, it has been suggested that the epistle was addressed to the latter, on the occasion of his reforms in 1059, the use of St. Ulric's name being assumed as a mistake of the compiler. That this is not so is shown by the fact that already in 1079 it was known as St. Ulric's, being condemned as such in that year by Gregory VII.—“scriptum quod dicitur sancti Oudalrici ad papam Nicholaum, de nuptiis presbiterorum” (Bernald. Constant. Ceron. ann. 1079). The authenticity of the document, I believe, is generally admitted by unprejudiced critics.

vices. The utmost concession he could obtain, indeed, came from a few who endeavoured to excuse themselves on the ground of poverty, which did not enable them to live without the assistance of their wives, and who professed to be willing to separate from them if they could be assured of a regular stipend.¹ Ratherius had passed through too many vicissitudes in his long and agitated career to shrink from the collision, now that he was backed by both the papal and imperial authority. He promptly threw the recalcitrant pastors into prison, declaring that they should lie there until they paid a heavy fine for the benefit of the Cathedral of the Virgin, and he further commanded the presence of those who had failed to appear. The clergy of the diocese, finding that the resistance of inertia was unavailing, took more decided steps, and appealed for protection to the temporal power, in the person of Nanno, Count of Verona. He promptly espoused their cause, and his *missus* Gilbert forbade their obedience to the summons of their bishop for a year. Ratherius remonstrated vehemently against the assumption of Nanno that the priests were his vassals, subject to his jurisdiction, and entitled to protection, and he lost no time in invoking the power of Otho, in a letter to Ambrose, the Imperial Chancellor.² The clergy were too powerful; the imperial court decided against the bishop, and before the end of the year Ratherius was forced to retire from the unequal contest and to take refuge in the peaceful abbey of Lobbes, whence he had been withdrawn a quarter of a century before to fill the see of Verona. Three times had he thus been driven from that city, and an intermediate episcopate of Liège, with which one of his

¹ Ratherii *Discordia*, c. 1, 6.

² Ratherii *Epist.* XI., XII.—His letter to the Empress Adelaide, announcing his willingness to retire from the contest, and to seek the congenial shades of a monastery, is most uncourtly. (*Epist.* XIII.)

periods of exile was gratified, had been terminated in the same abrupt manner by the unruly clergy, unable to endure the severity of his virtue.¹ How great was the revolution, to the unavailing repression of which he sacrificed his life, is shown by his declaration, two years before, that ecclesiastics differed from laymen only in shaving and the tonsure, in some slight fashioning of their garments, and in the careless performance of the Church ritual. The progress of sacerdotal marriage during the preceding quarter of a century is shown by a similar comparison drawn by RATHERIUS some thirty years before, in which matrimony is included among the few points of difference, along with shaving and the tonsure.²

That the Veronese clergy were not alone in obtaining from the secular potentates protection against these efforts on the part of reforming bishops, is evident from the lamentations of Atto of Vercelli. That estimable prelate deplores the blindness of those who, when paternally warned to mend their evil ways, refuse submission, and seek protection from the nobles. If we may believe him, however, they gained but little from this course, for their criminal lives placed them at the mercy of the secular officials, whose threats to seize their wives and children could only be averted by continual presents. Thus they not only plundered the property of their churches, but forfeited the respect and esteem of their flocks; all reverence for them was thereby destroyed, and, living in perpetual dread of the punishment due to their

¹ Ruotgeri Vit. S. Brunonis, c. 38.—RATHERIUS consoled himself epigrammatically by condensing his misfortunes in the Leonine verse—"Veronæ præsul, sed ter RATHERIUS exsul."

² De Contempt. Canon. P. II. c. 2.—Præloquiorum Lib. v. c. 18.

The existing confusion is well exemplified by another remark—"Expertus sum talem qui ante ordinationem adulterium perpetravit, postea quasi continenter vixit; alterum qui post ordinationem uxorem duxit; et iste illum, ille istum carpebat."—De Contempt. Canon. P. I. c. 11.

excesses, in place of commanding obedience, they were exposed to constant oppression and petty tyranny.¹

When prelates so sincere and so earnest as Ratherius and Atto were able to accomplish so little, it is easy to understand what must have been the condition of the dioceses entrusted to the great mass of bishops, who were rather feudal nobles than Christian prelates. St. Wolfgang of Ratisbon might issue thousands of exhortations to his clergy, inculcating chastity as the one indispensable virtue, and might laboriously reform his monasteries, in which monks and nuns led a life almost openly secular;² but he was well-nigh powerless for good compared with the potentiality of evil conveyed by the example of such a bishop as Segenfrid of Le Mans, who, during an episcopate which lasted for thirty-three years, took to himself a wife named Hildeberga, and who stripped the Church for the benefit of his son Alberic, the sole survivor of a numerous progeny by her whom he caused to be revered as his *Episcopissa*:³ or of Archembald, Archbishop of Sens, who, taking a fancy to the Abbey of St. Peter, drove out the monks and established a harem of concu-

¹ Atton. Vercell. Epist. 9. In another epistle (No. 10) Atto congratulates himself on the reform of some of his clergy, and threatens the contumacious with degradation.

² Othloni Vit. S. Wolfkangi, c. 15, 16, 17, 23.

³ "Ad cumulum damnationis suæ, accepit mulierem, nomine Hildeburgam, in senectute, quæ, ingresso illo ad se, concepit et peperit filios et filias, &c." The chronicler makes the end of this aged sinner an example of poetical justice such as may frequently be found in the monkish annals of those times—"Qui dum esset flebotomatus, nocte insecuta dormivit cum Episcopissa; qua de re vulnus cœpit intumescere, et dolor usque ad interiora cordis devenire." Finding his end approaching, he assumed the monastic habit and took the vows, after which he immediately expired.—Act. Pontif. Cenoman. c. 29 (Dom Bouquet, X. 384-5).

Fulbert of Chartres has left us a lively sketch of the military bishops of the period.—"Tyrannos potius appellabo, qui bellicis occupati negotiis, multo stipatiatus milite, solidarios pretio conducunt, ut nullos sæculi reges aut principes noverim adeo instructos bellorum legibus, totam armorum disciplinam in procinctu militiæ servare, digerere turmas, ordines componere, ad turbandam ecclesiæ pacem, et Christianorum, licet hostium, sanguinem, effundendum."—Fulbert. Carnot. Epist. 112.

bines in the refectory, and installed his hounds and hawks in the cloister.¹ Guarino of Modena might hope to stem the tide of license by refusing preferment to all who would not agree to hold their benefices on a sort of feudal tenure of chastity;² but he had much less influence on his age than such a man as Alberic of Marsico, whose story is related as a warning by Peter Damiani. He was married (for, in the language of Damiani, "*obscæna meretricula*" may safely be translated a wife), and had a son to whom he transferred his bishopric, as though it had been an hereditary fief. Growing tired of private life, however, he aspired to the abbacy of Monte Cassino. That humble foundation of St. Benedict had become a formidable military power, of which its neighbours the Capuans stood in constant dread. Alberic leagued with them, and a plot was laid by which the reigning abbot's eyes were to be plucked out and Alberic placed in possession, for which service he agreed to pay a heavy sum, one half in advance, and the rest when the abbot's eyes should be delivered to him. The deed was accomplished, but while the envoys were bearing to Alberic the bloody tokens of success, they were met by tidings of his death, and on comparing notes they found that he had expired at the very moment of the perpetration of the atrocious crime.³

So St. Abbo of Fleury might exhaust his eloquence in inculcating the beauty and holiness of immaculate purity, and might pile authority on authority to demonstrate the punishments which, in this world and the next, attended on those who disobeyed the rule;⁴ yet when he en-

¹ Chron. S. Petri Vivi (D'Achery Spicileg. II. 470).

² This singular oath has been published by Muratori (*Antiq. Ital. Diss.* xx.).—"*Ego Andrea presbiter promitto coram Deo et omnibus sanctis, et tibi Guarino episcopo, quod carnalem commistionem non faciam; et si fecero, et onoris mei et beneficio ecclesiæ perdam.*"

³ S. Petri Damiani Epist. Lib. iv. Epist. 8.—Leo Marsicanus (*Chron. Cassinens.* Lib. II. c. 16) asserts that in his youth he himself had seen and conversed with a priest who had been one of the eye-bearers.

⁴ Abbon. Floriac. Epist. 14.

deavoured, in the monastery of La Réole, a dependency on his own great abbey of Fleury, to put his precepts into practice, the recalcitrant monks flew to arms and murdered him in the most brutal manner, not even sparing the faithful Adalard, who was reverently supporting the head of his beloved and dying master.¹ Damiani might well exclaim, when bewailing the unfortunate fate of abbots, on whom was thrown the responsibility of the morals of their communities—

Phinees si imitatur,
Fugit vel expellitur ;
Si Eli, tunc irridetur
Atque parvipenditur ;
Odiosus est, si fervens,
Et vilis, si tepidus.²

How little disposed were the ecclesiastical authorities in general to sustain the efforts of puritans like St. Abbo was clearly shown in the Council of St. Denis, convened in 995 for the purpose of restoring the neglected discipline of the Church, when, passing over the object of its assembling, the reverend fathers devoted their whole attention to the more practically interesting question of tithes.³

All prelates, however, were not either feudal chiefs or ascetic puritans. Some, who were pious and virtuous, had so far become infected with the prevailing laxity that they regarded the stricter canons as obsolete, and offered no opposition to the domestic aspirations of their clergy.

¹ Although Aimoin, who was an eye-witness, does not specially mention the cause that excited the monks to ungovernable fury, yet a casual allusion shows that women were responsible for it.—“Cæterum, tantæ cladis compilatores certissime agnoscentes beatum obiisse Abbonem, certatim cuncti in fugam vertuntur, ita ut, terris reddito die, ne mulieres quidam in universis forensibus ipsius villæ invenirentur domibus”—(Abbon. Floriac. Vit. c. 20)—and the day after his death “una ex his mulieribus quæ clamore suo seditionem concitaverant” became suddenly mad, and was struck with incurable leprosy—(Aimoin. Mirac. S. Abbonis, c. 2).

² Damian. Carm. ccxxi.

³ Aimoin. Vit. S. Abbonis, c. 9.

Thus Constantine, Abbot of the great house of St. Symphorian of Metz, in his life of Adalbero II., who was Bishop of Metz from 984 to 1005, actually praises him for his liberality in not refusing ordination to the sons of priests, and attributes discreditable motives to those bishops who insisted on the observance of the canons prohibiting all such promotions.¹ As Constantine was a monk and a disciple of Adalbero, the tone which he adopts shows that the higher prelates and the regular clergy were beginning to recognise sacerdotal marriage as a necessity of the age. This view is strengthened by the fact that no effort to reform an abuse so universal was made at the great Synod of Dortmund, held in 1005 for the special purpose of restoring the discipline of the Church.²

How completely, indeed, marriage came to be regarded as a matter of course is manifest when, in 1019, an assembly of German bishops, with the Emperor St. Henry at their head, gravely deliberated over the knotty question whether, when a noble permitted his serf to enter into holy orders, and the serf, presuming upon his new-born dignities and the wealth of his benefices, married a free woman and endeavoured to withhold his children from the servitude which he still owed to his master, such infraction of his master's rights could be permitted out of respect to his sacerdotal character. Long and vehement was the argument among the learned prelates, until finally St. Henry decided the point authoritatively by pronouncing in favour of the servitude of the children.³

¹ *Episcopi sui temporis aliqui fastu superbiæ, aliqui simplicitate cordis, filios secularium sacerdotum ad sacros ordines admittere dedignabantur, nec ad clericatum eos recipere volentes; hic vero beatus, neminem despiciens, neminem spernens, passim cunctos recipiebat.*—Constant. S. Symphor. Vit. Adalberon. II. c. 24.

² Dithmar. Merseberg. Lib. VI. c. 24.

³ S. Heinrici Sentent. de Conjug. Cleric. (Patrologiæ T. 140, p. 231).

But perhaps the most instructive illustration of the character and temper of the age may be found in the three prelates who for more than a century filled the rich and powerful archiepiscopal see of Rouen. Hugh, whose episcopate lasted from 942 to 989, was nominated at a period when William Longsword, Duke of Normandy, was contemplating retirement from the world to shroud his almost regal dignity under the cowl of a monk; yet what little is known of his archbishop is that, though he was a monk in habit, he was an habitual violator of the laws of God¹—in short, we may presume, a man well suited to the wild, half-pagan times which witnessed the assassination of Duke William and the minority of Richard the Fearless. On his death, in 989, Duke Richard, whose piety was incontestably proved by the liberality of his monastic foundations and by his zeal for the purity of his monkish protégés,² filled the vacant see with his son Robert, who held the position until 1037. Robert was publicly and openly married, and by his wife Herleva he had three sons, Richard, Rodolf, and William, to whom he distributed his vast possessions. Ordericus, the conscientious cenobite of the twelfth century, looks, in truth, somewhat askance at this disregard of the rules accepted in his own time,³ yet no blame seems to have attached to Robert in the estimation

¹ A nullo scriptorum qui de illo sive de episcopo ejus locuti sunt, laudatus est. Palam memorant quod habitu non opere monachus fuerit.

Successit Hugo, legis Domini violator
Clara stirpe satus, sed Christi lumine cassus.

—Order. Vital. Lib. v. 10, § 41.

² About the year 990, for instance, we find Duke Richard reforming the celebrated Abbey of Fécamp and replacing with Benedictines the former occupants—canons whose secular mode of life outraged his pious sensibilities—"contigit Fiscannenses canonicos aliorum canonicorum mores imitari, latas perditionis vias ingredi, et rerum temporalium luxus et desidias voluptuose sectari."—Anon. Fiscannens. c. 17.

³ Nam conjugem nomine Herlevam, ut comes, habuit, ex qua tres filios, Richardum, Radulfum et Guillelmum genuit; quibus Ebroicensem comitatum et

of his contemporaries. The family chronicler characterises him as “Robert bons clers, honestes hom,” and assures us that he was highly esteemed as a wise and learned prelate

Li secunz fu genz e aperz
 Et si fu apelez Roberz.
 Clere en firent, mult aprist bien,
 Si fi sage sor tote rien ;
 De Roem out l’arcevesquié
 Honoré fu mult e preisié.¹

His successor, Mauger, son of Duke Richard II., and archbishop from 1037 to 1054, was worthy of his predecessors. Abandoned to worldly and carnal pleasures, his *legitimate* son Michael was a distinguished knight, and half a century later stood high in the favour of Henry I. of England, in whose court he was personally known to the historian.² The times were changing, however, and Mauger felt the full effects of reformatory zeal, for he was deposed in 1054; the see was bestowed on St. Maurilio, a Norman, who as abbot of Santa Maria in Florence had been driven out and nearly poisoned to death by his monks on account of the severity of his rule, and the Norman clergy, as we shall see hereafter, experienced their share of suffering in the mutation of discipline.

Notwithstanding this all-pervading laxity, the canons of the Church remained unaltered, and their full force

alios honores amplissimos secundum jus sæculi distribuit.—Orderic. Vital. Lib. v. c. 10, § 42.

So in the *Normanniæ Nova Chronica*, published by Chéruel in 1850, “Iste Robertus fuit uxoratus, et ex Herleva conjuge sua tres filios habuit, Richardum, Radulfum et Willelmum.”

¹ Bénéoit, *Chronique des Ducs de Normandie*, v. 32427, 24912. We may fairly conclude from these expressions that Robert was educated for the priesthood.

² *Voluptatibus carnis mundanisque curis indecenter inhæsit, filiumque nomine Michaellem probum militem et legitimum genuit, quem in Anglia jam senem rex Henricus honorat et diligit.*—Orderic. Vital. Lib. v. c. 10, § 43.

was theoretically admitted. Hopeless efforts, moreover, were occasionally made to re-establish them, as in the Council of Anse in 990, which reminded the clergy that intercourse with wives after ordination was punishable with forfeiture of benefice and deprivation of priestly functions;¹ and in that of Poitiers about the year 1000, which prohibited concubines under pain of degradation.² In a similar spirit, a Penitential of the period recapitulates the severe punishments of a former age, involving degradation and fearfully long terms of penance.³ All this, however, was practically a dead letter. The person who best represents the active intelligence of the age was Gerbert of Aurillac, the most enlightened man of his time, who, after occupying the archiepiscopal seats of Rheims and Ravenna, finally became pope under the name of Sylvester II. The lightness with which he treats the subject of celibacy is therefore fairly a measure of the views entertained by the ruling spirits of the Church, beyond the narrow bounds of cloistered asceticism. Gerbert, describing in a sermon the requisites of the episcopal and sacerdotal offices, barely refers to the "unius uxoris vir," which he seems to regard in an allegorical rather than in a literal sense; he scarcely alludes to chastity, while he dilates with much energy on simony, which he truly characterises as the almost universal vice of his contemporaries.⁴ So when, in 997, he

¹ Concil. Ansan. ann. 990 c. 5.

² Concil. Pictaviens. c. ann. 1000 c. 3.

³ Si clericus superioris gradus, qui uxorem habuit, et post confessionem vel honorem clericatus iterum eam cognoverit, sciat sibi adulterium commisisse, sicut superiore sententia unusquisque juxta ordinem suo poeniteat [i.e. diaconus et monachi VII. (annos) III. ex his pane et aqua. Presbyter X. Episcopus XII., v. ex his pane et aqua.] . . . Si quis clericus aut monachus postquam se devoverit ad sæcularem habitum iterum reversus fuerit aut uxorem duxerit, X. annos poeniteat, III. ex his in pane et aqua, nunquam postea in conjugium copuletur.—Judicium Poenitentis ex Sacrament. Rhenaug.

Cf. Penitent. Pseudo-Theodori (Wasserschleben, Bussordnungen, p. 578). This is of the ninth century, and reflects a severer standard, for it enacts "Presbyter vel diaconus, si uxorem extraneam duxerit, in conscientia populi deponatur."

⁴ Gerberti Sermo de Informat. Episcoporum.

convened the Council of Ravenna to regulate the discipline of his Church, he paid no attention whatever to incontinence, while strenuously endeavouring to root out simony.¹ At an earlier period, while Abbot of Bobbio, in an epistle to his patron, the Emperor Otho II., refuting various calumnies of his enemies, he alludes to a report of his having a wife and children in terms which show how little importance he attached to the accusation.²

Such, at the opening of the eleventh century, was the condition of the Church as regards ascetic celibacy. Though the ancient canons were still theoretically in force, they were practically obsolete everywhere. Legitimate marriage or promiscuous profligacy was almost universal, in some places unconcealed, in others covered with a thin veil of hypocrisy, according as the temper of the ruling prelate might be indulgent or severe. So far, therefore, Latin Christianity had gained but little in its struggle of six centuries with human nature. Whether the next eight hundred years will show a more favourable result remains for us to develop.

Before proceeding, however, to discuss the events of the succeeding century, it will be well to pass a rapid glance at a portion of Christendom, the isolation of which has thus far precluded it from receiving attention.

¹ Gerberti Opp. p. 197 sqq. (Ed. Migne).

² "Taceo de me quem novo locutionis genere equum emissarium susurrant, uxorem et filios habentem, propter partem familiæ meæ de Francia recollectam."—Gerberti Epist. Sect. I. No. XI.—Gerbert's reputation for sanctity is not such as to render scandalous the suspicion that the family thus gathered around him might afford legitimate occasion for gossip, notwithstanding his abbacy and the fact that he had been bred in a convent.

CHAPTER XI

SAXON ENGLAND

WHATEVER of virtue or purity may have distinguished the Church of Britain under Roman domination was speedily extinguished in the confusion of the Saxon occupation. Gildas, who flourished in the first half of the sixth century, describes the clergy of his time as utterly corrupt.¹ He apparently would have been satisfied if the bishops had followed the apostolic precept and contented themselves with being husbands of one wife; and he complains that instead of bringing up their children in chastity, the latter were corrupted by the evil example of their parents.² Under Saxon rule, Christianity was probably well-nigh trampled out, except in the remoter mountain districts, to be subsequently restored in its sacerdotal form under the direct auspices of Rome.

Meanwhile, the British Isles were the theatre of another and independent religious movement. Palladius, who assumed the title of Patricius, was sent to Ireland as bishop, in 432, by Cœlestin I.³ It is not our province to determine whether he is the traditional St. Patrick who Christianised Ireland, or whether a supposititious saint was invented in the seventh century, bearing the

¹ Ita ut clerici (quod non absque dolore cordis fateor) impudici, bilingues, ebrii, turpis lucri cupidi, habentes fidem, et ut verius dicam, infidelitatem, in conscientia impura, non probati in bona, sed in malo opere præciti ministrantes, et innumera crimina habentes, sacro ministerio adsciscantur.—Gildæ de Excid. Britan. Pt. III. cap. 23—Cf. cap. 1, 2, 3.

² “*Unius uxoris virum.*” Quid ita apud nos quoque contemnitur, quasi non audiretur, vel idem dicere et virum uxorum? . . . Sed quid erit, ubi nec pater nec filius mali genitoris exemplo pravatus conspicitur castus?—Gildæ loc. cit.

³ Bedæ Hist. Eccles., I. 13.

same name, as a factor in the struggle between the Romanising party and the supporters of the native Church. It suffices for us to have seen (p. 78) that celibacy was not one of the rules enforced in the infant Irish Church; but this was of comparatively little moment, for that Church was almost exclusively monastic in its character, and preserved the strictest views as to the observance of the vows by those who had once taken them.¹ That the principles thus established were long preserved is evident from an ancient Penitential, presumably Hibernian, which breathes the most vigorous asceticism. A single passing emotion of lust for a woman, not expressed, is visited with seven days' penance, on a measured amount of bread and water. Innocent familiarity with a woman requires forty days' penance, but if a kiss passes between them it is lengthened to a year. Fornication forfeits the tonsure, but if it is not known it can be redeemed with three years of penance, after which the functions are restored. If a child is born, the penalty is nine years of penance, of which seven must be passed in exile, with subsequent resumption of functions—being the same as for homicide.² As no punishment is provided for clerical marriage, it was evidently not regarded as supposable.

The missionary career by which the Irish Church repaid the debt that it owed to Christianity is well known, and the form of faith which it spread was almost exclusively monastic. Luanus, one of the monks of Benchor, is said to have founded no less than a

¹ Synod. S. Patricii, c. 9, 17 (Haddan & Stubbs, II. 328-9)—Synod. II. S. Patricii, c. 17, 21 (Ibid. 335-6).

² Pœnitentiale Vinniai, §§ 10-16 (Wasserschleben, Bussordnungen, pp. 110-11).

In these long courses of penance three months were to be spent in solitary confinement, with bread and water at night; then eighteen months in fasting on bread and water; then bread and water three days in the week for five years and three months; then bread and water on Fridays for the remaining three years.—Gratian. Dist. LXXXII. c. 5.

hundred monasteries ;¹ and when Columba established the Christian religion in Scotland, he carried with him this tendency to asceticism and inculcated it among his Pictish neophytes. His Rule enjoins the most absolute purity of mind as well as body ;² and that his teachings were long obeyed is evident when we find that, a hundred and fifty years later, his disciples are praised for the chastity and zeal of their self-denying lives by the Venerable Bede, who was fully alive to the importance of the rule, and who would have wasted no such admiration on them had they lived in open disregard of it.³ Equally convincing is the fact that Scotland and the Islands were claimed to be under the supremacy of the see of York, and that during the long controversy requisite to break down their schismatic notions respecting the date of Easter and the shape of the tonsure, not a word was said that can lead to the supposition that they held any unorthodox views on the far more important subject of sacerdotal purity.⁴

When, a hundred and fifty years after the Anglo-Saxon invasion, Gregory the Great undertook the conversion of the islanders, the missionaries whom he despatched under Augustine of course carried with them the views and ideas which then held undisputed sway in Rome.

¹ Bernardi Vit. S. Malachie, cap. vi.

² S. Columban Reg. cap. vi.

³ Reliquit (Columbanus) successores magna continentia ac divino amore regularique institutione insignes . . . pietatis et castitatis opera diligenter observantes (Bede Hist. Eccles. Lib. III. c. 4, cf. also c. 26). Bede's orthodoxy on the subject is unquestionable: "Sacerdotibus ut semper altari queant assistere, semper ab uxoribus continendum, semper castitas observanda præcipitur" (In Lucæ Evang. Exposit. Lib. I. cap. 1).—"Quanta sunt maledictione digni qui prohibent nubere et dispositionem cælestis decreti quasi a diabolo repertam condemnant? . . . sed magis honoranda, majore est digna benedictione virginitas." (Hexæmeron. Lib. I. sub. tit. Benedixitque illis.) See also De Tabernac. Lib. III. c. 9, already referred to (p. 64).

⁴ See, for instance, the proceedings of the Synod of Whitby in 664, where the differences between the Scottish and Roman observances were fully discussed (Spelman. Concil. I. 145). So when, in 633, Honorius I. addressed the Scottish clergy, reproving their false computation of Easter and their Pelagianism, he made no allusion to any want of clerical purity (Bede Hist. Eccles. Lib. II. c. 19).

Apparently, however, asceticism found little favour at first with the new converts, rendering it difficult for Augustine to obtain sufficient co-labourers among his disciples, for he applied to Gregory to learn whether he might allow those who could not restrain their passions to marry and yet remain in the ministry. To this Gregory replied evasively, stating, what Augustine already knew, that the lower grades might marry, but making no reference whatever to the higher orders.¹ He apparently did not wish to assume the responsibility of relaxing the rule, while willing perhaps to connive at its suspension in order to encourage the infant Anglican Church. If so, the indulgence was but temporary.

The attempt has been made to prove that marriage was permitted in the early Saxon Church, and support for this supposition has been sought from a clause in the Dooms of King Ina, of which the date is about the year 700, fixing the wer-gild of the son of a bishop. But the rubric of the law shows that it refers rather to a godson;² and even if it were not so, we have already seen how often in France, at the same period, the episcopal office was bestowed on eminent or influential laymen, who were obliged on its acceptance to part with their wives.³

These speculations are manifestly groundless. The Penitential which goes by the name of the celebrated Theodore, who was Archbishop of Canterbury from 668 to 690, forbids the marriage of the clergy under pain of deposition, and all intercourse with such wives was

¹ "Opto enim doceri an clerici continere non valentes, possint contrahere; et si contraxerint, an debeant ad sæculum redire"—to which Gregory responds with a long exhortation as to the duties of the "clerici extra sacros ordines constituti"—Gregor. I. Regist. Lib. XI. Epist. lxiv. Respons. 2.

² Si episcopi filius sit, sit dimidium hoc (Leg. Inæ, c. LXXVI.). The rubric of the law is "De occidente filiolum vel patrinum alienjus" (Thorpe, Ancient Laws of England, II. 472).

³ Denique promulgatur decretum . . . de abdicandis sacerdotum uxoribus.—Spelman. Concil. I. 216.

punished by life-long penance as laymen; not only were digami ineligible to ordination, but also even those who had kept concubines; the bishop, priest, or deacon, who was guilty of fornication was degraded, and all who had been baptized by him were required to be re-baptized—an expression of reprobation which it would be hard to parallel elsewhere in the history of the Church.¹ The Christianity introduced into Britain was purely Roman, and, although these rules were impossible of rigid enforcement, it is not likely that they were wholly inoperative, in a Church sufficiently enlightened to produce the learning and piety of men like Bede and St. Aldhelm; where the admiration of virginity was as great as that which finds utterance in the writings of these fathers,² and the principles of asceticism were so influential as to lead a powerful monarch like Ina to retire with his queen, Ethelberga, from the throne which he had gloriously filled, to the holy restrictions of a monastic life.

Ecgberht, who was Archbishop of York from 732 to 766, is almost equally decisive in his condemnation of priestly irregularities, though he returned to the received doctrine of the Church that baptism could not be repeated.³ It is also probable that even the Britons, who derived their Christianity from the older and purer sources

¹ Theodori Pœnitent. I. ix. 1, 4, 5, 6, 10; II. ii. 12 (Wasserschleben, op. cit. pp. 194, 203).

² See, for instance, St. Aldhelm's rhapsodies, "De laudibus virginitatis" and "De laudibus virginum." The orthodoxy of Bede on this question has already been alluded to.

According to the legend, St. Aldhelm tried his virtue by the same crucial experiments as those resorted to by some of the ardent devotees of the third century, concealing his motive in order that his humility might enjoy the benefit of undeserved reprobation. "Sancti Aldelmi Malmesburiensis, qui inter duas puellas, unam ab uno latere, alteram ab altero, singulis noctibus ut ab hominibus diffamaretur, a Deo vero cui nota fuerat conscientia ipsius et continentia copiosius in futurum remuneraretur, jacuisse describitur."—Girald. Cambrens. Gemm. Eccles. Dist. II. cap. xv.

³ Ecgberti Pœnitent. I. II. 3; IV. 2, 7, 8; V. 1-22.—Ejusd. Dialog. v. (Haddan & Stubbs, III. 406, 419-23).

of the Primitive Church, preserved the rule with equal reverence. At the request of a national council, St. Aldhelm addressed an epistle to the Welsh king, Geruntius, to induce him to reform his Church so as to bring it within the pale of Catholic unity. To accomplish this, he argues at length upon the points of difference, discussing the various errors of faith and discipline, such as the shape of the tonsure, the date of Easter, &c., but he is silent with regard to marriage or concubinage.¹ Had the Welsh Church been schismatic in this respect, so ardent a celibatarian as Aldhelm would certainly not have omitted all reference to a subject of so much interest to him. The inference is therefore justifiable that no difference of this nature existed.

We may fairly conclude that the discipline of the Church in these matters was reasonably well maintained by the Saxon clergy, with the exception of the monasteries, the morals of which institutions appear to have been deplorably and incurably loose. About the middle of the seventh century John IV. reproves the laxity of the Saxon monasticism, under which the holy virgins did not hesitate to marry.² In 734 we find Bede, in an epistle to Ecgberht of York, advising him to create suffragan bishoprics and to endow them from the monastic foundations, of which there were a countless number totally neglectful of all monastic discipline, whose reformation could apparently be accomplished in no other way.³ St. Boniface, whose zeal on the subject has already been sufficiently made manifest, about the year 746 paused in his reformation of the French priesthood to urge upon Cuthbert, Archbishop of Canterbury, the necessity of repressing the vices of the Saxon ecclesiastics. He dwells at considerable length upon their various crimes and mis-

¹ Epist. ad Geruntium.—Aldhelmi Opp. p. 83 (Ed. Oxon. 1844).

² Johan. PP. IV. Epist. iii.

³ Bedæ Epist. II.

demeanours—drunkenness, unclerical garments, neglect of their sacred functions, &c.—but he does not accuse them of unchastity, which he could not well have avoided doing had there been colourable grounds for such a charge. In fact, the only allusion connected with the question in his epistle is a request that some restrictions should be laid upon the permissions granted to women and nuns for pilgrimage to Rome, on account of the attendant dangers to their virtue; in illustration of which he states the lamentable fact that scarcely a city in Lombardy, France, or the Rhinelands but had Saxon courtesans derived from this source, to the shame and scandal of the whole Church.¹

Pope Zachary seconded these representations, and in 747 Cuthbert, yielding to the impulsion, held the celebrated Council of Clovesho, which adopted thirty canons on discipline, to remedy the disorders enumerated by Boniface. Among these, the only ones directed against unchastity relate solely to the nunneries, which were represented as being in a condition of gross immorality.² The council does not spare the vices of the secular clergy, and its silence with respect to their purity fairly permits the inference that there was not much to correct with regard to it, for had licentiousness been so prevalent that Cuthbert had feared to denounce it, or had sacerdotal marriage

¹ Bonifacii Epist. 105.

² Can. 20 directs greater strictness with regard to visitors, “unde non sint sanctimonialium domicilia turpium confabulationum, commensationum ebrietatum, luxuriantiumque cubilia.” Can. 28 orders that nuns after taking the veil shall not wear lay garments; and can. 29 that clerks, monks, and nuns shall not live with the laity. (Spelman. Concil. I. 250-4.—Haddan & Stubbs, III. 369, 374.)

This demoralisation of the nunneries is not to be wondered at when Boniface, in reproving Ethelbald, King of Mercia, for his evil courses, could say, “Et adhuc, quod pejus est, qui nobis narrant adjiciunt: quod hoc scelus maxime cum sanctis monialibus et sacratris Deo virginibus per monasteria commissum sit.” This sacrilegious licentiousness, indeed, would seem almost to have been habitual with the Anglo-Saxon reguli, for Boniface instances the fate of Ethelbald’s predecessor, Ceolred, and of Orsed of Northumbria, who had both come to an untimely end in consequence of indulgence in similar evil courses.—Bonifacii Epist. 19.

been passed over as lawful, the zeal of St. Boniface would have led to an explosion, and Zachary would not have sanctioned the proceedings by his approval.

The same argument is applicable to the Council of Chelsea, held in 787 by the legates of Adrian I., under the presidency of Gregory, Bishop of Ostia. The vices and shortcomings of the Anglican Church were there sharply reproved, but no allusion was made to any unchastity prevailing among the priesthood, with the exception, as before, of nuns, on whom we may infer that previous reformatory efforts had been wasted;¹ and in an epistle from Alcuin to Ethelred, King of Northumbria, near the close of the century there is the same reference to nuns, without special condemnation of the other classes of the clergy.² That this reticence did not arise from any license granted for marriage is conclusively shown by the interpolation of the word *laicus* in the text I. Cor. VII. 2, which is quoted among the canons adopted.³ To the same effect are the canons of the Council of Chelsea, in 816, in which the only allusion to such matters is a provision to prevent the election of unfit persons to abbacies, and to punish monks and nuns who secularise themselves.⁴

On the other hand, it is true that about this time St. Swithun, after obtaining orders, was openly married; but his biographer states that he had a special dispensation from Leo III., and that he consented to it because, on the death of his parents, he was the sole representative of his family.⁵ As Swithun was tutor to Ethelwulf, son of King Ecgberht, the papal condescension is by no means impossible.

¹ Concil. Celchyth. can. 15, 16 (Haddan & Stubbs, III. 455-6).

² Haddan & Stubbs, III. 493.

³ Propter fornicationem fugiendam unusquisque *laicus* suam uxorem legitimam habeat.—Concil. Celchyth. can. 16.

⁴ Concil. Celchyth. ann. 816 can. 4, 8 (Haddan & Stubbs, III. 580-3).

⁵ Goscelini Vit. S. Swithuni, c. 1, 2.

Such was the condition of the Anglo-Saxon Church at this period. During the century which follows, the materials for tracing the vicissitudes of the question before us are of the scantiest description. The occasional councils which were held have left but meagre records of their deliberations, with few or no references to the subject of celibacy. It is probable, however, that a rapid deterioration in the strictness of discipline occurred, for even the power of the great Bretwalda Æcgberht was unequal to the task of repressing effectually the first invasions of the Northmen, and under his feebler successors they grew more and more destructive, until they culminated in the anarchy which gave occasion to the romantic adventures of Alfred.

It is to this period of darkness that we must attribute the introduction of sacerdotal marriage, which became so firmly established, and was finally so much a matter of course, that it attracted no special attention, until the efforts made for its abrogation late in the succeeding century. When Alfred undertook to restore order in his recovered kingdom, the body of the laws which he compiled contains no allusion to celibacy, except as regards the chastity of nuns. The same may be said of the Constitutions of Odo, Archbishop of Canterbury, to which the date of 943 is attributed, although they contain instructions as to the conduct of bishops, priests, and clerks¹—whence we may infer that the marriage even of consecrated virgins was not uncommon, and that it was the only infraction of the rule which aroused the opposition of the hierarchy. Simple immorality called forth an occasional enactment, as in the laws of Edward and Guthrun about the year 906, and in those of Edmund I. in 944,² yet even to this but little attention seems to have been

¹ Leg. Aluredi, c. 8, 18.—Constit. Odon. Cantuar. c. 7.

² Leg. Edwardi et Guthrun. c. 3.—Leg. Eadmund. Eccles. c. 1.

attracted, until St. Dunstan undertook a reformation which was sorely needed.

St. Dunstan himself, although regularly bred to the Church, with the most brilliant prospects both from his distinguished abilities and his powerful kindred, betrothed himself in marriage after receiving the minor orders. His uncle, St. Elphege, Bishop of Winchester—apparently a Churchman of the stricter school—vehemently opposed the union, but Dunstan was immovable in his determination. Elphege, finding his worldly wisdom set at nought, appealed to the assistance of Heaven. His prayer was answered, and Dunstan was attacked with a mysterious and loathsome malady, under which his iron resolution gave way. He sought Elphege, took the monastic vow (the only inseparable bar to matrimony), and was ordained a priest.¹ This stern experience might have taught him charity for the weakness of nature less unbending than his own, but his temperament was not one to pause half-way. If, too, religious conviction urged him to the task of restoring the forgotten discipline of the Church, worldly ambition might reasonably claim its share in his motives. He could not but feel that his authority would be vastly enhanced by rendering the great ecclesiastical body dependent entirely upon him as the representative of Rome, and by sundering the ties which divided the allegiance due wholly to the Church.

The opportunity to effect a reformation presented itself when the young king, Edgar the Pacific, in 963 violated all the dictates of honour and religion in his adventure with the nun at Wilton. Her resistance

¹ Bridfrit. Vit. S. Dunstan. c. 5, 7.—Bridfrith was a disciple of St. Dunstan, and composed his biography but a few years after the death of his patron. He does not state what was the position of Dunstan at the time of his betrothal; but Osbern, a hundred years later, asserts that he had acquired the lower orders only, and that he received the priesthood and took the monastic vows simultaneously.—Osberni Vit. S. Dunstan. c. 8, 12.

attested her innocence, and the birth of a daughter did not prevent her subsequent canonisation as St. Wilfreda; but Edgar's crime and remorse were only the more heightened. When the terror-stricken king sought pardon and absolution, Dunstan was prepared with his conditions. Seven years of penitence, during which he was to abstain from wearing the crown, was the personal infliction imposed on him, but the most important portion of the sentence was that by which the vices of the king were to be redeemed by the enforced virtues of his subjects. He promised the founding of monasteries and the reformation of the clergy; and his implicit obedience to the demands of his ghostly judge is shown, perhaps, less in the fact that his coronation did not take place until 973, than in the active measures immediately set on foot with respect to the morals of the ecclesiastics.¹

That their morals, indeed, needed reformation is the unanimous testimony of all the chroniclers of the period. Among all the monasteries of England, formerly so noted for their zeal and prosperity, only those of Glastonbury and Abingdon were inhabited by monks.² The rest had fallen into ruin, or were occupied by the secular clergy, with their wives, or worse, and were notorious as places of the most scandalous dissipation and disorder.³ So low was the standard of morality that priests even scrupled not to put away the wives of whom they grew tired, and

¹ Osbern. Vit. S. Dunstan. c. 35.—Florent. Wigorn. ann. 964, 973.—Matt. Westmonast. ann. 963.

² Vit. S. Æthelwoldi c. 14.

³ Si ista solerti scrutinio curassetis, non tam horrenda et abominanda ad aures nostras de clericis pervenissent . . . dicam dolens quo modo diffluant in commestationibus, in ebrietatibus, in cubilibus et impudicitiiis, ut jam domus clericorum putentur prostibula meretricum, conciliabulum histrionum . . . Ad hoc ergo exhauerunt patres nostri thesauros suos? ad hoc fiscus regius, detractis redditibus multis elargitus est? ad hoc ecclesiis Christi agros et possessiones regalis munificentia contulit, ut deliciis clericorum meretrices ornentur? luxuriosæ convivæ præparentur? canes ac aves et talia ludicra comparabentur? Hoc milites clamant, plebs submurmurat, mimi cantant et saltant, et vos negligitis, vos parcitis, vos dissimulatis.—Oratio Edgari ann. 969 (Spelman Concil. I. 477).

to form new connections, of open and public adultery;¹ and so common had this become that a code of ecclesiastical law, probably drawn up about this time, reproves this systematic bigamy, and appears to tacitly authorise marriage as legitimate and honourable.² One author declares that none but paupers could be found willing to bind themselves by monastic vows;³ and another asserts, with every show of reason, that the clergy were not only not superior to the laity in any respect, but were even far worse in the scandals of their daily life.⁴

When King Edgar made his peace with the Church by consenting to the vicarious penitence of the priesthood, three rigid and austere monks were the ardent ministers of the royal determination. Of St. Dunstan, the primate of England, I have already spoken. St. Ethelwold, his pupil, Abbot of Abingdon, was elevated to the see of Winchester, and commenced the movement by expelling the occupants of the monastery there. A few who consented to take monastic vows were allowed to remain, and the remainder were replaced by monks; but even St. Ethelwold's rigour had to bend to the depravity of the age, and he was forced to relax the rigidity of discipline in non-essentials in order to obtain recruits of a better class.⁵ The difficulties he encountered are indicated by the legend which relates that he was poisoned in his wine and carried from table to his couch in excruciating torment, where he lay hopeless till,

¹ Vit. S. Æthelwold. c. 12.

² "Gif preost cwenan forlæte and oðre nime, anaþema sit" (Leg. Presbyt. Northumbriens. c. 35). Spelman's translation of this, "Si presbyter concubinam suam dimiserit et aliam acceperit anathema sit" (Concil. I. 498), is perhaps hardly correct. Cwene can be interpreted in either a good or a bad sense, as a wife or a mistress; and the terms of the law show that the connection was a recognised one, the sin consisting in disregarding it. If the priest's companion were only a concubine, his guilt would not be measurably increased by merely changing his unlawful consort.

³ Chron. de Abbat. Abbendonix (Chron. Abingdon. II. 279).

⁴ Osborni Vit. S. Dunstan. c. 36.

⁵ Chron. de Abbat. Abbendon. *loc. cit.*

reproaching himself with want of faith, he repeated the text—"Et si mortiferum quid biberint, non eis nocebitur," and was cured on the instant.¹ That his canons were quite capable of such an attempt may be assumed from the description given of them in the bull procured by Dunstan from John XIII., authorising their ejection by the king. The pope does not hesitate to stigmatise them as vessels of the devil, hateful to all good Christians on account of their inveterate and ineradicable wickedness.²

The third member of the reforming triumvirate was St. Oswald, Bishop of Worcester, who undertook a similar transformation of the clergy occupying the monastery of St. Mary in his cathedral city. Many promises they made to conform to his wishes, and many times they eluded the performance, till, losing patience with the prolonged procrastination, he one day entered the chapel with a quantity of monkish habits as they were vigorously chanting "Servite Domino in timore," when he made practical application of the text by forcing them to put on the garments and take the vows on the spot, under the alternative of instant expulsion.³

These proceedings met the unqualified approbation of Edgar, who in 964, by his "Charter of Oswalde's Law," confirmed the ejection of the recusants who refused to part with their wives, and transferred all their rights and possessions to the newcomers. In the same document he boasted that he had instituted forty-seven abbeys of monks and nuns, and that he hoped to increase the number to fifty.⁴ The same year a similar summary process was carried out in the convents of Chertsey and Winchester; ⁵ and in 966 Edgar was able to boast of the

¹ Vit. S. Æthelwold. c. 14, 15.

² Johannis PP. XIII. Epist. xxii.

³ Concil. sub Dunstano (Spelman I. 480).

⁴ Ædgari Charta de Oswalde's Law (Spelman I. 433).

⁵ Anglo-Saxon Chron. ann. 964.

numerous religious houses throughout England which he had purified by replacing lascivious clerks with pious monks.¹

These efforts, however, tended only to restore these monastic foundations to their original position, and left the secular clergy untouched, except in so far as a few of them were deprived of the comfortable quarters which they had usurped in the abbeys. This immunity it was no part of Dunstan's plan to permit, and accordingly Edgar issued a series of laws restoring the obsolete ecclesiastical discipline throughout his kingdom. By this code a lapse from virtue on the part of a priest or monk was visited with the same penalty as homicide, with a fast of ten years; for a deacon the period of penitence was seven years; for the lower grades, six years. The monk, priest, or deacon who maintained relations with his wife was subjected to the same punishment; but there is no mention of degradation or deprivation of benefice.²

The struggle was long, and at one time the three reformers seem to have grown wearied with the stubborn resistance which they met, while the zeal of King Edgar grew more fiery as, with the true spirit of the huntsman, he followed up the prey, his ardour increasing as the chase grew more difficult. In 969 he eloquently addressed Dunstan, Ethelwold, and Oswald, blaming their lukewarmness in the good cause, and promising them every support and assistance in removing this opprobrium from the Church.³ Stimulated by these reproaches, Dunstan summoned a council which adopted a canon depriving unchaste priests of their benefices.⁴ Still the conflict continued, and a charter dated in 974, the last year of

¹ Monach. Hydens. Leg. c. 8, 9 (Spelman I. 438).

² Canon. sub Edgario—Mod. imponend. Pœnitent. c. 28, 29 (Thorpe II. 273).

³ Oratio Edgari (Spelman I. 476).

⁴ Spelman I. 479.

Edgar's reign, shows that he persevered to the end with unabated zeal.¹

The contumacious clerks may have been silenced ; they were not subdued, and they but waited their opportunity. It came in 975, with the early death of Edgar and with the dissensions caused by his widow, Elfritha, who endeavoured to deprive of the succession his eldest son, the youthful Edward, fruit of a former marriage. During the confusion, the ejected priests banded together and bribed Elfhære, the powerful Ealdorman of Mercia, together with some other magnates, to espouse their cause. In many abbeys the regulars were expelled and the priests with their wives were reinstated. In East Anglia, however, the nobles took sides with the monks, and, rising in arms, valiantly defended the monasteries. At length, on the accession of Edward, a council was assembled to make final disposition of the question. The married priests were present, and promised amendment ; their noble protectors pleaded earnestly for them ; the boy-king was moved, and was about to pronounce in their favour, when a miracle preserved the purity of the Church. The council was sitting in the refectory of the monastery of Hyde, the headquarters of the ascetic party ; Edward and Dunstan were enthroned separately from the rest, with their backs to a wall on which, between them, hung a small crucifix. At the critical moment, just as the king was yielding, the crucifix spoke, in a low tone inaudible to all save Edward and the primate, " Let not this thing be done "—the mandate was imperative, and the married clergy lost their cause.²

Still the stubborn priests and their patrons held out,

¹ Guillel. Malmesbur. Lib. II. c. 8.

² Florent. Wigorn. ann. 975.—Matt. Westmonast. Lib. III. c. 18.—Chron. Winton. (Spelman I. 490-2).

and another miracle was necessary—this time a more impressive one. A second council was called to discuss the matter, and was held at Calne in 978. During the heat of the argument the floor gave way, carrying with it the whole assembly, except St. Dunstan, who remained triumphantly and miraculously perched upon a joist, while his adversaries lay groaning below, in every variety of mutilation.¹ His triumph, however, was but short. The same year the pious child Edward perished through the intrigues of Elfritha, whose son, Ethelred the Unready, succeeded to the throne. The mixed political and religious character of these events is shown by the canonisation of Edward, who, though yet a child, was regarded as a martyr by the ascetics, whose cause he had espoused.

As Elfritha had evidently sought the alliance of the secular clergy to strengthen her party, her success proved disastrous to the cause of reform. The respite of peace, too, which had blessed the island during the vigorous reigns of Athelstan the Magnificent and Edgar the Pacific, gave place to the ravages invited by the feeble and vacillating policy of Ethelred the Unready; the incursions of the pagan Danes became more and more frequent and terrible; and what little respect had been inculcated for the strictness of discipline was speedily forgotten in the anarchy which ensued.

The efforts of the reformers appear to have extended even to the British churches of Wales, which had followed Saxon example in abandoning celibacy. The *Brut y Tywysogion* relates that about the year 861 the priests were forbidden to marry without dispensation from the pope; but they did not submit, and the disturbances

¹ *Matt. Westmonast. Lib. III. c. 18.* Henry of Huntingdon, however (*Lib. v. ann. 978*), who, as a secular priest and the son of a priest, did not look upon the labours of St. Dunstan with much favour, insinuates that the accident was intended to foreshow that the assembled wisdom and power of England were about to fall similarly from the grace of God.

thus provoked rendered necessary the abandonment of the effort, so that sacerdotal marriage remained unchecked.¹ We shall see hereafter that in the Principality the custom remained in full vigour until the thirteenth century was well advanced.

How thoroughly the work of Dunstan and Edgar was undone in England is sufficiently indicated by the efforts made not long after, with the consent of Ethelred, to introduce some feeble restraints upon the prevailing immorality. About the year 1006 we find the chief monastery of England, Christ Church at Canterbury, in full possession of the secular clergy, whose irregularities were so flagrant that even Ethelred was forced to expel them, and to fill their places with monks.² What was the condition of discipline among the secular priests may be guessed from the reformatory efforts of St. Ælfric, who was Archbishop of Canterbury from 995 to 1006. In his series of canons the first eight are devoted to inculcating the necessity of continence; after quoting the Nicene canon, he feels it to be so much at variance with the habits and customs of the age, that he actually deprecates the surprise of his clergy at hearing a rule so novel and so oppugnant to the received practice, "as though there was no danger in priests living as married men;" he anticipates the arguments which they will bring against him, and refutes them with more gravity than success.³ There is also extant, under the name of St. Ælfric, a pastoral epistle, which is regarded as supposititious by some critics; but its passages on this subject are too similar in spirit to the canons of Ælfric

¹ Haddan & Stubbs I. 286.

² Privileg. Reg. Ethelredi (Spelman I. 504).

³ Ælfrici Canon. c. i.-viii. (Thorpe II. 345). "Quasi periculosum non esset sacerdotem vivere more conjugati. Sed dicetis eum haud posse carere muliebribus servitiis. Respondeo, quoniam pacto vitam transegerunt sancti olim viri absque femina vel uxore," &c. (Spelman I. 573). Spelman's MS. was defective; that in Thorpe is perfect.

to be reasonably rejected. They show how hopeless was the effort to maintain the purity desired by the ecclesiastical authorities, and that entreaties and exhortations were uttered merely from a sense of duty, and with hardly an expectation of commanding attention. "This, to you, priests, will seem grievous, because ye have your misdeeds in custom, so that it seems to yourselves that ye have no sin in so living in female intercourse as laymen; and say that Peter the Apostle had a wife and children. . . . Beloved, we cannot now forcibly compel you to chastity, but we admonish you, nevertheless, that ye observe chastity, so as Christ's ministers ought, in good reputation, to the pleasure of God."¹

That these well-meant homilies effected little in reforming the hearts of so obdurate a generation becomes manifest by the proceedings of the Council of Enham, held by King Ethelred in 1009. The priests are there entreated, by the obedience which they owe to God, to observe the chastity which they know to be due. Yet so great was the laxity prevailing that some are stated to have two or more wives, and many to be in the habit of changing their spouses at pleasure, in violation of all Christian law. The council was apparently, however, powerless to repress these scandals by an adequate punishment, and contented itself with promising to those who lived chastely the privileges and legal status of nobles, while the vicious were vaguely threatened with the loss of the grace of God and man.²

¹ Ælfric's Pastoral Epistle, c. 32, 33 (Thorpe II. 377).

² Omnes ministros Dei, præsertim sacerdotes, obsecramus et docemus, ut Deo obedientes, castitatem colant, et contra iram Domini se hoc modo muniant et tueantur. Certius enim norint quod non habeant debite ob aliquam coitus causam uxoris consortium. In more tamen est, ut quidam duas, quidam plures habeat; et nonnullus quamvis eam dimiserit quam nuper habuit, aliam tamen, ipsa vivente, accipit, quod nulla Christianorum lege est permissum. Dimittens autem et castitatem recolens, e caelo assequetur misericordiam, in mundo etiam venerationem, adeo ut juriis et tributis habeatur Thaini dignus cum in vita tum in funere. Qui

The injunctions of the council as regards the regular clergy, though not particularly specific in their nature, show that even the monks had not responded to the benefits conferred upon them by Edgar the Pacific, nor fulfilled the expectations of the pious Dunstan. An expression employed, indeed, leads the learned Spelman to suggest that there possibly were two orders of monks, the one married and the other unmarried; but this is probably without foundation.¹

Such was the condition of the Church when the increasing assaults of the Northman finally culminated in overthrowing the house of Cerdic, and placing the hated Dane upon the throne of England. Cnut's long and prosperous reign, and his earnest veneration for the Church, as shown by his pilgrimage to Rome, may perhaps have succeeded in removing some of the grosser immoralities of the clergy, but that marriage was still openly and unrestrainedly practised by those in orders is evident. The ecclesiastical laws of Cnut exhort priests to chastity in precisely the same words, and with the same promises, as the canons of the Council of Enham, but do not allude to the habit of keeping a plurality

autem ordinis sui regulam abdicaverit, omni cum apud Deum tum apud homines gratia exuatur.—Concil. Ænham. c. 2 (Spelman I. 514–5).

I give the translation of Spelman, as being more faithful in spirit, although less literal than that of Thorpe; for though the expression "wifes gemanan" may not be especially limited to wifely relations, yet the whole tenor of the passage shows that the women concerned were not merely concubines, but were entitled to the consideration of legal wives.

The thane-right promised to those who should reform their lives was one of the recognised privileges of the Church. In a list of wer-gilds, anterior to the period under consideration by about a century, the wer-gild for the priest—"mæsse-þegnes" is the same as that for the secular noble—"woruld-þegnes" (Thorpe I. 187).

¹ "Munecas and mynecena canonicas and nunnan" (Concil. Ænham. c. 1). Spelman thinks that the mynecena were perhaps the wives or concubines of monks (Concil. I. 530). Mynecen is merely the feminine of munuc, a monk; Thorpe translates it as "mynchens," and suggests that the "mynecena" were merely the younger nuns, not quite so strictly governed as the elder "nunnan." To this opinion Bosworth (Dictionary, s. v. *nunne*) seems to incline. It would appear to be so from chapter xv (be Mynecenan) of the "Institutes of Polity" (Thorpe II. 322).

of wives; while, in the same chapter, a warning to the whole people against unlawful concubinage would seem to indicate that the clergy and laity were bound by rules identical in strictness.¹

That the rule of celibacy was recognised as only binding on the regulars, or monks, and that the secular priesthood were at full liberty to marry, is evident from the system of purgation enjoined on them by the same code. The priest, who was also a monk (*sacerdos regulariter vivens—sacerd þe regollice libbe*), could clear himself from an accusation in a simple suit by merely saying mass, and receiving communion, while the secular priest (*plebeius sacerdos—mæssepreost þe regol-lif næbbe*) is only equal to the deacon-monk (*diaconus regularis—diacon þe regollice libbe*), requiring two of his peers as compurgators.² The significance of the distinction thus drawn is rendered clear by the version of the passage in a curious Latin text of the code published by Kolderup-Rosenvinge. The chapter is divided into two, the first one with the rubric “*De Sacerdotibus*,” and commencing “*Si contigerit presbyterum regulariter et caste viventem*,” &c., while the second is headed “*De vulgare sacerdote non casto*,” the meaning of which is defined in the expression “*Si vulgaris presbyter qui non regulariter vivit*.”³ It is thus evident that purity was

¹ Cnutes Domas c. vi. (Thorpe I. 364).

² Cnutes Domas c. v. (Thorpe I. 362). To appreciate the full weight of the privileges thus distributed, we should bear in mind how completely, in those times, the various classes of society were distinguished by the facilities afforded them of acquittal in cases of accusation, and by the graduated scale of fines established for injuries inflicted on them. These were most substantial advantages when the wergild, or blood-money, was the only safeguard guaranteed by law for life and limb, and were most important privileges of the aristocracy. This constitutes the thane-right alluded to in the Council of Enham, and retained by the laws of Cnut, as attaching to priests who preserve their chastity. Thus “*sacramentum presbyteri regulariter viventis tantundem valeat sicut liberalis hominis*” (Cnuti Leg. Sæcul. c. 128—ed. Kolderup-Rosenvinge)—the expression “*liberalis homo*” being, in this version, used for the “*taynus*” or thane of the other texts.

³ Cnuti Leg. Eccles. c. 8, 9 (Kolderup-Rosenvinge, Haunise, 1826, p. 12).

expected from those only who had entered into the obligations of monastic life, and also that the reforms of Dunstan had caused the ministers of the altar to be frequently selected from among the monks.

To this period are also, in all probability, to be attributed the "Institutes of Polity, civil and ecclesiastical," to which reference has been made in the preceding section as blaming priests for decorating their wives with the ornaments belonging to their churches. Unable to denounce efficient penalties for the prevention of such evil practices, the author is obliged to content himself with invoking future punishment from heaven, in vague and meaningless threats—"A priest's wife is nothing but a snare of the devil, and he who is ensnared thereby on to his end, he will be seized fast by the devil."¹

From all this it is evident that the memory of the ancient canons was not forgotten, and that their observance was still urged by some ardent Churchmen, but that the customs of the period had rendered them virtually obsolete, and that no sufficient means existed of enforcing obedience. If open scandals and shameless bigamy and concubinage could be restrained, the ecclesiastical authorities were evidently content. Celibacy could not be enjoined as a law, but was rendered attractive by surrounding it with privileges and immunities denied to him who yielded to the temptations of the flesh, and who thus in some degree assimilated his sacred character to that of the laity.

The Saxon Church thus was practically regardless of the rule of celibacy when Edward the Confessor ascended the throne. The ascetic piety of that prince and his

¹ *Institutes of Polity, &c.*, c. 16, 19, 23 (Thorpe II. 325, 329, 337). It is observable that the words *wif* and *wene* are used interchangeably to denote the consorts of priests.

Norman education alike led him to abhor the sensual indulgences in which he found his subjects plunged, and he attached himself almost exclusively to the horde of Norman monks who flocked to his court from across the Channel. Their influence was all-powerful, and though reasons of the highest state necessity forced him to ally himself in marriage with Edith, daughter of the puissant Duke Godwin, whom Edward hated with all the energy of his feeble nature, it was not difficult for his artful ghostly counsellors to persuade him that a vow of virginity, taken and kept amid the seductions of a throne, would insure his glory in this world and his salvation in the next. A minstrel historian describes at length the engagement of perpetual chastity entered into between Edward and Edith at their marriage, and though he mentions the popular derision to which this exposed the royal monk at the hands of a gross and brutal generation, he is firmly persuaded that the crown of martyrdom was worthily won and worn—

Par veincre charnel desir,
 Bein deit estre clamez martir.
 Ne sai cunter en nul estoire
 Rei ki feist si grant victoire,
 Sa char, diable e mund venqui,
 Ki sont troi fort enimi.¹

How little the royal pair expected this example to be followed, and how relaxed were all the rules of monastic discipline, is shown by an anecdote of the period. The austere Gervinus, Abbot of St. Riquier in Ponthieu, was

¹ Lives of Edward the Confessor, pp. 60–1 (Chron. & Memor. of Gr. Brit.). In the same curious collection there is another life of Edward by a follower of Queen Edith, and dedicated to her, the writer of which freely attributes the worst motives to the intrigues of the Norman monks in separating her from the king. See, for instance, his account of her immurement in the abbey of Wilton (Op. cit. p. 403).

Edward's virginity is likewise attested by the MS. Monast. Ramesiens. (Spelman I. 637)—“*Cœlibem pudicitiāe florem, quem inter regni delicias et inter amplexus conjugales . . . conservaret, virtutemque perpetuo floribus immiscuit paradisi.*” In this, however, Edward only imitated the asceticism ascribed to the Emperor St. Henry II. and his Empress St. Cunegunda, half a century earlier.

always welcomed by them when he visited England, and on one occasion Queen Edith offered to kiss him. The abbot's rigidity overcame his courtliness, and he refused the royal salutation, to the great indignation of the queen, who ordered certain gifts which she had set apart for him to be withdrawn. Edward, however, approved of the action of the monk, and after Edith had been made to understand his motives she not only joined in applauding him but demanded that a similar rule should be made imperative on all the monks of England.¹

It cannot be doubted that Edward made efforts to effect a reform among his sensual and self-indulgent subjects, but his want of success is developed in the description of the Saxon clergy at the time of the Conquest. The Norman chroniclers speak of them as abandoned to sloth, ignorance, and the lusts of the flesh; even monastic institutions were matters rather of tradition than of actual existence, and the monks themselves were hardly distinguishable by their mode of life from the laity.² There doubtless may be some contemptuous exaggeration in this, and yet one author of the period, who is wholly Saxon in his feelings, does not hesitate to attribute the ruin of the Saxon monarchy and the devastation of the kingdom to the just wrath of God, provoked by the vices of the clergy.³

The rule of the Normans removed England from her isolation. Brought into the commonwealth of Christendom and under the active supremacy of the Holy See, her history henceforth becomes more closely connected with the general ecclesiastical movement which received its irresistible impulsion about this period. That movement it is now our business to examine.

¹ Chron. Centulens. Lib. IV. c. xxii. (D'Achery II. 345).

² Orderic. Vital. P. II. Lib. iv. c. 10.—The testimony of William of Malmesbury (De Gest. Regum Lib. III.) is equally emphatic.

³ Lives of Edward the Confessor, p. 432.

CHAPTER XII

PETER DAMIANI

IN a previous section I have shown the laxity prevailing throughout Continental Europe at the commencement of the eleventh century. It is not to be supposed, however, that even where this was tacitly permitted it was openly and unreservedly authorised. The perversity of a sinful generation might render impossible the enforcement of the ancient canons; they might even be forgotten by the worldly and unthinking; but they were still the law of the Church, and their authority was still admitted by some ardent devotees who longed to restore the purity of earlier ages. Burckhardt, who was Bishop of Worms from the year 1000 to 1025, in his voluminous collection of canons, gives a fair selection from the councils and decretals prohibiting all female intercourse to the clergy.¹ Benedict VIII. and the Emperor St. Henry II.—whose admiration of virginity was evinced by the personal sacrifice to which reference has just been made—in 1022 endeavoured in the most solemn manner to reform the universal laxity. At the Synod of Pavia a series of canons was adopted pronouncing sentence of deposition upon all priests, deacons, and subdeacons having wives or concubines, and upon all bishops keeping women near them, while special stress was laid upon the continued servitude of the children of all such ecclesiastics as were serfs of the Church.² These canons, signed by the pope and attendant bishops, were laid before the emperor, who indorsed them with his sanction, declared

¹ Burchardi Decret. Lib. III. c. 108–116. ² Synod. Ticinens. ann. 1022 c. 1, 2, 3, 4.

them to be municipal as well as ecclesiastical law, promised that their observance should be enforced by the civil magistrates, and thanked Benedict and his prelates for their vigilance in seeking a remedy for the incontinence of the clergy, the evils whereof swept like a storm over the face of Christendom.¹

In France, the long reign of Robert the Pious seems to have been marked with almost entire indifference to the subject, but the accession of his son Henry I. was attended with a strenuous effort to effect a reform. The Council of Bourges, held in November 1031, but four months after the death of Robert, may perhaps have been assembled at the request of the dying monarch, desirous of redeeming his own sins with the vicarious penance of his subjects. It addressed itself vigorously to eradicating the evil by a comprehensive series of measures, admirably adapted to the end in view. Priests, deacons, and subdeacons were forbidden to have wives or concubines, and all such consorts were ordered to be dismissed at once and for ever. Those who refused obedience were to be degraded to the rank of lectors or chanters, and in future no ecclesiastic was to be permitted to take either wife or concubine. A vow of chastity was commanded as a necessary pre-requisite to assuming the subdiaconate, and no bishop was to ordain a candidate without exacting from him a promise to take neither wife nor concubine. Children of the clergy in orders, born during the ministry of their parents, were pronounced incapable of entering the Church, in justification of which was cited the provision of the municipal law which incapacitated illegitimates from receiving inheritance or bearing witness in court; but those who were born after their fathers had been reduced to the condition of laymen were not to be considered as the

¹ Respons. Imperatoris in Synod. Ticinens.

children of ecclesiastics.¹ As this is apparently the earliest instance of a vow of chastity being imposed in conferring orders, it is as well to remark that this precaution has never been adopted by the Church, but such a duty is considered as implied, and became what was known in the schools as a *votum adnexum*.²

Nothing could be more reasonable than these provisions of the council, considered from the high-church standpoint, and nothing better adapted to effect the object in view. All that was wanting was the enforcement of the legislation—and laws, when opposed to the spirit of the age, are not apt to be enforced. How much was really gained by the united efforts of the pope, the emperor, and the Gallican hierarchy can readily be gathered from a few out of innumerable incidents afforded by the history of the period.

The able and energetic, though unscrupulous, Benedict VIII. was no more, and the great House of Tusculum, which ruled the Eternal City, had filled the chair of St. Peter with a worthless scion of their stock, as though to declare their contempt for the lofty pretensions of the Apostolic Episcopate. A fit descendant of the infamous Marozia and Alberic, Benedict IX., a child of ten years old at the time of his elevation in 1032, grew up in unrestrained license, and shocked even the dull sensibilities of a gross and barbarous age by the scandals of his daily life.³ The popular appreciation of his character is shown by the legend of his appearing after death to a holy man, in the figure of a bear, with the

¹ Concil. Bituricens. ann. 1031 c. 5, 6, 8, 10.

² *Quamvis enim qui in sacris ordinibus constituuntur verbis non voveant, quia tamen tale quid in se suscipiunt cui perpetuum castitatis votum adnexum est, quasi solemnii voto tenentur advehi.*—Stephani Tarnacensis Summa Caus. XXVIII. Q. 1 (Ed. Fr. v. Schulte, Giessen, 1891, p. 233).

³ *Quoniam infelicem habuit introitum, infeliciorem persensit exitum. Horrendum quippe referri turpitudine illius conversationis et vitæ.*—Rad. Glabri Lib. v. c. 5. *Vide* also "The Life and Times of Hildebrand," vol. i., by the Abbé O. Délaré.

ears and tail of an ass, and declaring that, as he had lived in bestiality, so he was destined to wear the form of a beast and to suffer fiery torments until the Day of Judgment, after which he was to be plunged, body and soul, into the fathomless pit of hell.¹ When the Vicegerent of God, the head of the Christian Church, was thus utterly depraved, the prospect of reforming the corruption of the clergy was not promising, and the good work was not likely to be prosecuted with vigour.

Nor were the members of the hierarchy unworthy of their superior. We hear of Rainbaldo, Bishop of Fiesole, who, not contented with numerous concubines, had publicly married a wife, and whose children were established as a widespread and powerful family—and, what is perhaps more remarkable, this dissolute prelate was gifted with the power of working miracles.² The bishops, indeed, at this period, were still rather warrior nobles than Christian ministers. Bisantio, the good Bishop of Bari, is praised quite as much for his terrible prowess in battle as for his pious benevolence and munificence; and on his death, in 1035, his flock chose a military official as his successor.³

Descending in the scale, we may instance the priest Marino, who, though he lived openly with his wife, was a noted miracle-worker. Among quaint wonders wrought by him it is recorded that water rendered holy by his blessing, when sprinkled over the cornfields, had the power of driving away all caterpillars and other noxious insects. His child, Eleuchadio, was a most venerable man, who subsequently as abbot of the monastery of the Virgin at Fiano, won the esteem and respect of

¹ Johann. Chron. Angliæ c. 47 (Ludewig *Reh. Monachorum*, XII. 145).—*Semper enim luxuriæ et carnalibus illecebris deditus fuit.*

² P. Damiani *Opusc.* vi. c. 18.

³ *Annal. Barenses ann. 1035.*—Shortly after this, we hear of two bishops killed in battle (*Ibid.* ann. 1041).

even the stern Damiani himself.¹ In fact, the pious Desiderius, Abbot of Monte Cassino, better known as pope under the name of Victor III., declares that throughout Italy, under the pontificate of Benedict, all orders, from bishops down, without shame or concealment, were publicly married and lived with their wives as laymen, leaving their children fully provided for in their wills; and what rendered the disgrace more poignant was the fact that the scandal was greatest in Rome itself, whence the light of religion and discipline had formerly illuminated the Christian world.² Another contemporary writer asserts that this laxity prevailed throughout the whole of Latin Christendom, sacerdotal marriage being everywhere so common that it was no longer punished as unlawful, and scarcely even reprehended.³

In becoming thus universal and tacitly permitted it was not incompatible with the most fervent piety; and though it may be an evidence of hierarchical disorganisation, it can no longer be considered as indicating of itself a lowered standard of morals in the ministers of the Church. This is forcibly illustrated in the case of St. Procopius, selected by Duke Ulrich of Bohemia as the first abbot of the monastery of Zagow. He was regularly bred to the Church under the care of Bishop Quirillus, and was noted for the rectitude of his deportment in the priesthood; yet we learn that he was married during this period, when we are told that, on being disgusted with the hollow vanities of the world, he abandoned wife and friends for the solitude of a hermit's cave. Here an accidental meeting with Duke Ulrich,

¹ P. Damiani, loc. cit.

² Desiderii Dialog. de Mirac. S. Benedict. Lib. III. (Muratori, S.R.I. V. 396).

³ John, a disciple of St. Peter Damiani, in alluding to the prevailing twin vices of simony and marriage, says: "Quæ videlicet pestes tam perniciose consuetudine prævaluerant, tamque impune totam ferme ecclesiam in omni Romano orbe fæderaverant, ut vix jam reprehensorem, tamquam licite, formidarent."—Vit. S. P. Damiani c. 16.

while hunting, led to the foundation of Zagow and to the installation of Procopius as its head.¹

Silently the Church seemed to acquiesce in the violation of her canons, until, at length, she appeared content if her ministers would satisfy themselves with reputable marriage and avoid the grosser scandals. When Ulrich, Abbot of Tegernsee, about 1041, deplored the evil influence of a priest who had two wives living, he seems to have felt that lawful marriage might be tolerated, but that polygamy was of evil example in a Christian pastor.² So when Albert the Magnificent, Archbishop of Hamburg, was accustomed to exhort his clergy to continence and to shun the pestiferous society of women, his worldly wisdom prompted him to add that, if they were unequal to the effort, they should at least keep unsullied the bonds of marriage and should live "si non caste, tamen caute."³

If irregularities such as these existed, they are not justly imputable to the Church itself. It can scarcely be a matter of wonder if the clergy, in assimilating themselves to the laity as regards the liberty of wedlock, should also have adopted the license which in that lawless age rendered the marriage-tie a slender protection for the weakness of woman. Though it was indissoluble according to the teachings of religion, yet the Church, which at that time was the only protector of the feeble against the strong, had not acquired the commanding authority which subsequently enabled it to enforce its decrees everywhere and on all occasions. If, under a vigorous pope, the sentence of excommunication had been able to frighten a superstitious monarch like Robert the Pious, yet the pontiffs of the House of Tusculum

¹ Cosmæ Pragens. Chron. Boem. Lib. III. (Mencken. Script. Rer. German. III. p. 1782).

² Batthyani Leg. Eccles. Hung. I. 335.

³ Adam. Bremens. Gest. Pontif. Hammaburg. Schol. ad cap. 29 Lib. III.

were not men to trouble themselves, or to be successful had they made the attempt, to rectify the wrongs perpetrated in every obscure baronial castle or petty hamlet in Europe. The isolation and independence of the feudal system made every freeman, so to speak, the arbiter of his own actions. The wife whose charms ceased to gratify the senses of her husband, or whose temper threatened to disturb his equanimity, stood little chance of retaining her position, if an opportunity offered of replacing her to advantage, unless she was fortunate in having kindred able to resent the wrong which the Church and the law were powerless to prevent or to punish.¹ If, then, the clergy occasionally indulged in similar practices, the evil is not attributable to the license of marriage which they had usurped. That license had, at all events, borne some fruits of good, for, during its existence, we hear somewhat less of the system of concubinage so prevalent before and after this period, and there is no authentic indication of the nameless horrors so suggestively intimated by the restrictions on the residence of relatives enjoined in the frequent canons promulgated at the close of the ninth century.

It is not to be supposed, however, that the race of ascetics was extinct. Amid the license which prevailed in every class, there were still some men who, disgusted with the turbulent and dissolute world, despairing of salvation among the temptations and trials of active life or the sloth and luxury of the monastic establishments, sought the path to heaven in solitude and maceration.

¹ Perhaps as suggestive an illustration of the morals and manners of the age as can well be given is afforded by a deed executed in 1055 by a noble count of Catalonia on the occasion of his marriage. He pledges himself not to cast off his bride, except for infidelity—such infidelity not being plotted for by him—and to secure the performance of this promise he places in the hands of his father-in-law four castles, to be held in pledge, subject to forfeiture in case of his violating the agreement (Baluz. Capit. Francor. Append. Actor. Vet. No. 148).

Such men could not but look with detestation on the worldly priests who divided their thoughts between their sacred calling and the cares of an increasing household, and who profaned the unutterable mysteries of the altar with hearts and hands not kept pure from the lusts of the flesh.

Prominent among these holy anchorites was S. Giovanni Gaulberto, who fled from the snares of the world to the forests of Camaldoli, where his austerities, his holiness, and his miracles soon attracted crowds of disciples, who formed a numerous community of humble imitators of his virtues. Restoring in its strictness the neglected Rule of Benedict, his example and his teaching wrought conviction, and the order of monks which he founded and carried with him to the peaceful shades of Vallombrosa became renowned for its sanctity and purity. Thus withdrawn by the will of Heaven from the selfish egotism of a hermit's existence, he laboured earnestly to reform the laxity of priestly life in general, and his success was most encouraging. Moved by his admonitions, self-indulgent clerks abandoned wives and mistresses, devoted themselves to the performance of their sacred functions, or sought in monastic seclusion to make atonement for their past excesses.¹

Though it may well be supposed that Gaulberto was not unassisted in his efforts, yet all such individual exertions, dependent upon persuasion alone, could be but limited in their influence and temporary in their results. Reform, to be universal and permanent, required to be authoritative in its character, and to proceed from above downward. The papacy itself must cease to be a scandal to Christendom, and must be prepared to wield the awful force of its authority, seconded by the moral weight of its example, before disorders so firmly rooted could be

¹ Atton. Vit. S. Johannis Gualbert. c. 31.

attacked with any hope of success. In 1044, Benedict IX. was driven out of Rome by a faction of rebels or patriots, who elected Silvester III. as pontiff in his place. A sudden revolution sent Silvester into exile, and brought Benedict back, who, to complete the confusion, sold the papal dignity to a new aspirant, known as Gregory VI. The transaction was not one which could decently be recognised by the Church, and Benedict was held incapable of thus transferring the allegiance of Christendom, or of depriving himself of his position. There were thus three popes, whose conflicting claims to reverence threw all Europe into the doubt and danger of schism, nor could the knotty question be solved by the power of distracted Italy. A more potent judge was required, and the decision was referred, as a matter of course, to the sagacious and energetic Emperor, Henry the Black, whose success in repressing the turbulence of the empire, and whose sincere reverence for the Church, gave reasonable promise of a happy solution of the tangled problem.¹ His proceeding was summary. The three competitors were unceremoniously dismissed, and Henry filled the vacancy thus created by the appointment of Suidger, Bishop of Bamberg, who assumed the name of Clement II.

Henry III. was moved by a profound conviction that a thorough and searching reform was vitally necessary to the Church. The conscientious severity of his character led him to have little toleration for the abuses and dis-

¹ The popular feelings which greeted his interposition are well conveyed in the jingle verse addressed to him by a holy hermit—

Una Sunamitis nupsit tribus maritis ;
Rex Henrice, Omnipotentis vice,
Solve connubium, triforme, dubium.

(*Annalista Saxo*, ann. 1046.)

The invitation to interfere, however, was not needed. Henry's prerogative as the representative of Charlemagne and Otho the Great was sufficient warrant, and his religious ardour an ample motive, without any special reference to his tribunal.

orders which were everywhere so painfully apparent. How far his views were in advance of those generally entertained, even by ecclesiastical dignitaries, was clearly manifested as early as 1042, when Gebhardt, Bishop of Ratisbon, urged the claims of his favourite arch-priest Cuno for the vacant see of Eichstedt. Henry refused on the ground that Cuno was the son of a priest, and therefore by the established canons ineligible to the position. The reason, though unanswerable, was so novel that Gebhardt refused to accept it as the true one, and Henry, to pacify him, promised to nominate any other one of the Ratisbon clergy whom Gebhardt might select. The choice fell upon a young and unknown man, also named Gebhardt, whose abilities, brought into notice thus accidentally, rendered him afterwards more conspicuous as Pope Victor II.¹

Henry did not neglect the opportunity now afforded him of carrying into effect his reformatory views, and in his selection of a pontiff he was apparently influenced by the conviction that the Italian clergy were too hopelessly corrupt for him to expect from them assistance in his plans. Clement exchanged with him promises of mutual support in the arduous undertaking. We have nothing to do with the most crying evil; the one first vigorously attacked, and the one which was productive of the greatest real detriment to the Church—simony. That was everywhere open and avowed. From the blessing of the priest to the nomination for a primacy, every ecclesiastical act was the subject of bargain and sale, reduced in many places to a regular scale of prices.² To

¹ Anon. de Episcop. Eichstett. c. 34 (Patrolog. T. 146, pp. 1021-2).

² It would be a work of supererogation to quote the innumerable evidences of this which crowd the pages of contemporary writers. The generalising remark of Glaber will suffice—"Omnes quippe gradus ecclesiastici a maximo pontifice usque ad hostianum opprimuntur per suæ damnationis precium, ac juxta vocem Dominicam in cunctis grassatur spiritale latrocinium."—Glab. Rodolph. Hist. Lib. v. c. 5.

remove this scandal, Clement set vigorously to work, and soon found an united opposition which promised little for the success of the undertaking. He was doubtless sincere, but he was clearly alone in his struggle with the fierce Italian prelates, who were resolved not to abandon the emoluments and indulgences to which they had grown accustomed, and the result of his efforts did not fulfil the expectations of the more sanguine aspirants for the purification of the Church. Even his patron the emperor appears to have doubted his earnestness in the cause, for we find Henry not only addressing him a letter urging him to fresh exertion, but entrusting it to Peter Damiani, with a command to present it in person, and to use all his powers of exhortation to stimulate the flagging zeal of the Pope. Damiani refused to leave his hermitage even at the imperial mandate, but he enclosed the missive in one of his own, deploring the unhealed wounds of the Church, recapitulating the shortcomings of Clement, and goading him to fresh efforts, in a style which savoured little of the reverence due to the Vicegerent of God.¹ The pontifical crown was evidently not a wreath of roses. Clement sank under its weight, and died 9th October 1047, in less than ten months after he had accepted the perilous dignity.

St. Peter Damiani, who thus introduces himself to our notice, was one of the remarkable men of the epoch. Born about the year 988 at Ravenna, of a noble but decayed family, and the last of a numerous progeny, he owed his life to a woman of the very class to the extirpation of which he devoted all the energies of his prime. His mother, worn out in the struggle with poverty, regarded his birth with aversion, refused to suckle the infant saint, and neglected him until his forlorn and

¹ Damiani Lib. VIII. Epist. 3.

emaciated condition awoke the compassion of a female retainer, the wife of a priest, who remonstrated with the unfeeling parent until she succeeded in arousing the sense of duty, and restored to existence the little sufferer, who was destined to bring unnumbered woes to all who were of her condition.¹ His early years are said to have been passed as a swineherd, till the opportunity for instruction offered itself, which he eagerly embraced. Retiring at length from the world, he joined the disciples of St. Romuald, who practised the strictest monastic life, either as monks or hermits, at Avellana, near Gubbio. Immuring himself there in the desert, his austerities soon gained for him the reputation of pre-eminent sanctity, and led to his election as prior of the brotherhood. Gifted by nature with an intellect of unusual strength, informed with all the learning of the day, his stern asceticism, his dauntless spirit, and the uncompromising force of his zeal brought him into notice, and marked him as a fitting instrument in the cause of reform. Occasionally, at the call of his superiors, he left his beloved retreat to do battle with the hosts of evil, returning with renewed zest to the charms of solitude, until, in 1057, Stephen IX. forced him to accept the cardinalate and bishopric of Ostia—the highest dignity in the Roman court. The duties of his episcopate, however, conflicted with his monastic fervour, and after a few years he rendered up the pastoral ring and staff and again returned to Avellana, where he died in 1072, full of years and honours. His position and authority can best be estimated from the terms employed by Alexander II., who, when sending him on an important mission to France, described him as next in influence to himself in the Roman Church, and the chief support of the Holy See.²

¹ Johannis Vit. B. P. Damiani c. 1.

² Alex. II. Epist. 15.

With a nature ardent and combative, worked up to the highest pitch of ascetic intolerance by the introspective musings of his cell, it may readily be conceived that the corruptions of the Church filled him with warm indignation and fierce desire to restore it to its pristine purity. To this holy cause he devoted the last half of his life, and was always ready, with tongue and pen, at the sacrifice of his dearly prized solitude, to further the great movement on which he felt that the future of Christianity depended. The brief hopes excited by the promises of Clement and Henry were speedily quenched by the untimely death of the German pontiff, and the most sanguine might well despair at seeing the odious Benedict IX. reinstated as pope. But the emperor was in earnest, and listened willingly to the cry of those who besought him not to leave his work unfinished. Nine brief months saw Benedict again a wanderer, and another German prelate installed in his place. Poppo of Brixen, however, enjoyed his new dignity, as Damasus II., but twenty-one days, when he fell a martyr to the cause, perishing miserably, either through the insalubrious heats of a Roman summer, or the hidden vindictiveness of Italian party rage. It required some courage to accept the honourable but fatal post, and six months elapsed ere a worthy candidate could be found. Henry's choice fell this time upon Bruno of Toul, a prelate to whom admiring biographers ascribe every virtue and every qualification. As Leo IX. he ascended the pontifical throne in February 1049, and he soon gave ample evidence of the sincerity with which he intended to carry out the views of the puritans whom he represented.

It was significant that he took with him to Rome the monk Hildebrand, lately released from the service of his master Gregory VI., who had died in his German exile, restored by a miracle at his death to the honours

of which he had been adjudged unworthy while living.¹ Still more significant was the fact that Leo entered Rome, not as pope, but as a barefooted pilgrim, and that he required the empty formality of an election within the city, as though the nomination of the emperor had given him no claim to his high office. Whether this was the result of a voice from heaven, as related by the papal historians,² or whether it was done at the suggestion of the high Churchman Hildebrand, it showed that the new pontiff magnified his office, and felt that the line of distinction between the clerk and the layman was to be sharply drawn and vigorously defended.

Damiani lost no time in stimulating the stranger to the duties expected of him by the party of reform. From the retreat of Avellana he addressed to Leo an essay, which is the saddest of all the sad monuments bequeathed to us by that age of desolation. With cynical boldness he develops the frightful excesses epidemically prevalent among the cloistered crowds of men, attributable to the unnatural restraints imposed upon the passions of those unfitted by nature or by training to control themselves; and his laborious efforts to demonstrate the propriety of punishing the guilty by degradation shows how hideous was the laxity of morals which was disposed to regard such crimes with indulgence.³ Like the nameless horrors of the Penitentials, it is the most convincing commentary on the system which sought

¹ Learning, on his death-bed, that he was not to be buried as a pope, he requested the prelates around him to place his coffin at the church door securely fastened, and if the portals opened without human hands, it would be a sign that he should receive papal honours. It was done, when a gust of wind burst open the door and lifted the coffin from the bier (Martin. Fuldens. Chron. ann. 1046).

² Martin. Fuldens. ann. 1050.

³ Damiani Opusc. VII. (Liber Gomorrhianus).—Some ten or twelve years later, Alexander II. obtained the manuscript from Damiani, under pretence of having it copied, but prudently locked it up and refused to return it. The saintly author complained bitterly of the deception thus practised upon him, which he unceremoniously characterised as a fraud (Damiani Lib. II. Epist. 6).

to enforce an impossible exaltation of purity on the ministers of a religion whose outward formalism had absorbed its internal life.¹

Leo IX. was not long in manifesting his intentions, and his first point of attack was chosen with some skill, the ecclesiastical rank of the victim and his want of power rendering him at once a striking example and an easy sacrifice. Dabralis, Archbishop of Salona (or Spalatro) in Dalmatia, was married and lived openly with his wife. Leo sent a legate to investigate and punish. Called before a synod, Dabralis could not or deigned not to deny his guilt, but boldly justified it, as the woman was his lawful wife, and he instanced the customs of the Greek Church in his defence. This only aggravated his guilt, and he was promptly degraded for ever.²

Leaving, for a time, the Italian Church for subsequent efforts at reformation, Leo undertook a progress throughout Northern Europe, for the purpose of restoring the neglected discipline of those regions. Before the year of his installation had expired, in November 1049, we find him presiding with the emperor at a council in Mainz, where the simony and marriage of the clergy

¹ The world can never know the long and silent suffering endured in the terrible self-combat of ardent natures in the solitude of the cloister. If many succumb, the indignation which Damiani and his class so freely bestow on the victims should be transferred rather to the system which produces them. A monk of the period has left us a vivid and curious picture of his own tortures in the endless struggle with the tempter; and the mental torments to which his fellow-unfortunates were exposed are aptly condensed in the simple tale of the Abbess Sarah, who for thirteen long years maintained her ground without shrinking from the ceaseless assaults of the enemy by continually invoking the aid of God—"Da mihi fortitudinem Deus!" nb

The hagiology of the Church is full of legends, more or less veritable, of the sufferings of these martyrs and of their triumphs over the flesh, from the time of St. Ammonius, who, when less decisive measures failed, bored his flesh in many places with red-hot iron, and thus vanquished passion by suffering. A collection of these stories, more curious than decent, may be found admirably detailed by Giraldus Cambrensis in his *Gemma Ecclesiastica*, Dist. II.

² Batthyani Leg. Eccles. Hung. I. 401.

were condemned under severe penalties.¹ That the influence thus brought to bear had some effect, at least in externals, is shown by the courtly Albert of Hamburg, who, on returning from the council to his see, revived a forgotten regulation of his predecessors, in virtue of which the women of ecclesiastics were ordered to live outside of the towns, in order to avoid public scandal.² A few weeks before, in France, Leo had presided over a national council at Rheims, where his vigorous action against simony caused numerous vacancies in the hierarchy. The records and canons of this council contain no allusions to the subject of marriage or concubinage, but it is altogether improbable that they escaped attention, for they were indulged in without concealment by all classes of ecclesiastics, and some subsequent writers assert that they were rigorously prohibited by the council, but that the injunctions promulgated were unavailing.³

Returning to the South, the Easter of 1051 beheld a council assembled at Rome for the purpose of restoring discipline. Apparently, the Italian prelates were disposed to exercise considerable caution in furthering the wishes of their chief, for they abstained from visiting their indignation on the guilty priests, and directed their penalties against the unfortunate females. In the city itself these were declared to be enslaved, and were

¹ Adami Bremens. Gest. Pontif. Hammaburg. Lib. III. c. 29.—Annalista Saxo, ann. 1048.

² Adam. Bremens. loc. cit.

³ Tunc quippe in Neustria, post adventum Normannorum, in tantum dissoluta erat castitas clericorum, ut non solum presbyteri sed etiam præsules libere uterentur toris concubinarum, et palam superbirent multiplici propagine filiorum ac filiarum. . . . Tandem . . . Leo Papa . . . in Gallias A.D. 1049 venit. . . . Tunc ibidem (Remis) generale concilium tenuit, et inter reliqua ecclesiæ commoda quæ instituit, presbyteris arma ferre et conjuges habere prohibuit. Arma quidem ferre presbyteri jam gratanter desiere, sed a pellicibus adhuc nolunt abstinere, nec pudicitia in-hærerere.—Orderic. Vital. P. II. Lib. v. c. 15.—This portion of the work of Ordericus was written about the year 1125.

Ibi vero simoniaci, tam populares quam clerici, presbyterique uxorati, persuasione sancti Hugonis, a catholicorum communione et ab ecclesiis eliminati sunt.—Alberic. Trium Fontium Chron. ann. 1049.

bestowed on the cathedral church of the Lateran, while all bishops throughout Christendom were desired to apply the rule to their own dioceses, and to seize the offending women for the benefit of their churches.¹ The atrocity of this legislation against the wives of priests is all the more noteworthy when contrasted with the tenderness shown to worse crimes committed by men whose high position only rendered their guilt the more heinous. At this council, Gregory, Bishop of Vercelli, was convicted of what, by the rules of the Church, was considered as incest—an amour with a widow betrothed to his uncle. For this aggravated offence he was merely excommunicated, and when, soon after, he presented himself in Rome, he was restored to communion on his simple promise to perform adequate penance.²

The reformatory zeal of Leo and of the monastic followers of Damiani was thus evidently not seconded by the Italian Church. A still more striking proof of this was afforded by the attempt to hold a council at Mantua early in 1053. The prelates who dreaded the result conspired to break it up. A riot was provoked between their retainers and the papal domestics; the latter, taken unawares and speedily overpowered, fled to the council-chamber for safety, and Leo, rushing to the door to protect them, was in imminent danger from the arrows and stones which hurtled thickly around him.³ The reckless plot succeeded, and the council dispersed in undignified haste. Whether Leo was disgusted with his want of success and convinced of the impracticability of the undertaking, or whether his attention was

¹ Damiani Opusc. xviii. Diss. ii. c. 7.—It was probably some vague recollection of this provision, combined with the regulations adopted at Pavia in 1022 (p. 206) that led Dr. Martin, one of the commissioners who presided at the trial of Archbishop Cranmer, to declare to that unhappy culprit that “his children were bondmen to the see of Canterbury.”—*Strype, Memorials of Cranmer, Book III. chap. 27.*

² Herman. Contract. Chron. ann. 1051.

³ Muratori Annali, ann. 1053.

thenceforward absorbed by his unlucky military operations against the rapidly augmenting Norman power in Southern Italy, it is not easy now to ascertain: suffice it to say that no further indications remain of any endeavour to carry out the reforms so eagerly commenced in the first ardour of his pontificate. The consistent Damiani opposed the warlike aspirations of the pontiff, but Leo persisted in leading his armies himself. A lost battle threw Leo into the power of the hated Normans, when, after nine months, he returned to Rome to die, in April 1054, and to be revered as a saint after death by those who had withstood him during life in every possible manner.¹

It is not easy to repress a smile on seeing Leo, who had been so utterly unable to enforce the canons of the Latin Church at home, seriously undertaking to procure their adoption in Constantinople. From his prison, in January 1054, he sent Cardinal Humbert of Silva Candida on a mission to convert the Greek Church. There is extant a controversy between the legate and Nicetas Pectoratus, a learned Greek abbot, on the various points in dispute. I cannot profess to decide which of the antagonists had the advantage on the recondite questions of the use of unleavened bread, the Sabbath fasts, the calculation of Easter, &c., but the contrast between the urbanity of the Greek and the coarse vituperation of the Latin is strikingly suggestive as a tacit confession of defeat on the part of the latter. In view of the frightful immorality of the Italian clergy, there is something peculiarly ludicrous in the mingled anger, contempt, and abhorrence with which Humbert alludes to the marriage of the Greek clergy, which, as he declares, renders their Church the synagogue of Satan and the brothel of Balaam and Jezebel, with other equally

¹ S. Leonis PP. IX. Mirac. (Migne's Patrolog. CXLIII. 525 sqq.).

courteous and convincing arguments. Humbert attributes priestly marriage altogether to the heresy of the Nicolites, and lays down the law on the subject as inexorably as though it were at the time observed in his own Church.¹

After an interval of about a year, the line of German pontiffs was continued in the person of Gebhardt, Bishop of Eichstedt (Victor II.), whose appointment by the emperor was owing in no small degree to the influence of Hildebrand—an influence which was daily making itself more felt. Installed in the pontifical seat by Godfrey, Duke of Tuscany, his efforts to continue the reformation commenced by his predecessors aroused a stubborn resistance. There may be no foundation for the legend of his being saved by a miracle from a sacramental cup poisoned by a vengeful subdeacon, nor for the rumours that his early death was hastened by the recalcitrant clergy who sought to escape the severity of his discipline. There is some probability in the stories, however, for, during his short pontificate, interrupted by a lengthened stay in Germany and the perpetual vicissitudes of the Neapolitan troubles, he yet found time to hold a synod at Florence, where he degraded numerous prelates for simony and licentiousness; but, whether true or false, the existence of the reports attests at once the sincerity of his zeal and the difficulties of the task.²

His death in July 1057 was followed after but a few days' interval by the election of Frederic, Duke of Lorraine—the empire having passed in 1056 from the able hands of Henry III. to the feeble regency of his empress, Agnes, as guardian of the unfortunate infant Henry IV.—thus releasing the Roman clergy from the degrading

¹ Humberti Card. contra Nicetam xxv, xxvi.

² Lambert. Schaffnab. ann. 1054.—Martin. Polon. ann. 1057.

dictation of a Teutonic potentate. That Frederic should have abandoned the temptations and ambitions of his lofty station to embrace the austerities of monastic life in the abbey of Monte Cassino, is a sufficient voucher that he would not draw back from the work thus far hopelessly undertaken by his predecessors. Notwithstanding the severity of the canons promulgated during the previous decade, and the incessant attempts to enforce them, Rome was still full of married priests, and the battle had to be recommenced, as though nothing had yet been done. Immediately on his installation, as Stephen IX., he addressed himself unshrinkingly to the task. For four months, during the most unhealthy season, he remained in Rome, calling synod after synod, and labouring with both clergy and people to put an end to such unholy unions,¹ and he summarily expelled from the Church all who had been guilty of incontinence since the prohibitions issued in the time of Leo.² One case is related of a contumacious priest whose sudden death gave him the opportunity of striking terror into the hearts of the reckless, for the mutilated funeral rites which deprived the hardened sinner of the consolation of a Christian burial it was hoped would prove an effectual warning to his fellows.³ Feeling the necessity of support in these thankless labours, he forced Damiani to leave the retirement of the cloistered shades of Avellana, and to bear, as Bishop of Ostia, his share of the burden in the contest which he had done so much to provoke—but it was all in vain.

In little more than half a year Stephen found refuge from strife and turmoil in the tomb. The election of his successor, Gerard, Bishop of Florence, was the formal proclamation that the Church was no longer subjected to

¹ Leo. Marsic. Chron. Casinens. Lib. II. c. 97.

² Damiani Opusc. XVIII. Diss. ii. c. 6.

³ Ibid.

the control of the secular authority. January 18th, 1058, saw the power of the emperor defied, and the gauntlet thrown for the quarrel which for three centuries was to plunge Central and Southern Europe in turmoil and bloodshed. Henry III. had laboured conscientiously to rescue the papacy from the disgrace into which it had fallen. By removing it from the petty sphere of the counts of Tusculum and the barons of the Campagna, and by providing for it a series of high-minded and energetic pontiffs, he had restored its forfeited position, and indeed had conferred upon it an amount of influence which it had never before possessed. His thorough disinterestedness and his labours for its improvement had disarmed all resistance to the exercise of his power, but when that power passed into the hands of an infant but five years old, it was natural that the Church should seek to emancipate itself from subjection; and if almost the first use made of its new-found prerogatives was to crush the hand that had enabled it to obtain them, we must not tax with ingratitude those who were undoubtedly penetrated with the conviction that they were only vindicating the imprescriptible rights of the Church, and that to them was confided the future of religion and civilisation.

In the revolution which thus may date its successful commencement at this period the two foremost figures are Damiani and Hildebrand. Damiani the monk, with no further object than the abolition of simony and the enforcement of the austerities which he deemed indispensable to the salvation of the individual and to the purity of the Church, looked not beyond the narrow circle of his daily life, and sought merely to level mankind by the measure of his own stature. Hildebrand, the far-seeing statesman, could make use of Damiani and his

tribe, perhaps equally fervent in his belief that the asceticism of his fellow labourer was an acceptable offering to God, but yet with ulterior views of transcendently greater importance. In his grand scheme of a theocratic empire, it became an absolute prerequisite that the Church should hold undivided sway over its members; that no human affection should render their allegiance doubtful, but that their every thought and action should be devoted to the common aggrandisement; that they should be separated from the people by an impassable barrier, and should wield an influence which could only be obtained by those who were recognised as superior to the weaknesses of common humanity; that the immense landed possessions of the Church should remain untouched and constantly increasing as the common property of all, and not be subjected to the incessant dilapidations inseparable from uxorious or paternal affections at a time when the restraints of law and of public opinion could not be brought to bear with effect. In short, if the Church was to assume and maintain the position to which it was entitled by the traditions of the canon law and of the False Decretals, it must be a compact and mutually supporting body, earning by its self-inflicted austerities the reverence to which it laid claim, and not be diverted from its splendid goal by worldly allurements or carnal indulgences and pre-occupations. Such was the vision to the realisation of which Hildebrand devoted his commanding talents and matchless force of will. The temporal success was at length all that he could have anticipated. If the spiritual results were craft, subtlety, arrogance, cruelty, and sensuality, hidden or cynical, it merely proves that his confidence in the strength of human nature to endure the intoxicating effects of irresponsible power was misplaced. Meanwhile he laboured with Damiani at the preliminary measures of his enterprise, and together they bent their

energies to procure the enforcement of the neglected rules of discipline.

The new pope, Nicholas II. by name, entered unreservedly into their views. Apparently taught by experience the fruitlessness of additional legislation when the existing canons were amply sufficient, but their execution impossible through the negligence or collusion of the ecclesiastical authorities, he assembled, in 1059, a council of a hundred and thirteen bishops, in which he adopted the novel and hazardous expedient of appealing to the laity, and of rendering them at once the judges and executioners of their pastors. A canon was promulgated forbidding all Christians to be present at the mass of any priest known to keep a concubine or female in his house.¹ This probably remained, like its predecessors, a dead letter for the present, but we shall see what confusion it excited when it was revived and put effectually in force by Gregory VII. some fifteen years later. Meanwhile I may observe that it trenched very nearly on the Donatist heresy that the sacrament was polluted in polluted hands, and it required the most careful word-splitting to prevent the faithful from drawing a conclusion so natural.²

¹ Ut nullus missam audiat presbyteri quem scit concubinam indubitanter habere aut subintroductam mulierem.—Concil. Roman. ann. 1059 c. 3.

Singularly enough, this clause is omitted in the synodical epistle addressed to the Gallic clergy, as given by Hugh of Flavigny, Chron. Lib. II. ann. 1059.

² How utterly this was opposed to the received dogmas and practice of the Church can be seen from the decision of Nicholas I. on the same question—“Sciscitantibus vobis, si a sacerdote, qui sive comprehensus est in adulterio, sive de hoc fama sola respersus est, debeatis communionem suscipere, necne, respondemus: Non potest aliquis quantumcumque pollutus sit, sacramenta divina polluere, quæ purgatoria cunctarum remedia contagionum existunt. . . . Sumite, igitur, intrepide ab omni sacerdote Christi mysteria, quoniam omnia in fide purgantur” (Nicolai I. Epist. XCVII. c. 71). See also a similar decision in 727 by Gregory II. (Bonifacii Epist. CXXVI.).

The only adverse authority of this period that I have met with is the Penitential of Theodore of Canterbury, already referred to (p. 186), prescribing rebaptism for those baptised by priests of known unchastity.

Damiani saw the danger to which a practice such as this exposed the Church, and lifted up his voice to prevent the evil results—

In addition to this, the council ordered, under pain of excommunication, that no priest who openly took a concubine (or rather a wife), or who did not forthwith

Audite etiam, laici,
Qui Christo famulamini ;
Pro ullo unquam crimine,
Pastores non despiciate.

(Carmen ccxxii.)

and when, about the year 1060, the Florentines refused the ministrations of their bishop, whom they were determined from other causes to eject, he reproved them warmly, adducing the only reasonable view of the question, "quod Spiritus Sanctus per improbi ministerium dare potest sua charismata" (Opusc. xxx. c. 2).

Simoniacal priests as well as concubinary ones were included in the ban, and when, in 1049, Leo IX. commenced his vigorous persecution of simony, there arose a belief that ordination received at hands tainted with that sin was null and void. This was promptly stigmatised as a heresy, and Damiani's untiring pen was employed in combating it. He argued the question very thoroughly and keenly when it was under debate by a synod, and succeeded in procuring its condemnation (Opusc. vi. c. 12).

The prohibition, first proclaimed by Nicholas II. and finally enforced by Gregory VII., caused no little trouble in the Church. Towards the close of the century, Urban II. found himself obliged to discuss the question, and in an epistle to Lucius, provost of the church of St. Juventius at Pavia, he admits that the sacraments administered by guilty priests are uncorrupted, yet he approves of their rejection in order to stimulate the clergy to virtue, and even declares that those who receive them, except under instant and pressing necessity, are guilty of idolatry ("nisi forte sola morte interveniente, utpote ne sine baptisate vel communione quilibet humanis rebus excedat; eis, inquam, in tantum obsunt, ut veri idolatræ sint"—Urbani II. Epist. 273)—a decision the logic of which is not readily apprehended. St. Anselm of Canterbury assents to the doctrine, but places it in a more reasonable and practical shape—"non quo quis ea quæ tractant contemnenda, sed tractantes execrandos existimet" (Epist. viii.). The consequences of such a system, however, if strictly carried out, would have been most disastrous to the Church, and when the zeal of Hildebrand became forgotten his injunctions were overruled. The century was scarcely out before Honorius of Autun maintained most positively that Christ operates through the hands of the vilest as well as of the most holy ministers, provided only they are orthodox in faith (Euchariston, c. vi.—Pez, Thesaur. II. i. 355). About 1150, however, Geroch of Reichersperg declares that he considered Gregory's commands as still in force, and that he paid no more attention to the masses of concubinary priests than if they were so many Pagans (Gerhohi Dial. de Differentia Cleri—Pez, Thesaur. II. ii. 463). Yet before the end of the twelfth century, Lucius III. had returned to the policy of Nicholas I.—"Sumite ergo ab omni sacerdote intrepide Christi mysteria, quia omnia in fide Christi purgantur" (Post Lateran. Concil. P. L. c. 38), the positiveness of which was not much affected by the subtle distinctions which he endeavoured to draw between crimes notorious and tolerated. Yet St. Thomas Aquinas, on the other hand, affirmed that it was a mortal sin to assist at the Mass celebrated by a priest who was notoriously unchaste (Pontas, Dict. de Cas de Conscience, II. 1445). The Church, however, gradually returned to the old doctrine and practice. The policy of Gregory was condemned as a heresy when adopted by the followers of Arnold of Brescia (Bonacursi Vit. Hæreticorum—D'Achery, I. 214) and an austere priest,

separate himself from such a connection already existing, should dare to perform any sacred function, or enjoy any portion of ecclesiastical revenue.¹ Hildebrand, who was

Albero of Mercke, near Cologne, who taught it was promptly silenced (Anon. adv. Alberonis errores—Martene Ampl. Coll. IX. 1251). In 1292 the Council of Aschafenburg anathematised those who “*præsumptione dampnabili*” taught the heresy that priests in mortal sin could not perform the sacred mysteries, and it decided “*licite ergo a quocumque sacerdote ab ecclesia tolerato, divina mysteria audiantur et alia recipiantur ecclesiastica sacramenta*” (Concil. Schafnaburg. ann. 1292 can. i.—Hartzheim IV. 7). And when Wickliffe and Huss undertook to carry out the dicta of Nicholas II. and Gregory VII. to their legitimate conclusions, the policy was at once recognised as a heresy of the worst character and most destructive consequence. Thus in 1491 a Synod of Bamberg condemns as heretics those who refuse to receive the ministrations of sinful priests.—Synod. Bamberg. ann. 1491 Tit. xlv. (Ludewig. Script. Rer. German. I. 1241–2).

¹ *Quicumque sacerdotum, diaconorum, subdiaconorum . . . concubinam palam duxerit vel ductam non reliquerit, . . . præcipimus et omnino contradicimus, ut missam non cantet, neque evangelium vel epistolam ac missam legat, neque in presbyterio ad divina officia cum iis qui præfatæ constitutioni obedientes fuerint, maneat; neque partem ab ecclesia suscipiat.*—Concil. Roman. ann. 1059 c. 3.

It is evident here that the opprobrious epithet “*concubine*” is applied to those who were as legally wives as it was possible to make them. Damiani, indeed, admits it, and even intimates that concubine was too honourable a word to be applied to the wives of priests—“*Illorum vero clericorum feminas, qui matrimonia nequeunt legali jure contrahere, non conjuges sed concubinas potius, sive prostibula congrue possumus appellare*” (Opusc. XVIII. Diss. iii. c. 2). After this period it will be found that the wives of priests were rarely dignified with the title of “*uxores*,” although ordination was not yet an impediment destructive of marriage.

It is as well to observe here that at this period and for some time later the position of the concubine had not the odium attaching to it by modern manners, and this should be borne in mind when reviewing the morals of the Middle Ages. The connection was a recognised and almost a legal one, following the traditions of the Roman law, by which it was legitimate and permanent, so long as the parties respectively remained unmarried. A man could not have a wife and concubine at the same time (Pauli Sentent. II. 20), nor could he legally have two concubines together (Novel. XVIII. c. 5), but the mutual engagement was regarded as legal in the imperial jurisprudence, until it was abolished, about 900, by Leo the Philosopher (Imp. Leonis Constit. xci.). Not only were such regulations thus promulgated by Christian emperors, but the relationship was duly recognised by the Christian Church. The first Council of Toledo, in 398, enjoined upon the faithful “*tantum aut unius mulieris, aut uxoris aut concubinæ, ut ei placuerit, sit conjunctione contentus*” (Concil. Toletan. I. c. 17), showing that either connection apparently was legitimate, and this is quoted at the commencement of the tenth century, as still in force, by Regino (De Discip. Eccles. Lib. II. c. 100). A half century later, about 450, Leo I. was actually appealed to to decide whether a man who quitted a concubine and took a wife committed bigamy—which Leo reasonably enough answered in the negative (Leon. Epist. xc. c. 5). The principle of the Roman law was still the rule of the Church in the ninth century, for a Roman synod held by Eugenius II. in 826 declared “*Ut non liceat uno tempore duas habere uxores, uxoremve et concubinam. De illo vero qui cum uxore concubinam habet, præcipit, ut si admonitus eam a se abjicere noluerit, communionem privetur.*” (Pertz, Legum

all-powerful at the papal court—his enemies accused him of keeping Nicholas like an ass in the stable, feeding him to do his work—has the credit of procuring this legislation.¹ Nicholas, whether acting under the impulsion of Hildebrand and Damiani, or from his own convictions, followed up the reform with vigour. During the same year he visited Southern Italy, and by his decided proceedings at the Council of Melfi endeavoured to put an end to the sacerdotal marriages which were openly prac-

T. II. P. ii. p. 12.) The view entertained of the matter at the time under consideration may be gathered from a canon of the councils of Rome, in 1052 and 1063, suspending from communion the layman who had a wife and concubine at the same time (Concil. Roman. ann. 1059 c. 12: ann. 1063 c. 10)—whence we may deduce that a concubine alone was hardly considered irregular. During the latter part of the succeeding century we find the concubine a recognised institution in Scotland, for the laws of William the Lion, after stating that the wife was not bound to reveal the crimes of her husband, adds “De concubina vero et de familia domus non est ita; quia ipsi tenentur revelare maleficia magistri sui, aut debent a servitio suo recedere” (Statut. Willelmi c. XIX. § 9). In England, late in the thirteenth century, Bracton speaks of the “concubina legitima” as entitled to certain rights and consideration (Lib. III. Tract. ii. c. 28, § 1, and Lib. IV. Tract. vi. c. 8, § 4). In Spain, at the same period, the son of an unmarried noble by a concubine, was noble (Juan Perez de Lara, in Arch. Seld. 130, Bib. Bodl.), and in the Danish code of Waldemar II., which was in force from 1280 to 1683, there is a provision that a concubine kept openly for three years shall be held to be a legitimate and legal wife (Leg. Cimbric. Lib. I. cap. xxvii. Ed. Ancher); while the elaborate provisions for the division of estates between legitimate and illegitimate children, contained in the code compiled by Andreas, Archbishop of Lunden, in the thirteenth century, show that certain legal rights were recognised in the latter (Legg. Scan. Provin. Ed. Thorsen, pp. 110–2). Indeed, in the Norwegian law of that period, when the king left no legitimate sons the crown descended to illegitimates (Jarnsida, Kristendoms-Balkr, c. III.). In Bigorre, concubines, under the name of *Massipia*, were recognised by law, and formal notarial contracts were drawn up, as late as the close of the fifteenth century, specifying the price to be paid and the duration of the connection; and when the man was already married he sometimes engaged to marry the *massipia* in case of his wife's death during the term (Lagrèze, Hist. du Droit dans les Pyrénées, Paris, 1867, p. 377). We must therefore bear in mind that, until the rule of sacerdotal celibacy became rigorously enforced, the “concubina” of the canons generally means a wife, and that for some time afterwards the concubine was by no means necessarily the shameless woman implied under the modern acceptation of the term.

¹ *Hujus autem constitutionis maxime fuit auctor Hildebrandus, tunc Romanæ ecclesiæ archidiaconus, hæreticis maxime infestus.*—Bernaldi Chron. ann. 1061. Benzo declares, in his slashing way, stigmatising Hildebrand as a Sarabite, or wandering monk, “De cetero pascebat suum Nicholaum Prandellus in Lateranensi palatio, quasi asinum in stabulo. Nullum erat opus Nicholaitæ, nisi per verbum Sarabaitæ” (Comment. de Reb. Henr. IV. Lib. VII. c. 2). The verses of Damiani on the influence of Hildebrand are too well known to quote.

tised everywhere throughout that region, and the Bishop of Trani was deposed as an example and warning to others.¹ Damiani was also intrusted with a mission to Milan for the same purpose, of which more anon.

Nor did Nicholas confine his efforts to Italy. His legates in other countries endeavoured to enforce the canons, and apparently had little difficulty in obtaining the adoption of stringent regulations—the more easily acceded to that they were utterly disregarded. Thus his legate Stephen, early in 1060, held councils at Vienne and Tours, where the prohibitions of the Synod of Rome were agreed to, and those who did not at once abandon either their women or their benefices were declared to be degraded for ever, without hope of restitution.²

In practice, however, all these measures of reform were scarcely felt except by the lower grades of the ecclesiastical body. The prelates, whose lives were equally flagitious, and far more damaging to the reputation and purity of the Church, were enabled virtually to escape. The storm passed beneath them, and with few exceptions persecuted only those who were powerless to oppose anything but passive resistance. The uncompromising zeal of Damiani was not likely to let a temporising lenity so misplaced and so fatal to the success of the cause remain unrebuked; and he calls to it the attention of Nicholas, stigmatising the toleration of

¹ . . . Hic [Nicholaus] ecclesiastica propter
Ad partes illas tractanda negotia venit ;
Namque sacerdotes, levitæ, clericus omnibus
Hac regione palam se conjugio sociabant.
Concilium celebrans ibi, Papa faventibus illi
Præsulibus centum jus ad synodale vocatis,
Ferre Sacerdotes monet, altarisque ministros
Arma pudicitiae, vocat hos et præcipit esse
Ecclesiae sponsos, quia non est jure sacerdos
Luxuriae cultor : sic extirpavit ab illis
Partibus uxores omnino presbyterorum.

(Gulielmi Appuli de Normann. Lib. II.)

² Concil. Turon. ann. 1060 c. 6.

episcopal sins as an absurdity no longer to be endured.¹ The occasion of this exhortation was a commission entrusted by the pope to Damiani, to hold a friendly conference with the prelates, and to induce them to reform their evil ways without forcing the authorities to the scandal of public proceedings. The fear of such results and the fiery eloquence of Damiani were alike unheeded. The bishops confessed themselves unequal to the task of preserving their chastity, and indifferent to the remote contingency of punishment which had so often been ineffectually threatened that its capacity for exciting apprehension had become exhausted. With all the coarseness of monastic asceticism, Damiani describes the extent of the evil, and its public and unblushing exhibition; the families which grew and increased around the prelates, the relationships which were ostentatiously acknowledged, and the scandals perpetrated in the Church of God. In the boldest strain he then incites the pope to action, blames his misplaced clemency, and urges the degradation of all offenders, irrespective of rank, pointing out the impossibility of reforming the priesthood if the bishops are allowed full and undisturbed license.²

This shows that even if the machinery of ecclesiastical authority was at work to correct the errors of the plebeian clergy, it was only local and sporadic in its efforts. In some favoured dioceses, perhaps, blessed with a Puritan

¹ Porro autem nos contra divina mandata, personarum acceptores, in minoribus quidam sacerdotibus luxuriæ inquinamenta persequimur; in episcopis autem, quod nimis absurdum est, per silentium tolerantiam veneramur.—Damiani Opusc. XVII. c. 1.

² Sanctis eorum femoribus volui seras apponere. Tentavi genitalibus sacerdotum (ut ita loquar) continentiae fibulas adhibere. . . . Hujus autem capituli nudam saltem promissionem tremulis prolatam labiis difficilius extorquemus. Primo, quia fastigium castitatis attingere se posse desperant; deinde quia synodali se plectendos esse sententia propter luxuriæ vitium non formidant. . . . Si enim malum hoc esset occultum, fuerat fortassis utcumque ferendum; sed, ah scelus! omni pudore postposito, pestis hæc in tantum prorupit audaciam, ut per ora populi volitent loca scortantium, nomina concubinarum, socerorum quoque vocabula simul et socruum . . . postremo, ubi omnis dubietas tollitur, uteri tumentes et pueri vagientes, etc.—Damiani Opusc. XVII.

bishop, the decrees of the innumerable councils may have been put in force, but in the great body of the Church the evil remained unaltered. During this very year, 1060, Nicholas again found it necessary to promulgate a decretal ordering priests to quit their wives or resign their position, and this in terms which prove how utterly futile had been all previous fulminations. He also manifested some consideration for temporal necessities by allowing the discarded wives to live with their husbands under proper supervision.¹

How complete was the disregard of these commands is well illustrated by an epistle which about this time Damiani addressed to the chaplains of Godfrey the Bearded, Duke of Tuscany. From this we learn that these prominent ecclesiastics openly defended sacerdotal marriage, pronounced it canonical, and were ready to sustain their position in controversy.² As Duke Godfrey, with the pious Beatrice his wife, was the leading potentate in Italy, and as his territories were in close proximity to Rome itself, it is evident that the reform so laboriously prosecuted for the previous ten or fifteen years had thus far accomplished little.

Parties were now beginning to define themselves. The reformers, irritated by their want of success, were for more stringent measures, and when the canonical punishments of degradation and excommunication were derided and defied, they were ready, as we shall see hereafter at Milan, to have recourse to the secular arm, and to invoke the aid of sword and lance. The clergy, finding that passive resistance did not wear out the zeal of their persecutors, that the storm promised to be endless, and

¹ Decret. Nicolai PP. c. 3, 4 (Baluz. et Mansi II. 118-9).

² "Dogmatizatis enim sacri ministros altaris jure posse mulieribus permisceri . . . Jam vero quod impudenter asseritis, ministros altaris conjugio debere sociari, etc."—Damiani Lib. v. Epist. 13.

warned by the fate of the Milanese, were prepared to adopt an aggressive policy, and to seek their safety in revolutionising the central authority. Perhaps the bishops, whose silence had been secured by the toleration so distasteful to Damiani, began to feel the pressure which he was bringing to bear upon them, and to look forward with apprehension to the unknown evils of the future. If so, they were ready to make common cause with their flocks, and throw into the scale the immense influence due to their sacred character and temporal power. Thus only the occasion was wanting for an open rupture, and that occasion was furnished by the death of Nicholas in July 1061.

The factions of the day had alienated a powerful portion of the Roman barons from the papal party as represented by Hildebrand. They at once united with the Lombard clergy in addressing a deputation to the young Henry IV., who was still under the tutelage of his mother Agnes, offering him a golden crown and the title of Patrician. The empire was not indisposed to vindicate its old prerogatives, recently annulled by the initial act of Nicholas limiting the right of papal election to the Roman clergy. The overtures were therefore welcomed, and while Anselmo, Bishop of Lucca, was chosen in Rome, 1st October 1061, assuming the name of Alexander II., on the 28th of the same month a rival election took place in Germany, by which Cadalus, Bishop of Parma, was invested with the perilous dignity of Antipope, and divided the allegiance of Christendom under the title of Honorius II. At least two Italian bishops lent their suffrages to these proceedings—those of Vercelli and Piacenza—as representatives of the Lombard interest; and, if the testimony of Damiani is to be believed, they were men whose dissolute lives fitly represented the

license which the reformers asserted to be the principal object of the schismatics.¹

The married or concubinary clergy were now no longer merely isolated criminals, to be punished more or less severely for infractions of discipline. They were a united body, who boldly proclaimed the correctness of their course, and defended themselves by argument as well as by political intrigues and military operations. They thus became offenders of a far deeper dye, for the principles of the Church led irrevocably to the conclusion, paradoxical as it may seem, that he who was guilty of immorality, knowing it to be wrong, was far less criminal than he who married, believing it to be right.² What before had been a transgression, to be redeemed by penance and repentance, became heresy—an awful word in those fierce times. The odious name of Nicolites was speedily fastened on the schismatics, and the Apocalyptic denunciations of St. John were universally held applicable to them. According to Damiani, they supported Cadalus in the expectation that his success would lead to a modification in the discipline of the Church, by which the license to marry would be accorded to all ecclesiastics.³

That support was efficient, and it was shortly needed. A revolution suddenly occurred in the politics of Germany. Some dissatisfied nobles and prelates conspired to obtain power by overthrowing the regency of the

¹ Ad Cadaloum Lib. I. Epist. 20.

² In 1060, Cardinal Humbert of Silva-Candida, in combating the prevailing vice of simony, made use of this argument, reasoning that an immoral priest may be suspended or may be tolerated in hope of amendment, but if he trenches on heresy, there can be neither hope nor mercy for him (Humbert. Cardinal. adv. Simoniac. Lib. III. c. 43). Damiani applied this to the defenders of marriage with all his vigour. "Qui nimirum dum corrumpunt, impudicij; dum defendere nituntur, merito judicantur hæretici" (Opusc. XVIII. Diss. ii. c. 8). "Nam cum peccat homo, quasi in puteum labitur; cum vero peccata defendit, os putei super eum, ne pateat egressus, urgetur. . . . Hoc autem inter peccatorem et hæreticum distat: quia peccator est qui delinquit, hæreticus autem qui peccatum per pravum dogma defendit" (Opusc. XXIV. Præf.).

³ Opusc. XVIII. Diss. ii. c. 8.

dowager Empress Agnes. A stroke of daring treachery put them in possession of the person of the boy-king, and the arch-conspirator, Hanno of Cologne, earned his canonisation by reversing at once the policy of the previous administration. In a solemn council held at Osber in 1062, the pretensions of Cadalus were repudiated, and Alexander II. was recognised as pope. Still Cadalus did not despair, but with the aid of the Lombard clergy he raised forces and marched on Rome, relying on his adherents within the walls. They admitted him into the Leonine city, where he threw himself into the impregnable castle of Sant' Angelo. Immediately besieged by the Romans, he resolutely held out for two years, in spite of incredible privations, but at length he sought safety in flight with but a single follower. Meanwhile his party, as a political body, had become broken up, and though Henry, Archbishop of Ravenna, still adhered to him, he was powerless to maintain his claims. Finally, in 1067, Alexander held a council at Mantua, cleared his election of imputed irregularity, and was universally recognised.

During this period, the "Nicolitan" clergy by no means abandoned their tenets. In 1063, as soon as he could feel reasonably assured of his eventual success, Alexander assembled more than a hundred bishops in council at Rome, where he emphatically repeated the canon promulgated in 1059 by Nicholas II., which was not only a proclamation of his fidelity to the cause of reform, but an admission that the legislation of his predecessor had thus far proved fruitless. Damiani, also, laboured unceasingly with argument and exhortation, but the vehemence of his declamation only shows how widely extended and how powerful the heresy still was. We shall see hereafter that on a mission to Milan, to reduce the married clergy to obedience, he barely escaped with his life; and on another to Lodi, with the same object,

the schismatics, after exhausting argument, in support of priestly marriage, threatened him with arms in their hands, and again his saintly dignity came near being enhanced by the honours of martyrdom.¹ Even the restriction upon second marriages was occasionally lost sight of, and such most irregular unions were celebrated with all the ceremony and rejoicings that were customary among laymen in their public nuptials.² Yet, notwithstanding the pious fervour which habitually stigmatised the wives as harlots and the husbands as unbridled adulterers, Damiani himself allows us to see that the marriage relation was preserved with thorough fidelity on the part of the women, and was compatible with learning, decency, and strict attention to religious duty by the men. Urging the wives to quit their husbands, he finds it necessary to combat their scruples at breaking what was to them a solemn engagement, fortified with all legal provisions and religious rites, but which he pronounces a frivolous and meaningless ceremony.³ So, in deploring the habitual practice of marriage among the Piedmontese clergy, he regards it as the only blot upon men who otherwise appeared to him as a chorus of angels, and as shining lights in the Church.

Such considerations as these, however, had no influence in diminishing Damiani's zeal. To Cunibert, Bishop of Turin, whose spiritual flock he thus so much admired, he addressed, about 1065, an epistle reproaching him with

¹ Opusc. XVIII. Diss. ii. c. 3.

² Obeunte igitur pellice, viduatus adjecit iterare conjugium. Quid plura? Concederat sibi quasi tabularum lege prostibulum, amicorum atque confinium congregat nuptiali more conventum, epulaturis etiam totius affluentiae providet apparatus.—Damiani Opusc. XVIII. Diss. ii. c. 6.

³ Nec vos terreat quod forte, non dicam fidei sed perfidiae, vos annulus subarravit: quod rata et monumenta dotalia notarius quasi matrimonii jure conscripsit; quod juramentum ad confirmandam quodammodo conjugii copulam utrinque processit. Totum hoc quod videlicet apud alios est conjugii firmamentum, inter vos vanum judicatur et frivolum.—Opusc. XVIII. Diss. ii. c. 7.

⁴ Opusc. XVIII. Diss. ii. Præf.

his criminal laxity in permitting such transgressions in his diocese, and urging him strenuously to undertake the reform which was so necessary to the purity of the Church.¹ Cunibert apparently did not respond to the exhortation, for Damiani proceeded to appeal to the temporal sovereign of Savoy and Piedmont, Adelaide, widow of Humbert-aux-Blanches-Mains, who was then regent. In an elaborate epistle he urges her to attack the wives, while her bishops shall coerce the husbands; but if the latter neglect that duty, he invites her to interpose with the secular power, and thus avert from her house and her country the Divine wrath which must else overtake them.² That so strict a Churchman as Damiani should not only tolerate but advise the exercise of temporal authority over ecclesiastics, and this, too, in a matter purely ecclesiastical, shows how completely the one idea had become dominant in his mind, since he was willing to sacrifice to it the privileges and immunities for which the Church had been struggling, by fair means and foul, for six centuries. It would appear, moreover, that this was not the first time that potentates had been allowed, or had assumed, to exercise power in the matter, for Damiani cautions the Countess Adelaide not to follow the example of some evil-minded magnates and make the pretence of reformation an excuse for spoiling the Church.³

The zeal of the indefatigable Damiani continued to be as unconquerable as the stubbornness of his adversaries, and some two years later we find him again at work. The date of 1067 is generally attributed to a letter which he addressed to Peter, Cardinal Archpriest of the Lateran, stimulating him to renewed exertions in extirpating this foul disgrace to the Church, and arguing

¹ Opusc. XVIII. Diss. ii.

² Opusc. XVIII. Diss. iii. c. i, 2.

³ Opusc. XVIII. Diss. iii, c. 3.

at great length in reply to the reasons and excuses with which the clerical Benedicks continued to defend their vile heresy.¹

In all this controversy, it is instructive to observe how Damiani shows himself to be the pure model of monkish asceticism, untainted with any practical wisdom and unwarped by any earthly considerations. When Hildebrand struggled for sacerdotal celibacy, the shrewdness of the serpent guided the innocence of the dove, and he fought for what he knew would prove a weapon of tremendous power in securing for the Church the theocracy which was his pure ideal of human institutions. Not a thought of the worldly advantages consequent upon the reform appears to have crossed the mind of Damiani. To him it was simply a matter of conscience that the ministers of Christ should be adorned with the austere purity through which alone lay the path to salvation. Accordingly, the arguments which he employs in his endless disputations carefully avoid the practical reasons which were the principal motive for enforcing celibacy. His main reliance is on the assumption that, as Christ was born of a virgin, so he should be served and the Eucharist be handled only by virgins; and his subsidiary logic consists of mystical interpretations of passages in the Jewish history of the Old Testament. Phineas, of course, affords a favourite and oft-repeated argument and illustration. Allusions to Ahimelech can also be understood, but the reasoning based upon the tower of Sichein, the linen girdle of Jeremiah, and the catastrophe of Cain and Abel is convincing only as to the unworldliness of the recluse of Avellana.

Notwithstanding all his learning and eloquence, the authority of his name, the lustre of his example, and the tireless efforts of his fiery energy, the cause to which he

¹ Opusc. xviii. Diss. i.

had devoted himself did not advance. The later years of Alexander's pontificate afford unmistakable indications that the puritan party were becoming discouraged; that they were disposed to abate some of their demands, and were ready to make concessions to the refractory spirit which refused obedience both in principle and in practice. Thus, in 1068, a decretal addressed to the authorities of Dalmatia merely threatens suspension until satisfaction is made by those who marry in orders or who refuse to abandon their wives.¹ A somewhat different position was taken with the Venetians. An epistle to the Patriarch of Grado orders the deprivation of those who live in open and undisguised concubinage, but significantly confines its penalties to notorious infractions of the rule, and leaves to God the investigation of such as may be prudently concealed.² This manifests a willingness to temporise with offenders whose respect for papal authority would induce them to abstain from defiant disobedience—a pusillanimous tempting of hypocrisy to which the bolder Hildebrand could never have given his consent. A principle of great importance, moreover, was abandoned when, in 1070, Alexander assented to the consecration of the bishop-elect of Le Mans, who was the son of a priest;³ and when he stated that this was not a precedent for

¹ Alex. II. Epist. 125.—Batthyani (Leg. Eccles. Hungar. I. 407) remarks that this lenity arose from the fact that otherwise divine service would have ceased—"omnes ecclesiæ a divinis officiis vacassent."

It is also observable that subdeacons are not included in this prohibition—a remarkable exemption, since by this time their subjection to the law of celibacy had become a settled rule in the Roman Church. I may here remark that I had collected considerable material to trace the varying practice with regard to the subdiaconate, but as it involves no principle, merely depending in earlier times upon the local custom as to the functions of the grade, the discussion would scarcely repay the space that it would occupy.

² De manifestis loquimur; secretorum autem cognitur et iudex Deus est.—Alex. II. Epist. 118.

³ Cenomanensem electum, pro eo quod filius sacerdotis dicitur, si cæteræ virtutes in eum conveniunt, non rejicimus; sed, suffragantibus meritis, patienter suscipimus; non tamen ut hoc pro regula in posterum assumatur, sed ad tempus ecclesiæ periculo consulitur.—Gratian. Dist. LVI. c. 13.

the future, but merely a concession to the evil of the times, his laxity was the more impressive, since he thus admitted his violation of the canons. He subsequently even enlarged this special permission into a general rule, with merely the saving clause that the proposed incumbent should be more worthy than his competitors.¹ Alexander, moreover, maintained in force the ancient rule that no married man could assume monastic vows unless his wife gave her free consent, and entered a convent at the same time.² We shall see that in little more than half a century the progress of sacerdotalism rendered the sacrament of marriage powerless in comparison with the vows of religion.

Alexander clearly had not in him the stuff of which persecutors and reformers are made, as, indeed, his merciful liberality in extending over the Jews throughout Europe the protection of the Holy See would sufficiently demonstrate. At length he, too, was released from earthly cares, and on the day after his decease, on 22nd April 1073, his place was filled by the man who of all others was the most perfect impersonation of the aggressive churchmanship of the age.

Before proceeding, however, to sketch the stormy pontificate of Hildebrand in its relation to our subject, I must pause to relate the episode of the Milanese clergy. The struggle in that city to enforce the ascetic

¹ *Nam pro eo quod filius sacerdotis dicitur, si cæteræ virtutes in eum convenient, non rejicimus, sed suffragantibus meritis connivendo, eum recipimus.*—Alex. II. Epist. 133. Baronius attributes to this the date of 1071.

The contrast between the weakness of Alexander and the unbending rigidity of his successor, Hildebrand, is well shown by comparing this unlimited acceptance of priestly offspring with the refusal of the latter to permit the elevation of a clerk requested by both his bishop and the King of Aragon, simply because he was illegitimate, although in other respects admitted to be unexceptionable (Gregor. VII. Lib. II. Epist. 50). We have already seen that, even amid the license which prevailed during the early part of the century, some German bishops habitually refused orders to the sons of priests.

² Alex. II. Epist. 112.

principles of the reformers gives so perfect an inside view of the reformation itself, and its various stages have been handed down to us with so much minuteness by contemporary writers, that it deserves to be treated by itself as a disconnected whole.

CHAPTER XIII

MILAN

IN the primitive ages of the Church, Milan was at the head of the Northern Vicariate of Italy, as Rome was of the Southern. When the preponderance of the latter city became established, the glory of St. Ambrose shed a lustre over his capital which the true Milanese fondly regarded as rivalling that of St. Peter, and the superiority of Rome was grudgingly admitted. In the eleventh century, Milan is found occupying the chief place among the Lombard cities, virtually governed by its archbishop, whose temporal as well as spiritual power rendered his position one of great influence and importance. Yet even at that early period, the republican spirit was already developed, and the city was divided into factions, as the nobles and citizens struggled for alternate supremacy.

Milan was moreover the headquarters of the hidden Manichæism which, after surviving centuries of persecution in the East, was now secretly invading Europe through Bulgaria, and had already attracted the vigilant attention of the Church in localities widely separated. Its earliest open manifestation was in Toulouse, in 1018; at Orleans, in 1023, King Robert the Pious caused numerous sectaries to expiate their heresy at the stake, where their unshrinking zeal excited general wonder. At Cambrai and Liège similar measures of repression became necessary in 1025; the Emperor Henry III. endeavoured at Goslar, in 1052, to put an end to them with the gallows; and traces of them are to be found at Agen about the year 1100; at Soissons in 1114; at

Toulouse in 1118; at Cologne in 1146; at Périgord in 1147; in England in 1166, until we can trace their connection with the Albigenses, whose misfortunes fill so black a page in the history of the thirteenth century. Calling themselves Cathari, and stigmatised by true believers under various opprobrious names, of which the commonest was Paterins, their doctrines were those of the ancient Manichæans, their most characteristic tenets being belief in the dualistic principle, and the abhorrence of animal food and of marriage.¹ The prevalence of these dogmas among the Milanese populace furnishes a probable explanation of much that took place during the contest between Rome and the married priests.

Eriberto di Arzago, who filled the archiepiscopal chair of Milan from 1019 to 1045, was one of the most powerful princes of Italy, and though unsuccessful in the revolt which he organised in 1034 against the Emperor Conrad the Salic, his influence was scarcely diminished after his return from the expulsion which punished his rebellion.² At the time of his death, Milan was passing through one of its accustomed civil dissensions. The Motta, or body of burgesses, had quarrelled with the nobles and archbishop, and, under the leadership of an apostate noble named Lanzo, had expelled them from the city—an ejection which was followed by an unsuccessful siege of three years. At length, in 1044, Lanzo obtained promise of armed assist-

¹ For the doctrines of the Cathari see the Author's "History of the Inquisition of the Middle Ages," Vol. I. chap. iii.

² It is scarcely worth while to more than refer to the assertion of mediæval Milanese chroniclers that Eriberto married a noble lady named Useria. Puricelli (Muratori Script. Rer. Ital. V. 122-3) has sufficiently demonstrated its improbability. He does not, however, allude to the argument derivable from the fact that Eriberto's name is signed to the proceedings of the Council of Pavia in 1022, where priestly marriage was so severely condemned.

Vide "The Life and Times of Hildebrand," by the Abbé O. Délarc; also "The Papal Monarchy," by the Rev. Father W. Barry, D.D.; "The Beginnings of the Temporal Sovereignty of the Popes," by Monsignor L. Duchesne, D.D.

ance from Henry III., which reduced the nobles to subjection, and they returned in peace. Eriberto died the following year, and the election of his successor caused great excitement. Erlembaldo, the popular chief (*dominus populi*), called the citizens together to nominate candidates, and induced them to select four. One of these was Landolfo Cotta, a notary of the sacred palace, who was brother to Erlembaldo; another was Anselmo di Badagio, Cardinal of the Milanese Church, subsequently Bishop of Lucca, and finally, as we have seen, pope, under the name of Alexander II.; the third was Arialdo, of the family of the capitanei of Carinate; and the fourth was Otho, another Milanese cardinal. These four were sent to the emperor, for him to make his selection; but the faction of the nobles despatched a rival in the person of Guido di Valate, who already held the appointment of secretary from the emperor, and who had recommended himself by zealous services, which now claimed their reward. Henry gave the coveted dignity to Guido, to the great surprise and indignation of the popular nominees. Their expostulations were unavailing, and both parties returned—Guido to assume an office harassed by the opposition of the people on whom he had been forced, and the disappointed candidates to brood over the wrongs which had deprived them of the splendid prize.¹ We shall see how thoroughly three of those candidates avenged themselves.

It is observable from this transaction that Milan was completely independent of Rome. The sovereignty of the distant emperor, absorbed in the dissensions of Germany, could press but lightly on the powerful and turbulent city. Rome was not even thought of in creating the archbishop, whose spiritual and temporal power

¹ Gualvaneo Flamma, Chron. Mag. c. 763.—Landulph. Senior. Mediolan. Hist. Lib. III. c. 2.

were granted by the imperial investiture. But when, soon after, the German popes had rescued the papacy from the contempt into which it had fallen, its domination over Milan became a necessary step in its progress to universal supremacy, and lent additional vigour to the desires of the reformers to restore the forgotten discipline of the Church in a city so influential.

Marriage, at this time, was a universal privilege of the Milanese clergy. If we may believe the testimony of one who was almost a contemporary, the candidate for holy orders was strictly examined as to his learning and morals. These being satisfactory, he was, if unmarried, asked if he had strength to remain so, and if he replied in the negative, he could forthwith betroth himself and marry with the ordinary legal and religious ceremonies. Second marriages were not allowed, and the Levitical law as to the virginity of the bride was strictly observed. Those who remained single were objects of suspicion, while those who performed their sacred functions duly, and brought up their families in the fear of God, were respected and obeyed by their flocks as pastors should be, and were eligible to the episcopate. Concubinage was regarded as a heinous offence, and those guilty of it were debarred from all promotion¹—in this reversing the estimate placed upon

¹ Landulf. Senior. L. II. c. 35.

The writer was a partisan of the married clergy; but his description is confirmed by the testimony which Damiani bears (ante, p. 239) to the good character of the married clergy of Savoy. Still, in view of the manners of the age, this is evidently a too partial account, and there is truth in the counter statement of an opponent, St. Andrea of Vallombrosa, a disciple of St. Arialdo—"Nam alii cum canibus et accipitribus huc illucque pervagantes, suum venationi lubricæ famulatum tradebant; alii vero tabernarii et nequam villici, alii impii usurarii existebant; cuncti fere aut cum publicis uxoribus sive scortis, suam ignominiose ducebant vitam . . . Universi sic sub simoniaca hæresi tenebantur impliciti."—Vit. S. Arialdi c. I. No. 7.

The Milanese defended their position not only by Scripture texts, but also by a decision which they affirmed was rendered by St. Ambrose, to whom the question of the permissibility of sacerdotal marriage had been referred by the pope and bishops. Of course the story was without foundation, but singularly enough, the Milanese clung to it long after the subject had ceased to be open to discussion.

the respective infractions of discipline by the Roman Church.

The see of Lucca consoled Anselmo di Badagio for the failure of his aspirations towards the archiepiscopate, and the other disappointed candidates for a while cherished their mortification in silence. Landolfo and Arialdo were inclined to asceticism, and a visit which Anselmo paid to Milan stimulated them to undertake a reform which could not but prove a source of endless trouble to their successful competitor Guido. Leaders of the people, and masters of the art of inflaming popular passion, they caused assemblies to be held in which they inveighed in the strongest terms against the irregularities of the clergy, whose sacraments they stigmatised as the foulest corruption, whose churches they denounced as dens of prostitution, and whose property they assumed to be legitimate prey for the spoiler. Guido in vain endeavoured to repress the agitation thus produced, argued in favour of the married clergy, and was sustained by the party of nobles. In a city like Milan, it was not difficult to excite a tumult. Besides the influence of the perennial factions, ever eager to tear each other's throats, the populace were ready to yield to the eloquence of the bold reformers. The Manichæan heresy had taken deep root among the masses, who, afraid to declare their damnable doctrines openly, were rejoiced in any way to undermine the authority of the priesthood, and whose views were in accordance with those now broached on the subject of

Puricelli has investigated the matter with his usual conscientious industry, and shows the repetition of the legend not only by Datus and Landulfus Senior in the eleventh century, but by Gualvaneo Flamma in the thirteenth, by the author of the *Flos Florum*, by Pietro Agario, and by Bernardino Corio in the fifteenth, and by Tristano Calco in the sixteenth century—the two latter falling in consequence under the revision of the Index (*Script. Rer. Ital.* V. 122-3).

marriage.¹ While these motives would urge forward the serious portion of the citizens, the unthinking rabble would naturally be prompt to embrace any cause which promised a prospect of disturbance and plunder. Party lines were quickly drawn, and if the reformers were able to revive a forgotten scandal by stigmatising their opponents as Nicolites, the party of the clergy and the nobles had their revenge. The meetings of Landolfo and Arialdo were held in a spot called Pataria, whence they soon became known as Paterins—a term which for centuries continued to be of fearful import, as synonymous with Manichæans.²

Matters could not long remain in this condition. During an altercation in the church of San Celso, a hot-headed priest assaulted Arialdo, whom Landolfo extricated from the crowd at considerable personal risk. Thereupon the reformers called the people together in the theatre; inflammatory addresses speedily wrought up the popular passions to ungovernable fury; the priests were turned out of their churches, their houses sacked, their

¹ Milan long retained its bad pre-eminence as a nest of heresy. When Frederic II., in 1236, delayed his promised crusade to subdue the rebellious Milanese, his excuse to the pope was that he ought not to leave behind him unbelievers worse than those whom he would seek across the seas. "Cum . . . jam zizania segetes incipient suffocare per civitates Italicas, præcipue Mediolanensium, transire ad Saracenos hostiliter expugnandos, et illos incorrectos pertransire, esset vulnus infixum ferro fomentis superficialibus delinire, et cicatricem deformam non medelam procurare," and Matthew Paris calls Milan "omnium hæreticorum, Paterinorum, Luciferanorum, Publicanorum, Albigenium, Usurariorum refugium ac receptaculum."—Hist. Angl. ann. 1236.

² Arnulf. Gest. Archiep. Mediolan. Lib. III. c. 9.—Landulf. Sen. Lib. III. c. 10.

Benzo, the uncompromising imperialist, always alludes to the papal party when he speaks of the Patarini—that term not having yet assumed the significance which it subsequently obtained. He accuses Anselmo di Badagio of being the author of the troubles—"primitus Patariam invenit, arcanum domini sui archiepiscopi cui juraverat inimicis aperuit. Abusus est etiam quadam monacha, cum Landulphino suo proprio consobrino."—Comment. de Reb. Henric. IV. Lib. VII. c. 2.—The latter accusation can no doubt be set down as one of the baseless scandals so freely cast from one party to the other in those turbulent times.

Rag-pickers were known as Patari, and the quarter of Milan inhabited by them was called Pataria even as late as the eighteenth century.—Schmidt, Histoire des Cathares, II. 279.

persons maltreated, and they were finally obliged to purchase a suspension of oppression by subscribing a paper binding themselves to chastity. The nobles, far from being able to protect the clergy, finding themselves also in danger, sought safety in flight; while the rabble, having exhausted the support derivable from intramural plunder, spread over the country and repeated in the villages the devastations of priestly property which they had committed in Milan.¹

The suffering clergy applied for relief to the bishops of the province, and finding none, at length appealed to Rome itself. Stephen IX., who then filled the papal chair, authorised the archbishop to hold a synod for the purpose of restoring peace. It met, in the early part of 1058, at Fontaneto, near Novaro. The prelates were unanimous in sustaining their clergy, and the reformers Landolfo and Arialdo were excommunicated without a dissentient voice. They disregarded the interdict, however, redoubled their efforts with the people, whom they bound by a solemn oath to adhere to the sacred cause, and even forced the priests to join in the compact. Arialdo then proceeded to Rome, where he developed in full the objects of the movement, and pointed out that it would not only result in restoring purity and discipline, but might also be used to break down the dangerous independence of the Ambrosian Church and reduce it to the subjection which it owed and refused to the apostolic see. The arguments were convincing, the excommunication was removed, and Arialdo returned to his work with zeal more fiery than ever.²

Meanwhile the nobles had taken heart and offered armed resistance to the Patarian faction, resulting in incessant fights and increasing bloodshed. Nicholas II.,

¹ Arnulf. Lib. III. c. 10.—Landulf. Sen. Lib. III. c. 9.

² Arnulf. Lib. III. c. 11.

who by this time had succeeded Stephen IX., sent Hildebrand and Anselmo di Badagio on a mission to Milan, with instructions to allay the passions which led to such deplorable results, and, while endeavouring to uphold the rules of discipline, to pacify if possible the people, and to arrange such a basis of reconciliation as might restore peace to the distracted Church. The milder Anselmo might perhaps have succeeded in this errand of charity, but the unbending Hildebrand was not likely to listen to aught but unconditional subjection to the canons and to Rome. The quarrel therefore waxed fiercer and deadlier; the turmoil became more inextricable as daily combats embittered both parties, and the missionaries departed, leaving Guido with scarcely a shadow of authority over his rebellious city, and the seeds of discord more widely scattered and more deeply planted than ever.¹

Again, in 1059, a papal legation was sent with full authority to force the recalcitrant clergy to submission. Anselmo again returned to his native city, accompanied this time by Peter Damiani. Their presence and their pretensions caused a fearful tumult, in which Damiani and Landolfo were in deadly peril.² An assembly was at length held, where the legates asserted the papal pre-eminence by taking the place of honour, to the general indignation of the Milanese, who did not relish the degradation of their archbishop before the representatives of a foreign prelate. The question in debate hinged upon the authority of Rome, which was stoutly denied by the Lombards.³ Peter, in a long oration, showed that Rome

¹ Landulf. Sen. Lib. III. c. 13.

² "Quod Mediolanensis civitas tunc in seditionem versa, repentinum utique nostrum minatur interitum."—The peril must have been serious, for even Landolfo, whose nerves were seasoned by constant civic strife, made a vow to become a monk if he should escape—his delay in fulfilling which, after the danger was past, called forth the urgent remonstrances of Damiani.—Damiani Opusc. XLII. cap. 1.

³ Their defence was "non debere Ambrosianam ecclesiam Romanis legibus subjacere, nullumque judicandi vel disponendi jus Romano pontifici in illa sede competere.—Damiani Opusc. v.

had Christianised the rest of Western Europe, and that St. Ambrose himself had invoked the papal power as superior to his own. The pride of the Ambrosian Church gave way, and the supremacy of St. Peter was finally acknowledged. This granted, the rest followed as a matter of course, and the heretical errors of simony and marriage had to be abandoned. Peter thought himself merciful in his triumph; where all alike were guilty, punishment for the past became impossible, and he restricted himself to provisions for the future. The archbishop and his clergy signed a paper expressing their contrition in the most humiliating terms, and binding themselves and their successors, under penalty of eternal damnation, to render simony thereafter unknown. As regards the Nicolitan heresy, a significant caution was observed, for its extirpation was only promised in as far as it should be found possible;¹ and when Arnolfo, the nephew of Guido, swore for his uncle that in future monks should be the only persons ordained without a preliminary oath that no money had been paid or received, it is observable that the maintenance of chastity was discreetly passed over. Then the archbishop and his clergy swore, in the hands of Damiani at the altar, their faithful observance of the pledge to destroy the simoniacal and Nicolitan heresies, under penalties the most tremendous; and Guido, prostrating himself on the ground, humbly deplored his negligence in the past, imposed on himself a penitence of a hundred years (redeemable at a certain sum per annum), and vowed a pilgrimage to Santiago de Compostella to atone for his sin. Not content with this, Damiani mounted the pulpit and made both priests and people take an oath to extirpate

¹ * Nicolaitarum quoque hæresim nihilominus condemnamus, et non modo presbyteros et diaconos et subdiaconos ab uxorum et concubinarum fædo consortio, nostris studiis, in quantum nobis possibilitas fuerit, sub eodem quo supra testimonio arcendos esse promittimus.—Damiani Opusc. v.

both heresies; and the clergy, before being reconciled to the Church and restored to the positions which they had forfeited by their contumacy, were forced individually under oath to anathematise all heresies, and especially those of simony and marriage. A penance was imposed on every one involved in simony—no allusion being made to those who were married; some, who were manifestly unfit for their sacred duties, were suspended, and the legates returned, after triumphantly accomplishing the objects of their mission.¹

If Damiani fancied that argumentative subtlety and paper promises, even though solemnly given in the name of God and all His saints, were to settle a question involving the fiercest passions of men, the cloistered saint knew little of human nature. The pride of the Milanese was deeply wounded by a subjection to Rome, unknown for many generations, and ill endured by men who gloried in the ancient dignity of the Ambrosian Church. When, therefore, in 1061, their townsman, Anselmo di Badagio, was elevated from the episcopate of Lucca to that of the Holy See, Milan, in common with the rest of Lombardy, eagerly embraced the cause of the anti-pope Cadalus. One of Anselmo's earliest acts as pope was to address a letter to the Milanese, affectionately exhorting them to amendment, and expressing a hope that his pontificate was to witness an extinction of the heresies which had distracted and degraded the Church.² He could scarcely have entertained the confidence which he expressed, for though Landolfo and Arialdo endeavoured, with unabated zeal, to enforce the canons, the Nicotian faction, regardless of the pledges given to Damiani, maintained the conquest with equal stubborn-

¹ Damiani *op. cit.*—Damiani's account is addressed to the pope, who, he seems to think, may be dissatisfied with the lenity which permitted heretics to return to the Church on such easy terms, and he is at some pains to justify himself for his mildness.

² Alexand. II. *Epist.* 1.

ness. Landolfo, on a mission to Rome, was attacked at Piacenza, wounded, and forced to return. Soon after this he was prostrated by a pulmonary affection, lost his voice, and died after a lingering illness of two years.¹ The Paterins, thus deprived of their leader, found another in the person of his brother, Erlembaldo, just then returned from a pilgrimage to the Holy Land. Gifted with every knightly accomplishment, valiant in war, sagacious in council, of a commanding presence, and endowed with eloquence to sway the passions of the multitude, he was the impersonation of a popular leader; while, in the cause to which he was now called, his deep religious convictions lent an attraction which was heightened by an unpardonable personal wrong—for, early in life, he had been betrothed to a young girl, who fell under the seductive wiles of an unprincipled priest. Yet Erlembaldo did not embark in civil strife without a hesitation which reflects honour on his character. He refused, at first, but was persuaded to seek counsel of the pope. Arialdo accompanied him to Rome, and urged Alexander to adopt him as military leader in the war against sacerdotal marriage. Alexander, too, shrank from the responsibility of authorising war in such a cause, but Arialdo sought the assistance of Hildebrand, and the scruples of the pope were removed by the prospect of asserting the authority of Rome. When Erlembaldo heard the commands of the Vicegerent of God, and received a sacred banner to be borne through the expected battles, he could no longer doubt as to his duty. He accepted the mission, and to it he devoted his life.²

¹ His followers claimed for him the honours of martyrdom. He was revered accordingly, and Muratori gravely asserts that the evidence in his favour is indubitable.

² Arnulf. Lib. III. c. 13, 14.—Landolf. Sen. Lib. III. c. 13, 14.

To this period may probably be attributed two epistles of Alexander II. (Epist. 93, 94) to the clergy and people of Milan, informing both parties that a Roman

Returning to Milan with this sanction, the zeal and military experience of Erlembaldo soon made themselves felt. He enrolled secretly all the young men whom persuasion, threats, or promises could induce to follow his standard, and thus supported by an organised body, he endeavoured to enforce the decretals inhibiting simony and marriage. All recalcitrant priests presuming to officiate were torn from the altars. The riots, which seem to have ceased for a time, became, with varying fortune, more numerous and alarming than ever, and the persecution of the clergy was greatly intensified. Guido, at length, after vainly endeavouring to uphold and protect the sacerdotal body, was driven from the city, and the popular reformers seemed at last to have carried their point, after a civil war which had now lasted, with short intervals, for nearly ten years.¹

As though to confirm the victory, Arialdo, in 1066, at a council held in Rome, procured the excommunication of his archbishop, Guido, with which he returned triumphantly to Milan. Some popular revolution among the factions, however, had brought Guido back to the city, where he maintained a precarious position. Disregarding the excommunication, he resolved to officiate in the solemn services of Pentecost (June 4, 1066), and, braving all opposition, he appeared at the altar. Excited to fury at this unexpected contumacy, the popular party, led on by Erlembaldo and Arialdo, attacked him in the church; his followers rallied in his defence, but, after a stubborn fight, were forced to leave him in the hands of

synod had recently prohibited incontinent priests from officiating, and had ordered the people not to attend at their ministrations. He adds that those who abandon their functions to cleave to their wives, must be forced also to give up their benefices.

¹ Arnulf. Lib. III. c. 15.—Landulf. Sen. Lib. III. c. 15.—Arnulfus alludes to a dispute concerning the litany, which complicated the quarrel. The troubles even invaded the monasteries, for Erlembaldo procured the forcible ejection of sundry abbots appointed by Guido.

his enemies, by whom he was beaten nearly to death. Shocked by this outrage, many of the citizens abandoned the party of the reformers, and the nobles, taking advantage of the revulsion of feeling, again had the ascendancy. Arialdo was obliged to fly for his life, and endeavoured to conceal himself, travelling only by night. The avengers were close upon his track, however; he was betrayed by a priest, and the satellites of Guido carried him to an island in Lago Maggiore, where (June 27, 1066) they put him to death, with all the refinement of cruelty. A series of miracles prevented the attempted concealment of the martyred corpse, and ten months later Erlembaldo recovered it, fresh and untouched by corruption. Carried to Milan, it was interred with stately pomp in the monastery of San Celso, where the miracles wrought at his tomb proclaimed the sanctity of him who had died for the faith, and ere long his canonisation formally enrolled St. Arialdo in the calendar of saints.¹

Erlembaldo for a while remained quiet, but in secret he reconstructed his party, and, undaunted by the fate of his associate, he suddenly renewed the civil strife. Successful at first, he forced the clergy to bind themselves by fresh oaths, and expelled Guido again from the city; but the clerical party recovered its strength, and the war was carried on with varying fortune, until, in 1067, Alexander II. despatched another legation with orders to harmonise, if possible, the endless strife. Car-

¹ Arnulf. Lib. III. c. 18.—Landulf. Lib. III. c. 29. In 1090 the remains of St. Arialdo were translated by Archbishop Anselmo IV. to the church of St. Denis, and Muratori quotes from Alciati a curious statement to the effect that in 1508 Louis XII. removed them to Paris in mistake for the relics of St. Denis the Areopagite, the Parisians in his time still venerating them as those of the latter saint.

About the time of Arialdo's martyrdom, Cremona must have been won over to the cause of the reformers, for in 1066 we find Alexander II. addressing the "religiosis clericis et fidelibus laicis" of that city, thanking God that they had been moved to extirpate the simoniacal and Nicolitan heresies, and commanding that in future all those in orders who contaminated themselves with women should be degraded.—Alex. II. Epist. 36.

dinals Mainardo and Minuto appear to have been sincerely desirous of reconciling the angry factions. They proclaimed an amnesty, and promulgated a constitution which protected the clergy from abuse and persecution, and though they decreed suspension for married and concubinary priests, they required that none should be punished on suspicion, and laid down such regulations for trial as gave great prospect of immunity.¹ There must have been pressing necessity for some such regulations, if we may believe the assertion of Landolfo that when Erlembaldo found his funds running low he appointed thirty judges to examine all ecclesiastics in holy orders. Those who could not procure twelve conjurators to swear with them on the Gospels as to their immaculate purity since ordination, had all their property confiscated. At the same time the rabble used to prowl around at night and throw female ornaments and articles of apparel into priests' houses; then, breaking open the doors, they would proclaim the criminality of the inmates, and plunder everything that they could lay their hands on.²

Moderate men of both parties, wearied with the unceasing strife, eagerly hailed the accommodation proposed by the papal legates, and rejoiced at the prospect of peace. Erlembaldo, however, was dissatisfied, and, visiting Rome, soon aroused a fresh cause of quarrel. At the suggestion of Hildebrand he started the portentous question of investitures, and on his return he endeavoured to force both clergy and laity to take an oath that in future their archbishops should apply to the pope, and not to the emperor, for confirmation—thus securing a chief devoted to the cause of reform. Guido sought to anticipate this movement, and, in 1069, old and wearied with the unending contention, he resigned his archbishopric to the subdeacon Gotefrido, who had long been

¹ Arnulf. Lib. III. c. 18, 19.

Landulf. Sen. Lib. III. c. 20.

his principal adviser. The latter procured his confirmation from Henry IV., but the Milanese, defrauded of their electoral privileges, refused to recognise him. Erlembaldo was not slow to take advantage of the popular feeling; a tumult was readily excited, and Gotefrido was glad to escape at night from the rebellious city. Guido added fresh confusion by asserting that he had been deceived by Gotefrido, and by endeavouring to resume his see. To this end he made a treaty with Erlembaldo, but that crafty chieftain, obtaining possession of his person, imprisoned him in the monastery of San Celso, and then proceeded to besiege Gotefrido in Castiglione. The new archbishop defended himself bravely, until, in 1071, Erlembaldo was forced to abandon the enterprise.¹

Meanwhile another aspirant, Azzo, installed by Erlembaldo, fared no better than his rivals. The people, unbidden guests, rushed in to his inaugural banquet, unearthed him in the corner where he had hidden himself, dragged him by the heels into the street, and, placing him in a pulpit, forced him to swear that he would make no further pretensions to the see; while the papal legate, who had presided over the solemnities, was glad to escape with his life. Azzo, however, was recognised by Rome; he was released from the obligation of his oath, and money was furnished to enable him to maintain his quarrel. On the other hand, Henry IV. sent assistance to Gotefrido, which enabled him to carry on the campaign with some vigour; but he was unable to obtain a foothold in Milan. Azzo fled to Rome, and the city remained without an archbishop and under an interdict launched in 1074 by Hildebrand, who, in April 1073, had succeeded to Alexander II.²

The Milanese were disposed to disregard the interdict,

¹ Arnulf. Lib. III. c. 19, 20, 21, 22, 23.—Landulf. Sen. Lib. III. c. 28.

² Arnulf. Lib. III. c. 23; Lib. IV. c. 2, 3, 4.

while Erlembaldo, who now held undisputed command of the city—and, indeed, of almost all Lombardy—used every effort to enforce respect for it. At length, at Easter 1075, he resolutely prevented the solemnisation of the sacred rites, and cast out the holy chrism which the priests had persisted in preparing. This roused the populace to resistance; both parties flew to arms, and, at the very commencement of the fray, Erlembaldo fell mortally wounded under the shade of the papal banner, which was still the emblem of his cause, and in virtue of which he was canonised as a saintly martyr to the faith. The Milanese, sinking all past animosities, united in promptly sending an embassy to Henry IV. to congratulate him on the death of the common enemy, and to request the appointment of another bishop. To this he responded by nominating Tedaldo, who was duly consecrated, notwithstanding the pretensions of his competitors, Gotefrido and Azzo. Tedaldo was the leader of the disaffected bishops who, at the Synod of Pavia, in 1076, excommunicated Pope Gregory himself; and though, after the interview at Canossa, in 1077, the Lombards, disgusted with Henry's voluntary humiliation before that papal power which they had learned to despise, abandoned the imperialists for a time, yet Tedaldo kept his seat until his death in 1085, notwithstanding the repeated excommunications launched against him by Gregory.¹

In the later years of this long and bloody controversy, it is evident that the political element greatly complicated the religious ground of quarrel—that pope and emperor without made use of burgher and noble within, and the

¹ Arnulf. Lib. IV., Lib. V. c. 2, 5, 9.—Landulf. Sen. Lib. III. c. 29; Lib. IV. c. 2.—Lambert. Schafnab. ann. 1077.

Erlembaldo was canonised by Urban II. towards the end of the century. Muratori (Annal. ann. 1085) styles Tedaldo “capo e colonna maestra degli Scismatici di Lombardia.”

latter took sides, as respects simony and sacerdotal marriage, to further the ends of individual ambition. Still, the disputed points of discipline were the ostensible causes of the struggle, whatever might be the private aims of civic factions, or of imperial and papal rivals; and these points gave a keener purpose to the strife, and furnished an inexhaustible supply of recruits to each contending faction. Thus, about the year 1070, a conference took place at Milan between priests deputed by both sides, in which the question of marriage was argued as earnestly as though it were the source of all the intestine troubles.¹ So when, in 1073, Gregory, shortly after his accession, addressed letters to Erlembaldo urging him to persevere in the good work, and to the Lombard bishops commanding them to assist him, the object of his labours is assumed to be the extirpation of simony and the restoration of the clergy to the purity becoming their sacred office.² And when, in 1076, the schismatic bishops, under the lead of Tedaldo of Milan, met in council at Pavia to renounce all obedience to Gregory, one of the articles of accusation brought against him was that he separated husbands and wives, and preferred licentiousness to marriage, thus giving, in their grounds of complaint against him; especial prominence to his zeal for the introduction of celibacy.³

Yet at last the question of sacerdotal marriage sank out of sight when the civil broils of Milan merged into the European quarrel between the empire and papacy. When, in 1093, Henry IV. was driven out of Italy by the revolt of his son Conrad, and the latter was created King of Lombardy by Urban II. and the Countess Ma-

¹ Landulf. Sen. Lib. III. c. 21, 22, 23, 24, 25.

² Gregor. II. Regist. Lib. I. Epistt. 25, 26, 27.

³ *Maritos ab uxoribus separat; scorta pudicis conjugibus; stupra, incestus, adulteria, casto præfert connubio; populares adversus sacerdotes, vulgus adversum episcopos concitat.*—Comit. Ticinens. ann. 1076 (Goldast. III. 314).

tilda, the dependence of the young king upon the pope rendered impossible any further open defiance of the laws of the Church, and public marriage there, as elsewhere, was doubtless replaced by secret immorality.¹ The triumph of the sacerdotal party was consummated at the great Council of Piacenza, held by Urban II. in February 1095, to which prelates flocked from every part of Europe, and the people gathered in immense numbers. If, as the chronicler informs us, four thousand ecclesiastics and thirty thousand laymen assembled on the occasion, and the sessions were held in the open air because no building could contain the thronging masses, we may reasonably attribute so unprecedented an assemblage to the wild religious ardour which was about to culminate in the first Crusade. That council condemned Nicolitism in the most absolute and peremptory manner, and there is no reason to believe that the power of so formidable a demonstration was lightly disregarded.² Yet in Milan, as we shall see elsewhere throughout Europe, the custom of sacerdotal marriage had become so thoroughly established that it could not be eradicated suddenly. It continued to survive stubbornly after every attempt at repression with more or less openness as the persecution of married priests was more or less severe. A synod held in Milan in 1098 is discreetly silent as to wedlock or concubinage

¹ To this period is no doubt referable a fragment of a decretal addressed by Urban II. to Anselmo, Archbishop of Milan, giving him instructions as to the ceremony of restoring to the Church the ecclesiastics who were to be reconciled (Ivon. Decret. P. VI. c. 407—Urbani II. Epist. 74)—showing that Milan had submitted, and that her clergy were forced to seek absolution and obey the canons. It was this revolution in Lombardy that drove the anti-pope Clement III. from Rome.

² Item heresis Nicolaitarum, id est incontinentium subdiaconorum, diaconorum et præcipue sacerdotum inretractabiliter damnata est, ut deinceps de officio se non intromittant qui in illa heresi manere non formidant; nec populus eorum officia ullo modo recipiat, si ipsi Nicolaitæ contra hæc interdicta ministrare præsumant.—Bernald. Constant. ann. 1095.

The very terms of this canon, however, show that "Nicolitism" was still an existing fact.

among ecclesiastics, though it is severe upon the concurrent vice of simony, and though its prohibition of hereditary succession in Church benefices and dignities would show that marriage among their incumbents must have been by no means infrequent. Moreover, even as late as 1152, Mainerio Boccoardo, a canon of Monza, in his will specifies that certain provisions for the benefit of his brother canons shall not be enjoyed by those who are married, thus proving that the Hildebrandine reforms had not yet been successful, though Rome had long since attained its object in breaking down the independence of the Ambrosian Church.¹ One result of the struggle had been the destruction of the temporal power of the archbishop and the conversion of the city into a republic, an example which was largely followed throughout Upper Italy.

It is not to be supposed that the story of Milan is an exceptional one. Perhaps the factions there were fiercer, and the contest more prolonged, than elsewhere; but the same causes were at work in other Italian cities, and were attended with results similar in character, if differing in intensity. In Lucca, for instance, in 1051, we find Leo IX., when confirming the possessions of the canons of the cathedral church of St. Martin, expressing the hope that God would liberate them from their married priests, who dissipated the property of the foundation, while utterly unworthy of partaking of the divine oblation.² His desire that they would live in concord and harmony with their bishop was, however, not destined to be long gratified. When St. Anselmo, in 1073, accepted the episcopate at the urgent request of his friend, Gregory VII., he laboured for years to reform

¹ 'Tamburini, Storia generale dell' Inquizione, Milano, 1862, T. I. pp. 307-9.

² S. Leon. IX. Epist. 55.

the dissolute lives of his clergy, until at length, finding threats and expostulations alike ineffectual, he implored the intervention of the Countess Matilda. Even the sovereign of Tuscany was unable to accomplish the submission of the recalcitrant ecclesiastics, and in 1074 St. Anselmo took advantage of the presence of Gregory VII. in the city to invoke his interposition. The resolute pope, finding his personal efforts fruitless, summoned the offenders to trial before a court of bishops, presided over by the celebrated Pietro Igneo, Bishop of Albano. Being condemned and excommunicated, they resisted by force of arms, excited a rebellion in the city, drove out St. Anselmo, and joined the imperialists; and when, in 1081, Guiberto the anti-pope came to Italy, he consecrated their leader, a sub-deacon named Pietro, as bishop, in place of the exiled martyr.¹ In Piacenza, the schismatics were guilty of excesses more deplorable, for, not content with deposing Bonizo, who had been set over them as bishop, they gave him the fullest honours of martyrdom by plucking out his eyes and then cutting him to pieces.² Similar troubles occurred in Parma, Modena, Reggio, and Pistoia, and it was not until the death of their respective schismatic bishops that the Countess Matilda was able to recover her authority in those places.

¹ Vit. S. Anselmi Lucensis.—In his collection of canons, S. Anselmo is careful to accumulate authorities justifying his course, and condemning his antagonists.—S. Anselmi Collect. Canon. Lib. VIII. c. 2, 4, 5, 7, 8, 10.

² Bernald. Constant. ann. 1089.

CHAPTER XIV

HILDEBRAND

ALEXANDER II. died 21st April 1073, and within twenty-four hours the archdeacon Hildebrand was elected as his successor—a promptitude and unanimity which showed the general recognition of his fitness for the high office. For more than twenty years he had been the power behind the throne which had directed and given purpose to the policy of Rome, and the assertion of his biographers that his disinclination for the position had alone prevented his previous elevation may readily be believed. Whether he was forced on the present occasion to assent to the choice of the conclave, against his earnest resistance, is, however, more problematical.

Hildebrand was the son of a poor carpenter of Soano, and had been trained in the ascetic monachism of Cluny. Gifted by nature with rare sagacity, unbending will, and indomitable spirit, imbued with the principles of the False Decretals, and firmly believing in the wildest pretensions of ecclesiastical supremacy, he had conceived a scheme of hierarchical autocracy, which he regarded not only as the imprescriptible right of the Church, but also as the perfection of human institutions. To the realisation of this ideal he devoted his life with a fiery zeal and unshaken purpose that shrank from no obstacles, and to it he was ready to sacrifice not only the men who stood in his path, but also the immutable principles of truth and justice. All considerations were as dross compared with the one object, and his own well-being

and life were ventured as recklessly as the peace of the world.

Such a man could comprehend the full importance of the rule of celibacy, not alone as essential to the ascetic purity of the Church, but as necessary to the theocratic structure which he proposed to elevate on the ruins of kingdoms and empires. The priest must be a man set apart from his fellows, consecrated to the one holy purpose, revered by the world as a being superior to human passions and frailties, devoted, soul and body, to the interests of the Church, and distracted by no temporal cares and anxieties foreign to the welfare of the great corporation of which he was a member. We have seen the strenuous efforts which, for a quarter of a century, successive pontiffs had unceasingly made to accomplish this reform, and we have also seen how fruitlessly those efforts were expended on the passive or active resistance of the priesthood. When Hildebrand took the reins into his vigorous grasp, the change at once became manifest, and the zeal of his predecessors appears lukewarm by comparison. He had had ample leisure to note how inefficient was the ordinary machinery to accomplish the result, and he hesitated not to call to his assistance external powers; to give to the secular princes authority over ecclesiastics at which enthusiastic Churchmen stood aghast, and to risk apparently the most precious immunities of the Church to secure the result. The end proved his wisdom, for the power delegated to the laity for a special object was readily withdrawn, after it had served its purpose, and the rebellious clerks were subdued and rendered fit instruments in the lapse of time for humiliating their temporary masters. In one respect, however, Hildebrand's policy proved a blunder. The faithful readily submitted to the restoration of clerical immunity, but the idea that ecclesiastics

forfeited their privileges by sin became a favourite one with almost all heretics, as we shall see hereafter in the case of the Albigenses, Waldenses, Wickliffites, and Hussites, costing the Church many a desperate struggle.

To Gregory, as we must hereafter call him, was generally attributed, by his immediate successors, the honour of introducing, or of enforcing, the absolute chastity of the ministers of the altar. Some chroniclers mention Alexander II. or Leo IX. as participating in the struggle, but to his vigorous management its success was popularly conceded.¹ He earned the tribute thoroughly, for during his whole pontificate it seems to have been ever present to his thoughts, and whatever were his preoccupations in his fearful struggle with the empire, on which he risked the present and the future of the papacy, he always had leisure to attend to the one subject in its minutest details and in the remotest corner of Christendom.

¹ Cujus prudentia, non solum in Italia sed etiam in Theutonicis partibus refrenata est sacerdotum incontinentia, scilicet quod prædecessores ejus in Italia prohibuerunt, hoc ipse in aliis ecclesiæ catholicæ partibus prohibere studiosus attemptavit.—Bertold. Constant. ann. 1073.—Also Bernald. Constant. ann. 1073.

Gregorius . . . connubia clericorum a subdiaconatu et supra, per totum orbem Romano edicto decretali, in æternum prohibuit.—Gotefrid. Viterb. Chron. P. xvii.

Sed et datis decretis clericorum a subdiaconatu et supra connubia in toto orbe Romano cohibuit.—Otton. Frisingen. Chron. Lib. vi. c. 34.

Eodem quoque tempore canones antiqui de continentia ministrorum sacri altaris innovari novis accedentibus præceptis cœperunt, per hunc Urbanum Papam et prædecessores suos Gregorium VII. et Nicholaum II. atque Alexandrum II.—Chron. Reichersperg. ann. 1098.

Tempore illo cum Gregorius qui et Hildebrant Romani pontificatus jura disponeret, hoc decretum quidem antiquitus promulgatum, nunc autem innovatum est, ut videlicet omnes in sacris ordinibus constituti, presbyteri scilicet et diaconi, a cohabitationibus feminarum se, ut decet, cohiberent, aut ab officio cessarent.—Gest. Trevir. Archiep. cap. xxx. (Martene Ampliss. Collect. IV. 174).

Hoc tamen ab eo tempore fuit introductum ut nullus ordinaretur in presbyterum conjugatus: et ordinandi omnes castitatem promittere compellantur coram ordinante.—Chron. Hirsaug. ann. 1074.

One chronicler, however, attributes the reform to Alexander II. "Constituit etiam ut nullus presbyter sive diaconus vel subdiaconus, uxorem habeat, sive concubinam in occidentali ecclesia, sed ut sint casti."—Chron. S. Ægid. in Brunswig. ann. 1071.

Perhaps in this there may have been an unrecognised motive urging him to action. Sprung from so humble an origin, he may have sympathised with the democratic element, which rendered the Church the only career open to peasant and plebeian. He may have felt that this was a source of hidden power, as binding the populations more closely to the Church, and as enabling it to press into service an unknown amount of fresh and vigorous talent belonging to men who would owe everything to the establishment which had raised them from nothingness, and who would have no relationships to embarrass their devotion. All this would be lost if, by legalising marriage, the hereditary transmission of benefices generally resulting should convert the Church into a separate caste of individual proprietors, having only general interests in common, and lazily luxuriating on the proceeds of former popular beneficence. To us, retrospectively philosophising, it further appears evident that if celibacy were an efficient agent in obtaining for the Church the immense temporal power and spiritual authority which it enjoyed, that very power and that authority rendered celibacy a factor not devoid of advantage to the progress of civilisation. When even the humblest priest came to be regarded as a superior being, holding the keys of heaven in his hand, and by the machinery of confession, absolution, and excommunication wielding incalculable influence over each member of his flock, it was well for both parties that the ecclesiastic should be free from the ties of family and the vulgar ambition of race. It is easy to see how the Churchmen could have selected matrimonial alliances of politic and aggrandising character; and as possession of property and hereditary transmission of benefices would have followed on the permission to marry, an ecclesiastical caste, combining temporal and spiritual power to a dangerous excess, might

have repeated in Europe the distinctions between the Brahman and Sudra of India. The perpetual admission of self-made men into the hierarchy, which distinguished the Church even in times of the most aristocratic feudalism, was for ages the only practical recognition of the equality of man. If, therefore, the Church was to attain the theocratic supremacy, which was the object of its ambition, sacerdotal celibacy was not only an element necessary to its success, but a safeguard against the development of an hereditary ecclesiastical aristocracy which might have proved fatal to intellectual and social progress.

What we may now readily discern to have been a means, to Gregory, however, was an end, and to the enforcement of celibacy as necessary to that object he devoted himself with unrelenting vigour. The belief that he was appointed of God, and set apart for the task of cleansing the Church of the Nicolitan heresy which had defied his predecessors, is well illustrated by the contemporary legend of some pious Pisan, who, spending the night before his election in prayer in the basilica of St. Peter, saw that holy saint himself traverse the church accompanied by Hildebrand, whom he commanded to gather some droppings of mares with which the sacred edifice was defiled, to place them in a sack, and to carry them out on his shoulders.¹ The severe austerity of his virtue, moreover, was displayed by his admirers in the story that once, when dangerously ill, his niece came to inquire as to his health. To relieve her anxiety he played with her necklace, and jestingly asked if she wished to be married; but on his recovery he found that he could no longer weep with due contrition over his sins, and that he had lost the grace of repentance. He long and vainly searched for the cause, and finally entreated his

¹ Pauli Bernried. Vit. Gregor. VII. c. ii. § 20.

friends to pray for him, when the Virgin appeared to one of them, and sent word to Gregory that he had fallen from grace in consequence of the infraction of his vows committed in touching the necklace of his niece.¹

His first movement on the subject appears to have been an epistle addressed, in November 1073, to Gebhardt, Archbishop of Salzburg, taking him severely to task for his neglect in enforcing the canons promulgated not long before in Rome, and ordering him to carry them rigidly into effect among his clergy.² This, no doubt, was a circular letter addressed to all the prelates of Christendom, and it was but a preliminary step. Early in Lent of the next year (March 1074) he held his first synod, which adopted a canon prohibiting sacerdotal marriage, ordering that no one in future should be admitted to orders without a vow of celibacy, and renewing the legislation of Nicholas II., which commanded the people not to attend the ministrations of those whose

¹ Pauli Bernried. Vit. Gregor. VII. c. iii. § 26.

Even Gregory, however, was not equal to his contemporary Hugh, Bishop of Grenoble, who, during fifty-three years spent in the active duties of his calling, never saw the face of a woman, except that of an aged mendicant.—*Rolevink Fascic. Temp. ann. 1074.*

The fanciful purity which came to be considered requisite to the episcopal office is well illustrated by the case of Faricius, Abbot of Abingdon, who was elected to the see of Canterbury. His suffragans refused his consecration because he was a skilful leech—"tunc electus est Faricius ad archiepiscopatum, sed episcopus Lincolnensis et episcopus Salesburiensis obstiterunt, dicentes non debere archiepiscopum urinas mulierum inspicere" (*De Abbat. Abendon.—Chron. Abingdon. II. 287*). The prejudice against the practice of physic as incompatible with the purity of an ecclesiastic was wide-spread and long-lived, as chronicled in the canons of numerous councils prohibiting it (e.g. *Concil. Claromont. ann. 1130 c. 5*)—but it was not always so. In 998 Theodatus, a monk of Corvey, received the bishopric of Prague from Otho III., as a reward for curing Boleslas I., Duke of Bohemia, of paralysis, by means of a bath of wine, herbs, spices, and three living black puppies four weeks old (*Paulini Dissert. Hist. p. 198*); and about the year 1200, Hubert Walter, Archbishop of Canterbury, bestowed the see of St. David's on Geoffrey, Prior of Llanthony, his physician, whose skill had won his gratitude.—*Girald. Cambrens. de Jur. et Stat. Menev. Eccles. Dist. VII.*

² *Gregor. VII. Regist. Lib. I. Epist. 30.*

lives were a violation of the rule.¹ There was nothing in the terms of this more severe than what had been decreed in innumerable previous councils—indeed, it was by no means as threatening as many decretals of recent date; but Gregory was resolved that it should not remain, like them, a mere protest, and he took immediate measures to have it enforced wherever the authority of Rome extended.

The controversy as respects Italy has already been so fully described that to dilate upon it further would be superfluous. Even though Alexander II. in his later years had shrunk somewhat from the contest, yet from Naples to the Tyrol the question was thoroughly understood, and its results depended more upon political revolutions than on ecclesiastical exertions. Beyond the Alps, however, the efforts of preceding popes had thus far proved wholly nugatory, and on this field Gregory now bent all his energies. The new canon was sent to all the bishops of Europe, with instructions to promulgate it throughout their respective dioceses, and to see that it was strictly obeyed; while legates were sent in every direction to support these commands with their personal supervision and exertion.²

That the course which Gregory thus adopted was essentially different from that pursued by his predecessors is amply attested by the furious storm which these measures aroused. The clergy protested in the most energetic terms that they would rather abandon their

¹ *Ut secundum instituta antiquorum canonum presbyteri uxores non habeant, habentes aut dimittant aut deponantur; nec quisquam omnino ad sacerdotium admittatur qui non in perpetuum continentiam vitamque cœlibem profiteatur.*—Lambert. Hersfeldens. ann. 1074. Cf. Gregor. Epist. extrav. 4.

² As regards Germany, Gregory, in 1074, sent two legates to Henry IV., who promulgated the canon in a national council; and the next year he followed this up by a legation empowered to forbid the laity from attending the offices of married priests (Herman. Contract. ann. 1074–5). His correspondence, however, shows that he did not rely alone on such measures, but that he also addressed the prelates directly.

calling than their wives; they denounced Gregory as a madman and a heretic, who expected to compel men to live as angels, and who in his folly, while denying to natural affection its accustomed and proper gratification, would open the door to indiscriminate licentiousness; and they tauntingly asked where, when he should have driven them from the priesthood, he expected to find the angels who were to replace them.¹ Even those who favoured celibacy condemned the means adopted as injudicious, contrary to the canons, and leading to scandals more injurious to the Church than the worst of heresies.² Gregory paid little heed to threats or remonstrances, but sent legate after legate to accuse the bishops of their inertness, and to menace them with deposition if they should neglect to carry out the canon to the letter, and he accompanied these measures with others of even more practically efficient character.

The bishops, in fact, were placed in a most embarrassing position, which may be understood from the adventures of three prelates, who took different positions with regard to the instructions of Gregory—Otho of Constance, who leaned to the side of the clergy; St. Altmann of Passau, who was an enthusiastic papalist; and Siegfried of Mainz, who was a trimmer afraid of both parties.

To Otho, Gregory, in 1074, sent the canons of the synod inhibiting marriage and simony, with orders to use every exertion to secure the compliance of his clergy. Otho apparently did not manifest much eagerness to undertake the unpopular task, and Gregory lost little time in calling him to account. Before the year expired,

¹ Lambert. Hersfeldens. ann. 1074.

² *Novo exemplo et inconsiderato prejudicio, necnon et contra sanctorum patrum sententiam . . . ex qua re tam grave scandalum in ecclesia oritur, quod antea sancta ecclesia nullius hæresis schismati tam graviter est attrita.*—Chron. Turonens. (Martene Ampl. Collect. V. 1007).

we find the pope addressing a second epistle to the bishop, angrily accusing him of disobedience in permitting the ministration of married priests, and summoning him to answer for his contumacy at a synod to be held in Rome during the approaching Lent. Nor was this all, for at the same time he wrote to the clergy and people of the diocese, informing them of the disobedience of their bishop and of his summons to trial, commanding them, in case of his persistent rebellion, to no longer obey or reverence him as bishop, and formally releasing them from all subjection to him. Otho doubtless considered it imprudent to show himself at the synod of 1075; consequently in that of 1076 he was excommunicated and deprived of his episcopal functions. During the autumn of the same year, however, the legate Altmann of Passau restored him to communion at Ulm, but without granting him the privilege of officiating. Otho disregarded this restriction, and not only persisted in exercising his functions, but openly favoured and protected the married clergy. For this Gregory absolved his flock from all obedience to him, whereupon Otho abandoned the Catholic party and formally joined the imperialists, who were then engaged in the effort to depose Gregory. From some motives of policy, the pope granted the hardened sinner three years for repentance, at the expiration of which, in 1080, he sent Altmann to Constance to superintend the election of another bishop. The new incumbent, however, proved incapable through bodily infirmity; and, in 1084, Otto of Ostia was sent to Constance, and under his auspices Gebhardt was elected bishop, and duly consecrated in 1085.¹ Evidently Gregory was not a man to abandon his purpose, and those who

¹ Gregor. VII. Epist. extrav. 4, 12, 13.—Bernald. pro Gebhardo Episc. Apologet. c. 4, 5, 6, 7.

opposed him could not count upon perpetual immunity.

St. Altmann of Passau was renowned for his piety and the strictness of his religious observance. When the canon of 1074 reached him, he assembled his clergy, read it to them, and adjured them to pay to it the respect which was requisite. His eloquence was wasted; the clerks openly refused obedience, and defended themselves by immemorial custom, and by the fact that none of their predecessors had been called upon to endure so severe and unnatural a regulation. Finding the occasion unpropitious, the pious Altmann dissembled; he assured his clergy that he was perfectly willing to indulge them if the papal mandate would permit it, and with this he dismissed them. He allowed the matter to lie in abeyance until the high feast of St. Stephen, the patron saint of the Church, which was always attended by the magnates of the diocese. Then, without giving warning of his intentions, he suddenly mounted the pulpit, read to the assembled clergy and laity the letters of the pope, and threatened exemplary punishment for disobedience. Though thus taken at advantage and by surprise, the clerks were not disposed to submit. A terrible tumult at once arose, and the crafty saint would have been torn to pieces had it not been for the strenuous interference of the nobles, aided, as his biographer assures us, by the assistance of God. The clergy continued their resistance, and when, not long after, the empire and papacy became involved in internecine strife, they sought the protection of Henry IV., who marched upon Passau, and drove out St. Altmann and his faction.¹ How unbending was this opposition, and how successfully it was maintained, is manifest from the fact that when St. Altmann at length returned to his diocese as papal legate, about the year

¹ *Vide* "The Life and Times of Hildebrand" by the Abbé O. Délaré.

1081, even Gregory felt it necessary to use policy rather than force, and instructed him to yield to the pressure of the evil times, and to reserve the strict enforcement of the reform for a more fortunate period.¹ The political question had thus, for the moment, overshadowed the religious one.

The archiepiscopate of Mainz was, both temporally and spiritually, one of the most powerful of the ecclesiastical principalities of Germany. To the Archbishop Siegfrid, Gregory sent the canon of 1074 with instructions similar to those contained in his epistle to Otho of Constance. In reply, Siegfrid promised implicit obedience; but, recognising the almost insuperable difficulties of the task assigned him, he temporised, and gave his clergy six months in which to make up their minds, exhorting them to render willing obedience and relieve him from the necessity of employing coercion. At the expiration of the period, in October 1074, he assembled a synod at Erfurt, where he boldly insisted that they should give up their wives or abandon their functions and their benefices. Their arguments and entreaties were in vain. Finding him immovable, they retired for consultation, when some proposed to separate and return home at once, without further parley, and thus elude giving sanction to the new regulations; while bolder spirits urged that it would be better to put the archbishop to instant death, before he could promulgate so execrable a decree, thus leaving for posterity a shining example, which would prevent any of his successors from attempting so abominable an enterprise.

Siegfrid's friends advised him of the turn which affairs were likely to take. He therefore sent to his clergy a request that they would reassemble in synod, promising

¹ Vit. S. Altmanni.—Hinc capitulum illud de incontinentia sacerdotum a tam invicto propugnatore castitatis dissimulatum non approbatum remansit.

that he would take the first opportunity to apply to Rome for a relaxation of the canon. They agreed to this, and on meeting them the next day, Siegfried astutely started the question of his claims on the Thuringian tithes, which had shortly before been settled by the Saxon war. Indignant at this, the Thuringian clergy raised a tumult, flew to arms, and the synod broke up in the utmost confusion. In December, Gregory wrote to the shuffling archbishop an angry letter, reproaching him with his lukewarmness in the cause, and ordering him to present himself at the synod announced for the coming Lent. Siegfried obediently went to Rome, but was with difficulty admitted to communion. What promises he made to obtain it were not kept, for again, in September 1075, Gregory addressed him with commands to enforce the canons. Stimulated by this, Siegfried convoked a synod at Mainz in October, where the Bishop of Coire appeared with a papal mandate threatening him with degradation and expulsion if he failed in compelling the priests to abandon either their wives or their ministry. Thus goaded, Siegfried did his best, but the whole body of the clergy raised such a clamour, and made demonstrations so active and so formidable, that the archbishop saw little prospect of escaping with life. The danger from his mutinous flock was more instant and pressing than that from the angry pope; his resolution gave way, and he dissolved the synod, declaring that he washed his hands of the affair, and that Gregory might deal as he saw fit with a matter which was beyond his power to control. Thus placed between the upper and the nether millstone, it is not to be wondered at if Siegfried took refuge in the party of the imperialists, nor that his name stands at the head of the list of bishops who in 1076 passed judgment on Gregory, and pronounced that he had forfeited all claim to the papacy; neither is it surprising that Gregory

lost no time in excommunicating him at the Roman synod of the same year.¹

These examples are sufficient to illustrate the difficulties with which Gregory had to contend, and the manner in which he endeavoured to overcome them. The incidents are by no means exceptional, and his marvellous vigour and energy in supervising the movement everywhere, encouraging the zealous co-worker and punishing the lukewarm and indifferent, are abundantly attested by his correspondence. He apparently had an eye on every corner of Europe, and lost no opportunity of enforcing his views with threats or promises, as the case might seem to demand.²

It did not take long, however, to convince him that he could count upon no efficient assistance from the hierarchy, and that if the Church was to be purified, it must be purified from without, and not from within. To the unutterable horror of those strict Churchmen who regarded the immunity from all temporal supervision or jurisdiction as one of the most precious of ecclesiastical privileges, he took, as early as 1074, the decided and unprecedented step of authorising the laity to withdraw their obedience from all prelates and priests who dis-

¹ Gregor. VII. Epist. extrav. 12.—Lambert. Hersfeld. ann. 1074–5–6.—Udalr. Babenb. Cod. Lib. II. c. 132.—Gregor. Regist. Lib. II. Epist. 29.—Goldast. Constit. Imp. I. 237.

An encyclical letter of Siegfried, in 1075, states that Gregory had sent to his diocese commissioners to reform the immorality of the clergy, and that they had laboured earnestly, but fruitlessly, to accomplish the task by a liberal use of suspension and excommunication. He had thereupon reported to the pope the scandal and infamy of his Church, when Gregory, considering the multitude of the transgressors, counselled moderation. Siegfried therefore orders all incorrigible offenders to be suspended and sent to him for judgment. (Hartzheim Concil. German III. 175.)—Hartzheim also (III. 749) gives, under date of 1077, another letter from Siegfried to Gregory, in which he promises to do his best in reforming the clergy, but advises moderation towards those whose weakness merits compassion.

² See, for instance, Lib. I. Epist. 30; Lib. II. Epist. 25, 55, 61, 62, 64, 66, 67, 68; Lib. II. Epist. 4; Lib. IV. Epist. 10, 11, 20; Lib. VII. Epist. 1; Epist. extrav. 4, 12, 13, &c.

regarded the canons of the Holy See on the subjects of simony and incontinence.¹ This principle, once adopted, was followed up with his customary unalterable resolution. In October 1074 he wrote to a certain Count Albert, exhorting him not to mind what the simoniacal and concubinary priests might say, but, in spite of them, to persist in enforcing the orders which emanated from Rome. Still more menacing was an epistle addressed in January 1075 to Rodolf, Duke of Swabia, and Bertolf, Duke of Carinthia, commanding them—"whatever the bishops may say or may not say concerning this, do you in no manner receive the ministrations of those who owe promotion or ordination to simony, or whom you know to be guilty of concubinage . . . and, as far as you can, do you prevent, by force if necessary, all such persons from officiating. And if any shall presume to prate and say that it is not your business, tell them to come to us and dispute about the obedience which we thus enjoin upon you"—and adding a bitter complaint of the archbishops and bishops who, with rare exceptions, had taken no steps to put an end to these execrable customs, or to punish the guilty.²

These extraordinary measures called forth indignant denunciations on the part of ecclesiastics, for these letters were circulars sent to all the princes on whom he could depend, and he ensured their publicity by causing similar orders to be published in the churches themselves. Thus Theodoric, Bishop of Verdun, who had inclined to the side of Gregory and had secretly left the Assembly of

¹ His præcipimus vos nullo modo obedire, vel eorum præceptis consentire, sicut ipsi apostolicæ sedis præceptis non obediunt, neque auctoritati sanctorum patrum consentiunt.—Gregor. VII. Epist. extrav. 14. "Omnibus clericis et laicis in regno Teutonicorum constitutis."

² Regist. Lib. II. Epist. 45.

Letters conceived in the same spirit are extant, addressed to the principal laymen of Chiusi in Tuscany, to the Count and Countess of Flanders, &c. (Lib. II. Epist. 47; Lib. IV. Epist. 10, 11.)

Utrecht in 1076 to avoid countenancing by his presence the excommunication then pronounced against the pope, in a letter to Gregory bitterly reproaches his own folly in promulgating the decretal and in not foreseeing its effect as destructive to the peace of the Church, to the safety of the clerical order, and as declaring a disturbance which threatened even the Christian faith.¹ So Henry, Bishop of Speyer, indignantly denounced him as having destroyed the authority of the bishops and subjected the Church to the madness of the people;² and when the bishops, at the Diet of Worms, threw off their allegiance to him, one of the reasons alleged, in Henry's letter to him, is the surrender which he had made of the Church to the laity.³ Yet Gregory was not to be diverted from his course, and he was at least successful in rousing the Teutonic Church from the attitude of passive resistance which threatened to render his efforts futile. The princes of Germany, who were already intriguing with Gregory for support in their perennial revolts against their sovereign, were delighted to seize the opportunity of at once obliging the pope, creating disturbance at home, and profiting by the Church property which they could manage to get into their hands by ejecting the unfortunate married priests. They accordingly proceeded to exercise, without delay and to the fullest extent, the unlimited power so suddenly

¹ Martene et Durand. *Thesaur.* I. 218.—Hugon. Flavin. *Chron. Lib. II.* ann. 1079.—*Cf. Chron. Augustinens.* ann. 1075. Theodoric was naturally forced in the end to take a decided stand against Gregory. See his letter in Goldastus, *T. I.* p. 236, and the account of his episcopate in the *Gesta Trevir. Archiep.* (Martene *Ampl. Collect.* IV. 175–8.)

² Udalar. *Babenb. Cod. Lib. II.* cap. 162.

³ *Annalista Saxo*, ann. 1076.

We have already seen (p. 161) that Nicholas I., in the ninth century, had expressly forbidden any popular interference with married priests, and it is a little singular to observe that his decretal on the subject is extracted by Ivo of Chartres (*Decreti P. II.* cap. 82) and presented as valid law, in less than a generation after the death of Gregory VII.

granted them over a class which had hitherto successfully defied their jurisdiction; nor was it difficult to excite the people to join in the persecution of those who had always held themselves as superior beings, and who were now pronounced by the highest authority in the Church to be sinners of the worst description. The ignorant populace were naturally captivated by the idea of the vicarious mortification with which their own errors were to be redeemed by the abstinence imposed upon their pastors, and they were not unreasonably led to believe that they were themselves deeply wronged by the want of purity in their ecclesiastics. Add to this the attraction which persecution always possesses for the persecutor, and the license of plunder so dear to a turbulent and barbarous age, and it is not difficult to comprehend the motive power of the storm which burst over the heads of the secular clergy, and which must have satisfied by its severity the stern soul of Gregory himself.

A contemporary writer, whose name has been lost, but who is supposed by Dom Martène to have been a priest of Trèves, gives us a very lively picture of the horrors which ensued, and as he shows himself friendly in principle to the reform attempted, his account may be received as trustworthy. He describes what amounted almost to a dissolution of society, slave betraying master and master slave; friend informing against friend; snares and pitfalls spread before the feet of all; faith and truth unknown. The peccant priests suffered terribly. Some, reduced to utter poverty, and unable to bear the scorn and contempt of those from whom they had been wont to receive honour and respect, wandered off as homeless exiles; others, mutilated by the indecent zeal of ardent puritans, were carried around to exhibit their shame and misery; others, tortured in lingering death, bore to the

tribunal on high the testimony of blood-guiltiness against their persecutors; while others, again, in spite of danger, secretly continued the connections which exposed them to all these cruelties. In the midst of these troubles, as might be expected, the offices of religion were wholly neglected; the new-born babe received no holy baptism; the dying penitent expired without the saving viaticum; the sinner could cleanse his soul by no confession and absolution; and the devotee could no longer be strengthened by the daily sacrifice of the mass.¹ Another writer, of nearly the same date, relates with holy horror how the laity shook off all the obedience which they owed to their pastors, and, despising the sacraments prepared by them, trod the Eucharist under foot and cast out the sacred wine, administered baptism with unlicensed hands, and substituted for the holy chrism the filthy wax collected from their own ears.²

When such was the fate of the pastors, it is easy to imagine the misery inflicted on their unfortunate wives. A zealous admirer of Gregory relates with pious gratulation, as indubitable evidence of divine vengeance, how, maddened by their wrongs, some of them openly committed suicide, while others were found dead in the beds which they had sought in perfect health; and this being proof of their possession by the devil, they were denied Christian sepulture. The case of Count Manigold of Veringen affords a not un instructive instance of the frightful passions aroused by the relentless cruelty which thus branded them as infamous, tore them from their families, and cast them adrift upon a mocking world. The count had put in force the orders of Gregory

¹ The writer indignantly adds—"Si autem quæris talis fructus a qua radice pullulaverit, lex ad laicos promulgata, qua imperitis persuasum est conjugatorum sacerdotum missas et quæcumque per eos implentur mysteria fugienda esse, in reipublicæ nostræ ornatum illud adjecit."—*Martene et Durand. Thesaur. I. 230-1.*

² *Sigebert. Gemblac. ann. 1074.*

with strict severity throughout his estates in the Swabian Alps. One miserable creature, thus driven from her husband, swore that the count should undergo the same fate, and, in the blindness of her rage, she poisoned the Countess of Veringen, whose widowed husband, overwhelmed with grief, sought no second mate.¹

Nor was the customary machinery of miracles wanting to stimulate the zeal of the faithful in the pious work, and to convince the doubters whose worldly wisdom or humanity might shrink from the task assigned them. Unchaste priests at mass would find sudden blasts of wind overturn the cup, and scatter the sacred wine upon the ground, or the holy wafer would be miraculously snatched out of their polluted hands. The saintly virgin Herluca saw in a vision the Saviour, with His wounds profusely bleeding, and was told that if she desired to escape a repetition of the horrifying spectacle, she must no longer be present at the ministrations of Father Richard, the officiating priest of her convent—a revelation which she employed effectually upon him and his parishioners. The same holy maiden, being observed staring intently out of the window, declared, upon being questioned, that she had seen the soul of the priest of Rota carried off by demons to eternal punishment; and, on sending to his habitation, it was found that he had expired at the very moment.² Puerile as these tales may seem to us, they were stern realities to those against whose weaknesses they were directed, and whose sufferings were thus enhanced by every art which bigotry could bring to bear upon the credulous passions of a barbarous populace.

It cannot be a matter of surprise if men, who were thus threatened with almost every worldly evil, should

¹ Pauli Bernried. Vit. Gregor. VII. No. 81, 107.

² Ibid. No. 105, 106, 107.

seek to defend themselves by means as violent as those employed by their persecutors. Their cruel intensity of fear is aptly illustrated by what occurred at Cambrai in 1077, where a man was actually burned at the stake as a heretic for declaring his adhesion to the Hildebrandine doctrine that the masses of simoniacal and concubinary priests were not to be attended by the faithful.¹ So, in the same year, when the pseudo-emperor Rodolf of Swabia was elected by the papalists at the Diet of Forcheim as a competitor of Henry IV., he manifested his zeal to suppress the heresies of avarice and lust by refusing the ministration of a simoniacal deacon in the coronation solemnities at Mainz. The clergy of that city, who had so successfully resisted, for two years, the efforts of their archbishop Siegfried to reduce them to subjection to the canons, were dismayed at the prospect of coming under the control of so pious a prince, who would indubitably degrade them or compel them to give up their wives and simoniacally acquired churches. They therefore stirred up a tumult among the citizens, who were ready to espouse their cause; and when Rodolf left his palace for vespers, he was attacked by the people. The conflict was renewed on his return, causing heavy slaughter on both sides, and though the townsmen were driven back, Rodolf was forced to leave the city.²

This incident affords us a glimpse into the political aspects of the reform. In the tremendous struggle between the empire and the papacy, Gregory allied himself with all the disaffected princes of Germany, and they

¹ Gregor. VII. Regist. Lib. iv. Epist. 20.

² Pauli Bernried. Vit. Gregor. VII. No. 87.—Ekkehard of Uraugen and the Annalista Saxo, however, in their accounts of these disturbances, attribute them to political rather than to ecclesiastical causes. The latter, no doubt, would hardly have been efficient without the former. The efforts of Henry to reduce the savage feudal nobles to order made him, throughout his reign, a favourite with the cities.

were careful to justify their rebellions under the specious pretext of zeal for the apostolic Church. They of course, therefore, entered heartily into his measures for the restoration of ecclesiastical discipline, and professed the sternest indignation towards those whom he placed under the ban. Thus, after Henry, in 1076, had caused his bishops to declare the degradation of Gregory, when the revolted princes held their assembly at Tribur, and in turn decreed the deposition of Henry, they used the utmost caution to exclude all who had communicated with Henry since his excommunication, together with those who had obtained preferment by simony, or who had joined in communion with married priests.¹ The connection, indeed, became so marked that the papalists throughout Germany were stigmatised by the name of Patarini—a term which had acquired so sinister a significance in the troubles of Milan.² In this state of affairs it was natural that common enmities and common dangers should unite the persecuted clergy and the hunted sovereign. Yet it is a curious illustration of the influence which the denunciations of sacerdotal marriage had exercised over the public mind, that although Henry tacitly protected the simoniacal and married ecclesiastics, and although they rallied around him and afforded him unquestionable and invaluable aid, still he never ventured openly to defend them. Writers both then and since have attributed the measure of success with which he sustained the fluctuating contest, and the consequent sufferings of the unbending pope, to the efforts of the recalcitrant clergy who resisted the yoke imposed on them by Rome.³ Yet Henry had formally and absolutely pledged his assistance when Gregory commenced

¹ Lambert. Hersfeld. ann. 1076.

² Hugon. Flaviniac. Lib. II.

³ *Ob hanc igitur causam, quia scilicet sanctam Dei ecclesiam castam esse volebat, liberam atque catholicam, quia de sanctuario Dei simoniacam et neophytorum hæresim et fedam libidinose contagionis pollutionem volebat expellere, membra*

his efforts, and had repeated the promise in 1075;¹ and from this position he never definitely withdrew. Even when the schismatic bishops of his party, at the Synod of Brixen, in 1080, pronounced sentence of deposition on Gregory, and filled the assumed vacancy with an anti-pope, the man whom they elected never ventured to dispute the principle of Gregory's reforms, although the Lombard prelates, at that very time, were warmly defending their married and simoniacal clergy.² Indeed, Guiberto of Ravenna, or Clement III., took occasion to express his detestation of concubinage in language nearly as strong as that of his rival, although he threatened with excommunication the presumptuous laymen who should refuse to receive the sacraments of priests that had not been regularly tried and condemned at his own papal tribunal.³ In thus endeavouring to place himself as a

diaboli cœperunt in eum insurgere, et usque ad sanguinem præsumperunt in eum manus injicere.—Hugon. Flaviniac. Lib. II.

Eo vesaniæ imperatorem induxerat cæca sacerdotum (qui tunc frequentes apud eum erant) libido. Timebant enim si cum pontifice in gratiam rediret, actum esse de concubinis suis, quas illi pluris quam vel propriam salutem vel publicam pendebant honestatem.—Hieron. Emser Vit. S. Bennon. c. III. § 40.

Gregory's celebrated exclamation on his death-bed does not, however, specially recognise this—"Dilexi justitiam et odi iniquitatem, propterea morior in exilio."

¹ Gregor. VII. Regist. Lib. I. Epist. 30; Lib. III. Epist. 3.

² According to Conrad of Ursperg (Chron. ann. 1080) among the reasons adduced for the deposition of Gregory by the Synod of Brixen, was "*Qui inter concordēs seminavit discordiam, inter pacificos lites, inter fratres scandala, inter conjuges divortia, et quicquid quiete inter pie viventes stare videbatur, concussit*"—in which the words italicised may possibly allude to the separation of the married clergy. Conrad, however, was a compiler of the thirteenth century, and his statements are not to be received without caution. If this motive had its weight with the prelates of the synod, they did not care to publish it to the world, for there is no allusion to it in the letter of renunciation addressed by them to Gregory (Goldast. Const. Imp. I. 238)—forming a striking contrast to the proceedings of the Synod of Pavia in 1076, already alluded to.

³ Wibert Antipap. Epist. VI.

Bishop Benzo, the most bitter of imperialists, did not desire to be confounded with the Nicolitan heretics—

"Omnis enim caste vivens templum Dei dicitur;
Si quis tantum sacramentum violare nititur,
Unus de porcorum grege prolinus efficitur.
Facti cœlibes ardentem fugiamus Sodomam:
Hierosolymam petamus, Christianis commodam."

Comment. de Reb. Hen. IV. Lib. v. c. 6.

shield between the suffering priesthood and the persecuting populace, he was virtually striving to annul the reforms of Gregory, since in no other way could they be carried into effect; but he was forced to coincide with Gregory as to the principle which dictated those reforms. Notwithstanding all these precautions, however, the papalists were not disposed to allow their opponents to escape the responsibility of the alliance which brought them so much strength by dividing the Church, and no opportunity was lost of stigmatising them for the license which they protected. When Guiberto and his cardinals were driven out of Rome in 1084 by Robert Guiscard and his Normans, the flying prelates were ridiculed, not for their cowardice, but for their shaven chins, and the wives and concubines whom they publicly carried about with them.¹

At length Henry and his partisans appear to have felt it necessary to make some public declaration to relieve themselves from the odium of supporting and favouring a practice which was popularly regarded as a heresy and a scandal. When the papalists, under their King Hermann, at the Easter of 1085 (April 20th), convened a general assembly of their faction at Quedlinburg and again forbade all commerce with women to those in orders,² the imperialists lost no time in putting themselves on the same record with their rivals. Three weeks later Henry gathered around him, at Mainz, all the princes and prelates who professed allegiance to him, for the purpose of securing the succession to his eldest son, Conrad, as King of Germany, and there, in that solemn diet, marriage was formally prohibited to the priesthood.³ Gregory

¹ Honorius III. in Vit. Gregor. VII. No. 15.

² Bernald. Constant. ad. Herman. Contract. Append. ann. 1085.

³ Henricus multitudinem sequens, accessit eis qui sacerdotum conjugium sublatum volebant. Quare resistentes ei opinioni condemnati sunt.—H. Mutii German. Chron. Lib. xv.

I do not remember to have met with any contemporary authority for this

was then lying on his dying bed in the far-off castle of Salerno, and ere the news could reach him he was past the vanities of earthly triumph. Could he have known, however, that the cause for which he had risked the integrity and independence of the Church had thus received the support of its bitterest enemies, and that his unwavering purpose had thus achieved the moral victory of forcing his adversaries to range themselves under his banner, his spirit would have rejoiced, and his confidence in the ultimate success of the great theocratic system, for the maintenance of which he was thus expiring in exile, would have softened the sorrows of a life which closed in the darkness and doubt of defeat.

assertion, nor is there any provision of this nature in the decrees of the Diet as given by Goldastus (I. 245); but the chroniclers of the period were generally papalists, and would be apt to omit recording anything which they would deem so creditable to their adversaries. Yet that the imperialists were no longer held responsible for clerical irregularities is evident from a letter written in 1090 by Stephen, the papalist Bishop of Halberstadt, to Waltram of Magdeburg, who was a follower of Henry. In all his violent invectives against the imperialists, and in his long catalogue of their sins, he makes no allusion to priestly incontinence, showing that they must have disavowed these irregularities so formally as to leave no ground for imputations of complicity (Dodechini Append. ad Mar. Scot. ann. 1090).

CHAPTER XV

CENTRAL EUROPE

HILDEBRAND had passed away, leaving to his successors the legacy of inextinguishable hate and unattained ambition. Nor was the reform for which he had laboured as yet by any means secured in practice, even though his opponents had been reduced to silence or had been forced to render a formal adhesion to the canons which he had proclaimed so boldly.

The cause of asceticism, it is true, had gained many adherents among the laity. Throughout Germany, husbands and wives separated from each other in vast numbers, and devoted themselves to the service of the Church, without taking vows or assuming ecclesiastical garments; while those who were unmarried renounced the pleasures of the world, and, placing themselves under the direction of spiritual guides, abandoned themselves entirely to religious duties. To such an extent did this prevail, that the pope was applied to for his sanction, which he eagerly granted, and the movement doubtless added strength to the party of reform.¹ Yet but little had thus far been really gained in purifying the Church itself, notwithstanding the fearful ordeal through which its ministers had passed.

As for Germany, the indomitable energy of Henry IV., unrepressed by defeat and unchilled by misfortune, had at length achieved a virtual triumph over his banded enemies. But four bishops of the Empire—those of Wurzburg, Passau, Worms, and Constance—owned alle-

¹ Bernald. Constant. ann. 1091.

giance to Urban II. All the other dioceses were filled by schismatics, who rendered obedience to the anti-pope Clement. In 1089 the Catholic or papalist princes offered to lay down their arms and do homage to Henry if he would acknowledge Urban and make his peace with the true Church. The emperor, however, had a pope who suited him, and he entertained too lively a recollection of the trials from which he was escaping to open the door to a renewal of the papal pretensions, which he had at length successfully defied, nor would he consent to stigmatise his faithful prelates as schismatics.¹ He therefore pursued his own course, and Guiberto of Ravenna enjoyed the honours of the popedom, checkered by alternate vicissitudes of good and evil fortune, until removed by death in the year 1100,² his sanctity attested by the numerous miracles wrought at his tomb, which only needed the final success of the imperialist cause to enrich the calendar with a St. Clement in place of a St. Gregory and a St. Urban.³

Under such auspices, no very zealous maintenance of ecclesiastical discipline was to be expected. If Clement's sensibilities were humoured by a nominal reprobation of sacerdotal marriage, he could scarcely ask for more, or insist that Henry should rekindle the embers of disaffection by enforcing the odious rules which had proved so powerful a cause of trouble to their authors and his enemies. Accordingly, it cannot surprise us to observe that Urban II., in following out the views of his predecessors, felt it necessary to adopt measures even more violent than those which in Gregory's hands had caused so much excitement and confusion, but whose inefficiency

¹ Bernald. Constant. ann. 1089.

² A monkish chronicler professes to record of his own knowledge Guiberto's death-bed remorse for the schism he had been instrumental in causing. "Malens, ut ab ore ipsius didicimus, apostolici nomen nunquam suscepisse."—Chron. Reg. S. Pantaleon. ann. 1100.

³ Udalr. Babenb. Cod. Lib. II. c. 173.

was confessed by the very effort to supplement them. In 1089, the year after his consecration, Urban published at the Council of Amalfi a decree by which, as usual, married ecclesiastics were sentenced to deposition, and bishops who permitted such irregularities were suspended; but where Gregory had been content with ejecting husbands and wives, and with empowering secular rulers to enforce the edict on recalcitrants, Urban, with a refinement of cruelty, reduced the unfortunate women to slavery, and offered their servitude as a bribe to the nobles who should aid in thus purifying the Church.¹ If this infamous canon did not work misery so widespread as the comparatively milder decretals of Gregory, it was because the power of Urban was circumscribed by the schism, while he was apparently himself ashamed or afraid to promulgate it in regions where obedience was doubtful. When Pibo, Bishop of Toul, in the same year, 1089, sent an envoy to ask his decision on various points of discipline, including sacerdotal marriage (the necessity of such inquiry showing the futility of previous efforts), Urban transmitted the canons of Amalfi in response, but omitted this provision, which well might startle the honest German mind.² Perhaps, on reflection, Urban may himself have wished to disavow the atrocity, for in a subsequent council, when again attacking the ineradicable sin, he contented himself with simply forbidding all such marriages, and ordering all persons who were bound by orders or vows to be separated from their

¹ Eos qui in subdiaconatu uxoribus vacare voluerint, ab omni sacro ordine removemus, officio atque beneficio ecclesiæ carere decernimus. Quod si ab episcopo commoniti non se correxerint, principibus licentiam indulgemus ut eorum feminas mancipent servituti. Si vero episcopi consenserint eorum pravitatibus, ipsi officii interdictione mulotentur.—Synod. Melfit. ann. 1089 can. 12.

The second canon of the same council—"Sacrorum canonum instituta renovantes, præcipimus ut a tempore subdiaconatus nulli liceat carnale commercium exercere. Quod si deprehensus fuerit, ordinis sui periculum sustinebit"—shows how much more venial was the offence of promiscuous licentiousness than the heresy of marriage.

² Urbani II. Epist. 24.

wives or concubines, and to be subjected to due penance.¹

Yet even in those regions of Germany which persevered in resisting Henry and in recognising Urban as pope, the persecution of twenty years was still unsuccessful, and the people had apparently relapsed into condoning the wickedness of their pastors. In an assembly held at Constance in 1094, it was deemed necessary to impose a fine on all who should be present at the services performed by priests who had transgressed the canons.² When this was the case in the Catholic provinces, it is easy to imagine that in the imperialist territories the thunders of Gregory and Urban had long since been forgotten, and that marrying and giving in marriage were practised with as little scruple as ever. A fair illustration, indeed, of the amount of respect paid to the rules of discipline is afforded by a discussion on the choice of a successor to Cosmo, Bishop of Prague, who died in 1098. Duke Brecislas, in filling the vacancy with his chaplain Hermann, endeavoured to rebut the arguments of those who objected to the foreign birth of the appointee by urging that fact as a recommendation, since, as a stranger, he would not be pressed upon by a crowd of kindred nor be burdened with the care of children, thus showing that the native priesthood, as a general rule, were heads of families.³ For this, moreover, they could not plead ignorance, for a Bohemian penitential of the period ex-

¹ Gratian. Dist. XXVII. c. 8.

² Decret. Comit. Constant. c. 2 (Goldast. I. 246).

³ *Et quia hospes est, plus ecclesiæ prodest: non eum parentela exhauriet, non liberorum cura aggravabit, non cognatorum turba despoliet*—Cosmæ Pragens. Chron. Lib. III. ann. 1098.—It should, however, be borne in mind that Bohemia had been Christianised in 871 by Cyrillus and Methodius, missionaries from Constantinople, and the national Slavonic worship, founded on the Greek faith, after many struggles, was not abolished until 1094 (see Krasinski's Reformation in Poland, London, 1838, I. 13). The attachment of the race to their ancestral rites explains the proneness of the Bohemians and Poles to fall away into heresy.

pressly prohibits priests from having companions whose society could give rise to suspicion of any kind.¹

At length the duel which, for more than thirty years, Henry had so gallantly fought with the successors of St. Peter drew to a close. Ten years of supremacy he had enjoyed in Germany, and he looked forward to the peaceful decline of his unquiet life, when the treacherous calm was suddenly disturbed. Papal intrigues in 1093 had caused the parricidal revolt of his eldest born, the weak and vacillating Conrad, whose early death had then extinguished the memory of his crime. That unnatural rebellion had gained for Rome the North of Italy; and as the emperor's second son, Henry, grew to manhood, he, too, was marked as a fit instrument to pierce his father's heart, and to extend the domination of the Church by the foulest wrongs that man can perpetrate. The startling revolution which in 1105 precipitated Henry from a throne to a prison, from an absolute monarch to a captive embracing the knees of his son and pleading for his wretched life, established for ever the supremacy of the papacy over Germany. The consequent enforcement of the law of celibacy became only a question of time.

As the excuse for the rebellion was the necessity of restoring the empire to the communion of Rome, one of the first measures of the conspirators was the convocation of a council to be held at Nordhausen, May 29, 1105, and one of the objects specified for its action was the expulsion of all married priests.² The council was duly held, and duly performed its work of condemning the heresy which permitted benefices to be occupied and sacred functions exercised by those who were involved

¹ Höfler, *Concilia Pragensia*, p. xiii. (Prag, 1862).

² *Annalista Saxo*, ann. 1105.

in the ties of matrimony.¹ Pope Paschal II. was not remiss in his share of the ceremony, by which he was to receive the fruits of his treacherous intrigues. The following year a great council was held at Guastalla, where, after interminable discussions as to the propriety of receiving without re-ordination those who had compromised themselves or who had been ordained by schismatics, he admitted into the fold all the repentant ecclesiastics of the party of Henry IV.² The text of the canon granting this boon to the imperialist clergy bears striking testimony to the completeness of the separation which had existed between the Teutonic and the Roman Churches in stating that throughout the empire scarce any Catholic ecclesiastics were to be found.³ It scarcely needed the declaration which Paschal made in 1107 at the Synod of Troyes, condemning married priests to degradation and deprivation,⁴ to show that the doctrines of Damiani and Hildebrand were thenceforth to be the law of the empire.

The question thus was definitely settled in prohibiting the priests of Germany from marrying or from retaining the wives whom they had taken previous to ordination. It was settled, indeed, in the rolls of parchment which recorded the decrees of council and the trading bargains of pope and kaiser, yet the perennial struggle continued, and the parchment roll for yet awhile was powerless before the passions of man, who did not cease to be man because his crown was shaven and his shoulders wore cope and stole.

Cosmo, who was Dean of Prague, who had been bred

¹ *Nycholaitarum quoque fornicaria commixtio ibidem est ab omnibus abdicata.*—Chron. Reg. S. Pantaleon. ann. 1105. Cf. *Annal. Saxo*, ann. 1105.

² Compare Bernaldi Constant. de Reordinatione vitanda, &c.

³ *Quod cum dolore dicimus, vix pauci sacerdotes aut clerici Catholici in tanta terrarum latitudine reperiantur.*—*Annal. Saxo*, ann. 1106.

⁴ *Concil. Trecens.* ann. 1107 c. 2 (Pertz, *Legum T. II. P. ii. p. 181*).

to the Church, and had been promoted to the priesthood in 1099, chronicles in 1118 the death of Boseteha, his wife, in terms which show that no separation had ever occurred between them; and five years later he alludes to his son Henry in a manner to indicate that there was no irregularity in such relationship, nor ought that would cause him to forfeit the respect of his contemporaries in acknowledging it.¹ Even more to the point is the case of a pious priest, his friend, who, on the death of his wife ("presbytera"), made a vow that he would have no further intercourse with women. Cosmo relates that the unaccustomed deprivation proved harder than he had expected, and that for some years he was tortured with burning temptation. Finding at length that his resolution was giving way, he resolved to imitate St. Benedict in conquering the flesh; and having no suitable solitude for the execution of his purpose, he took a handful of nettles to his chamber, where, casting off his garments, he thrashed himself so unmercifully that for three days he lay moribund. Then he hung the nettles in a conspicuous place on his wall, that he might always have before his eyes so significant a memento and warning.² Cosmo's admiration for this, as a rare and almost incredible exhibition of priestly virtue and fortitude, shows how few were capable of even remaining widowers, while the whole story proves that not only the clergy were free to marry, but also that it was only the voluntary vow that prevented a second marriage. At the close of the century Pietro, Cardinal of Santa Maria in Via Lata, sent as legate to Bohemia by Celestin III., was much scandalised at this state of affairs; and when a number of

¹ Cosmæ Pragensis Chron. Lib. III. ann. 1118, 1123.

Rerum cunctarum comes indimota mearum
Bis Februi quinis obiit Boseteha kalendis.

² Ibid. Lib. III. ann. 1125 (Mencken. Script. Rer. German. III. 1799).

postulants for holy orders were assembled in the Church of St. Vitus at Prague, before ordaining them he pronounced a discourse on the subject of celibacy, and demanded that they should all swear to preserve continence. Thereupon all the priests who were present rushed forward and urged them not to assume an obligation hitherto unknown, and when the cardinal ordered the archdeacon to repress their somewhat active demonstrations, they proceeded to pummel that unhappy official, and the tumult was with difficulty repressed by the soldiery who were summoned. The legate sentenced some of the rioters to be starved to death in prison and the rest to be exiled—a wholesome severity which broke the spirit of the Bohemian priesthood and led to the introduction of celibacy.¹

That this state of things was not confined to the wild Bohemian Marches, but obtained throughout Germany in general, is sufficiently attested by the fact that when Innocent II. was driven out of Rome by the anti-pope Anaclet, and was wandering throughout Europe begging recognition, he held, in conjunction with the Emperor Lothair, in 1131, a council at Liège, where he procured the adoption of a canon prohibiting priestly marriage or attendance at the mass of married priests. Not only does the necessity of this fresh legislation show that previous enactments had become obsolete, but the manner in which these proceedings are referred to by the chroniclers plainly indicates that it took the Teutonic mind somewhat by surprise, and that the efforts of Gregory and Urban had not only remained without result, but had become absolutely forgotten.²

¹ Dubravii Hist. Bohem. Lib. XIV. (Ed. 1687, pp. 380–1).

² Statuitur et hoc semper memorabile, secundum decreta canonum, presbyteros parochianos castos et sine uxoribus esse debere: uxorati vero presbyteri missam a nemine audiendam esse.—Annal. Bosoviens. ann. 1131.

Statuitur quoque ab omnibus, secundum decreta canonum, illud antiquum, quod

If these proceedings of Innocent had any effect, it was only to make matters worse. The pious Rupert, Abbot of Duits, writing a few years later, deploras the immorality of the priesthood, who not only entered into forbidden marriages, but, knowing them to be illegal, had no scruple in multiplying the tie, considering it to be, at their pleasure, devoid of all binding force.¹ And in Liège itself, where Innocent had held his council, Bishop Albero, whose episcopate commenced in 1135, permitted his priests to celebrate their marriages openly, so that, as we are told, the citizens rather preferred to give their daughters in marriage to them than to laymen; and the naïve remark of the chronicler, that the clergy gave up keeping concubines in secret and took wives openly, would seem to show that the cause of morality had not gained during the temporary restriction imposed by Innocent.² It was not to much purpose that Albero was deprived of his see for this laxity, for the same state of things continued. No province of Germany was more orthodox than Salzburg, yet the archdeacon of the archiepiscopal Church there, writing in 1175, bewails the complete demoralisation of his clergy, whom he was utterly unable to reform. Priests who were content with their own wives and did not take those of other men were reputed virtuous and holy; and he complains that in his own archidiaconate he was powerless to prevent the ordination and ministry of the sons of priests, even while they were living in open adultery with women whom they had taken from their husbands.³ How little sympathy, indeed, all efforts to

semper erit innovandum, presbyteros castos et sine uxoribus esse, missam autem uxorati presbyteri neminem audire debere.—Chron. Sanpetrin. Erfurt. ann. 1131.

Statuitur etiam hoc semper memorabile, per decreta canonum presbyteros parrochianos castos et sine uxoribus esse debere, uxorati vero presbyteri missam a nemine audiendam esse.—Chron. Pegaviens. Continuat. ann. 1131.

¹ Ruperti Tuitens. Comment. in Apocalyps. Lib. II. cap. ii.

² Hist. Monast. S. Laurent. Leodiens. Lib. v. c. 39 (Martene Ampliss. Collect. IV. 1005).

³ Henrici Salisburg. Archidiac. de Calam. Eccles. Salisburg. cap. ix.

enforce the rule called forth is instructively shown by the wondering contempt with which a writer, strictly papalist in his tendencies, comments upon the indiscreet reformatory zeal of Meinhard, Archbishop of Trèves. Elevated to this lofty dignity in 1128, he at once undertook to force his clergy to obey the rule by the most stringent measures, and speedily became so odious that he was obliged to leave his bishopric within the year; and the chronicler who tells the story has only words of reprobation for the unfortunate prelate.¹ Even as late as the end of the twelfth century, a chronicler of the popes, writing in Southern Germany, calls Gregory VII. an enforcer of impossibilities—"præceptor impossibilium"—because he had endeavoured to make good the rule of celibacy;² and a Council of Ratisbon, in the thirteenth century, while lamenting the fact that there were few priests who did not openly keep their concubines and children in their houses, quotes the canon of Hildebrand forbidding the laity to attend at the ministrations of such persons, but without venturing to hint at its enforcement.³

Hungary had been Christianised at a time when the obligation of celibacy was but lightly regarded, though it had not as yet become obsolete. In reducing the dreaded and barbarous Magyars to civilisation, the managers of the movement might well smooth the path, and interpose as few obstacles as possible to the attainment of so desirable a consummation. It is probable, therefore, that re-

¹ "Deinde dum nimio zelo rectitudinis de incontinentia clericorum multa sæve disponderet, sine condimento discrecionis, magnam sibi comparavit invidiam, et quam nec dici fas est, acquisivit infamiam." He went to Italy, seeking aid from Honorius II., but was captured by Conrad the Swabian, the rival of the Emperor Lothair, and died of affliction in his prison at Parma, October 1, 1130 (Gest. Trevirorum Continuata, c. 27, 28).

² Anon. Zwetlensis Hist. Roman. Pontif. No. CLXI. (Pez, T. I. P. iii. p. 385).

Concil. Ratisbonens. sæc. XIII. c. v. (Printed by Schneller, Straubing, 1785.)

strictions on marriage, as applied to the priesthood, were lightly passed over, and, not being insisted on, were disregarded by all parties. Even the decretals of Nicholas II. and the fulminations of Gregory VII. appear to have never penetrated into the kingdom of St. Stephen, for sacerdotal celibacy seems to have been unknown among the Hungarians until the close of the century. The first allusion to it occurs in the Synod of Zabolcs, held in 1092, under the auspices of St. Ladislav II., and is of a nature to show not only that it was an innovation on established usages, but also that the subject required tender handling to reconcile it to the weakness of undisciplined human nature. After the bitter denunciations and cruelly harsh measures which the popes had been promulgating for nearly half a century, there is an impressive contrast in the mildness with which the Hungarian Church offered indulgence to those legitimately united to a first wife, until the Holy See could be consulted for a definitive decision;¹ and though marriages with second wives, widows, or divorced women were pronounced null and void, the disposition to evade a direct meeting of the question is manifested in a regulation which provided that if a priest united himself to his female slave "uxoris in locum," the woman should be sold; but if he refused to part with her, he was simply to pay her price to the bishop.² Whether or not the pope's decision was actually sought, we have no means of knowing; if it was, his inevitable verdict received little respect, for the Synod of Gran, held about the year 1099 by the Primate Seraphin of Gran, only ventured to recommend moderation to

¹ *Presbyteris autem qui prima et legitima duxere conjugia, indulgentia ad tempus datur, propter vinculum pacis et unitatem Spiritus Sancti, quousque nobis in hoc Domini Apostolici paternitas consilietur.*—Synod. Zabolcs ann. 1092 c. 3, or Decret. St. Ladisl. Lib. I. c. 3 (Batthyani, I. 434–5).

² Synod. Zabolcs c. 1, 2.—Any prelate assenting to such illicit unions, and not insisting on immediate separation, was punishable to a reasonable extent (Ibid. c. 4).

married priests, while its endeavour to enforce the rule prohibiting marriage after the assumption of orders shows how utterly the recognised discipline of the Church was neglected. The consent of wives was also required before married priests could be elevated to the episcopate, and after consecration separation was strictly enjoined, affording still further evidence of the laxity allowed to the other grades. The iteration of the rules respecting *digami* and marriage with widows also indicates how difficult was the effort to resuscitate those well-known regulations, although they were universally admitted to be binding on all ecclesiastics.¹

King Coloman, whose reign extended from 1095 to 1114, has the credit of being the first who definitely enjoined immaculate purity on the Hungarian priesthood. His laws, as collected by Alberic, have no dates, and therefore we are unable to affix precise epochs to them; but his legislation on the subject appears to have been progressive, for we find edicts containing injunctions respecting *digami* and irregular unions in terms which indicate that single marriages were not interfered with; and these may reasonably be deemed earlier than other laws which formally prohibit the elevation to the diaconate of an unmarried man without exacting from him a vow of continence, or of a married man without the consent of his wife. The import of this latter condition is explained by another law, which provided that no married man should officiate at the altar unless his wife professed continence, and was furnished by her husband with the means of dwelling apart from him.² As these stringent regulations form part of the canons of a council held by Archbishop Seraphin about the

¹ Synod. Strigonens. II. (Batthyani, II. 121-8). Peterffy's emendation of "vulnerint" for "noluerint," in the clause respecting *digami*, can hardly be questioned.

² Decret. Coloman. cap. 41, 42. Comp. cap. 27 and 37.

year 1109,¹ they were probably borrowed from that council by Coloman, and incorporated into his laws at a period somewhat later.

I have not met with any indications of the results of the legislation which thus combined the influence of the temporal and ecclesiastical authorities. That it effected little, however, is apparent from the evidence afforded by Dalmatia, at that time a province of Hungary. Shortly before it lost its independence, its duke, Dimitri, resolved to assume the crown of royalty, and purchased the assent of Gregory VII. at the price of acknowledging him as feudal superior. Gregory took advantage of Dimitri's aspirations to further the plans of reform, of which he never lost sight; for, in the coronation oath taken in 1076 before Gebizo, the papal legate, the new king swore that he would take such measures as would insure the chastity of all ecclesiastics, from the bishop to the subdeacon.² The new dynasty did not last long, for before the end of the century St. Ladislas united the province of Dalmatia to the kingdom of Hungary; but neither the oath of Dimitri, the laws of Coloman, nor the canons of the national councils succeeded in eradicating the custom of priestly marriage. When we find, in 1185, Urban III., in approving the acts of the Synod of Spalatro, graciously expressing his approbation of its prohibiting the marriage of priests, and desiring that the injunction should be extended so as to include the diaconate,³ we see that marriage must have been openly enjoyed by all ranks, that the synod had not ventured to include in the restriction any but the highest order, and that Urban himself did not undertake to apply the rule to subdeacons, although they had been specially included in Dimitri's

¹ Synod. Vencellina circa 1109.

² Batthyani, I. 431.

³ Epist. Urbani apud Batthyani, II. 274.

oath. Yet still pope and synod laboured in vain, for fourteen years later, in 1199, another national council complained that priests kept both wives and benefices. It therefore commanded that those who indulged in this species of adultery should either dismiss their partners in guilt, and undergo due penance, or else should give up their churches; while no married man should be admitted to the diaconate, unless his wife would take a vow of continence before the bishop.¹ Even yet, however, the subdiaconate is not alluded to, although the legates who presided over the council were those of Innocent III.

Of how little avail were these efforts is shown by the national council held at Vienna as late as 1267, by Cardinal Guido, legate of Clement IV. It was still found necessary to order the deprivation of priests and deacons who persisted in retaining their wives; while the special clauses respecting those who married after taking orders prove that such unions were frequent enough to require tender consideration in removing the evil. The subdiaconate, also, was declared liable to the same regulations, but the resistance of the members of that order was probably stubborn, for the canons were suspended in their favour until further instructions should be received from the pope.²

Poland was equally remiss in enforcing the canons on her clergy. The leaning of the Slavonic races towards the Greek Church rendered them, in fact, peculiarly intractable, and marriage was commonly practised by the clergy at least until the close of the twelfth century.³ At length the efforts of Rome were extended to that distant region, and in 1197 the papal legate,

¹ Synod. Dalmatiæ ann. 1199 (Batthyani, II. 289-90).

² Concil. Vienn. ann. 1267 (Batthyani, II. 415-17).

³ *Complures ea tempestate sacerdotes uxoribus velut jure legitimo utebantur.*

Cardinal Peter of Capua, held the Synod of Lanciski, when the priests were peremptorily ordered to dismiss their wives and concubines, who, in the words of the historian, were at that time universally and openly kept.¹ The result of this seems to have amounted to little, for in 1207 we find Innocent III. sharply reproving the bishops of the province of Gnesen because married men were publicly admitted to ecclesiastical dignities, and canons took no shame in the families growing up around them. The children of priests were brought up to the sacred profession of their fathers, assisted them in their ministrations, and succeeded to their benefices. Whether or not the other disorders which Innocent designated as infecting the churches were the result of the carnal affections which thus superseded the spiritual we may fairly doubt, in view of the abuses still prevailing in more favoured regions.² The effort was continued, and was apparently at length successful, at least in the western portions of the Polish Church, for at the Council of Breslau, held in 1279, there is no mention of wives, and the constitution of Guido, legate of Clement IV., is quoted, depriving of benefices those who openly kept concubines.³

The Church of Sweden was no purer than its neighbours. That the rule was recognised there at a tolerably early period is shown by the fact that when the people of Scania, about the year 1180, revolted against the exactions of Waldemar I. of Denmark, they demanded to be released from the oppression of tithes, and that the clergy should be married. Singularly enough, the clerks stood by their bishop, Absalom,

¹ Staravolsc. Concil. Epit. ap. Harduin. T. VI. P. II. p. 1937.

² Innocent. PP. III. Regest. Lib. IX. Epist. 235.

³ Concil. Vratislaviens. ann. 1279 c. iii. (Hartzheim III. 808).

when he laid an interdict on the province, and the arms of Waldemar speedily subdued the revolt.¹ Not much, however, was gained for Church discipline by this. In 1204 the Archbishop of Lunden reported to Innocent III. that he had used every endeavour to enforce the canons, and had brought many of his priests to observe chastity, but that there still were many who persisted in retaining their women, whom they treated as though they were legitimate wives, with fidelity and conjugal affection. To this Innocent replied that the recalcitrants must be coerced by suspension, and, if necessary, by deprivation of benefice.² How little result this achieved is evident when we find the archbishop again writing to Innocent III. complaining that the Swedish priests persisted in living with their wives, and that they moreover claimed to have a papal dispensation permitting it. Innocent, in reply, cautiously abstained from pronouncing an opinion as to the validity of these pretensions until he should have an opportunity of examining the document to which they appealed.³ The efforts at this time were fruitless, for in 1237 Gregory IX. ordered Sigund, Archbishop of Drontheim, to put an end to the public marriages of his clergy,⁴ and in 1248 we find the Cardinal of St. Sabina as legate of Innocent IV. holding a council at Schening, of which the principal object was to reform these abuses, which were so firmly established that the Swedes were considered as schismatics of the Greek Church, in consequence of the marriage of their priests. The council, supported by the royal power, succeeded in forcing the Swedish ecclesiastics to give up their wives by a liberal use of all the punishments then in vogue, together with

¹ Saxo. Grammat. Hist. Dan. Lib. xv. (Ed. 1576, p. 327).

² Innocent. PP. III. Regest. VI. 198.

³ Innocent. III. Regest. XVI. 118.

⁴ Potthast. Regesta I. 879, No. 10352.

the significant threat of abandoning them to the tender mercies of the secular tribunals.¹

In Denmark, and along the northern coasts of Germany, there was equal delay in enforcing the canon of celibacy. It is suggestive of some powerful intercession in favour of the married clergy when we see Paschal II., in 1117, writing to the King of Denmark that the rule was imperative, and that he could admit of no exceptions to it.² His insistence, however, was of little avail. In 1266 Cardinal Guido, legate of Clement IV., held a council at Bremen, where he was obliged to take rigorous measures to put an end to this Nicolitan heresy. All married priests, deacons, and sub-deacons were pronounced incapable of holding any ecclesiastical office whatever. Children born of such unions were declared infamous, and incapable of inheritance, and any property received by gift or otherwise from their fathers was confiscated. Those who permitted their daughters, sisters, or other female relatives to contract such marriages, or gave them up in concubinage to priests, were excluded from the Church. That a previous struggle had taken place on the subject is evident from the penalties threatened against the prelates who were in the habit of deriving a revenue from the protection of these irregularities, and from an allusion to the armed resistance, made by the married and concubinary priests with their friends, to all efforts to check their scandalous conduct.³

In Friesland, too, the efforts of the sacerdotalists were long set at nought. In 1219 Emo, Abbot of Witte-

¹ *Prima intentio et cura Cardinalis Sabinensis in hoc concilio erat revocare Suecos et Gothos a schismate Græcorum, in quo presbyteri et sacerdotes, ductis publicis uxoribus consensisse videbantur.*—Harduin. VII. 423.

² Jaffé, *Regesta*, pp. 515–6.—Paschal. II. Epist. 497.

³ *Concil. Bremens. ann. 1266 (Hartzheim IV. 580).*

werum, describing the disastrous inundations which afflicted his country, considers them as a punishment sent to chastise the vices of the land, and among the disorders which were peculiarly obnoxious to the wrath of God he enumerates the public marriage of the priests, the hereditary transmission of benefices, and the testamentary provision made by ecclesiastics for their children out of the property which should accrue to the Church; while his references to the canon law inhibiting these practices show that these digressions were not excusable through ignorance.¹ The warning was unheeded, for Abbot Emo alludes incidentally, on various subsequent occasions, to the hereditary transmission of several deaneries as a matter of course.² The deans in Friesland were ecclesiastics of high position, each having six or more parishes under his jurisdiction, which he governed under legatine power from the Bishop of Munster. When, in 1271, the people rose against them, exasperated by their intolerable exactions, in some temporary truce the deans gave their *children* as hostages; and when, after their expulsion, Gerard of Munster came to their assistance by excommunicating the rebels, the latter defended the movement by the argument that the deans had violated the laws of the Church by handing down their positions from father to son, and that each generation imitated the incontinence of its predecessors.³ Hildebrand might have applauded this reasoning, but his days were past. The Church by this time had gained the position to which it had aspired, and no longer

¹ Emonis Chron. ann. 1219.

² "Eodem tempore defunctus est præfatus decanus (Herbrandus) possessor ecclesiæ in Husquert, tertius heres illius nominis, relicto parvulo ejusdem nominis." (Emonis Chron. ann. 1231.)—and Emo alludes to him as "honesto viro Herbrando."

"Obiit Geyco decanus in Firmetium vir per omnia sæcularibus artibus idoneus, et bene religiosus et obsequiosus. Successit ei Siccio, quartus a proavo Sigrepo."—Ibid. ann. 1233.

³ Menconis Chron. Werens. ann. 1271.

invoked secular assistance to enforce its laws. Even Abbot Menco, while admitting the validity of the popular argument, claimed that such questions were reserved for the decision of the Church alone, and that the people must not interfere.

After thus marking the slow progress of the Hildebrandine movement in these frontier lands of Christendom, let us see what efforts were required to establish the reform in regions less remote.

CHAPTER XVI

FRANCE

GREGORY VII. had not been so engrossed in his quarrels with the Empire as to neglect the prosecution of his favourite schemes of reform elsewhere. If he displayed somewhat less of energy and zeal in dealing with the ecclesiastical foibles of other countries, it was perhaps because the political complications which gave a special zest to his efforts in Germany were wanting, and because there was no organised resistance supported by the temporal authorities. Yet the inertia of passive non-compliance long rendered his endeavours and those of his successors equally nugatory.

As early as 1056 we find Victor II., by means of his vicars at the Council of Toulouse, enjoining on the priesthood separation from their wives, under penalty of excommunication and deprivation of function and benefice.¹ This was followed up in 1060 by Nicholas II., who sought through his envoys to enforce the observance of his decretals on celibacy in France, and under the presidency of his legate the Council of Tours in that year adopted a canon of the most decided character. All who, since the promulgation of the decretal of 1060, had continued in the performance of their sacred functions while still preserving relations with their wives and concubines were deprived of their grades without hope of restoration; and the same irrevocable penalty was denounced against those who in the future should

¹ Concil. Tolosan. ann. 1056 can. vii.

endeavour to combine the incompatible duties of husband and minister of Christ.¹

In what spirit these threats and injunctions were likely to be received may be gathered from an incident which occurred, probably about this time. A French bishop, as in duty bound, excommunicated one of his deacons for marrying. The clergy of the diocese, keen to appreciate the prospect of future trouble, rallied around their persecuted brother, and rose in open rebellion against the prelate. The latter, apparently, was unable to maintain his position, and the matter was referred for adjudication to the celebrated Berenger of Tours. Although, in view of the papal jurisprudence of the period, the bishop would seem to have acted with leniency, yet Berenger blamed both parties for their precipitancy and quarrelsome humour, and decided that the excommunication of a deacon for marrying was contrary to the canons, unless rendered unavoidable by the contumacy of the offender.²

Even more significant was the scene which occurred in 1074 in the Council of Paris, where all, bishops, abbots, and priests, refused to obey the mandate of Hildebrand, declaring that it imposed an insupportable burden; and when the holy St. Gauthier, Abbot of Pontoise, ventured to argue that the commands of the pope must be executed, whether just or unjust, he was set upon, beaten almost to death, carried before the king, and confined until some friendly nobles procured his release.³

When such was the spirit of the ecclesiastical body,

¹ Concil. Turon. ann. 1060 c. 6.

² *Ceterum, quod excommunicavit diaconum suum propter ductam uxorem, contra canones fecisse videtur mihi, nisi forte cogente pertinacia ipsius.*—*Epist. Berengar. Turon.* (Martene Thesaur. I. 195–6). It must be borne in mind that the persecution of Berenger arose solely from his theological subtleties, and that objections to celibacy formed no portion of his errors.

³ *Labbæi et Coleti Supplementum, T. II. p. 5.* “*The Life and Times of Hildebrand,*” by the Abbé O. Délarc.

there was little to be expected from any internal attempt at reform. At the stormy Synod of Poitiers, in 1078, the papal legate, Hugh, Bishop of Die, succeeded in obtaining the adoption of a canon which threatened with excommunication all who should knowingly listen to the mass of a concubinary or simoniacal priest,¹ but this seems to have met with little response. Coercion from without was evidently requisite, and in this case, as we have seen, Gregory did not shrink from subjecting the Church to the temporal power. In Normandy, for instance, a synod held at Lisieux in 1055 had commanded the degradation of priests who resided with wives or concubines. This was, of course, ineffective, and in 1072 John, Archbishop of Rouen, held a council in his cathedral city, where he renewed that canon in terms which show how completely all orders and dignitaries were habitually liable to its penalties.² The Norman clergy were not disposed to submit quietly to this abridgment of their accustomed privileges, and they expressed their dissent by raising a terrible clamour and driving their archbishop from the council with a shower of stones, from which he barely escaped alive.³ At length, in view of the utter failure of all ecclesiastical legislation, the laity were called in. William the Conqueror, therefore, in 1080, assisted the Archbishop of Rouen in holding a synod at Lillebonne, where the stern presence of the suzerain prevented any unseemly resistance to the adoption of most unpalatable regulations. All who were in holy orders were forbidden, under any pretext, to keep women in their houses, and if, when accused of disobedience, they were unable to prove themselves innocent, their benefices were irretriev-

¹ Concil. Pictaviens. ann. 1078 can. 9.

² Concil. Rotomag. ann. 1072 can. 16, "de clericis uxoris."

³ Orderic. Vital. P. II. Lib. iv. c. 2. A full account of this episode will be found in the Abbé O. Délarc's "The Life and Times of Hildebrand," 3 vols.

ably forfeited. If the accusation was made by the ecclesiastical officials, the offender was to be tried by the episcopal court, but if his parishioners or feudal superior were the complainants, he was to be brought before a mixed tribunal composed of the squires of his parish and the officials of the bishop. This startling invasion of the dearest privileges of the Church was declared by William to proceed from no desire to interfere with the jurisdiction of his bishops, but to be a temporary expedient, rendered necessary by their negligence. Nor is this remarkable measure the only thing that renders the Synod of Lillebonne worthy of note, for it affords us the earliest authoritative indication of a practice which subsequently became a standing disgrace to the Church. The fifth canon declares that no priest shall be forced to give anything to the bishop or to the officers of the diocese beyond their lawful dues, and especially that no money shall be exacted on account of women kept by clerks.¹ A tribute known as "cullagium" became at times a recognised source of revenue, in consideration of which the weaknesses of human nature were excused, and ecclesiastics were allowed to enjoy in security the society of their concubines. We shall see hereafter that this infamous custom continued to flourish until the sixteenth century, despite the most strenuous and repeated endeavours to remove so grievous a scandal.

It is probable that the expedient of mixed courts for the trial of married and concubinary priests was not adopted without the concurrence of Gregory, who was willing to make almost any sacrifice necessary to accomplish his purpose. That they were organised and per-

¹ Concil. Tulibonens. ann. 1080 can. 3, 5 (Orderic. Vital. P. II. Lib. v. c. 6.—Harduin. Concil. T. VI. P. I. p. 1599).—Propter eorum feminas nulla pecuniæ emendatio exigatur.

formed the functions delegated to them is shown by a reference in a charter of 1088 to one held at Caumont, which required a priest to abandon either his wife or his church.¹ So far, indeed, was Gregory from protesting against this violation of ecclesiastical immunities, that he was willing even to connive at the abuses which immediately crept into the system, and to purchase the assistance of the laity by allowing them to lay sacrilegious hands on the temporalities of the Church. Many of the nobles who thus assisted in expelling the offending clergy seized the tithes and retained them. The papal legate, Hugh, Bishop of Die—better known by his subsequent primatial dignity of Lyons—proceeded against these invaders of Church property in the usual manner, and excommunicated them as a matter of course. Gregory, however, who under ordinary circumstances would have promptly consigned the spoilers to the bottomless pit, now virtually took their side. He discreetly declined to confirm the excommunication, reproved his legate for superserviceable zeal, and ordered him in future to be more guarded and temperate in his proceedings.²

Church and State—the zeal of the ecclesiastic and the avarice of the noble—vainly united to break down the stubbornness of the Norman priesthood, for marriage continued to be enjoyed as openly as ever. The only effect of the attempted reform, indeed, appeared to be that when a priest entered into matrimony he took a solemn vow never to give up his wife, a measure prompted doubtless by the fears of the bride and her kindred. The nuptials were public; male issue succeeded to benefices by a recognised primogeniture, and female children received their fathers' churches as dower, when other resources were wanting. About the beginning of the

¹ Pauli Carnot. Vet. Agano. Lib. VIII. c. 11.

² Gregor. VII. Regist. Lib. IX. Epist. 5.

twelfth century, three enthusiastic ascetic reformers, the celebrated Robert d'Arbrissel, founder of Fontevrault, Bernard Abbot of Tiron, and Vitalis of Mortain traversed Normandy and preached with great earnestness against these abuses, the result of which was that they nearly came to an untimely end at the hands of the indignant pastors and their more indignant spouses. On one occasion, when Bernard was preaching at Coutances, a married archdeacon assailed him, with a crowd of priests and clerks, asking how he, a monk, dead to the world, presumed to preach to the living. Bernard replied that Samson had slain his foes with the jaw-bone of a dead ass, and then proceeded with so moving a discourse on Samson, that the archdeacon was converted, and interfered to save him from the mob.¹

If William the Conqueror found his advantage in thus assisting the hopeless reform within his duchy of Normandy he had no hesitation in obstructing it when his policy demanded such a course in his subject province of Brittany. During the three and a half centuries through which the Breton Church maintained its independence of the archiepiscopal see of Tours, its metropolis was Dol. Judhaël, who occupied its lofty seat, not only obtained it by simony, but sullied it by a public marriage; and when the offspring of this illicit union reached maturity he portioned them from the property of the Church. This prolonged violation of the canons attracted the attention of Gregory soon after his accession, and in 1076 he informed William that he had deposed the offender. William, however, saw fit to defend the scandal, and refused to receive Evenus, Abbot of St. Melanius, whom Gregory had appointed as a successor.² Judhaël, indeed, was no worse than

¹ Gaufridi Grossi Vit. Bernardi Tironens. c. 6, §§ 51-54.

² Gregor. VII. Epist. extrav. 29.—Epist. in Martene Thesaur. III. 871-6.

his suffragans. For three generations the diocese of Quimper was held by father, son, and grandson; while the Bishops of Rennes, Vannes, and Nantes were openly married, and their wives enjoyed the recognised rank of countesses, as an established right.¹ How much improvement resulted from the efforts of Gregory and his legate Hugh may be estimated from the description, in general terms, of the iniquities ascribed to the Breton clergy, both secular and regular, in the early part of the next century, by Paschal II. when granting the pallium to Baldric, Archbishop of Dol. All classes are described as indulging in enormities hateful to God and man, and as having no hesitation in setting the canons at defiance. In Brittany, as in Wales and Spain, the centralising influence of Rome was at fault, and priestly marriage was persevered in long after it had been abrogated elsewhere.²

In Flanders, Count Robert the Frisian and Adela, his mother, were well disposed to second the reformatory measures of Gregory, but, doubting their right to eject the offenders, they applied to him, in 1076, for instructions. His answers were unequivocal, urging them to the most prompt and summary proceedings.³ The spirit in which the clergy met the attack was manifested by the incident already described, when, in 1077, an unfortunate zealot was burned at the stake in Cambrai for maintaining the propriety of the papal decretals. The same disposition, though fortunately leading to less deplorable results, was exhibited in Artois. At the

¹ Roujoux, *Hist. de Bretagne* II. 98-99. The independence affected by the Breton Church is well shown in a singularly impertinent letter addressed to Leo IX. by the clergy of Nantes, refusing to receive a bishop appointed by him, after the degradation for simony of Prodicus by the Council of Rheims in 1050 (*Martene Thesaur.* I. 172-3).

² *Martene Thesaur.* III. 882.—Haddan and Stubbs II. 96.

³ *Gregor.* VII. *Regist. Lib.* IV. *Epistt.* 10, 11.

instance of Adela, Robert, in 1072, had founded the priory of Watten, near St. Omer. Despite this powerful interest and patronage, the house had a severe struggle for existence, as its prior, Otfrid, lent his influence to support the reform and to enforce the decrees of Gregory. Reproaches and curses were showered upon the infant community, and it was openly threatened with fire and sword, until the unfortunate brethren felt equally insecure within their walls and abroad. At length the Countess Adela took Otfrid with her on a pilgrimage to Rome, and there the holy man procured from Gregory a confirmation of the privileges of his house. On his return, he found that this instrument only made the persecution more vehement. Accusations of all kinds were made against the priory, and its enemies succeeded in causing the brethren to be brought for trial before the local synod, where the production of the papal charter was ordered. It was at once pronounced a forgery, was taken away by force, and was retained by the bishop, Drogo of Terouane, in spite of all remonstrance.¹

The opposition of the clergy was not lessened by the manner in which the secular authorities exercised the power bestowed upon them. Count Robert saw the advantages derivable from the position of affairs, and seems to have been resolved to turn it thoroughly to account. Among other modes adopted was that of the "jus spoli," by which he seized the effects of dying ecclesiastics, turning their families out of doors and disinheriting the heirs. These arbitrary proceedings he defended on the ground of the incontinence of the sufferers, boldly declaring that wicked priests were no priests—as if, groaned the indignant clerks, sinful men

¹ Ebrardi Chron. Watinens. cap. 22-3. Ebrard was a contemporary, a disciple of Otfrid, and therefore his statement of the motives of the persecution is entitled to credence.

were not men.¹ In 1091, the Flemish priests complained of these acts to Urban II., and he vainly endeavoured to interfere on their behalf.² Finding this resource fail, they appealed to their metropolitan, Renaud, Archbishop of Rheims, who by active measures succeeded in putting an end to the abuse in 1092.

Amid all this the Church proved powerless to enforce its laws, and again it called upon the feudal authority for assistance—this time in a manner by which it admitted its impotence on a question so vital. In 1099, Manasses of Rheims held a provincial synod at St. Omer, which instructed the Count of Flanders, Robert the Hierosolymitan, to seize the wives of all priests who, after excommunication, declined to abandon their guilty partners; and in this he was not to ask or wait for the assent of the bishop of the diocese. The sturdy Crusader would doubtless have carried out this order to the letter, with all its attendant cruelty and misery, but the clergy of the province united in remonstrances so vehement that Manasses was forced to abandon his position. He accordingly requested Robert on no account to disturb the married priests and their wives, or to permit his nobles to do so, except when assistance was demanded by the bishops. He acknowledged the injustice he had committed in overslaughing the constituted authorities of the Church, and deprecated the rapine and spoliation which so ill-advised a proceeding might cause. At the same time he admonished his suffragans to proceed vigorously against all who married in orders, and to call on the seigneurial power to coerce those who should prove contumacious.³

¹ "Addens malos sacerdotes sacerdotes non esse, acsi peccator homo non esset homo." From the tenor of Robert's defence it is evident that it was the children of the clerks whom he disinherited. The documents are in Warnkönig, *Hist. de Flandre* I. 330-3 (Bruxelles, 1835).

² Urbani PP. II. Epist. 70.

³ Lambert. Atrebat. Epist. 60.

Harsh and violent as were the measures thus threatened, there appears to have been extreme hesitation in carrying them out. A certain clerk known as Robert of Artois committed the unpardonable indiscretion of marrying a widow, and openly resisted all the efforts of his bishop to reduce him to obedience. Not only his original crime, but his subsequent contumacious rebellion, would assuredly justify the severest chastisement, yet both the secular and ecclesiastical powers of the province seem to have been at fault, for it was found necessary to ask the interference of no less a personage than Richard, Bishop of Albano, the papal legate in France. In 1104 the legate accordingly addressed the Count of Flanders with the very moderate request that the obstinate rebel and his abettors should be held as excommunicate until they should reconcile themselves to their bishop. Robert finally appealed to Rome itself, but in the end was obliged to succumb. Similar was the case of two Artesian deacons who refused to abandon their wives until Lambert, the Bishop of Artois, excommunicated them, when they travelled to Rome in hopes of reconciliation to the Church. Paschal II. absolved them on their taking a solemn oath upon the Gospels to live chastely in future, and he sent them back to Lambert with instructions to keep a careful watch upon them.¹ These cases, which chance to remain on record, show how obstinately the clergy held to their wives, and how difficult it was to convince them that the authorities of the Church were determined to enforce the canons. We therefore need not be surprised to find Paschal II., after the year 1100, writing to the clergy of Terouane, expressing his astonishment that, in spite of so many decretals of popes and canons of councils, they still

¹ Lambert. *Atrebat. Epist.* 84.—Paschalis PP. II. *Epist.* 134.—Lambert. *Epist. apud Baluz. et Mansi* II. 150.

adhered to their consorts, some of them openly and some secretly. To remedy this, he has nothing but a repetition of the old threat of deprivation.¹

The confusion which this attempted reformation caused in France was apparently not so aggravated as we have seen it in Germany, and yet it was sufficiently serious. Guibert de Nogent relates that in his youth commenced the persecution of the married priests by Rome, when a cousin of his, a layman of flagrant and excessive licentiousness, made himself conspicuous by his attacks on the failings of the clergy. The family were anxious to provide for young Guibert, who was destined to the Church, and the cousin used his influence with the patron of a benefice to oust the married incumbent, and bestow the preferment on Guibert. The priest thus forcibly ejected abandoned neither his wife nor his functions, but relieved his mind by excommunicating every day, in the mass, Guibert's mother and all her family, until the good woman's fears were so excited that she abandoned the prebend which she had obtained with so much labour.² We can readily conceive this incident to be a type of what was occurring in every corner of the kingdom, when, in an age of brute force, the reverence which was the only defence of the priesthood was partially destroyed, and the people hardly knew whether they were to adore their pastors as representatives of God, or to dread them as the powerful ministers of evil.

When the religious ardour of Europe rose to the wild excitement that culminated in the Crusades, and Pope Urban II. astutely availed himself of the movement to place the Church in possession of a stronger influence

¹ Paschalis PP. II. Epist. 415.

² Guibert. *Noviogenit. de Vita Sua Lib. I. cap. vii.*

over the minds of men than it had ever before enjoyed, it was to no purpose that the great Council of Clermont, in 1095, took the opportunity to proclaim in the most solemn manner the necessity of perfect purity in ministers of the altar, to denounce irrevocable expulsion for contravention of the rule, and to forbid the children of ecclesiastics from entering the Church except as monks or canons.¹ It was the weightiest exposition of Church discipline, and was promulgated under circumstances to give it the widest publicity and the highest authority. Yet, within a few years, we find Gauilo, Bishop of Paris, applying to Ivo of Chartres for advice as to what ought to be done with a canon of his Church who had recently married, and Ivo in reply recommending as a safe course that the marriage be held valid, but that the offender be relieved of his stipend and functions.² His answer, moreover, is written in a singularly undecided tone, and an elaborate argument is presented as though the matter were still open to discussion, although Ivo's laborious compilations of the canon law show that he was thoroughly familiar with the ancient discipline which the depravity of his generation had rendered obsolete.³ Hardly less significant is another epistle in which Ivo calls the attention of Daimbert, Archbishop of Sens, to the conduct of one of his dignitaries, who publicly maintained two concubines and was preparing to marry a third. He urges Daimbert to put an end to the scandal, and suggests that if he is unable to accomplish it single-handed, he should summon two or three of his suffragans to his assistance.⁴ Either of these instances is a sufficient

¹ Concil. Claromont. can. 9, 10, 25.

In Lent of the following year (1096) Urban caused these canons to be received by a provincial council held under his auspices at Tours.—Bernald. Constant. ann. 1096.

² Ivon. Carnot. Epist. 218.

³ Ivon. Decret. P. VI. c. 50 sqq.—Panorm. Lib. III. c. 84 sqq.

⁴ Ivon. Epist. 200.

confession of the utter futility of the ceaseless exertions which for half a century the Church had been making to enforce her discipline. Nor, perhaps, can her ill-success be wondered at when we consider how unworthy were the hands to which was frequently entrusted the administering of the law, and the laxity of opinion which viewed the worst transgressions with indulgence. The archdeacons were the officials to whom was specially confided the supervision over sacerdotal morals, and yet, when a man occupying that responsible position, like Aldebert of Le Mans, publicly surrounded himself with a harem, and took no shame from the resulting crowd of offspring, so little did his conduct shock the sensibilities of the age that he was elevated to the episcopal chair, and only the stern voice of Ivo could be heard reproving the measureless scandal.¹

Equal looseness pervaded the monastic establishments. Hildebert, Bishop of Le Mans, made numerous fruitless attempts to restore discipline in the celebrated abbey of Euron, the monks of which indulged in the grossest licentiousness, and successfully defied his power until he was obliged to appeal to the papal legate for assistance.² Albero of Verdun, after fruitless attempts to reform the monastery of St. Paul, in his episcopal city, was obliged to turn out the monks by force and replace them with Premonstratensians, who were then in the full ardour of their new discipline.³ The description which Ivo of Chartres gives of the convent of St. Fara shows a pro-

¹ Quod ultra modum laxaveris frena pudicitiae, in tantum ut post acceptum archidiaconatum, accubante lateribus tuis plebe muliercularum, multam generis plebem puerorum et puellarum.—Ibid. Epist. 277.

² Est etiam eis publica et inexpugnabilis cum mulieribus familiaritas, quibus illae, promissis et praemissis obligatae munusculis, dies iniquitatis et noctes infamiae indicare comprobantur.—Hildebert. Cenoman. Epist. 38 (Lib. II. Epist. 25).

³ Hist. Episc. Verdunens. (D'Achery Spicileg. II. 254).

miscuous and shameless prostitution, on the part of the nuns of that institution, even more degrading.¹ Instances like these could be almost indefinitely multiplied, such as that of St. Mary of Argentueil, reformed by Heloise, the great foundation of St. Denis, previous to the abbacy of Suger, and that of St. Gildas de Ruys in Brittany, as described by Abelard; ² who, moreover, depicts the nuns of the period, in general terms, as abandoned to the most hideous licentiousness—those who were good-looking prostituting themselves for hire, those who were not so fortunate hiring men to gratify their passions, while the older ones, who had passed the age of lust, acted as procuresses.³ Innocent III. may therefore be absolved from the charge of exaggeration when, in ordering the reform of the nuns of St. Agatha, he alludes to their convent as a brothel which infected with its evil reputation the whole country around it.⁴ A contemporary chronicler records as a matter of special wonder that John of Salisbury, Bishop of Chartres, forced his canons to live in cloisters according to the Rule of St. Augustin; and he adds that, stimulated by this example, his uncle, John of Lisieux, and his successor, Geoffrey of Chartres, attempted the same reform, but without success.⁵ It is true that some partial reform was effected by St. Bernard, but the austerities of the new orders founded by enthusiasts like him and St. Bruno, Robert d'Arbrissel, and St. Norbert, did not cure the ineradicable vices of the older establishments.

¹ *Audiui turpissimam famam de monasterio Sanctæ Faræ, quod jam non locus sanctimonialium sed mulierum dæmonialium prostibulum dicendum est, corpora sua ad turpes usus omni generi hominum prostituentium.*—Ivon. *Epist.* 70.

² *Martene Thesaur. T. V. pp. 1142–3.*—Honorii PP. II. *Epist.* 91.—Guill. Nangis ann. 1123, 1124.

³ P. Abælardi *Sermo* xxix.

⁴ *Bull. Pontif. No. xxiii. ap. Hahnii Collect. Monument. Vet. I. 147.* As to the reformation of the nuns of Laon, see Guill. de Nangis ann. 1128.

⁵ *Roberti de Monte Chron. ann. 1143.*

With such examples before us, it is not difficult to believe the truth of the denunciations with which Raoul of Poitiers, whose fiery zeal gained for him the distinctive appellation of "Ardens," lashed the vices of his fellows; nor can we conclude that it was mere rhetorical amplification which led him to declare that the clergy, who should be models for their flocks, were more shameless and abandoned than those whose lives it was their duty to guide.¹ Peter Cantor, indeed, deploras the superiority of the laity to the clergy as the greatest injury that afflicted the Church.²

The natural result of such a state of morals was the prevalence of the hereditary principle against which the Church had so long and so perseveringly striven. How completely this came to be regarded as a matter of course, is shown by a contemporary charter to the ancient monastery of Bèze, by which a priest named Germain, on entering it bestowed upon it his holding, consisting of certain specified tithes. This deed of gift is careful to declare the assent of the sons of the donor, showing that the title of the monastery would not have been considered good as against the claims of Germain's descendants had they not joined in the conveyance.³ Even as late as 1202 we find Innocent III. endeavouring to put a stop to the hereditary transmission of benefices in the bishopric of Toul, where it was practised to an extent which showed how little impression had as yet been made by the unceasing efforts of the last hundred and fifty years.⁴

¹ Nonne qui nocentes deberemus absolvere, eis malo exemplo nocemus? Nonne qui deberemus pollutos lavare, vitiorum nostrorum contagione alios polluimus? — Sed nos, hodie indigni sacerdotes quid dicemus qui cæteris hominibus non majores sed deteriores sumus? Qui cum in conspectu hominum gradu sacerdotalis ordinis celsiores cæteris videamur, tamen cæteris inferiores vita moribusque jacemus?—Radulph. Ardent. T. II. P. ii. Homil. 25.—See also Homil. 21.

² Nihil enim est quo magis lædatur Ecclesia quam quod laicos videt esse meliores clericis.—Pet. Cant. Verb. Abbreviat. cap. lvii.

³ Hoc totum factum est rogatu Germani presbyteri, filiorumque ejus, qui post inde noster effectus est monachus.—Chron. Besuens. Chart. de tenement. German. presbyt.

⁴ Innocent. PP. III. Regest. v. 67.

When, in the presence of so stiff-necked and evil disposed a generation, all human efforts seemed unavailing to secure respect for the canons of councils and decretals of popes, we need scarcely wonder if recourse was had to the miraculous agencies which so often proved efficacious in subduing the minds of men. Wondrous stories, accordingly, were not wanting, to show how offended Heaven sometimes gave in this world a foretaste of the wrath to come, awaiting those who lived in habitual disregard of the teachings of the Church. Thus Peter the Venerable relates with much unction how a priest, who had abandoned himself to carnal indulgences, died amid the horrors of anticipated hell-fire. Visible to him alone, the demons chuckling around his death-bed heated the frying-pan of burning fat in which he was incontinently to be plunged, while a drop flying from the sputtering mass seared him to the bone, as a dreadful material sign that his agony was not the distempered imagining of a tortured conscience. A miracle equally significant wrung a confession of his weakness from the Dean of Minden in 1167.¹

If Heaven thus miraculously manifested its anger, it was equally ready to welcome back the repentant sinner. In the first energy of the reforms of St. Bernard, a priest entered the abbey of Clairvaux. The rigour of the Cistercian discipline wore out his enthusiasm; he fled from the convent, returned to his parish, and, according to the general custom (*"sicut multis consuetudinis est"*) took to himself a concubine, and soon saw a family increasing around him. The holy St. Bernard chanced to pass that way and accepted the priest's warm hospitality without recognising him. When the Saint was ready to depart in the morning he found that his host was absent performing his functions in the church, and, turning to one of the children, he sent him with a message to his

¹ Petri Venerab. de Mirac. Lib. I. c. 25.—Chron. Episc. Mindens. c. 26.

father. Though the child had been a deaf-mute from birth, he promptly performed the errand. Roused by the miracle to a sense of his iniquity, the apostate rushed to the Saint, threw himself at his feet, confessed who he was, and entreated to be taken back to the monastery. St. Bernard, touched by his repentance, promised to call for him on his return. To this the priest objected, on the ground that he might die during the interval, but was comforted with the assurance that if he died in such a frame of mind, he would be received by God as a monk. When St. Bernard returned, the repentant sinner was dead. Inquiring as to the ceremonies of his interment, he was told that the corpse had been buried in its priestly garments; whereupon he ordered the grave to be opened, and it was found arrayed, not in its funeral robes, but in full Cistercian habit and tonsure, showing that God had fulfilled the promises made in His name.¹

Such was the condition of the Gallican Church when, in 1119, Calixtus II. stepped from the archiepiscopal see of Vienne to the chair of St. Peter. His first great object was to end the quarrel with the empire on the subject of investitures, the vicissitudes of which rendered the papacy at the time of his accession an exile from Italy; his second was to carry out the reforms so long and so fruitlessly urged by his predecessors. To accomplish both these results he lost no time in summoning a great council to assemble at Rheims, and when it met, in November 1119, no less than fifteen archbishops, more than two hundred bishops, and numerous abbots responded to the call, representing Italy, France, Aquitaine, Spain, Germany, and England. The attempted reconciliation with the Emperor Henry V. failed, but the vices and corruptions of the Church were vigorously attacked and sternly pro-

¹ S. Bernardi Vitæ Primæ Lib. VII. cap. XXI.

hibited for the future. All commerce with concubines or wives was positively forbidden under pain of deprivation of benefice and function. No choice was granted the offender, for continuance in his sin after expulsion was punishable with excommunication; and the hereditary transmission of ecclesiastical dignities and property was strictly prohibited.¹ Whether it was the lofty character of the new pope, his royal blood and French extraction, or whether the solemnity of the occasion impressed men's minds, it is not easy now to guess, but unquestionably these proceedings produced greater effect upon the Transalpine Churches than any previous efforts of the Holy See. Calixtus was long regarded as the real author of sacerdotal celibacy in France, and his memory has been embalmed in the jingling verses which express the dissatisfaction and spite of the clergy, deprived of their ancestral privileges.

O bone Calliste, nunc clerus odit te ;
 Olim presbyteri poterant uxoribus uti ;
 Hoc detruxisti quando tu papa fuisti,
 Ergo tuum festum nunquam celebratur honestum.²

Calixtus was not a man to rest half way, nor was he content with an empty promise of obedience. Under the pressure of his influence, the French prelates found themselves obliged to take measures for the vigorous enforcement of the canons. What those measures were, and the disposition with which they were received, may be understood from the resultant proceedings in Normandy. Geoffrey, Archbishop of Rouen, on leaving the Council

¹ Concil. Remens. ann. 1119 can. 4, 5.—"Nullus episcopus, nullus presbyter, nullus omnino de clero ecclesiasticas dignitates vel beneficia cuilibet, quasi hereditario jure, derelinquat." Calixtus had already caused this provision to be adopted by the Council of Toulouse, held in the previous June (Concil. Tolosan. ann. 1119 can. 8).

² Cujas quotes these verses as still current in his day, and attributes to the efforts of Calixtus the suppression of sacerdotal marriage in France (Giannone, *Apologia* c. xiv.).

of Rheims, promptly called a synod, which assembled ere the month was out. The canon prohibiting female intercourse roused abhorrence and resistance among his clergy, and they inveighed loudly against the innovation. Geoffrey singled out one who rendered himself particularly prominent in the tumult, and caused him to be seized and cast into prison; then, leaving the church, he called in his guards, whom, with acute anticipation of trouble, he had posted in readiness. The rude soldiery fell upon the unarmed priests, some of whom promptly escaped; the rest, grasping what weapons they could find, made a gallant resistance, and succeeded in beating back the assailants. A mob speedily collected, which took sides with the archbishop. Assisted by this unexpected reinforcement, the guards again forced their way into the church, where they beat and maltreated the unfortunate clerks to their heart's content; when, as the chronicler quaintly observes, the synod broke up in confusion, and the members fled without awaiting the archiepiscopal benediction.¹

The immediate effect of the reformation thus inaugurated may perhaps be judged with sufficient accuracy by the story of Abelard and Heloise, which occurred about this period. That Abelard was a canon when that immortal love arose, was not, in such a state of morals, any impediment to the gratification of his passion, nor did it diminish the satisfaction of the canon Fulbert at the marriage of his niece, for such marriages, as yet, were valid by ecclesiastical law. In her marvellous self-abnegation, however, Heloise recognised that while the fact of his openly keeping a mistress, and acknowledging Astrolabius as his illegitimate son, would be no bar to his preferment, and would leave open to him a career equal to the dreams of his ambition, yet to admit that

¹ Orderic. Vital. P. III. Lib. xii. c. 13.

he had sanctified their love by marriage, and had repaired, as far as possible, the wrong which he had committed, would ruin his prospects for ever. In a worldly point of view it was better for him, as a Churchman, to have the reputation of shameless immorality than that of a loving and pious husband; and this was so evidently a matter of course that she willingly sacrificed everything, and practised every deceit, that he might be considered a reckless libertine, who had refused her the only reparation in his power. Such was the standard of morals created by the Church, and such were the conclusions inevitably drawn from them.

Nor were these conclusions erroneous, if we may judge by an incident of the period. An archdeacon of Angoulême had committed the crime of seducing the abbess of a convent in the district under his charge. When the results of the amour could be no longer concealed, and the Count of Angoulême ventured to remonstrate with Gérard, the bishop of the diocese, that worthy prelate protected the offender by dismissing the charge with a filthy jest. Yet so far was Gérard from forfeiting the respect of his contemporaries by this laxity, that he was soon afterwards appointed papal legate.¹ It required the interposition of Heaven to punish the guilty, as was seen about this time in the diocese of Comminges, where a deacon was entangled in a guilty connection and was summoned with his paramour before the bishop, St. Bertrand. The reproof of the holy man reduced the deacon to contrition, but the woman was defiant. He escaped punishment, while she was seized by demons and expired on the spot.²

Yet there are evidences that the efforts of Calixtus, and of the fathers whose assembled authority was con-

¹ Arnulf. Lexoviens. de Schismate cap. I. II. (D'Achery I. 153).

² Vit. S. Bertrandi Convenar. No. 13, 14 (Martene Ampliss. Collect. VI. 1028).

centrated at Rheims, did not by any means eradicate a custom which had now become traditional. Soon afterwards King Louis-le-Gros, in granting a charter to the church of St. Cornelius at Compiègne, felt it necessary to accompany the privileges bestowed with a restriction, worded as though it were a novelty, to the effect that those in holy orders connected with the foundation should have no wives—a condition which shows how little confidence existed in the mind of the sagacious prince as to the efficacy of the canons so sententiously promulgated by the rulers, and so energetically resisted by the ruled.¹ That he was justified in this lack of confidence is evident when we see, further on in the century, an epistle of Alexander III., undated, but probably written about 1170, complaining of the canons of St. Ursmar and Antoin, who openly kept concubines in their houses, while some of them did not hesitate to marry;² while as late as 1212 a Council of Paris was obliged to adopt canons forbidding clerks married in the lower orders to hold parishes while retaining their wives, and suspending from benefice and functions all those who marry while in holy orders.³

One cause for this disregard of the laws so energetically promulgated is seen in the case of the Bishop of Terouane, who, about 1225, was ordered by Honorius III. to enforce them against all offenders. He did so, when they had no trouble in obtaining papal letters confirming them in their benefices, and enabling them to persecute the bishop, who was obliged to appeal to Honorius for fresh authority. The Bishop of Constance had had a

¹ Ut clerici ejusdem ecclesiæ sicut usque modo vixerunt permaneant; hoc tamen præcipimus ut presbyteri, diaconi, subdiaconi nullatenus deinceps uxores concubinas habeant; cæteri vero cujuscumque ordinis clerici propter fornicationem, licentiam habeant ducendi uxores.—Du Cange, s. v. *Concubina*.

² Epist. Alex. PP. III. in Martene Ampliss. Collect. II. 794.

³ Concil. Paris. ann. 1212 can. xvi. xviii. (Ibid. VII. 99).

somewhat similar experience in 1195, when he applied to Cœlestin III. for aid in ousting a deacon who while in holy orders had kept a concubine, and on her death had married a wife, retaining his benefice, in spite of all efforts to deprive him. To the good bishop's application the answer was to leave the offender in peace.¹

¹ *Compilat. II. Lib. I. Tit. xi. c. 4; Comp. V. Lib. II. Tit. xx. c. 4; Lib. III. Tit. c. 2* (Friedberg, *Compilationes Quinque antiquæ*, pp. 70, 168-9).

CHAPTER XVII

NORMAN ENGLAND

WE have already seen what was the condition of the Anglo-Saxon Church when William the Conqueror overran the island with his horde of adventurers. Making all due allowance for the fact that our authorities are mostly of the class whose inclination would lead them to misrepresent the conquered and to exaggerate the improvement attributable to the conquest, it cannot be doubted that the standard of morality was extremely low, and that the clergy were scarcely distinguishable from the laity in purity of life or devotion to their sacred calling.

If the reformatory efforts of the popes had not penetrated into the kingdom of Edward the Confessor, it was hardly to be expected that they would excite attention amid the turmoil attendant upon the settlement of the new order of political affairs and the division of the spoils among the conquerors. Accordingly, even the vigilance of Gregory VII. appears to have virtually overlooked the distant land of Britain, conscious, no doubt, that his efforts would be vain, even though the influence of Rome had been freely thrown upon the side of the Norman invader, and had been of no little assistance to him in his preparations for the desperate enterprise. In fact, though William saw fit to aid in the suppression of matrimony among the priests of his hereditary dominions, and had thereby earned the grateful praises of Gregory himself,¹ he does not seem to have regarded the morals of his new subjects as worthy of any special attention. It is true

¹ Gregor. VII. Regist. Lib. IX. Epist. 5.

that in his system of transferring all power from the subject to the dominant race, when Saxon bishops were to be ejected and their places filled with his own creatures, it was necessary for him to effect his purpose in a canonical way, and to procure the degradation of his victims by the Church itself, as it was impossible for him to lay unhallowed hands upon their consecrated heads, or to remove prelates from their sees on questions of mere political expediency. To accomplish this, the scandals and irregularities of their lives afforded the promptest and most effective excuse, and it was freely used. The vigour with which these changes were carried into effect is visible in the Synods of Winchester and Windsor in 1070, where numerous bishops and abbots were deprived on various pleas; and the character of the prelates removed may be assumed from the description of the Bishop of Litchfield (Chester) by Lanfranc, in a letter of the same year to Alexander II., where his public maintenance of wife and children is alleged, in addition to other crimes of which he was accused.¹ Though a puritan, like Lanfranc, bred in the asceticism of the Abbey of Bec, might seek to enforce the canons in an individual case, as when he orders Arfastus, Bishop of Thetford, to degrade a deacon who refused to part with his wife,² yet that no general effort was made to effect a reform in the ranks of the clergy is evident from an epistle addressed in 1071 to William by Alexander II., in which, while praising his zeal in suppressing the heresy of simony, and exhorting him to fresh exertion in the good work, no mention whatever is made of the kindred error of Nicolitism, which is usually inseparable in the papal diatribes of the period.³ Equally conclusive is the fact that when, in 1075, Lanfranc held a national council in

¹ Roger of Hoveden. ann. 1070.—Baron. Annal. ann. 1070, No. 26.

² Lanfranci Epist. XXI.

³ Alexand. II. Epist. 83.

London for the purpose of reforming the English Church, canons were passed to restrain simony, to prevent incestuous marriages, and to effect other needful changes, but nothing was said respecting sacerdotal marriage, at that time the principal object of Gregory's vigorous measures.¹

How thoroughly, indeed, clerical marriage and the hereditary descent of benefices was received as legitimate by common consent is manifested by a case quoted by Camden from the MS. records of the Abbey of St. Peter and St. Paul of Shrewsbury. Under the Conqueror, Roger de Montgomery in founding that house bestowed upon it the church of St. Gregory, subject to the life estate of the canons then holding it, whose prebends as they died should fall within the gift of the monks. The children of the canons, however, disputed the gift, claimed that they had a right to their fathers' holdings, and actually gave rise to a great lawsuit to defend their position.²

The first steps to check the irregularities of the priesthood appear to have been taken in 1076, at the Council of Winchester, and the extreme tenderness there displayed by Lanfranc for the weakness of his flock shows how necessary was the utmost caution in treating a question evidently new, and one which deprived the English clergy of a privilege to which no taint of guilt had previously been attached. We have seen by the instance related above that when Lanfranc could act according to his own convictions, he was inclined to enforce the absolute rule of celibacy, and we may therefore conclude that on this occasion he was overruled by the convictions of his brother prelates that it was impossible to obtain obedience. All that the council would venture upon was a general

¹ Wilkins, *Concil. Mag. Britan.* I. 363.

² Camden's *Britannia*, Tit. Shropshire.

declaration against the wives of men in orders, and it permitted parish priests to retain their consorts, contenting itself with forbidding future marriages, and enjoining on the bishops that they should thereafter ordain no one in the diaconate or priesthood without a pledge not to marry in future.¹

Such legislation could only be irritating and inconclusive. It abandoned the principle for which Rome had been contending, and thus its spirit of worldly temporising deprived it of all respect and influence. Obedience to it could be therefore evoked on no higher ground than that of an arbitrary and unjustifiable command, and accordingly it received so small a share of attention that when, some twenty-six years later, the holy Anselm, at the great Council of London in 1102, endeavoured to enforce the reform, the restrictions which he ordered were exclaimed against as unheard of novelties, which, being impossible to human nature, could only result in indiscriminate vice, bringing disgrace upon the Church.² The tenor of the canons of this council, indeed, proves that the previous injunctions had been utterly disregarded. At the same time they manifest a much stronger determination to eradicate the evil, though they are still far more lenient than the contemporary Continental legislation. No archdeacon, priest, or deacon could marry, nor,

¹ *Decretumque est ut nullus canonicus uxorem habeat. Sacerdotes vero in castellis vel in vicis habitantes, habentes uxores non cogantur ut dimittant; non habentes interdicanur ut habeant; et deinceps caventur episcopi ut sacerdotes vel diaconos non præsumant ordinare, nisi prius profiteantur ut uxores non habeant.*—Wilkins I. 367.

Polydor Virgil describes a Council of London held by Lanfranc in 1078, in which—“*Ante omnia mores sacerdotum parum puri quamproxime potuit, ad prisorum patrum regulam revocati sunt, estque illis in posterum tempus recte vivendi modus præscriptus*” (*Angl. Hist. Lib. IX.*); but he has evidently mixed together the proceedings of various synods.

² Henric, Huntingdon. *Lib. VII.*—*Matt. Paris*, ann. 1102.—Henry of Huntingdon, though an archdeacon, was himself the son of a priest, and therefore was not disposed to regard with complacency the stigma attached to his birth by the new order of things.

if married, could retain his wife. If a subdeacon, after professing chastity, married, he was to be subjected to the same regulation. No priest, so long as he was involved in such unholy union, could celebrate mass; if he ventured to do so, no one was to listen to him; and he was, moreover, to be deprived of all legal privileges. A profession of chastity was to be exacted at ordination to the subdiaconate and to the higher grades; and, finally, the children of priests were forbidden to inherit their father's churches.¹ Ineffective as was this council, it made a profound impression on the English clergy.²

One symptom of weakness is observable in all this. The council apparently did not venture to prescribe any ecclesiastical punishment for the infraction of the rules thus laid down. If this arose from timidity, St. Anselm did not share it, for, when he proceeded to put the canons in practice, we find him threatening his contumacious ecclesiastics with deprivation for persistence in their irregularities. A letter of instruction from him to William, Archdeacon of Canterbury, shows the earnestness with which he entered upon the reform, and also affords an instructive insight into the difficulties of the enterprise, and the misery which the forcible sundering of family ties caused among those who had never doubted the legality and propriety of their marriages. Some ecclesiastics of rank sent their discarded wives to manors at a distance from their dwellings, and these St. Anselm directs shall not be molested if they will promise to hold no intercourse except in the presence of legitimate witnesses. Some priests were afraid to proceed to extremities with their wives, and for these weak brethren grace is

¹ Concil. Londin. ann. 1102.—Wilkins I. 382 (Eadmer. Hist. Novor. Lib. III. ann. 1102).

² The contemporary author of the *Quadripartitus* speaks of it as "*famosum illud concilium de archidiaconis et canonicis et presbyteris in uxoribus abjurandis.*"—*Quadripartitus* P. II. (Ed. Liebermann, Halle, 1892, p. 154).

accorded until the approaching Lent, provided they do not attempt meanwhile to perform their sacred functions, and can find substitutes of undoubted chastity to minister in their places. The kindred of the unfortunate women apparently endeavoured to avert the blow by furious menaces against those who should render obedience, and these instigators of evil are to be restrained by threats of excommunication.¹ Another letter to the Bishop of Hereford, who had applied for instructions on the subject, directs him to replace recalcitrant priests with monks and to stir up the laity to drive from the land the obstinate parsons and their wives.² In the enforcement of these reforms he seemed to meet with questions for which he was not prepared, for about this time we find him seeking instructions from Paschal II. on several knotty points: whether a priest living with his wife can be allowed to administer the viaticum at the death-bed in the absence of one professing continence; and what is to be done with him if he refuses his ministrations on the ground that he is not allowed to celebrate mass. Paschal replies, sensibly enough, that it is better to have the ministrations of an unchaste priest than to die unhouselled, and that a priest refusing his offices under such circumstances is to be punished as a homicide of souls. This abandoned the Hildebrandine theory and practice, and Anselm was more consistent when he assumed that a layman could perform baptism in preference to an unchaste priest.³

Notwithstanding these zealous efforts of the primate, and the countenance of Henry Beauclerc, in whose presence the council had been held, Eadmer is forced sorrowfully to admit that its canons received but scant respect. Many of the priests adopted a kind of passive resistance, and locking up their churches, suspended the perform-

¹ Anselmi Lib. III. Epist. 62.

² D'Achery Spicileg. III. 434.

³ Paschalis PP. II. Epist. lxxiv.—Anselmi Lib. IV. Epist. 41.

ance of all sacred rites.¹ Even in Anselm's own diocese, ecclesiastics were found who obstinately refused either to part with their wives or to pretermit their functions, and who, when duly excommunicated, laughed at the sentence, and continued to pollute the Church with their unhallowed ministry.² Soon after this Anselm fell into disfavour with the king and was exiled. His absence promised immunity, and the clergy were not slow to avail themselves of it. In 1104 one of his friends, in writing to him, bewails the utter demoralisation of the kingdom, of which the worst manifestation was that priests still continued to marry; and two years later another letter informs him that those who had apparently reformed their evil ways were all returning to their previous life of iniquity. Finally, Henry I. resolved to turn to account this clerical backsliding, as a financial expedient to recruit his exhausted treasury. All who were suspected of disobedience to the canons of the Council of London were seized and tried, and the property of those who could be proved guilty was confiscated. By this time Anselm had been reconciled to the king, and he promptly interfered to check so gross a violation of ecclesiastical immunity. His remonstrances were met by Henry with well-feigned surprise, and finally the matter was compromised by discharging those who had not been fined, while those who

¹ Simeon Dunelmens. *ap.* Pagi IV. 348.

² See the confirmation of excommunication in which St. Anselm exhaled his fiery indignation at those who continued with "bestiali insania" to defy the authorities of the Church (Anselmi Lib. III. Epist. 112).

Anselm was not entirely without assistance in his efforts. One of his monks, Reginald, of the great monastery of Canterbury, wrote a fearfully diffuse paraphrase, in Leonine verse, of the life of St. Malchus. It was an evil-minded generation, indeed, that could resist such a denunciation of marriage as that pronounced by the saint—

Plenum sorde thorum subeam plenumque dolorum ?
 Plenus, ait, tenebris thalamus sordet muliebris.
 Displicet amplexus, horror mihi copula, sexus.
 Conjugium vile, vilescit sponsa, cubile.
 Nolo thorum talem, desidero spiritualem.

(Croke's Rhyming Latin Verse, p. 67.)

had been forced to pay were promised three years' undisturbed possession of their positions.¹

That it was impossible to effect suddenly so great a change in the habits and lives of the English clergy was, indeed, admitted by Paschal II. himself, when, in 1107, he wrote to Anselm concerning the questions connected with the children of priests. While reminding him of the rules of the Church, he adds that as, in England, the larger and better portion of the clergy fall within the scope of the prohibition, he grants to the primate power of dispensation, by which, in view of the sad necessity of the times, he can admit to the sacred offices those born during their parents' priesthood, who are fitted for it by their education and purity of life. A second epistle on the same subject attests the perplexity of the pope, recalling to Anselm's recollection his former injunctions, and recommending that, as there was no personal guilt involved, those of the proscribed class who were in orders should, if worthy of their positions, be allowed to retain them, without the privilege of advancement.² The question, indeed, was hotly debated. There is extant a letter written about this time by Thibaut of Étampes, a dignitary of Oxford, to a certain Rosceline, who with more zeal than discretion had promulgated the doctrine that the sons of priests were canonically ineligible to ordination. Thibaut characterises this as not only an innovation, but a blasphemy, and seems utterly unconscious that there was any authority for such a rule.³

It may be remarked that thus far the proceedings of the reformers were directed solely against the marriage of

¹ Eadmer, *Hist. Novor. Lib. IV.*—Anselmi *Lib. III. Epist. 109.*

² Wilkins I. 378–80.—Paschalis II. *Epist. 221.*

³ D'Achery *Spicileg. III. 448.*

ecclesiastics. It may possibly be that this arose from general conjugal virtue, and that, satisfied with the privilege, no other disorders prevailed among the clergy; but it is more probable that the heresy of marriage was so heinous in the eyes of the sacerdotalists, that it rendered all other sins venial, and that such other sins might be tacitly passed over in the endeavour to put an end to the greater enormity. Be this as it may, the stubborn wilfulness of the offenders only provoked increasing rigour on the part of the authorities. We have seen that the council of 1102 produced little result, and that when the secular power interfered to enforce its canons, the Church, jealous of its privileges, protested, so that many priests retained their wives, and marriage was still openly practised. King Henry, therefore, at length, in 1108, summoned another council to assemble in London, where he urged the bishops to prosecute the good work, and pledged his power to their support.¹ Fortified by this and by the consent of the barons, they promulgated a series of ten canons, whose stringent nature and liberal denunciation of penalties prove that the prelates felt themselves strengthened by the royal co-operation and thus able to compel obedience. The Nicene canon was declared the unalterable law of the Church; those ecclesiastics who had disregarded the decrees of the previous council were debarred from performing their functions if longer contumacious; any priest requiring to see his wife was only to do so in the open air and in the presence of two legitimate witnesses; accusations of guilt were to be met by regular canonical purgation, a priest requiring six compurgators, a deacon four, and a sub-deacon two, each of his own order. Disobedience to these canons was declared punishable with deprivation of function and benefice, expulsion from the Church, and

¹ Eadmeri Hist. Novor. Lib. IV.

infamy. Only eight days of grace were allowed; further persistence in wrong-doing being visited with instant excommunication, and confiscation to the bishops of the private property of the transgressors and of their women, together with the persons of the latter. A very significant clause, moreover, shows that grasping officials had discovered the speculative value of previous injunctions, and that the degrading custom of paying hush-money was already in common use, for the council required of all archdeacons and deans, under penalty of forfeiture, an oath that they would not receive money for conniving at infractions of the rule, nor permit priests who kept women, to celebrate mass or to employ vicars to officiate for them.¹

From the account of the historian, we may assume these to be rather acts of parliament than canons of a council, and that the assembly was convened for the special purpose of devising measures for subduing the recalcitrant clergy. The temporal power was thus pledged to enforce the regulations, and as so enterprising and resolute a monarch as Henry had undertaken the reform, there can be little doubt that he prosecuted it with vigour. Anselm died in 1109, and the clergy rejoiced in the hope that their persecution would cease with the removal of their persecutor, but the king proceeded to enforce the regulations of the Council of London with more vigour than ever, and soon obtained at least an outward show of obedience. Eadmer darkly intimates that this resulted in a great increase of shocking crimes committed with those relatives whose residence was allowed, and he is at some pains to argue that Anselm and his attempted reforms were not responsible for an effect so little contemplated in their well-meant endeavours. Finally, the ardour of the king cooled off; ecclesiastical officials were

¹ Eadmeri Hist. Novor. Lib. IV.

found readily accessible to bribes for permitting female intercourse, and those who had grown tired of the wives from whom they had been separated found no difficulty in forming more desirable unions with new ones. Eadmer sorrowfully adds that by this time there were few indeed who continued to preserve the purity with which Anselm had laboured so strenuously to adorn his clergy.¹

The evil influences of this laxity in the Anglican Church were not altogether confined to Britain. At that period the Swedish bishoprics were frequently filled by Englishmen, and it is quite possible that from them was derived the laxity which, as we have seen, at a later period, caused the Swedes to be regarded as heretics adhering to the Greek schism. An incident occurring about this time shows the wisdom of the Church in her endeavours to sunder the earthly ties of her ministers. An English priest, named Edward, was promoted to the Swedish episcopate of Scaren. Unluckily, he had left a wife behind him in England, and, after a short residence in his new dignity had enabled him to collect together the treasures of his see, he absconded with them to his spouse, leaving his diocese widowed and penniless.²

At length the condition of the Church in England attracted the attention of the pontiffs who had bestowed so much fruitless energy on the morals of the Continental priesthood; and Honorius II. sent Cardinal John of Crema to England, for the purpose of restoring its discipline. In September 1126 the legate held a council in London, where he caused the adoption of a canon menacing with degradation all those in orders who did not abstain from the society of their wives, or of other women liable to suspicion;³ and the expressions em-

¹ Eadmeri Hist. Novor. Lib. IV.

² Messenii Chron. Episcoporum per Sueciam, &c. p. 76 (Stockholmæ, 1611)

³ Concil. Londiniens. ann. 1126 c. 13 (Wilkins I. 408).

ployed show that previous legislation had been altogether nugatory. That the cardinal's endeavours excited the opposition of at least a powerful portion of the clergy is fairly deducible from the unlucky adventure which put a sudden termination to his mission. After fiercely denouncing the concubines of priests and expatiating on the burning shame that the body of Christ should be made by one who had but just left the side of a harlot, he was that very night surprised in the company of a courtesan, though he had on the same day celebrated mass; and the suggestion that he had been entrapped by his enemies, while it did not palliate his guilt, may be assumed to indicate the power and determination of those who opposed his reforms.¹

¹ Henric. Huntingd. Lib. VII.—Matt. Paris, ann. 1125.—Baronius (ann. 1125, No. 12) endeavours to disprove the story, but is only able to offer general negative allegations, of but little weight when opposed to the testimony of a contemporary like Henry of Huntingdon, who speaks of it as a matter of public notoriety, which covered the cardinal with disgrace and drove him from England.

Such conduct was a favourite theme of objurgation with the ascetics of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries—

Certe tu qui missam dicis
Post amplexum meretricis,
Potaberis ab inimicis
Liquore sulphuris et picis.

(Du Ménil, *Poésies Latines*, p. 133.)

So also, among the poems which pass under the name of *Goliath Episcopus* is one of fierce invective directed against the priests, in which this is one of the principal accusations—

O sacerdos, hæc responde,
Qui frequenter et jocunde
Cum uxore dormis, unde
Mane surgens, missam dicis,
Corpus Christi benedicis,
Post amplexum meretricis
Minus quam tu peccatricis.

Plenus sorde, plenus mendis,
Ad autorem manus tendis,
Quem contempnis, quem offendis,
Meretrici dum ascendis.

Quali corde, quali ore
Corpus Christi, cum cruore,
Tractas, surgens de factore,
Dignus plagis et tortore.

Mapes's Poems (Camd. Soc. Ed pp. 49-50).

The energy of the reformers and the stubborn obstinacy of the clergy are alike manifested by the Council of Westminster, held the following year, which found it necessary to repeat the prohibition and to guard it with stringent provisions, based upon those of 1108.¹ This, however, proved as ineffectual as its predecessors, and another effort was made the next year under auspices which promised a happier result. King Henry seemed suddenly to recover the holy zeal which had lain dormant for a score of years, and in the summer of 1129 he convened a great assembly of all the bishops, archdeacons, abbots, priors, and canons of England, who found that they were summoned to meet for the purpose of putting an end to the immorality of the clergy. After long discussion, it was agreed that all who should not put away their wives by St. Andrew's Day (November 30th) should be deprived of their functions, their churches, and their houses; and the assembly separated, entrusting to the zealous sovereign the execution of the decree. Perhaps Henry remembered how St. Anselm had interfered in 1106 to protect the guilty clergy from the royal extortioners; perhaps the experience of his long reign had shown him the fruitlessness of endeavouring to impose an impossible virtue on carnal-minded men. His exchequer, as usual, was in danger of collapse. The whole transaction may have been a deeply-laid scheme to extort money, or the sudden promptings of temptation may have been too powerful for his self-denial—who now can tell? We only know that he at once put into action an extended system of "cullagium," and having, by the blind simplicity of his prelates, the temporalities of nearly all the minor clergy in his power, he proceeded to traffic in exemptions shamelessly and on the largest scale. As a financial device, the plan

¹ Concil. Westmonast. ann. 1127 c. 5, 6, 7 (Wilkins I. 410).

was a good one; he realised a vast sum of money, and his afflicted priests were at least able to show their superiors a royal license to marry or to keep their concubines in peace.¹

The repetition of almost identical enactments, year after year, with corresponding infinitesimal results, grows wearisome and monotonous. If, therefore, I refer to the Synod of Westminster, held in 1138, by the papal legate Alberic, Bishop of Ostia, which deprived of function and benefice all married and concubinary ecclesiastics,² it is only to observe that no notice was taken of the doctrine of the invalidity of sacerdotal marriage, which at that period Innocent II. was engaged in promulgating. So, if I allude to an epistle of Lucius II. in 1144, reprehending the general English custom by which sons succeeded to the churches of their fathers, it is merely to chronicle the commencement of the direct efforts of the popes, fruitlessly continued during the remainder of the century, to abolish that widespread and seemingly ineradicable abuse.³

What was the condition of the Church resulting from these prolonged and persistent efforts may be guessed from one or two examples. When, in 1139, Nigel, Bishop of Ely, revolted against King Stephen, he entrusted the defence of his castle of Devizes to his concubine, Maud of Ramsbury. She bravely fulfilled her charge and repulsed the assaults of the king, until he bethought him of a way to compel a surrender. Obtaining possession of Roger, son of Maud and Nigel, the unhappy youth was brought before the walls, and

¹ Henric. Huntingd. Lib. VII.—Anglo-Saxon Chron. ann. 1129.—Matt. Paris, ann. 1129.

² Concil. Westmonast. ann. 1138 c. 8 (Wilkins I. 415).

³ Rymer, *Fœdera Tom. I. ann. 1144.*—Post. Concil. Lateran, P. XIX. passim.—Lib. 1. Tit. 17 Extra.

preparations were made to hang him in his mother's sight. At this her courage gave way, and she capitulated at once.¹ Though the monkish chronicler stigmatises Maud as "pellex episcopi," she may probably have been his wife—in either case the publicity of the connection is a sufficient commentary on the morals and manners of the age which took no exception to the elevation of Richard Fitz-Neal, another son of the same reverend prelate, to the bishopric of London and to the post of treasurer to King Henry II.

If this be attributed to the unbridled turbulence of Stephen's reign, we may turn to the comparatively calmer times of Henry II., when Alexander III., amid his ceaseless efforts to restore the Church discipline of England, in 1171 ordered the Bishops of Exeter and Worcester and the Abbot of Feversham to examine and report as to the evil reputation of Clarembald, abbot-elect of St. Augustine's of Canterbury. In the execution of this duty they found that that venerable patriarch had seventeen bastards in one village; purity he ridiculed as an impossibility, while even licentiousness had no attraction for his exhausted senses unless spiced with the zest of publicity.² That a man whose profligacy was so openly and shamelessly defiant could be elected to the highest place in the oldest and most honoured religious community in England is a fact which lends colour to an assertion of a writer of the time of King John, that clergy and laity were indis-

¹ Orderic Vital. P. III. Lib. xiii. c. 20.

² Fluit semine et hinc in feminas, adeo impudens ut libidinem, nisi quam publicaverit, voluptuosam esse non reputet. . . . Fornicationis abusum comparat necessitati. Proletarius est adeo quod paucis annis ei soboles tanta succrevit ut patriarcharum seriem antecedit.—Joann. Saresberiens. Epist. 310. Well might Alexander, in ordering his ejection, say "ipsum invenerint tot excessibus et criminibus publicis irretitum, quod per eorum nobis litteras recitata auribus nostris nimium præstiterunt tædium et dolorem."—Elmham, Hist. Monast. August. p. 413.

tinguishably bad,¹ and perhaps justifies the anecdote told of Hugh, Bishop of Lincoln, who assumed that the clergy were much worse than the laity.² How little these scandals shocked the public is shown by the fact that it required papal interference to cause the reformation of the nunnery of Avesbury. The abbess had borne three children, and the nuns, as the chronicler informs us, were worse than their superior, but when Alexander forced an investigation no canonical punishment was inflicted on the guilty. Such of the nuns as promised to live chastely in future were allowed to remain, and the rest were simply dismissed, while the abbess was pensioned liberally with ten marks a year to preserve her from disgrace and want. The vacancies thus created were filled with nuns from Fontevraud, who proved to be as bad as those whom they replaced.³ The same insensibility is manifested in a legal transaction of the period, when Witgar, the priest of Mendlesham, desired to secure the reversion of his benefice to his son Nicholas, and applied to the patron of his church, Martin, Abbot of Battle Abbey, who agreed to conform to his wishes on condition that the annual payment exacted from the church in question should be increased

¹ *Crescit malorum cumulus,
Est sacerdos ut populus,
Currunt ad illicitum,
Uterque juxta libitum
Audax et imperterritus.*

(Wright, *Polit. Songs of England*, p. 9.)

And another indignant Churchman exclaims—

*Qui sunt qui ecclesias vendunt et mercantur ?
Qui sunt fornicarii ? Qui sunt qui mœchantur ?
Qui naturam transvolant et abominantur ?
Qui ? clerici ; a nobis non longe extra petantur.*

Mapes's Poems, pp. 156–7.

² A woman applied to Bishop Hugh for advice “*super impotentia mariti, quia debitum ei reddere non poterat,*” when the prelate gravely replied, “*Faciamus ergo si vis eum sacerdotem, et statim illo in opere, reddita sibi facultate, proculdubio potens efficietur.*”—Girald. Cambrens. *Gemm. Eccles. Dist. II. c. xviii.*

³ *Benedicti Abbatis Gesta Regis Henr. II. T. I. pp. 135–6 ; T. II. p. xxx. (M. R. Series).*

from ten shillings to forty. Witgar agreed, and on an appointed day, accompanied by his son, he met the abbot and his attendants at Colchester, where oaths were publicly interchanged and a formal agreement was entered into.¹

The efforts of Alexander and his successors were seconded by frequent national and local synods, to whose special injunctions it is scarcely worth while to refer in full. One noticeable point about them, however, is that the term "wife" disappears, and is replaced by "concupina" or "focaria"—the latter meaning a person who was a permanent occupant of the priest's hearth, but was not recognised by the authorities as a lawful wife. Deans and archdeacons were enjoined to hunt up these illegal companions, but from the frequency of the injunctions, we may safely conclude that the search was not often successful, and that the officials found the duty assigned to them too difficult or too unprofitable for execution. That it was not impossible, however, when earnestly undertaken, is shown by the readiness with which King John unearthed the unfortunate creatures when it suited his policy to do so. During the long dispute over the election of Giraldus Cambrensis to the see of St. David's, the king, who was resolved that no Welshman should hold that preferment, instructed his officers, in 1202, to seize the women of all the cathedral chapter who persisted in supporting Giraldus.² The measure was doubtless an efficacious one, and he repeated it when, in 1208, he persecuted the clergy in his blind impotence of wrath at the interdict set upon his kingdom by Innocent III. Discerning in these quasi-conjugal relations the tenderest spot in which to strike those who had rebelled against

¹ Chron. Monast. de Bello, London, 1846, pp. 142-3.

² Haddan & Stubbs's Councils of Great Britain, I. 423-4.

his authority by obeying the interdict, and at the same time, as the surest and readiest means of extorting money, among his other schemes of spoliation he caused all these women to be seized, and then forced the unfortunate Churchmen to buy their partners back at exorbitant prices.¹

The ease, indeed, with which the eyes of the officials were blinded to that which was patent to the public was the subject of constantly recurring legislation, the reiteration and increasing violence of which bears irrefragable testimony at once to its necessity and its impotence. Not only in grave synods and pastorals was the abuse reprehended and deplored, but it offered too favourable a subject for popular animadversion to escape the shafts of satire. In the preceding century, Thomas à Becket, in a vehement attack upon simony, includes this among the many manifestations of that multiform sin—

Symon auffert, Symon donat ;
Hunc expellit, hunc coronat ;
Hunc circumdat gravi peste,
Illum nuptiali veste.²

There were few more popular poems in the Middle Ages than the "Apocalypsis Goliæ," the more than

¹ Matt. Paris, ann. 1208.

Perhaps it is to John's experience in this matter that may be attributed the fact that when, in 1214, he entered into a league with his knight-errant nephew, the Emperor Otho IV., against Philip Augustus, they also declared war against Innocent III., and proposed to carry out a gigantic scheme of spoliation by enriching, from ecclesiastical property, all who might rally to their standard. They proclaimed their intention of humbling the Church, reducing the numbers of the clergy, stripping those who were left of all their temporalities, and leaving them only moderate stipends. Both John and Otho had been under excommunication, and could speak feelingly of the overweening power and abuses of the Church, whose members they characterise as "genus hoc pigrum et fruges consumere natum, quod otia ducit, quodque sub tecto marcet et umbra, qui frustra vivunt, quorum omnis labor in hoc est, ut Baccho Venerique vacent, quibus crapula obesitas poris colla inflat, ventresque abdomine onerat" (Lünig, Cod. Diplom. Italiæ, I. 34). A few weeks later the Bridge of Bouvines put a sudden end to this promising plan of reformation.

² Du Ménil, Poésies Pop. Latines, p. 179.

doubtful authorship of which, at the close of the twelfth or the beginning of the thirteenth century, is claimed for Walter Mapes in England and Gautier de Châtillon in France; and the enduring reputation of which is attested by an English version as late as the sixteenth century. The author whoever he be, inveighing against the evil courses of the archdeacons, assumes that the extortion of the "cullagium" was almost universal.

Seductam nuntii fraude præambuli
 Capit focariam, ut per cubiculi
 Fortunam habeat fortunam loculi,
 Et per vehiculum omen vehiculi.
 Decano præcipit quod si presbiteri
 Per genitivos scit dativos fieri,
 Accusans faciat vocatum conteri,
 Ablatis fratribus a porta inferi.¹

Towards the middle of the thirteenth century, Peter de Vinea also has his fling at the same corruption, and though the part he took in the fierce quarrels between his master Frederic II. and the papacy renders him perhaps a prejudiced witness, still his ample experience of the disorders of the Church makes him an experienced one.

Non utuntur clerici nostri vestimentis :
 Sed tenent focarias, quod clamor est gentis—
 —Dehinc reum convocant, et, turba rejecta,
 Dicunt : Ista crimina tibi sunt objecta ;
 Pone libras quindecim in nostra collecta,
 Et tua flagitia non erunt detecta.
 Reus dat denarios, Fratres scriptum radunt ;
 Sic infames plurimi per nummos evadunt ;
 Qui totam pecuniam quam petunt non tradunt,
 Simul in infamiam et in pœnam cadunt.²

The example which King John had set, however instructive, was not appreciated by the ecclesiastical

¹ Mapes's Poems, p. 10.

² Du Ménil, op. cit. p. 171.

authorities, and the "focariæ" were allowed to remain virtually undisturbed, at least to such an extent as to render them almost universal. Although by rigid Churchmen they were regarded as mere concubines, there can be little doubt that the tie between them and the priests was of a binding nature, which appears to have wanted none of the rites essential to its entire respectability. Giraldus Cambrensis, who died at an advanced age about the year 1220, speaks of these companions being publicly maintained by nearly all the parish priests in England and Wales. They arranged to have their benefices transmitted to their sons, while their daughters were married to the sons of other priests, thus establishing an hereditary sacerdotal caste in which marriage appears to have been a matter of course.¹ In 1202 the Bishop of Exeter complained to Innocent III. of the numerous sons of parish priests and vicars who seized their churches and claimed to hold them of right, actually appealing to Rome when they sought to interfere with them. Innocent of course ordered their removal and subjection to discipline without appeal; but the evil

¹ Filius autem, more sacerdotum parochialium Angliæ fere cunctorum, damnabili quidem et detestabili, publicam secum habebat comitem individuan, et in foco focariam et in cubiculo concubinam.—Girald. Cambrens. Specul. Eccles. Dist. iii. c. 8. (Girald. Opp. III. 129.) However Giraldus and the severer Churchmen might stigmatise these companions as concubines, they were evidently united in the bonds of matrimony. He says himself, respecting Wales, "Nosse te novi . . . canonicos Menevenses fere cunctos, maxime vero Walensicos, publicos fornicarios et concubenarios esse, sub alis ecclesiæ cathedralis et tanquam in ipso ejusdem gremio focarias suas cum obstetricibus et nutricibus atque cunabulis in laribus et penetralibus exhibentes. . . . Adeo quidem ut sicut patres eorum ipsos ibi genuerunt et promoverunt, sic et ipsi more consimili prolem ibidem suscitant, tam in vitiis sibi quam beneficiis succedaneam. Filiis namque suis statim cum adulti fuerint et plene pubertatis annos excesserint, concanonicorum suorum filias, ut sic firmiori fœdere sanguinis scilicet et affinitatis jure jungantur, quasi maritali copula dari procurant. Postmodum autem . . . canonicas suas filiis suis conferri per cessionem non inefficaciter elaborant." (De Jure et Statu Menev. Eccles. Dist. i.) That this condition of affairs was not confined to the canons of cathedral churches is evident from his general remarks in the Gemm. Eccles. Dist. II. cap. xxiii.

His treatise, De Statu Menevens. Eccles., was written after 1215, and therefore subsequently to the death of Innocent III.

continued, and in 1205 we find him writing on the subject to the Bishop of Winchester, whom he required to eject the sons of priests who in many cases held their father's benefices.¹ The propriety of the connection, and the hereditary ecclesiastical functions of the offspring, are quaintly alluded to in a poem of the period, wherein a logician takes a priest to task for entertaining such a partner—

L.—*Et præ tot innumeris quæ frequentas malis,
Est tibi presbytera plus exitialis.*
P.—*Malo cum presbytera pulchra fornicari,
Servituros domino filios lucrari,
Quam vagas satellites per antra sectari:
Est inhonestissimum sic dehonestari.*²

Even the holy virgins, spouses of Christ, seem to have claimed and enjoyed the largest liberty. To this period is attributed a homily to nuns, which earnestly dissuades them from leaving their blessed state and subjecting themselves to the cares and toils inseparable from matrimony. The writer appeals to no rules of ecclesiastical law that could be enforced to prevent them from following their choice, but labours drearily to prove that they would not better their condition, either in this world or the next, by forsaking their heavenly bridegroom for an earthly one.—“And of godes brude. and his freo dohter. for ba to gederes ha is; bicometh theow under mon and his threl to don al and drehen that him liketh.”³

Innocent III. had not overlooked such a state of discipline, especially after the transactions between himself and John had rendered him the suzerain of England,

¹ Innocent. PP. III. Regest. v. 66; VIII. 147.

² De presbytero et logico. Mapes's Poems, p. 256.

³ Hali Meidenhad, p. 7. (Early English Text Society, 1866.)

and doubly responsible for the morals of the English Church. Thus as early as 1203 we find him expressing to the Bishop of Norwich his surprise that priests in his diocese contend that they can retain their benefices after having solemnly contracted marriage in the face of the Church. All such are peremptorily ordered to be removed without appeal, either by the bishop himself, or by his superior in cases in which he had personally conferred the preferment.¹ His zealous efforts to effect an impossible reform are chronicled by a rhymer of the period, who enters fully into the dismay of the good pastors at the prospect of the innovation, and who argues their cause with all the sturdy common-sense of the Anglo-Saxon mind.

Prisciani regula penitus cassatur,
 Sacerdos per hic et hæc olim declinabatur;
 Sed per hic solummodo nunc articulatur,
 Cum per nostrum præsulem hæc amoveatur.

Quid agant presbyteri propriis carentes?
 Alienas violant clanculo molentes,
 Nullis pro conjugiiis fœminis parcentes,
 Pœnam vel infamiam nihil metuentes.

Non est Innocentius, immo nocens vere,
 Qui quod Deus docuit studet abolere;
 Jussit enim Dominus fœminas habere,
 Sed hoc noster pontifex jussit prohibere.

Gignere nos præcipit vetus testamentum;
 Ubi novum prohibet nusquam est inventum.
 A modernis latum est istud documentum,
 Ad quod nullum ratio præbet argumentum.²

¹ Innocent. PP. III. Regest. vi. 103.

² Mapes's Poems, pp. 171-2. This well-known poem has been attributed to the Venerable Hildebert, Bishop of Le Mans, as written on the occasion of the reformation of the French clergy by Calixtus II. (Croke, Rhyming Latin Verse, p. 85), but the character of that reverend prelate forbids such an assumption, even if the allusion to Innocent did not assign to it a later period.

Nor were the English bishops remiss in seconding the efforts of the pope to break down the opposition which thus openly defied their power and ventured even to justify the heresy of sacerdotal marriage. Councils were held which passed canons more stringent than ever ; bishops issued constitutions and pastorals denouncing the custom ; inquests were organised to traverse the dioceses and investigate the household of every priest. The women especially were attacked. Christian sepulture was denied them ; property left to them and their children by their partners in guilt was confiscated to the bishops ; churching after childbirth was interdicted to them ; and, if still contumacious after a due series of warnings, they were to be handed over to the secular arm for condign punishment.¹ How much all this bustling legislation effected is best shown by the declaration of the legate, Cardinal Otto, in 1237, at the great Council of London. He deplors the fact that married men received orders and held benefices while still retaining their wives, and did not hesitate to acknowledge their children as legitimate by public deeds and witnesses. After descanting upon the evils of this neglect of discipline, he orders that all married clerks shall be deprived of preferment and benefice, that their property shall not descend to wife or children, but to their churches, and that their sons shall be incapable of holy orders unless specially dispensed for eminent merit ; then turning upon concubinary priests, he inveighs strongly against their licentiousness, and decrees that all guilty of the sin shall within thirty days dismiss their women for ever, under pain of suspension from function and benefice until full satisfaction, persistent contumacy being

¹ Concil. Eboracens. ann. 1195 c. 17.—Concil. Londiniens. ann. 1200 c. 10.—Concil. Dunelmens. ann. 1220.—Concil. Oxoniens. ann. 1222 c. 28.—Constit. Archiep. Cantuar. ann. 1225 (Matt. Paris, ann. 1225).—Constit. Episc. Lincoln. ann. 1230 (Wilkins I. 627).—Constit. Provin. Cantuar. ann. 1236 c. 3, 4, 30.—Constit. Coventriens. ann. 1237 (Wilkins I. 641), &c.

visited with deprivation. The archbishops and bishops are commanded to make thorough inquisition throughout all the deaneries, to bring offenders to light, and also to put an end to the iniquitous practice of ordaining the offspring of such connections as successors in their father's benefices.¹

This legislation produced much excitement, and the legate even had fears for his life. Some prelates, indeed, maintained that it was binding on the Church of England only during the residence of Otto, but they were overruled, and it remained, at least nominally, in force, and was frequently referred to subsequently as the recognised law in such matters. Its effect was considerable, and some of the bishops endeavoured to carry out its provisions with energy, as may be presumed from a constitution of William of Cantilupe, Bishop of Worcester, issued in 1240, ordering his officials to investigate diligently whether any of the clergy of the diocese had concubines or were married.²

To this period and to the disturbance caused by these proceedings are doubtless to be attributed several satirical pieces of verse describing the excitement occurring among the unfortunate clerks thus attacked in their tenderest spot. The opening lines of one of these poems indicate the novelty and unexpectedness of the new regulations:—

Rumor novus Angliæ partes pergiravit,
Clericos, presbyteros omnes excitavit,

Nasciter presbyteris hinc fera procella:
Quisquis timet graviter pro sua puella.

The author then describes a great council, attended by more than ten thousand ecclesiastics, assembled to

¹ Matt. Paris, ann. 1237.

² Wilkins I. 672-3.

deliberate on the course to be pursued in so delicate a conjuncture. An old priest commences—

Pro nostris uxoribus sumus congregati ;
 Videatis provide quod sitis parati,
 Ad mandatum domini papæ vel legati,
 Respondere graviter ne sitis dampnati.¹

Another poem of similar character describes a chapter held by all orders and grades to consider the same question. The various speakers declare their inability to obey the new rule, except two, whose age renders them indifferent. A learned doctor exclaims—

Omnis debit clericus habere concubinam ;
 Hoc dixit qui coronam gerit auro trinam :
 Hanc igitur retinere decet disciplinam.

The general belief in the legality of the connection is shown by the remark of another—

Surgens unus presbyter turba de totali . . .
 “Unam” dixit “teneo amore legali,
 Quam nolo demittere pro lege tali.”

Another expects to escape by paying his “cullagium.”—

Duodecimus clamat magno cum clamore :
 “Non me pontifex terret minis et pavore :
 Sed ego nummos præbeam pro Dei amore,
 Ut in pace maneam cara cum uxore.”

Another urges the indiscriminate immorality attending upon the attempt to enforce an impossible asceticism—

Addidit ulterius : “Sitis memor horum,
 Si vetare præsul vult specialem torum,
 Cernet totum brevi plenum esse chorum
 Ordine sacrorum adulterorum.”

¹ De Convocatione Sacerdotum (Mapes's Poems, pp. 180-2).

And at length the discussion closes with the speech of a Dominican, who ends his remarks by predicting—

Habebimus clerici duas concubinas :
 Monachi, canonici totidem vel trinas :
 Decani, prælati, quatuor vel quinas :
 Sic tandem leges implebimus divinas.¹

Notwithstanding these flights of the imagination, no organised resistance was offered to the reform. The clergy sullenly acquiesced, and submitted to a pressure which was becoming irresistible. The triumph of the sacerdotal party, however, was gradual, and no exact limit can be assigned to the recognition of the principle of celibacy. In 1250 the idea of married priests was still sufficiently prevalent to lead the populace of London to include matrimony among the accusations brought against Boniface, Archbishop of Canterbury, when his tyranny had aroused general resistance;² and in 1255 Walter

¹ Mapes's Poems, pp. 176-9.—All the poetasters of the period, however, were not enlisted on one side. There is extant an exhortation against marriage, addressed to the clergy, which consists of a violent invective against the sex, recapitulating the customary accusations against women with all the brutal coarseness of the age:—

Hæc est iniquitas omnis adulteræ
 Qui virum proprium vollet non vivere,
 Ut det adultero non cessat rapere—
 Desistat igitur clerus nuno nubere.

Du Méril, op. cit. p. 184.

The "Confessio Goliaz" feelingly bewails the difficulty of rendering obedience to the new regulations:—

Res est arduissima vincere naturam,
 In aspectu virginum mentem ferre puram ;
 Juvenes non possumus legem sequi duram,
 Leviumque corporum non habere curam.
 Quis in igne positus igne non uratur ?
 Quis in mundo demorans castus habeatur ?
 Ubi Venus digito juvenes venatur
 Oculis illaqueat, facie prædatur ?

Mapes's Poems, p. 72.

² Matt. Paris, ann. 1250.

This Boniface was brother of the Duke of Savoy, and was one of the Italian prelates whose intrusion into the choice places of the English Church was a source of intense irritation. He was beatified in 1838, his sanctity being attested by the incorruption of his body for three hundred years. The career of another brother, Philip, is an instructive illustration of the ecclesiastical manners of the age. He

Kirkham, Bishop of Durham, still felt it necessary to prohibit the marriage of his clergy under pain of suspension and deprivation.¹

While doubtless these efforts were gradually putting an end to priestly marriage, existing unions persisted, and their results were long in disappearing. Dr. Jessopp prints a deed, to which he assigns the approximate date of 1279, granting a piece of land in Keswick to the cleric Henry of Norwich and his wife Katherine, and their legitimate children.² That the transmission of benefices from father to son was recognised as illegal, while they still continued, is seen in the prohibition by Gregory IX. in 1240, and by Innocent IV. in 1243, of the collusive transactions through which it was sought to conceal them.³ Another result of the progress of the reform is found in the large demand for dispensations enabling illegitimates to enter holy orders and hold preferment, accompanied by papal injunctions to eject all such as had not so protected them-

was in deacon's orders, and yet, as a leader of condottieri, he was a strenuous supporter of Innocent IV. in his quarrel with Frederic II. He was created Archbishop of Lyons, Bishop of Valence, Provost of Bruges, and Dean of Vienne, and, after enjoying these miscellaneous dignities for some twenty years, when at length Clement IV. insisted on his ordination and consecration, he threw off his episcopal robe, married first the heiress of Franche-Comté and then a niece of Innocent IV.—dying at last as Duke of Savoy (Milman, *Latin Christ.* IV. 326).

The indignation felt at the standing grievance of the intrusion of foreign prelates is quaintly expressed a century later by Langlande—

And a peril to the pope
 And prelates that he maketh,
 That bere bisshopes names
 Of Bethleem and Babiloigne,
 That huppe aboute in Engelond
 To halwe mennes auteres,
 And crepe amonges curatours,
 And confessen ageyn the lawe.

Piers Ploughman, Wright's Edition, l. 10695-702.

¹ Nullusque eorum uxorum ducat: et si antequam sacros ordines suscepit uxorem duxerit, seu postea, si beneficium habeat, ipso privetur, et ab executione sui officii suspendatur, nisi in casu a jure concessio.—*Constit. Walteri Episc. Dunelmens.* (Wilkins I. 705).

² Proceedings of the Norfolk and Norwich Archæological Society.

³ Bliss, *Calendar of Papal Registers*, I. 190, 201 (London, 1893).

selves, for these dispensations could always be had from the curia by those willing to pay the fees.¹

By this time, however, priestly marriage may be considered to have become nearly obsolete in England. When, in 1268, the Cardinal-legate Ottoboni held a great national council in London, and renewed the constitutions of his predecessor Otto, he made no allusion to marriage, and only denounced the practice of concubinage, which he endeavoured to eradicate by commanding all archdeacons to make a thorough inquisition annually into the morals of the clergy under his jurisdiction.² These constitutions of Otto and Ottoboni long remained the law of the English Church, and we find them constantly referred to in the canons of councils and pastorals of bishops, ceaselessly labouring to effect the impossible enforcement of discipline; even as late as 1399 the Archbishop of Canterbury ordered his suffragans to have them read and explained in the vernacular in all their episcopal synods.³ How hard was the task may be readily conceived when we see, in 1279, the primate Peckham, Archbishop of Canterbury, applying to Rome for assistance in prosecuting a certain bishop against whom he had long been vainly endeavouring to bring the law to bear. A concubine had confessed to having borne five children to the offender;⁴ he had himself admitted his guilt in a private interview with Peckham, for which he had afterwards claimed the seal of the confessional;

¹ Bliss, *op. cit. passim*.

² Concil. Londiniens. ann. 1268 c. 8 (Wilkins II. 5).

³ Convocat. Cantuar. ann. 1399 c. 13 (Wilkins III. 240).

⁴ The canon law maintained the extraordinary doctrine that the confession of the guilty woman could not be received as evidence against her accomplice, though it was good as against herself. "Unde nec sacerdotes accusare nec in eos testificari valent. . . . Quia ergo ista de se confitetur, super alienum crimen ei credi non oportet; sed contra eam sua confessio interpretanda est" (Gratian. P. II. c. xv. q. 3). It would be hard to imagine a rule of practice better fitted to repress investigation and to shield offenders.

yet the archbishop complains that his efforts will be unsuccessful unless he is fortified with letters from the pope himself. His strict injunctions of secrecy on his correspondent, and his evident dread lest the criminal's agents in Rome should get wind of the application, show how difficult was the enterprise, and how rarely prelates could be expected to undertake duties so arduous and so unpromising.¹

Perhaps the man to whom the Church owed most for his energy and activity in promoting the cause of reform was the celebrated Robert Grosseteste, Bishop of Lincoln. The leading part which he took in the political troubles of the stormy reign of Henry III. has thrown his ecclesiastical character somewhat into the shade, and he is better known as the friend of Leicester than as the untiring Churchman. Notwithstanding his consistent opposition to Henry III. and to the encroachments of the papacy, he was the inflexible enemy of clerical irregularities, and he enforced the decretals throughout his diocese with as firm a hand as that which he raised in defence of the rights of the nation and the privileges of the English Church. Thus, in 1251, he made a rigorous inquisition in his bishopric, forcing all his beneficed clergy to the observance of the strictest chastity, removing from their houses all suspected women, and punishing transgressors with deprivation. It is not easy to approve of his brutal expedient for testing the virtue of the inmates of his nunneries,² the adoption of which could only be justified and suggested by the conviction that general licentiousness was everywhere prevalent: yet it was doubtless more efficacious than the ordeal of the Eucharist, which was frequently resorted to in special cases.

¹ Wilkins II. 40.

² Ad domos religiosarum veniens, fecit exprimi mammillas earundem, ut sic physice si esset inter eas corruptela, experiretur.—Matt. Paris, ann. 1251.

Not only, however, did he thus endeavour to reform the morals of his flock, but he made the closest scrutiny into the character of applicants for ordination. In this he was largely aided by his ascetic friend and admirer, Adam de Marisco, and the correspondence between them shows not only the importance which they reasonably attached to the subject, but the sleepless vigilance required to counteract the prevalent immorality of the clergy, and the incredible laxity with which the patrons of livings bestowed the benefices in their gift.¹

The rule was now fairly established and generally acknowledged: concubinage, though still prevalent—nay, in fact almost universal—was not defended as a right, but was practised with what concealment was possible, and was the object of unremitting assault from councils and prelates. To enter into the details of the innumerable canons and constitutions directed against the ineradicable vice during the succeeding half century would be unprofitable. Their endless iteration is only interesting as proving their inefficacy. A popular satirist of the reign of Edward II. declares that bribery of the ecclesiastical officials insured the domestic comfort of the clergy and their female companions;² while in time the canon law seems to have lost all its terrors. One of the earliest acts of the reign of Henry VII. was a law empowering the ecclesiastical officials to imprison “priests, clerks, and religious men” convicted of incontinence, and guaran-

¹ Adæ de Marisco Epist. passim (Monumenta Franciscana). How little the character of the clergy had improved under the ceaseless efforts of the preceding half century may be guessed from Adam's description of his contemporary brethren—“Nihil aliud pervicacissima caninæ voracitatis impudentia consecantur, quam caducam fastuum arrogantiam, quam mobilem quæstum affluentiam, quam sordidam luxum petulentiam, auctoritatem summæ salvationis in perditionis æternæ crudelitatem depravantes; cernimus usquequaquam quasi solutum Satanam effrænata tyrannide beatam hæreditatem benedicti Dei immanissime depopulari.”—Ibid. Epist. CCXLVII. P. i. c. 18.

² And thise ersedeknes that ben set to visite holi churches,
Everich fondeth hu he may shrewedelichest worche;

teeing them against prosecution by the offenders.¹ That the aid of the secular legislator should thus have been invoked for protection under such circumstances showed the audacity resulting from long immunity, and is a confession that the ceaseless labour of four centuries had utterly failed.

In one part of England, however, the reform seems to have penetrated more slowly. We have seen above, on the testimony of Giraldus Cambrensis, that in the early part of the thirteenth century the marriage of priests and the hereditary transmission of benefices were almost universal in Wales. As in the wild fastnesses of the Principality the ecclesiastical regulations seemed powerless, recourse was had to the secular law, which was employed to inflict various disabilities on offenders and their offspring, and the repetition of these shows how obstinately the custom was adhered to by the clergy until a comparatively late period. Thus, in the Gwentian and Dimetian Codes there is a provision that the son of a married priest, born after the ordination of his father, shall not share in the paternal estate:² and this provision

He wole take mede of that on and that other,
 And late the parsonn have a wyf and the prest another,
 At wille;
 Coveytise shal stoppen here mouth, and maken hem al stille.

Wright, *Political Songs of England*, p. 326.

So Robert Langlande states—

In the consistorie bifore the commissarie
 He cometh nougth but ofte;
 For hir lawe dureth over longe,
 But if thei lachen silver,
 And matrimoyne for moneie
 Maken and unmaken.

Vision of Piers Ploughman, v. 10102-7 (Wright's Edition).

¹ 1 Henry VII. cap. 4.

² Gwentian Code, Book II. chap. xxx. "Because he was begotten contrary to decree."—Dimetian Code, Book II. chap. viii. § 27 (Aneurin Owen's *Ancient Laws and Institutes of Wales*, Vol. I. pp. 761, 445). Of the latter of these codes, the recension which has reached us contains alterations made by Rys son of Grufudd, showing it to be posterior at least to the year 1180.

is retained and repeated in a collection of laws which contains the date of 2 Henry IV., showing it to be posterior to the year 1400.¹ The same collection enumerates married priests among "thirteen things corrupting the world, and which will ever remain in it; and it can never be delivered of them."² In the same spirit, the Book of Cynog, which is of uncertain date, declares "nor is a married priest, as he has relinquished his law, to be credited in law," and it therefore directs that the testimony of such witnesses shall not be receivable in court;³ while another collection of laws, occurring in a MS. of the fifteenth century, repeats the provision—"their testimony is not to be credited in any place, and they are excluded from the law, unless they ask a pardon from the pope or a bishop, through a public penance."⁴ In fact, we may, perhaps, almost hazard the conclusion that, notwithstanding the efforts of both ecclesiastical and secular legislators, sacerdotal marriage scarcely became obsolete in Wales before it was once more recognised as legitimate under the Reformation.

¹ Anomalous Laws, Book x. chap. vii. § 19 (Owen Vol. II. p. 331).

² Ibid. chap. ix. (Vol. II. p. 347).

³ Ibid. Book VIII. chap. xi. § 19 (Vol. II. p. 205).

⁴ Ibid. Book XI. chap. iii. § 15 (Vol. II. p. 409).

CHAPTER XVIII

IRELAND AND SCOTLAND

IN a previous section it has already been shown that the rule of celibacy was observed by the Celtic Churches of the British Islands during a period in which their Christianity was a model for the rest of Europe. Their religion, however, could not preserve its purity and simplicity amid the overwhelming barbarism of those dreary ages. From an ancient commentary on the "Cain Patraic," or Patrick's Law, of uncertain date, but probably belonging to the ninth or tenth century, it would seem as though there were at that time two classes of bishops, one bound by monastic vows, the other permitted to marry; and, what is somewhat singular, the law appears to favour the latter, for the "cumad espuic," or virgin bishop, is condemned to perpetual degradation or to the life of a hermit for offences which the "bishop of one wife" can redeem by prompt penance.¹

The Feini, prior to the advent of St. Patrick, were far in advance of the contemporary barbarian tribes, and their conversion to Christianity introduced a new and powerful element of progress. It was not lasting, however, and they lapsed into a condition but little removed from that of savages. The marriage-tie was virtually unknown or habitually disregarded among the laity.²

¹ Senchus Mor. Introduction, pp. 57-9. (Edited by Hancock, Dublin, 1865.)

² Lanfranci Epistt. 37, 38.—Bernardi Vit. S. Malachie cap. iii. viii.—The rudeness of the age may be measured by the fact that when Malachy determined to adorn the venerable monastery of Benchor with an oratory of stone such as he had seen abroad, the mere laying of the foundations aroused the wonderment of the people, to whom buildings of that kind were unknown—"quod in terra illa nequid ejusmodi ædificia invenirentur"—and his enemies took advantage of the feeling to

What was the condition of the clergy may be inferred from the fact that the episcopates were regarded as the private property of certain families in which they descended by hereditary succession. Thus, in the primatial see of Armagh, fifteen archbishops were of one house, the last eight of whom were married. At length Celsus, who died about the year 1130, bequeathed the dignity to his friend St. Malachy. The kindred rose in arms at this infringement of their rights, and two of their members successively occupied the position, which Malachy was not able to obtain until the anger of God had miraculously destroyed the whole family.¹

During all this period the Irish Church had been completely independent of the central authority at Rome, but the extension of influence resulting from the labours of Hildebrand and his successors soon began to make itself felt. In the quarrels concerning the succession of Archbishop Celsus, there figures a certain Bishop Gilbert, who is described as being the first papal legate seen in Ireland.² When Malachy abandoned Armagh and revived the extinct episcopate of Down, he resolved on a pilgrimage to Rome to obtain the *pallium*, a powerful instrument of papal authority, until then unknown on the island; and perhaps the opposition manifested to his wishes by his friends as well as by the authorities may be attributable to a repug-

interfere with the work on the ground that such an enterprise was unheard of, and that so stupendous an undertaking could never be accomplished. This piece of presumption was promptly rebuked by the death of the ringleader, and by the finding in the excavations of a treasure which enabled St. Malachy to execute his plans (Vit. S. Malach. c. xxviii.). St. Bernard, who derived his impressions from Malachy and his companions, thus describes the Irish of Connaught, "sic protervos ad mores, sic ferales ad ritus, sic ad fidem impios, ad leges barbaros, cervicosos ad disciplinam, spurcos ad vitam. Christiani nomine, re pagani. Non decimas, non primitias dare, non legitima inire conjugia, non facere confessiones; pœnitentias nec qui peteret, ne qui daret penitus invenire. Ministri altaris pauci admodum erant."—Ibid. cap. viii.

¹ Ibid. c. x. xi. xii. xiii.

² Ibid. c. x.

nance towards the gradual encroachments of Romanising influence.¹

Malachy returned from Rome armed with legatine powers, and proceeded vigorously with the reforms which he had long before commenced. He held numerous councils, extirpating abuses everywhere, renovating the ancient rules of discipline and introducing new ones, bending all his energies to abrogating the national institutions and replacing them with those of Rome.² The earnest asceticism of his nature, exaggerated by the training of his youth, led him to give a strongly monastic character to the Church of which he was thus the second founder. On his journey homeward from Rome, he had tarried a second time at Clairvaux to see his friend St. Bernard, and had left there four of his attendants to be exercised in the severe Cistercian discipline, that they might serve as missionaries and as models for his compatriots, who had heard, indeed, of monkhood, but had never seen it.³ His efforts, in this respect, were to a considerable extent successful, at least in a portion of the island, though his death in 1149, at the comparatively early age of fifty-four, cut short his labours before they could yield their full fruit.⁴

The incongruous character thus imparted to the Irish Church is described by Giraldus Cambrensis some forty years later. The prelates were selected from the monasteries, and the Church was completely monastic. Chastity

¹ Vit. S. Malach. c. xv.

² Ibid. c. xviii.—Fiunt de medio barbaricæ leges, Romanæ introducuntur.—Ibid. c. viii.

³ Ibid. c. xvi.—Illæ gentes quæ a diebus antiquis monachi quidem nomen audierunt, monachum non viderunt.

⁴ In the hymn in which St. Bernard celebrated the virtues of his friend he compares him to the Apostles—

Sobrius victus, castitas perennis,
Fides, doctrina, animarum lucra,
Meritis parem cœtui permiscet
Apostolorum.

was the only rule of discipline thoroughly preserved, and Giraldus confesses his wonder that it could be maintained, in contradiction to all former experience, when gluttony and drunkenness were carried to excess. The monastic principle of selfishness was all-pervading, and the pastors took no care of their flocks. Among the people, marriage was still unknown, incest was of common occurrence, even the rudiments of Christian faith were left untaught, and the Church was regarded without reverence.¹ His account of the absence of regular stipends and tithes is confirmed by the fact that an Irish bishop attending the Council of Lateran in 1179, in complaining of the condition of his native Church, stated that his only revenues were derived from three milch cows, which his flock were bound to replace as they became dry.² This poverty, however apostolic in itself, can only, in an age of magnificent sacerdotalism, be regarded as an indication of a Church whose degradation could command neither the respect nor the support of its children. That the reforms of Malachy, one-sided as they were, extended only over a portion of the island, is evident from the inquiry which, a few years later, the Archbishop of Cashel addressed to Clement III. as to whether the children of bishops could receive orders and hold benefices; and the exceptional character of the Irish establishment was recognised by the pope when he decided that they could, provided they were born in wedlock, and were otherwise worthy of position.³ This requisite of legitimacy was apparently

¹ Sermo Giraldi in Concil. Dublinens. (De Rebus a se Gestis Lib. II. c. 14).

In the "Topographia Hibernica," Dist. III. cap. 27, Giraldus confirms his assertion as to the chastity and drunkenness of the Irish clergy, but admits that they observed the canonical fasts with praiseworthy strictness.

² Hist. Archiep. Bremens. ann. 1179 (Lindenbrog. Script. Septent. p. 107).

It must be borne in mind, however, that in the Irish Church bishops were almost as numerous as in the primitive Church of Africa—"singulæ pene ecclesiæ singulos haberent episcopos."—Bernard. Vit. S. Malachix cap. x.

³ Cap. 13 Extra Lib. I. Tit. xvii.

not imposed in ignorance, for at the Council of Cashel in 1171 we find an effort made to enforce Christian marriage among the people, who are still described as indulging in unrestricted polygamy and disregarding the nearest ties of consanguinity.¹

When about this period the English commenced the conquest which was to lead to five centuries of cruel anarchy, they of course carried with them their civil and ecclesiastical institutions. The original conquerors—the Butlers, the Clares, and the Fitzgeralds—speedily became incorporated with the native race, and were as Irish as the O'Briens and the McCauras. Although the royal authority was limited practically to the confines of the Pale, and embraced little beyond the Ostman ports, yet it is easy to understand that the clerical license habitual to the English spread beyond the political boundaries, and the monastic spirit of the Hibernians was grievously wounded by the unchastity which was disseminated like a contagion from the dissolute priests who followed in the wake of Strong-bow and Prince John.² Not twenty years after the first invasion, a council, summoned in 1186 by John in Dublin, was troubled by a quarrel between the Saxon priests of Wexford, who mutually accused each other of publicly marrying and keeping wives. This being duly proved, they were promptly degraded, to the intense satisfaction of the Irish clergy, triumphant in their own comparative purity of morals.³ When, therefore, in 1205, Innocent III. specially ordered his legate, Cardinal Julian, to put an end to the hereditary transmission of benefices common in Ireland, the abuse to which he referred was probably confined to the English Pale.⁴ The Church establishments, in fact, were distinct,

¹ *Benedicti Abbatis Gesta Henrici II. ann. 1171.*

² *Girald. Cambrens. op. cit. Lib. II. c. 13.*

³ *Girald. Cambrens. loc. cit.*

⁴ *Innocent PP. III. Regest. v. 158.*

and consequently, when an Irish synod was held in Dublin, in 1217, its canons cannot be considered as having authority beyond the narrow territory through which the king's writ would likewise run. Those canons show us that the morality of the Saxon priesthood had not improved by the example made of the priests of Wexford. The denunciations of concubinage indicate the prevalence of that vice, and the severities threatened against the unfortunate women contrast strangely with the leniency shown to their more guilty partners.¹ That little was accomplished is indicated by an epistle of Honorius III. in 1219, denouncing the laxities of the Hibernian Church, which in his eyes were equivalent to heresies.² In 1250, Innocent IV. ordered the Bishop of Ossory to deprive all married clerks of benefices, and to remove all priests who had succeeded to their fathers' parishes without an intermediate incumbent.³ This effort was equally fruitless, if we may believe the Synod of Ossory in 1320, which declares that the evil continued to flourish, open, avowed, and universal, resisting alike the authority of the Church and the efforts to repress it by severity.⁴ Whether the offenders dismissed their consorts after the thirty days' grace allowed by the synod may well be doubted. With the spread of English domination, the purity of the native Church disappeared, and so great became the general disregard of the canons that shortly before the Reformation it was not an unusual thing for Irish priests to be openly married, nor did those who did so seem to have thereby forfeited the esteem of their neighbours.⁵

¹ Concil. Dublinens. ann. 1217 (Wilkins I. 548).

² Martene Thesaur. I. 875.

³ Berger, Registres d'Innocent IV. No. 4791.

⁴ Quia putridum libidinosæ spurcitie contagium adeo apud clericos et presbyteros invaluit his diebus, quod nec auctoritas evangelica, nec canonica severitas illud hactenus extirpare potuit, quia in suæ perpetuæ damnationis periculum, et ordinis ecclesiasticæ ignominiam, populique perniciosum exemplum manifestum, adhuc suas publicæ detinent concubinas, etc.—Constit. Synod. Ossoriens. (Wilkins II. 502).

⁵ Bradshaw's Enniskillen (London "Athenæum," Sept. 7, 1878, p. 305).

In Scotland, the Christianity introduced by St. Columba had fallen into the hands of the Culdees. These were originally monks of a more than ordinary strictness of discipline, to whom the earliest recorded allusion occurs in Ireland towards the close of the eighth century—the name, Céle-dé (Keledeus, or Servus Dei), meaning simply Servant of God. In the course of time the Culdees had so relaxed their rule that they reappear in the eleventh century as an order nominally of monks, yet fulfilling the functions of the secular clergy, and enjoying free permission to marry, only abstaining from their wives when employed in the actual ministry of the altar. With marriage had come the hereditary transmission of the endowments of the Church to their children, so that the ancient abbeys and churches were well-nigh stripped of all their possessions, and the distinction between clergy and laity was rather a term than in fact. It may please the poet to reconstruct a world of his own, peopled by imaginary beings of angelic purity—

Peace to their shades! The pure Culdees
 Were Albyn's earliest priests of God,
 Ere yet an island of her seas
 By foot of Saxon monk was trod,
 Long ere her churchmen by bigotry
 Were barred from wedlock's holy tie.
 'Twas then that Aodh, famed afar,
 In Iona preached the word with power,
 And Reullura, beauty's star,
 Was the partner of his bower—

but in sober truth the Culdees were pure as long as they kept the tradition of their founder, and it was not until they sank to a level with their savage compatriots that they transgressed the rule and became worldly and corrupt.¹ In 1125 the Cardinal-legate, John of Crema,

¹ Haddan and Stubbs II. 175-80.

whose unlucky adventure in London has been already alluded to, visited Scotland in the execution of his reformatory mission. There he found on the throne David I., a prince whose life was devoted to rescuing his subjects from their primæval barbarism. We know few details of the history of those times, but it is fair to conjecture that the exhortations of the legate had a share in arousing David to a realisation of the deficiencies and the corruptions of the Scottish Church, and in guiding him to the course which he adopted in its reformation. After some fruitless efforts to restore the order of Culdees to its original condition, he resolved on the sweeping measure of removing all who should prove incorrigible. They were accordingly turned out bodily from their establishments, such property as could be traced was restored, and donations on an extended scale were made both to the old foundations and to the new ones which the royal reformer established—donations which gained for him, from an ungodly descendant, the appellation of “Ane soir sanct for the crown.” These foundations were then filled with regular clergy, brought from France and England—chiefly canons of the order of St. Augustin—and the unfortunate Culdees were turned adrift unless they would promise to observe the strictness of monastic rule. That in a few places they did so, is shown by references to Culdees even in the next century, but these measures were effective, and practically they and their customs disappeared together.¹

In a Church thus constructed from the regular clergy,

¹ Haddan and Stubbs II. 216, 224-7, 235.—See also Cosmo Innes' “Scotland in the Middle Ages,” pp. 107 sqq. Towards the end of the twelfth century, Giraldus Cambrensis calls the Culdees of Bardsey in Wales “Coelibes vel Colidei,” and characterises them as “religiosissimi” (Itin. Cambr. II. 6—*ap.* Haddan and Stubbs II. xxiii.).

In 1251 we find Innocent. IV. settling a quarrel between the chapter of St. Andrews and the Culdees of the same place, and in 1255 the chapter protests against their participating in the election of bishops as insisted upon by King Alexander III.—Theiner, *Vet. Monument. Hibern. et Scotor.* No. 145, 177 (pp. 53, 67).

the heresy of marriage could find no foothold, especially as it had been so sternly punished in the expulsion of the Culdees. Still was the desired purity not yet attained. In 1181, during the long quarrel between William the Lion and the papacy on the subject of the archbishopric of St. Andrews, an interdict was pronounced on all ecclesiastics who should refuse to recognise the papal candidate John, whereupon the king persecuted those who obeyed the mandate, and the chronicler, in expatiating upon his cruelty, is careful to mention that he did not spare their children, even to babes in their mothers' arms, who were remorselessly driven into exile.¹ The state of things indicated by this remained without improvement. In 1225, Honorius III. ordered the Scottish ecclesiastics to assemble in council for the correction of the many enormities which were committed with impunity; and the council held in obedience to the papal command denounced the shameless licentiousness of the clergy as a disgrace to the Church.² Inquests to detect the offenders, suspension and deprivation to punish them, were ordered with all the verbal energy of which we have already witnessed so many examples, and were attended with the same plentiful lack of success. With what disposition the clergy regarded these efforts for their improvement we may guess from the reception which they gave to the constitutions of Cardinal Ottoboni. Reference has already been made to the council held by that legate in London in 1268. The Church of Scotland had been ordered to join in this council, and had sent two bishops and two abbots as its representative delegates. These took home with them the constitutions of Ottoboni, which the clergy of Scotland utterly refused to obey.³

¹ *Gesta Henrici II.* T. I. p. 282 (*M. R. Series*).

² *Concil. Scotican. ann.* 1225 c. 18, 62 (*Wilkins I.* 610).

³ *Chron. Paslatens. ann.* 1268 (*Wilkins II.* 19).

CHAPTER XIX

SPAIN

WE have already seen (p. 135) that among the Wisigoths of Spain the rule of celibacy had never been successfully enforced, and that during the later period of the Gothic dynasty the demoralisation of the clergy was daily increasing. The Saracenic invasion, and the subsequent struggles of the Christians, who founded petty kingdoms among the wild, mountainous regions of the North and East of the Peninsula, were not favourable to the growth of regular discipline and settled observances. The centralised sacerdotalism of Rome, which took so remarkable an extension in the ninth and tenth centuries, and which penetrated every portion of the Carolingian empire, was powerless to intrude into the strongholds of the Jalikiah, whence the descendants of Pelayo and his companions gradually extended their frontiers from Oviedo to Toledo. Communication with the apostolic city was rare. The nominal subjection of Barcelona and Navarre to the Carolingians, indeed, brought the eastern provinces of Spain under the domination of the Archbishops of Narbonne, and kept them, to a certain extent, under the influences which were moulding the rest of Europe; but the kingdoms of Leon and Castile grew up in complete ecclesiastical independence. Even at the close of the eleventh century a Spanish ecclesiastic describes his contemporary brethren as rude and illiterate, owning no obedience to the mother Church of Rome, and governed by the discipline of Toledo.¹ Wild and insubordinate as

¹ Hist. Compostellan. Lib. II. c. 1.

was a large portion of the European clergy, the ecclesiastics of Spain were even wilder and more insubordinate. Another writer of the period, himself a canon of Compostella, and subsequently Bishop of Mondonego, speaking of his brother canons previous to the reforms of Diego Gelmirez, denounces them as reckless and violent men, ready for any crime, prompt in quarrel, and even occasionally indulging in mutual slaughter.¹ How little, indeed, there was to distinguish the clerk from the layman is evident from a regulation promulgated by the Council of Compostella in 1113. It provides that all priests, gentlemen, and peasants shall devote themselves to wolf-hunting on every Sunday, except Easter and Pentecost, under penalty of a fine of five sols for the priest and gentleman, and one sol, or a sheep, for the peasant—visitation of the sick being the only excuse exempting the priest from the performance of this duty. Every Church, moreover, was bound to furnish for the hunt, seven iron-tipped reeds.² A similar condition of society is indicated at the other end of Spain, where, in 1027, the Synod of Elna, in Roussillon, had forbidden, under pain of excommunication, any one to attack a monk or a clerk who was without arms.³

In such lack of social organisation it is easy to imagine that the rule of celibacy received little attention. According to Mariana, the clergy of the period were, for the most part, publicly married;⁴ and when, in 1056, the Council of Compostella specifically forbade to bishops and monks all intercourse with women, except with mothers, aunts, and sisters wearing the monastic habit,⁵

¹ Hist. Compostellan. Lib. I. c. 20.

² Didaci Decret. No. 15 (Hist. Compostellan. Lib. I. cap. 90).

³ Synod. Helenens. ann. 1027 c. 3 (Aguirre IV. 393).

⁴ Hist. de España, Lib. ix. cap. xi.

⁵ Concil. Compostellan. ann. 1056 can. 3. An allusion, however, to those who left the Church and married being allowed to return on abandoning their wives, would seem to show that some supervision was exercised. The Council of Coyanza,

the inference is fair that even so elementary a prohibition was an innovation, and that the secular clergy, below the episcopate, were not regarded as subject to any restriction.

In the comprehensive efforts, however, made during the later half of the eleventh century by the Roman Church to bring all Christendom under its domination, the rising states of Spain were not likely to remain undisturbed in their independent isolation; nor was it to be expected that so complete a defiance of the canons would be passed unobserved by the pontiffs who were convulsing the rest of Europe in their efforts to reform the Church. Accordingly, in 1068, we find the Cardinal Hugo of Silva Candida, as legate of Alexander II., assembling a council at Gerona, and procuring the adoption of a regulation reducing to the condition of laymanship all who, in holy orders, either entered into matrimony or kept concubines; while those who should dismiss their wives were promised immunity for the past and security for the future.¹ In 1077, Gregory VII. sent a certain Bishop Amandus as his legate, with an epistle addressed to the Spaniards, in which he told them that Spain had anciently belonged to St. Peter and the Roman Church; that the carelessness of his predecessors, and the Saracenic conquest, had caused the papal rights to be forgotten, but that the time had come for them to be revindicated, and that he consequently claimed implicit obedience.² Accordingly, in 1078, we find the legate presiding over another council at Gerona, which confirmed the canons

in 1050, had forbidden the residence of strange women, except mother, aunt, or step-mother, but says nothing as to marriage.—Con. Coyacens. ann. 1050 c. iii. (Aguirre IV. 405, 407).

¹ Concil. Gerundens. ann. 1068 can. 7, 8 (Labbei et Coleti T. XII.). The Council of Toulouse, in 1056 (see ante, p. 306), which ordered the separation of priests from their wives, undertook to include Spain in its legislation, presumably meaning the eastern portion of the Peninsula, which was subject to the Archbishops of Narbonne.

² Gregor. VII. Regist. Lib. IV. Epist. 28.

of the previous one, and added several others to prevent the ordination of sons of priests, and the hereditary transmission of benefices.¹ Such slender reforms as may have resulted from these efforts were probably confined to Catalonia and Aragon; but not long afterwards influences were brought to bear upon the rest of Spain, which had a powerful effect in extending the authority of Rome over the Peninsula. Constance of Burgundy, Queen of Alfonso VI. of Castile and Leon, prevailed upon her husband to ask of Gregory a legate to reform the Church, and to condemn the Gothic or Mozarabic ritual, which was jealously preserved by the people as a symbol of their independent nationality. The prayer, of course, was granted. Richard, Abbot of Marseilles, was sent, and in 1080 he held a council at Burgos, where he commanded the ordained clergy to put away their wives. The novelty and hardship of this order created great excitement. The pope, who was rightly regarded as its author, became the object of no little abuse and insult, and was held up to popular derision in innumerable lampoons.²

All of these efforts were nugatory, in spite of the cloud of Cluniac monks who settled upon Spain, obtaining abbeys and bishoprics and Gallicising in many ways the national Church.³ The Spaniards, engaged in an interminable and often doubtful struggle with the Infidel, might well claim consideration from the Holy Father, while the independent spirit which they manifested in their resistance to the introduction of the Roman ritual was a warning that it would be prudent not to proceed too abruptly in the process of bringing them within the fold of St. Peter. Whatever be the motives, indeed, which induced such strenuous apostles of celibacy as Gregory,

¹ Concil. Gerundens. ann. 1078 can. 1, 3, 4, 5 (Labbei et Coleti T. XII.).

² Mariana, loc. cit.

³ Menéndez y Pelayo, *Heterodoxos españoles*, I. 372-3.

Urban, Paschal, and Calixtus to abstain from urging upon them the reform which was so earnestly enforced elsewhere, certain it is that little effort was made to deprive the Spanish clergy of their wives. In all the epistles of the popes up to 1130 I can find but one allusion to the subject, though communication between Spain and Italy became daily more frequent, and the papal authority was constantly exercised with greater decisiveness in the internal affairs of the Spanish Church.

When, in 1101, Diego Gelmirez succeeded in obtaining the see of Compostella, Paschal II. addressed him an epistle, reproaching him with the utter contempt of discipline in his diocese, and commanding a reform. He chiefly complained of the incongruous common residence of monks and nuns, which he severely condemned and peremptorily prohibited, but he made some concession to the necessities of the time in permitting the ordination of the sons of those priests who had, "according to the ordinary custom of the country," married prior to the promulgation of what the pope significantly termed the Roman law; and he carefully abstained from ordering a separation between them and their wives, or even an enforcement of the canons for the future.¹

Diego, who possessed no common measure of vigour and ambition, and who needed the particular favour of the popes for the success of his plans in elevating and aggrandising his see, accordingly proceeded to reform his clergy. There is extant a minute and circumstantial contemporary history of his episcopate, written by his admiring disciples, who dwell with much instance on his labours and success in reducing to discipline the refractory canons of his cathedral seat; but in the numerous allusions to these reforms there is no mention of the enforcement of celibacy, while the fact that

¹ Paschal. PP. II. Epist. 57.

he would not allow them to minister at the altar without canonical vestments is made the subject of repeated gratulation and praise.¹ The absolute silence of the authors with respect to the clergy at large shows that the reticence of Pope Paschal was not misunderstood, and that there was no effort made to bring the secular priesthood under subjection to the Roman discipline. In the twenty-five canons of the Council of Compostella in 1113 it therefore need not surprise us that there is no reference whatever to the subject, beyond an allusion to the children of ecclesiastics, whose nurses were declared entitled to clerical privileges, thus giving them a recognised and highly prized position.²

That Diego's reforms, indeed, did not extend to the abrogation of clerical marriage is evident from several incidental circumstances. Thus, in 1114, the lords of the monastery of Botoa made it over to the Church of Santiago of Compostella, reserving to themselves their life interest, with a reversion to any of their descendants who should be ecclesiastics, and who might be willing to profess celibacy, showing that the matter was optional with the secular clergy.³ That even the canons were bound by no absolute rules on the subject is manifested by a very curious transaction, which may be worth recounting as illustrative in several aspects of the spirit of the age. In 1127, Diego, at the head of his Galician troops, accompanied Alfonso VIII. on an expedition into Portugal. On their return, the army halted at Compostella, where the archbishop received and enter-

¹ Hist. Compostellan. Lib. I. cap. 20, 58, 81 ; Lib. II. cap. 3 ; Lib. III. cap. 46.-- Even the moderate reforms introduced met with violent opposition—"nobis omnibus, veluti bruta animalia, nulla adhuc jugali asperitate depressa, reluctantibus"—and only a portion seem to have submitted "quosdam sibi acquiescentes doctrina et operatione conspicuos divina clementia reddidit."

² Didaci Decreta, No. 21 (Hist. Compostell. Lib. I. cap. 96).

³ Ibid. Lib. I. cap. 100.—"Si qui ex eorum progenie clerici esse et sæculariter continere vellent."

tained his sovereign. They were bound by the closest ties, for Diego had baptised, knighted, and crowned him, and had, moreover, constantly stood his friend throughout his stormy youth, in the endless civil wars which marked the disastrous reign of his mother, Queen Urraca. Yet, prompted by evil counsellors who were jealous of Diego, the king suddenly demanded of him an enormous sum of money, to pay off the army, under the threat of seizing and pillaging the city. After considerable resistance, Diego was forced to submit, and to pay a thousand marks of silver. He then sought a private interview, in which he solemnly and affectionately warned Alfonso of the ruin of his soul which would ensue if he did not undergo penance for thus impiously spoiling the Apostle Santiago.¹ Alfonso listened humbly, and professed entire willingness to repent, but for the difficulty that he had always been taught that penitence was fruitless without restitution, and restitution he was unable and unwilling to make. Diego then suggested that he should meet the chapter and discuss the case, to which he graciously assented. In the assembly which followed, Diego proposed, that the king should follow the example of his father, Raymond of Galicia, in commending himself to the peculiar patronage of Santiago, and in bequeathing his body to be buried in their church, promising, moreover, that if he should do so they would pray specially for him, which, from the promise of his youth, bade fair to be no easy task. Alfonso was delighted to escape so easily: he eagerly accepted the proposition, and added that he would like to become a canon of their Church, in order to enjoy the fullest possible share in the masses of such holy men. To this the chapter assented at once; he was forthwith duly installed as a canon of the Church which

¹ St. James.

he had just despoiled, and his conscience was set at rest, while the Church felt that it had acquired a moral supremacy over the spoiler.¹ In thus formally becoming a canon, there could have been no assumption of celibacy, expressed or implied. Alfonso was but twenty-one years of age, and in the following year he married Berengaria, daughter of the Count of Barcelona.²

In fact, in the absence of urgency on the part of Rome, the question of sacerdotal celibacy seems to have been virtually ignored in Spain. How little importance was attached to the pre-eminent sanctity of asceticism becomes evident when we are told that in the whole of Galicia there was no convent of nuns until Diego, in 1129, founded the house of St. Maria of Conjo.³ Equal indifference is manifest in the legislative assemblies of the Church. The Council of Leon and Compostella, in 1114, only prohibited the residence of such women as were forbidden by the canons,⁴ which, in the existing discipline of the Spanish Church, may safely be presumed to offer no impediment to the marriage relation; and a synod held at Palencia in 1129 is even more significant in its reticence, for it merely provides that notorious concubines of the clergy shall be ejected, without apparently venturing to threaten any punishment on the reverend offenders.⁵

Towards the close of his restless life, however, Archbishop Diego found time, amid his military, political,

¹ Hist. Compostellan. Lib. II. cap. 87.

² The Spanish Church was not alone in this looseness of discipline as regards canons. When Arthur of Brittany took up arms against his uncle King John, and advanced with an army to Tours at Easter, A.D. 1200, he there "more debito in ecclesia B. Martini in canonicum est receptus, et in stallum decani in vestibus chori, sicut canonicus installatus."—Chron. Turonens. ann. 1200 (Martene Ampl. Collect V. 1038).

³ Hist. Compostell. Lib. III. cap. 11.

⁴ Ibid. Lib. I. cap. 101 (Concil. Legionens. ann. 1114 can. 8).

⁵ Concil. Palentin. ann. 1129 can. 5.—"Concubinæ clericorum manifestæ ejiciantur."

and ecclesiastical schemes of aggrandisement, to undertake the much-needed reform of a single monastery. The Abbot of S. Pelayo de Antealtaria was a paragon of brutish sensuality, who wasted the revenues of his house in riotous living and took no shame in a numerous progeny. The archbishop remonstrated with him long and earnestly, both in public and private: seven times in the general chapter of the diocese he admonished and threatened the offender without result. At length, in 1130, after forbearance so remarkable, Diego held a chapter in the abbey for his trial, when he was proved by competent witnesses to have kept no less than seventy concubines. He was accordingly deposed, but was so far from being canonically punished that a benefice in the abbey lands was assigned for his support. A new abbot was then appointed, who swore to observe the Benedictine rule as far as he should find himself able to do so.¹ It is a significant commentary on the state of discipline and opinion to find so weak an effort to remove and punish the grossest licentiousness characterised by the biographer of Diego with the warmest expressions of wondering admiration, as a work which doubtless gave ineffable satisfaction to the Divine Omnipotence, and which was without example in previous history.

It is very evident that the pontiffs who so energetically enforced the rule of celibacy throughout the rest of Europe were content to offer little opposition to the obstinacy of the Celtiberian priesthood. We can safely conclude, indeed, that matters were allowed to remain virtually undisturbed, and that the clergy were permitted to retain their wives. A council held in Galicia in the early part of the thirteenth century, for the purpose of reforming ecclesiastical discipline, preserves absolute silence on the

¹ Hist. Compostellan. Lib. III. cap. 20.—“Pro modulo suæ possibilitatis.”

subject of marriage and concubinage;¹ in 1246, priests of Cordova were able to plead ignorance in justification of their keeping so-called concubines while performing divine service.² Yet, in 1244, under pressure from the Cardinal of St. Sabina, then papal legate, public concubinarians were ordered to be suspended, deprived of their benefices, and degraded from holy orders.³ Notwithstanding this, some twenty years later, Alfonso the Wise of Castile was obliged to formally interdict matrimony to those in holy orders. In the elaborate code drawn up by that monarch and known as "Las Siete Partidas," there is a law punishing sacerdotal marriage with deprivation of function and benefice; while the wives, if vassals of the Church, are to be reduced to servitude, and if serfs, are to be sold and the proceeds appropriated for the benefit of the Church of the offender. The wording of the law would seem to indicate that it was an enactment intended to repress existing disorders, and not merely a well-known provision inserted in the code for the purpose of completing a compilation of statutes;⁴ while the existence in secular legislation of such invasions of the province of ecclesiastical law is a convincing proof of the continued independence of Rome asserted by the Spanish Church and State. The prelates were further authorised to command the assistance of the secular power in enforcing these barbarous penalties to their full measure of severity. This, if enforced, would have put a speedy end to clerical marriage, but the Partidas

¹ Concil. Hispan. Sæc. XIII. (Martene Thesaur. IV. 167).

² Berger, Registres d'Innocent IV. No. 1759.

³ Villanueva, Viage Literario, T. XVII. p. 346.

⁴ "De los clérigos que casan á bendiciones habiendo órdenes sagradas, que pena deben haber ellos et aquellas con quien casan.—Casándose algunt clérigo que hobiese orden sagrada non debe fincar sin pena, ca débente vedar de oficio, et tollerle el beneficio que hobiere de la iglesia por sentencia de descomulgamiento fasta que la dexe et faga penitencia de aquel yerro, etc."—Siete Partidas, P. I. Tit. iv. l. 41.

were not confirmed by the Cortes until 1348, nearly a century later, and these provisions produced no effect at the time. How little, indeed, the clergy were required to abandon their customs is evident when, in 1262, Alfonso granted to those of the diocese of Salamanca the privilege of bequeathing all their real and personal property to their children, grandchildren or other descendants.¹

The clergy of the dominions of the crown of Aragon were as indifferent to the canons as those of Castile. In Valencia a council in 1255 prohibited the residence with priests of all women, except mothers and sisters and such others as were beyond suspicion, but no penalty was prescribed for infractions of the rule; and the character of the clergy with whom the council had to deal is sufficiently shown by its complaint that the priests of the country parishes frequented the city too much and indulged there in disgraceful excesses, for which reason it forbids them from visiting the city more often than twice a month, and requires them to return home the same day.² Arnaldo de Peralta, Bishop of Valencia, not long after, deploras the utter contempt with which all previous efforts to suppress clerical concubinage had been received, and the prevalence of the custom by which ecclesiastics endowed their bastards with the spoils of the Church. Yet the only punishment he finds himself able to threaten is a fine of thirty maravedis on public concubinarians and of five on parish priests who connive at such offences or neglect to report them to the bishop. Ecclesiastics, indeed, are directed to put away their children, but no penalty is indicated for disobedience.³ A Council of Lerida, about 1250,

¹ Memorial histórico español, Tour. I. p. 193 (Madrid, 1850).

² Concil. Valentin. ann. 1255 (Aguirre V. 197, 201).

³ Constit. Synodal. Arnaldi de Peralta Episc. Valentin. (Aguirre V. 207-8).

imposed a fine of fifty maravedis on public concubiniarians, alleging as a reason that money is more prized than salvation.¹ The Council of Gerona in 1257 was more energetic, for it decreed the deprivation of all concubinary priests who persisted in their sin; but this apparently was not effectual, for in 1274 the threat was repeated, with the addition that the women should be excommunicated and should receive after death the burial of asses;² and very similar was the legislation of the Council of Peñafiel in 1302.³ In 1286 the Council of Urgel recites that efforts had been made to suppress concubinage, by suspending the priest and excommunicating his companion, but this had only led to fresh scandals, for the priests had continued to officiate and had thus incurred "irregularity," while the souls of their parishioners were exposed to grave perils. To remove these evils the penalties were therefore thriftily commuted to a fine of ten gold pieces for the male offender, and of five for the female—a method which doubtless led to a profitable traffic in licences to sin.⁴ In 1314 the Council of Lerida argued in the same way, and restored the old fine of fifty maravedis.⁵

However well meant these efforts were, they proved as useless as all previous ones, for in 1322 the Council of Valladolid, under the presidency of the papal legate, William, Cardinal of St. Sabina, animadverts strongly on the indecency of ecclesiastics, from the highest prelates down, officiating at the nuptials of their children, both legitimate and illegitimate. For those who publicly kept concubines it provides a graduated scale of

¹ Villanueva, *Viage Literario*, XVI. 311.

² Synod. Gerund. ann. 1257 can. 4; ann. 1274 can. 25 (*Martene Ampl. Coll.* VIII. 1461, 1469).

³ Concil. Penna-fidelens. ann. 1302 can. ii. (*Aguirre V.* 226).

⁴ Villanueva, XI. 291.

⁵ *Ibidem*, XVII. 227.

confiscation, ending in the deprivation of the persistently contumacious who gave no prospect of amendment, the exceedingly elaborate regulations prescribed showing at once the difficulty of the subject and the importance attached to it. The acts of this council, moreover, are interesting as presenting the first authentic evidence of a custom which subsequently prevailed to some extent elsewhere, by which parishioners were wont to compel their priest to take a female consort for the purpose of protecting the virtue of their families from his assaults. The iniquity of this precaution seems to have especially scandalised the legate, and he treats the audacious laymen concerned in such transactions with much less ceremony than the concubinary clergy.¹ The elaborate regulations promulgated by this council produced little effect. The Council of Salamanca in 1335 renews the previous repressive legislation, adding a threat of *ipso facto* excommunication for those who give Christian burial to priestly concubines, including all who are present on such occasions, who are not to be absolved until they shall have paid a fine of fifty maravedis to the cathedral church.²

In Aragon, the Council of Tarragona, in 1336, out of consideration for the souls of the guilty or of their parishioners, removed the penalties of suspension and excommunication and substituted a mulct of a year's revenue of beneficed priests and a fine of ten maravedis on the unbeneficed, with a similar fine on the concubines.³ This leniency seems to have been misplaced, for in 1364 the Council of Urgel threatens excommunication and deprivation of benefice unless there is reasonable cause to remit the latter penalty.⁴ In

¹ Concil. Vallis-oletan. ann. 1322 can. vi. vii. (Aguirre V. 243-5).

² Concil. Salmanticens. ann. 1335 can. iii. (Aguirre V. 266).

³ Villanueva, op. cit., XX. 170.

⁴ Ibidem, XI. 324.

Majorca the same troubles existed, and in 1364 the bishop, Antonio de Galiano, as the only method of enforcing the canons, appointed a special commissioner, Pedro de Carrera, to look up delinquents and punish them.¹

The secular power vainly interposed to check this demoralisation. In 1351 the Cortes of Castile complained that the concubines of the clergy walked shamelessly abroad, arrayed in fine garments and adorned with gold and silver, so that they could not be distinguished from married ladies, leading to frequent quarrels and fights. To remedy this King Pedro the Cruel ordered that all clerical concubines should be plainly attired and be distinguished by wearing around the head a red fillet, three fingers in breadth, under penalty for each infraction, of forfeiture of the clothes they had on and a gradually increasing fine.² Of course this was ineffective, and the Cortes of 1380 asked its re-enactment, and represented that the children of such unions inherited from their father and his kinsmen, as though they were legitimate, whence it arose that the clergy could get honest widows and maidens to live with them, causing great scandal. To this King Juan I. could only reply that all such legacies should be void.² At length, in 1388, a national Council of Castile held at Palencia under Cardinal Pedro de Luna, papal legate, made a determined effort to eradicate the ineradicable vice. It renewed the regulations of the Council of Valladolid, which it stated were not obeyed, and added to them a clause by which all benefices were held under a sort of tenure of chastity, and subject to forfeiture. Besides this, all ecclesiastics who, within two months of death, had kept concubines were declared incapable of testating, and their property was adjudged—one-third to the fabric of

¹ Villanueva, *op. cit.*, XXI. 3.

² *Córtes de Leon y de Castilla*, II. 14, 303 (Madrid, 1863).

their churches, one-third to the ordinary of the diocese, and one-third to the fund for the redemption of captives under the care of the Orders of Trinidad and Merced, who were empowered to seize their share. Moreover, all bishops were commanded to appoint official visitors, who were to report at annual synods, to be held thereafter, all cases of infraction of the rules.¹ Such stringent legislation bears emphatic testimony to the magnitude and prevalence of the evils which it was designed to cure, and of the existence of such evils there is ample evidence besides what has been adduced above. In 1335 Benedict XII. addressed to the Spanish prelates an earnest remonstrance on the universal corruption which characterised the whole population, lay and clerical alike, scandalising to the infidel the very name of Christians.² Pedro Gomez de Albornoz, Archbishop of Seville, is equally emphatic,³ and even more deplorable in its details is the description given of his fellow ecclesiastics by Alvar Pelayo, Penitentiary under John XXII. and Bishop of Silva in Portugal. He states that many of the clergy in holy orders throughout the Peninsula publicly associated themselves with women, frequently of noble blood, binding themselves against separation by notarial acts and solemn oaths, endowing their consorts with the goods of the Church, and celebrating with the kindred these illegal espousals as joyously as though they were legitimate nuptials. Yet even this flagrant defiance of the canons was better than the wickedness common between confessors and their penitents, or than the promiscuous and unrestrained licentiousness of those who were not fettered by the forms of marriage, whose children, as

¹ Concil. Palentin. ann. 1388 can. ii. (Aguirre V. 298-99).

² Raynald. Annal. ann. 1335, No. 64.

³ Menéndez y Pelayo, Heterodoxos Españoles, I. 490.

Pelayo asserts, almost rivalled in number those of the laity.¹ Evidently the Council of Palencia had an ample field for reform, but its labours proved nugatory. In 1429 the Council of Tortosa, under the presidency of the Cardinal de Foix, papal legate, renewed the lament that the decrees of Valladolid remained unobserved, and in repeating them it added a penalty of incarceration for pertinacious offenders, indicating, moreover, one of the worst abuses to which the subject gave rise, in forbidding all officials to take bribes from those who transgressed the rules.² This effort was as fruitless as all previous ones had been, and we shall see hereafter that the same state of affairs continued throughout the sixteenth century.

¹ Et utinam nunquam continentiam promisissent, maxime Hispani et regnicolæ, in quibus provinciis in paucis maiori numero sunt filii laicorum quam clericorum . . . sæpe cum parochianis mulieribus quas ad confessionem admittunt, scelestissime fornicantur . . . De bonis ecclesiæ pascunt concubinam continue et filios, et de pecunia ecclesiæ emunt eis possessiones. . . . Multi presbyteri et alii constituti in sacris, maxime in Hispania, in Asturia et Galicia et alibi, et publice et aliquoties per publicum instrumentum promittunt et jurant quibusdam, maxime nobilibus mulieribus, nunquam eas dimittere; et dant eis arras de bonis ecclesiæ et possessiones ecclesiæ, publice eas ducunt, cum consanguineis et amicis et solenni convivio, acsi essent uxores legitimæ.—Alv. Pelag. de Planctu Ecclesiæ, Lib. II. Art. xxviii. (Ed. 1517, fol. 131-3).

This forms part of a list of fifty-four charges brought by Pelayo against the clergy of his time—"peccant in his communiter."

² Concil. Dertusan. ann. 1429 can. ii. (Aguirre V. 335-6).

CHAPTER XX

GENERAL LEGISLATION

IN a former section we have seen the efforts made by Calixtus II. to enforce the received discipline of the Church, and we have noted the scanty measure of success which attended his labours. He apparently himself recognised that they were futile, and that some action of more decided character than had as yet been attempted was necessary to accomplish the result so long and so energetically sought, and so illusory to its ardent pursuers. On his return to Italy, and his triumph over his unfortunate rival, the anti-pope Maurice Burdino, he summoned, in 1123, the first general council of the West, to confirm the Concordat of Worms, which had just closed half a century of strife between the papacy and the empire. Nearly a thousand prelates obeyed his call, and that august assembly promulgated a canon which not only forbade matrimony to those bound by vows and holy orders, but commanded that if such marriages were contracted they should be broken, and the parties to them subjected to due penance.¹

This was a bold innovation. With the exception of a decretal of Urban II. in 1090, to which little attention seems to have been paid, we have seen that, previous to Calixtus, while the sacrament of marriage was held incompatible with the ministry of the altar and with the

¹ Presbyteris, diaconibus, subdiaconibus et monachis concubinas habere, seu matrimonia contrahere, penitus interdicimus: contracta quoque matrimonia ab hujusmodi personis disjungi, et personas ad pœnitentiam redigi, juxta sacrorum canonum diffinitiones judicamus.—Concil. Lateran. I. c. 21.

enjoyment of Church property, it yet was respected and its binding force was admitted, even to the point of rendering those who assumed it unfitted for their sacred functions. At most, and as a concession to a lax and irreligious generation, the option had been allowed of abandoning either the wife or the ministry. At Rheims, Calixtus had deprived them of this choice, and had ordered their separation from their wives. He now went a step further, and by the Lateran canon he declared the sacrament of marriage to be less potent than the religious vow: the engagement with the Church swallowed up and destroyed all other ties. This gave the final seal to the separation between the clergy and the laity, by declaring the priestly character to be indelible. When once admitted to orders, he became a being set apart from his fellows, consecrated to the service of God; and the impassable gulf between him and the laity bound him for ever to the exclusive interests of the Church. It is easy to perceive how important an element this irrevocable nature of sacerdotalism became in establishing and consolidating the ecclesiastical power.

The immensity of the change thus wrought in the practice, if not in the doctrine, of the Church can best be understood by comparing the formal command thus issued to the Christian world with the unqualified condemnation pronounced in earlier times against those who attempted to dissolve marriage under religious pretexts.¹ And in all ages the Church has regarded the

¹ Thus Gregory the Great, in 602: "Si enim dicunt religionis causa conjugia debere dissolvi sciendum est quia etsi hoc lex humana concessit, divina lex tamen prohibuit."—Gregor. I. Lib. XI. Epist. 45.

And St. Augustin: 'Proinde qui dicunt talium nuptias non esse nuptias sed potius adulteria non mihi videntur satis acute ac diligenter considerare quid dicant . . . et cum volunt eas separatas reddere continentie faciunt maritos earum adulteros veros, etc.'—De Bono Viduit. c. 10.

Even after the Lateran canon, Hugh of St. Victor, in treating of marriage and

chastity of the monastic orders as even more imperative than that of the secular clergy.

Revolutions never go backwards. Perhaps the Lateran fathers who adopted the canon scarcely realised its logical conclusions. If they did, they at all events shrank from expressing them openly and fully, and left the faithful to draw their own deductions as to the causes and consequences of such an order. Time, however, familiarised the minds of ardent Churchmen with the idea, and it was seen that if the practice thus enjoined was correct, doctrine must be made to suit and to justify it. To this end an additional stimulus was afforded by the failure of the canon to accomplish the results anticipated from it, for the custom of sacerdotal marriage was as yet by no means eradicated. The Council of Liège, held by Innocent II. in 1131, referred to in a preceding section, and those of Clermont and Rheims, over which he likewise presided, in 1130 and 1131, show how little had been accomplished, and how generally the clergy of Europe disregarded the restrictions nominally imposed upon them, and the punishments which they so easily escaped.¹ In the canons of these councils not only is it observable that the question of marriage and celibacy is treated as though it were a matter now for the first time brought to the attention of the clergy, but also that the innovation attempted by the Council

the causes of its dissolution, seems to have no conception that holy orders were to be enumerated among them.—H. de S. Victor. *Summæ Sententiarum*, Tract. VII. ; *De Sacramentis*, Lib. II. P. xi.

¹ *Decrevimus ut ii qui a subdiaconatu et supra uxores duxerint, aut concubinas habuerint, officio atque beneficio ecclesiastico careant.*—Concil. Claromont. ann. 1130 can. 4.

This is repeated verbatim in the Council of Rheims in 1131, canon 4.

Concerning the latter a contemporary observes: "*Placuit etiam domino apostolico et toti concilio, ne quis audiat missam presbyteri habentis concubinam vel uxorem. Assensu etiam omnium firmatum est ut clerici omnes a subdiacono et supra continentes sint, et qui non fuerint continentes, deponantur.*"—Udalr. Babenb. *Cod. Lib. II. c. 1.*

of Lateran, only seven or eight years previously, is prudently suppressed and passed over without even an allusion.

Innocent, restored to Rome and to power, was bolder than when wandering through Europe, soliciting the aid of the faithful. Surrounded by a thousand prelates at the second great Council of Lateran, in 1139, he no longer dreaded to offend the susceptibilities of the clergy, and he proceeded to justify the canon of 1123 by creating a doctrine to suit the practice there enjoined. After repeating the canons of Clermont and Rheims, he unhesitatingly pronounced that a union contracted in opposition to the rule of the Church was not a marriage.¹ He condescends to no argument, while he admits the innovation by alleging as its object the extension of the law of continence and of the purity pleasing to God.

The abounding wickedness of a perverse generation caused this decree of the loftiest Christian tribunal to fall still-born and abortive as its forerunners had done.² The Church, however, was irrevocably committed to the new doctrine and to all its consequences. When Eugenius III. was driven out of Rome by Arnold of Brescia, he presided, in 1148, over a council held at Rheims, where eleven hundred bishops and abbots from Northern and Western Europe assembled to do honour to the persecuted representative of St. Peter, and to condemn the teachings of Gilbert de la Porrée. From

¹ Ut autem lex continentię et Deo placens munditia in ecclesiasticis personis et sacris ordinibus dilatetur, statuimus quatenus episcopi, presbyteri, diaconi, subdiaconi, regulares canonici et monachi atque conversi professi, qui sanctum transgredientes propositum uxores sibi copulare pręsumperint, separentur. Hujusmodi namque copulationem, quam contra ecclesiasticam regulam constat esse contractam, matrimonium non esse censemus. Qui etiam ab invicem separati, pro tantis excessibus condignam pœnitentiam agant.—Concil. Lateran. II. ann. 1139 c. 7.

² Sed nimis abundans per universum orbem nequitia terrigenarum corda contra ecclesiastica scita obduravit.—Orderic. Vital. P. III. Lib. xiii. c. 20.

this great assembly he procured the confirmation of the new dogma by their adoption of the Lateran canon; while the repetition of that of Clermont and Rheims (of 1130 and 1131) shows that the evil which it was intended to repress still existed in full force.¹ The vague assertion of Eugenius that he was but following in the footsteps of the holy fathers, and a special reference to Innocent II. as his authority, render it probable that the members of the council demurred in committing themselves to the new principle, and that it was only by showing that the matter was already decided under the irrefragable authority of a general council that the consent of the Transalpine Churches was obtained.

St. Bernard himself, the impersonation of ascetic sacerdotalism, hesitated to subscribe to the new dogma, and when the monks of Chartres asked him to reconcile it with the teachings of Augustin and Gregory the Great he candidly confessed that his dialectical skill was unequal to the task.² So when an abbot applied to him for advice in the case of one of his monks, who had left the convent and married, St. Bernard stigmatised the act as highly improper, but hesitated to pronounce it unlawful. He recommended that an attempt be made to convince the parties that they were perilling their salvation, and if this failed he thought that perhaps they might be separated by episcopal authority.³ In fact, four years after the Council of Rheims, St. Bernard reproached Eugenius with having caused the adoption of canons which no one

¹ *Concil. Remens. ann. 1148 can. 3, 8.* "Sanctorum patrum et prædecessoris nostri Papæ Innocentii vestigia inhærentes, statuimus quatenus episcopi, presbyteri, diaconi, etc."

² Et ad hæc nihil ad præsens certius breviusque respondendum occurrit, nisi quod ita sancti antistites sapuerunt: rectene? ipsi viderint.—*Lib. de Præcept. et Dispensat. cap. XVII.*—Abelard contrasts the contradictory canons of the Church in these matters in his *Sic et Non*, cap. CXXII. It was possibly among other motives the skilful unveiling of ecclesiastical inconsistencies in this curious work that led the authorities of the Church to procure the compilation of Gratian's "Decretum."

³ *Bernardi Epist. LXXVI.*

pretended to obey. If he thought that they were enforced, he grievously erred; if he did not think so, he had sinned either by decreeing what was not to be observed or in neglecting to punish their non-observance—and no one was punished for his disobedience.¹

Even in Rome itself the point was still disputed. At that very time Gratian, the greatest canonist of the age, was engaged in the compilation of his “*Concordia discordantium Canonum*,” a work undertaken to restore to the canon law the pre-eminence which it was fast losing in consequence of the recently revived study of the Justinian jurisprudence. Gratian’s use of some of the Lateran canons shows that he was familiar with them,² yet he distinctly declares his opposition to the new doctrine by asserting that a deacon can lawfully marry if he chooses to abandon the ministry, and that the sacrament of marriage is so potent that, even if he had vowed chastity at the time of his ordination, the violation of his vow did not affect it.³ The summists, however, who shortly afterwards condensed his work for practical use, discreetly forbore to allude to this, but

¹ *Ejusd. de Considerat. Lib. III. cap. v.*

² The exact date of the appearance of the *Decretum* is not known, and has been the subject of considerable debate. It contains nothing posterior to 1139, and even the later utterances of Innocent II. are not given. Gratian is said to have devoted eleven years to its preparation, and the prevailing opinion among scholars refers its publication to 1141. It has never received formal papal confirmation, and is therefore not in itself authoritative; but Gratian’s comments are regarded as positive evidence of the opinions of his time.—Schulte, *Die Lehre von den Quellen des Katholischen Kirchenrechts*, I. 319, 330, 332 (Giessen, 1860).

³ *Si vero diaconus a ministerio cessare voluerit, et contracto matrimonio licite potest uti. Nam etsi in ordinatione sua castitatis votum obtulerit, tamen tanta est vis in sacramento conjugii, quod nec ex violatione voti potest dissolvi ipsum conjugium.*—*Post Cap. i. Dist. xxvii.*

The introduction of the doctrine of Innocent and Eugenius into the Church has given rise to some controversy. In the Encyclical of 22nd August 1851, and in the Syllabus of December 1864, Pius IX. has condemned the error of attributing it to Boniface VIII. Some zealously orthodox writers have endeavoured to prove that the Church consistently maintained this doctrine from the beginning, but the contrary is admitted by the greater number of Catholic authorities. Cf. Zaccaria, *Storia Polemica*, pp. 346–7, and Bernal Diaz, *Practica Criminalis Canonica*, cap. 74.

asserted that a solemn and public vow impeded the contract of marriage and dissolved it if contracted. As the precept to vow chastity at ordination had become obsolete, they further discovered that he who accepted what inferred a vow was held to have vowed. Thus the postulant for orders, though he emitted no vow in words, yet accepted that which inferred perpetual chastity, and therefore was bound by a solemn vow which was destructive of marriage.¹ This, it is true, was reasoning in a circle, but it satisfied the schoolmen, though Gratian had known nothing of such subtilities.²

While the new law was thus accepted by the schoolmen it was long in winning its way to general acceptance, nor can it be a subject of wonder if those who disregarded the acknowledged canons of the Church by marrying in orders, or by permitting such marriages in those under their charge, should neglect a rule of recent origin and of more than doubtful propriety. The Church, however, was committed to it, and, moreover, could see in its eventual recognition a more effectual means of accomplishing the long-desired object than in any expedient previously tried. By destroying all such marriages, pronouncing them null and void, inflicting an ineffaceable stigma on wife and offspring, subjecting the woman to the certainty of being cast off without resource and without option on the part of the husband, the position of the wife of an ecclesiastic would become most unenviable; her kindred would prevent her from exposing

¹ Master Roland (subsequently Alexander III.), whose *Summa* was composed prior to 1159, adopts this line of argument (*Summa Rolandi*, Caus. XXVII. Q. 1.—Innsbruck, 1874, pp. 117–18), and is followed by Stephen of Tournay (*Summa Stephani Tarnacensis*, Caus. XXVIII. Q. 1.—Giessen, 1891, p. 233). Bernard of Pavia is bolder: he simply says that holy orders prevent marriage and dissolve it if contracted, basing this upon the Lateran canon of Calixtus II. (*Bernardi Papiensis, Summa Decretalium*, Lib. IV. Tit. I. § 8; Tit. VI. § 1; *Ejusd. Summa de Matrimonio*, § iii.—Ratisbona, 1860, pp. 132, 149, 288).

² Post Cap. xliii. Caus. XXVII. Q. 1.

herself to such calamities, and no priest could succeed in finding a consort above the lowest class, whose union with him would expose him to the contempt of his flock.

How slender was the immediate result of the efforts of Innocent and Eugenius, however, is manifested in the foregoing sections. If further evidence is desired it is furnished, as regards Germany, by Geroch, Provost of Reichersperg, who, writing about the middle of the century, complains that any one who would shun intercourse with Nicolitan and simoniacal heretics must quit the world, for it was full of them, and he maintains the propriety of calling them heretics because they openly defended and justified their evil courses.¹ Indeed, so shamelessly were their transgressions displayed, that the faithful were sometimes scandalised by the sight of the priests' wives assisting their husbands in the ministry of the altar;² while conventual discipline had sunk so low that nuns were in the habit of deferring their formal vows until the lassitude of old age should render the restraints thereby assumed easy to be endured,³ and canons led a life which was only distinguishable from that of the laity by its shamelessness.⁴ In France, Hugh, Archbishop of Rouen, complains that those who married in orders openly defended their evil practices and quoted Scripture to sustain themselves.⁵ In England, as late

¹ Gerhohi Tract. adv. Simoniac. c. 2.—About the year 1140 we find St. Bernard (Epist. 203) writing to the bishop and clergy of Trèves, urging them to labour for the reformation of a married subdeacon of their church, in terms which show that no severe application of the canons was to be expected.

² Gerhohi Exposit. in Psalm LXIV. cap. xlix.

³ Gerhohi Exposit. in Psalm LXIV. c. xxxv. An allusion in this passage to Eugenius III. and the Council of Rheims shows that it was written between 1148 and 1153. It seems that the nuns rebelled against the canon (Concil. Remens. ann. 1148 can. iv.) confining them to their convents under threat of deprivation of Christian sepulture.

⁴ Ibid. cap. xlvi.

⁵ Hugon. Rothomag. contra Hæret. Lib. III. cap. v.—Hugh gives us in a new form the old calculation as to the comparative merits of virginity, continence, and marriage—"Non centesimo honore cum virginibus gloriatur, non sexagesima continentiae palma lætatur, sed tricesimo conjugii labore fatigatur."

as 1470, Sir John Fortescue incidentally alludes to a recent case in which a priest named John Fringe, who had lived in orders for three years, procured two false witnesses to swear that he had previously been betrothed to a certain maiden, and this preliminary promise of marriage was held by court to supersede his priestly ordination; he was ejected from the priesthood and compelled to marry the girl, with whom he lived fourteen years, until he was executed for treason by the Lancastrians during the wars of the Roses.¹ In Spain, as we have already seen, priestly marriage was forbidden by the secular law as late as the latter half of the thirteenth century, and priests in consequence were wont to protect their partners by entering into the most solemn compacts, the customary employment of which shows that they must have been habitually enforced by the municipal tribunals regardless of the censures of the Church.

The long pontificate of Alexander III., extending from 1159 to 1181, was absorbed for the most part by his deadly strife with Frederic Barbarossa. Yet, even before he was released from that ever-present danger, he found leisure to urge the cause of sacerdotal celibacy; and after the humiliation of his mortal enemy he devoted himself to it with a zeal which earned for him among his contemporaries the credit of establishing its observance.² He who, as the legate Roland, had nearly paid, under the avenging sword of Otho of Wittelsbach, the forfeit of his life for his rude boldness at the imperial court, was little likely to abate one jot of the claims which the Church asserted on the obedience of layman

¹ Fortescue de Laud. Leg. Angl. cap. xxi.—Fortescue speaks of the case as having occurred within his own knowledge.

² Et constituit ut nullus in sacris ordinibus habeat uxorem vel concubinam.—Chron. S. Ægid. in Brunswig.

and clerk; and he recognised too fully the potency of the canons of Lateran and Rheims not to insist upon their observance. The very necessity under which he found himself, however, of repeating those canons shows how utterly neglected they had been, and how successfully the clergy had thus far resisted their reception and acknowledgment. Thus when, in 1163, he held the Council of Tours, he was obliged to content himself with a canon which allowed three warnings to those who publicly kept concubines, and it was only after neglect of these warnings that they were threatened with deprivation of functions and benefice;¹ and when, in 1172, his legates presided over the Council of Avranches, which absolved Henry II. for the murder of A'Becket, the Norman clergy were emphatically reminded that those who married in holy orders must put away their wives, and this in terms which indicate that the rule had not been previously obeyed.² Yet notwithstanding this formal declaration, only a few years later we find the Archbishop of Rheims applying to him for counsel in the case of a deacon who had committed matrimony, to which Alexander of course replied that the marriage was no marriage, and that the offending ecclesiastic must be separated from the woman, and undergo due penance.³ The persistence of the pope, and the necessity

¹ Concil. Turon. ann. 1163 can. 4 (MS. St. Michael. ap. Harduin. Tom. VI. P. ii. p. 1600).

² Qui autem a subdiaconatu vel supra ad matrimonia convolaverint, mulieres etiam invitas et renitentes relinquunt.—Concil. Abrincens. ann. 1172 c. 1. I give this on the authority of the Abate Zaccaria (Nuova Giustificazione del Celibato Sacro, p. 120); there is no such canon among those attributed to the council by Hardouin (T. VI. P. II. p. 1634), and by Bessin (Concil. Rotomagensia, p. 86), whose accounts of the proceedings are extracted from Roger of Hoveden and tally with that given in the Gesta Henrici II. attributed to Benedict of Peterboro (I. 33. M. R. Series). As a number of canons proposed by the papal legates, Cardinals Theodwin and Albert, were rejected by the Norman bishops, it is possible that the local reports and those current at Rome may have differed.

³ Post Concil. Lateran. P. XVIII. c. 12.

of his urgency, are farther shown by sundry epistles to various English bishops, in which the rule is enunciated as absolute and unvarying;¹ and he takes occasion to stigmatise such marriages with the most degrading epithet, when he graciously pardons those concerned, and permits their restitution after a long course of penitence, on their giving evidence of a reformed life.²

Yet even Alexander was forced to abate somewhat of his stern determination, in consideration of the incorrigible perversity of the time, though he seems not to have remarked that he abandoned the principle by admitting exceptions, and that the reasons assigned in such individual cases might, with equal cogency, be applied to the total withdrawal of the rule. When the Calabrian bishops informed him that clerks in holy orders throughout their dioceses committed matrimony, he ordered that priests and deacons should be irrevocably separated from their wives; but, in the case of subdeacons of doubtful morals, he instructed the prelates that they should tacitly connive at the irregularity, lest, in place of one woman, many should be abused, and a greater evil be incurred, in the endeavour to avoid a less.³ This worldly wisdom also dictated his orders to the Bishop of Exeter, in whose diocese subdeacons were in the habit of openly marrying. He directs an examination into the lives and characters of the offenders; those whose regular habits and staid morality afford fair expectation of their chastity in celibacy are to be forcibly separated from their wives; while those whose disorderly character renders probable their general licentiousness if

¹ Post Concil. Lateran. P. XVIII. c. 2, 6.

² Sane sacerdotes illi, qui nuptias contrahunt, quæ non nuptiæ sed contubernia sunt potius nuncupanda, post longam poenitentiam at vitam laudabilem continentem, officio suo restitui poterunt, et ex indulgentia sui episcopi ejus executionem habere.
—Can. 4 Extra Tit. iii. Lib. III.

³ Post Concil. Lateran. P. XVIII. c. 4.

condemned to a single life are not to be disturbed—taking care, however, that they do not minister at the altar, or receive ecclesiastical benefices.¹

Alexander adopted the principle that a simple vow of chastity did not prevent marriage or render it null, but that a formal vow, or the reception of orders, created a dissolution of marriage, or a total inability to enter into it;² but Celestin III. carried the principle still farther, and decreed that a simple vow, while it did not dissolve an existing connection, was sufficient to prevent a future one.³

Alexander did not confine himself to this portion of the question, but with ceaseless activity laboured to enforce the observance of celibacy in general, and to repress the immorality which disgraced the Church throughout Christendom—immorality which led Alain de l'Isle, the "Universal Doctor," to characterise the ecclesiastics of his time as being old men in their in-

¹ Post Concil. Lateran. P. XVIII. c. 13.—In a decretal addressed to the Dean and Chapter of Lincoln, Alexander grants permission of marriage to a certain subdeacon, and forbids interference with such legitimate marriage, giving as a reason that the subdiaconate of the person referred to carried with it no preferment.—Ibid. c. 14.

² Post Concil. Lateran. P. VI. c. 9.

³ *Votum simplex impedit sponsalia de futuro, non autem dirimit matrimonium sequens; secus in voto solenni.*—Can. 6 Extra Lib. IV. Tit. VI.

Stephen of Tournay had already formulated the same rule—"Votum ergo castitatis solenne vel adnexum et impediunt matrimonium contrahendum et dirimunt contractum. . . . Privatum vero votum impedit quidem matrimonium contrahendum, sed non dirimit contractum."—*Ubi sup.*

The practical rule deduced by a shrewd lawyer in the latter half of the thirteenth century from this varying legislation is, "Note deus relles; que simple vou et sollempnié lie maeme quant à Dieu; et simple vou empêche à marier, mès il ne tost pas ce qui est fet; et note que vou, de la nature de soi, ne dépièce pas mariage, mès c'est de constitution d'ygglise"—(Livres de Justice et de Plet, Liv. X. chap. VI. § 6). This is likewise the conclusion reached by Thomas Aquinas, Summ. Theol. Supp. Quæst. LIII. Art. I. II.

In the seventeenth century we find this legally explained by the application of the rule *beati possidentes*. "Per simplex vero votum promittit solummodo suum corpus ad continentiam Deo servandam, non autem tradit actualiter: et ideo si postea per matrimonium tradat actualem potestatem sui corporis uxori, valide tradit cum potior sit conditio possidentis." But in a solemn vow "actualiter a se transfert dominium sui corporis et tradit Deo et ideo non potest alteri illud tradere."—Marc. Paul. Leonis Praxis ad Litt. Maioris Pœnitentiarii, p. 50 (Mediolani, 1665).

efficiency and young men in their unbridled passions.¹ Alexander's efforts were particularly directed to put an end to the practice of hereditary priesthood, and its constant consequence, hereditary benefices. If I have made little allusion to this subject during the century under consideration, it is not that the Church had relaxed her exertions to place some limit on this apparently incurable disorder, or that the passive resistance to her efforts had been less successful than we have seen it on previous occasions. The perpetual injunctions of Alexander show at once the universality of the vice, and the determination of the pontiff to eradicate it. At the same time it became a frequent, and no doubt a profitable portion of the duties of the papal chancery, to grant special dispensations when those who held such preferment, or who desired to retain their wives, underwent the dangers and expense of a journey to Rome, and were rewarded for their confidence in the benignity of the Holy Father by a rescript to their bishops, commanding their reinstatement in the benefices from which they had been ejected.² The power to grant such dispensations was shrewdly reserved as the exclusive privilege of the papal court;³ and a high Churchman of the period assures us that there was no difficulty in obtaining them.⁴ It need not, therefore, surprise us that Alexander's successor, Lucius III., found the hereditary transmission of the priestly office claimed as an absolute right.⁵ And not

¹ Alani ab Insulis Lib. Pœnitentialis.

² Post Concil. Lateran. P. XIX. c. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 9, 10.—Can. 10, 11, 12, 14, Extra Lib. I. Tit. xvii.

³ Can. 17, 18, Extra Lib. I. Tit. xvii.

⁴ Quia de talibus absque difficultate curia Romana dispensat, quia et de subdiaconibus quibusdam audivimus a domino Papa dispensatum.—Girald. Cambrens. Gemm. Eccles. Dist. II. cap. v.

⁵ Consuetudinem introductam quod filii eorum qui vestras ecclesias tenuerunt . . . patribus . . . consecuti, sub reprehensibili collusionione volunt ipsas ecclesias jure successionis habere, etc.—Lucii. PP. III. Epist. 88.—Cf. Concil. Rotomag. ann. 1189 can. vi.

only did the claims of the papal chancery thus interfere with the execution of the law by its power of granting dispensations, but its appellate jurisdiction was constantly used to avert punishment from the worst offenders. Thus Lucius III., about the year 1181, was obliged to grant to Maurice de Sully, Bishop of Paris, the right to dispossess of their benefices and functions, without appeal, certain notorious concubinarians, who, on being threatened with the application of the law, had defied him by interposing an appeal to Rome.¹ This centralisation of all power in the papal court, and the unblushing venality of the Roman officials, meet us in every age as the efficient obstacle to the efforts of reforming prelates throughout Europe.

The uncertainty of this conflicting legislation, at times enforced and at times dispensed with by the supreme power, led to innumerable complications and endless perplexity in private life. Indeed, a large portion of the canons are founded on responses given by the popes to settle cases of peculiar difficulty arising from ignorance or neglect of the discipline enjoined, and many of these reveal extreme hardship inflicted on those who could be convicted of no intentional guilt. Perhaps the most noteworthy instance of the troubles caused by the new regulations was that of Bossaert d'Avesnes, which resulted in a desperate war to determine the possession of the rich provinces of Flanders and Hainault. As it illustrates the doubts which still environed these particular points, and the conflicting decisions to which they were liable, even from the infallibility of successive popes, it may be worth briefly sketching here.

When Baldwin of Flanders, Emperor of Constantinople, died in 1206, his eldest daughter Jane succeeded to his territories of Flanders and Hainault, while his

¹ Chartular. Eccles. Parisiens. No. xx. T. I. p. 35.

second child, Margaret, was placed under the guardianship of Bossaert d'Avesnes. Bossaert was a relative of her mother, Mary of Champagne, and though he held the comparatively insignificant position of chantre of Tournay, he was yet a man of great repute and influence. With the assent and approbation of the estates of Flanders, Margaret and Bossaert were married, the issue of the union being three sons. Whether the fact of his having received the subdiaconate was publicly known or not is somewhat doubtful; but he seems at length to have been awakened to a sense of his uncertain position, when he went to Rome for the purpose of obtaining a dispensation and legitimating his children. Innocent III. not only refused the application, but commanded him to restore Margaret to her relatives and to do penance by a pilgrimage to the Holy Land. Disregarding these injunctions, he lived openly with his wife after his return, and was excommunicated in consequence. At length Margaret left him and married Guillaume de Dampierre, while Bossaert was assassinated during a second visit to Rome, where he was seeking reconciliation to the Church. When at last, in 1244, the Countess Jane closed her long and weary career by assuming the veil at Marquette, without leaving heirs, the children of Margaret by both marriages claimed the succession, and Margaret favoured the younger, asserting, without scruple, that her elder sons were illegitimate, while the Emperor Frederick II. had no scruple in recognising the claim of the elder branch. The difficult question was referred to St. Louis for arbitration, and in 1247 the good king assigned Flanders to Gui de Dampierre and Hainault to Jean d'Avesnes, thus recognising both marriages as legitimate. This, of course, satisfied neither party. Innocent IV. was appealed to, and in 1248 he sent commissioners to investigate the

knotty affair. They reported that the marriage of Bossaert had been contracted in the face of all Flanders, and that the d'Avesnes were legitimate, which judgment was confirmed by Innocent himself in 1252. Thus fortified, Jean d'Avesnes resisted the proposed partition, and a bloody civil war arose. The victory of Vacheren placed the Dampierre in the hands of their half-brothers, and promised to be decisive, until Margaret called in Charles de Valois, bribing him with the offer of Hainault to complete the disinheriting of her first-born. The war continued until Louis, returning from the East in 1255, compelled the combatants to lay down their arms, and to abide by his arbitration.¹

In this case we see Innocent III. deciding that marriage was incompatible with the subdiaconate. Yet it is a striking illustration of the uncertainty which still surrounded the matter to find the same pope, in 1208, commanding a subdeacon of Laon to return to the wife whom he had abandoned on taking orders, and to treat her in all respects as a wife. Innocent is not to be suspected of any temporising concession to prevailing laxity, and yet in this case he overruled the uninterrupted tradition of the canons that married men taking orders should thenceforth treat their wives as sisters; and the doubts which experienced ecclesiastics entertained with regard to the law are visible in the fact that when the wife complained of her abandonment to the metropolitan authorities at Rheims they did not pretend to give judgment, but sent the testimony in the case at once to Innocent for his decision.²

Another curious case occurring about the same time illustrates the complexity of the questions which arose

¹ D'Oudegherst, *Annales de Flandre*, chap. CIII.—Baluz. et Mansi T. I.—Miræi *Diplom. Lib. I. c. 88.*—*Grandes Chroniques*, T. IV. pp. 339-42.—Innocent, PP. III. *Regest. Append. ad Lib. XIV.*

² Innocent, PP. III. *Regest. XI. 204.*

and the manner in which the selfishness of ascetic zeal sometimes eluded even the very slender barriers with which the Church limited its gratification. As we have seen, it was an ancient rule that no man could assume monastic vows without the assent of his wife, with the additional condition that she must at the same time enter a nunnery. It appears that a husband desiring to become a monk, and finding his wife obstinately opposed to his designs, enlisted the services of various priests to influence her, carefully concealing from her the obligation which her assent would impose upon her to take the veil. Still she obstinately refused, until at last he threatened to castrate himself, when she yielded and went through the ceremony of placing with her own hands his head on the altar. The wife thus abandoned took to evil courses, and the husband-monk applied in person to Innocent III. to learn whether he ought to remain in his order, seeing that his continence might be responsible for her unchastity. In spite of the deceit practised upon the wife, Innocent resolved his doubts in favour of the maintenance of his vows, giving as a reason that her adulteries deprived her of claim on him. At the same time, nothing was said as to compelling the woman to take the veil.¹ In 1244, we find Innocent IV. responding to the appeal of some wives, who had thus been abandoned, by granting to the Bishop of Lincoln to proceed against the husbands, who had embraced monastic life.² A more conspicuous illustration of the rule occurred when the Emperor Ludwig of Bavaria, in 1328, undertook to depose John XXII. as a heretic and replace him with a pope of his own. His choice fell upon Piero di Corbario, a Franciscan distinguished for piety and eloquence, who took the name of Nicholas V.

¹ Innocent. PP. III. Regest. XII. 13.

² Bliss, Calendar of Papal Registers, I. 209.

He had been in the Order for forty years, and had risen to the position of Minister of the province of the Abruzzi and papal Penitentiary. Before taking the vows, however, he had been married for five years; the wife was still living, and, though she had borne the separation uncomplainingly for so long a period, she now asserted that she had never assented to his desertion, either hoping to be bought off or instigated by the papalist party. She applied to her bishop, Giovanni of Rieti, who decided that the marriage had never been annulled, and that Piero must return to her.¹ He had a harder fate when he was carried to his triumphant rival in Avignon and confined until his death.

In view of these perplexities, it is no wonder that even the resolute spirit of Alexander III., dismayed at the arduous nature of the struggle, or appalled at the ineradicable vices which defied even papal authority, at times shrank from the contest and was ready to abandon the principle. If we may believe Giraldus Cambrensis, who, as a contemporary intimately connected with the highest ecclesiastical authorities in England, was not likely to be mistaken, and whose long sojourn at the court of Innocent III. would have afforded him ample opportunities of correcting a mis-statement, Alexander had once resolved to introduce the discipline of the Greek Church in Western Europe, permitting single marriages with virgins. To this he had obtained the assent of his whole court, except his chancellor Albert, who was afterwards pope under the name of Gregory VIII. The resistance of this dignitary was so powerful as to cause the abandonment of the project.² Alexander,

¹ Wadding, *Annales Minorum*, ann. 1328, n. 3, 8.

² Girald. Cambrensis. *Gemma Eccles. Dist. II. cap. vi.*

The "Gemma" was the favourite work of its author, who relates with pride the approbation specially bestowed upon it by Innocent III.

indeed, was not alone in this conviction. Giraldus himself was fully convinced that such a change would be most useful to the Church, though as archdeacon of St. David's he had displayed his zeal for the enforcement of the canon by measures too energetic for the degeneracy of the age, and though he occupies, in his "*Gemma Ecclesiastica*," twenty-one chapters with an exhortation to his clergy to abandon their evil courses.¹ Men of high character did not hesitate to take even stronger ground against the rule. The celebrated Peter Comestor, whose orthodoxy is unquestioned, taught publicly in his lectures that the devil had never inflicted so severe a blow on the Church as in procuring the adoption of celibacy.²

These were but individual opinions. The policy of the Church remained unaltered, and Alexander's successors emulated his example in endeavouring to enforce the canons. Clement III. took advantage of the profound impression which the capture of Jerusalem by Saladin (Oct. 1187) produced on all Europe, when the fall of the Latin kingdom was attributed to the sins of Christendom. He preached a general reformation. Abstinence from meat on Wednesdays and Saturdays for five years, and various other kinds of mortification, were enjoined on all, to propitiate a justly offended Deity, but the clergy were the objects of special reproof. Their extreme laxity of morals, their neglect of the dress of their order, their worldly ambition and

¹ Yet so hopeless was this well-intentioned attempt, that Giraldus is willing to let off his recalcitrant clergy with the simple restriction demanded of the laity—abstinence for three days previous to partaking of the communion. "*Qui igitur in immunditiæ veluti suo volutabro volvitur adhuc et versatur, hanc saltem altari sacro et sacrificiis reverentiam sacerdos exhibeat, ut vel tribus diebus et noctibus priusquam corpus Christi consecrare præsumat mundum . . . vas custodiat.*"—*Ibid.* cap. vi.

² Hoc autem magistrum Petrum Manducatorem in audientia totius scholæ suæ quæ tot et tantis viris literatissimis referta fuit dicentem audivi, quia nunquam hostis ille antiquus in aliquo articulo, adeo ecclesiam Dei circumvenit, sicut in voti illius emissionem.—*Ibid.* cap. vi.

pursuits, drinking, gambling, and flocking to tournaments, and the unclerical deportment which left little difference between them and the laity, were some of the accusations brought against them. To their incontinence, however, was chiefly attributed the wrath of God, besides the measureless scandals to which their conduct exposed the Church, and they were commanded to remove all suspected females from their houses within forty days, under pain of suspension from their functions and revenues.¹ That these rebukes were not the mere angry declamation of an ascetic is shown by the declaration of Cœlestin III., a few years later, that throughout Germany the custom still prevailed of fathers substituting in their benefices their sons, born during priesthood, so that frequently parent and offspring ministered together in the same church;² and the extent of the demoralisation is evident when we find the sons of priests and deacons alluded to as a class ineligible to knighthood in a constitution of Frederic Barbarossa in 1187.³ The regular clergy offered no exception to the general relaxation of discipline. In 1192 Odo, Bishop of Toul, felt himself forced to deplore the wickedness of monks who left their monasteries and publicly took to themselves wives, but he could devise no better means of arresting the scandal than excommunicating them and their growing families.⁴

Yet, with all his ardour, Clement admitted that celibacy was only a local rule of discipline, and that there was nothing really incompatible between marriage and the holy functions of the altar. The time had not

¹ Epist. Henr. Card. Albanens. (Ludewig, Rel. Msector. II. 441).

² Baluz. et Mansi III. 388.

³ De filiis quoque sacerdotum, diaconorum, rusticorum, statuimus, ne cingulum militare aliquatenus assumant; et qui jam assumpserunt, per judicem provincie a militia pellantur.—Feudor. Lib. v. Tit. x.—Conf. Conr. Urspergens. ann. 1187.

⁴ Statut. Synod. Odon. Tullens. cap. vi. (Hartzheim III. 456).

yet come when the Council of Trent could erect the inviolable continence of the priesthood into an article of faith, and Clement was willing to allow that priests of the Greek Church, under his jurisdiction, could legitimately be married and could celebrate mass while their families were increasing around them.¹

Innocent III., who, by the fortunate conjunction of the time in which he flourished with his own matchless force of character, enjoyed perhaps the culmination of papal power and prerogative, at length brought to the struggle an influence and a determination which could scarcely fail to prove decisive on any question capable of a favourable solution. By his decretals and his legates he laboured assiduously to enforce obedience to the canons, and when, in 1215, he summoned the whole Christian world to meet in the fourth Council of Lateran, that august assembly of about thirteen hundred prelates, acting under his impulsion, and reflecting his triumph over John of England and Otho of Germany, spoke with an authority which no former body since that of Nicæa had possessed. Its canons on the subject before us were simple, perhaps less violent in their tone than those of former synods, but they breathed the air of conscious strength, and there was no man that dared openly to gainsay them. A more rigid observance of the rules was enjoined, and any one officiating while suspended for contravention was punishable with perpetual degradation and deprivation of his emoluments. Yet the rule was admitted to be merely a local ordinance peculiar to the Latin Church, for, in the effort made by the council to heal the schism with Constantinople, the right of the East to permit the marriage of its priests was acknowledged by a clause visiting with severer penalties those

¹ Can. 7 extra Lib. v. Tit. xxxviii.

who by custom were allowed to marry, and who, notwithstanding this license, still permitted themselves illicit indulgences. The disgraceful traffic by which in some places prelates regularly sold permissions to sin was denounced in the strongest terms, as a vice equal in degree to that which it encouraged; and the common custom of fathers obtaining preferment in their own churches for their illegitimate offspring was reprobated as it deserved.¹

There is nothing novel in these canons, nor can they in strictness be said to constitute an epoch in the history of sacerdotal celibacy. They enunciate no new principles, they threaten no new punishments, yet are they noteworthy as marking the settled policy of the Church at a period when it had acquired that plenitude of power and vigour of organisation which insured at least an outward show of obedience to its commands. The successive labours of so long a series of pontiffs, during more than a century and a half, carrying with them the cumulative authority of Rome, had gradually broken down resistance, and the Lateran canons were the definitive expression of its discipline on this subject. Accordingly, though we shall see how little was accomplished in securing the purity of the priesthood, which was the

¹ Ne vero facilitas veniæ incentivum tribuat delinquendi: statuimus, ut qui deprehensi fuerint incontinentiæ vitio laborare, prout magis aut minus peccaverint, puniantur secundum canonicas sanctiones, quas efficacius et districtius præcipimus observari, ut quos divinus timor a malo non revocat, temporalis saltem pœna a peccato cohibeat.

Si quis igitur hac de causa suspensus, divina celebrare præsumperit, non solum ecclesiasticis beneficiis spoliatur, verum etiam pro hac duplici culpa, perpetuo deponatur.

Prelati vero qui tales præsumperint in suis iniquitatibus sustinere, maxime obtentu pecuniæ vel alterius commodi temporalis, pari subiaceant ultioni.

Qui autem secundum regionis suæ morem non abdicarunt copulam conjugalem, si lapsi fuerint, gravior puniantur, cum legitimo matrimonio possint uti.—Concil. Lateranens. IV. can. 14.

Ad abolendam pessimam, quæ in plerisque inolevit ecclesiis, corruptelam, firmiter prohibemus, ne canonicorum filii, maxime spurii, canonici fiant in sæcularibus ecclesiis, in quibus instituti sunt patres, etc.—Ibid. can. 31.

ostensible object of the rule, yet hereafter there are to be found few traces of marriage in holy orders, except in the distant countries to which reference has already been made.

Yet the readiness to relax the rule when a substantial advantage was to be gained still continued, and when the effort, commenced at the Council of Lyons in 1274, to reunite the Greek Church under the supremacy of the Holy See was apparently successful, Nicholas III. stoutly insisted upon the addition of "*filioque*" to the Symbol, but was discreetly silent as to separating the wives of priests from their husbands, promising in general terms that in all that merely concerned ritual observances the way should be made easy for them.¹

In Southern Italy, when the churches were actually brought together under the domination of Rome, priests of Greek origin were allowed to retain their wives, but married clerks of Latin parentage were not permitted to enter holy orders without separation. It not infrequently happened that the latter endeavoured to elude the prohibition by getting themselves ordained in the Greek Church, and it became necessary to denounce severe penalties not only against them, but against the prelates who permitted it.²

¹ See his instructions to his legates, cap. xi. (Martene Ampl. Collect. VII. 267-74).

² Concil. Melfitan. ann. 1284 c. iii. (Ibid. p. 284).

CHAPTER XXI

RESULTS

THE unrelaxing efforts of two centuries had at length achieved an inevitable triumph. One by one the different churches of Latin Christendom yielded to the fiat of the successor of St. Peter, and their ecclesiastics were forced to forgo the privilege of assuming the most sacred of earthly ties with the sanction of heaven and the approbation of man. Sacerdotalism vindicated its claim to exclusive obedience; the Church successfully asserted its right to command the entire life of its members, and to sunder all the bonds that might allure them to render a divided allegiance. In theory, at least, all who professed a religious life or assumed the sacred ministry were given up wholly to the awful service which they had undertaken: no selfishly personal aspirations could divert their energies from the aggrandisement of their class, nor were the temporal possessions of the establishment to be exposed to the minute but all-pervading dilapidation of the wife and family.

If these were the objects of the movement inaugurated by Damiani and Hildebrand, and followed up with such unrelenting vigour by Calixtus and Alexander and Innocent, the history of the mediæval Church attests how fully they were attained. It is somewhat instructive, indeed, to observe that in the rise of the papal power to its culmination under Innocent III. it was precisely the pontiff's most conspicuous for their enforcement of the rule of celibacy who were likewise most prominent in their assertion of the supremacy, temporal and spiritual,

of the head of the Roman Church. Whether or not they recognised and acknowledged the connection, they laboured as though the end in view was clearly appreciated, and their triumphs on the one field were sure to be followed by corresponding successes on the other.

Yet in all this the ostensible object was always represented to be the purity of the Church and its ministers. The other advantages were either systematically ignored or but casually alluded to. One warning voice, indeed, was raised, in a quarter where it would have at least commanded respectful attention, had not the Church appeared to imagine itself superior to the ordinary laws of cause and effect. While Innocent II. was labouring to enforce his new doctrine that ordination and religious vows were destructive of marriage, St. Bernard, the ascetic reformer of monachism and the foremost ecclesiastic of his day, was thundering against the revival of Manichæism. The heresies of the Albigenses respecting marriage were to be combated, and, in performing this duty, he pointed out with startling vigour the evils to the Church and to mankind of the attempt to enforce a purity incompatible with human nature. Deprive the Church of honourable marriage, he exclaimed, and you fill her with concubinage, incest, and all manner of nameless vice and uncleanness.¹ It was still an age of faith; and while earnest men like St. Bernard could readily anticipate the evils attendant upon the asceticism of heretics, they could yet persuade themselves, as the Council of Trent subsequently expressed it, that God would not deny the gift of chastity to those who rightly sought it in the bosom of the true Church—though St. Bernard himself confessed that crimes which he dared

¹ *Tolle de ecclesia honorabile connubium et torum immaculatum; nonne replet eam concubinariis, incestuosis, seminifluis, mollibus, masculorum concubitoribus et omni denique genere immundorum?*—Bernardi Serm. lxvi. in Cantic. § 3.—This series is understood to have been written in 1135.

not even to name commonly followed after the fornication, adultery, and incest which specially characterised innumerable ministers of Christ.¹ It remains for us to see what was the success of the attempt thus deliberately to tempt the Lord.

It is somewhat significant that when, in France, the rule of celibacy was completely restored, strict Churchmen should have found it necessary also to revive the hideously suggestive restriction which denied to the priest the society of his mother or of his sister. Even in the profoundest barbarism of the tenth century, or the unbridled license of the eleventh; even when Damiani descanted upon the disorders of his contemporaries with all the cynicism of the most exalted asceticism, horrors such as these are not alluded to. It is reserved for the advancement of the thirteenth century and the enforcement of celibacy to show us how outraged human nature may revenge itself and protest against the shackles imposed by zealous sacerdotalism or unreasoning bigotry. In 1208 Cardinal Guala, Innocent's legate in France, issued an order in which he not only repeated the threadbare prohibitions respecting *focariæ* and concubines, but commanded that even mothers and other relatives should not be allowed to reside with men in holy orders, the devil being the convenient personage on whom, as usual, was thrown the responsibility of the scandals which were known to occur frequently under such circumstances.² That this decree was not allowed to pass into speedy oblivion is shown by a reference to it as still well known and in force a century later in the statutes of the Church of Tréguier.³ And that the necessity for it was not

¹ Bernardi Serm. de Conversione cap. xx.

² Constit. Gallonis cap. (Harduin, I. T. VI. P. II. p. 1975).—Giraldus Cambrensis, a few years earlier, makes the same assertion (Gemma. Eccles. Dist. II. cap. xv.).

³ Statut. Eccles. Trecorens. c. 32 (Martene Thesaur. IV. 1102). Cf. Synod. Andegavens. ann. 1312 cap. 1 (D'Achery I. 742).

evanescent may be assumed from its repetition in the regulations of the see of Nismes, the date of which is uncertain, but probably attributable to the close of the fourteenth century.¹ At the same time, we have evidence that Cardinal Guala's efforts were productive of little effect. Four years later, in 1212, we find Innocent formally authorising the prelates of France mercifully to pardon those who had been excommunicated under Guala's rules, with the suggestive proviso that the power thus conferred was not to be used for the purpose of extorting unhallowed gains.² Still more significant is the fact that in the same year Innocent commissioned another legate, Cardinal Robert de Curzon, to renew the endless task of purifying the Gallican Church. Guala's efforts would seem to have already passed into oblivion, for in a council which Cardinal Robert held in Paris, he gravely promulgated a canon forbidding the priesthood from keeping their concubines so openly as to give rise to scandal, and threatening the recalcitrants with excommunication if they should persist in retaining their improper consorts for forty days after receiving notice.³ This was as fruitless as all previous legislation had been. No matter what decrees were issued, they were neutralised by the facility of obtaining from the Holy See letters of absolution, whenever any too zealous prelate sought to enforce them. A Formulary of the papal Penitentiary, of about the middle of the century, shows, by the number of formulæ for such cases, how frequent were the applications, and their invariable success is indicated by the fact that no formulæ are given for refusing the favour. Even more significant is the endeavour of the peccant clerics to show that the woman was not a permanent

¹ Statut. Eccles. Nemausens. Tit. VII. c. 5 (Martene Thesaur. IV. 1044).

² Innocent. PP. III. Regest. Lib. XV. Epist. 113.

³ Concil. Parisiens. ann. 1212 can. 4 (Harduin. T. VI. P. II. p. 2001).

concubine; the prohibitions were construed as directed solely against durable connections, while sporadic or temporary licentiousness was evidently regarded as so much a matter of course, that it was worthy of no special reprehension.¹ In the next century we find the rehabilitation of the sinner still more facilitated by conceding it to the bishops, for Alvar Pelayo alludes to the number of letters which, as Penitentiary under John XXII., he issued to the prelates authorising them to grant dispensations to concubinary priests to enable them to perform their functions.² It was a simple matter of traffic, reduced to a system. That monachism was no less productive of sin in the depraved moral atmosphere of the age is rendered evident by other canons of the same council, which prohibit both monks and nuns from sleeping two in a bed, with the avowed object of repressing crimes against nature.³ It may well be asked what was the value of the continence aimed at in monastic vows when it resulted in the necessity for such regulations.

The clergy of France were not exceptional, and, unfortunately, there can be no denial of the fact that notorious and undisguised illicit unions, or still more debasing secret licentiousness, was a universal and pervading vice of the Church throughout Christendom. Its traces amid all the ecclesiastical legislation of the thirteenth, fourteenth, and fifteenth centuries are too broad and deep to be called into question, and if no evidence remained except the constant and unavailing efforts to repress it, that alone would be sufficient. National and local synods, pastoral epistles, statutes of churches, all the records of ecclesiastical discipline are full of it. Now deploring and now threatening, exhausting ingenuity in

¹ Formulary of the Papal Penitentiary in the thirteenth century, pp. 95-100 Philadelphia, 1891).

² De Planctu Ecclesie, Lib. II. Art. vii. (Ed. 1517, fol. 101b).

³ Ibid. P. II. c. 21, P. III. c. 2 (Harduin. VI. II. 2009, 2011).

devising new regulations and more effective punishments, the prelates of those ages found themselves involved in a task as endless and as bootless as that of the Danaïdæ. Occasionally, indeed, it is lost sight of momentarily, when the exactions and usurpations of the laity, or the gradual extension of secular jurisdiction, monopolised the attention of those who were bound to defend the privileges of their class; but, with these rare exceptions, it may be asserted as a general truth that scarcely a synod met, or a body of laws was drawn up to govern some local church, in which the subject did not receive a prominent position and careful consideration. It would be wearisome and unprofitable to recapitulate here the details of this fruitless iteration. Without by any means exhausting the almost limitless materials for investigation, I have collected a formidable mass of references upon the subject, but an examination of them shows so little of novelty, and so constant a recurrence to the starting-point, that no new principles can be evolved from them, and their only interest lies in their universality, and in demonstrating how resultless was the unceasing effort to remove the ineffaceable plague-spot.

Spasmodic efforts, it is true, occasionally wrought a temporary improvement, as when Alexander IV., in 1259, proclaimed to the world that licentious ecclesiastics were the cause of all the evils under which the Church was groaning, for through them the name of God was blasphemed throughout the world, the sacraments were polluted, the Catholic religion lost the reverence of the faithful, the people were deprived of the benefits of divine service, the substance of the Church was dissipated, the word of God was defiled by their impure lips, heretics were encouraged in their opposition, oppressors were emboldened to persecution, and the sacrilegious were able to expose the whole Church to mockery and con-

tempt. To alleviate these troubles, he not only ordered the prelates of Christendom to prosecute all offences of this nature with the utmost severity, but, recognising his own court as an obstacle to reform, he surrendered his appellate jurisdiction in such cases, and forbade all appeals to Rome.¹ His earnestness bore some fruit, and many prelates were stimulated to reform their flocks, causing large numbers of ecclesiastics to be expelled. A contemporary rhymster, Adam de la Halle (better known perhaps as Le Bossu d'Arras), thus alludes to the efforts of the bull:—

Et chascuns le pape encosa
 Quant tant de bons clers desposa.—
 —Romme a bien le tierche partie
 Des clers fais sers et amatis.²

As in all similar attempts, however, the results were but transitory. Ferry, Bishop of Orleans, would scarce have been murdered, in 1299, by a knight whose daughter he had seduced, had the father felt that there was any chance of punishing the criminal by having the canons enforced against him.³

In the confessed nullity of penal legislation it was natural for the Church to have recourse to her supernatural armoury, and accordingly we have ample store of legends, framed with the hope of frightening by spiritual terrors those who were indurated to canon and decretal. The dead concubine of a priest was seen chased by infernal demons, and a knight who sought to protect her had a handful of hair left in his grasp by her mad terror; and the reality of the awful scene was verified on opening her tomb and finding her tresses deficient. So a nun who had yielded to temptation and had sought to conceal her

¹ Chron. Augustens. ann. 1260 (Freher. et Struv. I. 546-7).

² Michel, Théat. Franç. au Moyen Age, p. 23.

³ Guillel. de Nangis, ann. 1299.

frailty by murdering her child, dying unconfessed, was seen wandering hopelessly with a burning infant clasped to her bosom, which she proclaimed was to be her torment throughout eternity.¹ It is no wonder that the well-meant ingenuity which devised these tales met with slender reward, and that the threat of post-mortem punishment was as powerless as that of temporal penalties, for these tales were counterbalanced by other superstitions, such as that which taught that the most sinful, even among laymen, could obtain eternal salvation by the simple expedient of enveloping himself in a monastic habit on his death-bed. The Benedictines had well-authenticated cases in plenty where the most vicious of men, by adopting this plan, were rescued by St. Benedict himself from the hands of demons conducting them to eternal punishment, in spite of Satan's complaints that he was defrauded of his rights.² The Franciscans contended with the Benedictines as to the efficacy of their respective patrons, and related with pride that St. Francis visited purgatory every year and carried with him to heaven the souls of his followers—a general plan of salvation which gave his vestments a decided superiority over those of the older order. As the practice became more common, it was at times recognised as equally dangerous to the welfare of the faithful and to the revenues of the Church, and was condemned as a pernicious error,³ but this did not deter the Carmelites from producing their miraculous scapular and the Sabbatine Bull, which, after many vicissitudes, received the final stamp of papal approbation by Clement X. in 1673.⁴

So open and avowed was the shame of the Church

¹ Cæsar. Heisterbach. Dial. Mirac. Dist. XII. c. xx. xxi.

² Chron. Casinens. Lib. III. cap. xxxix.

³ Concil. Hammaburg. ann. 1406 (Hartzheim VI. 2).

⁴ Clement. PP. X. Bull. *Commissa nobis* (Bullar. Roman. T. VI. Append. p. 45).

that the Neapolitan code, promulgated about 1231 by the enlightened Frederick II., absolutely interfered to give a quasi-legitimacy to the children of ecclesiastics, and removed, to a certain extent, their disability of inheritance. The imperial officials were ordered to assign appropriate shares in parental estates to such children, notwithstanding their illegitimacy, conditioned on the payment of an annual tax to the imperial court; and parents were not allowed to alienate their property to the prejudice of such children, any more than in cases of the offspring of lawful wedlock.¹ The numbers and influence of the class thus protected must indeed have been great to induce such interference in their favour.

We have already seen ecclesiastical authority for the assertion that in the Spanish Peninsula the children sprung from such illicit connections rivalled in numbers the offspring of the laity. That they were numerous elsewhere may be presumed when we see Innocent IV., in 1248, forced to grant to the province of Livonia the privilege of having them eligible to holy orders, except when born of parents involved in monastic vows,² for necessity alone could excuse so flagrant a departure from the canons enunciated during the preceding two centuries. A similar conclusion is deducible from the fact that, in the municipal code in force throughout Northern Germany during the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, they were deemed of sufficient importance to be entitled to a separate place in the classification of *wergilds*, or blood-moneys; while the aim of the lawgiver to stigmatise them is manifested by his placing them below the peasant, deeming

¹ Constit. Sicular. Lib. III. Tit. 25 c. 1.

It is possible that Frederick's legislation may have attracted attention to the irregularities of the Neapolitan Church, for in 1230 Gregory IX. addressed an encyclical letter to the prelates of that kingdom "præsertim super cohabitacione mulierum;" and two years later he deemed it necessary to repeat his admonitions.—Raynaldi Annal. ann. 1230, No. 20.

² Baluz. et Mansi, I. 211.

them superior only to the juggler;¹ and that this was not a provision of transient force is clear from the commentary upon it in a body of law dating from the end of the fourteenth century.² Nor is the evidence less convincing which may be drawn from the use of the old German word *pfaffenkind*, or priest's son, which became generally used as equivalent to bastard.³ It would not, indeed, be difficult to understand the numbers of this class of the population if ecclesiastics in general followed the example of Henry III., Bishop of Liège, whose natural children amounted to no less than sixty-five.⁴

The direct encouragement thus given to illicit connections, by providing for the children sprung from them, neutralised one of the principal modes by which the Church endeavoured to suppress them. The innumerable canons issued during this period, forbidding and pronouncing null and void all testamentary provisions in favour of concubines and descendants, prove not only how much stress was laid upon this as an efficient means

¹ *Specul. Saxon. Lib. III. art. 45.*

² *Richstich Landrecht, Lib. II. c. 25.*

³ Michelet, *Origines des Loix*, p. 68. This popular phrase gives point to the story told by Henri Estienne of a German ambassador to Rome, to whom, on his farewell audience, the pope gave a message to his master, commencing, "Tell our well-beloved son." The honest Teuton could not contain himself at what he took to be a flagrant insult, and he interrupted the diplomatic courtesies with an angry exclamation that his noble master was not the son of a priest.—*Apol. pour Herodote, Liv. I. chap. iii.*

⁴ This admirable prelate, after enjoying the episcopate for twenty-seven years, was at length deposed in 1274 by Gregory X., at the Council of Lyons, in consequence of his excesses, "*præsertim de deforationibus virginum, stupris matronarum et incestibus monialium*" (*Chron. Cornel. Zanfiet, ann. 1272*). For some details of his excesses, see the epistle addressed to him by Gregory X. in Hardouin, *Concil. T. VII. p. 665*. As Gregory had been archdeacon of Liège, he was probably familiar with the subject. Henry's promotion to the see of Liège was part of the policy of Innocent IV. in elevating William of Holland, his brother, to the imperial throne as a competitor to Frederic II. By special dispensation Henry had enjoyed the see for ten years before he was ordained to the priesthood, and after his degradation he infested the bishopric for twelve years, until his death, one of his exploits being the killing of his successor, John of Enghien.—*Hist. Monast. S. Laurent. Leodiens. Lib. v. c. 69 (Martene Ampl. Collect. IV. 1105).*

of repression, but also how little endeavour was made by the guilty parties to conceal their sin. As all testaments came within the sphere of ecclesiastical jurisdiction, it would seem that there should have been no difficulty in enforcing regulations of this kind, yet their constant repetition proves either that those who were intrusted with their execution were habitually remiss, or else that the popular feelings were in favour of the unfortunates, and interfered with the efficacy of the laws.

A single instance, out of many that might be cited, will illustrate this. In 1225 the Cardinal-legate Conrad held, at Mainz, a national council of the German empire, of which one of the canons declared that, in order to abolish the custom of ecclesiastics leaving to their concubines and children the fruits of their benefices, not only should such legacies be void, but those guilty of the attempt should lie unburied, all who endeavoured to enforce such testaments should be anathematised, and the Church where it was permitted should lie under an interdict as long as the wrong was permitted.¹ The terrible rigour of these provisions shows how deep seated was the evil aimed at; nor were they uncalled for when we see a will, executed in 1218 by no less a personage than Gotfrid, Archdeacon of Wurzburg, in which he leaves legacies to the children whom he confesses to have been born in sin, and of whom he expects his relatives to take charge.² Had any earnest attempt been made to enforce the canons of the Legate, they would have been amply sufficient to eradicate the evil; yet their utter inefficiency is demonstrated by the Council of Fritzlar in 1246, and that of Cologne in 1260. The former of these was held by the Archbishop of Mainz;

¹ Concil. German. ann. 1225 c. 5 (Hartzheim III. 521). This council was assembled to check the prevalent vices of concubinage and simony, and its elaborate provisions show how fruitless previous efforts had been.

² Gudeni Cod. Diplom. II. 36.—Not a few testaments of this kind are preserved,

it has no canons directed against concubinage, which was as public as ever, but it deploras the dilapidation of the temporalities of the Church by the testamentary provisions of priests in favour of their guilty partners and children, and it repeats, with additional emphasis, the regulations of 1255.¹ The latter renews the complaint that priests not only continue their evil courses throughout life, but are not ashamed, on their death-beds, to leave their children the patrimony of Christ; and another provision is equally significant in forbidding priests to be present at the marriages of their children, or that such marriages should be solemnised with pomp and ostentation.² The following year another council, held at Mainz, repeated the prohibition as to the diversion of Church property to the consorts and natural children of priests.³ In 1296 Boniface VIII. professed to be scandalised at the horrible abuse customary in the see of Utrecht, whereby priests joined themselves to their concubines and apportioned the property of their Churches among their children;⁴ while in 1342 the Synod of Olmutz was obliged to renew the prohibitions regarding the solemnisation of their children's marriages.⁵ In 1416 the Synod of Breslau deplored that the old canons were forgotten and despised, and that priests were not ashamed to bequeath to their bastards accumulations of property which would form fit portions for lofty nobles.⁶ How thoroughly in

¹ Concil. Fritzlar. ann. 1246 can. xi. (Hartzheim III. 574).

² Concil. Coloniens. ann. 1260 c. 1.

³ Concil. Mogunt. ann. 1261 can. xxvii. xxxix. (Hartzheim III. 604, 607). The latter canon is very prolix and earnest, and inveighs strongly against the "cul-lagium," or payment exacted by archdeacons and deans for permitting irregularities. The authorities apparently grew gradually tired of attempting the impossible. In 1284 the Council of Passau, in a series of long and elaborate canons, contented itself with a vague threat of prosecuting priests who publicly kept concubines, and with prohibiting them from ostentatiously celebrating the marriage of their children.—Concil. Patav. ann. 1284 can. ix. xxxi. (Ibid. pp. 675, 679).

⁴ Faucon et Thomas, Registres de Boniface VIII., n. 1001.

⁵ Synod. Olomucens. ann. 1342 cap. viii. (Hartzheim IV. 338).

⁶ Synod. Wratislav. ann. 1416 § 1 (Hartzheim V. 153).

fact it was deemed a matter of course for the children of ecclesiastics to marry well and to have good dowries, is to be seen in Chaucer's description of the wife of "deinous Simekin," the proud miller of Trompington:—

"A wif he hadde, comen of noble kin;
 The person of the toun hire father was.
 With hire he yaf ful many a panne of bras,
 For that Simkin shuld in his blood allie.
 She was yfostered in a nonnerie." (The Reve's Tale.)

As time wore on, and the clergy, despite the innumerable admonitions and threats which were everywhere showered upon them, persisted in retaining their female companions, they appear, in some places, to have gradually assumed the privilege as a matter of right; and, what is even more remarkable, they seem to have had a certain measure of success in the assumption. In 1284 the Papal Legate, Gerard Bishop of Sabina, at the Council of Amalfi, renewed and strengthened the decretals of Alexander III. respecting the concubinary priests of the Neapolitan provinces, ordering the ejection of all who should not separate from their partners within a month, suspending all prelates who should neglect to enforce the rule, and fining heavily those who, as in so many other places, made the frailties of their subordinates a source of filthy gain.¹ The severity of these provisions was as unsuccessful as usual, and at length the secular power endeavoured to come to the assistance of the ecclesiastical authorities. The pious Charles the Lame of Naples, whose close alliance with Rome rendered him eager in everything that would gratify the head of the Church, about the year 1300 imposed a heavy fine on the concubines of priests if they persisted in their sin for a year after excommunication. This law, like so many similar ones, soon fell into desuetude, but in

¹ Concil. Melfitan. ann. 1284 c. v. (Martene Ampl. Coll. VII. 285-6).

1317, under his son Robert the Good, the justiciary of the Principato Citra undertook to put it into execution. In the diocese of Marsico the clergy openly resisted these proceedings, boldly laid their complaints before the king, and were so energetic that Robert was obliged to issue an ordinance directing the discontinuance of all processes before the lay tribunals, and granting that the concubines should be left to the care of the ecclesiastical courts alone. These women thus, by reason of their sinful courses, came to be invested with a quasi-ecclesiastical character, and to enjoy the dearly prized immunities attached to that position, at a time when the Church was vigorously striving to uphold and extend the privileges which the civil lawyers were systematically labouring to undermine. Nor was the pretension thus advanced suffered to lapse. Towards the close of the same century, Carlo Malatesta of Rimini applied to Ancarono, a celebrated doctor of canon and civil law (“*juris canonici speculum et civilis anchora*”), to know whether he could impose penalties on the concubines of priests, and the learned jurist replied decidedly in the negative; while other legal authorities have not hesitated to state that such women are fully entitled to immunity from secular jurisdiction, as belonging to the families of clerks—*de familia clericorum*.¹ When a premium was thus offered for sin, and the mistresses of priests—like the *mâitresses-en-titre* of the Bourbons—acquired a certain honourable position among their fellows from the mere fact of their ministering to the lust of their pastors, it is not to be wondered at if such connections multiplied and flourished, and if the humble laity came to regard them as an established institution.

¹ Giannone, *Apologia*, cap. XIV.—Ancarono gave his name to one of the most celebrated colleges of law in Bologna.—Bruni *Vita Gabrielis Palæoti*, c. 4 (Martene *Ampl. Coll.* VI. 1390).

Robert of Naples was not the only potentate who found an organised resistance to his well-meant endeavours to restore discipline. When, in 1410, the stout William, Bishop-elect of Paderborn, had triumphed with fire and sword over his powerful foes, the Archbishop of Cologne and the Count of Cleves, he turned his energies to the reformation of the dissolute morals of his monks. They positively refused to submit to the ejection of their women from the monasteries, and he at length found the task too impracticable even for his warlike temper. For seven long years the quarrel lasted, legal proceedings being varied by attempts at poison on the one side, and reckless devastations by the episcopal troops on the other, until the prelate, worn out by the stubbornness of his flock, was obliged to give way.¹

Equal success waited on the resistance of the Swiss clergy when, in 1230, the civil authorities of Zurich sacrilegiously ordered them to dismiss their women. They resolutely replied that they were flesh and blood, unequal to the task of living like angels, and unable to attend to the kitchen and other household duties. The townsmen entered into a league against them, and succeeded in driving away some of the sacerdotal consorts,

¹ *Gobelinæ Personæ Cosmodrom. Ætat. VI. c. 92, 93.*—How utterly monastic discipline was neglected in Germany is shown by the fact that a century earlier, in 1307, a Council of Cologne found it necessary to denounce the frequency with which nuns were seduced, left their convents, lived in open and public profligacy, and then returned unblushingly to their establishments, where they seem to have been received as a matter of course.—*Concil. Colon. ann. 1307 c. xvii. (Hartzheim IV. 113).* That this had little effect is proved by a repetition of the threats of punishment, three years later [*Concil. Colon. ann. 1310 c. ix.; Hartzheim IV. 122.*] In 1347, John van Arckel, Bishop of Utrecht, was obliged to prohibit men from having access to the nunneries of his diocese, in order to put an end to the scandals which were apparently frequent (*Hartzheim IV. 350*). In 1350 the Emperor Charles IV. felt called upon to address an earnest remonstrance to the Archbishop of Mainz concerning the unclerical habits of his canons and clergy who spent the revenues of the Church in jousts and tournaments, and who, in dress, arms, and mode of life, were not to be distinguished from laymen (*Ibid. IV. 358*). How little was effected by these efforts is manifest when, in 1360, William, Archbishop of Cologne, was obliged to refute the assertions of those monks and nuns who alleged in their defence that custom allowed them to leave their convents and contract marriage (*Ibid. IV. 493*).

when the Bishop of Constance and his chapter, allowing perhaps the pride of the churchman to get the better of ascetic zeal, interfered with a threat of excommunication on all who should presume to intervene in a matter which related specially to the Church. He absolved the leaguers from the oaths with which they were mutually bound, and thus restored security to the priestly households. About the same time Gregory IX. appointed a certain Boniface to the see of Lausanne. On his installation, the new bishop commenced with ardour to enforce the canons, but the clergy conspired against his life, and were so nearly successful that he incontinently fled, and never ventured to return.¹

If the irregular though permanent connections which everywhere prevailed had been the only result of the prohibition of marriage, there might perhaps have been little practical evil flowing from it, except to the Church itself and to its guilty members. When the desires of man, however, are once tempted to seek through unlawful means the relief denied to them by artificial rules, it is not easy to set bounds to the unbridled passions which, irritated by the fruitless effort at repression, are no longer restrained by a law which has been broken or a conscience which has lost its power. The records of the Middle Ages are accordingly full of the evidences that indiscriminate license of the worst kind prevailed throughout every rank of the hierarchy.

Even supposing that this fearful immorality were not attributable to the immutable laws of nature revenging themselves for their attempted violation, it could readily be explained by the example set by the central head. Scarcely had the efforts of Nicholas and Gregory put an end to sacerdotal marriage in Rome when the morals of the Roman clergy became a dis-

¹ Henke, *Append. ad Calixt.* pp. 585-6.

grace to Christendom. How little the results of the reform corresponded with the hopes of the zealous puritans who had brought it about may be gathered from the martyrdom of a certain Arnolfo, who, under the pontificate of Honorius II., preached vehemently against the scandals and immorality of the ecclesiastics of the apostolic city. They succeeded in making away with him, notwithstanding the protection of Honorius, and the veneration of the nobles and people who regarded him as a prophet.¹ When such was the condition of clerical virtue, we can scarcely wonder that sufficient suffrages were given in 1130 by the sacred college to Cardinal Pier-Leone to afford him a plausible claim to the papacy, although he was notoriously stained with the foulest crimes. Apparently his children by his sister Tropea, and his carrying about with him a concubine when travelling in the capacity of papal legate, had not proved a bar to his elevation in the Church, nor to his employment in the most conspicuous and important affairs.² A severer satire on the standard of ecclesiastical morality could scarcely be imagined than the inculcation by such a man, in his capacity as pope, of the canons requiring the separation of priests from their wives, on the plea of the spotless purity required for the service of the altar.³

What were the influences of the papal court in the next century may be gathered from the speech which Cardinal Hugo made to the Lyonese, on the occasion of the departure of Innocent IV. in 1251 from their city, after a residence of eight years—"Friends, since our arrival here, we have done much for your city. When we came, we found here three or four brothels.

¹ Trithem. Chron. Hirsang. ann. 1128.—Platina sub Honor. II.

² Arnulphi Lexoviens. de Schismate cap. iii. (D'Achery I. 156).

³ Anacleti Antipapæ Epist. x. (Martene Ampliss. Collect. I. 702).

We leave behind us but one. We must own, however, that it extends without interruption from the eastern to the western gate"—the crude cynicism of which greatly disconcerted the Lyonese ladies present.¹ Robert Grosseteste, Bishop of Lincoln, therefore only reflected the popular conviction when, on his deathbed in 1253, inveighing against the corruption of the papal court, he applied to it the lines—

Ejus avaritiæ totus non sufficit orbis,
Ejus luxuriæ meretrix non sufficit omnis.²

A hundred years later saw the popes again in France. For forty years they had bestowed on Avignon all the benefits, moral and spiritual, arising from the presence of the Vicegerent of Christ, when Petrarch recorded, for the benefit of friends whom he feared to compromise by naming, the impressions produced by his long residence there in the household of a leading dignitary of the Church. Language seems too weak to express his abhorrence of that third Babylon, that Hell upon Earth, which could furnish no Noah, no Deucalion to survive the deluge that alone could cleanse its filth—and yet he intimates that fear compels him to restrain the full expression of his feelings. Chastity was a reproach and licentiousness a virtue. The aged prelates surpassed their younger brethren in wickedness as in years, apparently considering that age conferred upon them the license to do that from which even youthful libertines shrank; while the vilest crimes were the pastimes of

¹ Matt. Paris, ann. 1251.

² Matt. Paris, Hist. Angl. ann. 1253.—The same author preserves a legend that when Innocent IV. heard of the death of Grosseteste, he ordered a letter to be prepared commanding Henry III. to dig up and cast out the remains of the bishop. The following night, however, Grosseteste appeared in his episcopal robes, and with his crozier inflicted a severe castigation on the vengeful pope, who thereupon abandoned his unchristian purpose.—Ibid. ann. 1254.

pontifical ease.¹ Juvenal and Brantôme can suggest nothing more shameless or more foul. Nor was the tone of morality heightened when, fifty years later, Nicholas de Clamenges takes up the tale. His brief reference to the adulteries and vileness with which the cardinals befouled the papal court, and the obscenities in which their families imitated their example, shows that the matter was so generally understood that it needed no details.¹

The Great Schism perhaps could scarcely be expected to improve the morals of the papal court. Yet when the Church universal, to close that weary quarrel, agreed to receive one of the competitors as its head, surely it might have selected, as the visible representative of God upon earth, some more worthy embodiment of humanity than Balthazar Cossa, who, as John XXIII., is alone, of the three competitors, recognised in the list of popes. When the great Council of Constance in 1415 adopted the awful expedient of trying, condemning, and deposing a pope, the catalogue of crimes—notorious incest, adultery, defilement, homicide, and atheism—of which the fathers formally accused him, and which he

¹ Portions of Petrarch's descriptions are unfit for transcription; the following, however, will give a sufficient idea of his experience. "Veritas ibi dementia est, abstinencia vero rusticitas, pudicitia probrum ingens. Denique peccandi licentia magnanimitas et libertas eximia, et quo pullutior eo clarior vita, quo plus scelerum eo plus gloriæ, bonum nomen cæno vilius, atque ultima mercium fama est. . . . Taceo utriusque pestis artifices, et concursantes pontificum thalamis proxonatas . . . Quis, oro, enim non irascatur et rideat, illos senes pueros coma candida, togis amplissimis, adeoque lascivientibus animis ut nihil illuc falsius videatur quam quod ait Maro 'Frigidus in Venerem senior.' Tam calidi tamque præcípites in Venerem senes sunt, tanta eos ætatis et status et virium capit oblivio, sic in libidines inardescunt, sic in omne ruunt dedecus, quasi omnis eorum gloria non in cruce Christi sit, sed in commessationibus et ebrietatibus, et quæ has sequuntur in cubilibus, impudicitis: . . . atque hoc unum senectutis ultimæ lucrum putant, ea facere quæ juvenes non auderent . . . Mitto supra, raptus, incestus, adulteria qui jam pontificalis lascivix ludi sunt," etc. (Lib. sine Titulo, Epist. xvi.).

In his VII. Eclogue Petrarch describes the cardinals individually. Their portraits, though metaphorically drawn, correspond with the general character of the above extracts. See also the Lib. sine Titulo, Epist. vii. viii. ix.

² Nic. de Clamengiis de Ruina Ecclesiæ, cap. xvii.—Cf. Theod. a Niem Nemor. Union. Tract. VI. cap. xxxvi. xxxvii.

confessed without defending himself,¹ is fearfully suggestive of the corruption which could not only spawn such a monster, but could elevate him to the highest place in the hierarchy, and present him for the veneration of Christendom. It affords a curious insight into the notions of morality prevalent in the papal court to observe that when he had as chamberlain of Boniface IX. scandalised Rome by openly keeping his brother's wife as a concubine, the remedy adopted for the disorder was to create him Cardinal and send him as legate to Bologna, while the lady was conveyed to her husband in Naples. The result of this course of procedure was that during his sway at Bologna two hundred maids, matrons, and widows, including a few nuns, fell victims to his brutal lust.² So obtuse, in fact, were the sensibilities of the age that after his release from the prison to which he had been consigned by the fathers of Constance, his successor, Martin V., consoled him in his degradation by creating him Dean of the Sacred College.

If the Councils of Constance and of Bâle worked some apparent reform in the outward morality of the papacy their effect soon passed away. The latter half of the fifteenth century scarcely saw a supreme pontiff without the visible evidences of human frailty around him, the unblushing acknowledgment of which is the

¹ Quod dominus Johannes papa cum uxore fratris sui et cum sanctis monialibus incestum, cum virginibus stuprum, et cum conjugatis adulterium et alia continentie crimina, propter quæ ira Dei descendit in filios diffidentie commisit. . . . Item quod dictus dominus Johannes papa fuit et sit homo peccator, notorie criminus de homicidio, veneficio, et aliis gravibus criminibus quibus irretitus dicitur graviter diffamatus, dissipator bonorum ecclesie et dilapidator eorundem, notorius simoniacus, pertinax hæreticus et ecclesiam Christi notorie scandalizans. Item quod dictus Johannes Papa XXIII. sæpe et sæpius coram diversis prælatis et aliis honestis et probis viris pertinaciter, diabolo suadente, dixit, asseruit, dogmatizavit et adstruxit, vitam æternam non esse, neque aliam post hanc, etc.—Concil. Constantiens. Sess. XI.

Even supposing some of those special charges to have been manufactured for the purpose of effecting the desirable political object of getting rid of the objectionable pontiff, yet the profound conviction of his vileness, evinced by the proffering of such accusations, is almost equally damaging.

² Theod. a Niem de Vit. Joann. XXIII.

fittest commentary on the tone of clerical morality. Sixtus IV. was believed to embody the utmost possible concentration of human wickedness,¹ until Borgia came to divide with him the pre-eminence of evil. The success of Innocent VIII. in increasing the population of Rome was a favourite topic with the wits of the day;² but the epitaph which declared that filth, gluttony, avarice, and sloth lay buried in his tomb³ did not anticipate the immediate resurrection of the worst of those vices in the person of his successor, Alexander VI. If the crimes of Borgia were foul, their number and historical importance have rendered them so well known that I may be spared more than a passing allusion to a career which has made his name a byword.⁴ It was reserved for

¹ Leno vorax, pathicus, meretrix, delator, adulter,
Si Romam veniet, illico, cretus erit.
Pædico insignis, prædo furiosus, adulter,
Exitiumque Urbis, perniciosque Dei,
Gaude prisce Nero, superat te crimine Sixtus,
Hic scelus omne simul clauditur et vitium.

Steph. Infessuræ Diar. Rom. ann. 1484 (Eccard. Corp. Hist. II. 1941).

² Innocuo priscos æquam est debere Quirites.
Progenie exhaustam restituit patriam.
(Sannazarii Epigram. Lib. I.)

³ Spurcicies, gula, avaritia, atque ignavia deses,
Hoc, Octave, jacent quo tegeris tumulo.
(Marulli Epigram. Lib. IV.)

⁴ Sannazaro, as was meet in a Neapolitan, hated Alexander cordially, and was never weary of assailing his wickedness. The relations between him and his daughter Lucretia were a favourite topic—

Ergo te semper cupiet Lucretia Sextus ?
O fatum diri nominis ! hic pater est ?
(Sannazar. Epigr. Lib. II.)

Humana jura, nec minus cœlestia,
Ipsosque sustulit Deos :
Ut silicet liceret (heu scelus) patri
Natæ sinum permingere,
Nec execrandis abstinere nuptiis
Timore sublato simul.
(Ibid.)

The well-known epigram of Pontanus tersely describes another of his vices—

Vendit Alexander sacramenta, altaria, Christum.
Emerat ille prius, vendere jure potest.

See Burchard's Diary, III. 167, for the description of a banquet in the papal palace, 31st Oct. 1501, at which Alexander was present with his children, Cæsar and

Cesare Cantù to find in the criminal ambition of his son Cæsare Borgia an argument in favour of the celibacy which relieved the world from a succession of papal offspring.¹ Bishop Burchard, Alexander's master of ceremonies, naïvely remarks that he followed and improved on the example set by Innocent of giving daughters in marriage, so that all the clergy diligently set to work to get children, and, from the lowest to the highest, they publicly kept concubines with all the appearance of marriage. He adds that unless God interferes this custom will spread to the monks, although already nearly all the convents in Rome are brothels, without any one taking exception to it.²

Such men as Alexander can hardly be deemed exceptional, save inasmuch as brilliant talents and native force of character might enable them to excel their contemporaries in guilt as in ambition. They were the natural product of a system which for four centuries had bent the unremitting energies of the Church to securing temporal power and wealth, with exemption from the duties and liabilities of the citizen. Such were the fruits of the successful theocracy of Hildebrand, which, intrusting irresponsible authority to fallible humanity, came to regard ecclesiastical aggrandisement as a full atonement for all and every crime. That the infection had spread even to the ultimate fibres of the establishment can readily be believed, for the supremacy of the papal authority gave it the power of controlling

Lucretia. The details are too foul for transcription, even in Burchard's Latin. The matter of fact way in which the honest bishop records it, without a word of surprise or reproof, throws a flood of light on the manners and morals of the holy city.

¹ Cantù, *Eretici d'Italia*, I. 222.

² Burchardi *Diarium* II. 79 (Ed. Thuasne).

Pope Alexander VI. was the father of nine children whose names are known. Two of his mistresses were married women, viz. Vannoza Catanei and Giulia Bella Farnese. The latter was a sister of Cardinal Alexander Farnese, who was afterwards Pope Paul III. Pope Innocent VIII. was credited with sixteen illegitimate children.

the character of every parish in Christendom. We shall see hereafter, as we have already seen, how that power was habitually abused, and how the nullification of the canons was a recognised source of income to the successor of St. Peter and his needy officials. The evil was one that had long been recognised and complained of since Hincmar of Rheims so emphatically denounced it. St. Bernard declared that Rome was the acknowledged refuge of all ambitious and licentious men who desired either promotion or to retain the preferment which they had forfeited.¹ In the fiery zeal with which he warns his protégé, Eugenius III., not to be deceived by such suitors, he shows us how useless were local efforts at reformation when they could be so readily set aside and rendered nugatory by the venal influences at work in the apostolic court. But the abuse was too profitable to be suppressed, and it continued until after the Reformation had shown the necessity of some decent reticence in the exercise of powers no longer regarded as wholly irresponsible.

My object has been to consider the subject of ascetic celibacy as a portion simply of ecclesiastical history, and yet I cannot well conclude this section without a hasty glance at its influence on society at large. That influence, as far as the secular clergy were its instruments, was evidently one of almost unmixed evil. The parish priest, if honestly ascetic, was thereby deprived of the wholesome common bond of human affections and sympathies, and was rendered less efficient for good in consoling the sorrows and aiding the struggles of his flock.

¹ In comparing the labours of the pope with those of St. Paul, St. Bernard exclaims, " Numquid ad eum de toto orbe confluebant ambitiosi, avari, simoniaci, sacrilegi, concubinarij, incestuosi, et quæque istiusmodi monstra hominum, ut ipsius apostolica auctoritate vel obtinerent ecclesiasticos honores, vel retinerent ? " —De Consideratione Lib. I. c. iv.

If, on the other hand, he was a hypocrite, or if he had found too late that the burden he had assumed was too heavy for his strength, the denial of the natural institution of marriage was the source of immeasurable corruption to those intrusted to his charge, who looked up to him not only as a spiritual director, but as a superior being who could absolve them from sin, and whose partnership in guilt was in itself an absolution.¹ That such was the condition of innumerable parishes throughout Europe there is unfortunately no reason to doubt, and all of the severer churchmen of the period, in attacking the vices of the clergy, give us to understand that either their example led the laity into evil, or that their immorality rendered it impossible for them to correct the vices of the flocks. As Cæsarius of Heisterbach says, "Since the priesthood mostly lead evil and incontinent lives, they soothe rather than stimulate the consciences of the worldly."² The incongruity of this may perhaps explain to some extent the anomaly of the practical grossness of the Middle Ages, combined with the theoretical ascetic purity which was held out as the duty of every Christian who desired to be acceptable to his Creator.

The curious contrasts and confusion of the standard of morality, arising from this striving against nature, are well illustrated by a homily of the thirteenth century against marriage, addressed to youthful nuns, which exhausts all the arguments that the ingenuity of the writer could suggest. On the one hand he appeals to the pride which could be so well gratified by the exalted state of virginity; he pictures the superior bliss vouchsafed in heaven to those who were stained by no earthly contamination, confidently promising them a higher rank

¹ According to St. Bonaventura, this scandalous doctrine was frequently taught.
—Libell. Apologet. Quæst, I,

² Dial Mirac. Dist. XII. c. xix.

and more direct communing with the Father than would be bestowed on the married and the widowed; he rapturously dwells upon the inward peace, the holy ecstasy which are the portion of those who, wedded to Christ, keep pure their mystic marriage vow; and his ascetic fervour exhausts itself in depicting the spiritual delights of a life of religious seclusion. Mingled inextricably with these exalted visions of beatific mysticism, he presents in startling contrasts the retribution awaiting the sin of licentiousness and the evils inseparable from a life of domestic marriage. With a crude nastiness that is almost inconceivable, he minutely describes all the discomforts and suffering, physical and mental, attendant upon wifehood and maternity, entering into every detail and gloating over every revolting circumstance that his prurient imagination can suggest. The license of Shakespeare, the plain speaking of Chaucer, Boccaccio, and the mediæval trouvères show us what our ancestors were, and what they were is easily explained when such a medley of mysticism and grossness could be poured into the pure ears of innocent young girls by their spiritual director.¹

Thus, with the fearful immorality of which we have

¹ Hali Meidenhad. (Early English Text Society, 1866.) The author at times trenches closely on Manichæism. It is true that he revives, with some variation, the ancient computation of the relative merits of the various conditions of life—"For wedlock has its fruit thirtyfold in heaven, widowhood sixtyfold; maidenhood with a hundredfold overpasses both" (p. 22); but while he thus faintly disavows an intention to revile marriage, he again and again alludes to it as wicked and impure *per se*. "Well were it for them, were they on the day of their bridal borne to be buried. . . . If thou askest why God created such a thing to be, I answer thee: God created it never such; but Adam and Eve turned it to be such by their sin, and marred our nature" (p. 8).

Virginity he asserts to be the highest attribute of humanity, and in heaven virgins are the equals of angels and the superiors of saints.—"Maidenhood is a grace granted thee from heaven. . . . 'Tis a virtue above all virtues, and to Christ the most acceptable of all" (p. 10). "To sing that sweet song and that heavenly music which no saints may sing, but maidens only in heaven. . . . But the maiden's song is altogether unlike these, being common to them with angels. Music beyond all music in heaven. In their circle is God himself; and his dear mother, the

seen such ample evidence, the Church still presented the same exaggerated asceticism as her guiding principle. The rhapsodies of St. John Chrysostom and St. Aldhelm were rivalled in an age when the priest was forbidden to live in the same house as his mother, because experience had shown the danger of such propinquity. How the estimate placed on purity increased as virtue diminished is fairly illustrated in a characteristic legend which was very popular with ecclesiastical teachers in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries. It relates how a pagan entering a heathen temple saw Satan seated in state on a throne. One of the princes of Hell entered, worshipped his master, and proceeded to give an account of his work. For thirty days he had been engaged in provoking a war, wherein many battles had been fought with heavy slaughter. Satan sharply reproached him with accomplishing so little in the time, and ordered him to be severely punished. Another then approached the throne and reported that he had devoted twenty days to raising tempests at sea, whereby navies had been wrecked and multitudes drowned. He was likewise reprovved and punished for wasting his time. A third had for ten days been engaged in troubling the wedding festivity of a city, causing strife and murder, and he was similarly treated. A fourth then entered and recounted how for forty years he had been occupied

precious maiden, is hidden in that blessed company of gleaming maidens, nor may any but they dance and sing" (pp. 18-20).

As for matrimony and maternity, nothing can redeem them in the eyes of the ascetic.—"All other sins are nothing but sins, but this is a sin and besides denaturalises thee and dishonoureth thy body. It soilleth thy soul and maketh it guilty before God, and, moreover, defileth thy flesh. . . . Now what joy hath the mother? She hath from the misshapen child sad care and shame, both, and for the thriving one fear, till she lose it for good, though it would never have been in being for the love of God, nor for the hope of heaven, nor for the dread of hell" (p. 34).—But I dare not follow him in his more nauseous flights of imagination.

This is by no means a solitary example. The same pious obscenity is to be found, for instance, in some of Abelard's theological speculations addressed to Heloise and her nuns, as in his solution of her 42nd problem.

in tempting a hermit to yield to fleshly desire, and how he had that night succeeded. Then Satan arose and placed his crown on the head of the new-comer, seating him on the throne as one who had worthily achieved a signal triumph. The spectator, thus seeing the high estimate placed by the Evil One on ascetic chastity, was immediately converted, and forthwith became a monk.¹

While thus attaching so fanciful a holiness to virginity, the Church came practically to erect a most singular standard of morality, the influence of which could but be most deplorable on the mass of the laity. In the earlier days of celibacy, the rule was regarded by the severer ecclesiastics as simply an expression of the necessity of purity in the minister of God. Theophilus of Alexandria, in the fifth century, decided that a man, who as lector had been punished for unchastity and had subsequently risen to the priesthood, must be expelled on account of his previous sin.² We have seen, however, how, when celibacy was revived under Damiani and Hildebrand, the question of immorality virtually disappeared, and the essential point became, not that a priest should be chaste, but that he should be unmarried, and this was finally adopted as the recognised law of the Church. In 1213 the Archbishop of Lunden inquired of Innocent III. whether a man who had had two concubines was ineligible to orders as a *digamus*, and the pontiff could only reply that no

¹ Ayenbite of Inwyt, p. 328 (Early English Text Soc. 1866). This is a translation made in 1340 of "Le Somme des Vices et des Vertues," written in 1279 for Philippe-le-Hardi, by Laurentius Gallus. The author is not a whit behind his brother ascetics in extolling the praises of virginity.—"Vor maydenhod is a tresor of zuo grat worth thet hit ne may by be nonen y-zet a pris . . . vor maidenhod aboue alle othre states berth thet gretteste frut" (Ibid. p. 233-4). The legend would seem to be suggested by a somewhat similar story narrated by Gregory the Great (Dialog. Lib. III. cap. 7), and is also related by Alvar Pelayo (De Planctu Ecclesie, Lib. II. art. vii).

² Theophili Alexandrin. Commonitor. can. v. (Harduin. I. 1198).

matter how many concubines a man might have, either at one time or in succession, he did not incur the disability of digamy.¹ When such was the result of seven centuries of assiduous sacerdotalism in a Church which was daily growing in authority; when the people thus saw that sexual excesses were no bar to ecclesiastical preferment in that Church which made extravagant pretensions to purity; when the strict rules which forbade ordination to a layman who had married a widow, were relaxed in favour of those who were stained with notorious impurity, it is no wonder that the popular perceptions of morality became blunted, and that the laity did not deny themselves the indulgences which they saw tacitly allowed to their spiritual guides.

Nor was it only in stimulating this general laxity of principle that the influence of the Church was disastrous. The personal evil wrought by a dissolute priesthood was a wide-spreading contagion. The abuse of the awful authority given by the altar and the confessional, was a subject of sorrowful and indignant denunciation in too many synods for a reasonable doubt to be entertained of its frequency or of the corruption which it spread through innumerable parishes and nunneries.² The almost entire practical immunity with which these and

¹ Innocent. III. Regest. Lib. xvi. Epist. 118.

The curiously artificial standard of morals thus created may be estimated from the case of the Archdeacon of Lisieux, who refused to accept an election to the see of that place on account of his inability to maintain the purity requisite for the episcopal office. Vanquished at length by the importunity of his friends, he was consecrated, and resolutely undertook to abandon his evil habits. The unaccustomed privation brought on a fearful disease, but though assured that his life would prove a sacrifice if he persisted in his resolution, he resisted all entreaties, and refused to purchase existence by sullyng his position. He thus fell a martyr to a tenderness of conscience which had not prevented him from indulgence while filling the responsible position of archdeacon.—Girald. Cambrens. Gemm. Eccles. Dist. II. cap. xi.

² Graviore autem sunt animadversione plectendi, qui proprias filias spirituales, quas baptizaverint vel semel ad confessionem admiserint, violaverint.—Constit. Synod. Gilb. Episc. Circestrans. ann. 1289 (Wilkins II. 169). Cf. Synod. Ceno-manens. ann. 1248 (Martene Ampl. Coll. VII. 1375). Concil. Remens. ann. 1408

similar scandals were perpetrated led to an undisguised and cynical profligacy which the severer Churchmen acknowledged to exercise a most deleterious influence on the morals of the laity, who thus saw the exemplars of evil in those who should have been their patterns of virtue.¹ In his bull of 1259, Alexander IV. does not hesitate to declare that the people, instead of being reformed, are absolutely corrupted by their pastors.² Thomas of Cantinpré, one of the early lights of the Dominican order, indeed, is authority for the legend which represents the devil as thanking the prelates of the Church for conducting all Christendom to hell;³ and the conviction which thus expressed itself is justified by the reproach of Gregory X., who, in dismissing the second Council of Lyons, in 1274, told his assembled dignitaries that they were the ruin of the world.⁴ Un-

cap. 21 (Ibid. VII. 418). Concil. Salisburg. XXX. can. de Confess. (Dalham, Concil. Salisburg. p. 155.)

Abelard (Sermo XXIX.) in a passage which, though addressed to the virgins of the Paraclete, is hardly quotable, asserts the frequent corruption of nuns by their spiritual directors. See also St. Bonaventura, Tractatus quare Fr. Minores prædicent (Romæ 1773, p. 431), and Gerson, who retorts the charge on the friars, in his Tract. de Reform. Eccles. in Concil. Constant. cap. x. (Von der Hardt, T. I. P. v. p. 93). Cf. Marsilli Patav. Defens. Pacis P. II. cap. xvii.—Synod. Andegavens. ann. 1262 cap. x.; ann. 1291 cap. 1; ann. 1312 cap. 1 (D'Achery I. 727, 735, 742). Alvar Pelayo, with customary ecclesiastical logic, enumerates the offence among the habitual sins of women (De Planctu Ecclesiæ, Lib. II. art. 45, n. 84).

¹ In 1398, Cardinal Peter d'Ailly, Bishop of Cambrai, speaks of the manner in which his clergy lived with their concubines as man and wife, and brought up their children without concealment in their houses—"tenentes secum in suis domibus suas concubinas, et mulieres publice suspectas, in scandalum plurimorum cohabitant simul copulati, eisdem domo, mensa, et lecto, residendo, acsi essent vir et uxor matrimonialiter conjuncti: proles super terram gradientes ex hujusmodi suis concubinis susceptas una cum eisdem in suis domibus publice secum habendo et tenendo"—(Hartzheim VI. 709).

² Prout testatur nimia de plerisque regionibus clamans Christiani populi corruptela, quæ cum deberet ex sacerdotalis antidoti curari medelis, invalescit prohdolor! ex malorum contagione quod procedit a clero.—Chron. Augustens. ann. 1260.

³ According to Thomas of Cantinpré, this occurrence took place at Paris, in a synod held in 1248, and Satan explained his candour by saying that he was compelled to it by God.—(Hartzheim IX. 663.)

⁴ Inter alia dixit quod prælati faciebant ruere totum mundum. . . . Unde monuit eos quod ipsi se corrigerent . . . alioquin dixit se dure acturum cum ipsis super reformatione morum.—Harduin. VII. 692.

fortunately, his threat to reform them if they did not reform themselves, remained unexecuted, and the complaint was repeated again and again.¹

That this state of things was clearly understood by the laity is only too visibly reflected in contemporary records. When, in 1374, the dancing mania, one of those strange epidemics which afflicted the Middle Ages, broke out through Germany and Flanders, the populace called to mind the forgotten regulations of Damiani and Hildebrand, and found a ready explanation of the visitation by assuming it to be a consequence of the vitiated baptism of the people by a concubinary priesthood.² Chaucer, with his wide range of observation and shrewd native sense, took a less superstitious, and more practical view of the evil, and in the admirable sermon which forms his "Persone's Tale" he records the convictions which every pure-minded man must have felt with regard to the demoralising tendencies of the sacerdotal licentiousness of the time.³

How instinctively, indeed, the popular mind assumed the immorality of the pastor is illustrated by a passage in the earliest French pastoral that has reached us, dating from the latter half of the thirteenth century—

WARNIERS. Segneur je sui trop courechiés.

GUIOS. Comment ?

WARNIERS. Mehalès est agute,

M'amie, et s'a esté dechute ;

Car on dist que ch'est de no prestre.

¹ Clerici et presbyteri . . . maxime per fetidum peccatum luxuriæ seipos et alios pretrahunt ad infernum.—Concil. Parisiens. ann. 1323 can. iii. (Martene Ampl. Coll. VII. 1289).

² Petri de Herentals Vit. Gregor. XI. ann. 1375 (Muratori, S. R. I., T. III. P. II. p. 675).

³ "Swiche preestes be the sones of Hely . . . hem thinketh that they be free and have no juge, no more than hath a free boll, that taketh which cow that him liketh in the toun. So faren they by women ; for right as on free boll is ynough for all a toun, right so is a wicked preest corruption ynough for all a parish, or for all a countree."

ROGAUS. En non Dieu ! Warnier, bien puet estre ;

Car ele i aloit trop souvent.

WARNIERS. Hé, las ! jou avoie en couvent

De li temprement espouser.

GUIOS. Tu te puès bien trop dolouser,

Biaus très dous amis ; ne te caille,

Car ja ne meteras maaïlle,

Que bien sai, à l'enfant warder.¹

Those who were heretically disposed were keen to take advantage of a weakness so general and so universally understood. The author of the "Creed of Piers Ploughman" does not hesitate to assert with Gregory X. that the clergy were the corruption of the world—

For falsed of freres
 Hath fullich encombred
 Manye of this maner men,
 And made hem to leven
 Her charité and chastité,
 And shosen hem to lustes,
 And waxen to werly,
 And wayven the trewethe,
 And leven the love of her God.²

The widely received feeling on this subject, perhaps, finds its fittest expression in a satire on the mendicant friars, written by a Franciscan novice who became disgusted with the order and turned Wickliffite. The exaggerated purity and mortification of the early followers of the blessed St. Francis had long since yielded to the temptations which attended on the magnificent success of the institution, and the mystic aspirations which earned for it the name of the Seraphic Order degenerated into sloth and crime which took advantage of the opportunities afforded by the privilege to hear confessions. The grosser accusations of the writer are, perhaps, unfit for quota-

¹ Li Gieus de Robin et de Marion (Michel, Théâtre Français au Moyen Age, p. 129).
 Wright's Edition, p. 491, l. 1359.

tion, but the spirit in which the friars were regarded is sufficiently indicated by the following lines:—

For when the gode man is fro hame
 And the frere comes to oure dame,
 He spares, nauther for synne ne shame,
 That he ne dos his will.

Ich man that here shal lede his life
 That has a faire doghter or a wyfe
 Be war that no frer ham shryfe
 Nauther loude ne still.¹

When such was the moral condition of the priesthood, and such were the influences which it cast upon the flocks intrusted to its guidance, it is not to be wondered at if those who deplored so disgraceful a state of things, and whose respect for the canons precluded them from recommending the natural and appropriate remedy of marriage, should regard an organised system of concubinage as a safeguard. However deplorable such an alternative might be in itself, it was surely preferable

¹ Monumenta Franciscana, pp. 602-4.

This testimony concerning the Franciscans is not confined to heretics and laymen. Early in the fifteenth century, a council of Magdeburg took occasion to reprove them for the dissolute and unclerical mode of life of which they offered a conspicuous example. It appears that they dignified with the name of "Marthas" the female companions who, in primitive ages, were known as "agapetæ," and who had latterly acquired among the secular clergy the title of "focariæ"—"et in domibus suis frequenter soli cum mulieribus quas ipsorum *Martias* (ut eorum verbis utamur) habitare non verentur."—Concil. Magdeburg. ann. 1403, Rubr. de Pœnis. (Hartzheim V. 717.)

On the other hand, in the "Creed of Piers Ploughman," a Franciscan attacks the Carmelites—

They been but jugulers,
 And japers of kynde;
 Lorels and lechures,
 And lemans holden.

And that wicked folk
 Wymmen betraieþ,
 And begileþ hem her good
 With glaverynge wordes,
 And therwith holden her hous
 In harlotes warkes.

to the mischief which the unquenched and ungoverned passions of a pastor might inflict upon his parish; and the instances of this were too numerous and too glaring to admit of much hesitation in electing between the two evils. Even Gerson, the leader of mystic ascetics, who recorded his unbounded admiration for the purity of celibacy in his "*Dialogus Naturæ et Sophiæ de Castitate Clericorum*,"¹ saw and appreciated its practical evils, and had no scruple in recommending concubinage as a preventive, which, though scandalous in itself, might serve to prevent greater scandals.² It therefore requires no great stretch of credulity to believe the assertion of Sleidan that in some of the Swiss Cantons, it was the custom to oblige a new pastor, on entering upon his functions, to select a concubine, as a necessary protection to the virtue of his female parishioners, and to the peace of the families intrusted to his spiritual direction.³ Indeed, we have already seen (p. 380), on the authority of the Council of Valladolid in 1322, that such a practice was not uncommon in Spain.

In thus reviewing the influences which a nominally celibate clergy exercised over those intrusted to their care, it is perhaps scarcely too much to conclude that they were largely responsible for the laxity of morals which is a characteristic of mediæval society. No one who has attentively examined the records left to us of that society, can call in question the extreme preval-

¹ This was written in answer to an attack on celibacy by Guillaume Saignet, entitled "*Lamentatio ob cœlibatu sacerdotum, sive Dialogus Nicænæ Constitutionis et Naturæ ea di re conquerentis*."—Zaccaria, *Storia Polemica del Celibato Sacro*, Præf. p. xiv.

² *Vel inexperti forte erant hi doctores quam generale et quam radicum sit hoc malum, et quod deteriora flagitia circa uxores aut filias parochianorum et abominaciones horrendæ in aliis provenerint apud multas patrias, rebus stantibus ut stant, si quærentur per tales censuras arceri. Scandalum certe magnum est apud parochianos curati ad concubinam ingressus, sed longe deterius si orga parochianas suas non servaverit castitatem.*—*De Vita Spirit. Animæ Lect. IV. Corol. xiv. prop. 3.*

³ Sleidani *Comment. De Statu. Relig. Lib. I. et Reikub. Lib. III.*

ence of the licentiousness which everywhere infected it. Christianity had arisen as the great reformer of a world utterly corrupt. How earnestly its reform was directed to correcting sexual immorality is visible in the persistence with which the Apostles condemned and forbade a sin that the Gentiles scarcely regarded as a sin. The early Church was consequently pure, and its very asceticism is a measure of the energy of its protest against the all-pervading license which surrounded it. Its teachings, as we have seen, remained unchanged. Fornication continued to be a mortal sin, yet the period of its unquestioned domination over the conscience of Europe was the very period in which license among the Teutonic races was most unchecked. A Church which, though founded on the Gospel, and wielding the illimitable power of the Roman hierarchy, could yet allow the feudal principle to extend to the "jus primæ noctis" or "droit de marquette," and whose ministers in their character of temporal seigneurs could even occasionally claim the disgusting right themselves¹ was evidently exercising its influence not for good but for evil.

¹ There is a tradition that the Abbey of Montariol lost its sovereignty over the inhabitants of the village of that name in consequence of a revolt caused by the monks exacting this feudal right in all its odious cynicism, in place of receiving a payment in commutation as was frequently done. The Abbé Marcellin, in his edition of Le Bret's *Histoire de Montauban* (I. 362-74) seems to me to have successfully proved its falsity. He admits, however, that in his researches on the subject he has found one case in which an ecclesiastic undertook to enforce his rights to the letter. The President Boyer, writing in the sixteenth century (*Decisiones*, No. 17, *Decis.* 297) asserts that he had seen the proceedings of a lawsuit in which "Rector seu curatus parochialis prætendebat ex consuetudine primam habere sponsæ cognitionem" (Eschbach, *Introduction à l'Étude du Droit*, § 174).

The existence of this feudal right has been the subject of no little debate, to the acerbity of which religious as well as scientific partisanship has contributed. Allusions to it in nearly every land of Christendom are too widely spread, however, to render it doubtful that such a right was claimed and exercised, if not universally, at least in certain times and places. The student can find abundant proof of this in Ducange, s.v. *Marcheta*, and in Lagrèze's *Historie du Devil dans les Pyrénées* (Paris, 1867, pp. 384-425), who however denies that ecclesiastics were ever guilty of exacting it.

Documentary evidence of the custom is not wholly wanting. In Béarn, the

There is no injustice in holding the Church responsible for the lax morality of the laity. It had assumed the right to regulate the consciences of men and to make them account for every action and even for every thought. When it promptly caused the burning of those who ventured on any dissidence in doctrinal opinion or in matters of pure speculation, it could not plead lack of authority to control them in practical virtue. Its machinery was all-pervading, and its power autocratic. It had taught that the priest was to be venerated as the representative of God and that his commands were to be implicitly obeyed. It had armed him with the fearful weapon of the confessional, and by authorising him to grant absolution and to pronounce excommunication, it had delegated to him the keys of heaven and hell. By removing him from the jurisdiction of the secular courts it had proclaimed him as superior to all

seigneurs of Lobier claimed it of their *questaus* or serfs.—“Item. Quant auguns de tals maisons se mariden, dabant que conexer lors molhers, sou tenguts de las presentar per la prumère noeyt audit senhor de Lobier per en far a son plaser, ou autrement lou valhar cert tribut,” and the first child born, if a male, was free “per so qui poeyre star engendrat de las obres deudit senhor de Lobier en ladite prumère noeyt et de sous suditz plasers” (Mazure et Hatoulet, Fors de Béarn, p. 172, Pau, 1847). This document is of the sixteenth century: in Catalonia it was not until about the same period that the custom was definitely abolished. When, in 1462, the peasants and nobles endeavoured to settle their differences, one of the complaints of the former was that some seigneurs claimed the first night of a peasant bride, or to pass over her when she was in bed as a symbol of his right. To this the lords replied that they did not know or believe in the existence of such a servitude, but, if it was so, they renounced and abolished it as unjust and indecent (E. de Hinujosa, *Annales Internationales d'Histoire*, 2^e Section, p. 224, Paris, 1902). In spite of this disclaimer the grievance continued, and it was left for Ferdinand of Aragon, in his arbitral sentence of 1486, to put an end to it.—“Item, sententiam arbitram e declaram que los dits senyors no' pugan . . . la primera nit que los pages pren muller dormir ab ella o en senyal de senyoria, la nit de las bodas, apres que la muller sera colgada en lo lit, passar sobre aquell, sobre la dita muller” (Pragmaticas e altres Drets de Catalunya, Lib. IV. Tit. xiii. § 2, n. 9. Barcelona, 1589).

The servitude was known as *Ferma despoli forçada*. Pujades, writing some three centuries ago, seeks the fanciful explanation of it and of other *mala usus* by attributing them to the Moorish tyranny over Christian vassals, and that the *pages de remensa*, or predial serfs, who remained subject to these customs, were those who refused to aid in throwing off the domination of the infidel.—*Crónica universal del Principado de Cataluña*, IV. 332 (Barcelona, 1832).

temporal authority. Through ages of faith the populations had humbly received these teachings and bowed to these assumptions, until they entered into the texture of the daily life of every man. While thus grasping supremacy and using it to the utmost possibility of worldly advantage, the Church therefore could not absolve itself from the responsibilities inseparably connected with power, and chief among these responsibilities is to be numbered the moral training of the nations thus subjected to its will. While the corruption of the teachers thus had necessarily entailed the corruption of the taught, it is not too much to say that the tireless energy devoted to the acquisition and maintenance of power, privileges, and wealth, if properly directed, under all the advantages of the situation, would have sufficed to render mediæval society the purest that the world has ever seen.

That the contrary was notoriously the case resulted naturally from the fact that the Church, after the long struggle which finally left it supreme over Europe, contented itself with the worldly advantages derivable from the wealth and authority which surpassed its anticipations. If, then, it could secure a verbal submission to its doctrines of purity, it was willing to issue countless commands of chastity and to tacitly connive at their perpetual infraction. The taint of corruption infected equally its own ministers and the peoples committed to their charge, and the sacerdotal theory gradually came to regard with more and more indifference obedience to the Gospel in comparison with obedience to man and subservience to the temporal interests of the hierarchy. As absolution and indulgence grew to be a marketable commodity, it even became the interest of the traders in salvation to have a brisk demand for their wares. When infraction of the Divine precepts

could be redeemed with a few pence or with the performance of ceremonies that had lost their significance, it is not surprising if priest and people at length were led to look upon the violation of the Decalogue with the eye of the merchant and customer rather than with the spirit of the great Lawgiver.¹

The first impulse in the reaction of the sixteenth century was to recur to the Gospel and to interpret its commands in accordance with the immutable principles of human conscience rather than with the cunningly devised subtleties of scholastic theology. The reformers thus stood face to face with God, and, needing no intermediary to negotiate with Him, vice and sin reappeared to them in all their hideous deformity and attended with all their inevitable consequences.² For the first time since primitive Christianity was absorbed in sacerdotalism, were the doctrines of morality enforced as the primal

¹ See the *Taxa Sacra Pœnitentiariæ*, a tariff of prices for absolution in the Roman curia for all infractions of human and divine law, of which more hereafter.

Heretically inclined reformers did not hesitate to accuse the clergy of thus speculating in the power of the keys and the sins of the people—

The power of the apostles
 Thei pasen in speche,
 For to sellen the synnes
 For selver other mede.
 And purliche a pœna
 The puple asoyleth,
 And a culpa also,
 That they may katchen
 Money other money-worth,
 And mede to fonge ;
 And ben at lone and at bode,
 As burgeises useth.
 Thus they serven Sathanas,
 And soules bygyleth,
 Marchaunes of malisones,
 Mansede wrecches.

Creed of Piers Ploughman, l. 1417-32.

² The curious confusion of vice with religion, fostered by mediæval sacerdotalism, is well illustrated by the complaint which Erasmus puts in the mouth of the Virgin—"Et nonnumquam ea petunt a virgine quæ verecundus juvenis vix auderet petere a lena, quæque ne pudet literis committere" (Erasmi Colloq. Peregrinatio Religionis). The existence of such inconsistencies is one of the unfathomable mysteries of human intelligence.

laws of man's being and of human society, and the world was made to see, by the energetic action of Puritan sects, that virtue was possible as the rule of life in large communities. We may smile at the eccentricities of Puritanism, but the rescue of modern civilisation from the long heritage of ancient vice, and the decency which characterises modern society, may fairly be attributed to the force of that fierce reaction against the splendid corruptions of the mediæval Church.

In considering, however, the influence of the regular clergy, or monastic orders, we find a more complex array of motives and results. The earlier foundations of the West, as we have seen, to a great extent neutralised the inherent selfishness of monachism by the regulations which prescribed a due proportion of labour to be mingled with prayer. The duty which man owes to the world was to some extent recognised as not incompatible with the duty which he owed to his God, and civilisation has had few more efficient instruments than the self-denying work of the earnest men who, from Columba to Adalbert, sowed the seeds of Christianity and culture among the frontier lands of Christendom. When discipline such as these men inculcated could be enforced, the benefits of monachism far out-weighed its evils. All the peaceful arts, from agriculture to music, owed to the Benedictines their perservation or their advancement, and it would be difficult to estimate exactly the influence for good which resulted from institutions to which the thoughtful and studious could safely retire from a turbulent and barbarous world. These institutions, however, from their own inherent defects, carried in them the germs of corruption. The claims to supereminent sanctity, carrying with it the power of efficacious intercession

with God, were inevitably used as means for the accumulation of wealth wrung from the fears or superstition of the sinner. With wealth came the abandonment of labour; and idleness and luxury were the prolific parents of license. True-hearted men were not wanting to combat the irrepressible evil. From Chrodegang to St. Vincent de Paul, the history of monachism is full of illustrious names of those who devoted themselves to the mission of reforming abuses and restoring the ideal of the perfect monk, dead to the seductions of the world, and living only to do the work which he deems most acceptable to God. Many of these mistakenly assumed that exaggerated mortification was the only gateway to salvation, and the only cure for the frightful immorality which pervaded so many monastic establishments. Others, with a truer insight into the living principles of Christianity, sought to turn the enthusiasm of their disciples to account in works of perennial mercy and charity, at a period when no other organisations existed for the succour of the helpless and miserable.

Yet when we reflect how large a proportion of the wealth and intellect of Europe was absorbed in the religious houses, it will be seen that the system was a most cumbrous and imperfect one, which gave but a slender return for the magnitude of the means which it involved. Still, it was the only system existing, and possibly the only one which could exist in so rude a structure of society, individualised to a degree which destroyed all sense of public responsibility and precluded all idea of a state created for the well-being of its component parts. Thus, the monastery became the shelter of the wayfarer, and the dispenser of alms to the needy. It was the principal school of the poor and humble; and while the Universities of Oxford and Paris were devoting their energies to unprofitable

dialectics and the subtle disputations of Aristotelian logic, in multitudes of abbey libraries quiet monks were multiplying priceless manuscripts, and preserving to after ages the treasures of the past. When fanciful asceticism did not forbid the healing of the sick, monks laboured fearlessly in hospitals and pest-houses, and distributed among the many the benefactions which they had wrung from the late repentance of the few. As time wore on, even the religious teaching of the public passed almost exclusively into their hands, and to the followers of Dominic and Francis of Assisi the people owed such insight as they could obtain into the promises of the gospel. If the enthusiasm which prompted labours so strenuous did not shrink from lighting the fires of persecution, we must remember that religious zeal, accompanied by irresponsible power, has one invariable history.

While thus, in various ways, the ascetic spirit led to institutions which promoted the progress of civilisation, in others it necessarily had a directly opposite tendency. Nothing contributes more strongly to the extension of knowledge and of culture than the striving for material comfort and individual advancement in worldly well-being. Luxury and ambition thus have their uses in stimulating the inquiring and inventive faculties of man, in rendering the forces of nature subservient to our use, and in softening the rugged asperities which are incompatible with the regular administration of law. Every instinct of human nature has its destined purpose in life, and the perfect man is to be found in the proportionate cultivation of each element of his character, not in the exaggerated development of those faculties which are deemed primarily good, nor in the entire repression of those which are evil only when their prominence destroys the balance of the

whole. The ascetic selected for eradication one group of human aspirations, which was the most useful under proper discipline, and not perhaps the worst even in its ordinary excess. Only those who have studied the varied aspects of mediæval society can rightly estimate the enormous influence which the Church possessed, in those ages of faith, to mould the average habits of thought in any desired direction. It can readily be seen that if the tireless preaching of the vanity of human things and the beatitude of mortification occasionally produced such extravagances as those of the flagellants, the spirit which now and then burst forth in such eruption must have been an element of no little power in the forces which governed society at large, and must have exercised a most depressing influence in restraining the general advance of civilisation. Not only did it thus more or less weigh down the efforts of almost every man, but the ardent minds that would otherwise have been leaders in the race of progress were the ones most likely, under the pervading spirit of the age, to be the foremost in maceration and self-denial; while those who would not yield to the seduction were either silenced or wasted their wisdom on a generation which believed too much to believe in them. When idleness was holy, earnest workers had little chance.

The effect of monastic asceticism in moulding the character may be seen in the admiring picture drawn by a disciple in the fifteenth century of a shining light of the Carthusian Order in the monastery of Vallis Dei, near Seez in Normandy. He had every virtue, he was an earnest reader and transcriber of MSS., and he practised mortifications even greater than those prescribed by the severe rules of the order. He rarely slept on the couch provided for each brother, but passed his nights in prayer

on the steps of the altar. In the hair shirt worn next his skin he cultivated lice and maggots so assiduously that they were often seen crawling over his face, and he scourged himself for every unhallowed wandering thought. He had preserved his virginity to old age, and his life had been passed in the Church, yet in his daily confessions he accused himself of every sin possible to man, and he rigorously performed whatever penance was assigned to him. With all this maceration, the flesh would still assert itself, and he was tormented with evil desires which the sharp cords of the discipline failed to subdue. His office of procurator of the abbey required him to make frequent visits on business to the neighbouring town, and he never left the gates of his retreat without lamenting and expressing the fear that he should not return to it the same as he left it.¹ If we consider what might have been effected by the energies of thousands of men such as this, had those energies not been absorbed in lifelong asceticism, we may conceive in some measure the retardation of human progress wrought by the influence of monachism.

Another result which may fairly be attributed to the ascetic teachings of the Church is the slow growth of population during the mediæval period. Notwithstanding the gross and flagrant disregard of the rule, it was impossible to immure in convents men and women by the hundred thousand during successive generations without retarding greatly the rate of increase of the species. The rudeness of the arts and sciences, war, pestilence and famine were doubtless efficient causes, yet were they less efficient than enforced celibacy. This is evident when we see the rapid rate of growth established on the abrogation or even relaxation of the rule. The suppression of

¹ Anon. Cartusiens. de Religionum Orig. cap. 17-19 (Martene Ampl. Coll. VI. 40-46).

the monastic orders in France followed soon after the reforms by which Joseph II. discouraged them throughout the Austrian empire, and the result is visible in the enormous increase of European population which followed, notwithstanding the fearful destruction of life in the Napoleonic wars. It is calculated that in 1788 Europe numbered 144,561,000 souls, which within fifty years had been augmented to 253,622,000, or about seventy-five per cent. Of late years the birth-rate has decreased in consequence of the severity of conscription in the military monarchies, but the enormous growth in the half-century following the French Revolution is the best commentary on the influences which for so many ages kept the population almost stationary.¹

It required the unbelief of the fifteenth century to give free rein to the rising commercial energies and the craving for material improvement that paved the way for the decadence of ascetic sacerdotalism. The corruptions of the Church, which indirectly caused and accompanied that awakening of the human mind, will be alluded to hereafter when we come to consider the movements leading to the Protestant Reformation. At present we must turn aside for a moment to consider one or two external developments of the religious activity of the Middle Ages.

¹ See Lecky's History of Rationalism.

CHAPTER XXII

THE MILITARY ORDERS

THE Military Orders were the natural expression of the admixture of religious and warlike enthusiasm, reacting on each other, which produced and was fostered by the Crusades. When bishops considered that they rendered a service acceptable to God in leading vast hosts to slaughter the Paynim, it was an easy transition for soldiers to turn monks, and to consecrate their swords to the bloody work of avenging their Redeemer.

When the Hospitallers—Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, of Rhodes, or of Malta—first emerged from their humble position of ministering to the afflictions of their fellow-pilgrims, and commenced to assume a military organisation under Raymond du Puy, about the year 1120, their statutes required the three ordinary monastic vows of poverty, obedience, and chastity.¹ In fact, they were at first Benedictines; but when they became numerous enough to form a separate body, they adopted the rule of St. Augustin.

When the rule for the Templars—“*Regula pauperum commilitonum sanctæ civitatis*”—was adopted in 1128, at the Council of Troyes, it contained no special injunction to administer a vow of celibacy, but the context shows that such a condition was understood as a matter of course.² Some little difficulty was evidently experienced

¹ Videlicet castitatem, obedientiam . . . atque vivere sine proprio.—Statut. Ord. S. Johan. Hierosol. Tit. I. § 1 (Lünig Cod. Ital. Diplom. T. II. p. 1743).

² Thus Cap. LV. : “*Hoc enim injustum consideramus ut cum fratribus Deo castitatem promittentibus fratres hujusmodi in una eademque domo maneat.*” Cap. LVI. and LXXII., by the latter of which even the kiss of a mother was denied them,

at first, since, from the nature of the case, novices had to be trained warriors who must frequently have been bound by family ties, and whose education had not been such as to fit them for the restraints of their new life. Married men, it is true, were admitted, but only on condition that both husband and wife should bind themselves to bequeath all their property to the order; they were to lead an honest life, but the husband was not permitted to live with the brethren, nor to wear the white mantle of the order.¹ It is probable that the perpetual nature of the obligations assumed was not easy to be enforced upon the fierce members of the brotherhood, for, in 1183, Lucius III., in confirming the privileges of the order, specially commands that no one who enters it shall be allowed to return to the world.²

The history of these two orders is too well known to require it to be traced minutely here. If, with the growth of their reputation and wealth, the austere ascetism of their early days was lost, and if luxury and vice took the place of religious enthusiasm and soldierly devotion to the Cross, they but obeyed the universal law which in human institutions is so apt to render corruption the consequence of prosperity. One conclusion may be drawn, however, from the proceedings by which the powerful Order of the Temple was extinguished at the

render evident the extreme asceticism which was proposed by the founders of the order (Harduin. T. VI. P. II. pp. 1142, 1146).

At a subsequent period we learn that the Templar's oath of initiation promised "obedientiam, castitatem, vivere sine proprio, et succurrere terræ sanctæ pro posse suo." It was, moreover, enjoined upon them not to enter a house in which a woman lay in child-bed, not to be present at the celebration of weddings or the purification of women, nor to receive any service from a woman, even water for washing the hands.—See the proceedings against them in 1309 in Wilkins II. 331 et seq.

These regulations do not appear in the Templar Rules, but the severe punishment of deprivation of the habit was decreed for all acts implying unchastity, and this, we are told, was not infrequently enforced.—Curzon, *La Règle du Temple*, § 236 (Paris, 1886).

¹ *Regulæ Pauperum Commilitonum* Cap. lv. (Curzon, § 69).

² Rymer, *Fœdera*, I. 55.

commencement of the fourteenth century. Notwithstanding the open and scandalous licentiousness of the order, it is a little singular that the interminable articles of accusation against the members contain no allusion to unchastity, while crimes most fantastic, practices most beastly, and charges most frivolous are heaped upon them in strange confusion.¹ As the object of those who conducted the prosecution was to excite a popular abhorrence that would justify the purposed spoliation, it is evident that the simple infraction of vows of chastity was regarded as so venial a fault and so much a matter of course that its proof could in no way serve the end of rousing indignation against the accused.

It is somewhat remarkable that the same century which saw the foundation of the Orders of the Hospital and Temple also witnessed one which, although bound by the rule of St. Augustin, and subjected to the ordinary vows of obedience, property in common, and inability to return to the world, yet allowed to its members the option of selecting either marriage or celibacy, and even of contracting second marriages. This was the Spanish Order of Santiago. What we have seen of the want of respect paid by the Spanish Church to asceticism may lessen surprise at the founding of an order based upon such regulations, yet it is difficult to understand how so great a violation of established principles could be sanctioned by Alexander III., who confirmed the order in 1175,² or by Innocent III. and Honorius III., who formally approved its privileges.³

The example was one of evil import in the Peninsula. The Council of Valladolid in 1322 felt itself obliged to denounce under severe penalties the practice

¹ Wilkins II. 331-2.—Michelet, Procès des Templiers, I. 89 sqq.

² Alexandri III. Epist. Append. III. No. 20 (Harduin. VI. P. II. p. 1557).

³ Raynald. Annal. ann. 1210, No. 6, 7; ann. 1223, No. 54; ann. 1496, No. 33.

of dowering children with the possessions of the community, in which the military orders followed the precedent set them by the Church.¹ During the universal license of the fifteenth century, when ascetic vows became a mockery, and the profligacy of those who took them exposed all such observances to contempt, the military orders formed no exception to the general shamelessness. In 1429 the Council of Tortosa deplored the destruction and waste of the temporal possessions of the religious knights from the general concubinage in which they indulged, and to effect a cure it promulgated regulations of peculiar severity, threatening with a liberal hand the penalties of excommunication and degradation.² These proved as powerless as usual, and not long after a more sensible remedy was adopted by Eugenius IV. when he released the ancient and renowned Order of Calatrava from the obligation of celibacy, for reasons which would have led him to extend the privilege of marriage to the whole Church, had the purity of ecclesiastics been truly the object of the rule. He recounts with sorrow the disorderly lives of the knights, and, quoting the text which says that it is better to marry than to burn, he grants the privilege of marriage because he deems it preferable to live with a wife than with a mistress.³

This apparently did not extend to the *comendadores* of the order, for we hear, in 1538, of negotiations for them and for those of the Order of Alcántara, with Paul III., for permission to marry. He conceded the dispensation, but when they found the price demanded, they refused to pay it, and the matter was left unsettled.⁴

¹ Concil. Vallis-oletan. ann. 1322 can. vi. (Aguirre V. 243).

² Concil. Dertusan. ann. 1429 can. iii. (Harduin. VIII. 1076).

³ Raynaldi Annal. ann. 1441, No. 20.—The Order of Calatrava was under the strictest of the rules, the Cistercian (Giustiniani, Ordini Militari s. v.).

⁴ Boletín de la Real Academia de Historia, Tom. XLVI. p. 7.

Presumably the privileges granted by Eugenius IV. were extended to the Order of Montesa, founded in Valencia in 1319, on the ruins of the Temple, for it was affiliated with the Order of Calatrava, from which its members were drawn. A writer towards the close of the sixteenth century tells us that there had then been fourteen Masters who had vowed chastity, and none of them had married until the present one, Don Cesar de Borja, who was married.¹

Similar arguments were employed to extend the same privilege to the Orders of Avis and of Jesus Christ, of Portugal. The former was founded in 1147 by Alfonso I., under the Cistercian rule, and chastity was one of its fundamental obligations;² the latter was the continuation of the Order of the Temple, which, preserved in Portugal by the humanity of King Dionysius, assumed in the fourteenth century the name of Jesus. Both institutions became incurably corrupted; their preceptories were dens of avowed and scandalous prostitution, and their promiscuous amours filled the kingdom with hate and dissension. When at length, in 1496, King Emanuel applied to Alexander VI. to grant the privilege of marriage, in hopes of reforming the orders, it is interesting to observe how instinctively the minds of men turned to this as the sole efficient remedy for the immorality which all united in attributing to the hopeless attempt to enforce a purity impossible in the existing condition of society. Alexander assented to the request, and bestowed on the orders the right of marriage on the same conditions as those enjoined on the Knights of Santiago.³ It is true that

¹ Zurita, *Añales de Aragon*, Lib. VI. cap. xxvi.—Ilescas, *Historia Pontifical*, Lib. VI. cap. ii.

² Reg. Ord. Mil. Avisii a B. Joanne Cirita edita (*Migne's Patrologie*, T. 188, p. 1669).

³ Alexander's Bull declares that "Milites dictarum militiarum pro majori parte, continentie et castitatis voto, qui in eorum professione emittunt, contempto, con-

Osorius doubts whether the benefits of the change were not exceeded by its evils, as he states that it lowered the character of the orders, opened the door to unworthy members, and led to the dissipation of their property.¹

There was another Portuguese order of a somewhat different character. Twenty years after founding the Knights of Avis, Alfonso I., in 1167, to commemorate his miraculous victory over the Moors at Santarem, instituted the Order of St. Michael. The knights were allowed to marry once; if widowed, they were obliged to embrace celibacy; and the Abbot of Alcobaça, who was the superior of the order, was empowered to excommunicate them for irregularity of life, to compel them to give up their mistresses. They were moreover bound to perform the same religious exercises as lay brothers of the Cistercians. The order is interesting as forming a curious link between the secular, religious, and military elements of the period.²

During all this, the knights of St. John adhered to their ancient statutes, and endeavoured from time to time to reform the profligacy which seemed inseparable from the institution. When the ascetic Antonio Fluviano, who held the grand mastership from 1421 to 1437, promulgated a regulation that any one guilty of public concubinage should receive three warnings, with severe penalties for contumacy,³ it suggests a condition of morals by no means creditable to the brethren. So,

cubinas etiam plures, et in eorum ac præceptoriarum et prioratum dictarum militarium propriis domibus et locis, non sine magno religionis opprobrio, publice tenere et eis cohabitare, et etiam adulteria cum aliis mulieribus conjugatis committere non verentur: ex quo ab eorundem regionum incolis et habitatoribus maximo odio habentur, dissensiones et inimicitia oriuntur, diversa scandala quotidie concitantur etc.—Raynaldi Annal. ann. 1496, No. 33.

¹ Osorii de Reb. Emmanuelis R. Lusitan. Lib. I. (Edit. Colon. 1574, p. 12a).

² Patrologie, T. 188, p. 1674.

³ Statut. Ord. S. Johan. Hierosol. Tit. XVIII. § 50.

a century later, the stern Villiers de l'Isle-Adam was forced to declare that any one openly acknowledging an illegitimate child should be for ever after incapacitated for office, benefice, or dignity.¹ What the knights were soon afterwards, the scandalous pages of Brantôme sufficiently attest, and that the succeeding century did not witness an improvement may be inferred from the dictum of an eminent casuist that the mistresses of the members of such orders were not bound to make restitution of the moneys received from their lovers.²

The Marian or Teutonic Order, perhaps the most wealthy and powerful of all, was founded in 1190, and adopted the rule of the Templars as regards its religious government, with that of the Hospitallers to regulate its duties of charity and hospitality. The three vows of chastity, obedience, and poverty were essential, and no one had power to dispense from either of them.³ For a full century of its existence it was sorely oppressed with poverty,⁴ but at length, when transferred from the Holy Land to North-eastern Germany, it bore a prominent part in Christianising those regions, and what it won by the sword it retained possession of in its own right. With wealth came indolence and luxury, and the order became corrupt, as others had been.⁵ Its history offers nothing of special interest to us until, in 1525, the Grand Master Albert of Brandenburg went over to Lutheranism with many of his knights, founded the hereditary dukedom of Prussia, and married—of which more hereafter. Those of the order who adhered to Catholicism maintained the organisation on the rich

¹ Ibid. Tit. xviii. § 51.

² Summa Diana, s. v. *Religiosi Milites*, n. 3 (Venetiis, 1646).

³ Perlbach, Die Statuten des deutschen Ordens, p. 29 (Halle a S. 1890).

⁴ See the supplication of Rodolph of Hapsburg to the Pope for assistance to the order.—Cod. Epist. Rodolphi I. No. xcix. (Lipsiæ, 1806).

⁵ Anon. Cartus. de Relig. Orig. cap. xxviii. (Martene Ampliss. Coll. VII. 62).

possessions which the piety of ages had bestowed upon them throughout Germany, until this worn-out relic of the past disappeared in the convulsions of the Napoleonic wars, though the Archduke Wilhelm of Austria is—or recently was—reckoned as Grand Master, and performing the occasional ceremony of admitting members in assemblages of mail-clad knights. How completely the remnant of the order, still existing in Austria, has become a mere matter of social distinction is seen in the concession made in 1886 by Leo XIII., at the request of the Emperor Franz Joseph, that in future the knights shall take only simple and not solemn vows.¹

¹ Leonis PP. XIII. Litt. Apost. *Neminem profecto*, 16 Martii, 1886 (Acta, VI. 44).

CHAPTER XXIII

THE HERESIES

ALLUSION has already been made to the introduction of Manichæism into Western Europe through Bulgaria and Lombardy. Notwithstanding its stern and unrelenting suppression wherever it was discovered during the eleventh and twelfth centuries, its votaries multiplied in secret. The disorders of the clergy, their oppression of the people, and their quarrels with the nobles over their temporal possessions made them many enemies among the laity; and the simplicity of the Manichæan belief, its freedom from aspirations for temporal aggrandisement, and its denunciations of the immorality and grasping avidity of the priesthood, found for it an appreciative audience and made ready converts. Towards the close of the twelfth century the South of France was discovered to be filled with heretics, in whom the names of Cathari, Paterins, Albigenses, &c., concealed the more odious appellation of Manichæans.

It is not our province to trace out in detail the bloody vicissitudes of the Albigensian Crusades and of the Inquisition which completed their work. It is sufficient for our purpose to indicate the identity of the Catharan belief with that of the ancient sect which we have seen to exercise so powerful an influence in moulding and encouraging the asceticism of the early Church. The Dualistic principle was fully recognised. No necessity was regarded as justifying the use of meat, or even of eggs and cheese, or in fact of anything which had its origin in animal propagation. Marriage was an abomina-

tion and a mortal sin, which could not be intensified by adultery or other excesses.¹

Engrafted on these errors were others more practically dangerous, as they were the inevitable protest against the all-absorbing sacerdotalism which by this time had become the distinguishing characteristic of the Church. In denying the existence of purgatory, and the efficacy of prayers for the dead and the invocation of saints, a mortal blow was aimed against the system to which the Church owed its firmest hold on the souls and purses of the people. In reviving the Hildebrandine doctrine that the sacraments were not to be administered by ecclesiastics in a state of sin, and in exaggerating it into an incompatibility between sin and holding Church preferment, a most dangerous and revolutionary turn was given to the widespread discontent with which the excesses of the clergy were regarded.² So sure a hold, indeed, had such views upon the popular feeling, that we find them reappear with every heresy, transmitted with regular filiation through the Waldenses, the Wickliffites, and the Hussites, so that in every age, from Gregory to the Reformation, the measures with which he broke down the independence of the local clergy returned to plague their inventors.

Yet with all this, the heretics to outward appearance long continued unexceptionably orthodox. Industrious and sober, none were more devoted to all the observances of the Church, none more regular at mass and confession, more devout at the altar or more liberal at the

¹ *Communis opinio Catharorum est quod matrimonium carnale fuit semper mortale peccatum, et quod non puniatur quis gravius in futuro propter adulterium vel incestum quam propter legitimum conjugium, nec etiam inter eos propter hoc aliquis gravius puniretur.*—Summa F. Renieri (*Martene Thesaur.* V. 1761).

This Regnier describes himself as a heresiarch previous to his conversion, and his summary of the creed of his former associates may be regarded as correct in the main, though perhaps somewhat heightened in repulsiveness.

² Bernardi Serm. lxxvi. in Cantica, §§ 9, 11.

offertory. Hidden beneath this fair seeming, their heresy was only the more dangerous, as it attracted converts with unexampled rapidity. Priests gave up their churches to join the society, wives left their husbands, and husbands abandoned their wives; and when questioned as to their renunciation of the duties and privileges of marriage, they all professed to be bound with a vow of chastity. Yet if so ardent a combatant as St. Bernard is to be believed, their rigorous asceticism was only a cloak for libertinism. It is possible that the enthusiastic self-mortification of the sectaries led them to test their resolution by the dangerous experiments common among the early Christians, and possibly also with the same deplorable results. St. Bernard at least argues that constant companionship of the sexes without sin would require a greater miracle than raising the dead, and as these heretics could not perform the lesser prodigy, it was reasonable to presume that they failed of the greater—and his conclusion is not unlikely to be true.¹ Be this as it may, the virtue of these puritan sects rendered chastity dangerous to the orthodox, for the celebrated Peter Cantor relates as a fact within his own knowledge, that honest matrons who resisted the attempts of priests to seduce them were accused of Manichæism and condemned as heretics.²

The orthodox polemics, in controverting the exaggerated asceticism of these heretics, had a narrow and a difficult path to tread. Their own authorities had so

¹ Bernardi Serm. lxxv. in Cantica, §§ 4, 5.—“Cum femina semper esse et non cognoscere feminam, nonne plus est quam mortuum suscitare? Quod minus est non potes; et quod majus est vis credam tibi? Quotidie latus tuum ad latus juvenulæ est in mensa; lectus tuus ad lectum ejus in camera, oculi tui ad illius oculos in colloquio, manus tuæ ad manus ipsius in opere: et continens vis putari? Esto ut sis; sed ego suspicione non careo.”

The morality of the age had evidently not impressed the Saint with the conviction of human power to resist temptation.

² Pet. Cantor. Verb. Abbreviat. cap. lxxviii.

exalted the praises of virgin purity, that it was not easy to meet the arguments of those who merely carried out the same principle somewhat further, in fearlessly following out the premises to their logical conclusion.¹ There is extant a curious tract, being a dialogue between a Catholic and a Paterin, in which the latter of course has the worst of the disputation, yet he presses his adversary hard with the texts which were customarily cited by the orthodox advocates of clerical celibacy—"qui habent uxores sint tanquam non habentes," "qui non reliquerit uxorem et filios propter me non est me dignus," &c.; and the Catholic can only elude their force by giving to them metaphorical explanations very different from those which of old had been assumed in the canons requiring the separation of man and wife on ordination.² How difficult of definition was the distinction in this matter between orthodoxy and heresy is shown in the case of Heinrich Minneke, Provost of the Cistercian nunnery of Neuwerke in Goslar, burnt as a Manichæan in 1222, when one of the articles of accusation against him was that his praises of virginity seemed

¹ Bishop Gerard, of Cambrai, confesses this in his refutation of the Artesian Manichæans in 1025—"De quibus nos responsuros quodam discretionis gubernaculo nostri sermonis carinam subire oportet, ne quasi inter duos scopulos naufragium incurrentes, occasionem demus in alterutrum, scilicet aut omnes indiscrete a conjugii exterrendo, aut omnes indiscrete ad connubia commonendo."—Concil. Atrabatens. ann. 1025 cap. x. (Hartzheim III. 89).

When St. Bernard, in his fiery denunciation of the Manichæan errors, exclaimed, "non advertant qualiter omni immunditiæ laxat habenas qui nuptias damnat" (In Cantica Sermon. lxvi. § 3), he did not pause to reflect how severe a sentence he was passing on the saints of the fifth century who, as we have seen, would only admit marriage to be a pardonable offence.

² Disputat. inter Cathol. et Paterin. c. ii. (Martene Thesaur. V. 1712-13).

It is somewhat singular that Manichæism should have been attributed to a sect of heretics in Bosnia who styled themselves Christians, and who were brought back to the fold in 1203 by a legate of Innocent III. It would appear that, so far from entertaining Manichæan doctrines, neglect of ecclesiastical celibacy was actually one of their erroneous practices, for in their pledge of reformation they promise that separation of man and wife shall thenceforth be enforced "neque de cætero recipiemus aliquem vel aliquam conjugatum, nisi mutuo consensu, continentia promissa, ambo pariter convertantur."—Batthyani II. 293.

a condemnation of matrimony.¹ It was fortunate for St. Jerome that he did not live in the thirteenth century.

The stubborn resistance of the Albigenses to the enormous odds brought against them shows the unconquerable vitality of the anti-sacerdotal spirit which was then so widely diffused throughout Southern Europe. In a different shape it had already manifested itself during the first half of the twelfth century, when Pierre de Bruys infected all the South of France with the heresy called, after him and his most noted follower, the Petrobrusian or Henrician. This was an uncompromising revolt against the whole system of Roman Christianity. It not only abrogated pædo-baptism, and promulgated heretical notions respecting the Eucharist, but it abolished the visible symbols and ceremonies which formed so large a portion of the sacerdotal fabric—churches, crucifixes, chanting, fasting, gifts and offerings for the dead, and even the mass. But little is known respecting the Petrobrusians, except what can be derived from the refutation of their errors by Peter the Venerable. He says nothing specifically respecting their views upon ascetic celibacy, but we may assume that this was one of the doctrinal and practical corruptions which they assailed, from a passage in which, describing their excesses, he complains of the public eating of flesh on Passion Sunday, the cruel flagellation of priests, the imprisonment of monks, and their being forced to marry by threats and torments. Even after de Bruys was burned alive in 1126, his disciple, Henry, boldly carried on the contest, and the papal legate, Cardinal Alberic, sent for St. Bernard to assist him in suppressing the heretics. The latter, in a letter written in 1147 to the Count of Toulouse, describes the religious

¹ Kaltner, Konrad v. Marburg, pp. 90–95 (Prag. 1882).

condition of his territories as most deplorable in consequence of the prevalence of the heresy—the churches were without congregations, the pastors without flocks, the people without pastors, the sacraments without reverence, the dying without consolation, and the new-born without baptism. Even making allowance for some exaggeration in all this, there can be no doubt that the heresy received extensive popular support and that it was professed publicly without disguise. At Alby it was dominant, so that when the Cardinal-legate went there, the people received him in derision with asses and drums, and when he preached, scarce thirty persons assembled to hear him; but two days later St. Bernard so affected them with his eloquence that they renounced their errors. He was less successful at Vertfeuil where resided a hundred knights-banneret, who refused to listen to him, and whom he cursed in consequence, whereof they all perished miserably. Though St. Bernard was forced to return to Clairvaux without accomplishing the extirpation of the heresy, Henry was finally captured, and probably died in prison.¹

It was probably another branch of the same sect which was discovered at Liège in 1144, described as brought thither from the south and pervading all France and the neighbouring countries. Its followers denied the efficacy of baptism, of the Eucharist and of the imposition of hands; they rejected not only oaths and vows, but marriage itself, and denied that the Holy Spirit could be gained except through good works. These heretics, however, had not in them the spirit of martyrdom, and speedily recanted on being discovered.

It was a period of transition, in which scholastic

¹ S. Petri Venerab. contra Petrobrusianos.—S. Bernardi Epist. 241.—Ejusd. Vit. Prim. Lib. vi. Part iii. c. 10.—Guill. de Podio-Laurent. c. i.—Alberic. Trium-Font. Chron. ann. 1148.

theology was beginning to assume shape, at the hands of the teachers in the University of Paris, and men's minds were easily led astray by any one who proclaimed a new form of belief. This explains the career of the crazy heresiarch, Éon de l'Étoile. During one of the epidemics of maceration and fanaticism which form such curious episodes in mediæval history, Éon, born of a noble Breton family, abandoned himself to the savage life of a hermit in the wilderness. Drawn by a vision to attend divine service, his excited mysticism caught the words which ended the recitation of the collect, "*Per eum qui venturus est judicare vivos et mortuos*;" and the resemblance of "eum" with his own name inspired him with the revelation that he was the Son of God. Men's minds were ready for any extravagance, and Éon soon had disciples who adored him as a deity incarnate. Nothing can be wilder than the tales which are related of him by eye-witnesses—the aureole of glory which surrounded him, the countless wealth which was at the disposal of his followers, the rich but unsubstantial banquets which were served at his bidding by invisible hands, the superhuman velocity of his movements when eluding those who were bent on his capture. Éon declared war upon the churches which monopolised the wealth of the people while neglecting the duties for which they had been enriched; and he pillaged them of their treasures, which he distributed lavishly to the poor. Hugues, Archbishop of Rouen, who prided himself on his theological ability, sought to convert the heretics by an elaborate refutation of their tenets, among which he enumerated promiscuous licentiousness and disregard of clerical celibacy. Daniel, he gravely assured them, symbolises virginity, Noah continence, and Job marriage. Then, quoting Ezekiel xiv. 13–20, wherein Jehovah, threatening the land with destruction, says,

“Though these three men, Noah, Daniel, and Job, were in it, they should deliver but their own souls through their righteousness,” he proceeded triumphantly to the conclusion that recantation alone could save the heretics from their merited fate. More efficacious were the troops sent to quell the disturbances, who drove Éon to Aquitaine for refuge, but when, in 1148, he reappeared in Champagne he was captured and carried before Eugenius III. at the Council of Rouen, in 1148. There he boldly proclaimed his mission and his power. Exhibiting a forked staff which he carried, he declared that when he held it with the fork upwards, God ruled heaven and hell, and he governed the earth; but that when he reversed its position, then he had at command two-thirds of the universe, and left only the remaining third to God. He was pronounced hopelessly insane, but this would not have saved him had not his captor, the Archbishop of Rheims, represented that his life had been pledged to him on his surrender. He was, therefore, delivered to Suger, Abbot of St. Denis, to be imprisoned, and he soon afterwards died. Even this did not shake the faith of his disciples. Many of them, in their fierce fanaticism, preferred the stake to recantation, and numbers of them were thus put to death before the heresy could be extinguished.¹

When, about the middle of the twelfth century, the sudden death of a companion so impressed Peter Waldo of Lyons that he distributed his fortune among the poor, and devoted himself to preaching the supereminent merits

¹ Guillielm. de Newburgh, Lib. I. cap. 19.—Ottonis Frising. de Gest. Frid. I. Lib. I. cap. liv., lv.—Sigeberti Chron. Continuat. Gemblac. ann. 1146.—Ejusdem Continuat. Præmonstrat. ann. 1148.—Roberti de Monte Chron. ann. 1148.—Hugon. Rotomag. contra Hæret. Lib. III. cap. 6.—The detailed account given by William of Newburgh he professes to have gathered from some of Éon's followers performing penitential pilgrimages after the death of the heresiarch.

of poverty, nothing was further from his thoughts than the founding of a new heresy. Ardent disciples gathered around him, disseminating his views, which spread with rapidity; but their intention was to establish a society within the Church, and they applied, between 1181 and 1185, to Lucius III. for the papal authorisation. Lucius, however, took exception to their going barefoot, to their neglect of the tonsure, and to their retaining the society of women. They were stubborn, and he condemned them as heretics.¹ The enthusiasm which the Church might have turned to so much account, as it subsequently did that of the Franciscans and Dominicans, was thus diverted to unorthodox channels, and speedily arrayed itself in opposition. The character of the revolt is shown in a passage of the *Nobla Leyczon*, which declares that all the popes, cardinals, bishops, and abbots together cannot obtain pardon for a single mortal sin; thus leading directly to the conclusion that no intercessor could be of avail between God and man—

Ma yo aus o dire, car se troba en ver,
 Que tuit li papa que foron de Silvestre entro en aquest,
 Et tuit li cardinal et tuit li vesque e tuit li aba,
 Tuit aquiستي ensem non han tan de potesta,
 Que ilh poissan perdonar un sol pecca mortal.
 Solament Dio perdona, que autre non ho po far.²

Still, they did not even yet consider themselves as separated from the Church, for they consented to submit their peculiar doctrines to the chances of a disputation, presided over by an orthodox priest. Of course, the

¹ Conrad. Urspergens. ann. 1212.—“Hoc quoque probrosum in eis videbatur, quod viri et mulieres simul ambulabant in via, et plerumque simul manebant in una domo, ut de eis diceretur, quod quandoque simul in lectulis accubabant.” The follies of the early Christians were doubtless imitated by the new sectaries. As early as 1197 we find them denounced as heretics, under the various names of Waldenses, Poor Men of Lyons, and Sabatati, and condemned to the stake by the Council of Girona, in Aragon.—Aguirre V. 103.

² La Nobla Leyczon, 408-13.

decision went against them, and a portion of the "Poor Men of Lyons" submitted to the result. The remainder, however, maintained their faith as rigidly as ever. From Bernard de Font-Cauld, who records this disputation, and from Alain de l'Isle, another contemporary, who wrote in confutation of their errors, we have a minute account of their peculiarities of belief. Their principal heresy was a strict adherence to the Hildebrandine doctrine that neither reverence nor obedience was due to priests in mortal sin, whose ministrations to the living and whose prayers for the dead were equally to be despised. In the existing condition of sacerdotal morals, this necessarily destroyed all reverence for the Church at large, and Bernard and Alain had no hesitation in proving it to be most dangerously heterodox. Their recurrence to Scripture, moreover, as the sole foundation of Christian belief, with the claim of private interpretation, was necessarily destructive to all the forms of sacerdotalism, and led them to entertain many other heretical tenets. They admitted no distinction between clergy and laity. Every member of the sect, male or female, was a priest, entitled to preach and to hear confessions. Purgatory was denied, and the power of absolution derided. Lying and swearing were mortal sins, and homicide was not excusable under any circumstances.¹ Yet naturally they did not repudiate the ascetic principles of the Church, and they regarded continence as counselled, though not commanded, by the Christian dispensation—

La ley velha maudi lo ventre que fruc non a porta,
Ma la novella conselha gardar vergeneta.²

¹ Bernardi Fontis Calidi Lib. contra Waldenses.—Alani de Insulis contra Hæret. Lib. II.

² La Nobla Leyczon, 242-3.

Though marriage is praised and its purity is to be preserved—

Gardes ferm lo matrimoni, aquel noble convent, ¹

thus showing their disapproval of the Manichæan doctrines of the Cathari. A sect which existed through centuries of persecution, concealed in scattered communities without a head, of course varied considerably in its tenets. In the earlier period the Waldenses recognised vows of chastity and treated the seduction of nuns as incest. Later they held that, in view of the Greek custom, the Latin Church erred in prescribing celibacy to the priesthood, and their ministers, or *barbes*, were married. With incredible fortitude they maintained their faith and, when came the Reformation, at the Synod of Chanforans those of the Valleys adopted most of the Protestant tenets and declared that the rule of virginity was a precept of Satan.²

The Teutonic tendency to mysticism contributed its share of heresy, which bears some relation to our subject. Ortlieb of Strassburg is supposed to have been a disciple of Amaury of Bène, whose pantheistic speculations were condemned by the University of Paris in 1204. Ortlieb carried them to Germany, where they gave rise to a sect calling itself the Brethren of the Free Spirit, and variously known as Ortlibenses, Begghards, Beguines, and Picards. From their pantheism they drew the deduction that man is God, leading to the conclusion that he is impeccable, and that whatever he may do is without sin. While this doubtless led to excesses on the part of those incapable of self-restraint, it was accompanied with the austere

¹ La Nobla Leyczon, 88.

² Reinierus contra Waldenses (Passauer Anonymus), cap. v. (Mag. Bib. Patrum, XIII. 300.—Edouard Montet, *Histoire littéraire des Vaudois*, pp. 97, 98, 108–10 (Paris, 1885).—Herzog, *Abriss der gesammten Kirchengeschichte*, II. 453, 462.

condemnation of all sexual indulgence, save for the exclusive object of procuring offspring. It was taught that a woman in marrying should feel the deepest sorrow for the loss of her virginity, and that no one was perfect in whom promiscuous nudity could excite passion or shame. This served as a test, and was so successfully endured that an antagonistic writer can only explain their resistance to such temptation by the assistance of Satan. The sect was condemned by the Council of Cologne in 1306, and by the General Council of Vienne in 1312; it was ruthlessly persecuted by the ecclesiastical authorities and by the Inquisition, whenever that organisation managed to get a foothold in Germany, but it maintained its existence with remarkable tenacity. It was evidently a branch of the Brethren of the Free Spirit which appeared, in 1411, in Flanders, under the name of Men of Intelligence, under the lead of Giles Cautor and William of Hilderniss. They were accused of pantheism, of rejecting priestly ministrations, and that whatever they did was the work of the spirit, so that there was no sin in the grossest licentiousness. Cardinal Pierre d'Ailly, as Bishop of Cambrai, speedily suppressed them, and tradition related that the inquisitor he employed, Hendrik Selle, was saved only by a miracle from the vengeance of the heretics. As the fifteenth century advanced, the unsettled spiritual condition of Bohemia, under Hussite domination, seemed to offer a favourable field for proselytism, and it was attempted by a missionary of the sect, known as "Pichardus." He speedily gathered numerous disciples of both sexes, to whom he taught the pre-eminent virtue of nudity, and gave them the name of Adamites. They settled on an island in the river Luznic, and speedily came in collision with the neighbouring inhabitants. In an expedition from the island they slew two hundred peasants, which

attracted the attention of Lizka. He made short work with them; fifty of those who escaped the sword were burnt at Klokot, and the rest were gradually hunted down, sharing the same fate, which they endured with song and laughter.¹

There was another heretical sect which, in the opening years of the fourteenth century, attained a terrible notoriety through the exploits and fate of its leader, Dolcino. It was an unauthorised offshoot of the stricter or Spiritual Franciscans, and was founded by Gherardo Segarelli, who was burnt in 1300. Its members styled themselves apostles; they were wanderers, subsisting on charity, and teaching an austerity which, in imitation of the follies of some of the early Christians, required the crucial test of the sexes lying together in nakedness. Persecution naturally induced antagonism, and Dolcino, who succeeded Segarelli in the perilous dignity of heresiarch, foretold the downfall of the existing Church establishment, to be followed by an age of charity and love under a saintly Pope. He proclaimed himself the special envoy of God, and virtually declared war upon the existing organisation of both Church and State. Withdrawing, with some fourteen hundred followers, to fastnesses in the lower Alps, he resisted four crusades

¹ Nider, *Formicarium*, III. vi.—Trithemii *Chron.* Hirsang. ann. 1356.—Hartzheim, IV. 100-1.—Clementin. v. iii. 3; III. xi. 1.—Baluz. et Mansi *Miscell.* I. 288-93.—Fredericq, *Corpus Documentt. Inquisitionis Neerlandicæ*, I. 244.—Æneæ Sylvii *Hist. Bohem.* cap. xli.—Dubravii *Hist. Bohem. Lib.* xxvii.

The Council of Cologne, in 1306, in controverting the errors of the Begghards as to the pre-eminent virtue of celibacy, runs counter to the received teachings of the Church for a thousand years. It says: "Ajunt etiam: Nisi mulier virginitatem in matrimonio deperditam doleat et dolendo deploret, salvari non potest: quasi matrimonium sit peccatum, cum tamen ipsum ante peccatum in loco sancto a sanctorum sanctissimo fuerit institutum: quæ virginitas in fœtum sobolis compensatur, per quam humana natura stabilitate perdurat." Great stress, moreover, is laid upon the indissolubility of the marriage vow and the wickedness of separating husband and wife:—"Quomodo spiritu Dei agantur qui contra spiritum Dei agunt, prohibentis virum ab uxore, et e converso sine causa dimitti?"—*Concil. Coloniens.* ann. 1306 cap. i., ii. (Hartzheim IV. 100-101).

directed against him, but a fifth, in 1307, was successful, and he perished by the most dreadful death that fear and hate could devise. The wandering disciples, however, continued to give occasional occupation to the Inquisition for a hundred years, and we hear of them in regions so far apart as Lubech and farther Spain.¹

There may possibly have been some connection between the Apostles and John of Pirna, who in 1341 taught the most revolutionary doctrines. According to him, the Pope was Antichrist and Rome was the whore of Babylon and the church of Satan. The Silesians listened eagerly to his denunciations of the clergy, and the citizens of Breslau, with their magistrates, openly embraced his heresy. When the inquisitor, John of Schweidnitz, was sent thither by the Holy Office of Cracow, the people rose in defence of their leader and put the inquisitor to death. John of Pirna appears to have maintained his position, but after his death the Church enjoyed the pious satisfaction of exhuming his body, burning it, and scattering the ashes to the winds.² It was easier to do this than to destroy the leaven which was working everywhere in men's minds. No sooner were its manifestations repressed in one quarter than they displayed themselves in another.

In 1395 Jean de Varennes, a priest of the province of Rheims, was accused of various heretical teachings, the most serious of which was a revival of the old doctrine that the sacraments were vitiated in unworthy hands. He had not the zeal of martyrdom, and was easily brought to recantation, but his heresy has some interest for us as indicating the prevalent morality of the priesthood at the time. The concubinary priest was popularly known as a *prêtre marié*, and this was so universal that

¹ See the author's "History of the Inquisition of the Middle Ages," III. 103-124.

² Krasinski, Reformation in Poland, I. 55-56.—Raynaldi Annal. ann. 1341, n. 27.

Jean did not hesitate to assume that all Christians were practically unbaptized.¹

In the ineradicable corruption of the Church, indeed, every effort to purify it could only lead to a heresy. Wickliffe, in his zeal to repress the disorders which had brought the Church into disrepute, swept away bishop, cardinal, and pope, the priesthood being the culminating point in his system of ecclesiastical polity. The temporalities which weighed down the spiritual aspirations of the Church were to be abandoned, and with them the abuses by which the worldly ambition of churchmen was sustained—indulgences, simony, image-worship, the power of excommunication, and the other devices by which the authority to bind and to loose had been converted into broad acres or current coin of the realm. The monastic orders in general were the objects of his special aversion, as having no justification in the precepts of Christ, and his repeated attacks upon them have a bitterness which shows not only his deep-rooted aversion, but his sense of their importance as a bulwark of the abuses which he assailed.² He reduced holy orders to two—the priesthood and diaconate—but he maintained the indelible character of ordination as separating the recipient from his fellows, and he urged that all ministers of Christ should live in saintly poverty.³ All this was unreasonable enough in a perverse and stiff-necked generation, but his unpardonable error was his revival of the doctrine of Gregory VII. regarding the ministrations of unfaithful priests, which he carried out resolutely to its logical consequences.⁴ According to him, a wicked

¹ D'Argentré, *Collect. judic. de novis Erroribus*, I. II. 154.

² *Inter omnia monstra quæ unquam intraverunt ecclesiam, monstrum horum fratrum est seductivius, infundabilius, et a veritate ac a charitate distantius.*—*Univ. Oxon. Litt. de Error. Wicklif. Art. 103* (Wilkins III. 344).

³ *Trialogi Lib. IV. cap. 15.*

⁴ A Wickliffite tract ("De Officio Pastoralis," published by Prof. Lechler, Leipzig, 1863) takes strong ground on this point. Speaking of unchaste priests, it says

priest could not perform his sacred functions, and forfeited both his spiritualities and temporalities, of which laymen were justified in depriving him. Nay more, priest and bishop were no longer priest or bishop if they lived in mortal sin, and his definition of mortal sin was such as to render it scarce possible for any one to escape.¹

What his opinions were on the subject of clerical celibacy was a moot point after his death. Thomas of Walden, the confessor of Henry V., in his refutation of the Wickliffite doctrines, approved by Martin V. in 1427, says that the general belief was that Wickliffe was opposed to it, while some asserted that he was strongly in favour of it. Walden admits that he had found in Wickliffe's writings high praise of priestly chastity, but he had at last met, in the tract *De Officio Pastoralis*, a passage condemning celibacy.² Yet had Wickliffe taught

(P. I. cap. viii. pp. 16-17), "Talis sic notorie sustentans curatum dat imprudenter elemosinam contra Christum . . . periculosum peccatum est crimini consentire; sed sic faciunt qui taliter curato in temporalibus subministrant." And again (P. I. cap. xvii.), "Subditi enim non debent audire missam talium sacerdotum, et per consequens non debent dare sibi oblationes vel decimas, ne videantur consencientes crimini sic notorio in curatis."

¹ Si Deus est, domini temporales possunt legitime ac meritorie auferre bona fortunæ ab ecclesia delinquente.—Conclus. Magist. Johan. Wyclif. Art. vi. (Wilkins III. 123).

Licet regibus auferre temporalia a viris ecclesiasticis ipsis abutentibus habitualiter. Ibid. Art. xvii.

So in the proceedings conducted by Courtenay, Archbishop of Canterbury, against Wickliffe in 1382, among the articles presented as extracted from his writings were—

Art. 4. Quod si episcopus vel sacerdos existat in peccato mortali, non ordinat, consecrat nec baptizat.

Art. 16. Quod nullus est dominus civilis, nullus est episcopus, nullus est prælatus dum est in peccato mortali (Wilkins III. 157).

Even "verbum otiosum" and "ira quantumlibet levis" were denounced by him as mortal sins according to the University of Oxford.—Litt. de Error. Art. 210, 211 (Wilkins III. 347).

² Thomæ Waldens. di Sacramentis cap. 128 (Ed. Venet. 1571. T. II. fol. 211). The passage quoted by Walden is "Nam conjugium secundum Christum eis licitum odiunt ut venenum et seculare dominium eis a Christo prohibitum avidè amplexantur" (De Off. Pastoralis, P. II. cap. xi. p. 50).

Arnold (Select English Works of John Wyclif, vol. II. p. v.) quotes a similar statement from Walden's *Doctrinale Fidei*, which I have been unable to verify. In

this doctrine it would have been as widely known as his other errors, it would have been condemned in the repeated proceedings taken against him and his teachings, and it would not have been left for Thomas of Walden to discover it in one of the numerous writings which passed from hand to hand as the works of the heresiarch. Wickliffe was too earnest and sincere in his convictions to leave any one in doubt as to his belief on any point that he thought worth discussion.

What his views were on this subject can perhaps best be sought in the most mature of his authentic works, the *Trialogus*. No one can read the chapters on Sensuality and Chastity without seeing that the whole line of argument is directed towards proving the superiority of virginity over marriage, even to the fanciful etymology of "cœlibatus" from the state of the "beati in cœlo;" while in the chapter on the riches of the clergy, they are regarded as virgins betrothed to Christ, and the vow of chastity which they take is likened to their similar vow of poverty, and not to be infringed.¹ Wickliffe's austerity, in fact, was deeply tinged with asceticism, and in aiming to restore the primitive simplicity of the Church, he had no thought of relegating its ministers to the carnalities of family life, which would render impossible the Apostolic poverty that was his ideal. Even the laity, in his

this he alleges, in proof of Wickliffe's opposition to celibacy, a sermon in English (Arnold I. 364).

This sermon, like the tract *De Officio Pastoralis*, was doubtless mistakenly ascribed to Wickliffe, like so many other writings of his disciples. The same may be said with regard to passages like the following: "God ordeyned prestis in the olde lawe to have wyves, and nevere forbode it in the newe lawe, neither bi Crist ne bi his apostlis, but rather aprovede it. But now, bi ypoocrisie of fendis and fals men, manye binden hem to presthod and chastite, and forsaken wifis bi Goddis lawe, and schenden maydenes and wifis and fallen foulest of alle."—Of Weddid Men and Wifis, cap. i. (Arnold's Wyclif, III. 190; also in Vaughan's Tracts of John de Wyckliffe, p. 58).—See also The Seven Deadly Sins, cap. xxx. (Arnold Vol. III. p. 163).

¹ *Trialogi Lib. III. c. 22, 23; Lib. IV. 16* (Ed. Lechler, Oxford, 1869).—Cf. *Apology for Lollard Doctrines*, p. 38 (Ed. Camden Soc.).

scheme, were to be so rendered superior to the lusts of the flesh that he pronounced those who married from any other motive than that of having offspring to be not truly married.¹

It is easier to start a movement than to restrain it. Wickcliffe might deny the authority of tradition, and yet preserve his respect for the tradition of celibacy, but his followers could not observe the distinction. They could see, if he could not, that the structure of sacerdotalism, to the overthrow of which he devoted himself, could not be destroyed without abrogating the rule which separated the priest from his fellow-men, and which severed all other ties in binding him to the Church. In 1394, only ten years after Wickliffe's death, the Lollards, by that time a powerful party, with strong revolutionary tendencies, presented to Parliament a petition for the thorough reformation of the Church, containing twelve conclusions indicating the points on which they desired change. Of these, the third denounced the rule of celibacy as the cause of the worst disorders, and argued the necessity of its abrogation; while the eleventh attacked the vows of nuns as even more injurious, and demanded permission for their marriage with but scanty show of respect.² This became the received doctrine of the sect, for in a declaration made in 1400 by Arundel, Archbishop of Canterbury, concerning the Lollard heresies, we find enumerated the belief that those in holy orders could take to themselves wives without sin, and that monks and nuns were at liberty to abandon their profession, and marry at pleasure.³

The fierce persecutions of Henry V., to repress what he rightly considered as a formidable source of civil

¹ Wilkins III. 229.—*Trialogi Lib. IV. c. 20.*

² *Conclusiones Lollardorum (Wilkins III. 221-3).*

³ Wilkins III. 248.

rebellion as well as heresy, succeeded in depriving the sect of political power; yet its religious doctrines still continued to exist among the people, and even sometimes obtained public expression.¹ They unquestionably tended strongly to shake the popular reverence for Rome, and had no little influence in paving the way for the revolt of the sixteenth century.

John Huss was rather a reformer than a heresiarch. Admirer though he was of Wickliffe, even to the point of wishing to risk damnation with him,² he avoided the doctrinal errors of the Englishman on the subject of the Eucharist. Yet his predestinarian views were unorthodox, and he shared in some degree Wickliffe's Gregorian ideas as to the effect of mortal sin in divesting the priesthood of all claim to sacredness or respect. According to his

¹ In 1426, ten years after the execution of Lord Cobham, a Franciscan named Thomas Richmond was brought before the Council of York for publicly preaching the high Wickliffite doctrine "Sacerdos in peccato mortali lapsus, non est sacerdos. Item quod ecclesia nolente vel non puniente fornicarios, licitum est sæcularibus eosdem pœna carceris castigare, et ad hoc astringuntur vinculo charitatis" (Wilkins III. 488). This practical application of the Hildebrandine principle did not suit the Church of the fifteenth century. It was pronounced heretical, and Friar Thomas was forced to recant.

Equally offensive to the memory of Gregory was the decision of the Sorbonne in 1486, condemning as heretical the propositions of Jean d'Huillier, the puritan bishop of Meaux—"Quarta Propositio. Quod officium vel Sacramentum per talem fornicarium datum non valet plusquam latratum canum. Hæc propositio quoad primam suam partem est falsa et erronea, et quoad secundam partem est hæretica, scandalosa, piarum aurium offensiva et publice revocanda." Even more to the point was it when, in 1498, an Observantine friar, Jean Vitrier, preached in Tournay that it was a mortal sin to assist at the mass of a concubinary priest, and told the people that they ought to drag the concubines of their priests from their houses. The University of Paris forthwith qualified this as savouring of Hussitism.—D'Argentré, Collect. judic. de novis erroribus, I. II. 320, 340.

² When, after the fearful disaster of Taas, the Council of Bâle, in 1432, commenced the conferences which resulted in the nominal reconciliation of the Hussites, the fathers of the Council were much scandalised at hearing the Bohemian deputies reverently quote Wickliffe as the Evangelical Doctor. In fact, Peter Payne, his disciple, who did so much to promulgate his doctrines in Bohemia, was one of the disputants (Hartzheim V. 762-4). Even as early as 1403 the errors of Wickliffe were formally condemned by the University of Prague, on presentation by the Ordinary of the diocese, showing that they were already spreading and attracting attention (Höfler, Concil. Pragensia, p. 43.—Prag, 1862).

enemies, he asserted that no one could be the vicar of Christ or of Peter unless he were an humble imitator of the virtues of him whom he claimed to represent; and a pope who was given to avarice was only the representative of Judas Iscariot.¹ His friend, Jerome of Prague, maintained with his latest breath that Huss was thoroughly orthodox, and was only inspired by indignation at seeing the wealth of the Church, which was the patrimony of the poor, lavished on prostitutes, feasting, hunting, rich apparel, and other unseemly extravagance.² In the Bohemian clergy he had an ample target for his assaults, for they were in no respect better than their neighbours. During the latter half of the fourteenth century scarce a synod was held which did not denounce their vices, gambling, drunkenness, usury, simony, and concubinage; and when to put an end to the latter irregularity a strict visitation was made throughout the archiepiscopal diocese of Prague, the cunning rogues sent away or secreted their partners in guilt, and openly recalled them as soon as the storm had passed. The following year, Archbishop Sbinco peremptorily commanded that all concubines should be dismissed within six days, under pain of perpetual imprisonment, but this was evidently regarded as a mere *brutum fulmen*, for the next year a new device was resorted to, by pronouncing all concubinary priests to be heretics.³ All this might certainly seem to warrant any effort that might be made to accomplish what the authorities so signally failed in doing, but that any indi-

¹ Artic. Damnat. Joannis Husz, No. viii. x. xi. xii. xiii. xxii. xxx. (Concil. Constantiens. Sess. xv.)—On his examination Huss declared that these articles were exaggerated. See the proceedings in Von der Hardt, T. IV. pp. 309–11. But on the next day he defended a proposition which was virtually identical (Ibid. p. 321).

² Poggii Florent. Descript. Hieron. Prag. (Von der Hardt, T. III. p. 69).

³ Statut. Synod. ann. 1405; 1406, No. 1; 1407, No. 3 (Höfler, Concil. Pragens. pp. 50, 54, 59).

See the extracts from the Visitationsbuch of the Diocese of Prague, in 1379, given by Loserth, "Hus und Wiclif," pp. 261 sqq. (Prag, 1884).

vidual should assert the right of private judgment in reforming the Church in its head and its members threatened results too formidable to the whole structure of sacerdotalism, and the condemnation of Huss was inevitable. Still, like Wickliffe, he was a devout believer in ascetic purity. His denunciations of the wealth and disorders of the clergy raised so great an excitement throughout Bohemia that King Wenceslas was forced to issue a decree depriving immoral ecclesiastics of their revenues. The partisans of Huss took a lively interest in the enforcement of this law, and brought the unhappy ecclesiastics before the tribunals with a pertinacity which amounted to the persecution of an inquisition.¹

Unlike the Lollards, the Hussites maintained the strictness of the founder's views on the subject of celibacy. If the fiercer Taborites cruelly revenged their wrongs upon the religious orders, it was to punish the minions of Rome, and not to manifest their contempt for asceticism; and, at the same time, even the milder Calixtins treated all lapses from clerical virtue among themselves with a severity which proved their sincerity and earnestness, and which had long been a stranger to the administration of the Church.² One of the complaints

¹ Synod. Olomucens. ann. 1413 can. 1. "asserentes etiam . . . quod bona clericorum male viventium possunt rapere et eos spoliare sine pena excommunicationis . . . Ex eadem radice et hæretica pravitate dicunt alii, quod sacerdos in mortali existens peccato non possit conficere corpus Christi" (Hartzheim V. 39, 40).

² Conciliab. Pragense. ann. 1420 can. xii., xiii.—At this time the Hussites had full sway in Bohemia; the Council was held by Conrad, Archbishop of Prague, who had adopted their faith, and its canons were intended for the internal regulation of their own Church (Hartzheim V. 198). How little, in fact, they differed in doctrinal points from Rome is seen in the confession of faith agreed upon at Prague in 1432 (Johan. de Ragus. de Reduct. Bohem. ap. Monument. Concil. General. Sæc. xv. Tom. I. pp. 182 sq.).

This did not, however, save them from the customary accusations of immorality. Thus, a contemporary describes the indulgence of indiscriminate intercourse as one of the rules of the sect (Joann. Fistenportii Chron. ann. 1419.—Hahn. Collect. Monument. T. I. p. 403), and, in 1413, Conrad, Archbishop of Mainz, in convoking a Council to take action against them, says of the sect "exterminavit clerum et omnem cœlibatum commercio nephando stupravit."—Gudeni Cod. Diplom. IV. 185.

against the priesthood formulated in the proclamation of Procopius and the other chiefs in 1431, at the assembling of the Council of Bâle, was that the clergy were all fornicators, committing adultery with men's wives, or having wives and "presbyterissæ" of their own.¹ In the "Compactata," or terms of reunion with the Catholic Church, agreed upon, in 1436, at the Council of Bâle, there is no allusion to priestly marriage, the four points upon which the Bohemians insisted being merely: (1st), communion in both elements; (2nd), the reformation of ecclesiastical morals; (3rd), free preaching of the Scripture; and (4th), the secularisation of Church property. Rome refused to ratify the agreement, though there was nothing save the communion in both elements to distinguish the Bohemian from the orthodox Church, and when, in 1562, the Emperor Ferdinand endeavoured to procure from the Council of Trent the use of the cup for the Utraquists or Calixtins of Bohemia, he urged in their favour that they would not admit the ministrations of any priest who did not lead a celibate life.²

One fragment of the Hussites, however, held wholly aloof from reconciliation to Rome and professed to uphold in their purity the doctrines of their founder, though they denied the real presence in the elements of the Eucharist. These were the remains of the fiercer sect, known as the Taborites, who were virtually destroyed at the battle of Lipan in 1434. They called themselves the Orthodox Brethren, but were stigmatised by their adversaries with the opprobrious name of Picardi, from a belief that they were related to the heretics exterminated by Ziska. In process of time they admitted the validity of priestly marriage, though it was discouraged among them in view of the dangers to which they were exposed and

¹ Epist. Procopii, Art. VIII. (Martene Ampl. Coll. VIII. 25).

² Petit. Cæsaris, No. 12 (Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. V. 348).

the constant risk of martyrdom incurred by all who ventured to be conspicuous among them, for Hussite and Catholic alike sought their extermination. Yet they bravely maintained their existence, until the Reformation, when they eagerly fraternised with Luther,¹ such minor differences as existed in the organisation of the respective Churches being amicably regulated in 1570 by the agreement of Sendomir.² Still it was not until the commencement of the seventeenth century that priestly celibacy was wholly abolished and that even the bishops of the Brethren were married. In the triumphant Catholic reaction, after the disastrous battle of the Weiss Berg in 1620, many of the pastors became more or less sincere converts, and, in the lack of Catholic priests, were allowed to retain their positions, but were obliged to expel their wives and children.³

While thus trampling out these successive revolts, the Church was blind to the lesson taught by their perpetual recurrence. The minds of men were gradually learning to estimate at its true value the claim of the hierarchy to veneration, and at the same time the vices of the establishment were yearly becoming more odious, and its oppression more onerous. The explosion might be delayed by attempts at partial reformation, but it was inevitable.

¹ Camerarii Hist. Narrat. de Fratrum Orthodox. Ecclesiis in Bohemia, etc., pp. 100, 109-10, 114, 121, 128.

² Consensus in Fide inter Ecclesias Evangelicas, etc., Haidelbergæ, 1605.

³ Herzog, Abriss, II. 453.—De Schweinitz, History of the Unitas Fratrum, pp. 21 420.—Gindely, Geschichte der Gegenreformation in Böhmen, p. 195.

END OF VOL. I.

HISTORY
OF
SACERDOTAL CELIBACY
IN THE
CHRISTIAN CHURCH

BY
HENRY CHARLES LEA, LL.D., S.T.D.

THIRD EDITION, REVISED

Οὐ γὰρ θεοὺ ἐστὶ κινεῖν ἐπι τὰ παρα φύσιν

ATHENAGORÆ pro Christianis Legatio

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOL. II

Reproduced in electronic form

1998

Bank of Wisdom

P.O. Box 926

Louisville, KY 40201

U.S.A.

1907

Reproduced in electronic form
1998

Bank of Wisdom

P.O. Box 926

Louisville, KY 40201

U.S.A.

The purpose of the Bank of Wisdom
is to again make the United States the
Free Marketplace of Ideas that the
American Founding Fathers
originally meant this Nation to be.

Emmett F. Fields

CONTENTS

XXIV. THE FIFTEENTH CENTURY

A. D.		PAGE
	Demoralisation of the sacerdotal body	1
1418	Futile efforts of the Council of Constance	3
1422	Efforts of Martin V.	6
	Undiminished corruption and symptoms of revolt	7
1423—1430	The Council of Basle attempts a reform	10
	Impotence of the Basilian canons—Venality of the papal court	13
1484—1500	Condition of the Church in Italy, France, England, Spain, Germany, and Hungary	15
1486	Relaxation of monastic discipline	22
1476	John of Nicklaushausen	24
	Sacerdotal marriage advocated as a remedy	27
1479	John of Oberwesel	28
1485	Heresy of Jean Laillier	29

XXV. THE REFORMATION IN GERMANY

	Irreverential spirit of the sixteenth century	31
1510	Complaints of the Germans against the Church	32
	Immobility of the Church	33
	Popular movement—Luther and Erasmus	35
1518	Official opposition to the abuses of the Church	37
1517—1520	Luther neglects the question of celibacy—his gradual progress	39
1521	First examples of sacerdotal marriage	42
	Approved by Carlostadt—Disapproved by Luther	43
1522	Zwingli demands sacerdotal marriage—Luther adopts it	45
1523	Efforts of the Church to repress the movement	47
	Popular approbation—Protection in high quarters	49

	A. D.		PAGE
1523—1524		Emancipation of nuns and monks	50
1525		Marriage of Luther	51
		Causes of popular acquiescence in the change	53
		Extreme immorality of the clergy—Papal Dispensa- tions	54
		Admitted by the Catholics to justify heresy	56
1522—1526		Erasmus advocates clerical marriage	61
		Assistance from ambition of temporal princes	62
1530		Efforts at reunion—Confession of Augsburg	64
		Failure of reconciliation—League of Schmalkalden	67
		The Anabaptists	68
1532—1540		Partial toleration—Difficulties concerning the Abbey lands	70
1541		Attempt at reconciliation	71
1548		The Interim—Sacerdotal marriage tolerated	73
1552		The Reformation established by the Transaction of Passau	75

XXVI. THE ANGLICAN CHURCH

		Conservative tendencies of England	77
1500—1523		John Colet and Sir Thomas More	78
1524		Difficulties of the situation—Wolsey undertakes the destruction of monachism	81
1528		General suppression of the smaller houses	83
1532		Henry VIII.'s quarrel with Rome	85
1535		General visitation of monasteries, and suppression of most of them	86
		Popular opinions—The Beggars' Petition	90
1536		Popular discontent—The Pilgrimage of Grace	94
1537—1546		Final suppression of the religious houses and founda- tions	95
		Fate of their inmates	101
1535—1541		Irish monastic establishments destroyed	102
		Henry still insists on celibacy	107
		Efforts to procure its relaxation	108
1537		Uncertainty of the subject in the public mind	109
1539		Henry's firmness—Act of the Six Articles	111
		Persecution of the married clergy	112
1540		Modification of the Six Articles	115

CONTENTS

vii

A. D.		PAGE
1547	Accession of Edward VI.—Repeal of the Six Articles	116
1548—1549	Full liberty of marriage accorded to the clergy	118
	Armed opposition of the people	119
1552	Adoption of the Forty-two Articles	121
	Difficulty of removing popular convictions	122
1553	Accession of Queen Mary—Legislation of Edward repealed	123
1554	The married clergy separated and deprived	124
	Suffering of the clergy in consequence	128
	England reconciled to Rome—Church lands not recalled	129
1555	Cardinal Pole's Legatine Constitutions	132
1557	More stringent legislation required—Revival of the old troubles	133
1558	Accession of Queen Elizabeth	135
1559	Delay in authorising marriage—Uncertainty of the married clergy	137
	Elizabeth yields, but imposes degrading restrictions on clerical marriage	139
1563	The Thirty-nine Articles—Increased emphasis of permission to marry	140
	Elizabeth maintains her prejudices	141
	Disrepute of sacerdotal marriage—Evil effects on the Anglican clergy	145

XXVII. CALVINISM

1512	Lefèvre d'Étaples	150
1559—1640	The Huguenot Churches	151
	The Reformation in Scotland	154
	Corruption of the Scottish Church in the sixteenth century	155
1542—1559	Efforts at internal reform—their fruitlessness	158
	Marriage assumed as a matter of course by the Protestants	160
	Temporal motives assisting the Reformation	161
	Poverty of the Scottish Church establishment	163
	Influence of celibacy on the struggle	166
1560	No formal recognition of clerical marriage thought necessary	169

XXVIII. THE COUNCIL OF TRENT

A.D.		PAGE
1524—1536	Efforts at internal reform	171
	Universal demand for a general council—Convoked at Mantua in 1536	179
1542—1547	Assembles at Trent—it labours to separate, not to reunite the churches	180
1551—1552	Reassembles at Trent—is again broken up	181
1562	Again assembles for the last time	182
1536	Paul III. essays an internal reform without result	183
1548	Charles V. tries to reform the German Church	185
1548—1551	Local reformatory synods—their failure	187
1560	Clerical marriages demanded as a last resort	192
	Clerical corruption urged as the reason	193
1563	The French court joins in the demand	197
1560	The question prejudged	198
1562—1563	Negotiations for priestly marriage and Communion in both Elements	200
1563	The council makes celibacy a point of faith	203
	Attempts a reformation	204
1563—1564	The German princes continue their efforts	206
	Essays of Cassander and Wicelius	210
	Successful opposition of Philip II.	216
1566	Peremptory action of Pius V.	217

XXIX. THE POST-TRIDENTINE CHURCH

	Reception of the Council of Trent except in France	221
1566—1572	Pius V. endeavours to effect a reform	223
1568—1570	Labours of St. Charles Borromeo at Milan	227
1565—1597	Reforms vainly attempted by Italian councils	229
1569—1668	Condition of the church in Central Europe	231
	Provisions for the children of priests	232
	Clerical immorality still a justification of heresy	233
1560—1624	Condition of the Church in France	235
	The residence of women conceded	239
	Celebration of Mass by Concubinarrians	240
	The Church in the Spanish Colonies	245

CONTENTS

ix

XXX. SOLICITATION

A. D.		PAGE
	Abuse of the Confessional prior to the Reformation	251
	Heretic attacks call for more vigorous action . . .	254
1547—1791	Introduction of Confessionals	255
1559—1561	Jurisdiction conferred on the Spanish Inquisition— Its activity	257
	Resistance of the Regular Orders	260
	Difficulty of defining the Crime	261
1622	Bull of Gregory XV., <i>Universi Dominici Gregis</i>	264
	Tardy acceptance by Spain—Rejection by France and Germany	265
	Solicitation becomes merely a technical offence— Indecency in the Confessional	267
	Duty of Penitents to denounce Offenders	270
	Absolution of Partners in Guilt	271
	Demand for name of Accomplice in Sin	276
	Passive Solicitation—Flagellation	277
	Results of the papal Decrees—France, Germany, Italy, Spain—Favour shown to the Accused	279
	Avenues of escape open	285
	Mildness of punishment	287
	Spontaneous Self-Accusation	291
	Preponderance of culprits in the Religious Orders	294
	Divorce of Morals and Religion—Absolution facilitated	295

XXXI. THE CHURCH AND THE REVOLUTION

	Sacerdotal marriage obsolete—Grandier, Du Pin, Bossuet	297
1758—1800	The eighteenth century—Controversy reopened	298
1783	Joseph II. proposes to permit sacerdotal marriage	300
1760—1787	Clerical immorality undiminished	301
1789	The French Revolution	306
1789—1790	Confiscation of church property—Suppression of monachism	309
1791	Celibacy deprived of legal protection—Marriage of priests	310
1793	Marriage becomes a test of good citizenship	311
	Persecution of the unmarried clergy	314

A.D.		PAGE
	Resistance of the great body of the clergy . . .	315
1795—1797	Married clergy repudiated by their bishops . . .	316
1801	Celibacy restored by the Concordat	318
1801—1807	Clerical marriage continues — Napoleon decides against it	320

XXXII. THE CHURCH OF TO-DAY

1815—1883	Vacillating policy in France as to clerical marriage . . .	322
1821—1866	Various movements in favour of clerical marriage . . .	323
	Immobility of the Church	326
1878	The Old Catholics adopt clerical marriage	329
	Civil marriage laws opposed by the Church	330
1820—1867	Suppression of monastic orders	335
	Influence of celibacy on clerical morality	339
	Solicitation in modern times	342
	Influence of celibacy on the social organisation	358
	INDEX	365

CHAPTER XXIV

THE FIFTEENTH CENTURY

NEITHER the assaults of heretics nor the constant efforts at partial reform attempted by individual prelates had thus far proved of any avail. As time wore on, the Church sank deeper into the mire of corruption, and its struggles to extricate itself grew feebler and more hopeless. We have seen that, early in the fifteenth century, Gerson advised an organised system of concubinage as preferable to the indiscriminate licentiousness which was everywhere prevalent. Even more suggestive are the declarations of Nicholas de Clamenges, Rector of the University of Paris and Secretary of the anti-pope Benedict XIII. He does not hesitate to say that the vices of the clergy were so universal that those who adhered to the rule of chastity were the objects of the most degrading and disgusting suspicions, so little faith was there in the possible purity of any ecclesiastic. He also records the extension of a custom to which I have already alluded when he states that in a majority of parishes the people insisted on their pastors keeping concubines, and that even this was a precaution insufficient for the peace and honour of their families.¹ Elsewhere he describes the mass of the clergy as wholly abandoned to worldly ambition and vices, oppressing and despoiling those subjected to them, and

¹ Taceo de fornicationibus et adulteriis, a quibus qui alieni sunt probro cæteris ac ludibrio esse solent, spadonesque aut sodomitæ appellantur; denique laici usque adeo persuasum habent nullos cœlibes esse, ut in plerisque parochiis non aliter velint presbyterum tolerare nisi concubinam habeat, quo vel sic suis sit consultum uxoribus, quæ nec sic quidem usque-quaque sunt extra periculum.—Nic. de Clamengis de Præsul. Simoniac (Opp. Lug. Bat. 1613, p. 165).

spending their ill-gotten gains in the vilest excesses, while they ridiculed unsparingly such few pious souls as endeavoured to live according to the light of the gospel.¹ Another tract which passes under his name declares that in most of the dioceses the parish priests openly kept concubines, which they were permitted to do on payment of a tax to their bishops. Nunneries were brothels, and to take the veil was simply another mode of becoming a public prostitute.² Cardinal Peter d'Ailly declares that he does not dare to describe the immorality of the nunneries.³ In a similar indignant mood Gerson stigmatises the nunneries of his time as houses of prostitution, the monasteries as centres of trade and amusement, the cathedral churches as dens of ravishers and robbers, and the priesthood at large as habitual concubinarians.⁴ That he felt these evils to be inseparable from the condition of the Church is evident when, in an argument to prove the necessity of celibacy, he is driven to the assertion that it is better to tolerate incontinent priests than to have no priests at all.⁵ He argues that the clergy are worthy of as many sentences of damnation as they seduce souls to perdition by their corrupt example, and he asks, when he who destroys himself by his own sins is to be condemned, whether he who draws with him numerous others is not still more worthy of perdition.⁶ Theodoric a Niem represents the bishops of Scandinavia as carrying with them their concubines on their pastoral visitations, and as inflicting penalties on such of the parish priests as they found living without similar companions, while these women habitually took precedence

1 Nic. de Clamengiis Disput. super Mater. Concil. General.

2 Nic. de Clamengiis de Ruina Ecclesie cap. xxii., xxxvi.—Conf. Theobaldi Conquest. (Von der Hardt T. I. P. VI. XIX. p. 909.)

3 P. de Alliaco Canones Reformat. cap. iv. (Von der Hardt T. I. P. VI. p. 425.)

4 Gersoni Declarat. defect. viror. ecclesiast. l xv., lxvi.

5 Dicimus quod de duobus malis minus est incontinentes tolerare sacerdotes quam nullos habere.—Gersoni Dial. Sophie et Naturæ Act. IV.

6 Ejusd. Sermo de Vita Clericorum.

in church of the wives of the neighbouring gentry—and he adds that the clergy of the south of Europe were no better.¹ Theodoric Vrie, a learned and pious Churchman of Saxony, is equally unsparing in his denunciations of the Teutonic clergy²—and, indeed, the testimony of the writers of the period is so unanimous that their descriptions of clerical vices cannot be regarded as the mere rhetorical declamation of disappointed reformers.

It was evident that the efforts of local synods were fruitless to eradicate evils so general and so deeply rooted, while the necessity for some reform became every day more apparent. Though Lollardry had been crushed in England under the stern hand of Henry V., yet it was reappearing in Bohemia in a form even more threatening. The Council of Pisa had not succeeded in healing the Great Schism, and there arose a general demand for an Œcumenic Council in which the Church Universal should assemble for the purpose of purifying itself, of eradicating heresy, and of settling definitely the pretensions of the three claimants to the papacy. John XXIII. yielded to the pressure, and the call for the Council of Constance went forth in his name and in that of the Emperor Sigismund.

So powerful a body had never before been gathered together in Europe. It claimed to be the supreme representative of the Church, and though it acknowledged John XXIII. as the lawful successor of St. Peter, it had no scruples in arraigning, trying, condemning, and deposing him—an awful expression of its supremacy, without precedent in the past and without imitation in succeeding ages. As regards heresy, it did the best it could, according to the lights of its age, by burning John Huss and Jerome of Prague. Its functions as a reformer, however, required for their exercise more nerve than even the condemnation

¹ Theod. a Niem *Nemoris Unionis Tract.* V. cap. xxxv.

² Theod. Vrie *Hist. Concil. Constant.* Lib. II., III. (Von. der Hardt T. I.).

of a pope. Many members were thoroughly penetrated with the conviction that reform was of instant necessity, and such men as Gerson, Peter d'Ailly of Cambrai, and Nicholas de Clamenges were prepared to shrink from none of the means requisite for so hallowed an end. In the existing corruption, however, of the body from which representatives were drawn, such men could scarcely form a controlling majority. After the council had been in session for nearly two years, the reformers began to despair of effecting anything, and Clamenges did not hesitate to assert that nothing was to be expected from men who would regard reform as the greatest calamity that could befall themselves;¹ while another of the members of the council declared that every one wanted such a reform as should allow him to retain his own particular form of iniquity.² These estimates, indeed, of the character of the majority of the good fathers of Constance are borne out by the contemporary accounts of the multitudes who flocked to it to ply their trades among the assembled dignitaries of the Church, showing that they were by no means all devoted to mortifying the flesh.³

The feelings of those who sincerely desired reform, as they saw the prospect rapidly fading before their eyes, may be estimated by a sermon of a sturdy Gascon abbot, Bernhardus Baptisatus, preached before the council in August 1517, about three months before the conservatives succeeded in carrying their point by electing Martin V. He denounces the members of the council as Pharisees, falsely pretending to be devout in order to elude the punishment due to their crimes. The masses and pro-

¹ Nic. de Clamengiis, *Disput. sup. Mat. Conc. General.* This work was written in 1416, after the council had been in session for nearly two years.

² Theobaldi *Conquestio* (Von der Hardt T. I. P. XIX. p. 904).

³ Item, *fistulatores, tubicenæ, joculatores*, 516; item, *meretrices, virgines publicæ*, 718.—Laur. *Byzynii Diar. Bell. Hussit.* A Catholic contemporary, however, reduces the number of courtesans to 450 and that of jugglers and minstrels to 320 (Joann. Fistenportii *Chron. ann. 1415.*—Hahn, *Collect. Monument. I.* 401).

cessions, which were the main business of the assemblage, he declares to be valueless in the eyes of God, for most of those who so busily took part in them were involved solely in worldly cares, laughing, cheating, sleeping, or demoralising the rest with their ungodly conversation. The Holy Spirit did not hold the acts of the council acceptable, nor dwell with its unrighteous members.¹ Such a convocation could have but one result.

It is easy therefore to understand the influences that were brought to bear to defeat the expectations of the reformers: how the subject could be postponed until after the questions connected with the papacy and with heresy were disposed of; and how, after the election of Martin V., those who shrank from all reform could assume that it might safely be entrusted to the hands of a pontiff so able, so energetic, and so virtuous. In all this they were successful. The council closed its weary sessions, 22 April, 1418, and during its three years and a half of labour it had only found leisure to regulate the dress of ecclesiastics, the unclerical cut of whose sleeves was especially distasteful to the representative body of Christendom.²

Still, the reformers had made a stubborn fight, and had procured the appointment of a commission to consider all reformatory propositions and prepare a general scheme for the adoption of the council. This body laboured as diligently as though its deliberations were to be crowned with practical results, and various projects of reform proposed by it have been preserved. In one of these the severest measures of repression were suggested to put an end to the scandal of concubinage which was openly practised in the majority of dioceses. Under this scheme, while all the canonical punishments heretofore decreed were maintained

¹ Bernhardi Baptisati Sermo (Von der Hardt T. I. P. xviii. pp. 884-5).

² Concil. Constant. Sess. XLIII. can. de Vita et Honestate Clericorum.

in full vigour, deprivation was pronounced against all holders of ecclesiastical preferment, from bishops down, who should not within one month eject their guilty partners; their positions were declared vacant *ipso jure*, and their successors were to be immediately appointed. Those who did not hold benefices were similarly to be declared ineligible to preferment. It appears that scandals had arisen in many places from the Hildebrandine and Wickliffite heresy, whereby parishioners declined the ministrations of those who were living in open and notorious sin; and to avoid these, while the commission declined to pass an opinion on the propriety of such action, it advised that such private judgment should not be exercised.¹ In another elaborate system of reform, which bears the marks of mature deliberation, the attempt was made to eradicate the long-standing abuse of admitting to preferment the illegitimate children of ecclesiastics, and it was declared that papal dispensations should no longer be recognised except in cases of peculiar fitness or high rank.² The same code of discipline struck a significant blow at the inviolability of the monastic profession when it endeavoured to check the prevailing and deplorable licentiousness of the nunneries by decreeing that no woman should be admitted to the vows beneath the age of twenty, and that all vows taken at a younger age should be null and void.³ These projects are interesting merely as indicating the direction in which the reforming portion of the Church desired to move, and as showing that even they did not propose to remove the celibacy which was the chief cause of the evils they so sincerely deplored.

Martin V. had assumed the responsibility of reforming the Church, and he did, in fact, attempt it after some

¹ De Ecclesiæ Reformat. Protocoll. cap. xxxiii. (Von der Hardt T. I. P. x. pp. 635-6.)

² Reformatorii Constant. Decretal. Lib. I. Tit. v. (Ibid. p. 679).

³ Ibid. Lib. III. Tit. x. cap. 20 (p. 722.)

fashion, though he apparently took to heart Dante's axiom—

Lunga promessa, con l'attender corto
Ti farà trionfar nel' alto seggio.

In 1422 Cardinal Branda of Piacenza, his legate, when sent to Germany to preach a crusade against the Hussites, was honoured with the title of Reformer General, and full powers were given to him to effect this part of his mission. The letters-patent of the Pope bear ample testimony to the depravity of the Teutonic Church,¹ while the constitution which Branda promulgated declares that in a portion of the priesthood there was scarcely left a trace of decency or morality. According to this document, concubinage, simony, neglect of sacred functions, gambling, drinking, fighting, buffoonery, and kindred pursuits, were the prevalent vices of the ministers of Christ; but the punishments which he enacted for their suppression—repetitions of those which we have seen proclaimed so many times before—were powerless to overcome the evils, which had become part and parcel of the Church itself.² This condition of affairs was not the result of any abandonment of the attempt to enforce the canons. Local synods were meeting every year, and scarcely one of them failed to call attention to the subject, devising fresh penalties to effect the impossible. The result is shown in the lament of the Council of Cologne in 1423.³

¹ For instance, as regards the religious houses—"In nonnullis quoque monasteriis . . . norma disciplinæ respuitur, cultus divinus negligitur, personæ quoque hujusmodi, vitæ ac morum honestate prostrata, lubricitati, incontinentiæ, et aliis variis carnalis concupiscentiæ voluptatibus et vicibus non sine gravi diviniæ majestatis offensa tabescentes, vitam ducunt dissolutam."—Martin V. ad Brandam § iii. (Ludewig Reliq. Msctorum XI. 409.)

² Usque adeo nonnullorum clericorum corruptela excrevit, ut morum atque honestatis vestigia apud eos pauca admodum remanserint.—Constit. Brandæ § 1 (Op. cit. XI. 385.)

³ "Quia tamen, succrescente malitia temporis moderni, labes hujusmodi criminis in ecclesia Dei in tantum inolevit, quod scandala plurima in populo sunt exorta, et verisimiliter exoriri poterunt in futurum, et ex fide dignorum relatione percepimus quod quidam ecclesiarum prælati et alii, etiam capitula . . . tales in suis iniquita-

What was the condition of clerical morals in Italy soon after this may be learned from a single instance. When Ambrose was made General of the austere order of Camaldoli he set vigorously to work to reform the laxity which had almost ruined it. One of his abbots was noted for abounding licentiousness; not content with ordinary amours, he was wont to visit the nunneries in his district to indulge in promiscuous intercourse with the virgins dedicated to God. Yet Ambrose in taking him to task did not venture to punish him for his misdeeds, but promised him full pardon for the past and to take him into favour, if he would only abstain for the future—a task which ought to be easy, as he was now old, and should be content with having long lived evilly, and be ready to dedicate his few remaining years to the service of God.¹ When a reformer, who enjoyed the special friendship and protection of Eugenius IV., was forced to be so moderate with such a criminal, it is easy to imagine what was the tone of morality in the Church at large.

While the Armagnacs and Burgundians were rivalling the English in carrying desolation into every corner of France, it could not be expected that the peaceful virtues could flourish, or sempiternal corruption be reformed. Accordingly, it need not surprise us to see Hardouin, Bishop of Angers, despondingly admit, in 1428, that licentiousness had become so habitual among his clergy that it was no longer reputed to be a sin; that concubinage was public and undisguised, and that the patrimony of

tibus sustinuerunt et sustinent." So far, however, were the decrees of the council from being effective, that the Archbishop was obliged to modify them and to declare that they should only be enforced against those ecclesiastics who were notoriously guilty, and who kept their concubines publicly.—Concil. Coloniens. ann. 1423 can. i. viii. (Hartzheim V. 217, 220).

¹ Ambrosii Camaldulensis Lib. v. Epist. xii. (Martene Ampliss. Collect. III. 119-21). This was not the only case of abbots whose scandalous lives were treated with equal forbearance. See Epist. xiii., xiv.

Christ was wasted in supporting the guilty partners of the priesthood. That gambling, swearing, drunkenness, and all manner of unclerical conduct should accompany these disorders, is too probable to require the concurrent testimony which the worthy bishop affords us.¹ Alain Chartier, Archdeacon of Paris and Secretary to Charles VI. and Charles VII., confirms this in a more general way, when he attributes to enforced celibacy and the temporal endowments of the Church the vices and crimes which rendered the clergy so odious and contemptible to the laity that he looks forward to the speedy advent of Antichrist to wipe out the whole system in universal ruin.² Apparently its corruption was too deep-seated to hope for any milder means of reformation. To this we may at least partially attribute the utter loss of respect for sacred things which rendered the churches and their pastors a special mark for pillage and persecution during the dreary civil wars of the period.³

In England, which had enjoyed comparative immunity from civil strife, matters were quite as bad. At the request of Henry V., in 1414, the University of Oxford prepared a series of articles for the reformation of the Church, whose shortcomings were vehemently attacked by the Lollards. It is not easy to imagine a more humiliating confession than is contained in the 38th article, directed against priestly immorality. The carnal and undisguised profligacy of ecclesiastics is declared to be a scandal to the Church, and its impurity to be a dangerous temptation to others. It is therefore recommended that all public fornicators be suspended for a limited time from the ministry of the altar, and that some corporal chastisement be inflicted on them, in place of the trifling pecuniary mulct, which,

¹ Harduini Andegav. Epist. Statut. Præf. (Martene Thesaur. IV. 523-4.)

² Alan. Charter. Lib. de Exilio (Johan. Mariæ Lib. de Schismat. et Concil.).

³ Nic. de Clamengiis de Lapsu et Reparat. Justitiæ (Ed. 1519, pp. 13-14).

levied in secret, had no effect in deterring them from their evil courses.¹

This was the outcome of the great general council, on which such hopes had been built by Christendom, but the good fathers of Constance, conscious of their shortcomings in the matter of reform, had adopted the canon *Frequens*, ordering the assembly of another general council in five years, to be followed by successors every seven years thereafter. One was accordingly convoked at Siena in 1423, to be summarily dissolved in 1424 by the presiding papal legate, when the demand for effective measures of reform in the head and members of the Church grew too unmannerly to be further evaded. The next general council was due in 1431, but Pope Martin took no steps for its assembling until at the end of 1430 it was made plain to him that Europe was determined to find, with him or without him, some means of attempting a purification felt to be necessary as a safeguard against a revolutionary uprising of the laity.² Yet scarcely had the fathers fairly gathered in the Council of Basle, when Eugenius IV., who had meanwhile succeeded to the chair of St. Peter, sent orders for its dissolution to his legate, Cardinal Giuliano Cesarini.

The legate, who had better opportunity than his master of estimating the temper of Christendom, refused obedience, and his letter explaining the reasons of his contumacy affords a curious picture of the internal condition of the Church and of the relations existing between it and the laity. The extreme corruption of ecclesiastical morals had been the principal object of convoking the council, and had given rise to a feeling of fierce hostility towards the Church. To this was attributable the success which had attended the Hussite movement, and unless the people

¹ Wilkins III. 364-5.

² Jo. de Ragusio Init. et Prosec. Con. Basil. (Monumentt. Con. Gen. Sæc. XV. T. I.).—Concil. Senensis (Harduin. VIII. 1025-6).—Ad. Concil. Basil. (Harduin. VIII. 1108-10).—Raynald. Annal. ann. 1425, n. 3, 4.

could have reason to anticipate amendment, there was ample cause to fear a general imitation of the Hussites. So many provincial synods were daily held without result that confidence was no longer felt in the ordinary ecclesiastical machinery; the state of the public mind grew constantly more threatening as fresh scandals were wrought by the clergy, and the hopes entertained of the council were the only restraint which prevented the breaking out of a widespread revolt. As a proof of his assertions, the legate refers to various local troubles. Magdeburg had expelled her archbishop and clergy, was preparing waggons with which to fight after the Bohemian fashion, and was said to have sent for a Hussite to command her forces. Passau had revolted against her bishop, and was even then laying close siege to his citadel. Bamberg was engaged in a violent quarrel with her bishop and chapter. These cities were regarded as the centres of formidable secret confederacies, and were believed to be negotiating with the Hussites.¹ The good fathers evidently recognised the full magnitude of the danger. The results of the inaction of the Council of Constance were full of pregnant warnings. The reformers could no longer be brought to trust the papacy, and those who might secretly deprecate reform were fully alive to the threatening aspect of affairs. They therefore addressed themselves resolutely to the removal of the cause. All who were guilty of public concubinage were ordered to dismiss their consorts within sixty days after the promulgation of the canon, under pain of deprivation of revenue for three months. Persistent contumacy or repetition of the offence was visited with suspension from functions and stipend until satisfactory evidence should be afforded of repentance and amendment. Bishops who neglected to enforce the law were to be held as

¹ *Æneæ Sylvii Comment. de Gest. Conc. Basil. ad calcem* (Opp. Basil. 1551, pp. 66-70).—*Cf. Sigismundi Imp. Avisam. ann. 1433* (Goldast III. 427 sqq.).

sharing the guilt which they allowed to pass unpunished ; and those prelates who were above the jurisdiction of local tribunals or synods were to be remanded to Rome for trial. The council deplored the extensive prevalence of the "cullagium," by which those to whom was entrusted the administration of the Church did not hesitate to enjoy a filthy gain by selling licences to sin. A curse was pronounced on all involved in such transactions : they were to share the penalties of the guilt which they encouraged, and were, in addition, to pay a fine of double the amount of their iniquitous receipts.¹ In the Pragmatic Sanction, moreover, agreed upon in 1438 between the Emperor Albert II. and Charles VII. of France, the regulation confiscating three months' revenues of concubinary priests was embodied.²

Honest, well-meant legislation this ; yet the fathers of the council or the princes of Christendom could hardly deceive themselves with the expectation that it would prove effectual, even if the Basilian canons had been confirmed by the Holy See and accepted by the Church at large. If legislation could accomplish the desired result, there had already been enough of it since the days of Siricius. The compilations of canon law were full of admirable regulations, by which generation after generation had endeavoured to attain the same object by every imaginable modification of inquisition and penalty. Ingenuity had been exhausted in devising laws which were only promulgated to be despised and forgotten. Something more was wanting, and that something could not be had without overturning the elaborate structure so skilfully and laboriously built up by the craft and enthusiasm of ten centuries.

How utterly impotent, in fact, were the efforts of the

¹ Concil. Basiliens. Sess. xx. (Jan. 22, 1435.)

² Pragm. Sanct. ann. 1438 cap. 31 (Goldast. I. 403). D'Argentré, Collect. Judic. de novis Erroribus, I., II., 234).

council, is evident when, within five years after the adoption of the Basilian canons, Doctor Kokkius, in a sermon preached before the Council of Freysingen, could scarcely find words strong enough to denounce the evil courses of the clergy as a class;¹ and when, within fifteen years, we find Nicholas V. declaring that the clergy enjoyed such immunity that they scarcely regarded incontinence as a sin—which is perhaps no wonder, when he prohibited the members and officials of the Curia from keeping concubines, under pain of forfeiture of office and disability for preferment, unless they should previously have obtained letters of absolution from the Holy See—the perennial font of corruption which meets us at every turn.²

Shrouded under a thin veil of formality, this in substance indicates the degrading source of revenue which was so energetically condemned in inferior officials. The pressing and insatiable pecuniary needs of the papal court, indeed, rendered it impotent as a reformer, however honest the wearer of the tiara might himself be in desiring to rescue the Church from its infamy. Reckless expenditure and universal venality were insuperable obstacles to any comprehensive and effective measures of reformation. Every one was preoccupied either in devising or in resisting extortion. The local synods were engaged in quarrelling over the subsidies demanded by Rome, while the chronicles of the period are filled with complaints of the indulgences granted year after year to raise money for various purposes. Sometimes the objects alleged are indignantly declared to be purely supposititious; at other times intimations are thrown out that the collections were diverted to the private gain of the popes and of

¹ Quoniam nostri temporis clerici sunt, heu, affectu crudeles, affatu mendaces, gestu incompoti, victu luxuriosi, actu impii, et sub vacuo sanctitatis nomine sancti nominis derogant disciplinæ (Hartzheim V. 266). The council contented itself with repeating the canons of Basle.

² Lib. III. Tit. i. c. 3, in Septimo. "Nisi inhabilitatem suam. antea per dicta sedis litteras obtinuerint absolvi."

their creatures.¹ The opinion which the Church in general entertained of the papal court is manifested with sufficient distinctness in a letter from Ernest, Archbishop of Magdeburg, to his ambassador at Rome. The prelate states that he has deposited five hundred florins in Fugger's bank at Augsburg, for which he desires to procure certain bulls, one to enable him to grant indulgences, the other to compel the chapter of Magdeburg to allow him to dispose of the salt-works of Halle, in defiance of the vested rights of his Church—thus taking for granted a cynicism of venality which it would be difficult to parallel in the secular affairs of the most corrupt of courts.² Even the power to dispense from the vow of continence was occasionally turned to account in this manner. One of the accusations against John XXIII. was that for 600 ducats he had released Jacques de Vitry,

¹ Comp. Doeringii Chron. passim Döringk was minister or head of the Franciscan order in Saxony, and therefore may be considered an unexceptionable witness.

In the Polish diet of 1459, one of its leading members brought forward a series of propositions which showed the feelings entertained by the people towards papal exactions—"The Bishop of Rome has invented a most unjust motive for imposing taxes—the war against the infidels . . . The Pope feigns that he employs his treasures in the erection of churches; but in fact he employs them to enrich his relations," &c.—Krasinski, Reformation in Poland, i. 96.

The councils of Constance and Basle had produced, for a time, a spirit of great independence. John of Frankfort does not hesitate to declare that the papal authority is not binding when in opposition to the law of God—"Unde patet quod nec papalis vel et imperialis constitutio legi Dei obvians possit dici recta; nec aliquis ipsorum potest licite mandare quod sua constitutio servetur a subditis" (Johann. de Francford. contra Feymeros). According to the decisions of the Decretalists, this was rank heresy, and yet John of Frankfort was one of the leading minds of the period, and of unquestioned orthodoxy. He was a popular preacher, a doctor of theology, chaplain and secretary of the Count Palatine of the Rhine, and a bold disputant against the Hussites. He records with his own hand that, as inquisitor, he convicted and burned, July 4, 1429, at Lüders, an unfortunate heretic who denied the propriety of invoking the Virgin and the saints. Under the skilful management, however, of Nicholas V. and Pius II. this spirit of independence was kept in check, to again revive, in the next century, in a more determined form.

² Ludewig Reliq. Mætorum. XI. 415.—Under Boniface IX., at the commencement of the century, claims arising from simoniacal transactions were constantly and openly prosecuted in the court of the Papal Auditor.—Theod. a Niem de Vit. Joann. XXIII.

a Hospitaller, from his vows, had restored him to the world, and enabled him to marry.¹

The aspirations of Christendom had culminated in the Council of Basle in the most potent form known to the Church Universal. If the results were scarce perceptible while the influences of the council were yet recent, and while the antagonistic papacy was under the control of men sincerely desirous to promote the best interests of the Church, such as Nicholas V. and Pius II., we can feel no wonder if the darkness continued to grow thicker and deeper under the rule of such pontiffs as Sixtus IV., Innocent VIII., and Alexander VI. Savonarola found an inexhaustible subject of declamation in the fearful vices of the ecclesiastics of his times, whom he describes as *ruffiani e mezzani*.² In the assembly of the Trois Etats of France, held at Tours in 1484, the orator of the Estates, Jean de Rély, afterwards Bishop of Angers, in his official address to Charles VIII. declared it to be notorious that the religious orders had lost all devotion, discipline, and obedience to their rule, while the canons (and he was himself a canon of Paris) had sunk far below the laity in their morals, to the great scandal of the Church.³ Yet what could be accomplished by an uncompromising reformer was shown when, about 1490, Niccolò Bonafede, afterwards Bishop of Chiusi, was sent to Trani as archiepiscopal vicar. He found that nearly all the priests openly kept concubines and brought up their children without shame—the primicier, in fact, had eleven in his house. Bonafede ordered that all should dismiss their companions

¹ Concil. Constantiens. Sess. XI.

² "Si vous saviez tout ce que je sais ! des choses dégoûtantes ! des choses horribles ! vous en frémiriez ! Quand je pense à tout cela, à la vie que mènent les prêtres, je ne puis retenir mes larmes." And again, "Ma peggio ancora. Quello che sta la notte con la concubina, quell' altro con il garzone, e poi la mattina va a dire messa, pensa tu come la va. Che vuoi tu fare di quella messa ?"—Jérôme Savonarole d'après les documents originaux, par F. T. Perrens, pp. 71-2. Paris, 1856.

³ Masselin, Journal des États de Tours, pp. 197-99.

within eight days, under penalty of forfeiture of benefice, and that the women should leave the diocese, under pain of scourging.¹ He had already given evidence of his tenacity of purpose, and his commands were obeyed by all but one, in which case the priest was deprived of his preferment, and the unfortunate woman was duly flogged and banished.²

In England, the facts developed by the examination which Innocent VIII. in 1489 authorised Morton, Archbishop of Canterbury, to make into the condition of the religious houses, present a state of affairs quite as bad. Henry VII.'s first Parliament, in 1485, had endeavoured to accomplish some reform by passing an Act empowering the episcopal authorities to imprison all priests and monks convicted of carnal lapses,³ but this, like all similar legislation, whether secular or ecclesiastical, appears to have been useless. Innocent describes the monasteries, in his bull to the archbishop, as wholly fallen from their original discipline, and this is fully confirmed by the results of the visitation. The old and wealthy abbey of St. Albans, for instance, was little more than a den of prostitutes, with whom the monks lived openly and avowedly. In two priories under its jurisdiction the nuns had been turned out and their places filled with courtesans, to whom the monks of St. Albans publicly resorted, indulging in all manner of shameless and riotous living, the details of which can well be spared.⁴ These irregularities were emulated by the secular ecclesiastics. Among the records of the reign of Henry VII. is a memorial from the gentlemen and farmers of Carnarvonshire, complaining that the seduction of their wives and daughters was pursued syste-

¹ Leopardi, *Vita di Niccolò Bonafede*, p. 18 (Pesaro, 1832).

² 1 Henr. VII. 4.

³ Wilkins III. 680-83.

⁴ Yet in the letter of Archbishop Morton to the Abbot reciting all these enormities, he is not even threatened with deposition, but only invited to mend his ways.

matically by the clergy.¹ That the prevalence of these practices was thoroughly understood is shown in a book of instructions for parish priests drawn up by a canon of Lilleshall about this period. In enumerating the causes for which a parson may shrive a man not of his own parish, he includes the case in which the penitent has committed sin with the concubine or daughter of his own parish priest.²

Spain was equally infected. The Council of Aranda, in 1473, denounced bitterly the evil courses by which the clergy earned for themselves the wrath of God and the contempt of man, and it endeavoured to suppress the sempiternal vice by the means which had been so often ineffectually tried — visitations, fines, excommunication, suspension, forfeiture of benefice, and imprisonment—but all to as little purpose as before.³ Vainly Ferdinand and Isabella in repeated edicts sought to restrain the evil by attacking the concubines with fines, scourging and banishment, for the male offenders were beyond their jurisdiction.⁴ The trouble continued without abatement, and the Council of Seville, in 1512, felt itself obliged to repeat as usual all the old denunciations and penalties, including those against ecclesiastics who officiated at the marriages of their children, which it prohibited for the future under a fine of 2000 maravedis—a mulct which it likewise provided for those who committed the indecency of having their children as assistants in the solemnity of the Mass.⁵ We shall see hereafter how fruitless were all these efforts to cure the incurable.

¹ Froude's History of England, Ch. III.

² Or gef hym self had done a synne
By the prestes sybbe kynne,
Moder or suster, or hys lemmon
Or by hys doghter gef he had on.

John Myrc's Instructions for Parish Priests, p. 26 (Early English Text Society, 1868).

³ Concil. Arandens. ann. 1473 c. ix. (Aguirre V. 345-6.)

⁴ Novissima Recopilacion, Lib. XII., Tit. xxvi., leyes 3-5.

⁵ Concil. Hispalens. ann. 1512 can. xxvi., xxvii. (Aguirre V. 371-2.)

What was the condition of morals in Germany may be inferred from some proceedings of the chapter of Brunswick in 1476. The canons intimate that the commission of scandals and crimes has reached a point at which there is danger of their losing the inestimable privilege of exemption from episcopal jurisdiction. They therefore declare that for the future the canons, vicars, and officiating clergy ought not to keep their mistresses and concubines publicly in their houses, or live with them within the bounds of the church, and those who persist in doing so after three warnings shall be suspended from their prebends until they render due satisfaction.¹ In this curious glimpse into the domestic life of the cathedral close it is evident that the worthy canons were moved by no shame for the publicity of their guilt, but only by a wholesome dread of giving to their bishop an excuse for procuring the forfeiture of their dearly prized right of self-judgment.

The Hungarian Church, by a canon dating as far back as 1382, had finally adopted a pecuniary mulct as the most efficacious mode of correcting offenders. The fine was five marks of current coin, and by granting one-half to the informer or archdeacon, and the other to the archiepiscopal chamber, it was reasonably hoped that the rule might be enforced. As might have been expected, this resulted, not in reforming the clergy, but in providing a source of revenue for the prelates, so that all parties were interested in maintaining a flourishing condition of immorality, as Jacopo della Marchia, one of the fiercest persecutors of heresy, found to his cost. In 1436 he was sent by Eugenius IV. as inquisitor of Hungary and Austria to check the spread of Hussitism. His unsparing severity excited such general terror that he is said to have received the submission of fifty-five thousand converts, but when, at Fünfkirchen, he paused in his missionary labours to

¹ Statut. Eccles. in Braunschweig, cap. 75 (Mayer, Thes. Jur. Eccles. I. 124).

reform the concubinarian priests, his resolution gave way, for they repelled his interference so energetically that he was forced to fly for his life. Pope and Emperor were invoked, and he was enabled to return, but we hear no more of any effort on his part to meddle with the clergy and their partners.¹ That matters remained unaltered is shown by two synods of Gran, one in 1450 and the other in 1480, which reiterate the complaint, not only that the archdeacons and other officials kept the whole fine to themselves, but also, what was even worse, that they permitted the criminals to persevere in sin, in order to make money by allowing them to go unpunished.² This state of affairs was not to be wondered at if the description of his prelates by Matthias Corvinus be correct. They were worldly princes, whose energies were devoted to wringing from their flocks fabulous revenues to be squandered in riotous living on the hordes of cooks and concubines who pandered to their appetites.³ The morals of the regular clergy were no better, for a diet held by Vladislas II. in 1498 complained of the manner in which abbots and other monastic dignitaries enriched themselves from the revenues of their offices, and then, returning to the world, publicly took wives, to the disgrace of their order.⁴

In Pomerania the evil had at length partially cured itself, for the female companions of the clergy seem to have been regarded as wives in all but the blessing of the Church. Benedict, Bishop of Camin, in 1492 held a synod in which he quaintly but vehemently objurgates his ecclesiastics for this wickedness; declares that no man can part such couples joined by the devil; alludes to their offspring as beasts creeping over the earth, and has

¹ Wadding, *Annal. Minorum*, ann. 1437, n. 6-12.

² Synod. Strigonens. ann. 1382, 1450, 1480 (*Batthyani III.* 275, 481, 557).

³ Galeoti Martii de dictis et factis Matthiæ Regis cap. XI. (*Schwandtneri Rer. Hungar. Script.*).

⁴ Synod. Reg. ann. 1498 c. 16. (*Batthyani I.* 551).

his spleen peculiarly stirred by the cloths of Leyden and costly ornaments with which the fair sinners were bedecked, to the scandal of honest women.¹ His indignation was wasted on a hardened generation, for his successor, Bishop Martin, on his accession to the see in 1499, found the custom still unchecked. The new bishop promptly summoned a synod at Sitten in 1500, where he reiterated the complaints of Benedict, adding that the priests convert the patrimony of Christ into marriage portions for their children, and procure the transmission of benefices from father to son, as though glorying in the perpetuation of their shame. What peculiarly exasperated the good prelate was that the place of honour was accorded as a matter of course to the priests and their consorts at all the merry-makings and festivities of their parishioners, which shows how fully these unions were recognised as legitimate, and apparently, for prudential reasons, encouraged by the people.²

Similar customs, or worse, doubtless prevailed in Sleswick, for when Eggard was consecrated bishop in 1494, he signalled the commencement of his episcopate by forbidding his clergy to keep such female companions. The result was that before the year expired he was forced to abandon his see, and five years later he died, a miserable exile in Rome.³

In fact, so loose had become the conception as to celibacy that in some places priestly marriage was quietly

¹ *Wiæ Hist. Episc. Camin.* c. 41.—These irregularities were not of recent introduction. The canon referred to is copied almost literally from a synod held nearly forty years before by Bishop Henning. In fact, from the description given by the latter of the drinking, gambling, trading, and licentiousness of the ecclesiastics of Camin, there was little of the clerical character about them.—*Synod. Camin. ann. 1454* (Hartzheim V. 930).

² *Wiæ Hist. Episc. Camin.* c. 42.—*Synod. Sedinens.* c. 5.

In West Prussia, in 1497, the synod of Ermeland expresses itself as scandalised by the priests taking their companions publicly to fairs and other gatherings, and, to put a stop to the practice, it offers to secret informers one-half of the fine imposed on such indiscretions.—*Synod. Warmiens. ann. 1497 c. xxxix.* (Hartzheim V. 668).

³ *Boissen Chron. Slesvicens. ann. 1494.*

resumed, subject to the condition of resigning benefices. In a formulary of the fifteenth century there are formulæ for conferring parish churches, canonries, and precentorships thus vacated by the wedlock of the incumbent.¹ Other churches had become established as hereditary, descending from father to son, and only in default of male issue did their collation revert to the bishop. The old rule rendering the bastards of priests incapable of preferment still remained on the books, but dispensations removing such disabilities for benefices without cure of souls were remanded to episcopal jurisdiction; a regular formula was provided for such cases, and, in the prevalent venality of the period, we may assume that they could be had by any applicant at a moderate price.²

The monastic Orders were no better than the secular clergy. When Ximenes was made Provincial of the Franciscan Order in Spain, he set himself earnestly at work to force the brethren to live according to the rule. The "Conventuals," as the great body of the Order was called to distinguish them from the "Observantines," led disorderly lives, almost purely secular, and refused absolutely to submit to the observance of their vows. King Ferdinand being appealed to, pronounced sentence of banishment upon them, and they absolutely preferred existence in exile to the insupportable yoke of their Order. Yet they considered themselves so aggrieved that when they left Toledo they marched in procession through the Puerta Visagra with a crucifix at their head, singing the 113th Psalm, "In exitu Israel de Egypto." When Ximenes was promoted to the primatial see of Toledo,

¹ *Formularium Instrumentorum ad usum Curie Romane*, fol. 20a, 91a, 101b (s.l.c.a., Hain 7276).—"Cum itaque parochialis ecclesia N. loci de N. quam nuper dilectus noster N. de N. ipsius ecclesie rector obtinebat ex eo vacet et vacare noscatur ad presens quod dictus P[resbyter] matrimonium per verba de presenti legitime cum quadam muliere contraxit illudque secundum morem patrie solemnizavit et per carralem copulam confirmavit," etc.

² *Ibid.*, fol. 20b, 21a.

the malcontents appealed to the Vicar General of the Order in Rome, who came to Spain and warmly espoused their cause, being only forced to desist by the decided stand taken by Queen Isabella in favour of Ximenes.¹ It was the same with the other monastic Orders. A bull of Alexander VI., issued in 1496 for the purpose of reforming the Benedictines, describes the inhabitants of many establishments of both sexes in that ancient and honoured institution as indulging in the most shameless profligacy; and marriage itself was apparently not infrequently practised.² Savonarola did not hesitate to declare that nuns in their convents became worse than harlots.³ Even the strictest of all the orders—the Cistercian—yielded to the prevailing laxity. A general chapter, held in 1516, denounces the intolerable abuse indulged in by some abbots, who threw off all obedience to the rule, and dared to keep women under pretence of requiring their domestic services.⁴ To fully appreciate the force of this indication, it is requisite to bear in mind the stringency of the regula-

¹ Robles, *Vida del Card. Ximenes de Cisneros*, cap. XII., XIII. Cf. Wadding, *Annal Minor*, ann. 1495, n. 34-36; ann. 1496, n. 10-15.

When the Franciscan general expressed to Isabella at great length the unworthiness and demerits of Ximenes, she quietly asked him whether he was sane and knew to whom he was speaking.—Gomesius de *Rebus gestis Fr. Ximenii*, Lib. 1. fol. 14.

This reformation was not lasting. In 1545 Philip II. threatened to expel them all from Spain: Pius IV. proposed that they should gradually become extinct, by forbidding the reception of novices; but he finally empowered his legate to reduce them to observance of the rule or to extinguish them, as Philip might prefer.—Döllinger, *Beiträge zur politischen, kirchlichen u. Cultur-Geschichte*, I. 617 (Regensburg, 1862).

² *Rursus in certis monasteriis dicti ordinis, ipsæ moniales apertis claustris, indifferenter omnes homines etiam suspectos intromittunt, ac extra monasteria in curiis, castris et plateis vagantes, plura scandala committunt . . . Similiter religiosi qui in sacris ordinibus constituti non sunt, relicto habito regulari, matrimonium contrahere dicuntur. . . . Præterea omnes et singulos monachos et moniales regulam S. Benedicti hujusmodi expresse vel tacite professos, qui habitum monasticum sine dispensatione legitima reliquerunt aut matrimonia contraxerunt, ad monasteria, si illa exiverunt, redire et habitum monasticum ac velum nigrum reassumere dicta auctoritate compellatis.*—App. ad *Chron. Cassinens.* Ed. Dubreul, pp. 902-3.

The words italicised would seem to indicate that monks and nuns occasionally married without even quitting their monasteries.

³ Perrens, *Jérôme Savonarole*, p. 84.

⁴ *Statut. Ord. Cisterc.* ann. 1516 (*Martene Thesaur.* IV. 1636-7).

tions which forbade the foot of woman to pollute the sacred retirement of the Cistercian monasteries.¹

The efforts constantly made to check these abuses produced little result. A Carthusian monk, writing in 1489,

¹ Thus, in 1193, the general chapter of the Order promulgated the rule—"Si contigerit mulieres abbatiam ordinis nostri ex consensu intrare, ipse abbas a patre abbate deponatur absque retractatione. Et quicumque sine conscientia abbatis introduxerit, de domo ejiciatur, non reversurus, nisi per generale capitulum."—(Capit. General. Cisterc. ann. 1193 cap. 6—apud Martene Thesaur. IV. 1276.) The strictness with which this was enforced is illustrated by the proceedings in 1205 against the abbot of the celebrated house of Pontigny, because he had allowed the Queen of France and her train to be present at a sermon in the chapel and a procession in the cloisters, and to spend two nights in the infirmary. He adduced in his defence a special rescript of the Pope and a permission from the head of the Order in favour of the Queen, but these were pronounced insufficient, and sentence was passed that he merited instant deposition "quia tam enorme factum sustinuit, in totius ordinis injuriam," but that, in consequence of the powerful intercession of the Archbishop of Rheims and other bishops, he was allowed to escape with lighter punishment.—(Hist. Monast. Pontiniac.—Martene Thesaur. III. 1245.)

This rule, indeed, was almost universal in the ancient monasteries. The great abbey of St. Martin of Tours preserved it inviolate until the incursions of the Northmen rendered the house an asylum for the inhabitants of the surrounding territory, and the prohibition was subsequently revived and formally approved by Leo VII. in 938 (Leonis P.P. VII. Epist. vi.). In that of Sithieu, from the time of its foundation early in the seventh century, it was preserved without infraction for more than three centuries. Even the licence of the Carolingian revolution did not cause its inobservance; and when, amid the disorders of the tenth century, the Counts of Flanders became lay abbots of the convent, and discipline was almost forgotten, the mediation of two bishops was required to obtain permission, about the year 940, for Adela, Countess of Flanders, prostrated with mortal sickness, to be carried in and laid before the altar, where she miraculously recovered.—(De Mirac. S. Bertin. Lib. II. c. 12.—Chron. S. Bertin. c. 23, 24.)

So when Boniface founded the abbey of Fulda, he prohibited the entrance of women in any of the buildings, even including the church. The rule was preserved unfringed through all the licence of the tenth and eleventh centuries, and when, in 1132, the Emperor Lothair came to Fulda to celebrate Pentecost, his empress was not allowed to witness the ceremonies. So when Frederick Barbarossa, in 1135, spent his Easter there, he was not permitted to enter the town because his wife was with him. In 1370 Boniface IX., at the request of the Abbot John Merlaw, relaxed the rule and permitted women to attend at the services of the church—shortly after which it was destroyed by lightning, as a warning for the future.—(Paullini Chron. Badeslebiens. § viii.)—An equally convincing indication of the favour with which this regulation was regarded by Heaven was afforded when Abbot Helisacar, about the year 830, introduced it in the celebrated monastery of St. Riquier, and immediately the number of miracles worked by the relics of the saint increased in a notable degree (Chron. Centulensis Lib. III. cap. iv.).—At the Grande Chartreuse, founded by St. Bruno towards the end of the eleventh century, women were not even allowed to enter on the lands of the community.—(Chart. S. Hugon, Gratianopolit. (Patrolog. T. 166, p. 1571).)

deplores the fact that while monasteries were everywhere being reformed, few if any of them maintained their morals, but returned to their old condition immediately on the death of the zealous fathers who had sought to improve them.¹ That condition is described by a Benedictine abbot, the celebrated Trithemius, in general terms, as that of dens in which it was a crime to be without sin, their inhabitants for the most part being addicted to all manner of vices, and being monks only in name and habit.²

That the clergy, as a body, had become a stench in the nostrils of the people is evident from the immense applause which greeted all attacks upon them. In 1476 a rustic prophet arose in the hamlet of Niklaushausen, in the diocese of Wurzburg, who was a fit precursor of Muncer and John of Leyden. John of Niklaushausen was a swineherd, who professed himself inspired by the Virgin Mary. From the Rhinlands to Misnia, and from Saxony to Bavaria, immense multitudes flocked to hear him, so that at times he preached to crowds of twenty and thirty thousand men. His doctrines were revolutionary, for he denounced oppression both secular and clerical; but he was particularly severe upon the vices of the ecclesiastical body. A special revelation of the Virgin had informed him that God could no longer endure them, and that the world could not, without a speedy reformation, be saved from the divine wrath consequent upon them.³ The unfortunate man was seized by the Bishop of Wurzburg; the fanatical zeal of his unarmed followers was easily subdued, and he expiated at the stake his revolt against the powers that were.

¹ Anon. Carthus. de Relig. Orig. cap. XL. (Martene Ampliss. Coll. VI. 93).

² Johan. de Tritenheim Lib. Lugubris de Statu et Ruina Monast. Ordinis cap. III.

³ Annuntia populo fidei meo, et dic quod Filius meus avaritiam, superbiam et uxuriam clericorum et sacerdotum amplius sustinere nec possit nec velit. Unde nisi se quantocius emendaverint, totus mundus propter eorum scelera periclitabitur. —Trithem. Chron. Hirsaug. ann. 1476.

Such being the state of ecclesiastical morality throughout Europe, there can be little wonder if reflecting men sought occasionally to reform it in the only rational manner—not by an endless iteration of canons, obsolete as soon as published, or by ingeniously varied penalties, easily varied or compounded—but by restoring to the minister of Christ the right to indulge legitimately the affections which bigotry might pervert, but could never eradicate. Even as early as the close of the thirteenth century, the high authority of Bishop William Durand had acknowledged the inefficacy of penal legislation, and had suggested the discipline of the Greek Church as affording a remedy worthy of consideration.¹ As the depravity of the Church increased, and as the minds of men gradually awoke from the slumber of the dark ages, and shook off the blind reverence for tradition, the suggestion presented itself with renewed force. At the Council of Constance Cardinal Zabarella did not hesitate to suggest that, if the concubinary practices of the clergy could not be suppressed, it would be better to concede to them the privilege of marriage,² and shortly after the failure of the council to effect a reform had become apparent, Guillaume Saignet wrote a tract entitled “*Lamentatio ob Cælibatum Sacerdotum,*” in which he attacked the existing system, and called forth a rejoinder from Gerson. The Carmelite, Thomas Connecte, was a wandering preacher who filled France and the Low Countries with denunciations of popular vices, both lay and clerical. His eloquence won

¹ *Quum pene in omnibus conciliis et a plerisque Romanis pontificibus super cohibenda et punienda clericorum incontinentia, et eorum honestate servanda multa hactenus emanaverint constituta; et nullatenus ipsorum reformari quiverit correctio morum: . . . videretur pensandum an expediret et posset provideri quod in ecclesia Occidentali, quantum ad votum continentie, servaretur consuetudo ecclesie Orientalis, quantum ad promovendos, potissime quum tempore Apostolorum consuetudo ecclesie Orientalis servaretur.*—Durand. de Modo General. Concil. P. II. rubr. 46 (Calixtus, p. 537).

² Card. Zabarellæ Capit. Agend. in Concil. Constant. cap. XII. (Von der Hardt T. I. P. ix. p. 525).

immense applause, and his auditors were reckoned in crowds of from ten to twenty thousand souls. He was especially severe on the concubinage of all ranks of the clergy, and recommended a restoration of priestly marriage as the appropriate remedy; but when, in 1432, he ventured in Rome to lash the corruption of the Curia, he was found to be a heretic, and his career was ended at the stake.¹ When the Council of Basle was earnestly engaged in the endeavour to restore forgotten discipline, the Emperor Sigismund laid before it a formula of reformation which embraced the restoration of marriage to the clergy. His orator drew a fearful picture of the evils caused by the rule of celibacy—evils acknowledged by every one in the assembly—and urged that, as it had produced more injury than benefit, the wiser course would be to follow the example of the Greek Church.² A majority of the Council assented to the principle, but shrank from the bold step of adopting it. Eugenius IV. had just been forced to acknowledge the legitimacy of the body as an Œcumenic council; the strife with the papacy might again break forth at any moment, and it was not politic to venture on innovations too audacious. The conservatives, therefore, skilfully eluded the question by postponing it to a more favourable time, and the postponement was fatal.

One of the most celebrated members of the council, Cardinal Nicholas Tudeschi, surnamed Panormitanus, whose pre-eminence as an expounder of the canon law won for him the titles of “Canonistarum Princeps” and “Lucerna Juris,” declares that the celibacy of the clergy was not essential to ordination or enjoined by divine law; and he records his unhesitating opinion that the question should be left to the option of the individual—those who had

¹ Monstrelet, *Chronique*, II., 53, 127.—Martene, *Ampliss. Collect.* VIII. 92.—Altmeyer, *Précurseurs de la Réforme*, I. 237.

² Zaccaria, *Nuova Giustificaz.* pp. 121-2.—Milman, *Latin Christ.* Book XIII. chap. 12.

resolution to preserve their purity being the most worthy, while those who had not would be spared the guilt which disgraced them.¹ So Æneas Sylvius, who as Pius II. filled the pontifical throne from 1458 to 1464, and who knew by experience how easy it was to yield to the temptations of the flesh, is reported to have said that marriage had been denied to priests for good and sufficient reasons, but that still stronger ones now required its restoration.² Indeed, when arguing before the Council of Basle in favour of the election of Amedeus of Savoy to the papacy, he had not scrupled to declare that a married priesthood would be the salvation of many who were damned in celibacy.³ And we have already seen that Eugenius IV. in 1441, and Alexander VI. in 1496, granted permission of marriage to several military Orders, as the only mode of removing the scandalous licence prevailing among them.

This question of the power of the Pope to dispense with the necessity of celibacy seems to have attracted some attention about this period. In 1505, Geoffroy Boussard, afterwards Chancellor of the University of Paris, published a tract wherein he argued that priestly continence was simply a human and not a divine ordinance, and that the Pope was fully empowered to relax the rule in special cases, though he could not abolish wholly an institution of such long continuance which had received the assent of so many holy fathers and general councils. At the same time, one of his arguments in favour of its enforcement shows how little respect was left in the minds of all thinking men for the claims of the Church to veneration. He quotes

¹ Not having the works of Tudeschi to refer to, I give his remarks as quoted by Villadiego (Fuero Juzgo, p. 177, No. 85) from Gloss. in cap. olim, de cleric. conjug.—“Quod deberet ecclesia facere sicut bonus medicus, ut si medicina, experientia docente, potius officit quam prodit, eam tollat; sic eorum voluntati relinqueretur, ita ut sacerdos qui abstinere nolisset, posset uxorem ducere, cum quotidie illicito coitu maculentur.”

² Sacerdotibus magna ratione sublatis nuptias, majori restituendas videri.—Platina in Vit. Pii II.

³ Æneæ Sylvii de Concil. Basil. Lib. II.

Bonaventura to the effect that if bishops and archbishops had licence to marry they would rob the Church of all its property, and none would be left for the poor, for, he adds, “since already they seize the goods of the Church for the benefit of distant relatives, what would they not do if they had legitimate children of their own?”¹

When the advantages and the necessity of celibacy thus were doubted by the highest authorities in the Church, it is no wonder if those who were disposed to question the traditions of the past were led to reject it altogether. In 1479 John Ruchrath, of Oberwesel, graduate of Tubingen, and doctor of theology, in his capacity of preacher at Worms openly disseminated doctrines which differed in the main but little from those of Wickliffe and Huss. He denied the authority of popes, councils, and the fathers of the Church to regulate matters either of faith or discipline. The Scripture was the only standard, and no one had a right to interpret it for his brethren. The received observances of religion, prayers, fasts, indulgences, were all swept away, and universal liberty of conscience proclaimed to all. Of course, sacerdotal celibacy shared the same fate, as a superstitious observance contrived by papal ingenuity in opposition to evangelical simplicity.² Thus his intrepid logic far outstripped the views of his predecessors, and Luther afterwards acknowledged the similarity between his teachings and those of John of Oberwesel. Yet he had not the spirit of martyrdom, and the Inquisition speedily forced him to a recantation, which was of little avail, for he soon after perished miserably in the dungeon into which he had been thrust.³

Still more remarkable as an indication of the growing

¹ De Continentia Sacerdotum, Nurnb. 1510, Prop. 6, 7.

² Trithem. Chron. Hirsaug. ann. 1479. D'Argentré, Collect. judic. de novis Erroribus, I., II., 291 sqq.

³ Serrarii Hist. Rer. Mogunt. Lib. I. c. 34.

spirit of independence was an event which in July 1485 disturbed the stagnation of the centre of theological orthodoxy—the Sorbonne. A certain Jean Laillier, priest and licentiate in theology, aspiring to the doctorate, prepared his thesis or “Sorbonique,” in which he broached various propositions savouring strongly of extreme Lollardry. He denied the supremacy of the Pope, and indeed reduced the hierarchy to the level of simple priesthood; he rejected confession, absolution, and indulgences; he refused to acknowledge the authority of tradition and legends, and insisted that the fasts enjoined by the Church had no claim to observance. Celibacy was not likely to escape so audacious an inquirer, and accordingly among his postulates were three, declaring that a priest clandestinely married required no penitence; that the Eastern clergy committed no sin in marrying, nor would the priests of the Western Church if they were to follow that example; and that celibacy originated in 1073, in the decretals of Gregory VII., whose power to introduce the rule he more than questioned. The Sorbonne, as might be anticipated, refused the doctorate to so rank a heretic, and Laillier had the boldness not only to preach his doctrines publicly, but even to appeal to the Parlement for the purpose of forcing his admission to the Sorbonne. The Parlement referred the matter to the Bishop of Paris and to the Inquisitor. A long controversy followed, and it required the interposition of Innocent VIII. before Laillier could be punished and forced to recant.¹ In Poland, too, there were symptoms of similar revolt against the established ordinances of the Church, as shown in a book published at Cracow in 1504, “*De Matrimonia Sacerdotum.*”²

The corruption of the Church establishment, in fact, had

¹ D'Argentré, I., II., 309 sqq.

² Krasinski, *Reformation in Poland*, I. 110.

reached a point which the dawning enlightenment of the age could not much longer endure. The power which had been entrusted to it, when it was the only representative of culture and progress, had been devoted to selfish purposes, and had become the instrument of oppression in all the details of daily life. The immunity which had been serviceable through centuries of anarchy had become the shield of vices. The wealth so freely lavished upon it by the veneration of Christendom was wasted in excesses. All efforts at reformation from within had failed; all attempts at reformation from without had been successfully crushed and sternly punished. Intoxicated with centuries of domination, the muttered thunders of growing popular discontent were unheeded, while its corruptions were displayed before the people with more careless cynicism. There appeared to be no desire on the part of the majority of the clergy to make even a pretence of the virtue and piety on which were based their claims for reverence, while the laity were daily growing less reverent, were rising in intelligence, and were becoming more inclined to question where their fathers had been content to believe. Such a complication could have but one result.

CHAPTER XXV

THE REFORMATION IN GERMANY

THE opening of the sixteenth century witnessed an ominous breaking down of the landmarks of thought. The revival of letters, which was fast rendering learning the privilege of all men in place of the special province of the legal and clerical professions; the discovery of America, which destroyed reverence for primeval tradition, and accustomed men's minds to the idea that startling novelties might yet be truths; the invention of printing, which placed within the reach of all inquirers who had a tincture of education the sacred writings for investigation and interpretation, and enabled the thinker and the innovator at once to command an audience and disseminate his views in remote regions; the European wars, commencing with the Neapolitan conquest of Charles VIII., which brought the nations into closer contact with each other, and carried the seeds of culture, civilisation, and unbelief from Italy to the farthest Thule; all these causes, with others less notable, had been silently but effectually wearing out the remnants of that pious and unquestioning veneration which for ages had lain like a spell on the human mind.

In this bustling movement of politics and commerce, arts and arms, science and letters, religion could not expect to escape the spirit of universal inquiry. Even before opinion had advanced far enough to justify examination into doctrinal points and dogmas, there was a general readiness to regard the shortcomings of sacerdotalism, in the administration of its sacred trust, with a freedom of

criticism which could not long fail to destroy the respect for claims of irrefragable authority. The disposition to criticise the abuses of the ecclesiastical system, to note its shortcomings, and to apply remedial measures was general, and savoured little of the respect which the Church had for so many centuries inculcated as one of the first of Christian duties. Its past services were forgotten in present wrongs. Its pretensions had at one time enabled it to be the protector of the feeble and the sole defence of the helpless, but that time had passed. Settled institutions were fast replacing anarchy throughout Europe, and its all-pervading authority would no longer have been in place, even if exercised for the common benefit. When it was notorious, however, that the powers and immunities claimed by the Church were largely employed for evil rather than for good, their anachronism became too palpable, and their destruction was only a question of time.

Signs of the coming storm were not wanting. In 1510 a series of complaints against the tyranny and extortion of Rome was solemnly presented to the Emperor. The German churches, it was asserted, were confided by the successors of St. Peter to the care of those who were better fitted to be keepers of mules than pastors of men, and the Pope was significantly told that he should act more tenderly and kindly to his children of Teutonic race, lest there might arise a persecution against the priesthood, or a general defection from the Holy See, after the manner of the Hussites.¹ The Emperor was warned, in his efforts to obtain the desired reform, not to incur the censures and enmity of the Pope, in terms which show that only the political effects of excommunication were dreaded, and that its spiritual thunders had lost their terrors. He was

¹ Gravamina German. Nationis, No. VII.—Remed. contra Gravamina (Freher. et Struv. II. 677-8).

In the previous century some remonstrances against grievances had been uttered, but in a very different tone from this.

further cautioned against the prelates in general, and the mendicant friars in particular, in a manner denoting how little reverence was left for them in the popular mind, and how thoroughly the whole ecclesiastical system had become a burden and reproach, and no longer an integral part of every man's life and the great motive power of Christendom.¹

It was evident that the age was rapidly outstripping the Church, and that the latter, to maintain its influence and position, must conform to the necessities of progress and enlightenment. On previous occasions it had done so, and had, with marvellous tact and readiness, adapted itself to the exigencies of the situation in the long series of vicissitudes which had ended by placing it supreme over Europe. But centuries of almost uninterrupted prosperity had hardened it. The corruption which attends upon wealth had rendered wealth a necessity, and that wealth could only be had by perpetuating and increasing the abuses which caused ominous murmurs of discontent in those nations not hardy enough to set limits to the authority of the Holy See. The Church had lost its suppleness, and was immovable. A reform such as was demanded, while increasing its influence over the souls of men, would have deprived it of control over their purses; reform meant poverty. The sumpter-mule loaded with gold, wrung from the humble pittance of the Westphalian peasant, under pretext of prosecuting the war against the infidel, would no longer cross the Alps to stimulate with its treasure the mighty genius of Michael Angelo, or the fascinating tenderness of Raphael; to provide princely revenues for the bastards of a pope, or to pay mercenaries who were to win them cities and lordships; to fill the antechamber of a cardinal with

¹ *Avisamenta ad Cæsar. Majest.* (Ibid. p. 680).

parasites, and to deck his mistresses with the silks and jewels of Ind; to feed needy men of letters and scurrilous poets; to soothe the itching palms of the Rota, and to enable all Rome to live on the tribute so cunningly exacted of the barbarian.¹ The wretched ending of the Council of Basle rendered any internal reformation impossible which did not derive its initiative and inspiration from Rome. In Rome, it would have required the energy of Hildebrand, the stern self-reliance of Innocent, the unworldly asceticism of Celestin combined, even to essay a reform which threatened destruction so complete to all the interests accumulated by sacerdotalism around the Eternal City. Leo X. was neither Hildebrand, nor Innocent, nor Celestin. With his voluptuous nature, elegant culture, and easy temper, it is no wonder that he failed to read aright the signs of the times, and that he did not even recognise the necessity which should impose upon him a task so utterly beyond his powers. The fifth Council of Lateran had no practical result.

¹ When Diether was elected Archbishop of Mainz, in 1459, his envoys sent to obtain his confirmation from Pius II. were stupefied with a demand for 20,506 florins—more than double the amount of annates previously assessed on the see. He refused to yield to the demand, but the Roman bankers had already advanced to the members of the Curia their shares of the spoils, and on his persistent refusal he was deposed by the Pope, and Adolph of Nassau appointed in his place, leading to a bloody war and the devastation of city and territory.—Appell. Dom. Dytheri (Senckenberg, *Selecta Juris T. IV.* p. 393).—*Cf.* Helwich de *Dissidio Moguntino* (Rer. Moguntiac. *Script. T. II.*). This is probably the fraud alluded to by the Diet of 1510, where it was complained that the annates of the see of Mainz were raised from 10,000 florins to 25,000; and this latter sum was exacted seven times in one generation, resulting in taxation on the peasantry so severe that an insurrection against the clergy was threatened.—*Remed. contra Gravam.* (Freher. et Struv. II. 678.)

In the complaint made to Adrian VI., in 1523, by the Diet of Nürnberg, it is asserted that three generals of the mendicant Orders at Rome had purchased the cardinalate with gold wrung from Germany.—*Gravam. Nationis German. cap. lxxiii.*—*ap.* Le Plat, *Monument. Concil. Trident. II.* 203.

That this estimate of the papal Curia was shared by the orthodox is shown in the story told of Pierre Danes, Bishop of Vaur, who in 1545 was sent as ambassador by Francis I. to the Council of Trent. In debate a French theologian was inveighing against the corruptions of the Rota, when an Italian ecclesiastic sneeringly cried out, "Gallus cantat." Danes promptly rejoined, "Utinam illo gallicinio Petrus ad resipiscentiam et fletum excitetur."—Le Plat, *Monument. Concil. Trident. VII.* 224.

Blindly he plunged on : money must be had at any cost, until the methods employed in marketing the St. Peter's indulgence attracted the attention of Luther, and Teutonic insubordination burst forth at the sound of his voice.¹

It would be a mistake to credit Luther with the Reformation. His bold spirit and masculine character gave to him the front place, and drew around him the less daring minds who were glad to have a leader to whom to refer their doubts, and on whom their responsibility might partly rest ; yet Luther was but the exponent of a public sentiment which had long been gaining strength, and which in any case would not have lacked expression. In that great movement of the human mind he was not the cause, but the instrument. Had his great opponent Erasmus enjoyed the physical vigour and practical boldness of Luther, he would have been handed down as the heresiarch of the sixteenth century. He too had borne his full share in preparing the minds of men for what was to come. The whole structure of sacerdotalism felt the blows of his irreverential spirit, which boldly declared that the Scriptures alone contained what was necessary to salvation.² Theological subtleties and priestly observances were alike useless or worse than useless. For the living, it was idle to attend Mass ; for the dead, it was folly to look to such a means for extrication from purgatory.³ The confessional was to be visited only as a formal prerequisite to partaking of the Eucharist ;⁴ pilgrimages and the veneration

¹ The briefs of Leo X. from March 1513 to October 1515, calendared by Cardinal Hergenrother (Leonis X. Regestu, Friburgi, 1884-1891) throw abundant light on the worldliness and venality of the papal court of the period, the reckless prodigality of Leo, and the ruinous financial expedients to which he resorted. Not the least of his burdens was the gigantic enterprise of rebuilding the church of St. Peter, inherited from Julius II.

² Erasmi Colloq. Confabulatio Pia.

³ Ibid. See also the *Encomium Moriæ*.—"Nam quid dicam de iis qui sibi fictis scelerum condonationibus suavissime blandiuntur, ac purgatorii spatia veluti clepsydris metiuntur, secula, annos, menses, dies, horas, tanquam e tabula mathematica citra ullum errorem dimentientes?"

⁴ Confabulatio Pia.

of relics were ridiculed with a reckless freedom which showed how shaken was the reverence of the past.¹ Nothing, indeed, can give us a more thorough conviction of the readiness of the public to welcome a radical change than the wealth of indignant bitterness which Erasmus, himself a canon regular and a priest, heaps upon all orders of the Church, and the immense applause which everywhere greeted his attacks. His sarcastic humour, his biting satire, his exquisite ridicule, nowhere find a more congenial subject than the vices of the monks, the priests, the prelates, the cardinals, and even of the Pope himself, until even Luther, as late as 1517, feels constrained to deplore that the evils which afflicted the Church should be thus exposed to derision.² It affords a curious illustration of the times to read those writings which a century earlier might have led him to share the fate of John Huss and Jerome of Prague, and to reflect that he was not only the admiration of both the learned and the vulgar of Europe, but also the petted *protégé* of king and kaiser, the correspondent of popes, and finally the champion of the system which he had so ruthlessly reviled, and which he never ceased to deplore.³ The extraordinary favour with which

¹ Speaking of the Virgin's milk and the countless relics of the cross everywhere exposed to the adoration of the pious, he exclaims, "O matrem filio simillimam ! ille nobis tantum sanguinis reliquit in terris ; hæc tantum lactis quantum vix credibile est esse posse uni mulieri uniparæ, etiamsi nihil bibisset infans . . . Idem caussantur de cruce Domini, quæ privatim ac publice tot locis ostenditur, ut si fragmenta conferantur in unum, navis onerariæ justum onus videri possint ; et tamen totam crucem suam bajulavit Dominus"—to which he makes a pious interlocutor reply, "Novum fortasse dici possit ; mirum nequaquam, quum Dominus, qui hæc auget pro suo arbitrio, sit omnipotens."—Colloq. Peregrinat. Religionis.

² Supplement. Epist. M. Lutheri, No. II. (Halæ, 1703.)

³ The popular view of the priesthood is well summed up by Erasmus in the following dialogue : "COCLÉS, Cur mavis sacerdotium quam uxorem ?—PAMPHAGUS, Quia mihi placet otium. Arridet Epicurea vita.—CO. At mea sententia suavius vivunt, quibus est lepida puella domi, quam complectantur, quoties libet.—PAM. Sed adde, nonnunquam quum non libet. Amo voluptatem perpetuam. Qui ducit uxorem, uno mense felix est : cui contingit optimum sacerdotium, in omnem usque vitam fruitur gaudio.—CO. Sed tristis est solitudo, adeo ut nec Adam suaviter victurus fuerit in Paradiso nisi deus illi adjunxisset Evam.—PAM. Non deerit Eva cui sit plentiful sacerdotium," &c.—Erasmi Colloq. de Captandis Sacerdotiis.

It is, however, perhaps in the "Encomium Moriæ" that he gives fullest rein to

his works were received by all classes shows how fully he was justified in the indignation which he so unsparingly lavished on clerical abuses, and how eagerly the public appreciated one who could so well express that which was felt by all. Equally significant was the popularity of the "*Epistolæ Obscurorum Virorum*," in which the learned wits of the new school poured forth upon the clergy a broad and homely ridicule which exactly suited the taste of the age;¹ while Cornelius Agrippa more than rivalled Erasmus in the wealth of vigorous denunciation with which he lashed the vices of all the orders of ecclesiastics, from the Pope to the béguine.²

Not less indicative of the dangerous state of opinion was an address delivered in the diet held at Augsburg in

his bitter satire. His own sad experience of conventual life gave him special opportunity of declaiming against the monks "*qui se vulgo religiosos ac monachos appellant, utroque falsissimo cognomine, quum et bona pars istorum longissime absit a religione, et nulli magis omnibus locis sint obvii.*" Their habit, their observances, their discipline, their ignorance, idleness, vices, are recounted at great length and with the most stinging ridicule, and he makes Folly dismiss them with the contemptuous valediction, "*Verum ego istos histriones, tam ingratos beneficiorum meorum dissimulatores quam improbos simulatores pietatis libenter relinquo.*" The secular priesthood, the bishops, and even the Pope himself are treated with little more respect, and every class of the ecclesiastical body is stigmatised as endeavouring to thrust upon others the care of the flock and industrious only in shearing the sheep.

The "*Encomium Moriæ*" had an immediate and immense success. Numberless editions were required to supply the avidity of the learned, and it was immediately translated into almost every language of Europe for the benefit of the unlearned. It appeared in 1509; the *Colloquies* in 1516.—When these works had produced their result, their dangerous tendencies were discovered, and they enjoyed the honour of being included in the first *Index Expurgatorius* (App. Concil. Trident.). Cardinal Caraffa, indeed, in 1538, had urged upon Paul III. the propriety of excluding the *Colloquies* from use in schools as a text-book for students.—Concil. de Emend. Eccles. (Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. II. 602.)

¹ The "*Epistolæ Obscurorum Virorum*" was certainly published before 1516, probably in 1515 (Ebert, Bibliog. Dict. s. v.).—It is equally severe upon the monks—"Tunc ille dixit: ego distinguo de monachis, quia accipiuntur tribus modis. Primo, pro sanctis et utilibus, sed illi sunt in cælo. Secundo, pro nec utilibus nec inutilibus, et illi sunt picti in ecclesia. Tertio, modo pro illis qui adhuc vivunt, et illi multis nocent, etiam non sunt sancti, quia ita superbi sunt sicut unus sæcularium. Et ita libenter habent pecunias et pulchras mulieres," &c. And again, "*Ubi enim diabolus pervenire vel aliquid efficere non potest, ibi semper mittit unam malam antiquam vetulam vel unum monachum.*"

² De Vanitate Scientiarum cap. lxi., lxii., lxiv.

1518, when the legates of Leo X. appealed to Germany for a tithe to assist in carrying on the war against the Turk. The orator who replied to them did not restrain his indignation at the deplorable condition of the Church, which he attributed solely to the worldly ambition of the popes. Since they had united temporal with spiritual dominion—or, rather, since they had allowed temporal interests to divert them wholly from their spiritual duties—all had gone amiss. Christendom was despoiled from without, and filled with tumult within. Religion was openly contemned; Christ was daily bought and sold; the sheep were shorn, and the pastor took no care of them. He did not even hesitate to charge, with emphasis and at much detail, that the money extorted from Germany under pious pretexts was squandered in Italy on the private quarrels and for the aggrandisement of the papal houses and those of the members of the sacred college.¹ All other nations were protected from papal rapacity and tyranny by formal agreements. Germany alone was surrendered defenceless, and not only were her bishops plundered, but even the smallest benefice could not be confirmed without the recipient running the gauntlet of a horde of officials whose exactions forced him to sell the very furniture of his church. As the rules of law and the dictates of justice were equally disregarded, the popular sentiment was becoming openly hostile to the Church.² A state of feeling which dictated and permitted such a declaration from the supreme representative body of the empire, when brought into collision with the pretensions of the Holy See, now more exaggerated than ever, could have but one result—revolution.

With all this licence, Germany was still, by the force of circumstances, less independent of the papacy than any

¹ Orat. in Comit. Augustan. (Freher. et Struv. II. 702.)

² Bartholini Comment. de Comit. Augustens. ann. 1518 (Senckenberg. Selecta Juris T. IV. pp. 669–70).

other Tramontane power. The fractioning of the empire since the death of Barbarossa, carefully stimulated by papal intrigues, had deprived it of unity and prevented the consolidation of a power capable of resisting the encroachments of the Curia, which sucked the life-blood of both priest and peasant, and rendered the very name of Rome hateful to all, but especially to Teutonic ecclesiastics.¹ What was going on elsewhere in Europe may be guessed from the humiliating conditions exacted in 1517 of Silvester Darius, the papal collector, on his assuming the functions of his important office in England. He bound himself by oath not to execute any letters or mandates of the Pope injurious to the King, the kingdom, or the laws; not to transmit from England to Rome, without a special royal licence, any gold, or silver, or bills of exchange; not to leave the kingdom himself without a special licence under the great seal; with other less notable restrictions, the practical effect of all being to place him and his duties wholly under the control of the King.² The position of England had changed since the days of Innocent and John. Had the dissensions of Germany permitted equal progress, Luther might perhaps have only been known as an obscure but learned orthodox doctor, and the inevitable revolt of half of Christendom have been postponed for a century.

It is not my province to follow in detail the vicissitudes of the Reformation, but only to indicate briefly its relations with sacerdotal asceticism. Luther at first, like Wickliffe and Huss, paid no attention to the subject. In fact, when on the 31st of October, 1517, he nailed on the church door of Wittenberg his celebrated ninety-five propositions, nothing was further from his expectations than to create a

¹ See the dispatches of the nuncio Aleander and the letter of Archbishop Albert of Mainz to Pope Leo, in Balan, *Monument. Reform. Lutherean*, pp. 31-2, 58, 74, 98, 165, 268-9.

² Rymer, *Fœdora XIII.* 586-7.

heresy, a schism, or even a general reform in the Church. He had simply in view to vindicate his ideas on the subject of justification, derived from St. Augustin, against the Thomist doctrines which had been exaggerated into the monstrous abuses of Tetzal and his fellows.¹ In the general movement of the human mind at that period so much had been said that was inimical to the received practices of the Church, without calling forth the thunders of Rome, that men seemed to think the day of toleration had at last come. The hierarchy sat serenely upon their thrones, and in the confidence of unassailable power appeared willing to allow any freedom of speculation which did not assail their temporal privileges. Yet amid the general agitation and opposition to Rome which pervaded society, it was impossible for a bold and self-reliant spirit such as Luther's not to advance step by step in a career of which the ultimate goal was as little foreseen by himself as by others. Still his progress was wonderfully slow. Even in 1519 he still considered himself within the pale of the Church: in a letter to Leo X. he protested before God that he did not seek in any way to attack the power of either the Pope or the Roman Church, which he held to be supreme over all in heaven and earth, save Jesus Christ alone; ² and in the same year, in a sermon on matrimony, he alluded not unfavourably to the life of virginity.³ Events soon after forced him to further and more dangerous innovations, yet when Leo X., in June 1520, issued his celebrated bull, "Exsurge Domine," to crush the rising

¹ Even in this Luther was by no means the first. Erasmus had exposed the demoralisation of the system with fully as much fervour in the "Encomium Moriæ."—"Hic mihi puta negotiator aliquis, aut miles, aut judex, abjecto ex tot rapinis unico nummulo, universam vitæ Lernam semel expurgatam putat, totque perjuria, tot libidines, tot ebrietates, tot rixas, tot cædes, tot imposturas, tot perfidias, tot proditiones existimat velut ex pacto redimi, et ita redimi ut jam liceat ad novum scelerum orbem de integro reverti."—And in the "Epistolæ Obscurorum Virorum" the falseness of its promises was unflinchingly asserted.

² Lutheri Opp. T. I. fol. 210b (Jenæ, 1561).

³ Ibid. T. I. fol. 335a.

heresy, in the forty-one errors enumerated as taught by Luther there is no allusion to any doctrine specially inimical to ascetic celibacy.¹ At almost the same moment, however, Luther, in his address to the Christian nobles of Germany, proposed that through the intervention of a general council the privilege of marriage should be granted to parish priests, and this was speedily followed by the suggestion that vows of chastity taken before the age of eighteen should be invalid.²

The papal condemnation, followed as it was by the public burning of his writings, aroused Luther to a more active and aggressive hostility than he had previously manifested. In his book "De Captivitate Babylonica Ecclesiæ" he attacked the sacrament of ordination, denied that it separated the priest from his fellows, and ridiculed the rule concerning digami, which excluded from the priesthood a man who had been the husband of any but a virgin, while another who had polluted himself with six hundred concubines was eligible to the episcopate or papacy.³ Finally, on 10th December 1530, he proclaimed war to the knife by burning at Wittenberg the books of the canon law, and justifying his act by a manifesto recapitulating the damnable doctrines contained in them. Among these he enumerates the prohibition of sacerdotal marriage as the origin and cause of excessive vice and scandal.⁴ As he said himself, hitherto he had only been playing at controversy with the Pope, but this was the beginning of serious work.⁵ Soon after this, in a controversy with Ambrogio Catarino, he stigmatised the rule of celibacy as angelical in appearance, but devilish in reality, and invented by Satan as a fertile source of sin and perdition.⁶

¹ Mag. Bull. Roman. Ed. 1692, I. 614.

² Herzog, Abriss, T. III. p. 34.—Lutheri Opp. T. I. fol. 359b.

³ De Captiv. Babylon. Eccles. (Lutheri Opp. II. fol. 283a.)

⁴ Artic. et Errores Libb. Jur. Canon. No. 18 (Lutheri Opp. II. fol. 318a).

⁵ Ibid. fol. 319b.

⁶ Ibid. fol. 362a, 374a.

In the mighty movement which was agitating men's minds, Luther had been anticipated in this. As early as 1518, a monk of Dantzic named James Knade abandoned his order, married, and publicly preached resistance to Rome. It is evident that in this he had the support of the people, for though he was imprisoned and tried by the ecclesiastical authorities, the only punishment inflicted on him was banishment.¹ In the multitude of other questions more interesting to the immediate disputants this point of discipline seems to have attracted but little attention until 1521, when during Luther's enforced seclusion in the Wartburg, Bartholomew Bernhardi, pastor of Kammerich, near Wittenberg, put the heresiarch's views into action in the most practical way by obtaining the consent of his parish and celebrating his nuptials with all due solemnity. Albert, Archbishop of Mainz and Magdeburg, addressed to Frederic, Elector of Saxony, a demand for the rendition of the culprit, which that prudent patron of the Reformation skilfully eluded, and Bernhardi published a short defence or apology in which he denounced the rule of celibacy as a "*frivolam traditiunculam*." He argued the matter, quoting the texts which since his time have been generally employed in support of sacerdotal marriage: he referred to Peter and Philip, Spiridion of Cyprus, and Hilary of Poitiers, as examples of married bishops; quoted the story of Paphnutius, and relied on the authority of the Greek Church. This apparently did not satisfy the archbishop, for Bernhardi felt obliged to address a second apology to Frederic of Saxony, to whom he appealed for protection against the displeasure of his ecclesiastical superiors.² In spite of molestation, he continued in the exercise of his priestly functions until death. Less fortunate were his immediate imitators. A priest of Mansfield

¹ Krasinski, *op. cit.* I. 112-3.

² *Lutheri Opp.* Jenæ, 1581, T. II. fol. 438, 440.

who took to himself a wife was thrown into prison at Halle by Albert of Mainz, and Jacob Siedeler, pastor of Glas-hütten, in Misnia, who was guilty of the same crime, perished miserably in the dungeon of Stolpen, to which he was committed by Duke George of Saxony.¹

The enthusiastic Carlostadt, relieved for the time from the restraint of Luther's cooler wisdom, threw himself with zeal into this new movement of reform, and lost no time in justifying it by a treatise in which he argued strenuously in favour of priestly marriage, and energetically denounced the monastic vows as idle and vain. Luther, however, in his retreat, seems not yet prepared to take any very decided position. In a letter of 17th January 1522, to Wolfgang Fabricius Capito, one of the officials of the Archbishop of Mainz, and a favourer of the Reformation, he takes the latter severely to task with respect to his action in a case of the kind—probably that of the priest of Mansfield alluded to above. The man had been set at liberty, but forced to separate himself from his wife, and Capito had defended himself on the ground that the woman was a harlot. Luther asks him why he had been so earnest with a single strumpet, when he had taken no action with so many under his jurisdiction in Halberstadt, Mainz, and Magdeburg, and adds that when the priest had acknowledged the woman as his wife there should have been nothing further done. He proceeds to say, however, that he does not ask for the freedom of sacerdotal marriage, and that he is not prepared to take any general position concerning it, except that it is lawful under God.² Either with or without his approbation, however, his friends lost no time in enforcing the new dogma, which they proclaimed to the world in the most authoritative manner. During the same year Luther's own Augustinian Order

¹ Spalatin. *Annal.* ann. 1521.

² *Lutheri Epist.* Jenæ, 1545, T II. fol. 38, 39.

held a provincial synod at Wittenberg, in which they formally threw open the doors of the monasteries, and permitted all who desired it to return to the world, declaring that in Christ there was no distinction between Jew and Greek, monk and layman, and that a vow in opposition to the Gospel was no vow, but an impiety. Ceremonies, observances, and dress were pronounced futile; those who chose to abide by the established rule were free to do so, but their preferences were not to be a law to their fellows. Those who were fitted for preaching the Word were advised to depart; those who remained were obliged to perform the manual labour which had been so prominent a portion of primitive Teutonic monasticism, and mendicancy was strictly forbidden. In a few short and simple canons a radical rebellion thus declared itself in the heart of an ancient and powerful order, and principles were promulgated which were totally at variance with sacerdotalism in all its protean forms.¹

This broad spirit of toleration did not suit the views of the more progressive reformers. In Luther's own Augustinian convent at Wittenberg, one of his most zealous adherents, Gabriel Zwilling, preached against monachism in general, taking the ground that salvation required the renunciation of their vows by all who had been ensnared into assuming the cowl; and so great was his success that thirteen monks at once abandoned the convent. Yet even on Luther's return to Wittenberg he at first took no part in the movement. He retained his Augustinian habit, and continued his residence in the convent; but before the close of the year (1522) he put forth his work, "De Votis Monasticis," in which he fully and finally adopted the views of his friends, and showed himself as an uncompromising enemy of monasticism.² How difficult it was for

¹ Synod. Vuitemberg. (Lutheri Opp. II. 470.)

² Lutheri Opp. II. 477 sqq.—In this edition the tract is dated 1522 in the

him, however, to shake off the habitudes in which he had been trained is shown by the fact that, even at the end of 1523, he still sometimes preached in his cowl and sometimes without it.¹

Notwithstanding the zealous opposition of the orthodox ecclesiastical authorities, the doctrine and practice of Wittenberg were not long in finding earnest defenders and imitators. But few such marriages, it is true, are recorded in 1522, although Balthazar Sturmius, an Augustinian monk of Saxony, committed the bolder indiscretion of marrying a widow of Franconia. In that year, however, we find Franz von Sickingen, knight-errant and condottiere, who was then a power in the state, advocating the emancipation and marriage of the religious orders, in a letter to his father-in-law, Diedrich von Henthschuchsheyn. Still more important was the movement inaugurated in Switzerland by Ulrich Zwingli, who, with ten other monks of Nôtre-Dame-des-Hermites, on July 2, 1522, addressed to Hugo von Hohenlandenberg, Bishop of Constance, a petition requesting the privilege of marriage. The petitioners boldly argued the matter, citing the usual Scriptural authorities, and adjured the bishop in the most pressing terms to grant their request. They warned him that a refusal might entail ruinous disorders on the whole sacerdotal body, and that, unless he seized the opportunity to guide the movement, it might speedily assume a most disastrous shape. They asserted, indeed, that not only in Switzerland, but elsewhere, it was generally believed that a majority of ecclesiastics had already chosen their future wives, and that a return to the old order of things was beyond the power of man to accom-

index and 1521 in the text. Henke and Ranke, however, agree in assigning it to a period subsequent to his return from Wartburg.

¹ Spalatin. *Annal. ann. 1523.*—The fact that Spalatin recorded whether he wore the cowl or not, shows the importance which Luther's friends attached to his example with respect to it.

plish. This was followed, July 13, by a similar memorial addressed to the Government of the Swiss Confederacy. The signers frankly admitted their inability to preserve chastity, and asked the State to protect them in their marriages if the bishop allowed them to marry.¹

In this assertion, Zwingli and his companions followed perhaps rather the dictates of their hopes than of their judgment, for the revolution was by no means as universal or immediate as their threats or warnings would indicate. Its progress, nevertheless, was rapid and decided. In Zurich the secular authorities gave permission to all nuns to abandon their cloisters; in 1523, Leo Judæ, Zwingli's foremost disciple and parish priest of St. Peters, married a former béguine, and in 1524 Zwingli himself married Anna Reinhart, widow of Hans Meyer, with whom he had been living as man and wife since 1522.² In Germany, Luther, whom we have seen, in the earlier part of 1522, still giving but a qualified assent to the daring innovation of his followers, in February 1523 wrote to Spalatin in favour of a married pastor who was seeking preferment at the hands of the Elector Frederic;³ and in April 1523 he himself officiated and preached a sermon in favour of matrimony to a multitude of distinguished friends at the wedding of Wenceslas Link, vicar of the Augustinian Order, one of his oldest and most valued supporters, who had stood unflinchingly by him when arraigned by Cardinal Caietano before the Emperor Maximilian at the Diet of Augsburg.⁴ Not less important was the countenance

¹ Spalatin. *Annal. ann. 1522.*—Huldreich Zwingli, by Samuel Macauley Jackson, p. 166 (New York, 1901).

² Jackson's *Huldreich Zwingli*, p. 232.—Herzog, *Abriss*, III. 76. See *Ibid.* p. 88, for the contest in Basle over the marriage of Stephan Stoer, pastor of Liestal, where *Œcolampadius* maintained the unscriptural character of the canon of celibacy.

³ Supplement. *Epist. M. Lutheri* No. 31 (Halæ, 1703).

⁴ Spalatin. *Annal. ann. 1523.*—Thammii *Chron. Colditens.*—Link married a daughter of Suicer, a lawyer of Oldenburg, in Misnia, and the bride's example was shortly afterwards followed by her two sisters, one of whom was united to Wolfgang

given to the innovation, two days later, by the Elector Frederic, who consented to act as sponsor at the baptism of the first-born of Franz Gunther, pastor of Loch,¹ the ceremony being performed by the honest chronicler Spalatin himself.

It is curious to see in Spalatin's diary how each successive marriage is recorded as a matter of the utmost interest, the hopes of the reformers being strengthened by every accession to the ranks of those who dared to defy the rules which had been deemed irreversible for centuries. Nor was it an act without danger, for no open rupture had as yet taken place between the temporal power of any state and the central authority at Rome. Even in electoral Saxony, though Duke Frederic, by a cautious course of passive resistance, afforded protection to the heretics, yet he still considered himself a Catholic, and the ritual of his chapel was unaltered. Elsewhere the ecclesiastical power was bent on asserting its supremacy over the licentious apostates who ventured to sully their vows and prostitute the sacrament of marriage by their incestuous unions. The old charge of promiscuous intercourse was resorted to in their case, as it has been with almost every heresy in every age, for the purpose of exciting popular odium,² and wherever the discipline of the Church could be enforced, it was done unsparingly. The temper of these endeavours to repress the movement is well illustrated by

Fuess, parish priest of Kolditz, and formerly a monk of Gera; while the other accepted the addresses of the parish priest of Kitscheren. (Spalatin, *ubi sup.*)

¹ Spalatin, *ubi sup.*—How these innovations were regarded in Rome is manifested in a minatory epistle addressed, in 1522, by Adrian VI. to the Elector Frederic of Saxony. "Et cum ipse sit apostata ac professionis suæ desertor, ut plurimos sui faciat similes, sancta illa Deo vasa polluere non veretur, consecratasque virgines et vitam monasticam profensas extrahere a monasteriis suis, et mundo imo diabolo quem semel abjuraverunt, reddere . . . Christi sacerdotes etiam vilissimis copulant meretricibus," etc. (Hartzheim VI. 192.)

² See the address of Frederic Nausea, surnamed Blancicampianus, afterwards Bishop of Vienna, at the Council of Mainz in 1527.—Synod. Mogunt. ann. 1527 (Hartzheim VI. 207).

the regulations promulgated under the authority of the Cardinal-legate Campeggio, when in 1524 he succeeded in uniting a number of reactionary princes at the Assembly of Ratisbon. Deploring the sacrilege committed in the marriages of priests and monks, which were becoming extremely common, he granted permission to the secular powers to seize all such apostates and deliver them to the ecclesiastical officials, significantly restraining them, however, from inflicting torture. The officials were empowered to condemn the offenders to perpetual imprisonment, or to hand them over to the secular arm—a decent euphuism for a frightful death; and any negligence on the part of the ordinaries exposed those officers to the pains and penalties of heresy.¹

In spite of all this, however, the votaries of marriage had the support and sympathy of the great body of the people. It shows how widely diffused and strongly implanted was the conviction of the evils of celibacy, when those who four centuries earlier had so cruelly persecuted their pastors for not discarding their wives now urged them to marriage, and were ready to protect them from the consequences of the act. Thus, during the summer of 1524, Wolfgang Fabricius Capito, provost of St. Thomas and priest of the church of St. Peter at Strassburg, whom we have seen two years earlier prosecuting a married priest, took to himself a wife, by the request of his parishioners; and when the chapter of canons endeavoured to interfere with him, the threatening aspect of the populace warned them to desist. Nor was this the only case, for Bishop William undertook to excommunicate all the married priests of Strassburg, when the senate of the city resolutely espoused their cause, and even the authority of the legate Campeggio could not reconcile the quarrel.²

¹ Reformat. Cleri German. ann. 1524 c. 26 (Goldast, Constit. Imp. III. 491).

² Spalatin. Annal. ann. 1524.

Even higher protection was sometimes not wanting. When Adrian VI., in 1522, reproached the Diet of Nürnberg with the inobservance of the decree of Worms and the consequent growth of Lutheranism, and King Ferdinand, in the name of the German states, replied that a council for the reformation of the Church was the only remedy, the question of married priests arose for discussion. The German princes alleged that they could find in the civil and municipal laws no provisions for the punishment of such transgressions, and that the canons of discipline could only be enforced by the ecclesiastical authorities themselves, who ought not to be interfered with in the discharge of their duty by the secular authorities.¹ This was scant encouragement, but even this was often denied in practice. When, in 1523, Conrad von Tungen, Bishop of Wurzburg, threw into prison two of his canons, the doctors John Apel and Frederic Fischer, for the crime of marrying nuns, the Council of Regency at Nürnberg forced him to liberate them in a few weeks.² The latter fact is the more remarkable, since but a short time previously (6 March, 1523) the Imperial Diet at Nürnberg, under the auspices of the same Regency, had expressed its desire to give every assistance to the ecclesiastical authority in enforcing the canons. In a decree on the subject of the religious disturbances it adopted the canon law on celibacy as part of the civil law, pronouncing sentence of imprisonment and confiscation on all members of the clergy who should marry, and ordering the civil power in

¹ Respons. S. R. I. Ordinum Norimb. cap. 18 (Goldast. op. cit. I. 455).—With this the Legate Cheregato professed himself to be content, but he bitterly complained of an intimation that if these apostate priests and nuns transgressed the laws in any other way, the secular tribunals would punish them. He held that, though apostates, they were still ecclesiastics, only amenable to the courts Christian, and he protested against any violation of the privileges and jurisdiction of the Church such as would be committed in bringing them before a civil magistrate. (Ibid. p. 456.)

² Spalatin. ann. 1523.

all cases to assist the ecclesiastical in its efforts to punish offenders.¹

In the Low Countries, under the Regency of Margaret of Austria, the civil power not only assisted but stimulated the ecclesiastical to its duty. A conspicuous case was that of Jan de Backer (Pistorius) of Woerden, who had married, abandoned the priesthood, and supported himself by manual labour, until the preaching of the St. Peter's indulgence in Woerden induced him to resume the tonsure and priestly functions in order to combat it. It illustrates the disciplinary looseness of the pre-Reformation period that he seems not to have been disturbed in his apostacy and marriage, but the Lutheran revolt had created a different temper. He was arrested and carried to The Hague, where he was tried by the inquisitors of Louvain, who earnestly endeavoured to induce him to abandon his wife and recant his errors as to papal authority, purgatory, &c., but in vain. There was nothing left to do with him but to burn him alive, which was executed accordingly, 15 September, 1525.²

The emancipation of nuns excited considerable public interest, and in many instances was effected by aid from without. A certain Leonhard Kopp, who was a determined enemy of monachism, rendered himself somewhat notorious by exploits of the kind. One of the earliest instances was that by which, on Easter Eve, 1523, at considerable risk, he succeeded in carrying off from the convent of Nimptschen, in Misnia, eight young virgins of noble birth, all of whom were subsequently married, and one of whom was Catharine von Bora.³ The example was contagious. Before the month was out six nuns, all of

¹ Edict. Norimb. Convent. ann. 1523 c. 10, 18, 19 (Goldast. II. 151).—This illustrates well the vacillating conduct of the Council of Regency during this period.

² Fredericq, *Corpus Documentt. Inquisitionis Neerlandicæ*, IV. 406-99.

³ Chron. Torgaviæ—Spalatin. *Annal. ann. 1523*. He conveyed them at once to Wittenberg, and Luther writes to Spalatin asking him to collect funds for their support until they can be permanently provided for.

noble blood, left the abbey of Sormitz, and soon after eight escaped from that of Peutwitz, at Weissenfels.¹ Monks enfranchised themselves with still less trouble. At Nürnberg, in 1524, the Augustinians in a body threw off their cowls and proclaimed themselves citizens.²

Finally, Luther gave the last and most unquestionable proof of his adhesion to the practice of sacerdotal marriage by espousing Catharine von Bora, whom we have seen escaping, two years before, from the convent of Nimptschen. Scandal, it would seem, had been busy with the intimacy between the pious doctor and the fair renegade, who had spent nearly the whole period of her liberty at Wittenberg, and Luther, with the practical decision of character which distinguished him, suddenly resolved to put the most effectual stop to rumours which his enemies doubtless were delighted to circulate. On the evening of 13 June, 1525, without consulting his friends, he invited to supper Pomeranus, Lucas Cranach, and Apellus, and had the marriage ceremony performed.³ It took his followers completely by surprise; many of them disapproved of it, and Justus Jonas, in communicating the fact to Spalatin, characterises it as a startling event, and evidently feels that his correspondent will require the most incontrovertible evidence of the fact, when he declares that he himself had been present and had seen the bridegroom in the marriage bed.⁴ If the portraits after Lucas

¹ Spalatin. ubi sup.

² Spalatin. ann. 1524.

³ Melanchthon to Camerarius (*ap. Mayeri Dissert. de Cath. Lutheri conjuge.* pp. 25-6).—Melanchthon can only suggest that it was a mysterious act of Providence.—“*Isto enim sub negotio fortasse aliquid occulti et quiddam divinius subest, de quo nos curiose querere non decet.*”—The whole letter is singularly apologetic in its tone.

⁴ Spalatin. ann. 1525.

Pomeranus, a priest of Wittenberg, in writing to Spalatin, gives as the reason of Luther's marriage—“*Maligna fama effecit ut Doct. Martinus in sperato fieret conjunx*”; and Luther, in a letter to the same, admits this even more distinctly—“*Os obstruxi infamantibus me cum Catherina Borana.*” That his action was not generally approved by his friends is apparent from his asking Michael Stiefel to pray that

Cranach given in Mayer's Dissertation on Catharine be faithful likenesses, it was scarcely the beauty of his bride that led Luther to take this step, for her features seem rather African than European.¹

When Luther had once decided for himself on the propriety of sacerdotal marriage, he was not likely to stop half-way. Some of the reformers were disposed to adopt

his new life may sanctify him—"Nam vehementer irritantur sapientes, etiam inter nostros."—Spalatin. ubi sup.

That surprise should have been aroused is singular, when he had already proclaimed the most extreme views in favour of matrimony. As early as 1522 he delivered his famous "Sermo de Matrimonio," in which he enjoins it in the strictest manner as a duty incumbent upon all. Thus, in considering the impediments to marriage, he treats of vows, concerning which he says: "Sin votum admissum est, videndum tibi est, ut supra memoravi, num tribus eviratorum generibus comprehendaris, quæ conjugio ademit Deus, ubi te in aliquo istorum uno non repperis, votum rescindas, monasticen deseras oportet; moxque ad naturalem sociam adjungas te matrimonii lege."—P. I. c. 8 (Opp. Ed. Vuitenberg. V. 121). To this must be added his decided opinions on the subject of conjugal rights, as developed in the well-known passage which has excited so much animadversion, and which, if we are to interpret it literally, conveys a doctrine which sounds so strangely as the precept of a teacher of morality. In treating of the causes of divorce, he remarks: "Tertia ratio est, ubi alter alteri sese subduxerit, ut debitam benevolentiam persolvere nolit, aut habitare cum renuerit. Reperiuntur enim interdum adeo pertinaces uxores, qui etiam si decies in libidinem prolabantur mariti pro sua duritia non curarent. Hic oportunum est ut maritus dicat 'Si tu nolueris, alia volet.' Si domina nolit, adveniat ancilla, ita tamen ut antea iterum et tertio uxorem admoneat maritus, et eorum aliis ejus etiam pertinaciam detegat, ut publice et ante conspectum ecclesie, duritia ejus et agnoscat et reprehendatur. Si tum renuat, repudia eam, et in vicem Vasti Ester surroga, Assueri regis exemplo" (Ibid. p. 123).

One conclusion at least can safely be drawn from this, that the morality of the age had impressed Luther with the belief that the self-restraint of chastity was impossible.

That the Catholics should make themselves merry over the marriage of the apostate monk and nun was to be expected, and Jerome Emser did not think it beneath him to write an epithalamium on the wedding of his former friend, of which the following may be taken as a specimen—

Ad Priapum Lampsacenum
Veneramur, et Silenum
Bacchumque cum Venere
cum júbilo.
Septa claustrî dissipamus,
Sacra vasa compilamus
Sumptus unde suppetat
cum júbilo.

Mayeri Dissert. p. 22, 23.

¹ Mayeri de Cath. Luth. conjug. Dissert. 4to, Hamburgi, 1702. Cranach, as we have seen, was one of the three witnesses present at the marriage.

the principles of the early Church, and, while permitting married priests to officiate, denied to them the right to marry a second time or to espouse any but virgins, declaring all *digami* worthy of death and calling upon the people to drive them out. Against these Luther, in 1528, took up the cudgels vigorously, arguing the question in all its bearings, and arriving at the conclusion that only bigamists were to be shunned or deemed unworthy of holy orders.¹ Yet at the same time his thoroughly practical mind prevented him from losing sight of some of the evils inseparable from the revolution which he had wrought in an institution so deeply affecting daily life as monasticism. As late as 1543, in a letter to Spalatin, while congratulating him on the desire expressed by some nuns to leave their convent, he cautions them not to do so unless they have a certainty or at least a speedy prospect of marriage. He complains of the number of such cases in which he had been obliged to support the fugitives, and he concludes by declaring that old women who had no chance of finding husbands had much better remain in their cloisters.²

It is not difficult to explain why there was so ready and general an acquiescence in the abrogation of a rule established by the veneration of so many centuries. Not only had the doctrines of the reformers taken a deep and firm hold of the popular heart throughout Germany, destroying the reverence for tradition and antiquity, and releasing the human mind from the crushing obligation of blind obedience, but there were other motives, natural if not particularly creditable. The ecclesiastical foundations had long neglected the duties of charity, hospitality, and education, on which were grounded their claims to their broad lands and rich revenues. While, therefore, the

¹ Lutheri Opp. (Jenæ, 1564) T. I. fol. 496-500.

² Supplement Epistt. M. Lutheri No. 212 (Halæ, 1703).

temporal princes might be delighted with the opportunity of secularising and seizing the Church possessions, the people might reasonably hope that the increase of their rulers' wealth would alleviate their own burdens, as well as release them from the direct oppression which many of them suffered from the religious establishments. Even more potential was the disgust everywhere felt for the flagrant immorality of the priesthood. The dread experienced by every husband and father lest wife and daughter might at any moment fall victims to the lust of those who had every opportunity for the gratification of unholy passions led them to welcome the change, in the hope that it would result in restoring decency and virtue to a class which had long seemed to regard its sacred character as the shield and instrument of crime.

The moral character of the clergy, indeed, had not improved during the busy and eventful years which marked the first quarter of the sixteenth century. There is a curious little tract, printed in Cologne in 1505, with the approbation of the faculty, which is directed against concubinage in general, but particularly against that of the priests. Its laborious accumulation of authorities to prove that licentiousness is a sin is abundant evidence of the existing demoralisation, while the practices which it combats, of guilty ecclesiastics granting absolution to each other and mutually dispensing themselves from confession, show how easily the safeguards with which the Church had sought to surround her ministers were eluded.¹ The degradation of the priesthood, indeed, can readily be measured when, in the little town of Hof, in the Vogtland, three priests could be found defiling the sacredness of Ash Wednesday by fiercely fighting over a courtesan in a house

¹ *Avisamentum de Concubinariis non absolvendis*, 4to, 1505.—The author devotes a long argument to prove that incontinence in a priest is worse than homicide. His conclusion is "Omnis sacerdos fornicando est sacrilegus et perjurus; et gravius totiens quotiens peccat quam si hominem occidat."

of ill-fame ;¹ or when Leo X., in a feeble effort at reform, was obliged to argue that systematic licentiousness was not rendered excusable because its prevalence amounted to a custom, or because it was openly tolerated by those whose duty was to repress it.² In fact, a clause in the Concordat with Francis I. in 1516, renewing and enhancing the former punishments for public concubinage, would almost justify the presumption that the principal result of the rule of celibacy was to afford to the officials a regular revenue derived from the sale of licences to sin³—the old abuse, which rises before us in every age from the time of Damiani and Hildebrand, and which, since John XXII. had framed the tariff of absolutions for crime known as the “Taxes of the Penitentiary,” had the authority of the papacy itself to justify it. In the oldest form in which this has reached us, issued by Benedict XII. in 1338, absolution and dispensation for a concubinary priest is rated at only four *gros tournois*, or less than half a florin, and the same price is named for the absolution of one who has been suspended for adultery. In a somewhat later tax-list, dispensation for the son of a priest to be admitted to orders and preferment is rated at twelve *gros*, but if he desired a bishopric, it cost thirty.⁴ It is no wonder that

¹ Wideman. Chron. Curie ann. 1505.

² Neque superiorum tolerantia, seu prava consuetudo, quæ potius corruptela dicenda est, a multitudine peccantium, aliave qualibet excusatio eis aliquo modo suffragetur.—Concil. Lateran. V. ann. 1514 Sess. ix.

³ Quia vero in quibusdam regionibus nonnulli jurisdictionem ecclesiasticam habentes, pecuniarios quæstos a concubinariis percipere non erubescunt, patientes eos in tali fœditate sordescere.—Concil. Lateran. V. ann. 1516 Sess. xi.—*Cf.* Cornel. Agripp. De Vanitate Scient. c. lxiv.—Agrippa even states that it was a common thing for bishops to sell to women whose husbands were absent the right to commit adultery without sin.

⁴ P. Denifle, Die älteste Taxrolle der apost. Pönitentiarie (Archiv für Literatur- und Kirchengeschichte, Bd. v. pp. 227, 230).—Tangl. Das Taxwesen der päpstlichen Kanzlei, Mittheilungen des Instituts für Oesterreichische Geschichtsforschung, Bd. XIII., pp. 96, 97.

These prices were simply for the letters ; there were other fees which increased the cost considerably, and when sin had been committed there were pecuniary penances at the discretion of the papal penitentiaries.

reforming bishops and councils found their efforts baffled when the only result was to increase the revenues of the papal chancery by stimulating the demand for its interference.

That no concealment was thought necessary, and that sensual indulgence was not deemed derogatory in any way to the character of a Christian prelate, may be reasonably deduced from the panegyric of Gerard of Nimeguen on Philip of Burgundy, grand-uncle of Charles V., a learned and accomplished man, who filled the important see of Utrecht from 1517 to 1524. Gerard alludes to the amorous propensities and promiscuous intrigues of his patron without reserve, and as his book was dedicated to the Archduchess Margaret, sister of Charles V., it is evident that he did not feel his remarks to be defamatory. The good prelate, too, no doubt represented the convictions of a large portion of his class, when he was wont to smile at those who urged the propriety of celibacy, and to declare his belief in the impossibility of chastity among men who, like the clergy, were pampered with high living and tempted by indolence. Those who professed to keep their vows inviolate he denounced as hypocrites of the worst description, and he deemed them far worse than their brethren who sought to avoid unnecessary scandal by decently keeping their concubines at home.¹

Even this reticence, however, was considered unnecessary by a large portion of the clergy. In 1512, the Bishop of Ratisbon issued a series of canons in which, after quoting the Basilian regulations, he adds that many of his ecclesiastics maintain their concubines so openly that it would appear as though they saw neither sin nor scandal in such conduct, and that their evil example was the efficient cause of corrupting the faithful.² In Switzerland the same abuses

¹ Gerardi Noviomagi Philippus Burgundus (*Mathæi Analect.* I. 230).

² Statut. Synod. Joan. Episc. Ratispon. ann. 1512 (*Hartzheim* VI. 86).

were quite as prevalent, if we may believe a memorial presented, in 1533, by the citizens of Lausanne, complaining of the conduct of their clergy. They rebuked the incontinence of the priests, whose numerous children were accustomed to earn a living by beggary in the streets, but the canons were the subjects of their especial objurgation. The dean of the chapter had defied an excommunication launched at him for buying a house near the church in which to keep his mistress; others of the canons had taken to themselves the wives of citizens and refused to give them up; but the quaintest grievance of which they had been guilty was the injury which their competition inflicted on the public brothel of the town.¹ What was the condition of clerical morality in Italy may be gathered from the stories of Bishop Bandello, who, as a Dominican and a prelate, may fairly be deemed to represent the tone of the thinking and educated classes of society. The cynical levity with which he narrates scandalous tales about monks and priests shows that in the public mind sacerdotal immorality was regarded almost as a matter of course.²

The powerful influence of all this on the progress of the Reformation was freely admitted by the authorities of the Church. When the legate Campeggio was sent to Germany to check the spread of heresy, in his reformatory edict issued at Ratisbon in 1524 he declared that the efforts of the Lutherans had no little justification in the detestable morals and lives of the clergy, and this is confirmed by his unsparing denunciation of their licentiousness, drunkenness, quarrels, and tavern-haunting; their traffic in absolution

¹ Art. 18e "*Item. Mais, Nous nous plaignions d'aucuns chanoines qui nous gâtent nôtre bordeau de la ville, car il y en a qui le tiennent en leurs maisons, privément, pour tous venans.*"—Quoted from a contemporary MS. by Abraham Ruchat in his "*Histoire de la Reformation de la Suisse,*" T. I. p. xxxiii.—v. (Genève, 1727.) According to Cornelius Agrippa, the Roman prelates derived a regular revenue from this source, the right to keep definite numbers of strumpets in the public brothels being partitioned out between them.—*De Vanitate Scient.* c. lxiv.

² See, for instance, *Novelle*, P. III. Nov. lvi.

for enormous offences ; their unclerical habits and hideous blasphemy ; their indulgence in incantations and dabbling in witchcraft.¹ Very significant is his declaration that the canonical punishments shall be inflicted on concubinary priests, in spite of all custom to the contrary or all connivance on the part of the prelates.²

How little, indeed, licentious ecclesiastics might reasonably dread the canonical punishments is illustrated in the report, by the celebrated juriconsult Grillandus, of a case which came before him while he was auditor of the

¹ Reformat. Cleri German (Hartzheim VI. 198).—“ Hanc perditissimam hæresin . . . non parvam habuisse occasionem, partim a perditis moribus et vita clericorum” etc.

There was no scruple in confessing this fact by those who spoke authoritatively for the Catholic Church, and it long continued to be alleged as the cause of the stubbornness of the heretics. Thus the Bishop of Constance, in the canons of his Synod of 1567—“ Estote etiam memores, damnatam et detestandam cleri vitam huic malo in quo, proh dolor ! versamur, majori ex parte ansam præbuisse . . . Omnes sapientes peritque viri unanimi sententia hoc asserunt, hocque effligant penitus, ut prius clerus ecclesiarumque ministri ac doctores a vitæ sordibus repurgentur, quam ulla cum adversariis nostris de doctrina concordia expectari queat.” And then, after describing in the strongest terms the vices of the clergy and their unwillingness to reform, he adds, “ Quæ sane morum turpitude, vehementer et tantopere imperiti populi animos offendit ut subinde magis magisque a catholica nostra religione alienior efficiatur, atque sacerdotium una cum sacerdotibus doctrinam juxta atque doctores, execretur, dirisquæ devoteat : ita ut protinus ad quamvis sectam deficere potius paratus sit quam quod ad ecclesiam redire velit.”—Synod. Constant. ann. 1567 (Hartzheim VII. 455).

Pius V. himself did not hesitate to adopt the same view. In an epistle addressed to the abbots and priors of the diocese of Freysingen, in 1567, he says—“ Cum nobiscum ipsi cogitamus quæ res materiam præbuerit tot tantisque pestiferis hæresibus . . . tanti mali causam præcipue fuisse judicamus corruptos prælatorum mores, qui . . . eandemque vivendi licentiam iis, quibus præerat permittentes et exemplo eos suo corrumpentes, maximum apud laicos odium contempionem et invidiam non immerito contraxerunt” (Hartzheim VII. 586).

² Reformat. Cleri German. cap. xv.—So when, in 1521, Conrad, Bishop of Wurzburg, issued a mandate for the reformation of his clergy, he described them as for the most part abandoned to gluttony, drunkenness, gambling, quarrelling, and lust.—Mandat. pro Reformat. Cleri. (Gropp, Script. Rer. Wirceburg. I. 269).—In 1505 the Bishop of Bamberg, in complaining of his clergy, shows us how little respect was habitually paid to the incessant repetition of the canons.—“ Condolenter referimus vitam et honestatem clericalem adeo apud quamplures nostrarum civitatis et dioceseos clericos esse obumbratam ut vix inter clericos et laycos discrimen habeatur : et ipsa statuta nostra synodalia in ipsorum clericorum cordibus obliterata et a pluribus non visa aut perlecta vilipendantur : nullam propter nostram, quam hactenus pii pastoris more tolleravimus patientiam, capientes emendationem.”—(Hartzheim VI. 66.)

Papal Vicar in Rome. A Spanish priest and doctor of canon law, residing in the Christian capital, became enamoured of several young nuns at once, and endeavoured to seduce them by teaching them that, as they and he were alike spouses of Christ, carnal affection between them was their duty. Failing in this, he sought to compel the assistance of God in his designs, and, being a man of literary culture, he composed a number of prayers of singular obscenity, and bribed various ignorant priests to recite them amid the ineffable mysteries of the Mass, hoping thus to obtain the aid of Heaven in overcoming the chastity of his intended victims. At length he chanced to offer one of these prayers to a priest of somewhat better character, who was sufficiently shocked by it to communicate with the authorities. Brought before Grillandus, the guilty Spaniard sought to justify himself by alleging various Scriptural texts, but upon being warned that such a defence would subject him to a prosecution for heresy, he recanted and acknowledged his errors. For this complicated mingling of lust and sacrilege his only punishment was a short banishment from Rome.¹ When the papal court set such an example, what was to be expected of less enlightened regions?

How keenly these evils were felt by the people, and how instinctively they were referred to the rule of celibacy as to their proper origin, is shown by an incidental allusion in the formula of complaint laid before the Pope by the Imperial Diet held at Nürnberg early in 1522, before the heresy of priestly marriage had spread beyond the vicinity of Wittenberg. The diet, in recounting the evils arising from the ecclesiastical jurisdiction which allowed clerical offenders to enjoy virtual immunity, adduced, among other grievances, the licence afforded to those who, debarred by the canons from marriage, abandoned themselves night

¹ Grillandi Tract, de Sortilegiis Quæst. xvii. No. 1.

and day to attempts upon the virtue of the wives and daughters of the laity, sometimes gaining their ends by flattery and presents, and sometimes taking advantage of the opportunities offered by the confessional. It was not uncommon, indeed, for women to be openly carried off by their priests, while their husbands and fathers were threatened with vengeance if they should attempt to recover them. As regards the sale to ecclesiastics of licences to indulge in habitual lust, the diet declared it to be a regular and settled matter, reduced to the form of an annual tax, which in most dioceses was exacted of all the clergy without exception, so that when those who perchance lived chastely demurred at the payment, they were told that the bishop must have the money, and that after it was handed over they might take their choice whether to keep concubines or not.¹ In the face of this condition of ecclesiastical morality, it required some obtuseness for Adrian VI. to compare Luther to Mahomet, the one seeking to attract to his party the carnal-minded by permitting marriage, even as the other had established polygamy,² and, further, to abuse him for uniting the ministers of Christ with the vilest harlots.³

Among the diverse opinions of existing evils and their remedy, it is interesting to see what was the view of the subject taken by those ecclesiastics whose purity of life removed them from all temptation to indulgence, and who

¹ Gravamin. Ordin. Imperii cap. xxi., lvii., lxx. (Goldast. I. 464.)

When such complaints were made by the highest authority in the empire, it is not difficult to understand the reasons which led the senate of Nürnberg—which city had not yet embraced the Reformation—to deprive, in 1524, the Dominicans and Franciscans of the superintendence and visitation of the nuns of St. Catharine and St. Clare; nor do we need Spalatin's malicious suggestion—"cura et visitatione, pene dixeram corruptione."—Spalatin. *Annal.* ann. 1524.

² Adriani PP. VI. *Instructio data Fr. Cheregato*, Nov. 25, 1522 (Le Plat, *Monument. Concil. Trident.* II. 146).

³ Adriani PP. VI. *Breve ad Frid. Saxon.* (Lutheri *Opp.* T. II. fol. 542b.—Le Plat, II. 134.)

yet were not personally interested in upholding the gigantic but decaying structure of sacerdotalism. Of these men Erasmus may be taken as the representative. His opinion on all the questions of the day was too eagerly desired for him to escape the necessity of pronouncing his verdict on the innovation portended by the one or two marriages which took place near Wittenberg in 1521, and accordingly, in 1522, from his retreat in Basle he issued a short dissertation on the subject, which, although addressed merely to Bishop Christopher of that city, was evidently intended for a European audience. In this essay, after sketching the rise of celibacy and attributing it to the purity and fervour of the early Christians, he proceeds to depict the altered condition of the Church. Among the innumerable multitude of priests who crowd the monasteries, the chapters, and the parishes, he declares that there are few indeed whose lives are pure, even as respects open and avowed concubinage, without penetrating into the mysteries of secret intrigue. As, therefore, there is no Scriptural injunction of celibacy, he concludes that, however desirable it might be to have ministers free from the cares of marriage and devoting themselves solely to the service of God, yet, since it seems impossible to conquer the rebellious flesh, it would be better to allow those who cannot control themselves to have wives with whom they could live in virtuous peace, bringing up their children in the fear of God, and earning the respect of their flocks. No more startling evidence, indeed, of the demoralisation of the period could be given than the cautious fear which Erasmus expresses lest such a change should be opposed by the episcopal officials, who would object to the diminution of their unhallowed gains levied on the concubines of the clergy.¹

¹ *Erasmi Lib. xxxi. Epist. 43.*

Notwithstanding the sarcasm, popularly attributed to Erasmus, on the occasion of Luther's union with Catharine von Bora—that the Reformation had turned out to

When such was the condition of ecclesiastical morality, and such were the opinions of all except those directly interested in upholding the old order of things, it is no wonder if the people were disposed to look with favour on the marriage of their pastors, and if the rejection of celibacy gave a fresh impetus to the cause of Lutheranism. In the early days of all sects, it is only those of ardent faith and pure zeal who are likely to embrace a new belief, with all the attendant risks of persecution and contumely. The laxity of life allowed to the Catholic clergy would attract to its ranks and retain those whose aim was sensual indulgence. Thus necessarily the reformers who married would present for contrast regular and chaste lives and well-ordered households, purified by the dread of the ever-impending troubles to which the accident of a day might at any time expose them. The comparison thus was in every way favourable to the new ideas, and they flourished accordingly.

Nor, perhaps, were the worldly inducements to which I have before alluded less powerful in their own way in advancing the cause. Shortly before Luther's marriage, whatever influence was derivable from an aristocratic example was obtained when the Baron of Heydeck, a knight of the Teutonic Order, renounced his vows and publicly espoused a nun of Ligny.¹ This may possibly

be a comedy, seeing that it resulted in a marriage—he continued to raise his voice in favour of abolishing the rule of celibacy. Thus he writes, in October 1525, “Vehementer laudo cœlibatum, sed ut nunc habet sacerdotum ac monachorum vita, præsertim apud Germanos, præteret indulgeri remedium matrimonii” (Lib. XVIII. Epist. 9). And again, in 1526, “Ego nec sacerdotibus permitto conjugium, nec monachis relaxo vota, ne id fiat ex auctoritate Pontificum, ad ædificationem ecclesiæ non ad destructionem. . . . In primis optandum esset sacerdotes et monachos castitatem ac cœlestem vitam amplecti. Nunc rebus adeo contaminatis, fortasse levius malum erat eligendum” (Lib. XVIII. Epist. 4).

Yet, in his “Liber de Amabili Ecclesiæ Concordia,” written in 1533 in the hope of reuniting the severed Church, while awaiting the promised general council which was to reconcile all things, Erasmus did not hesitate to give utterance to the opinion that those who fell away in heresy or even schism were worse than those who lived impurely in the true faith.

¹ Spalatin. *Annal. ann. 1525.*

have encouraged his superior, Albert of Brandenburg, Grand Master of the Order, to execute his remarkably successful coup d'état, in changing his religion and seizing the estates of the order, thus practically founding the state which chance and talent have exalted until it has been able to realise the dream of a united Germany. The liberty of marriage which he thus assumed was soon turned to account in his advantageous alliance with Frederic, King of Denmark, whose daughter Dorothea he espoused, the Bishop of Szamland officiating as his proxy, and the actual marriage being celebrated 14 June, 1526.¹

Luther may reasonably be held excusable for counselling and aiding a transaction which lent such incalculable strength to the struggling cause of the Reformation, and it is not to be wondered at if he endeavoured to follow it up with another of a similar character. The nephew of the Duke of Prussia, also named Albert of Brandenburg, occupied the highest place in the Teutonic hierarchy, as Archbishop both of Mainz and Magdeburg, in the latter of which powerful sees the Lutheran heresies had taken deep root. Luther sought to induce the archbishop to follow his uncle's example; to take possession in his own right of the Magdeburg territories, and to transmit them to the posterity with which Heaven could not fail to bless his prospective marriage—a scheme which met the warm approbation of the leading nobles of the diocese. Albert thought seriously of the project, especially as the Peasants' War then raging was directed particularly against the lands of the Church, but he finally abandoned it, and his flock had to work out their reformation without his assistance.²

Perhaps some plans of territorial aggrandisement may

¹ Spalatin. *Annal.* ann. 1526.

² Henke *Append. ad Calixt.* p. 595.—Serrarii *Rerum Mogunt. Lib. v.* (*Script. Rer. Mogunt. I.* 831, 839). As Albert, though Primate of Germany, was only thirty-five or six years of age, the proposition was not an unreasonable one.

have stimulated the zeal of the Count of Embden, who boasted that he had assisted and encouraged the marriage of no fewer than five hundred monks and nuns;¹ yet the process of secularising the monastic foundations was in many places by no means sudden or violent. Thus, when the Abbot of Ilgental in Saxony died in 1526, the Elector John simply forbade the election of a successor, and placed the abbey in charge of a prefect, while the remaining monks were liberally supplied until they one after another died out;² and in 1529, when Philip, Count of Waldeck, took possession of the ancient monastery of Hainscheidt, he caused all the monks to be supported during life.³

Through all this period the hope had never been abandoned of such an arrangement as would prevent an irrevocable separation in the Church. Moderate and temperate men on both sides were ready to make such concessions of form as would enable Christendom to remain united, as the great vital truths on which all were agreed so far outweighed the points of divergence. Whether these hopes were well or ill founded was to be determined at the Diet of Augsburg, to which, in June 1530, both parties were summoned for the purpose of submitting their differences to the Emperor. Charles came to Germany in the full flush of his recent extraordinary triumphs, the most powerful prince since the days of Charlemagne. Europe was at length at peace, even the Turk only looming in the East as a probable, not as an existing, enemy. But Charles, newly crowned at Bologna, came ostensibly as the steadfast ally of the Pope, and Clement VII. had not the slightest intention of renouncing the traditional and imprescriptible rights of the Holy See. The Catholic princes of Germany, too, had their grounds

¹ Spalatin. *Annal.* ann. 1526.

² Thammii *Chron.* Coldicens.

³ *Chron.* Waldeccense (Hahnii *Collect. Monument.* I. 851).

of private quarrel with their Protestant peers, and, holding an unquestioned majority, were not disposed to abandon their position. The Protestant princes, on the other hand, were firm in their new-found faith, and, however disposed to avert the threatened storm by the sacrifice of non-essentials, their convictions were too strong for them to retrace the steps which they had taken during so many long and weary years. It is evident that, with such materials on either side, no reunion was probable; and, even had an accommodation on points of doctrine been possible, there was one subject which scarcely seemed to admit of satisfactory compromise. In the states of the reform the downfall of monachism had placed in the hands of the temporal powers large bodies of sequestrated abbey lands. To the Catholic it was sacrilege to leave these in the hands of the spoiler; the Protestant would not willingly give up the spoil.

The contest was opened by the Protestants submitting a statement of their belief, divided into two parts, the one devoted to points of faith, the other to matters of practice. Prepared principally by Melancthon, it presents their tenets in the mildest and least objectionable form, and becoming the recognised standard of their creed, it has attained a world-wide renown under the name of the Confession of Augsburg. The questions of celibacy and monastic vows were ably and temperately argued; their post-scriptural origin was shown, and the reasons which induced the reformers to reject them were placed in a light as little offensive as possible.¹ At first a counter-statement was anticipated from the Catholics, and negotiations were expected to be carried on by a comparison of the two, but they took higher ground, and contented themselves with

¹ Confess. Augustanæ P. II. Art. ii., vi.

In his Apology for the Augsburg Confession, however, even the coldness of Melancthon is warmed in describing the hideous licentiousness caused by the law of celibacy (Lutheri Opp. T. IV. p. 252-3).

drawing up a refutation of the Confession. The Emperor was firm. His aspirations for the universal monarchy, which ever eluded his grasp, did not comport with encouraging independence of thought and freedom of religious belief. In his theory, uniformity of religion was a necessary element of the political system which was to make him sovereign of Europe, and he would listen to no compromise. He was inclined to summary measures, but the Catholic princes were hardly prepared for the consequences of an immediate rupture, and, after a threatening interval, another effort was made to effect a reconciliation. Conferences between the leading theologians on both sides took place, and the Lutherans, warned of their danger, were more disposed than ever to make concessions and to accept such terms as the stronger party were willing to offer them. At length, on the 8th of September, the draft of a proposed plan of accord was laid before the Diet. In this the points in dispute were referred to that future Œcumenic council which had so long been demanded as the panacea for all ecclesiastical ills, and which, after more than thirty years of continued expectation, was destined to fail so miserably in reconciling difficulties. Such monasteries as had not been destroyed were to be maintained in the exercise of the customary rites and observances of religion. Abbots and communities who had been ejected were to be allowed to return; and all religious houses which had been emptied of their occupants were to be placed in the hands of officers appointed by the Emperor, who were to administer their possessions until the future council should decide upon all the points relating to monachism; the Protestants thus relieving themselves of the accusation that they were actuated by motives of worldly gain. Similar proposals were made with regard to communion in the two elements and clerical marriage. These were left as open questions for the council to settle, while a phrase

of doubtful import subjected them in the meantime to the governments of the several states.¹ The concessions in this project, however, though they might suit the views of the temperate doctors and princes in Germany, and though even the Roman Curia might be willing to grant them in order to save its threatened temporal power over the Teutonic states, did not suit the policy of Charles, who regarded the Church as simply one of the instruments with which he was to build up his universal empire.² It was not difficult for him, therefore, to bring to naught all such schemes of conciliation. The restoration of all abbots and monks was ordered; restitution of Church lands was commanded, or their delivery to the Emperor, to be held until the assembling of the future council; and when the Diet adjourned, Charles issued a decree enjoining on all married priests to abstain from their wives, to eject them, and to seek absolution from their ordinaries.³

The threatening aspect of affairs warned the Protestant princes that no time was to be lost in making provision for mutual defence, and ere the year was out the famous League of Schmalkalden enabled them to present a united front to the powers which they had virtually defied. Into the political history of that eventful time it is not my province to enter. Suffice it to say that they were able to maintain their position, and in their own states to oppose the reactionary movement which at times seemed to be on the point of destroying all that had been accomplished.

In this their task was complicated by the extravagances of those whose enthusiasm, unbalanced by reason, carried them beyond restraint. If Luther had found it no easy task to break the chains which for so many ages had kept

¹ *Deliberat. de Concordia etc.* c. iii., v. (Goldast I. 509).

² See Letter of Bergenroth to Romilly, from Simancas, June 14, 1863 (Cartwright's *Memoir of Bergenroth*, London, 1870, p. 124).

³ *Sentent. Caroli V.* § 5 (*Ibid.* I. 510).—*Rescript. Caroli V.* § 5 (*Ibid.* III. 512). Henke, *Append. ad Calixt.* pp. 595-6.

in check the spirit of free inquiry, he discovered that it was impossible to control that spirit once let loose; and the wild excesses of Anabaptism were at once the exaggeration and the opprobrium of Lutheranism. Originally earnest and self-denying, the primitive Anabaptists had captivated the fiery soul of Carlostadt, while Luther was in his Patmos of Wartburg. The ensuing development was in some sort a resuscitation of the Brethren of the Free Spirit, remnants of whom doubtless existed in many hidden quarters. The inner light was the guide which every man should follow, and this was to result in the Kingdom of God, wherein all should be equal and live in brotherly affection, without subjection to government of any kind. These alluring dreams spread through the populations with amazing rapidity, calling forth the severest repression by the authorities, who recognised in them the danger not only to religion, but to the whole social organisation. The sectaries manifested the sincerity of their convictions by the steadfast cheerfulness with which they endured imprisonment, torture, and the stake; but this ardent fanaticism also found expression in lawless licentiousness among those who mistook the impulses of the flesh for the dictates of the spirit. There is doubtless much exaggeration in the description of the *igneum baptisma* by which in Munster John Mathison encouraged promiscuous licence among the elect, but the history of mystic ardour furnishes too many examples of such aberrations for us to question the probability of their occurrence among such an assemblage of disordered and disorderly minds.¹

Luther, moreover, was quite as resolute in setting limits to his movement as Rome had been in forbidding all progress, and the Anabaptists were to him enemies as detestable as Catholics. The Protestant princes, more-

¹ Kerssenbroch Bell. Anabaptist. cap. 15, 31.—Janssen, Geschichte der Deutschen Volkes. III., 99 sqq. (Ed. 1887.)

over, had too much worldly wisdom to imperil their dangerous career by any alliance with fanatics whose extravagances provoked opposition so general. The cause of the Reformation, therefore, although it suffered no little from so portentous an illustration of the dangers resulting from the destruction of the ancient barriers, escaped all contamination in itself, and its leaders pursued their course undeviatingly.

Meanwhile the League of Schmalkalden accomplished its purpose. Henry VIII. and Francis I. were eager to seize the opportunity of encouraging dissension in the empire. The Turk became more menacing than ever. Charles, always ready to yield for a time when opposition was impolitic, gracefully abandoned the position assumed at Augsburg; and the negotiations of Schweinfurth and Nürnberg resulted in the decree of the Diet of Ratisbon in 1532, by which, until the assembling of the future council, all religious disturbances were prohibited, and the imperial chamber was commanded to undertake no prosecutions on account of heresy. Toleration was thus practically established for the moment, but the abbots and monks who had been ejected, and who had been anticipating their restoration, became naturally restive. Charles cunningly sent from Italy full powers to the chamber to decide as to what causes arose from religious disputes, and what were simply civil or criminal. Thus entrusted with the interpretation of the Ratisbon decree, the chamber assumed that claims on Church lands were not included in the forbidden class, while old edicts prohibiting the observances of Lutheranism brought all religious questions within the scope of criminal law. The promised toleration was thus practically denied, but, fortunately for the Protestants, Ferdinand was anxiously negotiating for their recognition of his dignity as King of the Romans, and by the Transaction of Cadam

in 1533 he purchased the coveted homage by accepting their construction of the edict of Ratisbon.

Still the Protestants complained of persecution and the Catholics of proselytism. The ensuing fifteen years were filled with a series of bootless negotiations, pretended settlements, quarrels, recriminations, and mutual encroachments, which year after year occupied the successive Diets, and kept Germany constantly trembling on the verge of a desolating civil war. It would be useless to disturb the dust that covers these forgotten transactions, which can teach us nothing save that the Protestants still refused to recognise that the schism was past human power to heal; that Rome, recovering from her temporary hesitation, would not abate one jot of her pretensions to save her supremacy over half of Christendom;¹ and that Charles, as a wily politician, was always ready in adversity to abandon with a good grace that which he had arrogantly seized in prosperity.² How eager, indeed, were the Protestants to effect some compromise which should relieve them from their exceptional position is strikingly manifest in the Articles which Melanchthon and his friends in 1535 submitted to Francis I., after the Sorbonne had refused to enter into a disputation or conference with them. In this document all non-essentials were abandoned; doctrinal dissidences were skilfully evaded, and stress only was laid upon such regulations as should remove the external corruption of the Church.

¹ How little the situation was comprehended is amusingly shown in a letter from an enlightened and liberal prelate, Johann Schmidt, Bishop of Vienna, to Ferdinand, in 1540, concerning some proposed negotiations then on foot for a reconciliation between the Churches. He lays down as a condition precedent to reunion that all the Church lands confiscated by the Protestants shall be restored, and the monastic orders re-established. The mesne profits, he admits, cannot be collected, but some composition for them should be made.—Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. II. 649.

² An elaborate series of documents relating to these transactions may be found in Goldast. Constit. Imp. I. 511, III. 172-235. Also in Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. Vol. II.

Melanchthon proposed that the monastic orders should be continued, but that the vows should not be perpetual, so that religion might not be disgraced by the excesses of those who had mistaken their vocation. So, as regards priestly celibacy, he proposed that, as human nature rendered it impossible to supply the multitude of parishes with men able to live in continence, those who could not preserve their purity should be allowed to marry; while, to prevent the dilapidation of Church property, the higher positions should be reserved to men of mature age who could lead a single life.¹ The Sorbonne, in reply, condescended to no argument, but contented itself with asserting that the Protestants desired the subversion of all religion, while, on the other hand, Melanchthon had the satisfaction of being proclaimed a traitor by the Germans.

In all this the only point which possesses special interest for us is another authoritative attempt at reconciling the irreconcilable which occurred in 1540 and 1541. It was suggested that all parties should unite on the basis of sacerdotal marriage, the use of the cup by the laity, and the rejection of the authority of the Holy See. Matters reached such a point that the legate Morone reported, in July 1540, that he was ready to run away in despair; the three great ecclesiastical electors and all the episcopate except the Bishop of Trent, and the princes except the Dukes of Bavaria and Brunswick, were in favour of it, while France would undoubtedly follow the example, while he distrusted the assurances of Charles and King Ferdinand that they would not abandon the papacy.² If Charles had only had Germany in view, he might well have been tempted to follow in the footsteps of Henry VIII., and found an independent Church under

¹ Artic. Melanch. ad Regem Franciæ, No. x., xi. (Le Plat, op. cit. II. 785-7.)

² Dittrich, Nunciaturberichte Giovanni Morones, pp. 73, 76-9.—Lämmer, Monumenta Vaticana, sæculi XVI. pp. 288-9.

his supremacy, but his interests in Spain and Italy bound him to the papacy, and he was sincere in his pledges to Morone. He was anxious, however, to put an end to the religious strife, and after a conference between Melancthon and Dr. Eck at Worms, Charles himself presented to the Diet of Ratisbon in 1541 a statement of the questions in dispute, with propositions for mutual concession and compromise. In the course of this he reviewed the practice of the Church in various ages with regard to sacerdotal celibacy, admitting that the enforcement of it was not in accordance with the ancient canons, and indicating a willingness to see it abrogated.¹ The Protestants, who were ready to make many sacrifices for peace, hailed this intimation with triumph, stoutly insisting on the repeal of the obnoxious rule, which they stigmatised as unjust and pernicious.² So nearly did the parties at length approach each other, that there appeared every reason to anticipate a successful result to the effort, when Paul III. interfered and pronounced all the proceedings null and void, as the Church alone had power to regulate its internal affairs. The expectations excited by these negotiations naturally stimulated the desire of the people for a change in the discipline of the Church, and the next year we find Paul III. obliged to exhort the Bishop of Merseberg, under threats of ejection, to resist the clamours of his subjects, who demanded the abrogation of priestly celibacy and the use of the cup for the laity. The Council of Trent, he said, had been called to consider these matters, and immediate change was especially inadmissible.³

¹ Lib. ad Rationem Concord. ineundam Art. xxii. § 13 (Goldast. II. 199).

² Respons. Protestant. Art. x. § 3 (Ibid. II. 206). This was still more strongly insisted on in a paper subsequently drawn up by Bucer and presented in the name of the Protestants.—Respons. Protestant. c. 11–14 (Ibid. p. 213).

³ Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. III. 152–3.

Pope Paul III. was created Cardinal by Pope Alexander VI. His name was Alexander Farnese, and, owing to his dissipated habits and to the fact that his pro-

Charles had long recognised that the perpetual menace of a powerful confederation such as the Schmalkaldic League, entertaining constant relations with the external enemies of the empire, was incompatible with the peace of Germany and with an imperial power such as he was resolved to wield. The time at last came for the development of his plans. The skill of Alva and the treachery of Maurice of Saxony were crowned with success. The battle of Muhlberg broke the power of the Protestants utterly, and laid them helpless at his feet. Yet the progress of the new ideas had already placed them beyond the control of even the triumphant Charles, though he had the Elector of Saxony and the Landgrave of Hesse in his dungeons. When, at the Diet of Augsburg in 1548, he proposed the curious arrangement known as the *Interim*, by which he hoped to keep matters quiet until the final verdict of that Œcumenic council which constantly vanished in the distance, he felt it necessary to permit all married priests to retain their wives until the question should be decided by the future council. A faint expression of a preference for celibacy, moreover, was significant both in what it said and what it left unsaid.¹

The *Interim*, of course, satisfied neither party. The

motion was obtained for him by his sister Giulia Orsini (*neé* Farnese), one of Pope Alexander's mistresses, he was known as "the Cardinal of the Petticoat"—*Cardinale della Gonella*. A son of Paul III., Pietro Ludovico Farnese, born 1490, became Duke of Parma. He was assassinated in 1547. One of his sons, born 1520, was named Alexander, and was created a Cardinal by his grandfather, Paul III.

¹ Et quanquam cum Apostolo sentiendum eum qui cœlebs est curare quæ sunt Domini, etc. (I. Cor. vii.) eoque magis optandum multos inveniri clericos qui cum cœlibes sint vere etiam contineant, tamen quum multi qui ministerii ecclesiastici functiones tenent, jam multis in locis duxerint uxores, quas a se dimittere nolint; super ea re generalis concilii sententia expectetur, cum alioqui mutatio in ea re, ut nunc sunt tempora, sine gravi rerum perturbatione nunc fieri non possit.—*Interim* cap. xxvi. § 17.

Charles must have entertained the expectation that a change would be authorised by the Council of Trent, or prudence would have dictated the policy of not leaving the matter open with the consciousness that the difficulty could only become daily greater by tolerance.

Catholics regarded it as an unauthorised reformation, the Protestants as disguised Popery. Charles, however, in the plenitude of his power, obliged many of the Lutheran states to accept it; while, as regards the Catholics, he was perhaps not sorry to show the Pope that he too, like Henry VIII., could regulate the consciences of his subjects and prescribe their religious faith. He had broken with Paul III.; the Council of Trent, against his wishes, had been removed to Bologna on a frivolous pretext; and a schism like that of England was apparently again impending. At the least, Charles might not unreasonably desire to manifest that at last he was independent of that papal power with which mutual necessities had so long enforced the closest relations, and to prove that deference to his wishes was henceforth to be the price of his all-important support. He demanded that legates should be sent to Germany armed with extraordinary powers, among which was included authority to grant dispensations to married priests. Paul III. referred the request to the Sacred College, and to the council then sitting at Bologna, and it was unanimously replied that it should be granted, with the limitation that monks should not be included, and that priests thus permitted to retain their wives should not exercise their functions or enjoy the fruits of their benefices.¹ That Paul forthwith despatched three nuncios entrusted with authority to do this shows not only the disposition which then existed to relax the rigour of the canons respecting celibacy, but also the importance which the question had assumed in the religious disputes of the time,²

¹ Le Plat, *Monument. Concil. Trident. IV.* 19-25.

² Pallavicin, *Storia del Concilio di Trento*, Lib. XII. c. 8. Zaccaria (*Nuova Giustificaz.* pp. 145, 266), while admitting the fact, states that the original of this document has been sought for in vain, though it had long before been published by Dom Martene (*Ampliss. Collect. VIII.* 1203). In appointing, however, Jodocus, Bishop of Lubec, as a substitute to exercise their powers, the legates require that priests thus restored shall abandon their wives—a condition not expressed in the original bull (*Ibid.* p. 1211).

Both from this and from the language of the Interim it appears that even the

though an absolute refusal was soon afterwards returned to the request of a German prince (supposed to be the Duke of Bavaria) requesting for his subjects the use of the cup, priestly marriage, and the relaxation of the obligation of fasting.¹

Temporary expedients and compromises such as these are interesting merely as they mark the progress of opinion. Paltry makeshifts to elude the decision of that which had to be decided, they exercised little real influence on the history of the time. It is true that when Charles, in 1551, at the Diet of Augsburg, issued a call for the reassembling of the Council of Trent, he confirmed the Interim until that council should decide all unsettled questions,² yet this confirmation was destined to be effective for a period ludicrously brief. A fresh treason of Maurice of Saxony undid all that his former plotting had accomplished; and, while Henry II. was winning at the expense of the empire the delusive title of Conqueror, Charles found himself reduced to the hard necessity of restoring all that his crooked policy had for so many years been devoted to extorting. The Transaction of Passau, signed August 2, 1552, gave full liberty of conscience to the Lutheran states, until a national council or diet should devise means of restoring the unity of the Church; and in case such means could not be agreed upon, then the rights guaranteed by the Transaction were granted in perpetuity.³ If Charles was disposed to withdraw the concessions thus exacted of him, the miserable siege of Metz and the increasing desire for abdication prevented him from Catholic priesthood had begun to arrogate for themselves the right of marriage. That such was the case to a great extent will be seen hereafter.

It indicates the tendencies of the period that, in his instructions to his three nuncios, the Bishops of Fano, Verona, and Ferentino, Paul's chief solicitude was to warn them against allowing the dispensations to be sold, which would, he said create scandal.—Lämmer, *Monumenta Vaticana*, Sæculi XVI. p. 395.

¹ Le Plat, T. IV. p. 27.

² Recess. ann. 1551 c. 10 (Goldast. II. 341).

³ Transac. Pataviens. Artic. de Relig. (Ibid. I. 573.)

attempting it; and, at the Diet of Augsburg, in 1555, the states and cities of the Augsburg Confession were confirmed in their right to enjoy the practices of their religion in peace.¹

The long struggle thus was over. The public law of Germany at last recognised the legality of the transactions based upon the Reformation, and not the least in importance among those transactions were the marriages of the ministers of Christ.

¹ *Transac. Pataviens. Artic. de Relig.* (Goldast. I. 574.

CHAPTER XXVI

THE ENGLISH CHURCH

THE abrogation of celibacy in England was a process of far more perplexity and intricacy than in any other country which adopted the Reformation. Perhaps this may be partially explained by the temperament of the race, whose spirit of independence made them quick to feel and impatient to suffer the manifold evils of the sacerdotal system, while their reverential conservatism rendered them less disposed to adopt a radical cure than their Continental neighbours.

In no country of Europe had the pretensions of the papal power been more resolutely set aside. In no country had ecclesiastical abuses been more earnestly attacked or more persistently held up for popular odium, and the applause which greeted all who boldly denounced the shortcomings of priest and prelate shows how keenly the people felt the evils to which they were exposed. William Langland, the monk of Malvern, was no heretic, yet he was unsparing in his reprobation of the corruptions of the Church :

“ Right so out of holi chirche,
Alle yveles springeth,
There inparfit preesthode is,
Prechours and techeris

And prechours after silver,
Executours and sodenes,
Somonours and hir lemmannes ;
That that with gile was geten,
Ungraciousliche is despended ;
So harlotes and hores
Arn holpe with swiche goodes,

And Goddes folk, for defaute thereof,
For-faren and spillen." 1

And he boldly prophesied the violent downfall of the whole fabric :

" Right so, ye clerkes,
For youre coveitise, er longe,
Shal thei demen *dos ecclesie*,
And youre pride depose.
Deposit potentes de sede, etc.

Leveth it wel ye bisshopes
The lordshipe of your londes
For evere shul ye lese,
And lyven as *levitici*," etc. 2

But while the people greeted these assaults with the keenest pleasure, they were attached to the old observances, and were in no haste to see the predictions of the poet fulfilled. A little sharp persecution was sufficient to suppress all outward show of Lollardry, and there was no chance in England for the fierce revolutionary enthusiasm of the Taborites.

As the sixteenth century opened, John Colet did good work in disturbing the stagnation of the schools by his contempt for the petrified theological science of the schoolmen. His endeavour to revert to the Scriptures as the sole source of religious belief was a step in advance, while he was unsparing in his denunciations of the corruptions which were as rife in the English Church as we have seen them elsewhere. Yet Colet, though at one time taxed with heretical leanings, kept carefully within the pale of orthodoxy, and seems never to have entertained the idea that the evils which he deplored were to be attacked save by a renewal of the fruitless iteration of obsolete canons.³ Perhaps, however, his friend and

1 Vision of Piers Ploughman, Wright's ed., pp. 300, 303.

2 Ibid. p. 325.—According to David Buchanan, Langlande was also author of a tract, "Pro conjugio sacerdotum."—(Ibid. Introduction, p. x.)

3 In a sermon before the Convocation of 1512, Colet is very severe upon the vices of the Church—"We are troubled in these days by heretics—men mad with strange

disciple, Sir Thomas More, is the best example of this frame of mind in England's worthiest men, the besetting weakness of which made the English Reformation a struggle whose vicissitudes can scarce be said to have even yet reached their final development.

Before Luther had raised the standard of revolt, More keenly appreciated the derelictions of the Church, and allowed his wit to satirise its vices with a freedom which showed the scantiest respect for the sanctity claimed by its hierarchy.¹ Yet when Luther came with his heresies to sweep away all abuses, More's gentle and tender spirit was roused to a vulgarity of vituperation which earned for him a distinguished place among the foul-mouthed polemics of the time, and which is absolutely unfit for translation.² As regards ascetic observances, before the

folly—but this heresy of theirs is not so pestilential and pernicious to us and the people as the vicious and depraved lives of the clergy"—and he urges the prelates to revive the ancient canons, the enforcement of which would purify the Church. (Seebohm's *Oxford Reformers of 1498*, p. 170. London, 1867.)

The title of this work seems to me a misnomer. Neither Colet nor Erasmus had the aggressive spirit of martyrdom which was essential to the character of a reformer in those fierce times. They could deplore existing evils, but lacked all practical boldness in applying remedies, and their influence is only to be traced in the minds which they unwittingly trained to do work from which they themselves shrank.

¹ Thus in his *Epigrams* he ridicules the bishops as a class :

"Tam male cantasti possis ut episcopus esse,
Tam bene legisti, ut non tamen esse queas.
Non satis esse putet, si quis vitabit utrumvis,
Sed fieri si vis præsul, utrumque cave."

T. Mori Opp. p. 249. Francofurti, 1689.

And he addresses a parish priest :

"Quid faciant fugiantve tui, quo cernere possint,
Vita potest claro pro speculo esse tua.
Tantum opus admonitu est, ut te intueantur, et ut tu
Quæ facis, hæc fugiant : quæ fugis, hæc faciant."

Ibid. p. 247.

See also his epigrams, "In Posthumum Episcopum," "In Episcopum illiteratum," "De Nautis ejicientibus Monachum," etc.

² *Responsio ad Lutherum, passim* : "Pater frater, potator Lutherus," seems to be a favourite expression, but is mild in comparison with others—"novum inferorum Deum," "Satanista Lutherus," "pediculoso fraterculo." Luther's friends are "nebulonum, potatorum, scortatorum, sicariorum, senatum," and More winds up his theological argument with—"furiolum fraterculum et latrinarium nebulonem

Lutheran movement More seems to have inclined towards condemning all practices that were not in accordance with human nature, though he appears willing to admit that there may be some special sanctity, though not wisdom, in conquering nature.¹ After the commencement of the Reformation, however, his views underwent a reaction, and he not only defended monastic vows, but he even went so far as to argue that by the recent marriages of the Saxon reformers God had manifested his signal displeasure, for in the old law true priests could be joined only to the chastest virgins, while God permitted these false pastors to take to wife none but public strumpets.² If he accused Luther of sweeping away the venerable traditions of man and of God,³ he showed how conscientious was this rigid conservatism when he laid his head upon the block in testimony for the principal creation and bulwark of tradition—the papal supremacy.

A community thus halting between an acute perception of existing evils and a resolute determination not to

cum suis furiis et furoribus, cum suis merdis et stercoribus cacantem cacatumque relinquere."

Luther was himself a master in theological abuse, but More's admiring biographer, Stapleton, boasts that the German was appalled at the superior vigour of the Englishman, and for the first time in his life he declined further controversy—"magis mutus factus est quam piscis." (Stapletoni Vit. T. Mori, cap. iv.) As More, however, published the tract under the name of William Rosse, an Englishman who had recently died in Rome, Luther's reticence is more easily to be accounted for.

¹ In one passage More describes his Utopians as considering virtue to consist in living according to nature. "Nempe virtutem definiunt, secundum naturam vivere: ad id siquidem a Deo institutos esse nos. . . . Vitam ergo jucundam, inquit, id est voluptatem, tanquam operationum omnium finem, ipsa nobis natura præscribit: ex cujus præscripto vivere, virtutem definiunt" (Utopiæ Lib. II. Tit. de Peregrinatione). In another passage, however, he describes two sects or heresies, the one consisting of men who abstained from marriage and the use of flesh, the other of those who devoted themselves to labour, marrying as a duty and indulging in food to increase their strength, and says of them, "Hos Utopiani prudentiores, at illos sanctiores reputant" (Ibid. Tit. de Religionibus).

² Respons. ad Lutherum Perorat.

It should be borne in mind that this was written after his friend Erasmus had publicly given in his adhesion to marriage as the only remedy for sacerdotal corruption.

³ Ibid. Lib. I. cap. iv.

remove them was exactly in the temper to render the great movement of the sixteenth century as disastrous to themselves as possible. How to meet the inevitable under such conditions was a problem which might well tax the acutest intellect, and Wolsey, whose fate it was to undertake the task, seems to have been inspired with more than his customary audacious ingenuity in seeking the solution.

Wolsey himself was no ascetic, as the popular inscription over the door of his palace—"Domus meretricium Domini Cardinalis"—sufficiently attests. A visitation of the religious houses undertaken in 1511 by Archbishop Warham had revealed all the old iniquities, without calling forth any remedy beyond an admonition.¹ In 1518, Wolsey himself had attempted a systematic reformation in his diocese of York, and had revived the ancient canons punishing concubinage among his priesthood;² and in 1519 we find him applying to Leo X. for a bull conferring special power to correct the enormities of the clergy.³ When, in 1523, he proposed a general visitation for the reformation of the ecclesiastical body, Fox, Bishop of Winchester, urged it as in the highest degree necessary, stating that he himself had for three years been devoting all his energies to restore discipline in his diocese, and that his efforts had been so utterly fruitless that he had abandoned all hope of any change for the better.⁴ Cranmer, indeed, in his "Confutation of Unwritten Verities," did not hesitate to say that "within my memory, which is above thirty years, and also by the information of others that be twenty years elder than I, I could never perceive or learn that any one priest, under the Pope's kingdom,

¹ Froude's England, ch. x.

² Wilkins III. 669, 678.

³ Card. Eboracens. Epist. v. (Martene Ampliss. Collect. III. 1289).

⁴ Strype's Eccles. Memorials, T. I. App. p. 19.

was ever punished for advoutry by his ordinary."¹ It may readily be believed, therefore, that Wolsey fully recognised the utter inefficiency of the worn-out weapons of discipline. Yet he was too shrewd a statesman not to foresee that reformation from within or from without must come, and, in taking the initiative, he commenced by quietly and indirectly attacking the monastic orders. As a munificent patron of letters, it was natural that he should emulate Merton and Wykeham in founding a college at Oxford; and "Cardinal's College," now Christ Church, became the lever with which to topple over the vast monastic system of England.

The development of the plan was characteristically insidious. By a bull of 3 April, 1524 (confirmed by Henry, May 10), Clement VII. authorised him to suppress the priory of St. Frediswood at Oxford, and to remove the monks, for the purpose of converting it into a "Collegium Clericorum Seculorum."² This was followed by a bull, dated August 21 of the same year, empowering him as legate to make inquisition and reformation in all religious houses throughout the kingdom, to incarcerate and punish the inmates, and to deprive them of their property and privileges, all grants or charters to the contrary notwithstanding.³ The real purport of this extraordinary commission is shown by the speedy issue of yet another bull, dated September 11, conceding to him the confiscation of monasteries to the amount of 3000 ducats annual rental, for the endowment of his college, and alleging as a reason for the measure that many establishments had not more than five or six inmates.⁴

¹ Strype's Memorials of Cranmer, Bk. II. ch. v.

² Rymer's *Fœdera*, XIV. 15.

³ Wilkins III. 704.—Bishop Burnet says that Wolsey's design in procuring this bull was to suppress all monasteries, but that he was persuaded to abandon his purpose on account of opposition and dread of scandals.—*Hist. Reform.* Vol. I. p. 20 Ed. 1679).

⁴ Rymer, XIV. 24.—Confirmed by the King, January 7, 1525 (*Ibid.* p. 32).

The affair was now fully in train, and proceeded with accelerating momentum. On 3 July, 1525, Henry confirmed the incorporation of the college; his letters-patent of 1 May, 1526, enumerate eighteen monasteries suppressed for its benefit, while other letters of May 10 grant seventy-one churches or rectories for its support, and yet other grants are alluded to as made in letters which have not been preserved.¹ In 1528 these were followed by various other donations of religious houses and manors, and during the same year Wolsey founded another Cardinal's College at Ipswich, which became a fresh source of absorption.²

Had Henry VIII. entertained any preconceived design of suppressing the religious houses, his impatient temper would scarcely have allowed him to remain so long a witness of this spoliation without taking his share and carrying the matter out with his accustomed boldness and disregard of consequences. At length, however, he claimed his portion, and procured from Clement a bull, dated 2 November, 1528, conceding to him, for the benefit of the old foundations of the King's Colleges at Cambridge and Windsor, the suppression of monasteries to the annual value of 8000 ducats.³ This was followed by another, a few days later, empowering Wolsey and Campeggio, co-legates in the affair of Queen Katharine's divorce, to unite to other monasteries all those containing less than twelve inmates—thus authorising the suppression of the latter, of which the number was very large.⁴ Another bull of the same date (November 12) attacked the larger abbeys, which had thus far escaped. It ordered

¹ Rymer XIV. pp. 156-6, 172-5.

² Ibid. pp. 240-44, 250-58. See a letter of the English Ambassadors at Rome to Wolsey, describing a conference on this subject with the Pope, wherein he freely acknowledged the propriety of destroying those houses which were nothing but a "scandalum religionis."—Strype, *Eccles. Memorials*, I. App. 58.

³ Rymer, XIV. pp. 270-1.

⁴ Ibid. 272-3.

the two cardinals, under request from the King, to inquire into the propriety of suppressing the rich monasteries enjoying over 10,000 ducats per annum, for the purpose of converting them into bishoprics, on the plea that the seventeen sees of the kingdom were insufficient for the spiritual wants of the people.¹ The report of the cardinals apparently seconded the views of Henry, for Clement granted to them, 29 May, 1529, the power of creating and arranging bishoprics at their discretion, and of sacrificing additional monasteries when necessary to provide adequate revenues.² It is probable that the monks who had been unceremoniously deprived of their possessions did not in all cases submit without resistance, for the bull of 12 November, 1528, respecting the smaller houses, was repeated 31 August, 1529, with the suggestive addition of authority to call in the assistance of the secular arm.³

Wolsey was now tottering to his fall. Process against him was commenced on 9 October, 1529, and on the 18th the Great Seal was delivered to More. His power, however, had lasted long enough to break down all the safeguards which had for so many centuries grown around the sacred precincts of ecclesiastical property; and the rich foundations which covered so large a portion of English territory lay defenceless before the cupidity of a despot who rarely allowed any consideration, human or divine, to interfere with his wishes, whose extravagance rendered him eager to find new sources of supply for an exhausted treasury, and whose temper had been aroused by the active support lent by the preaching friars to the party of Queen Katherine in the affair of the divorce. Yet it is creditable to Henry's self-command

¹ Rymer, XIV. pp. 273-5.

² *Ibid.* 291-3.

³ *Ibid.* 345-6. A document showing one phase of the struggle may be found in Strype's Memorials I. Append. p. 89. It is to the credit of Wolsey that he retained his interest in his colleges even after his fall. See his letter to Gardiner of 23 July, 1530 (*Ibid.* p. 92).

that the blow did not fall sooner, although it came at last.

It is not my province to enter into the details of Henry's miserable quarrel with Rome, which, except in its results, is from every point of view one of the most humiliating pages of English history. The year 1532 saw the proclamation of the King commanding the support of his subjects in the impending rupture, and the subscription of the clergy to a paper which, with unparalleled servility, placed the whole ecclesiastical constitution of the kingdom in his absolute power.¹ The following year his long-protracted divorce from Katherine of Aragon was consummated; the annates were withdrawn from the Pope, and Henry assumed the title of Supreme Head of the Church of England.² In 1535 an obedient Parliament confirmed the acts of the sovereign, and forbade the promulgation of any canons by synods or convocations without his approval. The power of the Pope was abolished by proclamation, and universities and prelates rivalled each other in obsequiously transferring to Henry the reverence due to Rome.³

The greater portion of the monasteries, which had already experienced a foretaste of the wrath to come, hastened to proclaim their adhesion to the new theological autocracy, and means not the most gentle were found to persuade the remainder. The Carthusians of the Charter House of London gave especial trouble, and the contest between them and the King affords a vivid picture of the times. There is something very affecting in the account given by Strype of the humble but resolute resignation

¹ Pecock's Records of the Reformation No. 276 (Vol. II. p. 259).

² Wilkins III. 755-62.

³ Ibid. 770-82, 789.—Parliamentary Hist. of England, I. 525. In 1532 Henry had complained to his Parliament that the clergy were but half subjects to him, in consequence of their oaths to the Pope, and he desired that some remedy should be found for this state of things (Ibid. p. 519).

with which the prior and his monks prepared themselves for martyrdom in vindication of the papal supremacy.¹ Their courage was soon put to the test. Between the 27th of April and the 4th of August, 1535, the prior and eleven of his monks were put to death with all the horrors of the punishment for high treason ;² but neither this nor the efforts of a new and more loyal prior were able to produce submission. In 1536, ten of the most unyielding were sent to other houses, where several of them were subsequently executed, and in 1537 ten more were thrown into Newgate, where nine of them died almost immediately—it is to be presumed from the rigour of their confinement and the foulness of the gaol. In 1539, the few that remained were expelled ; the house was seized and used as an arsenal, until it was given to Sir Edward North, who changed it into a residence, pulling down the cloisters and converting the church into his parlour.³ The Observantine Franciscans were equally resolute, and, moreover, persistently adhered to the cause of Katherine of Aragon. After unsuccessful attempts to win them over, some two hundred of them were sent to prison, where they mostly perished, and in 1537, eight of them who survived were allowed to leave England.⁴

The direct relations of the regular Orders with the papacy rendered it impossible to regard them otherwise than as a source of disaffection and danger in the new order of things. Their destruction thus seemed to be a political necessity, the desire for which was enhanced by the relief promised to Henry's exhausted treasury through the secularisation of their property. As a rule, their establishments were not unpopular, and, little as Henry recked of any opposition to his will, some excuse was

¹ Strype, *Eccles. Memor.* I. 195.

² *Suppression of Monasteries*, p. 40 (Camden Soc.).—Strype, *op. cit.* p. 197.

³ Strype, *op. cit.* pp. 277–8.

⁴ Gasquet, *Henry VIII. and the English Monasteries*, I. 156–201 (Ed. 1888).

necessary to win over public opinion to such harsh measures. The most effective means for this was a visitation which should expose the secret turpitude of monasticism, and accordingly, in 1535, commissions were issued to examine into the foundation, title, history, condition of discipline, and number and character of inmates of all religious orders.¹ Thomas Cromwell had no difficulty in finding visitors who should supply the material desired. In the summer and autumn of 1535, three commissioners—John Ap Rice and Doctors Legh and Layton—were busily engaged with the religious houses of the south of England. Of these, Ap Rice, to judge by his reports, was inclined to be fair-minded, while the others were unscrupulously eager to meet the wishes of their master, and their reports were filled with descriptions of foul disorders. They were consequently selected to continue the work in the north, which, under pressure of limited time, was so hurriedly performed that the investigation must have been merely nominal. Parliament was to meet on 4 February, 1536, and their work must be completed in time to lay before it. Commencing December 22, in about six weeks they reported on a hundred and fifty-five houses in the province of York and the dioceses of Coventry, Lichfield, and Norwich, including a few scattered ones elsewhere. Only about forty per cent. of the houses in these districts were visited, and of the hundred and fifty-five there were forty-three against which nothing more serious than superstition was alleged—probably on account of well-timed liberality exhibited to the visitors. The rest were described as more or less vicious.²

The result of this visitation, exaggerated by subsequent writers, has been to blacken unduly the memory of English

¹ Wilkins, III. 787.

² Calendar of State Papers of the Reign of Henry VIII. Vol. IX., Nos. 42, 49, 139, 160, 497, 622; Vol. X., No. 364; Gairdner's Preface, p. xlv.

monasticism. No one familiar with the mendacity of public papers of that age places confidence in their unsupported statements when there was an object to be gained, and nothing in the character of Henry's selected agents tends to prevent a wholesome attitude of doubt. Besides, in some cases there happens to be evidence contradicting the statements of the visitors. Thus, in October 1535, Layton reports to Cromwell: "The prior of Dover and his monks are as bad as others. Sodomy there is none, for they have no lack of women. The Abbot of Langdon is worse than all the rest, the drunkennest knave living. His canons are as bad as he, without a spark of virtue."¹ The result of this was the immediate surrender of the houses of Langdon, Dover, and Folkstone, but the commissioners who received the surrender wrote to Cromwell, November 16: "The house of Langdon is in decay, the abbot unthrifty, and his convent ignorant. Dover is well repaired, and the prior has reduced the debt from £180 to £100, of whose now case divers of the honest inhabitants of Dover show themselves very sorry. Folkestone is a little house, well repaired, and the prior a good husbandman beloved of his neighbours."² Still more compromising is the fact that, on 24 April, 1536, a commission was issued to some prominent men in each county to make a new survey of the monasteries. Reports of these commissioners, in June, for Leicestershire, Warwickshire, Rutland, and Hunts are extant, and they almost uniformly represent the inmates to be of good conversation; in fact, it is especially significant that in Leicestershire, two—Garendon and Gracedieu, which had been the subject of particular animadversion by Legh and Layton—were reported on favourably.

In this conflict of testimony we must therefore rely on antecedent and circumstantial evidence, and we may not

¹ Calendar, Vol. IX. Nos. 669, 829.

² Calendar, Vol. X. No. 1191; Gairdner's Preface, xlv.-vi.

accept as proven Father Gasquet's pious and laborious rehabilitation.¹ All contemporary authorities agree that the pre-Reformation Church was steeped in worldliness. The English monasteries were not likely to have improved since Archbishop Morton described their condition, half a century earlier, as similarly deplorable, or Wolsey at a later period; nor is there any ground for imagining them as better than their Continental brethren, whose lapses were the subject of bitter reprehension by censors of their own faith. The Franciscan, Dr. Thomas Murner, who was subsequently one of Luther's most vituperative opponents, in his *Narrenbeschwerung* assumes as a matter of course that all parish priests kept concubines, and all priests and monks meddle with men's wives, while in the nunneries she who has most children is reckoned the abbess.² A more sober witness is Abbot Trithemius, whose description of the houses of his own Benedictine Order we have seen above. Scarce anything, indeed, can be conceived worse than the condition of the German convents as detailed in a document drawn up by order of the Emperor Ferdinand in 1562, to stimulate the Council of Trent to action.³ In Italy there is ample evidence that the regular Orders were no better;⁴ and as for France, it is sufficient to refer to the description, by the Council of Paris in 1521, of the entire absence of discipline in capitular and conventual life.⁵ In fact, the whole conventual system was so corrupt that, as we shall see, the cardinals whom Paul III. in 1538 charged to draw up a plan of reform for the Church proposed to abolish all the conventual Orders, in order to relieve the people of their evil

¹ Gasquet's *Henry VIII. and the English Monasteries*, Chap. IX.

² Th. Murner's *Narrenbeschwerung*, Ed. Scheible, Stuttgart, 1846.

³ Le Plat, *Monumentt. Concil. Trident.* V. 244-5.

⁴ Pastor, *Geschichte den Pápste*, III. 126 (Ed. 1895).

⁵ Concil. Parisiens. ann. 1521, cap. 2, 3, 4 (Labbe et Coleti *Supplem.* V, 518-19).

example, and to place the nunneries under episcopal jurisdiction.¹ That public opinion in England took the same view of the monastic establishments would appear from the travels of Nicander Nucius, who visited England about 1545, and who, in relating the story of their suppression, gives as damaging an account of their morality as Bishop Burnet or any of those who have been classed as their special defamers.² The impartial student may therefore not unreasonably conclude that, in view of the state of monastic morals everywhere else in Christendom, the assertion that England was an exception requires stronger evidence than has been produced.

That a portion at least of the people were eager for the secularisation of the religious houses is apparent from the virulence of the assault upon them in the notorious document known as "The Beggars' Petition." It calculates that, besides the tithes, one-third of the kingdom was ecclesiastical property, and that these vast possessions were devoted to the support of a body of men who found their sole serious occupation in destroying the peace of families and corrupting the virtue of women. The economical injury to the Commonwealth, and the interference with the royal prerogative of the ecclesiastical system, were argued with much cogency, and the King was entreated to destroy it by the most summary methods. That any one should venture to publish so violent an attack upon the existing Church, at a time when punishment so prompt followed all indiscretions of this nature, renders this production peculiarly significant both as to

¹ *Alius abusus corrigendus est in ordinibus religiosorum quod adeo multi deformati sunt ut magno sint scandalo sæcularibus ex emplumque plurimum noceant. Conventuales ordines abolendos esse putamus omnes. . . . Abusus alius turbat Christianum populum in monialibus quæ sunt sub cura fratrum conventualium, ubi plerisque monasteriis fiunt publica sacrilegia, cum maximo omnium scandalo.*—Le Plat, *Monumentt. Concil. Trident. II.* 601–2 (Lovanii, 1782).

² *Travels of Nicander Nucius*, pp. 68–71 (Camden Soc.).

the temper of the educated portion of the people and the presumed intentions of the King.¹

Whether the reports of the visitors were true or false, they served the purpose of those who procured them. The Parliament which met 4 February, 1536, was composed almost exclusively of members selected by the court and presumably submissive to the royal will. Yet, when a bill was introduced suppressing all houses whose landed revenues did not exceed £200, it seems to have taken the House by surprise. There were hesitation and delay, and tradition relates that it required the personal urgency of the King, accompanied by threats and the reading of the reports of the visitors, to obtain its enactment.² To justify

¹ As published in the Harleian Miscellany, "The Beggars' Petition" bears the date of 1538, but internal evidence would assign it to a time anterior to the suppression of the monasteries, and Burnet attributes it to the period under consideration, saying that it was written by Simon Fish, of Gray's Inn, that it took mightily with the public, and that when it was handed to the King by Ann Boleyn, "he lik'd it well, and would not suffer anything to be done to the author" (Hist. Reform. I. 160). Froude, indeed, assigns it to the date of 1528, and states that Wolsey issued a proclamation against it, and further, that Simon Fish, the author, died in 1528 (Hist. Engl. Ch. VI.), while Strype (Eccles. Memorials I. 165) includes it in a list of books prohibited by Cuthbert, Bishop of London, in 1526. In the edition of 1546, the date of 1524 is attributed to it.

The tone of that which was thus equally agreeable to the court and to the city may be judged from the following extracts, which are by no means the plainest spoken that might be selected.

"§ 13. Yea, and what do they more? Truly, nothing but apply themselves by all the sleights they may to have to do with every man's wife, every man's daughter, and every man's maid; that cuckoldry should reign over all among your subjects; that no man should know his own child; that their bastards might inherit the possessions of every man, to put the right-begotten children clean beside their inheritance, in subversion of all estates and godly order.

"§ 16. Who is she that will set her hands to work to get three-pence a day and may have at least twenty-pence a day to sleep an hour with a friar, a monk, or a priest? Who is he that would labour for a groat a day, and may have at least twelve-pence a day to be a bawd to a priest, a monk, or a friar?

"§ 31. Wherefore, if your grace will set their sturdy loobies abroad in the world, to get them wives of their own, to get their living with their labour, in the sweat of their faces, according to the commandment of God, *Gen. iii.*, to give other idle people, by their example, occasion to go to labour; tye these holy, idle thieves to the carts to be whipped naked about every market-town, till they will fall to labour, that they may, by their importunate begging, not take away the alms that the good Christian people would give unto us sore, impotent, miserable people your bedemen."

² Gasquet, *op. cit.*, pp. 311-12. —Gairdner, *Calendar*, Vol. X. p. xlv.

it, the preamble recites that "manifest sin, vicious, carnal and abominable living is daily used and committed commonly in such little and small abbeys, priories and religious houses of monks, canons and nuns, where the congregation of such religious persons is under the number of twelve persons," and that this increases in spite of continual visitations during the past two hundred years, so that the only hope of amendment is to transfer their inmates to the "diverse and great solemn monasteries of this realm wherein (thanks be to God) religion is right well kept and observed."¹ The distinction between the "great solemn monasteries," which were praised, and the small ones, which were reviled, was a trifle illogical, but probably no one ventured to criticise the inconsistency, and the bill was passed.

Three hundred and seventy-six houses were swept away by this Act, and the "Court of Augmentations of the King's Revenue" was established to take charge of the lands and goods thus summarily escheated. The rents which thus fell to the King were valued at £32,000 a year, and the movable property at £100,000, while the commissioners were popularly supposed to have been "as careful to enrich themselves as to increase the King's revenue." Stokesley, Bishop of London, remarked, concerning the transaction, that "these lesser houses were as thorns soon plucked up, but the great abbeys were like petrified old oaks; yet they must needs follow, and so would others do in Christendom before many years were passed." But Stokesley, however true a prophet in the general scope of his observation, was mistaken as to the extreme facility of eradicating the humble thorns. The country was not so easily reconciled to the change as the versatile, more intelligent, and less reverent inhabitants of the cities. Henry, unluckily, not only had not abrogated

¹ 27 Henry VIII. cap. 28.

Purgatory by proclamation, but had specially recommended the continuance of prayers and masses for the dead,¹ and thousands were struck with dread as to the future prospects of themselves and their dearest kindred when there should be few to offer the sacrifice of the Mass for the benefit of departed souls, to say nothing of those which had been paid for and not yet celebrated. The traveller and the mendicant, too, missed the ever open door and the coarse but abundant fare which smoothed the path of the humble wayfarer. Discontent spread widely, and was soon manifested openly. To meet this, most of the lands were sold at a very moderate price to the neighbouring gentry, under condition of exercising free hospitality to supply the wants of those who had hitherto been dependent on conventual charity.²

The plan was only partially successful, and soon another element of trouble made itself apparent. Of the monks whose houses were suppressed, those who desired to continue a monastic life were transferred to the larger foundations, while the rest took "capacities,"³ under promise of a reasonable allowance for their journey home.

¹ Articles devised by the Kinges Highnes Majestie, ann. 1536 (Formularies of Faith, Oxford, 1856, p. xxxi.).

² Burnet, I. 193-4, 222-4;—Parl. Hist. I. 526-7. To our modern notions, there is something inexpressibly disgusting in the openness with 'which bribes were tendered to Cromwell by those who were eager to obtain grants of abbey lands (Suppression of Monasteries, *passim*). On the other hand, the abbots and abbesses who feared for their houses had as little scruple in offering him large sums for his protection. Thus the good Bishop Latimer renders himself the intermediary (16 Dec., 1536) of an offer from the Prior of Great Malvern of 500 marks to the King and 200 to Cromwell to preserve that foundation; while the Abbot of Peterboro' tendered the enormous sum of 2500 marks to the King and £300 to Cromwell (Ibid. 150, 179). The liberal disposition of the latter seems to have made an impression, for, though he could not save his abbey, he was appointed the first Bishop of Peterboro'—a see erected upon the ruins of the house.

³ "They be very pore, and can have lytyll serves withoutt ther capacytes. The bishoypys and currettes be very hard to them, withoutt they have ther capacytes."—The Bishop of Dover to Cromwell, 10 March, 1538 (Suppression of Monasteries, p. 193). These "capacities" empowered them to perform the functions of secular priests. The good bishop pleads that certain poor monks may obtain them without paying the usual fee.

They received only forty shillings and a gown, and with this slender provision it was estimated that about ten thousand were turned adrift upon the world, in which their previous life had incapacitated them from earning a support. The result is visible in the Act for the punishment of "sturdy vagabonds and beggars," passed by Parliament in this same year, inflicting a graduated scale of penalties, of which hanging was the one threatened for a third offence.¹

This was a dangerous addition to society when discontent was smouldering and ready to burst into flame. The result was soon apparent. After harvest-time great disturbances convulsed the kingdom. A rising, reported as consisting of twenty thousand men, in Lincolnshire, was put down by the Duke of Suffolk with a heavy force and free promises of pardon. In the North matters were even more serious. The clergy there were less tractable than their southern brethren, and some Injunctions savouring strongly of Protestantism aroused their susceptibilities afresh. Unwilling to submit without a struggle, they held a convocation, in which they denied the royal supremacy and proclaimed their obedience to the Pope. This was rank rebellion, especially as Paul III., on 30 August, 1535, had issued his bull of excommunication against Henry, and self-preservation therefore demanded the immediate suppression of the recalcitrants. They would hardly, indeed, have ventured on assuming a position of such dangerous opposition without the assurance of popular support, nor were their expectations or labours disappointed. The "Pilgrimage of Grace," according to report, soon numbered forty thousand men. Although Skipton and Scarboro' bravely resisted a desperate siege, the success of the insurgents at York, Hull, and Pomfret Castle was encouraging, and risings in Lancashire, Durham, and

¹ 27 Henry VIII. c. 25, renewed by 28 Hen. VIII. c. 6.—Parliament. Hist. I. 574.

Westmoreland gave to the insurrection an aspect of the most menacing character. Good fortune and skilful strategy, however, saved the Duke of Norfolk and his little army from defeat; the winter was rapidly approaching, and at length a proclamation of general amnesty, issued by the King on December 9, induced a dispersion of the rebels. The year 1537 saw another rising in the North, but this time it only numbered eight thousand men. Repulsed at Carlisle, and cut to pieces by Norfolk, the insurgents were quickly put down, and other disturbances of minor importance were even more readily suppressed.¹

Strengthened by these triumphs over the disaffected, Henry proceeded, in 1537, to make the acknowledgment of papal authority a crime liable to the penalties of *præmunire*;² and, as resistance was no longer to be dreaded, he commenced to take possession of some of the larger houses. These did not come within the scope of the Act of Parliament, and therefore were made the subject of special transactions. The abbots resigned, either from having been implicated in the late insurrections, or feeling that their evil lives would not bear investigation, or doubtless, in many cases, from a clear perception of the doom impending in the near future, which rendered it prudent to make the best terms possible while yet there was time. Thus in these cases the monks were generally pensioned with eight marks a year, while some of the abbots secured a revenue of 400 or 500 marks.³ In an agreement which has been preserved, the monks were to

¹ Burnet, I. 227-34; Collect. 160.—Wilkins III. 784, 792, 812.—Rymer, XIV. 549.

² 28 Henry VIII. c. 10.—Parl. Hist. I. 533.

Præmunire derives its name from the statutes 27 Edward III. cap. 1, and 16 Richard II. cap. 2, against carrying to Rome actions cognisable in the royal courts. It was virtually equivalent to outlawry.

³ Burnet, I. 235-7. These pensions were not in all cases secured without difficulty, even after promises had been made and agreements entered into (Suppression of Monasteries, p. 126).

receive pensions varying from 53*s.* 4*d.* to £4 a year, according to their age.¹ In some cases, indeed, according to Bishop Latimer, in a sermon preached before Edward VI., the royal exchequer was relieved by finding preferment for most unworthy objects: "However bad the reports of them were, some were made bishops and others put into good dignities in the Church, that so the King might save their pensions that otherwise were to be paid them."² An effectual means, moreover, of inducing voluntary surrenders was by stopping their source of support, and thus starving them out. Richard, Bishop of Dover, one of the commissioners in Wales, writes to Cromwell, 23 May, 1538: "I thinke before the yere be owt ther schall be very fewe howsis abill to lyve, but schall be glade to giffe up their howseis and provide for them selvys otherwise, for their thei schall have no living." In anticipation of the impending doom, many of the abbots and priors had sold everything that was saleable, from lands and leases down to spits and kitchen utensils, leaving their houses completely denuded. The letters of the commissioners are full of complaints respecting this sharp practice, and of their efforts to trace the property. Another mode of compelling surrenders was by threatening the strict enforcement of the rules of the Order. Thus, in the official report of the surrender of the Austin Friars of Gloucester, we find the alternative given them, when "the seyd freeres seyed . . . as the worlde ys nowe they war not abull to kepe them and leffe in ther howseys, wherfore voluntarily they gaffe ther howseys into the vesytores handes to the kynges use. The vesytor seyed to them, 'thynke nott, nor hereafter reportt nott, that ye be suppresseyd, for I have noo such auctoryte to suppressse yow, but only to reforme yow, wherfor yf ye will be reformeyd,

¹ Suppression of Monasteries, p. 170.—Strype's *Eccles. Memor.* I. 262.

² Strype, *Memorials of Cranmer*, Book I. Chap. ix.

accordeyng to good order, ye may contynew for all me.' They seyde they war nott abull to contynew," whereupon they were ejected.¹

In the year 1538 the work proceeded with increased rapidity, no less than 158 surrenders of the larger houses being enrolled. Many of the abbots were attainted of treason and executed, and the abbey lands forfeited. Means not of the nicest kind were taken to increase the disrepute of the monastic orders, and they retaliated in the same way. Thus, the Abbot of Crossed-Friars, in London, was surprised in the day time with a woman under the worst possible circumstances, giving rise to a lawsuit more curious than decent ;² while, on the other hand, the Abbess of Chepstow accused Dr. London, one of the visitors, of corrupting her nuns.³ Public opinion, however, did not move fast enough for the rapacity of those in power, and strenuous exertions were made to stimulate it. All the foul stories that could be found or invented respecting the abbeyes were raked together ; but these proving insufficient, the impostures concerning relics and images were investigated with great success, and many singular exposures

¹ Suppression of Monast. pp. 194, 203.

² A letter from John Bartelot to Cromwell shows that the abbot purchased secrecy by distributing thirty pounds to those who detected him, and promising them thirty more. This latter sum was subsequently reduced to six pounds, for which the holy man gave his note. This not being paid at maturity, he was sued, when he had the audacity to complain to Cromwell, and to threaten to prosecute the intruders for robbery and force them to return the money paid. Bartelot relates his share in the somewhat questionable transaction with great naïveté, and applies to Cromwell for protection.—Suppression of Monasteries, Letter xxv.

³ This may have been true, for Dr. London was one of the miserable tools who are the fitting representatives of the time. His desire to discover the irregularities of the monastic orders arose from no reverence for virtue, for he underwent public penance at Oxford for adultery with a mother and daughter (Strype, Eccles. Memor. I. 376), and his zeal in suppressing the monasteries was complemented with equal zeal in persecuting Protestants. In 1543 he made himself conspicuous, in conjunction with Gardiner, by having heretics burned under the provisions of the Six Articles. His eagerness in this good work led him to commit perjury, on conviction of which he was pilloried in Windsor, Reading, and Newbury, and thrust into the Fleet, where he died.—Strype, Memorials of Cranmer, Book I. chap. 26, 27.

In fact, Henry's capricious despotism rendered it almost impossible that he could be served by men of self-respect and honour.

were made which gave the King fresh warrant for his arbitrary measures, and placed the religious houses in a more defenceless position than ever.¹

Despite all this, in the session of 1539 all the twenty-eight parliamentary abbots had their writs, and no less than twenty sat in the House of Lords.² Yet the influence of the court and the progress of public opinion were shown in an Act which confirmed the suppressions of the larger houses not embraced in the former Act, as well as all that might thereafter be suppressed, forfeited, or resigned,³ and 9 May, 1540, by special enactment, the ancient Order of the Knights of St. John was broken up, pensions being granted to the grand prior and some of the principal dignitaries.⁴ These measures consummated the ruin of the monastic system in England. Henceforth it was altogether at the King's mercy, and his character was not one to temper power with moderation. In 1539 there are upon record fifty-seven surrenders of the great abbeys,⁵

¹ Burnet, I. 238-43.—See also Froude's *Hist. Engl.* III. 285 et seq. During his visitation (August 27, 1538) the Bishop of Dover writes to Cromwell, "I have Malrow's ere that Peter stroke of, as yt ys wrytyn, and a M. as trewe as that" (*Suppression of Monasteries*, p. 212). In a report of December 28, 1538, Dr. London observes, with dry humour, "I have dyvers other propre thinges, as two heddes of seynt Ursula, wich bycause ther ys no maner of sylver abowt them, I reserve tyll I have another hedd of herse, wich I schall fynd in my waye within theese xiiii. days, as I am creadably informyd" (*Ibid.* p. 284). Dr. Layton writes in the same spirit to Cromwell: "Yee shall also receive a Bag of Relicks wherein ye shall see Stranger Things as shall appear by the Scripture. As God's Coat, or Ladie's Smock; Part of God's Supper, In cœna Domini; Pars petrae super qua natus erat Jesus in Bethlehem. Besides there is in Bethlehem plenty of Stones and sometimes Quarries, and maketh their mangers of Stone. The scripture of every thing shall declare you all. And all these of Mayden Bradley. Where is a holy Father Prior; and hath but six Sons and one Daughter married yet of the goods of the Monastery. And he thanketh God, he never meddled with married women; but all with Maidens, the fairest could be gotten. And always married them right well. The Pope, considering his fragility, gave him licence to keep a w——: and hath good writing, sub Plumbo, to discharge his conscience" (*Strype, Eccles. Memor.* I. 253).—Nicander Nucius (*op. cit.* pp. 51-62) relates some of the stories current at the time of the miracles engineered by the monks to stave off their impending doom.

² *Parl. Hist.* I. 535.

³ 31 Henry VIII. c. 13 (*Parl. Hist.* I. 537).

⁴ 32 Henry VIII. c. 24 (*Ibid.* 543-44).

⁵ Burnet I. 262-3.

and a large number in 1540, the good house of Godstow being the last of the great monasteries to fall. Of the old monastic system this left only the chantries, free chapels, collegiate churches, hospitals, &c., which were gradually absorbed during the succeeding years,¹ until the necessities of the King prompted a sweeping measure for their destruction. Accordingly in 1545 a bill was brought in placing them all at his disposition, together with the property of all guilds and fraternities. There were some indications of opposition, but the King pleaded the expenditures of the French and Scottish wars, and solemnly promised his Parliament "that all should be done for the glory of God and common profit of the realm," whereupon it was passed.² It is computed that the number of monasteries suppressed by these various measures was 645; of colleges, 90; of chantries and free chapels, 2374; and of hospitals, 110.³

A vast amount of property thus passed into the hands of the court. The clear yearly rental of the suppressed houses alone was rated at £131,607 6s. 4d.—an immense sum in those days; but Burnet states that in reality it was almost tenfold the amount.⁴ Small as may have been the good effected by these enormous possessions in the hands of the monks, it was even more worthless under the management of its new masters. Henry admitted the heavy responsibility which he assumed in thus seizing the wealth which had been dedicated to pious uses, and he entertained magnificent schemes for devoting it to the public benefit, but his own extravagance and the grasping avarice of needy courtiers wrought out a result ridiculously mean. Thus he designed to set aside a rental of £18,000 for the

¹ Rymer, XIV. XV.

² 37 Hen. VIII. c. 4 (Parl. Hist. I. 561).

³ Parl. Hist. I. 537.

⁴ This may readily be considered no exaggeration. A letter from John Freeman to Cromwell values at £80,000 the lead alone stripped from the dismantled houses (Suppression of Monasteries, p. 290).

support of eighteen "Byshopprychys to be new made."¹ For this purpose he obtained full power from Parliament in 1539,² and in 1540 he established one on the remains of the Abbey of Westminster. Those of Chester, Gloucester, and Peterboro' were established in 1541, and in 1543 those of Oxford and Bristol,³ and one of them, that of Westminster, was suppressed in 1550, leaving only five as the result. The people were quieted by assurances that taxes would be abrogated for ever and the kingdom kept in a most efficient state of defence; but subsidies and benevolences were immediately exacted with more frequency and energy than ever.⁴ Splendid foundations were promised for institutions of learning, but little was given; a moderate sum was expended in improving the sea-ports, while broad manors and rich farms were granted to favourites at almost nominal prices; and the ill-gotten wealth abstracted from the Church disappeared without leaving traces except in the sudden and overgrown fortunes of those gentlemen who were fortunate or prompt enough to make use of the golden opportunity, and who to obtain them had no scruple in openly tendering bribes and shares in the spoil to Cromwell, the omnipotent favourite of the King.⁵ The complaints of the people, who found their new masters harder than the old, may be estimated from some specimens printed by Strype.⁶

If it be asked what became of the "holy idle thieves" and "sturdy loobies" whom the Beggars' Petition so earnestly desired to be thrown upon the world, the answer may be found in the legislation of Edward VI. It was

¹ Such is the substance of a memorandum in Henry's own handwriting (*Suppression of Monasteries*, No. 131, p. 263).

² 31 Hen. VIII. c. 9 (*Parl. Hist.* I. 540).

³ Burnet I. 300.

⁴ Strype, *Eccles. Memor.* I. 345.

⁵ See letters of the Lord Chancellor Audley and the learned Sir Thomas Elyot to Cromwell.—Strype, *Eccles. Memor.* I. 263-5.

⁶ *Op. cit.* I. 392-403; II. 258-63.

impossible that the sudden and violent overthrow of a system on which nearly all charitable relief was based could be effected without causing infinite misery during the period of transition, no matter how tenderly the interests of the poor might be guarded. In the organisation of the Catholic Church all benevolence finds its expression through ecclesiastical instrumentalities, and the immense possessions of the mediæval establishment had been confided to it largely in its capacity of the universal almoner. In seizing these possessions the State was morally bound to assume the corresponding obligations, but time was required for the adjustment, and the greedy rulers, during the minority of Edward VI., were much more intent upon increasing their acquisitions than in listening to the demands of humanity. By his first Parliament, in 1547, an Act was passed confirming that of 1545, concerning the hospitals, chantries, guilds, &c., under which all remnants that had escaped the rapacity of the late sovereign were placed at the mercy of the Protector Somerset and his colleagues of the Council, who speedily absorbed not only them, but everything that could be stripped from the parish churches.¹ In the preamble of this Act, one of its objects was specified to be the "better provision for the poor and needy," thus recognising the responsibility of the

¹ 1 Edw. VI. c. 14. Dr. Augustus Jessop tells us that "the ring of the miscreants who robbed the monasteries in the reign of Henry the Eighth was the first, but the ring of the robbers who robbed the poor and helpless in the reign of Edward the Sixth was ten times worse than the first. . . . The accumulated wealth of centuries, their houses and lands, their money, their vessels of silver and their vessels of gold, their ancient cups and goblets and salvers, even to their very chairs and tables, were all set down in inventories and catalogues, and all swept into the great robbers' hoard . . . every vestment and chalice, and candlestick and banner, organs and bells, and picture and image and altar and shrine."—"In three years it may be said that almost all the parish churches in England had been looted; before the end of the king's reign there had been a clean sweep of all that was worth stealing from the parish chests, or the church walls, or the church treasuries. In the next generation there were churches by the score that possessed not even a surplice; there were others that had not even a chalice, and others again, in considerable numbers, that were described as 'ruinated.'"—Before the Great Pillage, pp. 39–40, 66 (London 1901).

State to replace the assistance which had been afforded by the Church and the guilds, but Parliament a few weeks earlier had already taken measures, not to relieve the sufferings of the poor, but to repress the vagabondage which had necessarily resulted from the destruction of the monasteries. In this Act the magnitude of the evil is indicated by the rigorously inhuman measures deemed necessary for its abatement. Every able-bodied man, loitering in any place for three days without working or offering to work, was held to be a vagabond; he was to be branded on the breast with a letter V, and be adjudged as a slave for two years to any one who would bring him before a justice of the peace.¹ This substitute for clerical almsgiving was deemed sufficient for the time, and it was not until five years later, in 1552, that a practical effort was made to alleviate the miseries of poverty by a poor-law, the commencement of a series which has since burdened England with ever-increasing weight.²

The monastic establishments of Ireland shared the same fate. Rymer³ gives the text of a commission for the suppression of a nunnery of the diocese of Dublin in 1535. The insubordination of the island, however, rendered it difficult to carry out the measure everywhere, and finally, in 1541, it was accomplished by virtually granting their lands to the native chieftains. These were good Catholics, but they could not resist the temptation. They joined eagerly in grasping the spoil, and the desirable political object was effected of detaching them, for the time, from the foreign alliances with the Catholic powers, which threatened serious evils.⁴

¹ 1 Edw. VI. c. 3.—Parl. Hist. I. 583.

² 5-6 Edw. VI. cap. 2. For the charitable functions of the guilds destroyed under Edward VI. see J. E. Thorold Rogers, *Six Centuries of Work and Wages*, II. 346-8.

³ *Fœdera*, T. XIV. p. 551.

⁴ Froude, *Hist. Engl.* IV. 543.

It is a striking proof of Henry's strength of will and intense individuality of character, that, in thus tearing up by the roots the whole system of monachism, he did not yield one jot to the powerful section of his supporters who had pledged themselves to the logical sequence of his acts, the abrogation of sacerdotal celibacy in general. While every reason of policy and statesmanship urged him to grant the privilege of marriage to the secular clergy, whom he forced to transfer to him the allegiance formerly rendered to Rome, while his chief religious advisers at home and his Protestant allies abroad used every endeavour to wring from him this concession, he steadily and persistently refused it to the end, and we can only guess whether his firmness arose from conscientious conviction or from the pride of a controversialist.

Notwithstanding his immovable resolution on this point, his power seemed ineffectual to stay the progress of the new ideas. An assembly held by his order in May 1530, to condemn the heretical doctrines disseminated in certain books, shows how openly the advocates of clerical marriage had promulgated their views while yet Wolsey was prime minister and Henry gloried in the title of Defender of the Faith. Numerous books were denounced in which celibacy was ridiculed, its sanctity disproved, and its evil influences commented upon in the most irreverent manner.¹ These

¹ Thus "An Exposition into the seventh Chapitre of the firste Epistle to the Corinthians" seems to have been almost entirely devoted to an argument against celibacy, adducing all manner of reasons derived from nature, morality, necessity, and Scripture, and describing forcibly the evils arising from the rule. The author does not hesitate to declare that "Matrimony is as golde, the spirituall estates as dung," and the tenor of his writings may be understood from his triumphant exclamation, after insisting that all the Apostles and their immediate successors were married—"Seeing that ye chose not married men to bishoppes, other Criste must be a foole or unrighteous which so did chose, or you anticristis and deceyvers."

The "Sum of Scripture" was more moderate in its expressions: "Yf a man vowe to lyve chaste and in povertie in a monasterie, than yf he perceyve that in the monastery he lyveth woorse than he did before, as in fornication and theft then he may leve the cloyster and breke his vowe without synne."

Tyndale in "The Obedience of a Cristen Man" is most uncompromising: "Oportet presbyterem ducere uxorem duas ob causas." . . . "If thou bind thy

doctrines were sometimes carried into practice, and the orthodox clergy had little ceremony in visiting them with the sharpest penalties of the canons. It was about this time that Stokesley, Bishop of London, condemned to imprisonment for life Thomas Patmore, the incumbent of Hadlam in Hertfordshire, for encouraging his curate to marry and permitting him subsequently to officiate; and the unfortunate man actually lay for three years in gaol, until released by the intercession of Cranmer.¹

If the reforming polemics were thus bold while Henry was yet orthodox, it may readily be imagined how keenly they watched the progress of his quarrel with the Pope, and how loud became their utterances as he gradually threw off his allegiance to Rome and persecuted all who hesitated to follow in his footsteps. He soon showed, however, that he allowed none to precede him, and that all consciences were to be measured by the royal ell-wand. Thus his proceedings against the Carthusians and Franciscans in 1534 were varied by a proclamation directed against seditious books and priestly marriages. As we have seen, some unions had taken place, and all who had committed the indiscretion were deprived of their functions and reduced to the laity, though the marriages seem to have been recognised as valid. Future transgressions, moreover, were threatened with the royal indignation and further punishment—words of serious import at such a time and under such a monarch.²

self to chastitie to obteyn that which Criste purchased for the, surely soo art thou an infdele."

The "Revelation of Anticriste" carries the war into the enemy's territory in a fashion somewhat savage: "Keping of virginite and chastite of religion is a devellishe thinge" (Wilkins III. 728-34).

¹ Strype, *Memorials of Cranmer*, Book III. Chapter 34.

² Wilkins III. 778.—Strype, in his "Memorials of Cranmer," Bk. I. Chap. 18, gives this proclamation as dated November 16, in the 30th year of Henry VIII., which would place it in 1538, and Bishop Wilkins also prints (III. 696) from Harmer's "Specimen of Errors" the same with unimportant variations, as "given this 16th day of November, in the 13th year of our reign," which would place it in 1521.

In spite of all this, the chief advisers of Henry did not scruple to connive at infractions of the proclamation. Both Cranmer and Cromwell favoured the Reformation: the former was himself secretly married, and even ventured to urge the King to reconsider his views on priestly celibacy;¹ while the latter, though, as a layman, without any such personal motive, was disposed to relax the strictness of the rule of celibacy. During the visitation of the monasteries, for instance, the Abbot of Walden had little hesitation in confessing to Ap Rice, the visitor, that he was secretly married, and asked to be secured from molestation. The confidence thus manifested in the friendly disposition of the vicar-general was satisfactorily responded to. Cromwell replied, merely warning him to "use his remedy" without, if possible, causing scandal.² A singular petition, addressed to him in 1536 by the secular clergy of the diocese of Bangor, illustrates forcibly both the confidence felt in his intentions and the necessity of the Abbot of Walden's

It is impossible, however, at a time when even the Lutherans of Saxony had scarcely ventured on the innovation, that in England priestly marriage could already have become as common as the proclamation shows it to be. The bull of Leo X., thanking Henry for his refutation of Luther, was dated 4 November, 1521, and we may be sure that the King's zeal for the faith would at such a moment have prompted him to much more stringent measures of repression, if he had ventured at that epoch to invade the sacred precincts of ecclesiastical jurisdiction—a thing he would have been by no means likely to do. The date of 1521 is therefore evidently an error.

For the same reasons I have been forced to reject a discussion in convocation of the same year (Wilkins III. 697), in which the question of sacerdotal marriage was decided triumphantly in the affirmative. The proceedings are evidently those of December 1547, in the first year of Edward VI.

¹ Burnet's Collections I. 319.

² MS. State Paper Office (Froude, III. 65). Ap Rice's report to Cromwell is sufficiently suggestive as to the interior life of the monastic orders to deserve transcription. "As we were of late at Walden, the abbot there being a man of good learning and right sincere judgment, as I examined him alone, showed me secretly, upon stipulation of silence, but only unto you as our judge, that he had contracted matrimony with a certain woman secretly, having present thereat but one trusty witness; because he, not being able, as he said, to contain, though he could not be suffered by the laws of man, saw he might do it lawfully by the laws of God; and for the avoiding of more inconvenience, which before he was provoked unto, he did thus, having confidence in you that this act should not be anything prejudicial unto him."

“remedy” in the immorality which prevailed. There had been a visitation in which the petitioners admit that many of them had been found in fault, and as their women had been consequently taken away, they pray the vicar-general to devise some means by which their consorts may be restored. They do not venture to ask directly for marriage, but decency forbids the supposition that they could openly request Cromwell to authorise a system of concubinage. Nothing can be more humiliating than their confession of the relations existing between themselves, as ministers of Christ, and the flocks entrusted to their spiritual care. After pleading that without women they cannot keep house and exercise hospitality, they add: “We ourselves shall be driven to seek our living at ale-houses and taverns, for mansions upon the benefices and vicarages we have none. *And as for gentlemen and substantial honest men, for fear of inconvenience, knowing our frailty and accustomed liberty, they will in no wise board us in their houses.*”¹

The tendencies thus exhibited by the King’s advisers called forth the remonstrances of the conservatives. In June 1536 the Lower House of Convocation presented a memorial inveighing strongly against the progress of heresy, and among the obnoxious opinions condemned was “That it is preached and taught that all things awght to be in comen and that Priests shuld have wiffes,” and they added that books containing heretical opinions were printed “cum privilegio,” were openly sold among the people, and

¹ MS. State Paper Office (Froude, III. 372). It is not to be assumed, however, that the clergy were worse than the laity. During the visitation of the monasteries, Thomas Legh, one of the visitors, says, in writing to Cromwell, 22 August, 1536, concerning the region between Coventry and Chester: “For certain of the knights and gentlemen, and most commonly all, liveth so incontinently, having their concubines openly in their houses, with five or six of their children, and putting from them their wives, that all the country therewith be not a little offended, and taketh evil example of them” (Miscellaneous State Papers, London, 1778, I. 21). It perhaps would not be easy to determine the exact responsibility of the clergy for this immorality of their flocks.

were not condemned by those in authority.¹ Possibly it was in consequence of this that in the following November Henry issued a circular letter to his bishops in which he commanded them—"Whereas we be advertised that divers Priests have presumed to marry themselves contrary to the custom of our Church of England, Our Pleasure is, Ye shall make secret enquiry within your Diocess, whether there be any such resiant within the same or not"—and any such offenders who had presumed to continue the performance of their sacred functions were ordered to be reported to him or to be arrested and sent to London.² Curiously enough, there is no reference to the subject in the "Articles devised by the Kinges Highnes Majestie to stablyshe Christen Quietnes and Unitie amonge us," issued by Henry in this year.³

Notwithstanding the ominous threat in the letter to the bishops, there appears about this period to have been great uncertainty in the public mind respecting the state of the law and the King's intentions. Two letters happen to have been preserved, written within a few days of each other, in June 1537, to Cromwell, which reveal the condition of opinion at the time. One of these complains that the vicar of Mendelsham, in Suffolk, has brought home a wife and children, whom he claims to be lawfully his own, and that it is permitted by the King. Although "thys acte by hym done is in thys countre a monstre, and many do growdge at it," yet, not knowing the King's pleasure, no proceedings can be had, and appeal is therefore made for authority to prosecute, lest "hys ensample wponnyched shall be occasion for other carnall evyll dysposed prestes to do in lyke manner." The other letter is from an unfortunate priest who had recently married, supposing it to be lawful. The "noyse of the peopull," however, had

¹ Strype, *Eccles. Memorials*, Vol. I. Append. p. 176.

² Burnet's *Collect.* I. 362.

³ *Formularies of Faith*, Oxford, 1856.—Wilkins III. 826.

just informed him that a royal order had commanded the separation of such unions, and he had at once sent his wife to her friends, three-score miles away. He therefore hastens to make his peace, protesting he had sinned through ignorance, though he makes bold to argue that “yf the kyngys grace could have founde yt lauffull that prestys mught have byn maryd, they wold have byn to the crowne dubbyll and dubbyll faythefull; furste in love, secondly for fere that the byschoppe of Rome schuld sette yn hys powre unto ther desolacyon.”¹

It is evident from these letters that there was still a genuine popular antipathy to clerical marriage, and yet that the royal supremacy was so firmly established by Henry's ruthless persecutions that this antipathy was held subject to the pleasure of the court, and could at any moment have been dissipated by proclamation. In fact, the only wonder is that any convictions remained in the minds of those who had seen the objects of their profoundest veneration made the sport of avarice and derision. Stately churches torn to pieces, the stone sold to sacrilegious builders, the lead put up at auction to the highest bidder, the consecrated bells cast into cannon, the sacred vessels melted down, the holy relics snatched from the shrines and treated as old bones and offal, the venerated images burned at Smithfield—all this could have left little sentiment of respect for worn-out religious observances in those who watched and saw the sacrilege remain unpunished.

Notwithstanding the reforming influences with which he was surrounded, Henry sternly adhered to the position which he had assumed.² When, in 1538, the princes of

¹ Suppression of Monasteries, pp. 160-1.

² He made one exception. Nuns professed before the age of 21 were at liberty to marry after the dissolution of their houses, whereat, according to Dr. London, they “be wonderfull gladde . . . and do pray right hartely for the kinges majestie” (Suppression of Monasteries, p. 214).

the Schmalkaldic League offered to place him at its head, and even to alter, if possible, the Augsburg Confession so as to make it a common basis of union for all the elements of opposition to Rome, Henry was well inclined to obtain the political advantages of the position tendered him, but hesitated to accept it until all doctrinal questions should be settled. The three points on which the Germans insisted were the communion in both elements, the worship in the vulgar tongue, and the marriage of the clergy. In the Convocation of that year a series of questions was submitted for decision embracing the contested points, and the clergy decided in favour of celibacy, private masses, and communion in one element.¹ Thus sustained, Henry was firm, and the ambassadors of the League spent two months in conferences with the English bishops and doctors without result. On their departure (5 August, 1538), they addressed him a letter arguing the subjects in debate—the refusal of the cup, private masses, and sacerdotal celibacy—to which Henry replied at some length, defending his position on these topics with no little skill and dexterity, and refusing his assent finally.² The reformers, however, did not yet despair, and the royal preachers even ventured occasionally to debate the propriety of clerical marriage freely before him in their sermons, but in vain.³ An epistle which Melancthon addressed to him in April 1539, arguing the same questions again, had no better effect.⁴

In the spring of 1539 Henry renewed negotiations with the German princes, and his envoys, in soliciting another visit from deputies of the League, held out some vague promises of his yielding on the point of celibacy. The

¹ Strype's *Eccles. Memor.* I. 320.

² Burnet I. 254–55; *Collect.* 332, 347.

³ Nothing has yet been settled concerning the marriage of the clergy, although some persons have very freely preached before the king upon the subject."—John Butler to Conrad Pellican (*Froude*, III. 381).

⁴ Burnet, *Collect.* I. 329.

Germans in turn, to show their earnest desire for union with England, submitted a series of propositions in which they suggested that the marriage of priests might be left to the discretion of the Pope, and that if it were to be prohibited only persons advanced in life should be ordained.¹ Both parties, however, were too firmly set in their opinions for accord to be possible. Notwithstanding any seeming hesitation caused by the policy of the moment, Henry's mind was fully made up, and the consequences of endeavouring to persuade him against his prejudices soon became apparent. Even while the negotiations were in progress he had issued a series of injunctions degrading from the priesthood all married clergy, and threatening with imprisonment and his displeasure all who should thereafter marry.² Argumentation confirmed his opinions, and he proceeded to enforce them on his subjects in his own savage manner, "for though on all other points he had set up the doctrines of the Augsburg Confession," yet on these he had committed himself as a controversialist, and the worst passions of polemical authorship—the true "odium theologicum"—acting through his irresponsible despotism, rendered him the cruellest of persecutors. But a few weeks after receiving the letter of Melanchthon, he answered it in cruel fashion.

In May a new Parliament met, chosen under great excitement, for the people were inflamed on the subject of religion, and animosities ran high. The principal object of the session was known to be a settlement of the national Church, and as the reformers were in a minority against the court, the temper of the Houses was not likely to be encouraging for them.³ On May 5, a week after its

¹ Strype's *Eccles. Memor.* I. 339, 343.

² *Ibid.* 344.—Wilkins III. 847.

³ Yet the moderate party ventured to submit to Parliament "A Device for extirpating Heresies among the People," among the suggestions of which was a bill for abolishing ecclesiastical celibacy, legalising all existing marriages, and permitting

assembling, a committee was appointed, at the King's request, to take into consideration the differences of religious opinion. On the 16th, the Duke of Norfolk, who was not a member of the committee, reported that no agreement could be arrived at, and he therefore laid before the House of Lords, for full discussion, articles embracing — 1. Transubstantiation; 2. Communion in both kinds; 3. Vows of Chastity; 4. Private Masses; 5. Sacerdotal Marriages; and 6. Auricular Confession. Cranmer opposed them stoutly, arguing against them for three days, and especially endeavouring to controvert the third and fifth, which enjoined celibacy, but his efforts and those of his friends were vain, when pitted against the known wishes of the King, who himself took an active part in the debate, and argued in favour of the articles with much vigour. Under such circumstances, the adoption of the Six Articles was a foregone conclusion. On May 30 the Chancellor reported that the House had agreed upon them, and that it was the King's pleasure "that some penal statute should be enacted to compel all his subjects who were in any way dissenters or contradicters of these articles to obey them." The framing of such a bill was entrusted to two committees, one under the lead of Cranmer, the other under that of the Archbishop of York, and they were instructed to lay their respective plans before the King within forty-eight hours. Of course the report of the Archbishop of York was adopted. Introduced on June 7, Cranmer again resisted it gallantly, but it passed both Houses by the 14th, and received the royal assent on the 28th. It was entitled "An Act for abolishing Diversity of Opinions in certain Articles concerning Christian Religion," and it stands as a monument of the cruel legislation of a barbarous age.

The Third Article was "that Priests after the order of Priesthood might not marry by the Law of God"; the Fourth, "that Vows of Chastity ought to be observed by the Law of God," and those who obstinately preached or disputed against them were adjudged felons, to suffer death without benefit of clergy. Any opposition, either in word or writing, subjected the offender to imprisonment during the King's pleasure, and a repetition of the offence constituted a felony, to be expiated with the life of the culprit. Priestly marriages were declared void, and a priest persisting in living with his wife was to be executed as a felon. Concubinage was punishable with deprivation of benefice and property, and imprisonment, for a first offence; a second lapse was visited with a felon's death, while in all cases the wife or concubine shared the fate of her partner in guilt, Quarterly sessions were provided, to be held by the bishops and other commissioners appointed by the King, for the purpose of enforcing these laws, and the accused were entitled to trial by jury.¹ Vows of chastity were only binding on those who had taken them of their own free will when over twenty-one years of age.² According to the Act, the wives of priests were to be put away by

¹ Burnet, I. 258-9.—31 Henry VIII. c. xiv. Mr. Froude endeavours to relieve Henry of the responsibility of this measure, and quotes Melancthon to show that its cruelty is attributable to Gardiner (Hist. Engl. III. 395). He admits, however, that the bill as passed differs but slightly from that presented by the king himself, with whom the committee which framed it must have acted in concert. According to Strype, "The Parliament men said little against this bill, but seemed all unanimous for it; neither did the Lord Chancellor Audley, no, nor the Lord Privy Seal, Cromwel, speak against it: the reason being, no question, because they saw the king so resolved upon it. . . . Nay, at the very same time it passed, he (Cranmer) stayed and protested against it, though the king desired him to go out, since he could not consent to it. Worcester (Latimer) also, as well as Sarum (Shaxton), was committed to prison; and he, as well as the other, resigned up his bishopric upon the act."—(Memorials of Cranmer, Book 1. Chap. 19.) This shows us how the royal influence was used. Cranmer, indeed, in his reply to the Devonshire rebels, when in 1549 they demanded the restoration of the Six Articles, expressly asserts "that if the king's majesty himself had not come personally into the Parliament house, those lawes had never passed" (Ibid. App. No. XL.).

² 31 Henry VIII. c. 6 (Parl. Hist. I. 536-40).

June 24, but on that day, as the Act was not yet signed, an order was mercifully made extending the time to July 12.¹

Cranmer argued, reasonably enough, that it was a great hardship, in the case of the ejected monks, to insist on the observance of the vow of chastity, when those of poverty and obedience were dispensed with, and when the unfortunates had been forcibly deprived of all the advantages, safeguards, and protection of monastic life.² The matter, however, was not decided by reason, but by the whimsical perversity of a self-opinionated man, who unfortunately had the power to condense his polemical notions in the blood of his subjects.

To comprehend the full iniquity of this savage measure, we must remember the rapid progress which the new opinions had been making in England for twenty years; the tacit encouragement given them by the suppression of the religious houses, and by the influence of the King's confidential advisers; and the hopes naturally excited by Henry's quarrel with Rome and negotiations with the League of Schmalkalden. In spite, therefore, of the comparatively mild punishments hitherto imposed on priestly marriage, which were no doubt practically almost obsolete, such unions may safely be assumed as numerous. Even Cranmer himself, the primate of Henry's Church,

¹ Parl. Hist. I. 540.

There is a story current that soon after the passage of the Act, the Duke of Norfolk, who had had so much to do with it, on meeting a former chaplain of his named Lawney, jocularly said to him, "Oh, my Lawney" (knowing him of old much to favour priests' matrimony), "whether may priests now have wives or no?" "If it please your grace," replied he, "I cannot well tell whether priests may have wives or no, but well I wot, and am sure of it, for all your Act, that wives will have priests."—*Strype's Memorials of Cranmer*, book i. chap. viii.

² Dr. London chronicles the troubles of this class. "I perceyve many of the other sortt, monkes and chanons, whiche be yonge lustie men, allways fatt fedde, lyving in ydelnes and at rest, be sore perplexide that now being prestes they may nott return and marye" (*Suppression of Monasteries*, p. 215).

Nicander Nucius asserts that many did marry openly—*ἄλλους δὲ γυναῖκας ἐννόμως συνεύρους εἰσαγομένους*" (*op. cit.* p. 71).

was twice married, his second wife, then living, the niece of Osiander, being kept under a decent veil of secrecy in his palace.¹ When, after his fruitless resistance to the Six Articles, the bill was passed, he sent his wife to her friends in Germany, until the death of his master enabled him to bring her back and acknowledge her openly;² but vast numbers of unfortunate pastors could not have had the opportunity, and perhaps lacked the self-control, thus to arrange their domestic affairs. Even the gentle Melancthon was moved from his ordinary equanimity, and ventured to address to his royal correspondent a remonstrance expressing his horror of the cruelty which could condemn to the scaffold a man whose sole guilt consisted in not abandoning the wife to whom he had promised fidelity through good and evil, before God and man—a cruelty which could find no precedent in any code that man had previously dared to frame.³

As might be expected, numerous divorces of married priests followed this Draconian legislation, and these divorces were held good by the Act of 1549, which under

¹ His first marriage was entered into while he was still quite young, and before he had taken orders. The second, however, shows that he acted with some independence, for it took place in 1531, before Henry's open rupture with Rome, and while he was ambassador to the Emperor. At that time he was King's chaplain and Archdeacon of Taunton, and his nuptials therefore were plainly an indication of heresy.—Strype's Memorials of Cranmer, book i. chap. iii., book iii. chap. xxvii.

² Burnet I. 256-7. It was not until 1543 that he ventured to confess this to the King (Ibid. p. 328). At his trial in 1556 his two marriages were one of the points of accusation against him (Ibid. II. 339).

Saunders, in commenting upon Cranmer's time-serving disposition, which enabled him to accommodate himself to Henry's capricious opinions, and yet to enter fully into the reformatory ideas predominant under Edward VI., does not fail to satirise his connubial propensities. "Unum illud molestissime tamen ferens, quod meretricem quandam suam non poterat palam uxoris loco libere habere, quia id non laturum Henricum sciebat, sed partim domi eam occultare, partim cum foras prodiret, cista quadam ad id affabre facta inclusam, secum una circumferre cogeretur. Iste ergo jam desiit esse Henricianus, et tam ex immatura regis Edouardi ætate quam ex Protectoris in sectas summa propensione, suæ statim simul et libidini et hæresi habenas laxandas statuit; nam et scorto suo mox est publice pro uxore usus, et catechismum Edouardo dedicatum, falsæ impiæque doctrinæ plenum, in lucem edidit."—De Orig. et Prog. Schismatis Anglicani, p. 193 (Ed. 1586).

³ Melancthon. Epist. Ed. 1565, p. 34.

Edward VI. granted full liberty in the premises to ecclesiastics.¹ Even Henry, however, began to feel that he had gone too far, and the influence of Cromwell was sufficient to prevent the harshest features of the law from being enforced in all their odious severity, especially as the projected marriage with Ann of Cleves and the alliance with the German Lutherans rendered active persecution in the highest degree impolitic. When the comedy of Henry's fourth marriage culminated in the tragedy of Cromwell's ruin (June 1540), the reactionary elements again gathered strength. There can be little doubt that the atrocity of the law had greatly interfered with its efficient execution and had aroused popular feeling, for now, although the Vicar-General was removed, the Catholics passed with speedy alacrity a bill moderating the Act of the Six Articles, in so far as it related to marriage and concubinage. For capital punishment was substituted the milder penalty of confiscation to the King of all the property and revenue of the offenders.²

The Six Articles, as thus modified,³ remained the law of England during the concluding years of Henry's reign, nor is it likely that any one ventured to urge upon him seriously a relaxation of the principles to which he had committed himself thus definitely. The fall of Cromwell and the danger to which Cranmer was exposed for several years were sufficient to insure him against troublesome remonstrants, even if his increasing irritability and capriciousness had not made those around him daily more alive

¹ 2-3 Edw. VI. c. 21 (Parl. Hist. I. 586.)

² 32 Hen. VIII. c. 10.—Burnet I. 282.—Parl. Hist. I. 575.

³ Richard Hilles, writing in 1541 to Henry Bullinger, assumes that this modification of the Six Articles only applied to those who were guilty of incontinence, and that it did not "appear to the King at all extreme still to hang those clergymen who marry or who retain those wives whom they had married previous to the former statute" (Original Letters, Parker Soc. Pub. p. 205)—but both Burnet and the Parliamentary History make no such distinction, and in the abstract of the bill as printed in the Statutes at Large (I. 281) it is described as applicable to "priests married or unmarried."

to the danger of thwarting or resisting his idlest humour. How little progress, indeed, the Reformation had thus far made in England is shown in a letter written in 1546 by John Hooper, afterwards Bishop of Gloucester and Worcester, during the exile into which he was forced by the Act of the Six Articles: "Our King has destroyed the Pope, but not popery; he has expelled all the monks and nuns, and pulled down their monasteries; he has caused all their possessions to be transferred into his exchequer, and yet they are bound, even the frail female sex, by the King's command, to perpetual chastity. England has at this time at least ten thousand nuns, not one of whom is allowed to marry. The impious Mass, the most shameful celibacy of the clergy, the invocation of saints, auricular confession, superstitious abstinence from meats, and purgatory, were never before held by the people in greater esteem than at the present moment."¹

On 28 January, 1547, Henry VIII. died, and Edward VI. succeeded to the perilous throne. Not yet ten years of age, his government of course received its direction from those around him, and the rivalry between the Protector Somerset and the Chancellor Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton, threw the former into the hands of the progressives, as the latter was the acknowledged head of the reactionary party. The ruin of Southampton and the triumph of Somerset, strengthened by his successful campaign in Scotland, soon began to develop their natural consequences on the religion of the country. Under the auspices of Cranmer, a Convocation was assembled, which was empowered to decide all questions in controversy. When the primate was anxious to again enjoy the solace of his wife's company and to relieve both her and himself from the stigma of concubinage, it is easy to understand that the subject of celibacy would receive early and appro-

¹ Hooper to Bullinger.—Original Letters, Parker Soc. Pub. p. 36.

appropriate attention; and so confident were the reformers of success that they did not hesitate to enter into matrimony without waiting for any formal sanction.¹ Accordingly, on 17 December, 1547, a proposition was submitted to the effect that all canons, statutes, laws, decrees, usages, and customs, interfering with or prohibiting marriage, should be abrogated, and it was carried by a vote of 53 to 22. No time was lost. Two days afterwards a bill was introduced in the Commons permitting married men to be priests and to hold benefices. It was received with so much favour that it was read twice the same day, and on the 21st it was sent up to the Lords; but in the Upper House it raised debates so prolonged that, as the members were determined to adjourn before Christmas, it was laid aside. This might be the more readily agreed to, since on the 23rd an Act was approved which abolished numerous severe laws of the former reign, including the statute of the Six Articles, and was immediately followed by another granting the use of the cup to the laity and prohibiting private Masses.²

The repeal of the Six Articles left the marriage of the clergy subject to the previous laws of Henry, imposing on it various pains and penalties, but with the votes recorded in Convocation and Parliament, it is not likely that much vigour was displayed in their enforcement. Those interested could thus afford to await the reassembling of the Houses, which did not take place until 24 November, 1548, but they claimed the reward of their patience by an early hearing in the session. On December 3 a bill was intro-

¹ Thus Dr. Parker, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, was married on June 24, 1547, within six months after Henry's death, to Margaret, daughter of Robert Harlston of Mattishall. As he had been in priest's orders since 1527, he assumed a liberty which was not even asked of Parliament until nearly eighteen months later (see his autobiographical memoranda in his Correspondence, pp. vii., x., Parker Soc. 1853).

² 1 Edw. I. c. 1, 12 (Parl. Hist. I. 582-4).—Wilkins IV. 16.—Burnet II. 40, 41 III. 189.

duced, similar to that of the previous year, rendering married men eligible to the priesthood: it passed second reading on the 5th, and third reading on the 6th. Apparently encouraged by the favourable reception accorded to it, the friends of the measure resolved on demanding further privileges. The bill was therefore laid aside, and on the next day a new one was presented which granted the additional liberty of marriage to those already in orders. It conceded to the established opinions the fact that it were better that the clergy should live chaste and single, yet, "as great filthiness of living had followed on the laws that compelled chastity and prohibited marriage," therefore all laws and canons inhibiting sacerdotal matrimony should be abolished. This bill, after full discussion, was read a second and third time on the 10th and 12th, and was sent up to the Lords on the 13th. Again the Upper House was in no haste to pass it. It lay on the table until 9 February, 1549, when it was stoutly contested, and, after being recommitted, it finally passed on the 19th, with the votes of nine bishops recorded against it.¹

Cranmer and his friends were now at full liberty to establish the innovation by committing the clergy individually to marriage, and by enlisting the popular feeling in its support. During the discussion they had not been idle. Much controversial writing had occurred on both sides, in which Poynette, afterwards Bishop of Winchester, took an active part, while Bale, Bishop of Ossory, distinguished himself on the same side by raking together all the foul stories that could be collected concerning the celibate clergy—a scandalous material not likely to be lacking in either quantity or quality. Burnet declares that no law passed during the reign of Edward excited more contradiction and censure, and the matrimonialists soon found that, even with the Act of Parliament in their favour, their

¹ 2-3 Edw. VI. c. 21 (Parl. Hist. I. 586).—Burnet II. 88-9.

course was not wholly a smooth one. Cranmer ordered a visitation in his province, and directed as one of the points for inquiry and animadversion, "Whether any do contemn married priests, and, for that they be married, will not receive the Communion or other sacraments at their hands,"¹ which distinctly reveals the difficulties encountered in eradicating the convictions of centuries from the popular mind. Sanders says, and with every appearance of probability, that the Archbishop of York united with Cranmer in ordering a visitation of the whole kingdom, during which the visitors investigated particularly the morals of the clergy, and used every argument to impel them to marriage, not only declaring celibacy to be most dangerous to salvation, but intimating that all who adhered to it would be regarded as papists and enemies of the King.² The active interest which Cranmer took in the question is manifested by the fact that when Dr. Richard Smith, who had fled to Scotland in consequence of having endeavoured to stir up a tumult at Oxford against Peter Martyr, desired to make his peace and return, the inducement which he offered to the Archbishop of Canterbury to obtain for him the King's pardon was that he would write a book in favour of priestly marriage, as he had previously done against it.³

The reformers speedily found that they were not to escape without opposition. The masses of the people

¹ Wilkins IV. 26.—Cardwell's Documentary Annals, I. 59. Wilkins and Cardwell date this in 1547, which is evidently impossible. Burnet (II. 102) alludes to it under 1549, which is much more likely to be correct.

² Sanderi Schisma Anglic. pp. 214-5.

³ Strype, Memorials of Cranmer, Bk. II. chap. 14.—Smith subsequently at Louvain continued to urge the necessity of celibacy, and was answered by Peter Martyr. Strype calls him a filthy fellow, notorious for lewdness, and his championship of chastity excited some merriment. There is an epigram upon him by Lawrence Humphrey—

"Haud satis affabre tractans fabrilia Smithus
 Librum de vita cœlibe composuit
 Dumque pudicitiam, dum vota monastica laudat,
 Stuprat, sacra notans fœdera conjugii."

(Ibid. Chap. 25.)

throughout England were in a state of discontent. The vast body of abbey lands acquired by the gentry and now enclosed bore hard upon many ; the raising of rents showed that secular landlords were less charitable than the ancient proprietors of the soil ; the increase of sheep-husbandry threw many farm labourers out of employ ;¹ and the savage enactments, already alluded to, against the unfortunate expelled monks show how large an element of influential disaffection was actively at work in the substratum of society. Those priests who disapproved of the rapid Protestantising process adopted by the court could hardly fail to take advantage of opportunities so tempting, and they accordingly fanned the spark into a flame. The enforcement of the new liturgy, on Whitsunday, 1549, seemed the signal of revolt. Numerous risings took place, which were readily quelled, until one in Devonshire assumed alarming proportions. Ten thousand men in arms made demands for relief in religious as well as temporal matters. Lord Russel, unable to meet them in the field, endeavoured to gain time by negotiation, and offered to receive their complaints. These were fifteen in number, of which several demanded the restoration of points of the old religion, and one insisted on the revival of the Six Articles. On their refusal, another set was drawn up, in which not only were the Six Articles called for, but also a special provision enforcing the celibacy of the clergy. This was likewise rejected ; but during the delay another rising occurred in Norfolk, reckoned at twenty thousand men, and yet another of less formidable dimensions in Yorkshire. Russel finally scattered the men of Devon, while the Earl of Warwick succeeded in suppressing the

¹ The vast growth of the sheep-farms had long been a subject of complaint. Even as early as 1516, Sir Thomas More describes with indignant energy the misery caused by the ejection of the agricultural population in order to form enormous sheep-walks, which were found more profitable to the landlords than ordinary farming. He declares that the sheep "tam edaces atque indomitæ esse cœperant, ut homines devorent ipsos, agros, domos, oppida vastent ac depopulentur."—*Utopia*, Lib. I.

rebels of Norfolk, when the promise of an amnesty caused the Yorkshiremen to disperse.¹

The question of open resistance thus was settled. Cranmer and his friends had now leisure to consolidate their advantages and organise a system that should be permanent. In 1551, he and Ridley prepared with great care a series of forty-two articles, embodying the faith of the Church of England, which was adopted by the Convocation in 1552, and was ordered to be signed by all men in orders and all candidates for ordination.² Burnet speaks of it as bringing the Anglican doctrine and worship to perfection. It remained unaltered during the rest of Edward's reign, and under Elizabeth it was only modified verbally in the recension which resulted in the famous Thirty-nine Articles—the foundation-stone of the Episcopalian edifice. Of these forty-two articles, the thirty-first declared that "Bishops, priests, and deacons are not commanded by God's law to vow the estate of a single life or to abstain from marriage."³

The canon law had thus invested the marriage of the clergy with all the sanctity that the union of man and wife could possess. Yet still the deep-seated conviction of the people as to the impropriety of such proceedings remained, troubling the repose of those who had entered into matrimony, and doubtless operating as a restraint upon the numbers of the imitators of Cranmer. Among the interrogatories drawn up by John Hooper for the visitation of his diocese of Gloucester, in 1552, is one which inquires whether any midwife refuses to attend the confinement of women who are married to ministers of the Church⁴—a suggestion which indicates how rooted was the

¹ Burnet II. 117-9.

² Strype's Eccles. Memorials, II. 420.

³ Burnet II. Collect. 217. In the Latin version, "Episcopis, presbyteris et diaconis non est mandatum ut cœlibatum voveant; neque, jure divino coguntur matrimonio abstinere" (Wilkins IV. 76).

⁴ Strype's Eccles. Memorials, II. 355.

popular aversion from such matches. If Strype's description of the clergy of the period indeed be correct, there was nothing in the character of the body to overcome the popular aversion in consideration of its purity and devotion to its sacred duties.¹ The Act of 1549 had to a certain extent justified these prejudices by admitting the preferableness of a single life in the ministers of Christ, and it was resolved to remove every possible stigma by a solemn declaration of Parliament. A bill was therefore prepared and speedily passed (10 February, 1552), which reveals how strong was the popular opposition, and how uncertain the position of the wives and children of the clergy. It declares "That many took occasion, from the words in the Act formerly made about this matter, to say that it was only permitted, as usury and other unlawful things were, for the avoidance of greater evils, who thereupon spoke slanderously of such marriages, and accounted the children begotten in them to be bastards, to the high dishonour of the King and Parliament, and the learned clergy of the realm, who had determined that the laws against priests' marriages were most unlawful by the law of God; to which they had not only given their assent in the Convocation, but signed it with their hands. These slanders did also occasion that the Word of God was not heard with due reverence." It was therefore enacted "That such marriages made according to the rules prescribed in the Book of Service should be esteemed good and valid, and that the children begot in them should be inheritable according to law."²

A still further confirmation of the question was designed in a body of ecclesiastical law which was for several years in preparation by various commissions appointed for the purpose. In this it was proposed to

¹ Strype's *Eccles. Memorials*, II. p. 445.—"Our curate is naught, an Assehead, a Dodipot, a Lack-Latine, and can do nothing."

² 5-6 Edw. VI. c. 12 (Parl. Hist. I. 594).—Burnet II. 192.

make the abrogation of celibacy even more distinctly a matter of faith, for in the second Title among the various heresies condemned is that which, through the suggestion of the Devil, asserts that admission to holy orders takes away the right to marry. This work, however, though completed, had not yet received the royal assent when the death of Edward VI. caused it to pass out of sight until 1571, when it was printed by Foxe and brought to the attention of Parliament, but was laid aside owing to the opposition of Queen Elizabeth.¹

If the Protestants indulged in any day-dreams as to the permanency of their institutions, they were not long in finding that a change of rulers was destined to cause other changes disastrous to their hopes. Even the funeral of Edward, on the 8th of August, 1553, afforded them a foretaste of what was in store. Although Cranmer insisted that the public ceremonies in Westminster Abbey should be conducted according to the reformed rites, Queen Mary, still resident in the Tower, had private obsequies performed with the Roman ritual, where Gardiner celebrated mortuary Mass in presence of the Queen and some four hundred attendants. When the incense was carried around, after the Gospel, it chanced that the chaplain who bore it was a married man, and the zealous Dr. Weston snatched it from him, exclaiming, "Shamest thou not to do thine office, having a wife as thou hast? The Queen will not be censured by such as thou!"²

Trifling as was this incident, it foreboded the wrath to come. Though Mary was not crowned until October 1st, she had issued writs for a Parliament to assemble on the 10th,

¹ Reform. Legg. Eccles. Tit. de Hæresibus, cap. xx. (Cardwell's Ed., Oxford, 1850, p. 20).—*Cf.* Tit. de Matrimonio c. ix. (p. 44).

² Strype's Eccles. Memor. III. 20. This story derives additional piquancy from the fact that this Dr. Weston was somewhat notorious for uncleanness, and was subsequently deprived of the Deanery of Windsor for adultery (*Ibid.* pp. 111-2).

and as an entire change in the religious institutions of the country was intended, we may not uncharitably believe the assertion that every means of influence and intimidation was employed to secure the return of reactionary members. These efforts were crowned with complete success. The Houses had not sat for three weeks, when a bill was sent down from the Lords repealing all the Acts of Edward's reign concerning religion, including specifically those which permitted the marriage of priests and legitimated their offspring; and after a debate of six days it passed the Commons.¹

The effect of this was, of course, to revive the statute of the Six Articles, and to place all married priests at the mercy of the Queen; and as soon as she felt that she could safely exercise her power, she brought it to bear upon the offenders. A day or two after the dissolution of Parliament she commenced by issuing a proclamation inhibiting married priests from officiating.² The Spanish marriage being agreed upon and the resultant insurrection of Sir Thomas Wyatt being suppressed, Mary recognised her own strength, and her Romanising tendencies, which had previously been somewhat restrained, became openly manifested. On the 4th of March 1554 she issued a letter to her bishops, of which the object was to restore the condition of affairs under Henry VIII., except that the royal prerogatives as head of the Church were expressly disavowed. It contained eighteen articles, to be strictly enforced throughout all dioceses. Of these the seventh ordered that the bishops should by summary process remove and deprive all priests who had been married or had lived scandalously, sequestrating their revenues during the proceedings. Article VIII. provided that widowers, or those who promised to live in the strictest chastity,

¹ 1 Mary c. 2 (Parl. Hist. I. 609-10).—Burnet II. 255.

² Strype's Eccles. Memorials, III. 52.

should be treated with leniency, and receive livings at some distance from their previous abode, being properly supported meanwhile; while Article IX. directed that those who suffered deprivation should not on that account be allowed to live with their wives, and that due punishment should be inflicted for all contumacy.¹

No time was lost in carrying out these regulations. By the 9th of the same month a commission was already in session at York, which cited the clergy to appear before it on the 12th. From an appeal which is extant, by one Simon Pope, rector of Warmington, it appears that men were deprived without citation or opportunity for defence;² and that this was not infrequent is probable from the proceedings commenced against offenders of the highest class, designed and well fitted to strike terror into the hearts of the humbler parsons. On the 16th a commission was issued to the Bishops of Winchester (Stephen Gardiner), London (Bonner), Durham, St. Asaph's, Chichester, and Llandaff, to investigate the cases of the Archbishop of York and the Bishops of St. Davids, Chester, and Bristol, who, according to report, had given a most pernicious example by taking wives, in contempt of God, to the damage of their own souls, and to the scandal of all men. Any three of the commissioners were empowered to summon the accused before them, and to ascertain the truth of the

¹ Burnet II. Append. 264. According to Strype, Bonner's impatience did not wait for the royal injunctions, for in February he deprived of their livings all the married priests in his diocese of London, and commanded them to bring all their wives within a fortnight, in order that they might be divorced.—Memorials of Cranmer, Bk. III. chap. 8.

Julius III. issued a bull, 8 March, 1554, defining Cardinal Pole's legatine powers, among which was that of removing the excommunication from married clerks and legitimating their children, the fathers being removed from function and benefice, separated from their wives, and subjected to penance (Cardwell's Documentary Annals, I. 131). This was the course adopted for a time, but as the kingdom was not yet formally reconciled to Rome, the action had was under the local authorities.

² Strype's Eccles. Memor. III. Append. 33.—In the same place (p. 31) may be found a copy of the summons served upon offenders of this class.

report without legal delays or unnecessary circumlocution. If it were found correct, then they were authorised to remove the offenders at once and for ever from their dignities, and also to impose penance at discretion. This was scant measure of justice, considering that the marriage of these prelates had been contracted under sanction of law, and, if that law had recently been repealed, that at least the option of conforming to the new order of things could not decently be denied; yet even this mockery of a trial was apparently withheld, for the *congé d'élire* for their successors is dated March 18th, only two days after the commission was appointed.¹ Neither party, in fact, had much ceremony in dealing with bishops. Five had been deprived under Edward VI.; under Mary there were fourteen deprivations, and under Elizabeth fifteen.²

During the summer the bishops went on their visitations. The articles prepared by Bonner for his diocese are extant, among which we find directions to inquire particularly of the people whether their pastors are married, and, if separated, whether any communication or intercourse takes place between them and their wives; also whether any one, lay or clerical, ventures to defend sacerdotal matrimony.³ Few of the weaker brethren could escape an inquisition so searching as this, and though some controversy arose, and a few tracts were printed in defence of priestly marriage,⁴ such men as Bonner were not

¹ Burnet II. 275 and Append. 256.—Rymer (T. XV. pp. 376–77) gives a similar commission dated March 9, issued to Stephen Gardiner to eject the canons and prebendaries of Westminster in the same summary manner. The proceedings throughout England were doubtless framed on these models.

² W. H. Frere, *The Marian Reaction in its relation to the English Clergy*, p. 24 (London, 1896).

Bishop Bird, of Chester, who was deprived March 20, 1554, repudiated his wife, became vicar of Dunmow, and then suffragan of Bishop Bonner, of London.—*Ibid.* p. 23.

³ Burnet II. Append. 260.

⁴ Bishop Poynette wrote a book entitled "An Apologie on the Godly Marriage of Priestes," in rejoinder to Martin's "Traictise declaryng and plainly prouyng that the pretensed marriage of priestes and professed persones is no marriage,"

likely to shrink from the thorough prosecution of the work which they had undertaken.

When the Convocation assembled in this year, it was therefore to be expected that only orthodox opinions would find expression. Accordingly, the Lower House presented to the bishops an humble petition praying for the restoration of the old usages, among the points of which are requests that married priests be forcibly separated from their wives, and that those who endeavour to abandon their order be subjected to special animadversion. This clause shows that many unfortunates preferred to give up their positions and lose the means of livelihood, rather than quit the wives to whom they had sworn fidelity, demanding, as we shall see, much subsequent conflicting legislation. The social complications resulting from the change of religion are also indicated in the request that married nuns may be divorced, and that the pretended wives of priests have full liberty to marry again.

Everything being thus prepared, the purification of the Church from married heretics was prosecuted with vigour. Archbishop Parker states that there were in England some 16,000 clergymen, of whom 12,000 were deprived on this account, many of them most summarily; some on common report, without trial, others without being summoned to appear before their judges, and others again while lying in jail for not obeying the summons. Some renounced their wives, and were yet deprived, while those who were deprived were also, as we have seen, forced to part with their wives. We can readily believe that the most ordinary forms of justice were set aside, in view of the illegal and indecorous haste of the proceedings against the married bishops described above, but Parker's estimate of the

which was a reply to Poyette's previous work. Bale also issued a bitter attack on Bonner's Articles (Cardwell's Documentary Annals, I. 135), and Dr. Parker, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, published a voluminous rejoinder to Martin.

¹ Wilkins IV. 96-7.

number of sufferers is greatly exaggerated. According to the latest investigator, Mr. Frere, the number of beneficed clergy deprived in London was 150, to whom perhaps about half as many unbeneficed may be added. At Canterbury, where the records seem complete, the number was 68 ; in Norfolk, 343. The registers elsewhere are mostly too imperfect to allow of satisfactory estimates, but the general conclusion is drawn that throughout the kingdom about one in every five or six beneficed priests was deprived, substantially all for marriage, and of these a certain proportion succeeded in being reconciled and restored.¹ It is probable, therefore, that the list throughout England would not exceed three thousand ; but this is sufficient to indicate that the privilege of wedlock had been embraced with considerable eagerness.

The proceedings in the case of John Turner, rector of St. Leonard's, London, would seem to show that the extremity of humiliation was inflicted on these unfortunates. Cited on March 16 to answer to the charge of being a married man, he confessed the accusation, and we find him on March 19 condemned to lose his benefice and be suspended from all priestly functions, to be divorced from his wife, and to undergo such further punishment as the canons required. The sentence of divorce soon followed, and on May 14 he was obliged to do penance in his late church in Eastcheap, holding a lighted candle in his hand and solemnly declaring to the assembled congregation —“ Good people, I am come hither, at this present time,

¹ Burnet II. 276 ; III. 225-6.—Frere, *op. cit.*, pp. 47, 49, 53, 77, 78.

A specimen of the form of restitution subscribed by those who were restored on profession of amendment and repentance has been preserved : “Whereas . . . I the said Robert do now lament and bewail my life past, and the offence by me committed ; intending firmly by God's grace hereafter to lead a pure, chaste, and continent life . . . and do here before my competent judge and ordinary most humbly require absolution of and from all such censures and pains of the laws as by my said offence and ungodly behaviour I have incurred and deserved : promising firmly . . . never to return to the said Agnes Staunton as to my wife or concubine,” &c.—(Wilkins IV. 104.)

to declare unto you my sorrowful and penitent heart, for that, being a priest, I have presumed to marry one Amy German, widow ; and, under pretence of that matrimony, contrary to the canons and custom of the Universal Church, have kept her as my wife, and lived contrary to the canons and ordinances of the Church, and to the evil example of good Christian people ; whereby now, being ashamed of my former wicked living here, I ask Almighty God mercy and forgiveness, and the whole Church, and am sorry and penitent even from the bottom of my heart therefor. And in token hereof, I am here, as you see, to declare and show unto you my repentance : that before God, on the latter day, you may testify with me of the same. And I most heartily and humbly pray and desire you all, whom by this evil example doing I have greatly offended, that for your part you will forgive me, and remember me in your prayers, that God may give me grace, that hereafter I may live a continent life, according to His laws and the godly ordinances of our mother the holy Catholic Church, through and by His grace. And do here, before you all, openly promise for to do during my life.”¹ Such scenes as these were well calculated to produce the effect desired upon the people, but we can only guess at the terrorism which was requisite to force educated and respectable men to submit to such degradation.

All this was done by the royal authority wielding the ecclesiastical power usurped by Henry VIII. Strictly speaking, it was highly irregular and uncanonical, but as the papal supremacy was yet in abeyance, it could not be accomplished otherwise. At last, however, the kingdom was ripe for reconciliation with Rome. In calling the Parliament of 1554, the Queen issued a circular letter to

¹ Strype's Memorials of Cranmer, Bk. III. chap. 8.—Nov. 14, 1554, we find a record of four priests doing penance in white shirts and holding candles at Paul's Cross, London, while Harpsfield preached a sermon.—Strype's Eccles. Memor. III. 203.

the sheriffs commanding them to admonish the people to return members "of the wise, grave, and Catholic sort."¹ Her wishes were fulfilled, and ere the year was out Cardinal Pole was installed with full legatine powers, and Julius III. had issued his bull of indulgence, reuniting England to the Church from which she had been violently severed. An obedient Parliament lost no time in repealing all statutes adverse to the claims of the Holy See, but its subserviency had limits, and one class largely interested in the reforms of Henry had sufficient influence to maintain its heretical rights. The Church lands granted or sold to laymen were not restored. Indeed, the Queen, in her call for the Parliament, had felt it necessary to contradict the rumour that she and Philip intended the "alteration of any particular man's possessions." Though the transactions by which they had been acquired were wholly illegal, though no duration of possession could bar the imprescriptible rights of the Church, yet the nobles and country gentlemen enriched by the spoliation were too numerous and powerful, and the reclamation of the kingdom was too important, to incur any peril by unseasonably insisting on reparation for Henry's injustice. The abbatial manors and rich priories, the chantries, hospitals, and colleges, were therefore left in the impious hands of those who had been fortunate enough to secure them,³ and the miserable remnants of the religious orders were left to the conscience of the Queen, who made haste to get rid of

¹ Parl. Hist. I. 616.

² The bull is dated 24 December, 1554 (Wilkins IV. 111).—Parliament repealed the attainder of Cardinal Pole, November 22, and on the 24th he arrived in London as legate (Burnet II. 261–2).

³ 1 and 2 Phil. and Mary c. 8 (Parl. Hist. I. 624). The title of the bill shows that, though the Parliament was almost exclusively Catholic, it was disposed to make its obedience to Rome the price for obtaining confirmation of the abbey lands—"A Bill for repealing all statutes, articles, and provisoes made against the See Apostolique of Rome, since the 20th of Henry VIII., and for the establishment of all spiritual and ecclesiastical possessions and hereditaments conveyed to the laity."

such fragments of the spoil as had been retained by the Crown.¹

Whatever tacit understanding there may have been on this delicate subject between Queen Mary and Pope Julius was not assented to by the imperious Caraffa, who shortly afterwards ascended the chair of St. Peter. Elected 23 May, 1555, he lost no time in proclaiming the imprescriptible rights of the Church, and by his bull "in-junctum nobis," issued June 21, he pronounced null and void "de apostolicæ potestatis plenitudine" all transactions by which ecclesiastical possessions had passed into the hands of laymen, who were duly threatened with excommunication for prolonged attempts to hold their unhallowed acquisitions.² The effort of course was fruitless, but the spirit in which the English Protestants watched the apparent opening of a breach between England and Rome is well expressed in a letter of 23 August, 1555, from Sir Richard Morrison to Henry Bullinger: "This anti-Paul, Paul of the apostasy, the servant of the devil, this anti-christ newly created at Rome, thinks it but a very small plunder that is offered to him, that he is again permitted in England to tyrannise over our consciences, unless the revenues be restored to the monasteries, that is, the pigsties; the patrimony, as he calls it, of the souls that are now serving in the filth of purgatory. Our ambassadors, who went to Rome for the purpose of bringing back the wolf upon the sheep of Christ, are now with the Emperor, and bring us these demands of the chief pontiff: God grant that he may urge them in every possible way."³ The hopes of the reformers, however, were disappointed, for Paul IV. gave way, and on the reassembling of Parliament, 23 October, 1555, a bull was read by which the

¹ 2 and 3 Phil. and Mary, c. 4 (Parl. Hist. pp. 626-8).

² Mag. Bull. Roman. T. I. p. 809.

³ Original Letters, Parker Soc. Pub. p. 149.

Pope assented to the arrangement agreed to by Cardinal Pole, confirming the Church lands to their new possessors.¹

Cardinal Pole, indeed, was not remiss in giving the sanction of the papal authority to all that had been done. Convoaking a synod, he issued in 1555 his Legatine Constitutions, by which all marriages of those included in the prohibited orders were declared null and void. Such apostates were ordered to be separated by ecclesiastical censures and by whatever legal processes might be required; all who dared to justify such marriages or to remain obstinately in their unholy bonds were to be prosecuted rigorously and punished according to the ancient canons, which were revived and declared to be in full force in order to prevent similar scandals for the future.² As the Queen by special warrant had decreed that all canons adopted by synods should have the full effect of laws binding on the clergy, these constitutions at once restored matters to their pristine condition. It was doubtless in order to mark in the most conspicuous manner his detestation of clerical marriage that Pole descended to the pettiness of ordering the body of Peter Martyr's wife to be dug up from its resting-place, near the tomb of St. Frideswide in Christ's Church, Oxford, and to be buried in a dung-hill.³

It was easy to pass decrees; it was doubtless gratifying to eject married priests by the thousand and to grant their livings to hungry reactionaries or to the crowd of needy

¹ Parl Hist. I. 626; II. 342.

² Card. Poli Constit. Legat. Decret. v. (Wilkins IV. 800).

³ Strype's Parker, Book II. chap. vi. In 1561 the remains were exhumed from the stables of Dr. Marshall, the previous dean of Christ's Church, and reburied in the church, the precaution being taken of mingling them with the bones of St. Frideswide, so as to prevent any future profanation in case of another revolution of religion. The affair excited considerable attention at the time, and produced the following epigram:

"Femineum sexum Romani semper amarunt :
Projiciunt corpus cur muliebre foras ?
Hoc si tu quæras, facilis responsio danda est :
Corpora non curant mortua, viva petunt."

Churchmen whom Italy had ever ready to supply the spiritual wants and collect the tithes of the faithful. All this was readily accomplished, but the difficulty lay in overcoming the eternal instincts of human nature. The struggle to effect this commenced at once.

It was, indeed, hardly to be expected that those who had entered into matrimony with the full conviction of its sanctity would willingly abandon all intercourse with their wives, although they might yield a forced assent to the pressure of the laws, the prospect of poverty, and the certainty of infamous punishment. Accordingly, we find that the necessity at once arose of watching the "reconciled" priests, who continued to do in secret what they could no longer practise openly. Some, indeed, found the restrictions so onerous that they endeavoured to release themselves from the bonds of the Church rather than to submit longer to the separation from their wives; and this apparently threatened so great a dearth in the ranks of the clergy that Cardinal Pole, as Archbishop of Canterbury, in 1556 forbade the withdrawal of any one from the mysteries and functions of the altar, under pain of the law.¹

Notwithstanding all this legislation, royal, parliamentary, and ecclesiastical, the question refused to settle itself, and the Convocation which assembled on the 1st of January, 1557 was obliged to publish an elaborate series of articles, which demonstrated that previous enactments had either not been properly observed, or that they had failed in effecting their purpose. Thus the prohibition of marriage to those in priests' orders was formally renewed. Such of the married clergy, who had undergone penance and had been restored, as still persisted in holding inter-

¹ "That none of those priests that were, under the pretence of lawfull matrimony, married, and now reconciled, do privilie resorte to their pretended wives, or suffer the same to resort unto them. And that those priests do in no wise henceforth withdrawe themselves from the mynisterie and office of priesthodde under the paine of the lawes"—Pole's Injunctions in Diocese of Gloucester (Wilkins IV. 146).

course with their separated wives, were to be deprived irrevocably of their office, and only to be admitted to lay communion—thus reversing the policy of Cardinal Pole's injunctions. As all priests who had been married were obnoxious to the people, they were to be removed from the priesthood; or at least, on account of the scarcity of ministers, to act only as curates, and to be incapable of holding benefices until a proper course of penance should have washed away their sins. Even then, in no case were they to officiate in the dioceses wherein they had been married, but were to be removed to a distance of at least sixty miles; and if detected in any intercourse with their wives, they were to incur severe punishment, a single interchange of words being sufficient to call down the penalty. To ensure the observance of these rules, all synods were directed to make special inquiry into the lives of these unfortunates, who were thus to exist under a perpetual surveillance, at the mercy of inimical spies and informers.¹ This may, perhaps, be considered a moderate expiation for men who, in those days of fierce religious convictions, possessed that flexibility of faith which enabled them to change their belief with every dynastic accident.

If the rigid rules now introduced were successful in nothing else, they at all events succeeded in restoring the old troubles with the old canons. Denied the lawful gratification of human instincts, the clergy immediately returned to the habits which had acquired for them so much odium in times past, and the rulers of the Church at once found themselves embarked in the sempiternal struggle with immorality in all its shapes and disguises.

¹ Wilkins IV. 157. Thus in the visitation of the diocese of Lincoln, the vicar of Spaldwick was presented for scandalising his flock by carrying in his arms his child by a wife from whom he had been separated. At the same time a priest of Caisho named Nix was subjected to penance for consorting with his former wife, but was permitted to resume his functions.—Strype's *Eccles. Memor.* III. 293.

If the scandalous chronicles of the period be worthy of credit, neither Gardiner nor Bonner, nor other active promoters of the canons, were without the visible evidences of the frailty of the flesh;¹ and though they were above the reach of correction, the minor clergy were not so fortunate. The Convocation of 1557, which issued the stringent regulations just quoted, was also obliged to promulgate articles concerning the residence of women with priests, and the punishment of licentiousness, similar to those which we have seen reproduced so regularly for ten centuries. Cardinal Pole, too, in his visitation of the same year, directed inquiries to be made on these points in a manner which shows that they were existing and not merely anticipated evils.²

Fortunately for the character of the Anglican clergy, the reign of reaction was short. On 17 November, 1558, Queen Mary closed her unhappy life, and Cardinal Pole followed her within sixteen hours. The Marian persecution had been long enough and sharp enough to give to heresy all the attractions of martyrdom, thus increasing its fervour and enlarging its circle of earnest disciples; and the sudden termination of that persecution, before it had time to accomplish its work of extirpation, left the reformers more zealous and dangerous than ever. Heresy had likewise been favoured by the discontent of the people arising from the disastrous and expensive war with France, which aided the improvident restoration of the Church lands in impoverishing the exchequer and in rendering necessary heavy subsidies from the nation, repaid only by cruelty and misfortune. Dread of Spanish influence also had a firm hold of the imagination of the masses, while the Church itself was especially unpopular, as the

¹ Strype's *Eccles. Memor.* III. 111-12.

² Wilkins IV. 169.

conviction was general that the ill-success of Mary's administration was attributable to the control exercised by ecclesiastics over the public affairs. Under such auspices the royal power passed into the hands of a princess who, though by nature leaning to the Catholic faith and disposed to tread in the footsteps of her father, was yet placed by the circumstances of her birth in implacable hostility to Rome, and who held her throne only on the tenure of waging eternal warfare with reaction. The reformers felt that the doom of Catholicism was sealed. Emerging from their hiding-places and hastening back from exile, the religious refugees proceeded at once to practise the rites of Edward VI. Elizabeth, however, after ordering some changes in the Roman observances, forbade, on December 27, all further innovations until the meeting of Parliament, which was convoked for 23 January, 1559.

Parliament assembled on the appointed day, and sat until May 8. It at once passed Acts resuming the ecclesiastical crown lands and restoring the royal supremacy in ecclesiastical matters, and it repealed all of Mary's legislation concerning the power of the papacy. Several other bills were adopted modifying the religion of the kingdom, with a view of discovering some middle term which should unite the people in a common form of belief and worship.¹ Anxious to avoid all extremes, it negatived the measures introduced by the ardent friends of the Reformation, and among the unsuccessful attempts was one which proposed to restore all priests who had been deprived on account of marriage. This, indeed, was laid aside by the special command of the Queen herself.²

The question of clerical marriage was thus left in a most perplexed and unsatisfactory condition. The Six Articles

¹ 1 Eliz. c. 1, 2, 4 (Parl. Hist. I. 646-76).

² Burnet, II. 386-95.

had been repealed by Edward VI., and had been virtually revived by Mary; but Mary's efforts had been to restore the independent jurisdiction of the Church, and she had therefore not continued to regard the Six Articles as in force, the canons of synods and the legatine constitutions of Pole being the law of her ecclesiastical establishment. This was now all swept away; a statute to fill the void was refused, and men were left to draw their own deductions and act at their own peril. Elizabeth refused the sanction of law to sacerdotal marriage, and would not restore the deprived priests, yet she did not enforce any prohibitory regulations, and even promoted many married men. Dr. Parker, the religious adviser of Ann Boleyn, who had left him in charge of her daughter's spiritual education, was married, and one of Elizabeth's earliest acts was to nominate him for the vacant primacy of Canterbury, which after long resistance he was forced to accept. The uncertainty of the situation and the anxiety of those interested are well illustrated by a letter to Dr. Parker, dated April 30, just before the rising of Parliament, from Dr. Sandys, afterwards Bishop of Worcester: "The bill is in hand to restore men to their livings; how it will speed I know not . . . Nihil est statutum de conjugio sacerdotum, sed tanquam relictum in medio. Lever was married now of late. The Queen's majesty will wink at it, but not stablish it by law, which is nothing else but to bastard our children."¹ In this Dr. Sandys spoke

¹ Parker's Correspondence, p. 66.—Sanders does not fail to make the most of this refusal to legalise priestly marriage by Act of Parliament, and of the hesitation which rendered the final decision a mere toleration and not an approval. "Clerus enim in Anglia novus, partim ex apostatis nostris, partim ex hominibus mere laicis factus, ut est valde spiritualis, primo quoque tempore de nuptiis cogitabat; multumque satagit, ut conjugia Episcoporum Canonicorum et cæterorum ministrorum legibus approbarentur; sed obtineri non potuit, quia vel turpe videbatur ministerio, vel reipublicæ perniciosum. Edovardus quidem sextus omnes canonicas et humanas prohibitiones circa clericorum aut etiam religiosorum connubia lege comitiali seu parlamentaria sustulerat; eam legem mox abrogavit Maria, nunc restituendam ac renovandam clamitant isti, sed non exaudiuntur: omnes tamen per totum fere regnum quia de dono [castitatis] (ut loquuntur) non sunt certi

nothing but truth, and those who were married were obliged formally to have their children legitimated, as even Dr. Parker found it necessary to do this in the case of his son Matthew.¹

At length Elizabeth made up her mind, and in the exercise of her royal supremacy she asked for no Act of Parliament to confirm her decree. Archbishop Parker has the credit of being the most efficient agent in overcoming her repugnance to the measure, and the ungracious manner in which she finally accorded the permission shows how strong were the prejudices which he had to encounter. In June 1559 she issued a series of "Injunctions to the Clergy and Laity" which restored the national religion to nearly the same position as that adopted by Edward VI., and it is curious to observe that when she comes to speak of sacerdotal matrimony she carefully avoids the responsibility of sanctioning it herself, but assumes that the law of Edward is still in force. All that she does, therefore, is to surround it with such limitations and restrictions as shall prevent its abuse, and although this form had perhaps the advantage of establishing the legality of all pre-existing marriages, yet the regulations promulgated were degrading in the highest degree, and the reason assigned for permitting it could only be regarded as affixing a stigma on every pastor who confessed the weakness of his flesh by seeking a wife.²

non secundum leges, sed secundum indulgentiam; vel (ut illi dicunt) secundum scripturas, sed ad libidinem suam compositas, ineunt prima, secunda, vel etiam tertia conjugia, contra canones et morem non solum Latinorum sed etiam Græcorum; et prole ita abundant, ut ad illam sustentandam opibusque augendam, et populus supra modum gravetur, et ipsi misere beneficia sua exipient."—(De Schismate Anglicano, Lib. III. Ingoldstati, 1586, p. 299.)

¹ Strype's Annals, I. 81.

² Royal Injunctions of 1559, Art. XXXIX. "Although there be no prohibition by the word of God, nor any example of the primitive Church, but that the priests and ministers of the Church may lawfully, for the avoiding of fornication, have an honest and sober wife, and that for the same purpose the same was by Act of Parliament in the time of our dear brother King Edward the Sixth made lawful, whereupon a great number of the clergy of this realm were married and so continue; yet, because

From the temper of these regulations it is manifest that if Elizabeth yielded to the advice of her counsellors and to the pressure of the times, she did not give up her private convictions or prejudices, and that she desired to make the marriage of her clergy as unpopular and disagreeable as possible. It was probably for the purpose of meeting her objections that the order for a return of the clergy, issued by Archbishop Parker, 1 October, 1561, contained in the blanks issued the unusual entry classifying them as married or unmarried,¹ and Strype informs us that in the Archdeaconry of London the returns show the ministry for the most part to have been filled with married men.² Even the haughty spirit of the Tudor thus could not restrain the progress which had now fairly set in. Those around her who controlled the public affairs were all committed to the Reformation, and were resolved that every point gained should be made secure. When,

there hath grown offence and some slander to the Church, by lack of discreet and sober behaviour in many ministers of the Church, both in chusing of their wives and indiscreet living with them, the remedy whereof is necessary to be sought; it is thought therefore very necessary that no manner of priest or deacon shall hereafter take to his wife any manner of woman without the advice and allowance first had upon good examination by the bishop of the same diocese and two justices of the peace of the same shire dwelling next to the place where the same woman hath made her most abode before her marriage; nor without the goodwill of the parents of the said woman if she have any living, or two of the next of her kinsfolks, or for lack of the knowledge of such, of her master or mistress where she serveth. And before she shall be contracted in any place, he shall make a good and certain proof thereof to the minister or to the congregation assembled for that purpose, which shall be upon some holyday where divers may be present. And if any shall do otherwise, that then they shall not be permitted to minister either the word or the sacraments of the Church, nor shall be capable of any ecclesiastical benefice. And for the marriages of any bishops, the same shall be allowed and approved by the metropolitan of the province and also by such commissioners as the Queen's Majesty thereunto shall appoint. And if any master or dean or any head of any college shall purpose to marry, the same shall not be allowed but by such to whom the visitation of the same doth properly belong, who shall in any wise provide that the same turn not to the hindrance of their house."—(Wilkins IV. 186.)

See also a letter of Theodore Beza, Zurich Letters, p. 247 (Parker Soc. Publications).

¹ Cardwell's Documentary Annals, I. 309.

² Strype's Parker, Book II. chap. v.—In 1569 the returns for the Archdeaconry of Canterbury show 135 married clergymen to 34 licensed preachers, and there is no mention of any unmarried men (Ibid. III. xxiv.).

therefore, in 1563, there was published a recension of the Forty-two Articles issued by Edward VI. in 1552, resulting in the well-known Thirty-nine Articles of the Church of England, care was taken that the one relating to the liberty of marriage should be made more emphatic than before. Not content with the simple proposition of the original that "Bishops, priests, and deacons are not commanded by God's law either to vow the estate of a single life, or to abstain from marriage," the emphatic corollary was added, "Therefore it is lawful for them as for all other Christian men to marry at their own discretion, as they shall judge the same to serve better to godliness"¹—such as we find it preserved to the present day. This specific declaration in a special article marks the necessity which was felt to place the matter beyond controversy, as a rule of practice. The articles on justification and works of supererogation (Arts xi. and xix.) would have sufficed, so far as principle was concerned.

This was not an empty form. Not only the right to marry at their own discretion, thus expressly declared, did much to relieve them from the degrading conditions laid down by the Queen, but the revival and strengthening of the article marked a victory gained over the reaction. When in 1559 the Queen appointed a commission to visit all the churches of England and enforce compliance with the order of things then existing, the articles prepared for its guidance enjoin no investigation into opinions respecting priestly marriage, showing that to be an open question, concerning which every man might hold his private belief.² After the adoption of the Thirty-nine Articles, however, this latitude was no longer allowed. In

¹ In the English version, as given by Burnet (Vol. II. Append. 217), there are 42 articles, of which this is the 31st. In the Latin edition (Wilkins IV. 236), there are but 39 articles, this being the 32nd, which is the arrangement according to the standard of the Anglican Church.

² Wilkins IV. 189-91.—This commission was the commencement of the Court of High Commission, which played so lamentable a part in the troubles of the succeeding

1567 Archbishop Parker's articles of instruction for the visitation of that year enumerate, among the heretical doctrines to be inquired after, the assertion that the Word of God commands abstinence from marriage on the part of ministers of the Church.¹ As we shall see, it was about the same time that the Council of Trent likewise erected the question of clerical marriage into a point of belief.

Yet Elizabeth never overcame her repugnance to the marriage of the clergy, nor is it, perhaps, to be wondered at when we consider the contempt in which she held the Church of which she was the head,² and her general aversion from sanctioning in others the matrimony which she was herself always toying with and never contracting. When she made her favourites of both sexes suffer for any legalised indiscretions of the kind, it is scarcely surprising that she always looked with disfavour on those of the clergy who availed themselves of the privilege which circumstances had extorted from her, and which she would fain have withheld. When Archbishop Parker ventured to remonstrate with her on her popish tendencies, she sharply told him that "she repented of having made any married bishops." This was a cutting rejoinder, but even more pointed was the insolence from which his life-long services could not protect his wife. The first time the Queen visited the archiepiscopal palace, on her departure she turned to thank Mrs. Parker: "And you—madam I may not call you, mistress I am ashamed to call you, so I reigns. The result of its visitation in 1559 shows how little real conviction existed among the clergy who had been exposed to the capricious persecutions of alternating rulers. Out of 9400 beneficiaries in England under Mary, but 14 bishops, 6 abbots, 12 deans, 12 archdeacons, 15 heads of colleges, 50 prebendaries, and 80 rectors of parishes had abandoned their preferment on account of Protestantism (Burnet Vol. II. Append. 217), and of these it is fair to assume that the higher dignitaries at least had not been allowed to retain their positions.

¹ Wilkins IV. 253.—Strype's Parker, App. liii.

² In 1576 she declared to Grindal, then Archbishop of Canterbury, "that it was good for the Church to have few preachers, and that three or four might suffice for a county; and that the reading of the Homilies to the people was enough."—Strype's Life of Grindal, p. 221.—See also Strype's Parker, Book II. chap. xx.

know not what to call you—but, howsoever, I thank you.”¹ So, in Ipswich, in August 1561, she found great fault with the marriage of the clergy, and especially with the number of wives and children in cathedrals and colleges—a feeling possibly justified by occasional disorders not unlikely to occur. In 1563 we find Sir John Bourne complaining to the Privy Council that the Dean and Chapter of Worcester had broken up the large organ, the pride of the cathedral, which had cost £200; the metal pipes whereof were melted into dishes and divided among the wives of the prebendaries, and the case used to make bedsteads for them; the copes and ornaments, he added, would likewise have been distributed had not some of the unmarried men prevented it, “and as by their Habit and Apparel you might know the Priests wives, and by their Gate in the Market and the Streets from an hundred other Women: so in the Congregation and Cathedral Church they were easy to be known by placing themselves above all other of the most ancient and honest Calling of the said City.”² There was no lack of persons to pour such stories into the Queen’s ear, and, with her well-known tendencies, it is no wonder that her counsellors found it difficult to restrain her to the simple order which she issued from Ipswich, declaring “that no manner of person, being either the head or member of any college or cathedral church within this realm, shall, from the time of the notification hereof in the same college, have, or be permitted to have, within the precinct of any such college, his wife, or other woman, to abide and dwell in the same, or to frequent and haunt any lodging within the same college, upon pain that whosoever shall do to the contrary shall forfeit all ecclesiastical promotions in any cathedral or collegiate church within the realm.” Burghley, in sending this royal mandate to

¹ Strickland, *Life of Queen Elizabeth*, chap. iv.

² Strype’s *Annals*, I. 364–5.

Parker, remarks, "Her Majesty continueth very evil affected to the state of matrimony in the clergy. And if [I] were not therein very stiff, her Majesty would openly and utterly condemn and forbid it. In the end, for her satisfaction, this injunction now sent to your Grace is devised. The good order thereof shall do no harm. I have devised to send it in this sort to your Grace for your province; and to the Archbishop of York for his; so as it shall not be promulgated to be popular."¹ It is doubtless to this occurrence that we may attribute the last relic of clerical celibacy enforced among Protestants, that of the fellows of the English universities.

This injunction of Queen Elizabeth caused no little excitement. Though Burghley had prudently endeavoured to prevent its becoming "popular," yet Cox, Bishop of Ely, in remonstrating against its cruelty to those whom it affected in his cathedral seat, shows that it was speedily known to all men, and that it gave exceeding comfort to the reactionaries: "What rejoicing and jeering the adversaries make! How the godly ministers are discouraged, I will pass over."² In the universities, where crowds of young men were collected, there might be some colourable excuse for the regulation, but in the splendid and spacious buildings connected with the cathedrals some milder remedy might easily have been found, and the mandate was particularly unpalatable to married bishops, Parker himself, who was individually interested in the matter, made a personal appeal to the Queen, the result of which was to wound him deeply, as well as to show him how extreme were her prejudices on the subject. He pours forth his feelings in a letter to Burghley describing the interview: "I was in an horror to hear such words to come from her mild nature and Christianly learned con-

¹ Parker's Correspondence, pp. 146-8.

² Ibid. p. 152.

science, as she spake of God's holy ordinance and institution of matrimony. I marvel that our states in that behalf cannot please her Highness, which we doubt nothing at all to please God's sacred Majesty." He deplores the effect which it must produce on the people: "We alone of our time openly brought in hatred, shamed and traduced before the malicious and ignorant people, as beasts without knowledge to Godward, in using this liberty of his word, as men of effrenate intemperency, without discretion or any godly disposition worthy to serve in our state. Insomuch that the Queen's Highness expressed to me a repentance that we were thus appointed in office, wishing it had been otherwise." The interview had evidently been stormy, and Parker had been made to feel the full force of Elizabeth's perverseness—"I have neither joy of house, land, or name, so abased by my natural sovereign good lady, for whose service and honour I would not think it cost to spend my life"—and he even goes so far as to threaten resistance: "I would be sorry that the clergy should have cause to show disobedience, with *oportet Deo obedire magis quam hominibus*. And what instillers soever there be, there be enough of this contemned flock which will not shrink to offer their blood to the defence of Christ's verity, if it be either openly impugned or secretly suggilled."¹ Evidently, before Parker could have been driven to such scarcely covered threats, there must have been an intimation by the angry Queen that she would recall the permission to marry, which, in the existing state of the law, she could readily have done.

The same spirit which rendered the marriage of a pastor dependent on the approbation of the neighbouring squires caused the retention of ancient rules, which prove the profound distrust still entertained as to the discretion and morality of the clergy, and the difficulty with which

¹ Parker's Correspondence, pp. 156-8.

the Anglican Church threw off the traditions of Catholicism. Thus, even in 1571, Grindal, Archbishop of York, promulgates a modification of the canon of Nicæa, forbidding the residence with unmarried ministers of women under the age of sixty, except relatives closely connected by blood.¹ Indeed, in some remote corners of the kingdom the old licence was kept up. Archbishop Parker, about the year 1565, in speaking of the diocese of Bangor, states : " I hear that diocese to be much out of order, both having no preaching there and pensionary concubinary openly continued, notwithstanding liberty of marriage granted."² It evidently required time to accustom the clergy to the substitution of the new privileges for the old.

Although sacerdotal marriage was now fully sanctioned by the organic canon law of the Church, yet it was still exposed to serious impediments of a worldly character. When thus frowned upon by her who was in reality, if not in name, supreme head of the Church ; when the wife of the primate himself could be exposed to such indelible impertinence ; when the marriage of every unfortunate parson was subjected to degrading conditions, and when it was assumed that his bride must be a woman at service, the influences affecting the matrimonial alliances of the clergy must have been of the worst description. The higher classes of society would naturally model their opinions on those of the sovereign, while the lower orders had not as yet shaken off the prejudices in favour of celibacy implanted in them by the custom of centuries. Making due allowance for polemical bitterness, there is therefore no doubt much truth in the sarcastic account which Sanders gives of the wives of the Elizabethan clergy. Taking advantage of the refusal of Parliament to formally legalise such marriages—a refusal which could not but

¹ Wilkins IV. 269.

² Parker's Correspondence, p. 259.

greatly affect the minds of the people—he assumes that the wives were concubines and the children illegitimate in the eyes of the law ; consequently decent women refused to undergo the obloquy attached to a union with a minister of the Church, who was therefore forced to take as his spouse any one who would consent to accept him. The wives of prelates were ostracised ; not received at court, and sharing in no way the dignities of their husbands, they were kept closely at home for the mere gratification of animal passion. The members of universities had been wholly unsuccessful in their efforts to obtain the same licence, which was only granted to the heads of colleges, under condition that their wives should reside elsewhere, and should rarely pollute with their presence the learned precincts.¹

¹ Qui autem istis darent filias suas, ne protestantes quidem fere inveniebantur, nedum Catholicici : primum quia existimant id esse per se infame, ut sint vel dicantur uxores presbyterorum. Secundo, quia juxta leges regni non sunt adhuc vera sed adulterina conjugia, ac proinde proles illegitima. Tertio quia non accrescit his uxoribus aut liberis suis ex maritorum loco aut honore in Republica ulla dignitas aut existimatio, quod est contra naturam veri matrimonii. Non enim Archiepiscopus, Episcopus, aliusve hodie prælatus in Anglia si sit conjugatus, tribuit quicquam ex eo honoris vel præeinentia uxori suæ, non magis quam si esset ejus tantum concubina. Hinc sit ut nec eas Elizabetha in aulam, nec principum uxores in consortium ullo modo admittant, ne Archiepiscoporum quidem vocatas conjuges ; sed debent eas mariti domi continere, pro vasis tantem libidinis aut necessitatis suæ. Quæ istis ergo conditionibus, ve summis prælatis conjungerentur, cum honestiores pauçæ aut nullæ reperiebantur, quas poterant habere accipere fuit necesse. Sed et aliis modis utcumque istorum hominum cupiditati per magistratum civilem impositum est frænnum. Nam et Collegiorum alumni qui in Anglicanis universitatibus admodum multi erant, otioque ac saturitate panis abundabant, ac admodum proveci ætate erant, cupiebant et ipsi habere uxores ; sed videbatur inconveniens, et id privilegii Collegiorum tantum Rectoribus concessum est, cum hac tamen exceptione, ut conjuges seorsim plerunque extra Collegia constituant, rariusque eas intromittant.—De Schismate Anglicano Lib. III. (Ingoldstat. 1586, p. 300.)

See also Florimund. Raemund. *Histor. Memor. Lib. vi. cap. xii.*

Of course, much allowance must be made for the statements of so keen a partisan as Sanders, and one who had suffered so much from those whom he satirised ; yet he was a man of too much shrewdness to make statements which his contemporaries could recognise as entirely destitute of foundation.

Even to this day the position of the wives of the Anglican prelates is made a subject of ridicule by Catholic polemics. A recent Italian tract entitled “*Il Celibato del sacerdozio Cattolico*” remarks : “*Osservate piuttosto le mogli de’ vescovi e degli arcivescovi Anglicani, tenute esse in conto di concubine non hanno posto alcuno nella civile società.*” —Panzini, *Confessione di un Prigioniero*, p. 472.

The accuracy of this sarcastic description is confirmed by a statement made by Percival Wiburn for the benefit of his friends in Zurich, subsequent to the adoption of the Thirty-nine Articles. He asserts that "The marriage of priests was counted unlawful in the times of Queen Mary, and was also forbidden by a public statute of the realm, which is also in force at this day; although by permission of Queen Elizabeth clergymen may have their wives, provided only they marry by the advice and assent of the bishop and two justices of the peace, as they call them. The lords bishops are forbidden to have their wives with them in their palaces; as are also the deans, canons, presbyters, and other ministers of the Church, within colleges, or the precincts of cathedral churches."¹ It is not a little curious, indeed, to observe that, in spite of the formal declaration in the Thirty-nine Articles, the absence of a special Act of Parliament long caused the question to remain a doubtful one in the public mind. As late as July 1566, Lawrence Humphrey and Thomas Sampson, two zealous Protestants, in denouncing "some straws and chips of the popish religion" which still defaced the Anglican Church, state that "the marriage of the clergy is now allowed and sanctioned by the public laws of the kingdom, but their children are by some persons regarded as illegitimate"; in answer to which, Bishops Grindal and Horn rejoined that "the wives of the clergy are not separated from their husbands, and their marriage is esteemed honourable by all, the papists always excepted."² The matter evidently was still regarded as a subject of controversy, not yet decided beyond appeal; and the experience of the previous quarter of a century had accustomed men to too many vicissitudes for them to feel

Zurich Letters, Second Series, p. 359 (Parker Society, 1845). Wiburn was deprived for non-conformity in 1564, so that this must have been written subsequently (Strype's Life of Grindal, p. 98).

² Zurich Letters, First Series, pp. 164, 179.

safe with so slender a guarantee as the Articles afforded. The Catholics still constituted a very large proportion of the population, and they scarcely concealed their feelings towards the innovation. When Sir John Bourne quarrelled with Dr. Sandys, Bishop of Worcester, among the formal articles of accusation which he presented to the Privy Council was the assertion that the Bishop in a sermon had ridiculed celibacy and had decried the virtue of unmarried priests.¹ The knight apparently believed that this would be damaging to the bishop, and the latter seems likewise to have thought so, for in his answer he emphatically denied it, retorting that his adversary was a papist who had Mass celebrated in his house and who was in the habit of applying the most opprobrious epithets to the wives of priests.² So when in 1569 the Catholics of the North rose in insurrection under the Earls of Westmoreland and Northumberland, one of the grievances of which they complained was the marriage of the ministers of Christ.³ During the whole of this transition period the question was evidently one which occupied largely the public mind, and in the diversity of opinion it was not easy to see what the ultimate

1 "That, concerning Virginitie and the Single Life, he handled the case so finely that to his thinking, if he should have believed him, he could not find three good Virgins since Christ's time. And that so he left the Matter with an Exhortation to all to Mary, Mary. Further, That he said in that Sermon that single-living Men, that is to say unmarried, and especially unmarried priests, lived naught. And that there in that City were lately presented five or six unmarried priests that kept five or six whores apiece; though there were not above four unmarried priests in the City in all."—Strype's Annals, I. 349.

2 "Where he alledged that he never called Priests Wives *Whores*, it is untrue. For three Women going through his Park, wherein is a path for footmen, he supposing they had been Priests Wives called unto them, *Ye shall not come through my Park and no such Priests Whores.*"—Ibid. p. 358.

3 See a tract published against the rebels, attributed by Strype to Sir Thomas Smith, which ridicules the advocates of celibacy with a vigour reminding us of the Beggars' Petition.—"This is a quarrel wholly like the old Rebels Complaint of Enclosing of Commons. Many of your *Disordered and evil disposed Wives* are much aggrieved that Priests, which were wont to be Common be now made Several. *Hinc illæ lachrymæ.* There is Grief indeed, and Truth it is, and so shall you find it. Few Women storm against the marriage of priests, calling it unlawful and incensing Men against it, but such as have been Priests Harlots or fain would be. Content your Wives yourselves and let Priests have their own."—Strype's Annals, I. 558.

decision might be. When an irrevocable step such as marriage was legal only during the pleasure of a capricious woman, whose assent was known to have been extorted from her, it is no wonder that it should be looked upon with disfavour by all prudent relatives of women inclined to venture on it.

Such a state of feeling could not but react most injuriously on the character of the great body of the clergy. It deprived them of the respect due to their sacred calling, and consequently reduced them to the level of such scant respect as was accorded to them. How long this lasted, and how materially it degraded the ministers of Christ as a body, cannot be questioned by any one who recalls the description of the rural clergy in the brilliant third chapter of Macaulay's *History of England*. In 1686 an author complains that the rector is an object of contempt and ridicule for all above the rank of the neighbouring peasants; that gentle blood would be held polluted by any connection with the Church, and that girls of good family were taught with equal earnestness not to marry clergymen, nor to sacrifice their reputation by amorous indiscretions—two misfortunes which were commonly regarded as equal.¹

Thus eagerly accepted and grudgingly bestowed, the privilege of marriage established itself in the Church of England by connivance rather than as a right; and the evil influences of the prejudices thus fostered were not extinguished for generations.

¹ *A cauidico, medicastra, ipsaque artificum farragine, ecclesiæ rector aut vicarius contemnitur et fit ludibrio. Gentis et familiæ nitor sacris ordinibus pollutus censetur: fœminisque natalitio insignibus unicum inculcatur sæpius præceptum, ne modestiæ naufragium faciant, aut (quod idem auribus tam delicatulis sonat) ne clerico se nuptas dari patiantur.*—T. Wood, *Angliæ Notitia* (Macaulay's *Hist. Engl.* Chap. III.).

Lord Macaulay attributes the degraded position of the clergy to their indigence and want of influence. These causes doubtless had their effect, but the peculiar repugnance towards clerical marriage ascribed to all respectable women had a deeper origin than simply the beggarly stipends attached to the majority of English livings.

CHAPTER XXVII

CALVINISM

IN the easy toleration which preceded the Reformation, Luther's precursor, Jacques Lefèvre d'Étaples, in 1512 published his Commentaries on the Pauline Epistles. The work was a significant portent of the era about to open. For the first time the traditional scholastic exegesis was cast aside for a treatment in which tradition was rejected and independent judgment was exercised as a matter of right. As in so much else, the full import of this was not recognised until the Lutheran revolt showed the necessity of strict adherence to the ancient ways and of shackling human thought with additional rigour. It was not until after Luther's condemnation by the Sorbonne, in 1521, that the Commentaries were censured and twenty-five heretical errors were discovered in them; even then the favour of Francis I. protected their author from the prosecution commenced against him in 1523. Many a hardy thinker had been burnt for less. Lefèvre denied justification by either faith or works, for God alone justifies; religious Orders only awaken pride and imperil Christian love—it would be better that there were none, but, while they exist, monks should work with their hands, as did the apostles; confession and forgiveness of sins were originally mutual between brethren—the modern custom is due to the absence of faith, but Christ may accept it; celibacy in itself is better than marriage, but priests and deacons were permitted to marry until the time of Gregory VII.; the Greek Church has retained

the apostolic custom of marriage, while the other Churches adopted celibacy, whereby many, through incontinence, fall into the snares of the devil.¹

The seed thus scattered fell into fruitful soil, and as early as 1525, Clement VII., in a brief addressed to the Regent Louise of Savoy, enumerates among the "Lutheran" errors spreading through France the stigmatising of the canons enjoining clerical celibacy as Satanic.² By the time when Jean Calvin formulated the system of theology which bears his name, sacerdotal marriage had thus everywhere become recognised as one of the inevitable incidents of the revolt against Rome, and that the French Huguenots should accept it was therefore a matter of course.

Calvin himself manifested his contempt for all the ancient prejudices by marrying, in 1539, Idelette de Bure, the widow of the Anabaptist Jean Stordeur, whom he had converted.³ The Huguenot Confession of Faith was drawn up by him, and was adopted by the first national synod, held at Paris in 1559. Of course the Genevan views of justification swept away all the accumulated observances of sacerdotalism, and ascetic celibacy shared the fate of the rest.⁴ The discipline of the Calvinist

¹ Karl Heinrich Graf, *Jacobus Faber Stapulensis*, pp. 37, 45, 46, 48, 165-7 (Strassburg, 1842).

² Clement PP. VII. *Breve Cum ad nihil* (Isambert. *Anciennes Loix Françaises*, XII. 233).

³ Rahlenbeck, *L'Eglise de Liège*, p. 49. The stern and self-centred soul which won for Idelette the hand of Calvin was unshaken to the last, as may be seen by his curious account of her death-bed, in a letter to Farel (*Calvini Epistolæ*, p. 111. *Genevæ*, 1617). His grief was doubtless sincere, but his friends were able to compliment him on his not allowing domestic affliction to interfere with his customary routine of labour (*Ibid.* p. 116).

⁴ I have not access to the original, but quote the following from Quick's "Synodicon in Gallia Reformata," London, 1692—"Art. XXIV. . . . We do also reject those means which men presumed they had, whereby they might be redeemed before God; for they derogate from the satisfaction of the Death and Passion of Jesus Christ. Finally, We hold Purgatory to be none other than a cheat, which came out of the same shop: from which also proceeded monastical vows, pilgrimages, prohibition of marriage and the use of meats a ceremonious observation of days

Church with regard to the morality of its ministers was necessarily severe. The peculiar purity expected of a pastor's household was shown by the rule which enjoined any Church officer whose wife was convicted of adultery to dismiss her absolutely, under pain of deposition, while laymen, under such circumstances, were exhorted to be reconciled to their guilty partners.¹ Any lapse from virtue on the part of a minister was visited with peremptory deposition;² nor was this a mere idle threat, such as were too many of the innumerable decrees of the Catholic councils quoted above, for the proceedings of various synods show that it was carried sternly into execution. A list of such vagrant and deposed ministers was even kept and published to the churches, with personal descriptions of the individuals, that they might not be able to impose on the unwary. Indeed, the national synod of Lyons, in 1563, went so far as to punish those ministers who brought contempt upon the Church by unfitting marriages;³ and, though this was omitted from the final code of discipline, it shows the exceeding strictness with which the internal economy of the ecclesiastical establishment of the Huguenots was regulated.

The relations of the Catholic Church with its apostates were somewhat confused, and they varied with the political exigencies of the situation. Ecclesiastics who left the Catholic communion did not hesitate to enter into matrimony;⁴ and when the desolation of civil war rendered

auricular confession, indulgences, and all other such matters, by which Grace and Salvation may be supposed to be deserved. Which things we reject, not only for the false opinion of merit which was affixed to them, but also because they are the inventions of men, and are a yoke laid by their sole authority upon conscience" (Quick, I. xi.).—See also the Confession written by Calvin in 1562, to be laid before the Emperor Ferdinand (Calvini Epist. pp. 564–66).

¹ Discip. Chap. XIII. can. xxviii. (Quick, I. iii.)

² Ibid. Chap. I. can. xlvii.

³ Chap. IV. Art. xii., Chap. XVI. Art. xiv. (Quick, I. 32, 38.)

⁴ Prelates of high position were not wanting to the list of married men. Carracioli, Bishop of Troyes, and Spifame, Bishop of Nevers, were of the number. Jean de Monluc, Bishop of Valence (brother of the celebrated Marshal Blaise de

a forced tolerance of the new religion necessary, their position was a source of considerable debate, varying with the fluctuations of the tangled politics of the time. The Edict of Pacification of Amboise, in March 1562, was held by the Huguenots to legalise the marriages of these apostates, but the explanatory declaration of August 1563 ordered their reclamation by the Church under pain of exile. When the Spanish alliance gave fresh assurances of triumph to the Catholics this was enforced with increased severity. The Edict of Roussillon, in 1564, commands that all priests, monks, and nuns who had abandoned their profession and entered into matrimony shall sunder their unhallowed bonds and return to their duties. Recalcitrants were required to leave the kingdom within two months, under pain, in the case of men, of condemnation to the galleys for life, and in that of women, of perpetual imprisonment.¹ As most of the Calvinist ministers necessarily belonged to the class thus assailed, the effect of this legislation in stimulating the troubles of the kingdom can readily be perceived.

The dismal strife of the succeeding ten years at length showed that, in spite of the Tridentine canons, the toleration of this iniquity was a necessity. Thus in the Edicts of Pacification issued by Henry III. in 1576 and 1577 there is a provision which admits as valid the marriages theretofore contracted by all priests or religious persons of either sex. The issue of such unions was declared competent to inherit the personalty of the parents and such

Monluc, whose cruelties to the Huguenots were so notorious), married without openly apostatising, and died in the Catholic faith. Cardinal Odet de Châtillon, Bishop of Beauvais, and brother of the Admiral, became a declared Calvinist, married; Mlle. de Hauteville, and called himself Comte de Beauvais. He seems to have retained his benefices, and was still called by the Catholics M. le Cardinal "Car il nous estoit fort à cœur," says Brantôme (*Discours* 48), "de luy changer le nom qui luy avoit esté si bien seant."

¹ Edit de Roussillon, Art. 7 (Isambert XV. 172). This edict was cited in the proceedings of the case of Dumonteil, about the year 1830, of which more hereafter.

reality as either parent might have acquired, but was incapable of other inheritance, direct or collateral.¹

The Church was obliged to submit to this temporising tolerance of evil, and condescended to entreaty since force was no longer permitted. In 1581 the Council of Rouen, while deploring the number of monks and nuns who had left their convents, apostatised, and married, directs that they shall be tempted back, treated with kindness, and pardon be sought for them from the Holy See.² In the final settlement of the religious troubles, the concessions made by Henry III. were renewed and somewhat amplified by the Edict of Nantes in 1598.³ When the reaction came, however, these provisions were held to be only retrospective in their action, and were not admitted as legalising subsequent marriages. Thus in 1628 a knight of Malta, in 1630 a nun, and in 1640 a priest of Nevers, who had embraced Calvinism, ventured on matrimony, but were separated from their spouses and the marriages were pronounced null.⁴ These decisions were based on the principle that the celibacy of ecclesiastics was prescribed by municipal as well as by canon law, and that a priest in abjuring his religion did not escape from the obligations imposed upon him by the laws of the kingdom.⁵

In Scotland, as in France, the question of sacerdotal marriage may be considered as having virtually been settled in advance. Lollardry had not been confined to the southern portion of Great Britain. It had penetrated

¹ Edit de 1576, Art. 9.—Edit de Poitiers, Art. Secrets, No. 8 (Isambert, T. XV. pp. 283, 331).

² Concil Rotomag. ann. 1581 cap. de Monasteriis § 32 (Harduin. X. 1253).

³ Edit de Nantes, Art. Secrets, No. 39 (Isambert, T. XVI. p. 206).

⁴ Grégoire, *Hist. du Mariage des Prêtres en France*, pp. 58–9.

⁵ A decision rendered on the argument of the distinguished avocat-général Omer Talon expressly states "que la prohibition du mariage des personnes constituées dans les ordres étant une loi de l'Etat aussi bien que de l'Eglise, un prêtre malgré sa profession de Calvinisme, était demeuré sujet aux lois de l'Etat, et dès lors n'avait pas pu valablement contracter mariage."—Bouhier de l'Ecluse, de l'Etat des Prêtres en France, Paris, 1842, p. 12.

into Scotland, and had received the countenance of those whose position and influence were well calculated to aid in its dissemination among the people. In 1494, thirty of these heretics, known as "the Lollards of Kyle," were prosecuted before James IV. by Robert Blacater, Archbishop of Glasgow. Their station may be estimated from the fact that they escaped the punishment due to their sins by the favour of the monarch, "for divers of them were his great familiars." The thirty-four articles of accusation brought against them are mostly Wickliffite in tendency, and their views on the question of celibacy are manifested in the twenty-second article, which accuses them of asserting "That Priests may have wives according to the constitution of the Law and of the Primitive Christian Church."¹

The soil was thus ready for the plough of the Reformation; while the temper of the Scottish race gave warrant that when the mighty movement should reach them, it would be marked by that stern and uncompromising spirit which alone could satisfy conscientious and fiery bigots, who would regard all half-measures as pacts with Satan. Nor was there lacking ample cause to excite in the minds of all men the desire for a sweeping and effectual reform. Corruption had extended through every fibre of the Scottish Church as all-pervading as that which we have traced throughout the rest of Christendom.

Not long after the year 1530, and before the new heresy had obtained a foothold, William Arith, a Dominican, ventured to assail the vices of his fellow churchmen. In a sermon preached at St. Andrews, with the approbation of the heads of the universities, he alluded to the false miracles with which the people were deceived, and the abuses practised at shrines to which credulous devotion was invited. "As of late dayes," he proceeded, "our Lady

¹ Knox, History of the Reformation in Scotland, p. 3 (ed. 1609).

of Karsgreng hath hopped from one green hillock to another: But, honest men of St. Andrewes, if ye love your wives and daughters, hold them at home, or else send them in good honest company; for if ye knew what miracles were wrought there, ye would thank neither God nor our Lady." In another sermon, arguing that the disorders of the clergy should be subjected to the jurisdiction of the civil authorities, he introduced an anecdote respecting Prior Patrick Hepburn, afterwards Bishop of Murray. That prelate once, in merry discourse with his gentlemen, asked of them the number of their mistresses, and what proportion of the fair dames were married. The first who answered confessed to five, of whom two were bound in wedlock; the next boasted of seven, with three married women among them; and so on until the turn came to Hepburn himself, who, proud of his *bonnes fortunes*, declared that although he was the youngest man there, his mistresses numbered twelve, of whom seven were men's wives.¹ Yet Arith was a good Catholic, who, on being driven from Scotland for his plain speaking, suffered imprisonment in England under Henry VIII. for maintaining the supremacy of the Pope.

How little concealment was thought requisite with regard to these scandals is exemplified in the case of Alexander Ferrers, which occurred about the same time. Taken prisoner by the English and immured for seven years in the Tower of London, he returned home to find that his wife had been consoled and his substance dissipated in his absence by a neighbouring priest, for the which cause he not unnaturally "spake more liberally of priests than they could bear." By this time heresy was spreading, and severe measures of repression were considered necessary. It therefore was not difficult to have the man's disrespect-

¹ Knox, pp. 15-16.—Calderwood's *Historie of the Kirk of Scotland*, I. 83-5 (Wodrow Soc.).

ful remarks construed as savouring of Lutheranism, and he was accordingly brought up for trial at St. Andrews. The first article of accusation read to him was that he despised the Mass, whereto he answered, "I heare more Masses in eight dayes than three bishops there sitting say in a yeare." The next article accused him of contemning the sacraments. "The priests," replied he, "were the most contemnors of the sacraments, especially of matrimony." "And that he witnessed by many of the priests there present, and named the man's wife with whom they had meddled, and especially Sir John Dungwaill, who had seven years together abused his own wife and consumed his substance, and said : because I complain of such injuries, I am here summoned and accused as one that is worthy to be burnt : For God's sake, said he, will ye take wives of your own, that I and others whom ye have abused may be revenged on you." Old Gawain Dunbar, Bishop of Aberdeen, not relishing this public accusation, sought to justify himself, exclaiming, "Carle, thou shalt not know my wife"; but the prisoner turned the tables on him, "My lord, ye are too old, but by the grace of God I shall drink with your daughter or I depart." "And thereat there was smiling of the best and loud laughter of some, for the bishop had a daughter married with Andrew Balfour in that town." The prelates who sat in judgment found that they were exchanging places with the accused, and, fearful of further revelations from the reckless Alexander, commanded him to depart; but he refused, unless each one should contribute something to replace the goods which his wife's paramour had consumed, and finally, to stop his evil tongue, they paid him and bade him be gone.¹

All prelates, however, were not so sensitive. When Cardinal Beatoun, Archbishop of St. Andrews, primate of Scotland, and virtual governor of the realm, about the

¹ Knox, pp. 16-17.

year 1546 married his eldest daughter to the eldest son of the Earl of Crawford, he caused the nuptials to be celebrated with regal magnificence, and in the marriage articles, signed with his own hand, he did not hesitate to call her "my daughter." It is not difficult, therefore, to credit the story that the night before his assassination was passed with his mistress, Marion Ogilby, who was seen leaving his chamber not long before Norman Leslie and Kirkaldy of Grange forced their way into his castle.¹ His successor in the see of St. Andrews, John Hamilton, was equally notorious for his licentiousness; and men wondered, not at his immorality, but at his taste in preferring to all his other concubines one whose only attraction seemed to be the zest given to sin by the fact that she was the wife of one of his kindred.²

This is testimony from hostile witnesses, and we might perhaps impugn their evidence on that ground, were it not that the Catholic Church of Scotland itself admitted the abandoned morals of its members when the rapid progress of Calvinism at length drove it in self-defence to attempt a reform which was its only chance of salvation. In the last Parliament held by James V. before his death in 1542, an Act was passed exhorting the prelates and ecclesiastics in general to take measures "for reforming of their lyvis, and for avoyding of the opin sclander that is gevin to the hail estates throucht the spirituale mens ungodly and dissolut lyves."³ Nothing was then done, in spite of this solemn warning, though the countenance afforded to the Reformers by the Regent Arran, strengthened by his alliance with Henry VIII., was daily causing the heresy to assume more dangerous proportions. When, therefore, the Catholic party, rallying after the murder of Cardinal

¹ Buchanan. *Rer. Scot. Hist. Lib. xv.*—Robertson, *Hist. of Scot. B. II.*—Knox 71-2.—Calderwood I. 222.

² Buchanan, *Lib. xv.*

³ Wilkins IV. 207.

Beatoun, at length triumphed with the aid of France, and sent the young Queen of Scots to marry Francis II., they seemed to recognise that they could only maintain their advantage by meeting public opinion in endeavouring to reform the Church. Accordingly, in November 1549, a council was convoked at Edinburgh, of which the first canon declares that the licentiousness of the clergy had given rise to the gravest scandals, to repress which the rules enjoined by the Council of Basle must be strictly enforced and universally obeyed. The second canon is no less significant in ordering that prelates and other ecclesiastics shall not live with their illegitimate children, nor provide for them or promote them in the paternal churches, nor marry their daughters to barons by endowing them with the patrimony of Christ, nor cause their sons to be made barons by the same means.¹

This was of small avail. Ten years afterwards, the progress of heresy becoming ever more alarming, another council was held, in March 1559, to devise means to put a stop to the encroachments of the enemy. To this assembly the Catholic nobles addressed an earnest prayer for reformation. After alluding to the proceedings of the Parliament of 1542, they add, "And siclyk remembring in diverss of the lait provinciale counsaes haldin within this realm, that poynt has been treittet of, and sindrie statutis synodale maid therupon, of the quhilks nevertheless thar hes folowit nan or litill frutt as yitt, bot rathare the said estate is deteriorate . . . it is maist expedient therefore that thai presentlie condescend to seik reformation of thir lyvis . . . and naymlie that oppin and manifest sins and notor offencis be forborn and abstenit fra in tyme to cum." In this request they had been anticipated by the Reformers, who the previous year, in a supplication addressed to the Queen-regent, included among their demands "That the

¹ Concil. Edinburgens. ann. 1549 can. 1, 2 (Wilkins IV. 48).

wicked, slanderous, and detestable life of Prelats and of the State Ecclesiasticall may be reformed, that the people by them have not occasion (as of many dayes they have had) to contemne their Ministrie and the Preaching whereof they should be Messengers.”

The council, thus urged by friend and foe, recognised the extreme necessity of the case, and did its best to cure the immedicable disease. Its first canon reaffirmed the observance of the Basilian regulations, and appointed a commission empowered to enforce them ; and, that nothing should interfere with its efficiency, the Archbishops of St. Andrews and Glasgow made a special renunciation of their exemption from the jurisdiction of the council. The second canon, in forbidding the residence of illegitimate children with their clerical fathers, endeavoured to procure obedience to the rule ordered by the council of 1549, by permitting it for four days in each quarter, and by a penalty for infractions of £200 in the case of an archbishop, £100 in that of a bishop, and leaving the mulct to be imposed on inferior ecclesiastics at the discretion of the officials. The third canon prohibited the promotion of children in their fathers' benefices, and supplicated the Queen-regent to obtain of the Pope that no dispensations should be granted to evade the rule. The fourth canon inhibited ecclesiastics from marrying their daughters to barons and lairds, and endowing them with Church lands, or making their sons barons or lairds with more than £100 annual income, under pain of fine to the amount of the dowry or lands abstracted from the Church ; and all grants of Church lands or tithes to concubines or children were pronounced null and void.¹

¹ Wilkins IV. 207-10.—Knox, p. 129. It should be borne in mind in estimating these penalties that they are expressed in pounds Scots, which were about one-twelfth of the pound sterling. These canons, it appears, were not adopted without opposition. According to Knox, “But herefrom appealed the Bishop of Murray and other prelates, saying That they would abide the canon law. And so they might well enough do, so long as they remained Interpreters, Dispensators, Makers and Disannullers of the law” (op. cit. 119). It was doubtless on some such considerations that the

When such legislation was necessary, the disorders which it was intended to repress are acknowledged in terms admitting neither of palliation nor excuse. The extent of the evil especially alluded to in the latter canons is further exemplified by the fact that during the thirty years immediately following the establishment of the Reformation in Scotland, more letters of legitimation were taken out than were issued in the two subsequent centuries. These were given to the sons of the clergy who were allowed to retain their benefices, and who then made over the property to their natural children.¹

Such being the state of morals among the ministers of the old religion, it is easy to appreciate the immense advantage enjoyed by the Reformers. They made good use of it. Knox loses no opportunity of stigmatising the "pestilent Papists and Masse-mongers" as "adulterers and whoremasters," who were thus perpetually held up to the people for execration, while the individual wrongs from which so many suffered were noised about and made the subject of constantly increasing popular indignation.² Yet

Archbishop of St. Andrews relied when he consented to waive his exemption in this matter. His personal reputation may be estimated from the remark of Queen Mary when, in December 1566, he performed the rite of baptism on James VI. She forbade him to use the popular ceremony of employing his saliva, giving a reason which was in the highest degree derogatory to his moral character (Sir J. Y. Simpson, in Proceedings of Epidemiological Society of London, November 5, 1860).

¹ Robertson, Hist. Scot. Bk. II.

² Thus the Parliament of 1560, which effected a settlement of the Reformed Religion, was urged to its duty by a Supplication presented in the name of "The Barons, Gentlemen, Burgesses, and other true Subjects of this Realm, professing the Lord Jesus within the same," which, among its arguments against Catholicism, does not hesitate to assert: "Secondarily, seeing that the sacraments of Jesus Christ are most shamefully abused and profaned by that Romane Harlot and her sworne vassals, and also because that the true Discipline of the Ancient Church is utterly now among that Sect extinguished: For who within the Realme are more corrupt in life and manners than are they that are called the Clergie, living in whoredom and adultery, deflouring Virgins, corrupting Matrons, and doing all abomination without fear of punishment. We humbly, therefore, desire your Honors to finde remedy against the one and the other."—Knox, p. 255.

the abrogation of celibacy occupies less space in the history of the Scottish Reformation than in that of any other people who threw off the allegiance to Rome.

The remote position of Scotland and its comparative barbarism rendered it in some degree inaccessible to the early doctrines of Luther and Zwingli. Before it began to show a trace of the new ideas, clerical marriage had long passed out of the region of disputation with the Reformers, and was firmly established as one of the inseparable results of the doctrine of justification professed by all the reformed Churches.¹ Not only was it thus accepted as a matter of course by all the converts to the new faith, but that faith, when once introduced, spread in Scotland with a rapidity proportioned to the earnest character of the people. The permission to read the Scriptures in the vulgar tongue, granted by Parliament in 1543, doubtless had much to do with this; the leaning of the Regent Arran to the same side gave it additional impetus, and the savage fierceness with which the Reformers were prepared to vindicate their belief is shown by the murder of Cardinal Beaton, which was countenanced and justified by Knox himself. Powerful nobles soon saw in it the means of emancipating themselves from the vacillating control of the Regent; nor was the central authority strengthened when, in 1554, the reins of power were wrested from the feeble Arran and confided to the Queen-dowager, Mary of Guise, who found herself obliged to encourage each party by turns, and to balance one against the other, to prevent either Catholic or Calvinist from obtaining control over the state. Then too, as in

¹ This doctrine bore its full share in the history of the Scottish Reformation. Two years after the execution of the protomartyr, Patrick Hamilton, in 1528, his sister Catharine was arraigned on account of her belief in justification through Christ. Learned divines urged upon her with prolix earnestness of disputation the necessity of works, until her patience gave way, and she rudely exclaimed, "Work here and work there, what kind of working is all this? No work can save me but the work of Christ my Saviour."—By the connivance of the King she was enabled to escape to England.—Calderwood's *Historie*, I. 109.

Germany and England, the temporal possessions of the Church were a powerful temptation to its destruction. From the great Duke of Chatelleraut to the laird of some insignificant peel, all were needy and all eager for a share in the spoil. When, in 1560, an assembly of the nobles at Edinburgh listened to a disputation on the Mass, and the Catholic doctors were unable to defend it as a propitiatory sacrifice, the first exclamation of the lords revealed the secret tendencies of their thoughts: "We have been miserably deceived heretofore; for if the Mass may not obtain remission of sins to the quick and to the dead, wherefore were all the Abbies so richly doted and endowed with our Temporall lands?"¹

Of course, less selfish purposes were put forward to enlist the support of the people. On the 1st January 1559, when the storm was gathering, but before it had burst, the inmates of the religious houses found affixed to their gates a proclamation in the name of "The Blinde, Crooked, Lane, Widows, Orphans, and all other Poor, so visited by the hand of God as cannot work," ordering the monks to leave the patrimony intended to relieve the suffering, but usurped by indolent shavelings, giving them until Whit-Sunday to make their exit, after which they would be ejected by force, and ending with the significant warning: "Let him, therefore, that hath before stolen, steal no more, but rather let him work with his hands that he may be helpfull to the poore."²

Such a cry could hardly fail to be popular, but when the threat was carried into execution, the blind and the crooked, the widow and orphan received so small a share of the spoil that they were worse off than before. As we have already seen in England, the destruction of the Scottish monasteries was the commencement of the necessity of making some public provision for paupers.³

¹ Knox, p. 283.

² Knox, p. 119.—Calderwood, I. 423.

³ Thus the Assembly of the Church in 1562 drew up a remonstrance to the Queen,

The nobles seized the lion's share; the rest fell to the crown, subject to the payment of the very moderate stipends assigned to the comparatively few ministers required by the new establishment, and these stipends were so irregularly paid that the unfortunate ministers were frequently in danger of starvation, and were constantly besieging the court with their dolorous complaints. Where the lands and revenues went is indicated with grim humour by Knox, in describing the resistance offered in 1560 to the adoption of his Book of Discipline by those who had professed great zeal for the Lord Jesus. Lord Erskine had been one of the first and most consistent of the "Lords of the Congregation," yet he also refused to sign the book—"And no wonder, for besides that he had a very evill woman to his wife, if the Poore, the Schooles, and the Ministerie of the Church had their owne, his Kitchin would lack two parts and more of that which he unjustly now possesseth."¹

Yet, when compared with the rich abbatial manors of England or the princely foundations of Germany, the spoil of the Church was mean indeed. Knox had resided much abroad, and had seen the vast wealth which the piety of ages had showered upon the Church in the most opulent lands of Europe, yet his simplicity or fanaticism finds source of wondering comment in the homespun luxury of the unfortunate monks whom he assisted in dispossessing. When the destruction of the monasteries 1559 commenced by a brawl in Perth, caused by a sermon preached by Knox, and three prominent convents were broken up, he expatiates

in which they requested that "in every Parish some of the Tythes may be assigned to the sustentation and maintenance of the poor within the same: And likewise that some publike relief may be provided for the poor within Burroughs."—Knox, p. 339.

¹ Ibid. p. 278. The Book was signed at Edinburgh, 27 January, 1561, but only after the adoption of a proviso: "Provided that the Bishops, Abbots, Priors, and other Prelates and Beneficed men, which else have adjoyned themselves to us, brooke the revenues of their Benefices during their lifetimes."—Worldly wisdom certainly was not lost sight of in the ardour of a new and purer religion.

on the extravagance revealed to sight : “ And in very deed the Grey-Friers was a place so well provided that unlesse honest men had seen the same, we would have feared to have reported what provision they had, their sheets, blankets, beds and coverlets were such that no Earle in Scotland had better : Their naperie was fine ; they were but 8 persons in the Convent, and yet they had 8 puncheons of salt beef (consider the time of the yeere, the eleventh of May), wine, beere, and ale, beside store of victuals belonging thereto.”¹ Imagine an abbot of St. Albans or an abbess of Poissy reduced to the coverlets and salt beef which the stern Calvinist deemed an indulgence so great as to be incredible !

Still, in so impoverished a country as the Scotland of that period, even these poor spoils were a motive sufficient to prove a powerful aid to the conquering party in the struggle. And yet, amid all the miserable ambitions of the Erskines and Murrays, the Huntleys and Bothwells, who occupied the prominent places in the court and camp, we should do grievous wrong to the spirit which triumphed at last over the force and fraud of the Guises, if we attributed to temporal motives alone the movement which expelled licentious prelates and drove Queen Mary to the fateful refuge of Fotheringay. The selfish aims of the nobles would have been fruitless but for the zealous earnestness of the people, led by men of iron nature, who doubted themselves as little as they doubted their God, and who, in the death-struggle with Antichrist, were as ready to suffer as they were ruthless to inflict. Nor can the disorders of the Catholic clergy be rightly imputed to the temperament of the race, for the Reformers, who carried with them so large a portion of the middle and lower classes, preached a system of rigid morality to which the world had been a stranger since the virtues of the

¹ Knox, 136.

Germanic tribes had been lost in the overthrow of the Empire; and they not merely preached it, but obtained its embodiment in a code of repressive laws which their vigilant authority strictly enforced.

I have said above that the question of celibacy appears but rarely in the course of the contest, yet, notwithstanding the causes which rendered it a less prominent subject of debate than elsewhere, it occasionally rises to view. The first instance of clerical marriage that I find recorded occurred in 1538, when Thomas Coklaw, parish priest of Tillibodie, married a widow of the same village named Margaret Jameson. This, however, was not done openly and defiantly, as in Germany, but in secret, and the married couple continued to dwell apart. That the infraction of the canons was not without danger was shown by the result, for, when it became known, Coklaw was tried by the Bishop of Dunblane and condemned to perpetual imprisonment; but his relatives broke open his dungeon, and he escaped to England. When, early in the following year, a group of Reformers, including Dean Thomas Forret, Friar John Killore, Friar John Beverege, and others, were put on trial, their presence at this wedding was one of the crimes for which they were executed upon Castle Hill at Edinburgh.¹ In fact, the abrogation of the rule of celibacy, in Scotland as elsewhere, was necessarily one of the leading points at issue between the Reformers and the Catholics. Thus, when George Wishart, one of the early heretics who ventured openly to preach the Lord Jesus, was seized, in spite of powerful protectors, and after a prolonged captivity was brought for trial before Cardinal Beatoun in 1545, in the accusation against him article 14 asserted, "Thou false Hereticke hast taught plainly against the Vows of Monks, Friers, Nuns, and Priests, saying, That whosoever was

¹ Calderwood's *Historie*, I. 123-4.

bound to such like Vows, they vowed themselves to the state of damnation. Moreover, That it was lawfull for Priests to marry wives and not to live sole." Wishart tacitly confessed the truth of this impeachment by rejoining, "But as many as have not the gift of chastity, nor yet for the Gospel have overcome the concupiscence of the flesh, and have vowed chastity; ye have experience, although I should hold my tongue, to what inconveniences they have exposed themselves."¹ He was accordingly condemned as an incorrigible heretic, and promptly burnt. Yet when, in 1547, John Knox held his disputation with Dean Wynrame and Friar Arbuckle, though the nine articles drawn up for discussion ranged from the supremacy of the Pope and the existence of purgatory to the payment of tithes, the subject of vows of chastity was not even mentioned.²

Still, as late as 1558 the trial of Walter Mill shows that the question was even yet agitated in the controversies between the polemics of the two parties. Mill had been a priest, and had married, and the first of the articles of accusation against him was that he asserted the lawfulness of sacerdotal marriage. To this he boldly assented, declaring that he regarded matrimony as a blessed bond, open for all men to enter, and that it were better for priests to marry than to vow chastity and not preserve it, as they were wont to do. Condemned to the stake, the unfortunate old man commanded the sympathies of the people, even in the archiepiscopal town of St. Andrews. No one could be found to act as executioner, until at length one of the servants of the archbishop consented to fill the abhorrent office; but when a rope was sought with which to bind the wretched sufferer to the stake, no one

¹ Knox, p. 65.—Knox's characteristic comment on this is—"When he had said these words, they were all dumb, thinking it better to have ten concubines than one wife."

² Calderwood, I. 231 sqq.

would furnish it, and the tragedy was necessarily postponed. Equally unsuccessful was the next day's search, until the archbishop, fearing to lose his victim, gave the cords of his own pavilion, and the sentence was carried into effect. Even after the sacrifice, the popular feeling was manifested by raising a pile of stones as a monument on the place of torture, and as often as these were cast aside by the priests they were replaced by the people, until the followers of the archbishop carried them off by night, and used them for building.¹

These incidents show us that the question received its share of attention in the controversy by which each side endeavoured to secure the support of the nation, but it makes no appearance in public negotiations and declarations. Thus, in 1558, when the growing strength of the Lords of the Congregation led the Catholics to offer concessions, which were rejected by the conscious power of the Reformers, there was no allusion to celibacy on either side. In fact, between the respective leaders the questions were almost purely personal and political, while among the conscientiously religious supporters of either party opinions were too rigidly defined for argument. Convictions were too divergent and too firm for compromise or concession to be possible, and Catholic and Calvinist grimly recognised, as by a tacit understanding, the alternative of extermination. When the English alliance at last drove the Catholics to the wall, and in July 1560 there assembled the Parliament to which by the Articles of Leith was referred the duty of effecting a settlement of the kingdom, the vanquished party made no struggle against their fate. Such Catholic prelates and lords as took their seats refrained from all debate, and allowed the victors to arrange the temporal and spiritual affairs of the kingdom at their pleasure.

¹ Knox, p. 130.—Calderwood, I. 337 sqq.—Burnet, Vol. II.

In this settlement, our subject affords a curious comparison between the English and Scotch Churches. In the former, at a period even later than this, it was considered necessary to embody a renunciation of celibacy in the organic law, which has been maintained to the present day. In the latter, ecclesiastical marriage had become already so firmly established in the minds of the Reformers that it was accepted as a matter of course, which needed no special confirmation. Although laws were passed prohibiting the Mass and abolishing the supremacy of the Pope, none were thought necessary to legalise the marriages of the clergy. Even in Knox's Confession of Faith, adopted by the Parliament on July 17, there is no direct allusion to the matter. The only passage which can be construed as having any bearing upon it occurs in Chapter XIV., when considering "What works are reputed good before God": "And evill works we affirme not onely those that are expressly done against God's commandment, but those also that in matters of religion and worshipping of God have no assurance, but the invention and opinion of man, which God from the beginning hath ever rejected, as by the prophet Isaiah and by our Master Christ Jesus we are taught in these words—*In vain do they worship me, teaching doctrines which are precepts of Men.*¹

Nothing more, in fact, was needed when the triumph of the new ideas was so complete that Knox could exultingly exclaim, "For what Adulterer, what Fornicator, what known Masse-monger or pestilent Papist durst have been seen in publike within any Reformed Town within this Realme before that the Queen arrived? . . . For while the Papists were so confounded that none within the Realme durst avow the hearing or saying of Masse then the thieves of Tiddisdale durst avow their stouth or stealing in the presence of any upright judge."² When persecution thus

Knox, p. 263.

² Ibid. p. 304.

had changed sides, no minister could feel that his nuptials required special authorisation. How thoroughly indeed they were legitimated is shown by a curious little incident occurring in 1563. A minister named Baron made complaint to the General Assembly that his wife, an English woman named Anne Goodacre, "after great rebellions by her committed," had left him and taken refuge in England, whereupon he requested the Assembly to have her brought back to him. Spotswood, the Superintendent of Lothian, with Knox and Craig, actually wrote to Archbishop Parker officially asking him to have the woman sought for and sent to Scotland ; but Parker, considering it to be an international question and beyond his sphere, prudently referred the request to Secretary Cecil.¹

It were foreign to our object to enter into the dark details of Mary's short and disastrous reign. The intrigues of the camarilla, the boyish weakness of Darnley, the subtlety of Rizzio, and the coarse ambition of Huntley and Bothwell, were alike harmless against the earnest reverence of the people for the new faith ; and the expiring struggles of Catholicism were too feeble to give any practical importance to the vain attempts at reaction.

¹ Strype's Parker, Book II. ch. xviii.

CHAPTER XXVIII

THE COUNCIL OF TRENT

It has already been observed that the dissolute and un-Christian life of the priesthood was one of the efficient causes which led to the success of the Reformation. At an early period in the movement, the Catholic Church felt the necessity of purifying itself, if it was to retain the veneration of the people; and the veneration of the people was now not merely a source of revenue, but a condition of the very existence of the stupendous structure of Latin Christianity. As soon as it became clearly apparent that Lutheranism was not to be suppressed by the ordinary machinery, and that it was spreading with a rapidity which portended the worst results, an effort was made to remove the reproach which incorrigible immorality had entailed upon the Church. Allusion has been made above to the stringent measures of reform proclaimed by the legate Campeggio at Ratisbon in 1524, in which he acknowledged that the new heresy had no little excuse in the detestable morals and abandoned lives of the clergy—a truth repeatedly admitted by the ecclesiastical authorities.¹ His

¹ The orator of the Council of Cologne in 1527 sharply reminded the assembled prelates that they must set the example of obeying their own statutes, and that they could not expect the people to reverence the true Church so long as it notoriously bade defiance to the laws of God and man. “*Quasi præscribatur lex cujus sancitor voluerit esse exlex. Parendum enim est legi quam quisque sancit . . . Audis præterea non licere plurimas habere uxores, quæ animum tuum alliciant; non decere domi alere tot scorta tot Veneres, quæ te continue exedunt, tuamque substantiam disperdunt. . . . His et aliis datur scandalum populo; præbetur offendiculum vulgo, cui hac tempestate vilet et contemptui est ordo quilibet sacer. Vilis plebs te sacerdotem nunc cachinnis atque ludibriis incussit et odit, qui calumniandi ansam ultro præbueris. Dicit namque: tot hic, aut ille, scorta domi suæ ex*”

well-meant endeavours had little result, and we have seen that, some years later, Erasmus still urged the abolition of the rule of celibacy as the only practicable mode of removing the scandal.

Not long afterwards the Gallican Church made a strenuous effort of the same nature to check the spread of Lutheranism. In 1521, before it had to encounter a hostile heresy, the Council of Paris had deplored the pervading corruptions with exceeding candour. The condition of conventual discipline was such as to threaten the very existence of the system, and the customary denunciations of ineradicable abuses were freely published.¹ In 1528 the Cardinal-legate Duprat, Chancellor of France, held a council in Paris, where he condemned, *seriatim*, the new doctrines as heresies, and elevated the rule of celibacy to the dignity of a point of faith.² He also caused the adoption of a series of canons designed to remove from the Church the disgrace caused by the laxity of clerical morals and manners. The bishops were instructed to enforce the decrees of the councils and of the fathers until concubinage and incontinence should be completely exterminated, and a rule was laid down which would have been eventually effectual if conscientiously carried out. No one was there-

patrimonio Crucifixi nutrit, quo non sordida scorta, sed pauperes Christi forent sustentandi."—Concil. Colon. ann. 1527 (Hartzheim VI. 210–213).

So at the Council of Augsburg, in 1548, the orator dwelt upon the advantage which the heretics derived from the sins of the clergy: "*Non estis nescii, quemadmodum nos hæretici apud populum perpetuo traducant: nos scortatores, nos ambitiosos, nos avaros, nos ignavos, et rudes esse, nos otio semper, luxui et ventri servire, identidem vociferantur . . . Superbe itaque illi: sed utinam non nimium sæpe vere: nam si vera potius hoc loco, quam plausibilia, dicenda sint; negare certe non possumus, quin maximam ad nos accusandos occasionem sæpe dederimus.*"—Concil. Augustan. ann. 1548 (Hartzheim VI. 388).

¹ Concil. Parisiens. ann. 1521 (Martene Ampl. Coll. VIII. 1018).

² *Quisquis igitur contra sacrorum conciliorum et patrum decreta, sacerdotes, diaconos aut subdiaconos lege cœlibatus non teneri docuerit aut liberas illis concesserit nuptias, inter hæreticos, omni tergiversatione rejecta numeretur.*—Concil. Paris. ann. 1528, Decret. 8.

This I think is the first authoritative promulgation of Damiani's doctrine, which, as we shall hereafter see, was adopted and extended by the Council of Trent.

after to be admitted to holy orders without written testimony as to his age and moral character from his parish priest, substantiated by the oaths of two or three approved witnesses.¹ At the same time similar councils were held at Bourges by the Cardinal Archbishop Tournon, and at Lyons by Claude, Bishop of Macon. To what extent these excellent rules were put in force may be guessed by a description of the French clergy in 1560, as portrayed by Monluc, Bishop of Valence, in a speech before the Royal Council. The parish priests were for the most part engrossed in worldly pursuits, and had obtained their preferment by illicit means, nor did there seem much prospect of an improvement so long as the prelates were in the habit of bestowing the benefices within their gift on their lackeys, barbers, cooks, and other serving men, rendering the ecclesiastics as a body an object of contempt to the people.² We need, therefore, not be surprised to find in the councils of the period a repetition of all the old injunctions, showing that the maintenance of improper consorts and the disgrace of priestly families were undiminished evils.³ This description of the French clergy is most emphatically extended to the whole Church in the project for reformation drawn up by order of Paul III. in 1538, and to these evils are attributed the innumerable scandals which afflicted the faithful, as well as the contempt in which the ecclesiastical body was held and the virtual extinction of all reverence for the services of religion.⁴ No improvement, however, was to be expected as long as a concubinary priest could obtain from the papal chancery for seven *gros tournois* letters of absolution and

¹ Concil. Paris. ann. 1528, Decret. 8.

² Pierre de la Place, *Estat de Rel. et Rep.* Liv. III.

³ Concil. Narbonnens. ann. 1551 can. 22 (Harduin. X. 468).

⁴ *Consilium de Emend. Eccles.* (Le Plat, *Monument. Concil. Trident.* II.

dispensation which specially set aside the decrees of bishops and local councils.¹

In 1530 Clement VII. addressed himself vigorously to the task of putting an end to the scandalous practice of hereditary transmission of benefices, which he describes as almost universal. A special bull was issued, prohibiting the children of priests or monks from enjoying any preferment in their father's benefices, and, recognising that the Roman Curia was one of the chief obstacles to all reform, he provided that if he or his successors should grant dispensations permitting such infraction of the canons, they should be considered as issued unwittingly, and be held null and void.² Like so many others, this bull seems to have been forgotten almost as soon as issued, and the pecuniary needs of the Roman court rendered it unable to abandon so lucrative a source of revenue. Even as soon as 1538 the cardinals to whom Paul III. committed the task of drawing up the project of reformation cautiously intimate that they hear of such dispensations being granted, and to this they attribute a large share of the troubles of the Church and the enmity felt towards the Holy See.³ This warning passed unheeded, and, as we have seen, in 1559 a Scottish council prayed the Queen-regent to use her influence with the Pope to prevent dispensations being granted to enable illegitimate children to hold preferment in their fathers' benefices,⁴ while in 1562 the frequency and readiness with which such dispensations were still

¹ Pro concubinaric absoluto et dispensatio super irregularitate: et hoc contra provinciales et synodales constitutiones, g. vii.—*Libellus Taxarum super quibusdam in Cancellaria Apostolica impetrandis*, fol. 17a (White, Historical Library, Cornell University, A. 6124).

² Bull. ad Canonum (Mag. Pull. Roman. Ed. 1692, I. 682).

Alexander III., in prohibiting the sons of priests from enjoying their fathers' benefices, had permitted it if a third party intervened and a dispensation for the irregularity were obtained. The letter of this law was frequently observed, but its spirit eluded by nominally passing the preferment through the hands of a man of straw, and it was this abuse which Clement desired to eradicate.

³ *Consilium de Emend. Eccles.* (Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. II. 599.)

⁴ Wilkins IV. 209.

obtained are enumerated in a list of abuses laid before the Council of Trent by Sebastian, King of Portugal, as one of the matters requiring reformation by the supreme power of the council.¹ To this and other similar appeals the papal legates loftily replied that laws were not to be prescribed to the Holy See;² and the motive for the refusal is easily comprehended when we see that in the "Taxes of the Penitentiary" the price for a dispensation admitting the bastard of a priest to holy orders was a ducat and a carlino.³

In Spain, Ribadeneira, the disciple of Ignatius Loyola, tells us that the priestly concubines were accustomed to pledge their faith to their consorts as if united in wedlock, and that they wore the distinguishing costume of married women, as though glorying in their shame, which so scandalised St. Ignatius, on his return, in 1535, to his native land, that he exerted his influence with the temporal authorities to procure the enactment and enforcement of sundry laws which relieved the Spanish Church of so great an opprobrium.⁴ We may reasonably, however, doubt the success of his efforts. Some ten years later, Alphonso de Castro asserts that the priesthood was one of the efficient causes of the spread of heresy, and that

¹ Le Plat, V. 88. The opinion which was held of the venality of the Roman court in such matters is forcibly expressed in the instructions given to Laussac, the French ambassador at Trent. He is ordered to press the abolition of the papal power of dispensation "*attendu que nul n'en est refusé s'il a argent.*"—*Ibid.* p. 153.

² *Ejus sanctitati lex non sit præscribenda.*—*Ibid.* p. 385.

³ *Tax. Sac. Pœnitent.* Ed. Gibbings, p. 13.—This was only one carlino (the tenth part of a ducat, equal to about fourpence) more than the charge for the bastard of a layman.

⁴ Ribadeneira, *Vit. Ignat. Loyolæ*, Lib. II. cap. v. From this it would appear that the custom of permanent unions, described by Bishop Pelayo two centuries earlier, was still flourishing. As stated above (p. 17), Ferdinand and Isabella, in repeated edicts, from 1480 to 1503, had endeavoured to put an end to notorious concubinage, by fining, scourging, and banishing the women (*Novísima Recopilacion*, Lib. XII. Tit. xxvi. leyes 3-5.—*Coleccion de Cidulas*, III. 113, Madrid, 1829), for the men were beyond their jurisdiction. Possibly it was these laws that Loyola sought to revive.

it would be difficult for orthodoxy to maintain itself without the direct interposition of God, in view of the scandalous lives and general worthlessness of all orders of ecclesiastics, whose excessive numbers, turpitude, and ignorance exposed them to contempt.¹ His contemporary, the canon lawyer Bernardus Déaz de Luzo, indeed, finds in the universality of concubinage a reason for its partial condonation, for, while deploring its frequency, he warns judges not to be over severe in its repression, since so few are found guiltless, and there is danger that those who are restrained from it may be forced into darker sins.² How difficult, under such circumstances, was any reform may be gathered from a memorial presented in 1556 to Philip II. by Inquisitor-General Valdés. He relates that when he became Archbishop of Seville, in 1546, he found the clergy and the dignitaries of the cathedral so demoralised that they had no shame in their children and grandchildren: their women lived with them openly as though married, and accompanied them to church, while many kept in their houses public gaming tables, which were the resort of disorderly characters. To remedy these evils he instituted vigorous measures of reform, but in this he was greatly impeded and put to much expense by appeals and suits in Rome and in Granada, and in the Royal Council and before apostolic judges.³ In view of the facility with which absolutions and dispensations could be procured, it is easy to see how readily a persistent reformer could be embroiled with the Holy See.

About the same time Herman von Wied, Archbishop of Cologne, undertook the reformation of his extensive diocese. He assembled a council, which issued a series of 275 canons, prescribing minutely the functions, duties,

¹ Alphonsi de Castro de justa Hæreticorum Punitione, Lib. III. cap. 5.

² Diaz de Luco, Practica criminalis canonica, cap. lxxiii. (Venetiis, 1543.)

³ Archivo general de Simancas, Patronato Real, Inquisicion, Legajo unico fol. 76.

and obligations of all grades of the clergy. As regards the delicate subject of concubinage, he contented himself with quoting the Nicene canon prohibiting the residence of women not nearly connected by blood, and added that if the degeneracy of the times prevented the enforcement of a regulation so strict, at all events he forbade the companionship of females obnoxious to suspicion.¹ The good archbishop himself could hardly have expected that so mild an allocution would have much effect upon a perverse and hardened generation, but custom had so established itself that even the loftiest prelates shrank from encountering the risk attendant upon an attempt to enforce the canons. This is seen when, in 1537, Matthew, Archbishop of Salzburg, assembled his provincial synod, which, recognising the urgent necessity of preserving the Church and protecting the people, adopted a series of reformatory decrees. Afraid of promulgating them, it was resolved to suppress them for the present, under the pretext that the approaching General Council would regulate the discipline of the Church at large; and the archbishop contented himself with a pastoral letter addressed to his suffragans, in which he urged upon them to consider the contamination to which the laity were exposed through the vices of their pastors, and timidly suggested that, if the clergy could not restrain their passions, they should at all events indulge them secretly, so that scandal might be avoided and the punishment of their transgressions be left to an avenging God.²

This timidity finds its explanation in the report by the papal nuncio Morone of an interview, in 1542, with the Archbishop of Mainz, on the subject of the reform of

¹ Concil. Coloniens. ann. 1536, P. II. c. 28. Six years later, in 1542, Bishop Hermann embraced Lutheranism, married, and in 1546 was driven from his see and retired to his county of Wied, where he died some years afterwards, at the ripe age of 80 years.

² Concil. Salisburg. XLI. (Dalham, Concil. Salisburgens. pp. 296-322.)

the clergy, which was acknowledged to be the pressing question of the hour. The archbishop flatly admitted his impotence; until the Council should be held no reformation was possible. Priestly concubinage, he said, could not be suppressed without great scandals—in fact, persuasion was the only course open, for the clergy of Mainz, Trèves, and Cologne had formed so strong an organisation for mutual defence that they would all rise in resistance if the least of them were prosecuted.¹

In the Council of Trent itself, the Bishop of St. Mark, in opening its proceedings with a speech, 6 January, 1546, drew a fearful picture of the corruption of the world, which had reached a degree that posterity might possibly equal but not exceed. This he assured the assembled fathers was attributable solely to the wickedness of the pastors, who drew their flocks with them into the abyss of sin. The Lutheran heresy had been provoked by their own guilt, and its suppression was only to be hoped for by their own reformation.² At a later session, the Bavarian orator, August Baumgartner, told the assembled fathers that the progress of the Reformation was attributable to the scandalous lives of the clergy, whose excesses he could not describe without offending the chaste ears of his auditory. He even asserted that out of a hundred priests there were not more than three or four who were not either married or concubinarians³—a statement repeated in a consultation on the subject of ecclesiastical reform drawn up in 1562 by order of the Emperor Ferdinand, with the addition that the clergy would rather see the whole structure of the Church destroyed than submit to even the most moderate measure of reform.⁴

1 Lämmer, *Monumenta Vaticana Sæculi XVI.* p. 412.

2 *Acta Concil. Trident.* (Martene *Ampl. Coll.* VIII. 1063-9.)

3 Sarpi, *Istor. del Concilio Trident.* Lib. vi. (Ed. Helmstad. II. 140).—*Cf.* Le Plat, V. 337-8.

4 Le Plat, V. 235.

It is not to be wondered therefore that the Christian world had long and earnestly demanded the convocation of an Œcumenic council which should represent all parties, should have full powers to reconcile all differences, and should give to the ancient Church the purification thus recognised as the only efficient means of healing the schism. This was a remedy to the last degree distasteful to the Holy See. The recollections of Constance and Basle were full of pregnant warnings as to the almost inevitable antagonism between the Vicegerent of Christ and an independent representative body, believing itself to act under the direct inspiration of the Holy Ghost, claiming autocratic supremacy in the Church, and convoked for the special purpose of reforming abuses the most of which were fruitful sources of revenue to the papal court. Such a body, if assembled in Germany, would be the Pope's master; if in Italy, his tool; and it behoved him to act warily if he desired to meet the unanimous demand of Christendom without risking the sacrifice of his most cherished prerogatives. Had the council been called in the early days of the Reformation, it could hardly have prevented the separation of the Churches; yet, in the temper which then existed, it would probably have effected as thorough a purification of the ecclesiastical establishment as was possible in so corrupt an age. By delaying it until the reactionary movement had fairly set in, the chances of troublesome puritans gaining the ascendancy were greatly diminished, and the papal court exposed itself to little danger when, under the urgent pressure of the Emperor, it at length, in 1536, proposed to convoke the long desired assembly at Mantua.¹

A place so completely under papal influence was not

¹ Charles was careful to put on record his ceaseless endeavours with Clement and Paul to obtain the convocation of a council and the numberless promises made to him, for the evasion of which reasons were always found.—*Commentaires de Charles-Quint*, pp. 96–7 (Paris, 1862).

likely to meet the views of the opposition, and it is not surprising that both the Lutherans and Henry VIII. refused to connect themselves with such a council. The latter, indeed, in his epistle of 8 April, 1538, to Charles V., expressed himself more forcibly than elegantly :—" Nowe, if he [the Pope] calle us to one of his owne townes, we be afraid to be at suche an hostes table. We saye, Better to ryse a hungred, then to goo thense with oure bellyes fulle." ¹ The formality of its opening, 17 May, 1537, was therefore an empty ceremony ; its transfer to Vicenza was little more ; and, as no delegates presented themselves up to 1 May, 1538, it was prorogued until Easter 1539, with the promise of selecting a satisfactory place for the meeting. The pressure still continued until, in May 1542, Paul finally convoked it to assemble at Trent. The Reformers were no better satisfied than before. They had so long professed their readiness to submit all the questions in dispute to a free and unbiassed general council, that they could not refuse absolutely to countenance it ; but they were now so completely established as a separate organisation that they had little to hope and everything to fear from the appeal which they had themselves provoked, and nothing which Rome could now offer would have brought them into willing attendance upon such a body.² They accordingly kept aloof, and on the assembling of the council, 22 November, 1542, its numbers were so scanty that it could accomplish nothing, and it was accordingly suspended in July 1543. When again convoked, 15 March, 1545, but twenty bishops and a few ambassadors were present ; these waited with what patience they might command for accessions, which were so tardy in arriving

¹ Select. Harl. Miscell., London, 1793, p. 137.

² The temper with which the Protestants now viewed the council is well expressed in a letter from Aonio Paleario written in 1542 or 1545, from Rome to Luther, Melancthon, Bucer, and Calvin, urging them by no means to sanction the assembly with their presence—(Published by Illgen, 4to, Leipzig, 1833.)

that when at length the assembly was formally opened, on December 13, the number had increased by only five. For fifteen months the council continued its sessions, completely under the control of the Pope, and occupied for the most part with formulating as Catholic doctrine the speculations of the schoolmen, which thus far had been generally accepted without authoritative confirmation save incidentally at the Council of Florence in 1439. As these constituted the principal dogmas against which the Reformation was a protest, the labours of the fathers were directed, not to effect a reunion of the Church, but to erect an impassable barrier between Latin and Reformed Christianity.

The appeals of the German bishops and of the imperial ambassadors for some effective efforts at reform became at length too pressing, and to evade them, in March 1547, the council was transferred to Bologna, against the earnest protest of the Emperor and the Spaniards, who refused to follow.¹ At Bologna little was done except to dispute over the sharp protests of the Emperor and to adjourn the council from time to time, until, after falling into universal contempt, it was suspended in 1549. Julius III., who received the tiara on 22 February, 1550, signalled his accession by convoking it again at Trent; and there it once more assembled on 1 May, 1551.

At that time Lutheranism in Germany was under the heel of Charles V.; Maurice of Saxony was ripening his schemes of revolt, and concealing them with the dexterity in which he was unrivalled; it was the policy of both that Protestant theologians should take part in the discussions—of the one, that they should there receive their sentence; of the other, that their presence might assist in cloaking his

¹ There is something very amusingly suggestive in the guarded manner in which Charles alludes to the translation of the Council: "O ditto Papa Paulo por respeito, que o moveram (os quaes Deus permitta que forse[m] bons) tratton de avocar e transferir a Bolonha"—(Commentaires, p. 98.)

designs. The flight from Innsbruck, followed by the Transaction of Passau, changed the face of affairs. The Lutheran doctors rejoicingly shook the dust from their feet as they departed from Trent, complaining that they had been treated as criminals on trial, not as venerable members of a body assembled to decide the gravest questions relating to this life and that to come. Other symptoms of revolt among the Catholic nations were visible, and on 28 April, 1552, the council again broke up.¹

Ten years passed away; the faithful impatiently demanded the continuation of the work which had only been commenced, and at last the pressure became so strong that Pius IV. was obliged to reassemble the council.² His bull bears date November 1560, but it was not until twenty years after Trent had witnessed the first convocation that the holy men again gathered within its walls, and on 18 January, 1562, the council resumed its oft-interrupted sessions. The states of the Augsburg Confession had been politely invited to participate in the proceedings, but they declined with the scantest of courtesy.³

During these long-protracted preliminaries there were times when those who sincerely desired the restoration of

¹ That the complaints of the Protestants were well founded is evident from the secret instructions given, 20 February, 1552, by Julius III. to the Bishop of Monte Fiascone, when sending him as legate to Charles V. He was to explain to the Emperor that the council would not discuss the propositions of the heretics "*nimirum quod iudex non respondet parti, ne ex iudice se partem constituat*"; and he is further to explain that "*petentes commune concilium hæretici et schismatici repellendi sunt a conciliis universalibus . . . nullo modo communicandum esse concilium cum hæreticis et schismaticis, qui sunt extra ecclesiam . . . sed bene possunt admitti, ut possint interesse pro convincendis etiam pluries eorum erroribus.*" —Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. T. IV. p. 534-5.

² The feeling entertained by Pius towards the council is shown by his remark, in December 1561, to M. de Lisle, the French ambassador, that it had been called simply for the benefit of France: "*d'autant que ledit concile, qui est de peu de besoin pour le reste de la chrestienté, superflu aux Catholiques et non désiré des papes*" (Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. IV. 742).

³ The characteristic correspondence is in Le Plat, IV. 678-87.

the Church could not restrain their impatience. In 1536, Paul III., who earnestly admitted the necessity of some reform, called to his aid nine of his prelates most eminent for virtue and piety, as a commission to prepare a scheme for internal reformation.¹ According to a papal historian, his object in this was to stop the mouths of the heretics who found in the Roman court an inexhaustible subject of declamation.² For two years the commission laboured at its work, and finally produced the "Consilium de emendanda ecclesia," to which allusion has been made above.

The stern and unbending Cardinal Caraffa was head of the commission, assisted by such men as Contarini, Sadoleto, and Reginald Pole. They seem to have been inspired with a sincere desire to root out the chief abuses which gave such power to the assaults of the Protestants, and the result of their labours affords us a picture of ecclesiastical corruptions almost as damaging to the Church as the complaints of the Diet of Nürnberg. As regards celibacy, they were disposed to make no concession; indeed, they protest against the facility with which men in holy orders were able to purchase from the Roman Curia dispensations to marry. It is significant, however, that they had so little confidence in the possibility of purifying the conventual religious Orders that they actually recommended their abolition. To prevent individual cases of suffering they proposed that the convents should not be immediately abolished, but that all novices should be discharged and no

¹ Charles declares that at the commencement of his pontificate Paul was earnestly desirous of reforming the abuses of the Church, but that his zeal rapidly diminished, and he followed the example of Clement in contenting himself with empty promises.—"Com tudo despois com o tempo aquellas mostras e ardor primeiro se foi esfriando, e seguindo os passos e exemplo do Papa Clemente, com boas palavras prolongon e entretene sempre a convocação e ajuntamento do concilio" (Commentaires, p. 97).

² Per serrar la bocca agl' heretici i quali non facevano altro in voce et in scritto che dir male della corte di Roma.—Carraciolo, Vita di Paolo III. MS. Br. Mus. (Young, Life and Times of Aonio Paleario, I. 261.)

more be admitted, thus allowing the Orders to die out gradually, as had been done in Saxony; and meanwhile they urged that, to prevent further scandals, all nunneries should be removed from the supervision and direction of monks, and be handed over to the ordinaries.¹ The "Consilium," in fact, was so candid a confession of most of the abuses charged upon the Church by the reformers that Luther forthwith translated it and published it with a commentary, as an effective pamphlet in aid of his cause. Caraffa himself, after he had attained the papacy, under the name of Paul IV., quietly put his own work, in 1559, into the *Index Librorum Prohibitorum*.²

However earnest Paul may have been, the changes recommended in the "Consilium" attacked too many vested interests for even the papal power to give it effect. The project therefore was dropped, and only resulted in rendering still more clamorous the call for a reform in the head and members of the Church. As, moreover, it had shown the powerlessness of the papacy to overcome acknowledged abuses, the only hope of a radical change, such as was needful, was seen to lie in the untrammelled debates of a great assembly, which should meet as a parliament of the nations; and the prospect of this grew more and more distant. While the project of transferring the council from Trent was being matured, it occurred to the papal court that possibly the objections to that measure and the pressure on the council for a thorough reformation

¹ *Concilium de Emendanda Ecclesia* (Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. II. 601, 602).

² It has been customarily stated by Catholic writers that this proceeding of Paul IV. was directed not against his own work, but against the heretically commented editions, but in the *Index* of 1559 the entry is simply "Liber inscrip. : *Consilium de emendanda ecclesia*."—Reusch, *Die Indices Librorum Prohibitorum*, p. 194 (Tübingen, 1886).

Father Catalani, in his work on the Congregation of the Index, gives a detailed account of the affair. He does not pretend that the prohibition of the *Consilium* was directed against the heretic editions, and justifies it as the prudent suppression of matter that was dangerous.—Catalani de *Secretario Congr. Indicis*, pp. 45-50 (Roma, 1751).

might be averted by showing a disposition on the part of Rome to undertake the task of cleansing the Augean stable. It was also recognised as an important gain if the council could be confined to the harmless task of defining questions of faith, while the substantial powers involved in reforming the corruptions of the Church could be claimed and exercised by the Pope. Accordingly Pius III. drew up an elaborate bull designed to limit some of the more flagrant pecuniary abuses which existed, and exhorting the bishops to correct the morals of their subordinates. This was sent to the legates at Trent, but they and their confidants unanimously agreed that, in the existing temper of the council, the promulgation of such a document would be in the highest degree imprudent. It was accordingly suppressed, and only saw the light in the nineteenth century.¹ In its failure the Church lost but little, for it touched the evils of the time with a tender and hesitating hand, and would have proved utterly inefficacious.

At length, when shortly afterwards the unmannerly urgency of the Germans, clamouring for decided measures of reform, was met by the translation of the council to Bologna in 1547, and men despaired of further results from it, Charles V. resolved to take the matter into his own hands, and to effect, for his own dominions at least, that which had been vainly expected of the council for Christendom. The "Interim," which has already been alluded to, was intended to answer this purpose, as far as Lutheranism was concerned, in healing the breach of religion. The other great object of the council, the restoration of the neglected discipline of the Church, he attempted to effect by means of the secular authority of the empire acting on the regular machinery of the Teutonic ecclesiastical establishment. How utterly neglected that discipline had become is inferable from an expression in the important and carefully

¹ Published by Clausen, Copenhagen, 1829.

drawn project which had been laid by Charles before the Diet of Ratisbon in 1541, to the effect that if the canon requiring celibacy was to be enforced, it would be necessary also to revive those canons which punished incontinence, thus admitting that there existed no check whatever upon either priestly marriage or immorality.¹

To accomplish this desirable revival of discipline he accordingly caused the adoption by the Diet of Augsburg of a code of reformation, well adapted, if enforced, to restore the long-forgotten purity of the Church, while at the same time it acknowledged that the degeneracy of the times rendered impossible the resuscitation of the ancient canons in their strictness. Thus, after reciting the canon of Neocæsarea (see Vol I.), it adds, that as such severity was now impracticable, those in holy orders convicted of impurity should be separated from their concubines, and visited with suspension from function and benefice proportioned to the gravity of the offence. A repetition of the fault was punishable with increased severity, and incorrigible sinners who were found to be incapable of reformation were finally to be deprived of their benefices. As concubines were threatened with immediate excommunication, it is evident that a severity was designed towards them which was not ventured on with respect to their more guilty partners. Relaxation of the rules is also observable in the section which, despite the Nicene canon, permitted the residence of women over forty years of age, whose character and conduct relieved them from suspicion.² The imperative injunctions of chastity laid upon the regular clergy, canons, and nuns show not only the determination to remove the prevailing scandals, but also the magnitude and extent of the evil.³

Nor was this all. Local councils were ordered for the

¹ Lib. ad Ration, Concord. ineundam Art. xxii § 13 (Goldast. II. 199).

² Formul. Reformat. cap. xvii. § 4 (Goldast II. 335).

³ Ibid. cap. iii. § 1, cap. v. §§ 7, 9.

purpose of embodying these decrees in their statutes and of carrying out with energy the reformation so earnestly desired. Thus, in November 1548, about five months after the diet, a synod assembled at Augsburg, which inveighed bitterly against the unclerical dress and pomp of the clergy, their habits of drunkenness, gluttony, licentiousness, tavern-lounging, and general disregard of discipline; and adopted a canon embracing the regulations enacted by the Emperor.¹ The Archbishop of Trèves did not wait for his synod, but issued, October 30th, a mandate especially directed against concubinary priests, in which he announced his intention of carrying out the reform commanded by Charles. He could find no reason more self-evident for the dislike and contempt felt by the people for so many of the clergy than the immorality of their lives, differing little, except in legality, from open marriage. “This vice, existing everywhere throughout our diocese, in consequence of the licence of the times and the neglect of the officials, we must eradicate. Therefore all of you, of what grade soever, shall dismiss your concubines within nine days, removing them beyond the bounds of your parishes, and be no longer seen to associate with loose and wanton women. Those who neglect this order shall be suspended from office and benefice, their concubines shall be excommunicated, and they themselves be brought before our synod to be presently held.”²

These were brave words, but when some three weeks later the synod had assembled, and the malefactors perchance brought before it, the good bishop found apparently that his flock was not disposed to submit quietly to the curtailment of privileges which had almost become imprescriptible. His tone accordingly was softened, for though he deprecated their immorality more strongly

¹ Synod. Augustan. ann. 1548 c. 10.

² Synod. Trevirens. ann. 1548.

than ever, and asserted his intention of enforcing his mandate, he condescended to argue at much length on the propriety of chastity, and even descended to entreaty, beseeching them to preserve the purity so essential to the character of the Church, the absence of which had drawn upon the clergy an odium which could scarce be described in words.¹ How slender was his success may be inferred from the fact that the next year he felt it necessary to hold another synod, in which he renewed and confirmed the proceedings of the former one, and endeavoured to reduce the monks and nuns of his diocese into some kind of subjection to the rules of discipline.²

The Archbishop of Cologne was as energetic as his brother of Trèves, with about equal success. On September 1st he issued the Augsburg Formula of Reformation, with a call for a synod to be held on October 2nd. At the same time he manifested his sense of the primary importance of correcting clerical immorality by promulgating a special mandate respecting concubinage. He asserted this to be the chief cause of the contempt popularly felt for the Church,³ and he ordered all ecclesiastics to send their women beyond the bounds of their parishes within nine days, under the penalties provided in the imperial decree. The synod was held at the time indicated, and, though it adopted no regular canons, it accepted the Augsburg Formula and the mandate of the archbishop, with a trifling alteration.⁴

This proved utterly ineffectual, for in March 1549 he assembled a provincial council, in which he deplored the licence of the times, which rendered the strictness of

¹ Synod. Trevirens. ann. 1548 cap. ii.

² Synod. Trevirens. II. ann. 1549 cap. xi., xix.

³ Mandat. de abjic. Concub. (Hartzheim VI. 353.)

⁴ Ibid. p. 358. A diocesan synod was also held at Liège, November 15, which gave offending clerks fifteen days to part with their concubines (Ibid VI. 395).

the ancient canons unadvisable, and he announced that it had been decided to proceed gradually with the intended reforms. As to the morals of the clergy, he stated that everywhere the cure of souls was delegated to improper persons, many of them living in the foulness of concubinage, in perpetual drunkenness, and in other infamous vices, encouraged by the negligence of bishops and the thirst of archdeacons for unhallowed gains. The unions of those who, infected by the new heresies, did not hesitate to enter into matrimony, were of course pronounced illicit and impious, their offspring illegitimate, and the parents anathematised; but for those who remained in the Church, yet submitted to no restraint upon their passions, a more merciful spirit was shown, for the punishments ordered by the Diet of Augsburg were somewhat lightened in their favour. The extreme licence of the period may be understood from another canon directed against the comedians, who, not content with the ordinary theatres, were in the habit of visiting the nunneries, where their profane plays and amatory acting excited to unholy desires the virgins dedicated to God.¹ No one acquainted with the coarseness of the drama of that rude age can doubt the propriety of the archbishop's reproof. Supplementary synods were also held, in October 1549 and February 1550, to perfect the details of a very thorough inquisitorial visitation of the whole province.

This visitation, so pompously heralded, did not take place. At a synod held in October 1550 the archbishop made sundry lame excuses for its postponement. Another synod was assembled in February 1551, at which we hear nothing more of it; but the prelates of the diocese were requested to collect such ancient and forgotten canons as they could find, which might be deemed advantageous

¹ Concil. Coloniens. ann. 1549 cap. Quibus possint.—Cap. de Monach. conjugat. Cap. de Concup. Monach.—Cap. Comœdias.

in the future ;¹ and with this the work of reformation in the province of Cologne appears to end.

In 1549, Ernest, Archbishop of Salzburg, assembled the synod of his extensive province, but when his clergy understood that it was intended to confirm the reformatory edict of the Emperor, they had the audacity to present a petition praying that the clause ordering the removal of their concubines should not be enforced. They declared that the attempt to do so would be attended with serious difficulty, and that it would lead to greater evils than it sought to remove, and they asked that the consideration of the matter should be referred to the general council, whose reassembling was no longer dreaded. The synod, with a proper sense of its dignity, refused to receive the shameless petition, and listened rather to those of its members who complained of the practice of the officials in receiving bribes for permitting illicit indulgences, and the representations of Duke William, of Bavaria, who asserted that the Lutheran heresy had been caused by the scandalous corruption of the Church. A canon was accordingly adopted which renewed the regulations of Basle and ordered the speedy removal of all recognised and notorious concubines.²

In October and November 1548, and April 1549, the Bishops of Paderborn, Wurzburg, and Strassburg held synods which adopted the reformatory measures decreed at Augsburg.³ These were preparatory to the metropolitan synod of Mainz, assembled in May 1549, which commanded that no one should be thereafter admitted to

¹ Hartzheim VI. 767, 781.

² Dalham; Concil. Salisburg. pp. 328, 337 (Concil. Salisburg. XLIV. can. vii.).

³ Gropp, Collect. Script. Wirceburg. I. 311.—Hartzheim VI. 359, 417. In the epistle convoking his council, Bishop Melchior of Wurzburg alluded passionately to the evils everywhere existing: "Videtis percussum pastorem; videtis oves dispersas; videtis impudentem peccandi licentiam; videtis adversus pietatem audaciam tum loquendi tum disputandi impiissimam, et indes scelerata gliscere schismata" (Ibid. X. 753).

orders without a preliminary examination by his bishop on the subject of doctrine, and testimonials from the people as to purity of character. After thus wisely providing for the future, attention was directed to the present. It was declared intolerable that, in spite of the reiterated prohibitions of the fathers and councils, concubines should be universally kept; the Basilian canon was therefore revived, and its enforcement strictly enjoined on the ordinaries, who were forbidden in any manner to connive at these disorders for the sake of profit.¹

The pressure was continued, for when Cambrai, which owed temporal obedience to the Emperor, while ecclesiastically it formed part of the province of Rheims, neglected to adopt the Formula of Augsburg for two years, it was not allowed to escape. In October 1550 a synod was finally assembled there under stringent orders from Charles, and the Formula was published, together with an elaborate series of canons which would have been well adapted to correct abuses that were not incorrigible.²

Charles had thus exerted all the resources of his imperial supremacy, and, whether willingly or not, the powerful prelates who ruled the German Church had united in carrying out his views. The temporal and spiritual authorities had thus been concentrated upon the vices of the Church, and if its reformation had been possible, in the existing condition of its organisation, some improvement must have resulted from these combined and persistent efforts. How nugatory were the results may be guessed from a memorial presented in 1558, by the University of Louvain, to Philip II., exhorting him to grant no toleration to the heretics, but at the same time urging upon him the absolute necessity of some compre-

¹ Concil. Mogunt. ann. 1549 c. 82, 102.

² Synod. Camerac. ann. 1550 (Hartzheim VI. 654).

hensive system of reform to purify the Church, all the orders of which were given over utterly to the twin vices of avarice and licentiousness.¹ The same testimony is borne by a consultation drawn up in 1562 by order of the Emperor Ferdinand. After alluding to the efforts at reform made by Paul III. and Charles V., it declares that their only result has been to make the condition of clerical morality worse than before, exciting the hatred of the people for their priests to an incredible pitch, and doing more to inflame the ardour of heresy than all the teaching of Christian truth can do to restrain it.²

As the failure of all efforts to improve clerical morality under the existing rules of discipline was thus found to be complete, there arose in the minds of thinking men a conviction, such as Erasmus had already declared, that, since all other measures had proved fruitless, the only mode of securing a virtuous clergy was to remove the prohibition of marriage. At the Polish Diet of 1552 petitions praying for sacerdotal matrimony were presented, and, though they failed in their object, the Diet of 1556 authorised King Sigismund Augustus to address Paul IV. with a request, in the name of the nation, to grant it as well as communion in both elements.³

The dissension thus existing within the Church is exhibited in a volume published in 1558 by Stanislas Hosius, Bishop of Ermeland, earnestly arguing against communion in both elements, clerical marriage, and the use of the vulgar tongue in worship. As regards celibacy, he assumes that it had been maintained unbrokenly for

¹ Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. IV. 611.

² Consult. Imp. Ferdinand (Le Plat, V. 235). It would be impossible to conceive a darker picture of clerical life than is given in this document. "Ejici autem nunc clerum, conculcari pedibus, pro nihilo haberi et tanquam publicum offendiculum devoveri diris aut paulo plus, tam verum est quam minime falsum, cleri mores insulsos esse, vanos esse, turpes esse, æque ecclesiæ perniciosos ac Deo execrabiles"—Ibid. p. 237.

³ Krasinski, Reformation in Poland, I. 190, 285.

fifteen hundred years, and was not now to be abandoned to gratify a few disorderly monks. The example of the Greek Church he meets by pointing out that the Greeks were suffered to be persecuted by the Turks; the argument that marriage would purify the Church he silences with the observation that many married men are adulterers; and he holds it to be a doubting of God to suppose that the gift of continence would be denied to those who properly seek it.¹ In spite of the logic of polemics such as Hosius, the opinions of the innovators continued to gain ground, until at length they won even the highest dignitaries of the empire, and in 1560 the Emperor Ferdinand himself undertook their advocacy with the Pope, after having for some years countenanced the practice within his own territories.

Almost immediately on the consecration of Pius IV., in addressing to him an argument for the reassembling of the Council of Trent, or the convocation of a new council, Ferdinand seized the opportunity to ask especially for the communication of the cup to the laity, and permission for the clergy to marry. The latter of these points he considered to be the only remedy for the fearful immorality of the Church, for, though all flesh was corrupt, the corruption of the priesthood surpassed that of all other men.² That he had not waited for the papal assent to

¹ Hosii Dialogus de ea num Calicem Laicis et Uxores Sacerdotibus permitti, etc. Dilingæ, 1558.

² Pallavicini, Storia del Concil. di Trento, Lib. XIV. c. 13.

Twelve years before, his uncle, the Bishop of Liège, in promulgating the Augsburg formula of reformation, had made a similar assertion: "Præterquam quod hoc infœlici sæculo, quo omnis caro corruptit viam suam, præsertimque ordo clericorum et ecclesiasticorum, nimium degenerant, plus quam unquam est necessaria"—Concil. Leodiens. ann. 1548 (Hartzheim VI. 392). The increased emphasis of Ferdinand is a measure of the success which had attended the reformatory movements of Charles V. during the interval.

In such a condition of ecclesiastical morality it is no wonder that even in orthodox Vienna the most popular theme on which preachers could expatiate was the corruption of the Church.—See the Emperor Ferdinand's secret instructions to his envoy in Rome, March 6, 1560, in *Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. IV. 622.*

favour these innovations within his own dominions is shown by his statement that the Archbishop of Salzburg had recently, in a synod, earnestly called upon him to put a stop to the progress which they were making, but, he added, his long experience in such matters had shown him what was possible and what impossible, and he had accordingly set forth the difficulties of the task in a paper addressed to the archbishop, a copy of which he enclosed to the Pope.¹

The nuncio Commendone, in transmitting this document to Rome, accompanied it with a letter from the Cardinal Bishop of Augsburg, recommending the postponement of the question until the reassembling of the Council of Trent, and, as Pius answered it in this sense, no further action was taken, though Ferdinand made haste to repeat his demand, in view of the impatience of both clergy and people, who could ill brook the delays inseparable from the discussion of the subject in so unwieldy a body.² When Commendone, moreover, passed through Cleves on his way to the council, then about to be reopened, the Duke of Cleves earnestly besought him to lend his influence to the accomplishment of the measure, urging as a reason that in the whole of his dominions—and he was sovereign of three populous duchies—there could not be found five priests who did not keep concubines. In order to secure his favour for the approaching council, Commendone did not scruple to hold out expectations that the concessions would be granted.³

During the progress of the Reformation, when the fate of the Catholic Church of Germany had sometimes seemed

1 Pallavicini, *loc. cit.* That the Catholic Church of Germany had become widely infected with this Lutheran heresy is also shown by the fact that in 1548 the Archbishop of Cologne had found it necessary to prohibit throughout his province all marriages of priests, monks, and nuns, and had pronounced illegitimate the offspring of such unions.—Hartzheim VI. 357.

2 Le Plat, *Monument. Concil. Trident. IV.* 644.

3 Pallavicini, *Lib. xv. c. 5.*—The duke, though no bigot, was a good Catholic.

to hang in the balance, no princes had earned a larger title to the gratitude of Rome than the powerful Dukes of Bavaria, who were the leaders of the reaction. Yet now the influence of that important region was thrown in favour of the abrogation of celibacy, and Duke Albert was the first who boldly brought the matter before the council by a demand for ecclesiastical marriage, presented on 27 June, 1562. To this the evasive answer was returned that the council would take such action as would be found to redound to the glory of God and to the benefit of the Church.¹ During the same year the Emperor Ferdinand also repeatedly urged its consideration. A plan for the reform of the Church presented by his delegates not only called attention to the necessity of purifying the morals of the regular and secular clergy, but demanded that, to some nations at least, the privilege of sacerdotal marriage should be conceded.² Another elaborate paper argued the question with much temperate force, and declared that many priests had already married for the purpose of escaping the corruptions of celibacy, while studiously preserving themselves from the errors of Lutheranism. Out of a hundred parish priests scarcely one could be found who was not either openly or secretly married, and it was necessary to tolerate them to prevent the utter destruction of the Church.³

A third document is extant, without date, which was laid before the cardinals of the papal court by the Emperor, in which the question was argued at considerable length and with much vehemence. After asserting that, from the records of the primitive Church, celibacy was not then recognised as imperative, it proceeded to declare that if

¹ Pallavicini, Lib. XVII. c. 4. At the request of Duke Albert, the question was also mooted at the provincial synod of Salzburg, held in 1562 for the purpose of sending delegates to Trent.—Hartzheim VII. 230.

² Articuli de Reform. Eccles. No. 14, 15, 18.—Goldast. II. 376.

³ Consultat. Imp. Ferdinandi (Le Plat, V. 249, 252).

marriage ever were permissible, the present carnal and licentious age rendered it a necessity, for not one Catholic priest out of fifty could be found who lived chastely. All were asserted to be notoriously dissolute, scandalising the people and inflicting great damage on the Church. The request was made not so much to satisfy the priests who desired marriage as to meet the wishes of the laity, for many patrons of livings refused presentation to all but married men. However preferable a single life might be for the clergy, it therefore was thought better to give it up than to leave open the door to the scandalous impurities traceable to celibacy. Another weighty reason was alleged in the great scarcity of priests, caused alone by the prohibition of marriage, in proof of which it was urged that the Catholic schools of divinity were all but empty and the episcopal function of ordination nearly disused, while the Lutheran colleges were crowded by those who subsequently obtained admission into the true Church, where they worked incredible mischief. The argument that the temporal possessions of the Church would be imperilled by sacerdotal matrimony was met by indignantly denouncing the worldly wisdom which would protect such perishable interests at the cost of innumerable souls sacrificed by the existing condition of affairs. For these and other reasons it asked that marriage should in future be allowed to all the priesthood, whether already in orders or to be subsequently admitted: that married men of good character and education should be ordained to supply the want of pastors: that those who had contracted matrimony, in contravention of the canons, should no longer be ejected, seeing that it was most absurd to turn out men because they were married, while retaining notorious concubinarians, and that if, with equal justice, both classes should be dismissed, the people would be left almost, if not entirely, destitute of spiritual guides. The paper concluded by asserting that if the prayer be

granted the clergy could be retained in the Church and in the faith, to the great benefit of their flocks, and that the scandal of promiscuous licentiousness, which had involved the Church in so much disgrace, would be removed.¹

This vivid sketch of the condition of the church, with the evils which were everywhere felt, and the remedies which suggested themselves to clear-sighted and impartial men, was as ineffectual as other similar efforts had been, for to all such arguments the Council of Trent was deaf. France, too, was more than willing to see celibacy abolished. M. de Lanssac, the French ambassador, was ordered to place himself in close relations with the representatives of the Emperor, and to unite with them in seeking the relaxation of all regulations which tended to prevent the reunion of the Protestants, while the Gallican bishops were commanded to show themselves reasonable and yielding in such matters: and when Lanssac reported the demands of the Emperor, comprehending clerical marriage among other changes, Charles IX. assented to them in terms of warm commendation.² The Cardinal of Lorraine, moreover, was instructed to urge some measures efficient to reform the licentious lives of the ecclesiastics, which spread corruption and debauchery among the people, while permission for priestly marriage was recommended as one of the means essential to recall the heretics to the bosom of the true Church.³ As a compromise, however, the French prelates contented themselves with suggesting that none but elderly men should be eligible to the priesthood, and that the testimony of the people in favour of

¹ Considerat. Cæsar. Majest. sup. Matrim. Sacerd. Nos. 6, 7, 8, 10, 11, 12, 13, 15, 16, 17 (Goldast. II. 382-3—Le Plat, VI. 315).

The scarcity of priests in Germany, with resulting neglect of religion, was no new thing, and had been strongly represented in 1542 by the nuncio Morone. He attributed it to the popular contempt felt for ecclesiastics, and said that, although some bishops maintained training seminaries, the scholars, when they acquired a little learning, mostly became Lutherans.—Lämmer, Monumentt. Vaticana p. 398.

² Le Plat, V. 154, 208, 211.

³ Ibid. 562-3.

their moral character should be a prerequisite to ordination, in hopes that by such means the necessary purification of the clergy at least could be effected, while the sharpest measures should be adopted to punish their licentiousness.¹

All this was useless, and, in fact, it is difficult to imagine how any one could expect a reform of this nature from a body composed of prelates all of whom were obliged by Pius IV., in a decree of 4 September, 1560, to solemnly swear to a profession of faith containing a specific declaration that the vows of chastity inferred on entering into holy orders, or assumed in embracing monastic life, were to be strictly observed and enforced.² The question thus was prejudged, and the council was more likely to listen to Bartholomew a Martyribus, the Archbishop of Bracara, who laid before them a paper containing the points which, in his opinion, required reformation, among which were the revival of the canons respecting concubinary bishops and priests, the prohibition of sons succeeding to their fathers' benefices, and the excommunication of confessors who debauched their fair penitents³—though when the sturdy archbishop in a stormy debate declared that “*illustrissimi cardinales egent illustrissima reformatione*,” he doubtless was held to be a most uncourtly and impracticable reformer.

Despite all the urgency from without, it was not until 8 February, 1563, after the council had been in session for more than a year, that the theologians at last arranged for disputation the articles on matrimony, and laid them before the council for discussion. They were divided into five

¹ *Capi dati da' Francesi cap. 1.*—(Baluz. et Mansi IV. 374) Comp. Zaccaria, pp. 133–4.

² *Votum castitatis sacris ordinibus conjunctum, atque vota quæ in probatis religionibus emittuntur, et alia quæcunque rite suscepta, fideliter sunt observanda.*—Le Plat, IV. 649.

³ *Ibid.* IV. 756, 760, 761, 765.—The 182 articles which, according to Archbishop Bartholomew, required reform in the internal discipline of the Church form as damaging a commentary upon its condition as any of the attacks of the Protestants.

classes, of which the fourth was devoted to the bearing of the subject on the clergy, consisting of two propositions—the fifth and sixth—artfully drawn up to justify rejection, while preserving the appearance of presenting the subject for deliberation—That matrimony was preferable to celibacy, and that God bestowed grace on the married rather than on the single.—That the priests of the Western Church could lawfully contract marriage, notwithstanding the canons ; that to deny this was to condemn matrimony, and that all were at liberty to marry who did not feel themselves graced with the gift of chastity.¹

The disputation on the various questions connected with matrimony commenced the next day, and was continued at intervals for six months. Meanwhile there were negotiations on foot between Rome and Vienna, negotiations complicated by various factors. The Pope and the Curia were wrathful at the reforms enacted and projected by the council, and were anxious to dissolve it at any cost, while the Emperor Ferdinand was resolved to prolong its sessions until he should obtain his desires. Then he had had his son Maximilian, King of Bohemia, elected as King of the Romans, 24 November, 1562, sorely against the will of Pius IV., who had vainly threatened to deprive the Lutheran electors of their votes and then secretly to restore them on condition of their electing Philip II. of Spain. Failing in this, as the Holy See claimed the right of confirming the election, he demanded that Maximilian should take an oath practically of allegiance to Rome, which was naturally refused. Maximilian, in fact, had long been suspected of Lutheran proclivities ; in 1557 we find him described as keeping a married Lutheran preacher, while the most influential members of his court were Lutherans, and he felt the necessity of friendly relations with the

¹ Art. v.—Lettere del Arcivesc. Calini (Baluz et Mansi IV. 295).—Le Plat, V. 674.

Lutheran princes, whose support was indispensable against the Turk. The ecclesiastical electors (Mainz, Trèves, and Cologne) had hesitated to give him their votes till they had assurances which satisfied them, but not the more incredulous Curia. Philip II. seems to have had no aspirations for the imperial crown, but he was fanatically opposed to any concessions to the heretics, whether these concerned the use of the cup or priestly marriage, and through his representatives at Rome and Trent he ceaselessly brought to bear against them the utmost weight of his great influence.¹

Our knowledge of the moves in this complicated game is but fragmentary. We hear of a letter, in April 1562, in which Ferdinand claims priestly marriage as a thing promised to him by Pius in order to have an end put to the council, and other letters in which he threatens that if his requests are denied he will assemble a national council and proclaim an Interim worse than that of Charles V. ; or else that Germany would withdraw from the Roman obedience, as there was no other remedy to satisfy his people. These threats greatly troubled the Pope, who begged Philip to send to Germany a personage of importance to represent that if Ferdinand separated himself from the Holy See he would become a heretic and his children would be incapacitated from inheriting his dominions. Not relying on Philip's intervention, in May he sent Cardinal Morone ostensibly as legate to the council, but with instructions to tarry there only twenty-four hours, and hasten to Vienna. In reporting this to Philip, his ambassador Vargas expresses the liveliest apprehensions that it would result in the concession of the cup to the laity and marriage to priests, so earnestly demanded by the Germans and

¹ Döllinger, Beiträge zur politischen, kirchlichen und Cultur-Geschichte, I. 241-3, 329-40, 397-8, 526-9, 554 (Regensburg, 1862).

This is a series of despatches between Philip and his envoys which throw much light on the secret history of this tortuous diplomacy.

French, for the Pope had shown himself so yielding and so inclined to make the grant, and he could readily control the council if he did not care himself to take the responsibility of what would set the world ablaze. What terms were reached between Ferdinand and Morone it would be impossible to say, but that a bargain was concluded was generally understood. In fact, in March 1564 Pius admitted in consistory that he had made promises to Ferdinand in order to hasten the dissolution of the council.¹ Possibly it was in concert with this that, as reported in August 1563 by the nuncio Delfini from Vienna, the three ecclesiastical electors, the Archbishop of Salzburg, and the Duke of Bavaria held a conference, in which it was resolved to unite with the Emperor in an appeal for bulls permitting priestly marriage and communion in both elements.² In pursuance of this, early in September Ferdinand wrote to his ambassadors at Trent that he had called together in Vienna the deputies of the electors and princes of the empire, who, after mature deliberation, had determined to ask these concessions of the Pope and not of the council. He enclosed a protocol of the demand, but as it was not fully settled, it was to be communicated to no one but to Philip's ambassador, the Count of Luna, whereupon Philip persuaded him to withhold it until after the council should be dissolved.³ A further move in the game, with the same purpose, was a promise, later in the autumn, by Pius, that when the council should be out of the way he

¹ Döllinger, *op. cit.* pp. 523, 545-6, 555.

² *Lettere del Nunzio Visconti*, n. LXIX (Ed. Amstelod. II. 299). This and the concluding letters are not in Mansi's edition.

Sarpi tells us (*Istoria del Concilio Tridentino*, Lib. VIII. Ed. Helmstat, II. 315) that in the spring of 1563 the Bavarians rose in revolt and demanded the cup and priestly marriage, when the Duke was obliged to make a promise to his Diet that, if the concessions were not made in June by either the council or the Pope he would himself grant them. The threatened defection of this Catholic stronghold caused such alarm that the legates despatched Niccolo Ormanetto to the Duke to induce him to withdraw his promise, under a pledge that the council would take such action as would satisfy his people.

³ Pallavicini, Lib. XXII. cap. 10.—Döllinger, I. 568.

would send a legate, with full powers to dispense in the matters of the cup, of clerical marriage, and of the retention of Church lands, while Maximilian should treat with the Protestants for their return to the Church under these concessions.¹

Evidently the honest Germans were ill fitted to cope with Italian diplomacy. Relying on papal promises, they held their hands off from the council, which enabled the Pope to control it absolutely through his legates.² Accordingly it went on its accustomed way to render the breach with Protestantism as impassable as possible. Pallavicini doubtless correctly represents its views when he remarks, concerning the princes who exerted themselves to secure sacerdotal marriage, that they seemed to consider that the council had been convoked for the purpose not of condemning but of contenting the heretics, whom they proposed to convert by gratifying in place of repressing their contumacious desires.³

The result of thus skilfully shielding the council from all pressure from Germany and France was that the question of retaining sacerdotal celibacy was prevented from becoming the subject of serious debate. This, indeed, was a foregone conclusion. In the minute account, transmitted from day to day by Archbishop Calini to Cardinal Cornaro, in which all the details of internal discussion and external intrigue attainable by a quick-witted member of the council were reported, there is no allusion to the matter. No debates or diversity of opinion are mentioned, no intimation that the matter was regarded as open to a doubt, and even the appeals made by the Emperor and other potentates are passed over in

¹ Döllinger, I. 538.

² Vargas, writing to Philip, 20 May, 1563, when he was fearing that the Pope would yield, describes the ease with which he could control the council: "Sin tener los pobres hombres mas boca y vigor que lo que los dichos legadas quieren ó insinuan como muchas veces ha dicho, y que genero de gentes son aquellas."—Ibid. p. 523.

³ Pallavicini, Lib. xvii. cap. 4.

silence, for the very sufficient reason that the papal legates, who controlled all the business of the council, refused to allow them to be read.¹ In their reply to the Emperor's remonstrances, indeed, they declared that to have such a subject publicly broached in the council would create a fearful scandal throughout Christendom, and Pius IV. approved of their answer as the best that could be given.² It is no wonder, therefore, that in the correspondence of the nuncio Visconti the only allusion to the matter is a simple reference, under date of 22 March, 1563, to the demand previously made by the Duke of Bavaria.³

In fact, when, on March 4, the 5th and 6th articles were reached, they were both unanimously pronounced heretical without any prolonged debate. Doctor Juan de Ludeña pronounced a "disputation" on the subject, the tone of which showed that the result was already decided, and that the only disposition of the council was to vilify those who desired the abrogation of celibacy.⁴ A discussion, however, then arose as to the power of the Pope to dispense the clergy, both regular and secular, from the obligation of celibacy, and on this point there was considerable diversity of opinion, occupying numerous successive meetings in its settlement. The majority were in favour of the papal power, and its exercise in the existing condition of the Church was even recommended by those who recognised the evils of the system, but shrank from the responsibility of themselves introducing the innovation.

¹ See the apologetic letter of the nuncio to the Emperor, 19 January, 1562 (Le Plat, op. cit. V. 320). Ferdinand remonstrated earnestly, but did not venture to rebel against their decision (Ibid. 351-60).

² Ibid. p. 388.

³ Lettere del Nunzio Visconti (Baluz. et Mansi, III. 453).

⁴ Disputat. Joann. de Ludegna (Harduin. X. 359). The learned doctor presents his argument in the form of a colloquy between himself and Calvin, and its spirit may be gathered from the first speech of Calvin, in which he is made to declare that he is endeavouring to find arguments with which to defend himself and his apostate strumpets.

This was promptly rebuked by the conservatives, according to Fra Paolo, with the remark that a prudent physician would not attempt to cure one disease by bringing on a greater.¹ It was not, however, until November 11 that the canons on matrimony were finally adopted and formally published. Of these there are two relating to our subject. The first one pronounced the dread anathema on all who should dare to assert that clerks in holy orders, monks, or nuns could contract marriage, or that such a marriage was valid, since God would not deny the gift of chastity to those who rightly sought it, nor would He expose us to temptation beyond our strength. The other similarly anathematised all who dared to assert that the married state was more worthy than virginity, or that it was not better to live in celibacy than married.² In the preliminary congregation, held October 13, they had been adopted without a dissenting voice, save that the Archbishop of Sens and the Bishop of Verdun desired the words “non obstante lege ecclesiastica vel voto” to be omitted from the ninth canon.³ The tenth canon, though directed against the Protestants, was by no means uncalled-for among Catholics. About this period the Spanish Inquisition commenced to treat as a heresy the assertion that the married state is preferable to the celibacy prescribed for the clergy, when the number of cases which speedily appeared in the records and continued for nearly a century

¹ Sarpi, Lib. vii. (Opere, II. 280.)

² Concil. Trident. Sess. xxiv. De Sacrament. Matrimon.

Can. ix. Si quis dixerit clericos in sacris ordinibus constitutos, vel regulares castitatem solemniter professos, posse matrimonium contrahere, contractumque validum esse, non obstante lege ecclesiastica vel voto; et oppositum nihil aliud esse quam damnare matrimonium; posseque omnes contrahere matrimonium, qui non sentiunt se castitatis, etiamsi eam voverint, habere donum; anathema sit; quum Deus id recte petentibus non deneget, nec patiatur nos supra id quod possumus tentari.

Can. x. Si quis dixerit statum conjugalem anteponendum esse statui virginitatis vel cœlibatus, et non esse melius ac beatius manere in virginitate aut cœlibatu, quam jungi matrimonio, anathema sit.

³ Theiner, Acta genuina Concilii Tridentini, II., 428, 429 (Zagrabice, 1874).

show how widely spread and persistent among the people was this belief.¹

Thus, while keeping the Germans and French quiet with delusive promises, the Church devoted its energies to the miserable task of separating itself as widely as possible from those who had left it. Its rulers seemed to imagine that their only hope of safety lay in entrenching themselves behind the exaggerations of those particular points of policy which had afforded to their adversaries the fairest chances of attack. The faithful throughout Germany might suffer from the absence of the ministers of Christ, or might endure yet more from the unrestrained passions of wolves in sheep's clothing let loose among their wives and daughters, but the Church militant in this conjuncture dreaded even more to lose the aid of that monastic army which, in theory at least, had no earthly object but the service of St. Peter; it selfishly feared that the parish priest who might legitimately see his fireside surrounded by a happy group of wife and children would lose the devotion which a man without ties should entertain for the prosperity and glory of the ecclesiastical establishment; and perhaps, more than all, it saw with terror avaricious princes eager for the secularisation of that immense property to which it owed so large a portion of the splendour which dazzled mankind, of the influence which rendered it powerful, and of the luxury which made its high places attractive to the ambitious and able men who controlled its destiny. To put an end, therefore, at once and for ever, to the mutterings of dissatisfaction among those who compared the domestic life of the Protestant pastors with the reckless self-indulgence of the ministers of the old religion, it was resolved to place the canon of celibacy in a position where none of the orthodox should dare to attack it, and to accomplish this the simple

¹ See the author's *History of the Inquisition of Spain*, vol. iv. p. 144.

rule of discipline was elevated to the dignity of a point of belief. As the Church had already been forced, in defending the rule from the assaults of the Reformers, to attribute to it apostolic origin, we may not perhaps be surprised that it was made a point of doctrine, but we cannot easily appreciate the reasons that would justify the anathema launched against all who regarded the marriage of those in holy orders as binding. The dissolution of such marriages, as we have seen, was not suggested until the middle of the twelfth century, and the decision of the council thus condemned as heretics the whole body of the Church during three-quarters of its previous existence.

Although the doctrinal canon threw the responsibility of priestly unchastity upon God, yet as the council had so peremptorily refused to adopt the remedy urged by the princes of the empire, it did not hesitate to employ human means to remove, if possible, the scandals which God had had permitted to afflict the Church. The decree of reformation, published in December 1563, contained provisions intended to curb the vice which the Tridentine fathers, with all their reliance on Divine power, well knew to be ineradicable. These provisions, however, were little more than a repetition of what we have seen enacted in every century since Siricius. Any ecclesiastic guilty of keeping a concubine, or woman liable to suspicion, was admonished ; disregarding this first warning, he was deprived of one-third of his revenue ; if still contumacious, suspension from functions and benefice followed ; and a persistence in guilt was then visited with irrevocable deprivation. No appeal from a sentence could gain exemption ; these cases were removed from the jurisdiction of inferior officials and confided to the bishops, who were enjoined to be prompt and severe in their decisions ; while guilty bishops were liable to suspension by their provincial synods, and, if irreclaimable, were sent to Rome for punishment. The

illegitimate children of priests were pronounced incapable of preferment. Those already in orders, if employed in their fathers' parishes, were required, under pain of deprivation, to exchange their positions within three months for preferment elsewhere, and any provision made by a clerical parent for the benefit of his children was pronounced to be a fraud.¹

Such were the regulations which this great general council of the Catholic Church considered sufficient to relieve the establishment of the curse which had hung around it for a thousand years. There is nothing in them that had not been tried a hundred times before, with what success the foregoing pages may attest. In some respects, indeed, they were not as prompt and efficacious as the decrees which Charles V. and his bishops had promulgated a few years previous, and which had proved so lamentably inefficient. There were not wanting enlightened members of the council who bitterly felt the inefficiency of what they were doing, but the undignified haste of the closing sessions, and the domination of Rome, rendered them unable to accomplish more. As the Bishop of Astorga said in a letter to Granvelle, "They are not as we would have wished, to correct the abuses and scandals of the Church, which cause so many to fall into error, but we have to do what we are permitted to do, not what we would wish to do."² Heretics, indeed, who asserted that there was in reality no intention of suppressing concubinage, could point in justification to the curious fact that, while previous councils had provided heavy penalties against the concubines of priests, that of Trent passed them over as though they were guiltless.

Within two months after the dissolution of the council,

¹ Concil. Trident. Sess. xxv. Decret. de Reformat. cap. 14, 15.

² *Ma noi facciamo quello che ci si permette di fare, non quello che vorremmo.*—*Examinatore*, Firenze, 1868, p. 15.

Ferdinand and Albert of Bavaria presented to the Pope their requests, which were more moderate than might have been expected. The two papers were essentially the same. In the name of the princes of the empire, after demanding the communion in both elements for the laity, they proceeded to argue earnestly for the other concession. In place of asking, as before, the privilege for the clergy at large, they now reduced their entreaties to the simple request of allowing such Catholic priests as had entered into matrimony to retain their wives and perform their functions, which they assured the Pope was absolutely essential to the preservation of the fragments of the Church still doing battle with the prevailing heresies throughout Germany.¹ They likewise asked

¹ Goldast. II. 380.—Le Plat, VI. 310, 312.

It is observable from this that many priests left the Church and married without formally embracing the Lutheran faith, and a return of these was anticipated from a relaxation of the canons. Others, as may be gathered from various references above, married and still performed their regular duties. Of these, some no doubt acted in virtue of dispensations granted by the nuncios of Paul III., after the promulgation of the Interim, but many did so in utter contempt of discipline. An illustrative example of the latter class may be found in the well-known Stanislas Orzechowski, whose marriage, notwithstanding his prominent position, shows the laxity of opinion which prevailed on the subject. As priest and canon of Przemysl in Poland, his marriage naturally gave great offence to his colleagues, which was not diminished by a dissertation which he wrote in favour of priestly marriage. This, he subsequently claimed, had been prepared for the purpose of laying it before the Council of Trent, and its publication had arisen from the indiscretion of a friend to whom he had entrusted it. Somewhat contaminated with the new ideas by his education at Wittenberg, he sturdily refused to give up either his wife or his position. His consequent excommunication he disregarded, though according to his own account he gave up on marrying his benefices and the ministry (*Lettera a Guilio III. trad. di B. Leoni, Milano, anno. VI.*), and notwithstanding this he had a very narrow escape from the death penalty, and his condemnation excited a commotion throughout Poland that was very favourable to the spread of the reformed opinions (*Orichovii Annales, pp. 71-84, 108, Ed. 1854*). At length the feeling against the pretensions of the Church became so strong that the diet of 1552 removed all the civil and temporal penalties of excommunication, so that he triumphed for the time, especially as Sigismund II. included priestly marriage among the concessions which he requested of Paul IV. (*Herzog, Abriss. III. 241.*) When in 1556 the legate Lippomani held a synod at Lovictz, he called to account those who had connived at so great an irregularity. They denied granting the dispensation, saying that they had only suspended the censures until the pleasure of the Pope should be known, but at the same time many prelates used all their influence with Lippomani to obtain one. Lippomani declared that he had no power to grant it, nor would he do so if

that in such places as could not obtain a sufficiency of pastors, the bishops should be empowered to ordain married laymen of approved piety, learning, and fitness.

These appeals were successful as far as communion in both elements was concerned, for, on April 16, Pius granted that concession under certain conditions. The subject of priestly marriage, however, he still postponed, and on June 17 we find Ferdinand writing to Cardinal Morone, to express his thanks for what he had obtained, and to urge the other subject on the consideration of the papal court. He had instructed his ambassador, he said, to press it earnestly, and he besought the Cardinal to aid in so pious and advantageous a work.¹

Nor was this the only means which Ferdinand, then verging rapidly to the grave, adopted to attain the object

he could, seeing that Orzechowski defended himself on heretical grounds (Concil. Lovitiens.—Labbei et Coleti Supp. T. V. p. 702). In 1561 Orzechowski, in his address to the synod of Warsaw, admitted that he had sinned, but claimed that he had been punished sufficiently—"Si quis igitur a me quærat : Num uxorem sacerdos duxerim? Duxisse me fatebor. Peccasti igitur? Peccavi. Pœnas ergo peccati debes? Debui et persolvi " (Doctrina de Sacerd. Cœlibatu, Varsaviæ, 1801). He therefore complained of the persecutions to which he was exposed on account of his wife, and he petitioned both the Pope and the Council of Trent for a dispensation. While the Tridentine fathers refused it, some authors assert that it was granted by Pius IV. to him as an exceptional case "tibi soli Orichovio," but careful investigation has failed to discover the brief, and, according to Zaccaria, the Pope merely sent secret orders to his legate Commendone not to allow Orzechowski to be molested, but at the same time to give no publicity to an act of tolerance in contravention of the canons of the Council of Trent (Grégoire, Hist. du Mariage des Prêtres en France, pp. 51-55).

In his answer to Fricius, Orzechowski assumes that he was absolved from his excommunication by the legate—"Præterea a sententia excommunicationis, qua eram a Joanne Episcopo Premisliensi, ob hanc eandem uxorem, ex ecclesia pulsus, a Legato Romani Petri absolutus cum sim, nihil feci contra illum" (*ap. Doctrin. de Sacerd. Cœlibat.* p. 24). He also alleges the extraordinary excuse that he abandoned the priesthood before his marriage.

The history of Orzechowski, with probably a less fortunate result, is no doubt that of innumerable others, whose obscurity has prevented their sufferings from being known beyond their own narrow circle.

Strype (Annals, I. 485-6) asserts that after the accession of Queen Elizabeth the Catholic emissaries in England had a general dispensation to marry, in order to assist their concealment and to further the design of creating schism in the Anglican Church. He gives as his authority one Malachi Malone a converted Irish friar.

¹ Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. VI. 331.

of his unwearied pursuit. Georg Witzel had thrown aside the monastic gown in 1531, to embrace the errors of Lutheranism, but had returned to the old religion. His learning and piety earned for him a deserved reputation, and elevated him to the position of imperial councillor, where his talents were devoted to the endless task of bringing about a reconciliation between the Churches. George Cassander, equally eminent, had never incurred the imputation of apostacy, but had laboured with tireless industry to convert his erring brethren from heresy to the true faith. Men like these might perhaps be heard when the voice of princes and prelates, actuated by motives of personal advantage, met a deaf ear; and Ferdinand applied to them for disquisitions on the subject.¹ Before their labours were concluded the monarch was dead (July 25, 1564), but his son Maximilian II. inherited his father's ideas, and gladly made use of the opinions which the learned Catholic doctors had no hesitation in expressing.

Both took strong ground against celibacy. Cassander, while defending the Church for originally introducing the rule, deplored the terrible and abominable scandals which its untimely enforcement caused throughout the Church, and he urged that the reasons which had led to its introduction not only existed no longer, but had even become arguments for its abrogation, since now the choice lay only between married priests and concubinarians. He declared it to be the source of numerous evils, chief among which was promiscuous and unbridled licentiousness, and he added that the already scanty ranks of the priesthood were de-

¹ This was not his first attempt of this kind. In 1540 he had called upon John Cochläus to examine the Confession of Augsburg and report as to what points were reconcilable with Catholicism and what were not. Cochläus responded in an elaborate dissertation, wherein he took strong ground against abandoning celibacy, but admitted that he was utterly unable to suggest any remedy for the evils resulting from it—especially the “*scandalosus presbyterorum in seculo concubinatus, præsertim apud plebanos in pagis, qui communiter cum ancillis rem domesticam gubernare necessitate quadam coguntur.*”—*Le Plat*, II. 667.

prived of the accessions which were so necessary, since men of a religious turn of mind were prevented from taking orders by the universal wickedness which prevailed under the excuse of celibacy, while pious parents kept their sons from entering the Church for fear of debauching their morals. On the other hand, those who sought a life of ease and licence were attracted to the holy calling which they disgraced. He was even willing to permit marriage in orders, arguing that it was only a question of canon law, in which faith and doctrine were not involved. As regards the monastic orders, while fully appreciating the principles upon which the system was founded, he warmly deplored the corruption engendered by wealth and luxury. Though the convents contained many pious and holy men, still for the most part religion was forgotten in the observance of ceremonies that had lost their significance, and nothing could be more licentious and profane than the life led in many of the monasteries.¹ Witzel was equally severe in his denunciations of the clerical licentiousness attributable to the rule of celibacy, and concluded his tract by attacking the supineness, blindness, and perversity of the prelates who suffered such foulness to exist everywhere among the priesthood, in contempt of Christ and to the burdening of their consciences.²

It was already evident that both the great objects for which the Council of Trent had ostensibly been assembled were failures; that it would effect as little for the purification of the Church as for the reconciliation of the heretics. Perhaps Maximilian felt that under these circumstances no one could deny the necessity of such changes as would at least afford a chance of the reformation that could no longer be expected of the Tridentine canons; perhaps he

¹ G. Cassandri Consult. xxiii., xxv. (Le Plat, VI. 761-2, 783-4.)

² Wicelii Via Regia, De Conjug. Sacerd.

Both these tracts were printed, with other controversial matter, by Hermann Conring, 4to. Helmstadt, 1569.

felt strengthened by the support of his ecclesiastical counsellors and controversialists ; perhaps, with the zealous hopefulness of youth, he felt a confidence of which age and many disappointments had deprived his father ; or perhaps he was encouraged by the concession to his subjects and to those of Albert of Bavaria of the communion in both elements, not knowing that in two short years it would be withdrawn. Certain it is that in a negotiation with the Bishop of Ventimiglia, papal nuncio at his court, he lost no time in renewing, with increased energy, the effort to obtain the recognition of married priests. After the departure of the nuncio, he addressed, in November 1564, a most pressing demand to Pius IV., in which he declared that the matter brooked no further postponement ; that throughout Germany, and especially in his dominions, there was the greatest need of proper ministers and pastors ; that there was no other measure which would retain them in the Catholic Church, from which, day by day, they were withdrawing, principally from this cause. He assured the Holy Father that the danger was constantly increasing, and that he feared a further delay would render even this remedy powerless to prevent the total destruction of the old religion. If only this were granted to the clergy, even as the cup had been communicated to the laity, he hoped for an immediate improvement. The bishops could then exercise their authority over those who at present were beyond their control, as unrecognised by the Church ; and so thoroughly was this lawless condition of affairs understood that a refuge was sought in his provinces by those disreputable pastors who were banished from the Lutheran states on account of their disorderly lives.¹ His brother, the Archduke Charles, was equally urgent, in a letter which he addressed, a few days later, to the Pope, repeating the same arguments, and assuring him that the

¹ Goldast. II. 381.

only hope for the true religion in his dominions was to find some means of admitting the services of a married clergy.¹

Ferdinand and Maximilian were actuated in these persevering efforts not merely by the desire of gratifying the wishes of their people, or of remedying the depravity of the ecclesiastical body. It had been a favourite project with the father, warmly adopted by the son, to heal the differences between the two religions, and to restore to the Church its ancient and prosperous unity. In their opinion, and in that of many eminent men, the main obstacle to this was the question of celibacy. It was evidently hopeless to expect this sacrifice of the Lutheran pastors, while numerous members of the Catholic Church regarded the change as essential to the purification of their own establishment. The only mode of effecting so desirable a reconciliation was therefore to persuade the Pope to exercise the power of dispensation which the Council of Trent had admitted to be inherent in his high office. It thus was left for Pius IV. to extricate himself from the tangle of promises with which he had evaded the pressure from beyond the Alps. His position, in fact, was perplexing, for the council had thrown on him the responsibility, by admitting his power of dispensation, while at the same time, with little regard for consistency, it had cast the denial of sacerdotal marriage in the form of a dogma enforced with the dread anathema. In spite of this, no one on either side of the question seems to have doubted his power to dispense with the dogma, and this power thus became the storm-centre of a struggle in which the unfortunate Pius reaped to the full the results of his double-dealing policy.

The protagonist of conservatism was Philip II., the most powerful monarch of the time and the head of the

¹ Le Plat, VI. 335.

only thoroughly Catholic kingdom beyond the Alps. He threw himself into it with such vigour, through a succession of envoys—Vargas, Luis de Zuñiga, Luis de Requesens, Cardinal Pacheco, Pedro de Avila—that Pacheco reported, 20 April, 1565, that Pius had conceived the idea that Philip's purpose in urging him to refuse the German demands was that the Emperor would then withdraw from the Church, so that Spain should remain the only Christian country and Philip thus be enabled to control the Holy See. Pius, in fact, at times scarce knew which way to turn. A few days earlier Pacheco had reported an audience, in which the Pope asked him to obtain Philip's advice as to whether he should grant a request, repeatedly made by the Emperor, to assemble a junta of learned prelates from all Christendom to consider the matter. It was not, he said, an affair of divine law, requiring a general council, but of positive law; and this at least would have the advantage of postponing a decision. Pacheco promised to write, but said that he knew that Philip would send no prelates to such a junta, as it would scandalise all Spain; and Philip would regard it as certain that, if the concession were granted to Germany, the Spanish clergy would not only want it, but would go there and renounce their nationality, in order to lead a dissolute life. To this Pius replied that he knew that all Christendom would demand it, but he could not resist the Emperor without the vigorous support of Philip, whom he desired to use his influence with Maximilian to lighten the pressure. Pacheco concludes by adverting to the weakness and vacillation of Pius, who inclined first to one side and then to the other.¹

On the other hand, Maximilian was urging the concession with greater insistence than his father, and the indecision of Pius was exemplified in a consistory held

¹ Dollinger, *op. cit.* pp. 594-5, 598.

12 January, 1565, chiefly to consider the matter. He adverted to the grant of the cup, which Cardinal Hosius of Ermeland reported had proved of much advantage in Germany and Austria, both in retaining Catholics and winning heretics, while in Bohemia it had been received as a gift from heaven. The marriage question was still more important; the Cardinal and other prelates admitted that priests were few, and still fewer were those who desired to take orders. He had met their arguments and abhorred innovations; although so pious an emperor deemed it necessary for his dominions, it would be of evil example, for, if conceded to Germany, no one knew but that it would be demanded by Spain, France, and Poland. He wished that it had been decided by the council, and that the burden had not been laid on him, for the Emperor would be offended if refused what he said was the only remedy, and he foresaw the action that might be taken in the approaching Diet. He therefore wanted the opinions, not only of the cardinals, but of many theologians, and would be greatly pleased if an assembly could be convened from all the nations. He therefore asked the cardinals to consider the importance of the affair, and to advise him freely and sincerely; he would hear all, and take such resolution as the Holy Ghost might inspire. To this appeal the only response seems to have been from Cardinal Simoneta, who briefly stated that he had been legate to the Council when the Emperor's petitions were presented, and it had been deemed wiser not to bring the matter up for debate, as it was certain that clerical marriage would be refused.¹ The report of this consistory created great scandal in Spain, and Philip wrote a strong letter to Pius, representing that the concession would prove the destruction of Christianity and the ruin of his

¹ Döllinger, I. 588-90.—Lämmer, *Meletunatum Romanorum Mantissa*, p. 217 (Ratisbonæ, 1875).

dominions. When Cardinal Pacheco read this to the Pope he sighed and groaned; he could not but listen to so powerful a sovereign as the Emperor. He was told that it would bring back Germany; that there were no priests there, and that the land was relapsing into paganism; that the approaching Diet would proclaim an Interim worse than that of Charles V.; but God had helped him, for the Diet had been postponed until September, and they thus at least gained that much time.¹ Three days after Pacheco writes that the Pope is old and weak and worn out with perplexity; he complains that he is left alone, and he will yield not only this, but all that is asked of him, unless he is strongly supported. He has postponed it as long as he can, and can do so no longer.²

When Don Pedro de Avila was sent as a special envoy on the question, Philip, in his instructions of 10 June, 1565, told him that from the way in which the Pope treated the matter it would appear that he was pledged to make the concession, whether it was one of the articles agreed upon with the Emperor for the dissolution of the council or subsequently, and the expedients suggested for paving the way to it were inadmissible, especially the reference to the German prelates, for, even if they should not be moved by the desire to preserve their estates, they could not exercise free judgment in their anxiety to find a remedy for the condition of the provinces and under the pressure of the Emperor, the princes, and the people. When the use of the cup was granted he had kept silent, but this was vastly more important, and if it was conceded he would make a great "demonstration"—a significant word in Spanish parlance.³

De Avila's reports were reassuring. The Pope declared that he had given no pledge as to marriage, as he

¹ Döllinger, I. 591-3.

² Ibid. pp. 596-7.

³ Ibid. pp. 605-7.

had done with regard to the cup; the latter had been necessary to prevent a schism by dissolving the council. He would not grant it unless it would bring back all the heretics, and even then he would hesitate. The danger from the Diet had passed; he had dragged the matter along for six years, and would continue to do so, but he would not drive the Emperor to despair. To gain time he had sent his nuncios Landriano and Guicciardini, with an offer to pay yearly 25,000 ducats in support of seminaries to supply the lack of priests, and shortly a second similar sum would be sent to keep Maximilian in good humour, for the Emperor, it seems, rejected the project of seminaries while evidently keeping the money. Still uncertainty continued, and as late as December 2, Cardinal Pacheco warns Philip to be friendly with the Pope and accede to his request for co-operation in the Diet, for otherwise he will have to grant to Maximilian and other princes things which it will grieve Philip to hear.¹

The warning was superfluous, for in a week Pius passed away, on December 9, having accomplished his purpose of evading without rejecting the demands of nearly all the Catholic nations beyond the Alps. His successor, St. Pius V., elected 7 January, 1566, was a man of different temper. Stern and inflexible, animated with the loftiest convictions of the power of his office as the representative of God, his policy towards heresy was not conciliation, but the extermination which he had practised as head of the Inquisition. Prompt action was necessary, for the Diet of Augsburg, to which all parties were looking for a solution of pending questions, was to

¹ Döllinger, I. pp. 612-15, 621-6, 635-6, 646.

That at this time the rule of celibacy was regarded as in imminent danger would appear when a learned Italian lawyer felt called to address to Pius IV. an elaborate work arguing against its abolition, as Marquardo de' Susani did in his *Tractatus de Cœlibatu Sacerdotum non abrogando*, printed in Venice in 1565.

be held in March. Triumphant Protestantism was in hopes of winning over Maximilian and sundering Germany from the Roman obedience. The Catholics, who were the weaker party, were disheartened and in lack of a leader who should rally their wavering ranks. They found him in the new Pope, who within a week of consecration despatched a courier to intercept Cardinal Commendone, then on his return from Poland, with orders to hasten to Augsburg and instructions as to his duties there. At the same time letters were written to Maximilian, and to the Catholic princes and prelates, couched in a very different tone from those of his predecessor. The Diet must confine itself exclusively to secular affairs, and not meddle with anything belonging to the jurisdiction of the Holy See; no interference with the rites and institutes of the Church must be suffered, nor any change be made in what the Council of Trent had decreed and the Holy See had confirmed. If this was disobeyed, Commendone was ordered to register a protest and depart. No special allusion was made to priestly marriage, nor was it required. Commendone fulfilled his mission with indefatigable dexterity, and was ably supported by the representatives of Philip II. The heretics were prevented from interjecting religious questions, and no Interim was proclaimed. Commendone assembled the Catholic prelates and princes, and urged them to accept the decrees of Trent. To this, after consultation, the Archbishop of Mainz replied, in the name of all, that they accepted without question everything that concerned faith and worship, but there were some points of discipline for the enforcement of which quieter times must be awaited.¹ Thus, after a struggle continued at intervals for a quarter of a century, the rule of celibacy was left undisturbed, and the counter-Reformation had begun.

¹ *Ladenchii Annales*, ann. 1566, n. 219-24, 230, 238, 242-3.

Still, in spite of conciliar anathemas, there was, after an interval, a certain amount of liberality in granting dispensations for marriage. A collection of decrees of the congregation of the Inquisition contains a number of examples of these, issued between 1600 and 1630 to subdeacons and deacons and members of the military Orders, not only for prospective marriages, but for those already consummated, including the legitimation of the offspring. The most prominent instance is one of 18 December, 1625, to Archduke Leopold of Austria, who as subdeacon held the bishoprics of Strassburg and Passau. He promptly resigned the sees, and in 1626 married Claudia de' Medici, widow of Federigo, Duke of Urbino. The numerous cases of members of the religious Orders, of both sexes, who left their houses and contracted marriage among heretics, subsequently seeking return to the Church, illustrates the confusion of the period, while the benignity with which their supplications were admitted indicates how impotent was the Holy See to enforce the rules amid the exigencies of the struggle between orthodoxy and heresy in the lands remaining under the Roman obedience.¹

In Spain, as may readily be conceived, there was no such benignity. Bishop Simancas, about the middle of the sixteenth century, quotes authorities who held that a priest or religious who married publicly was subject to the Inquisition, as this manifested heretical belief, while, if the marriage was secret, it implied no intellectual error, and he was to be dealt with by his superiors; but Simancas asserts that both cases implied heresy, and the Inquisition had jurisdiction.² The Inquisition took the same view, and its name inspired a terror discouraging to

¹ *Decreta Sac. Congr. S. Officii*, pp. 84-140 (Bibl. del R. Archivio di Stato in Roma, Fondo Camerale, Congr. del S. Off. vol. iii.).

² *Simancæ, de Catholicis Institutis*, Tit. XL, n. 8-13.

aspirants to clerical matrimony. Still, its records show that occasionally there were those who dared the risk, trusting to escape detection, and for them the usual penalties were deprivation of functions and benefice, and a longer or shorter term of service in the galleys.¹

¹ See the author's *History of the Inquisition of Spain*, vol. iv. p. 336.

CHAPTER XXIX

THE POST-TRIDENTINE CHURCH

THE great council, on which so long had hung the hopes of the Christian world, had at last been held. The reformation of the Church, postponed by the skilful policy of the popes, had been reached in the closing sessions, and had been hurriedly provided for. As we have seen, the regulations which concerned the morals of the clergy were sufficient for their purpose, if only they could be enforced, yet as they were but the hundredth repetition of an endeavour to conquer human nature, which had always previously failed, even those who enacted them could have felt little faith in their efficacy. August Baumgartner, the Bavarian ambassador, in his address to the council, 27 June, 1562, had alluded to the prevailing belief that any comprehensive effort to enforce the chastity required by the canons would result in driving the mass of the Catholic clergy over to Protestantism.¹ Since continence was held by them to be impossible, it was thought that they would prefer to marry their concubines as Lutherans rather than give them up as Catholics. Possibly the fear of such untoward result may explain the slender effect which can be discerned from a scheme of reform so laboriously reached and so pompously heralded as the panacea for the woes which were destroying the Church.

Although Catherine de Medicis and her sons refused to allow the council to be formally published in France,

¹ Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. V. 340.

yet she permitted its decrees to be freely circulated, and her bishops were at liberty to adopt them as the code of discipline in their dioceses.¹ In Germany we have seen how the Catholic princes, secular and ecclesiastical, accepted it at the Diet of Augsburg in 1566. Philip II., after some hesitation, ordered the reception of the council in all his dominions, which extended from Naples to the North Sea;² and Poland, despite some opposition from an ambitious prelate, submitted to it before the year 1564 was ended.³

As an authoritative exposition of the law of the Church of Christ, conceived and elaborated under the influence of the Holy Ghost, and commanded for implicit observance by the Vicegerent of God; as the expression of the needs and wants of the Catholic faith, wrought by the concentrated energy and wisdom of the leading doctors of Christendom, and transmitted for practical application through the wondrous machinery of the Catholic hierarchy, it should have had an immediate influence on the evils which it was intended to eradicate. Those evils had confessedly done much to create and foster the schism under which the Church was reeling; their magnitude was admitted by all, and no one ventured to defend or to palliate them. Their removal was acknowledged to be a

¹ The Council of Trent has never been received in France. For a *résumé* of the efforts made to obtain its adoption and their uniform lack of success, see Chavart, *Le Célibat des Prêtres*, pp. 507-12.

² In August 1564 Philip II. had ordered its publication in the Low Countries, but Margaret of Parma had hesitated to obey in consequence of the intense opposition excited by its interference with local liberties and franchises, as it completed and crowned the centralising policy which rendered the papacy supreme over all local Churches. It was not until 18 December, 1565, that it was finally promulgated, under imperative commands from Philip. It is characteristic of Philip's habitual double-dealing, however, that while his public orders commanded the reception of the Council without exception, he secretly reserved the rights of himself and his subjects (*Le Plat*, *Concil. Trident. VII. Præf. p. vi.*).

³ By a bull dated 18 July, 1564, Pius IV. fixed 1 May, 1564, as the time when the Tridentine canons became the law of the Church. His letter to the Archbishop of Bremen, with an official copy and directions as to its promulgation, is dated October 3 of the same year (*Hartzheim*, VII. 25).

necessity of the gravest character, and every adherent of Catholicism was bound to lend his aid to the good work. What, then, was accomplished by the council which had for so long a period laboured ostensibly with the object of restoring Latin Christianity to its primitive purity ?

To few of the long line of popes does the Church owe so much as to St. Pius V. When he ascended the chair of St. Peter, Protestants were looking forward hopefully to the time when the lands of the Roman obedience should shrink to the two peninsulas of Italy and Spain. His pontificate was too brief to show results in checking the progress of revolt, but his resolute purpose to remove the evils that had led to it laid the foundations on which the counter-Reformation was built. It has not come within our scope to consider the abuses and corruption of the Curia which had created, throughout Latin Christendom, a detestation of the Holy See, to be reckoned among the primary causes of Luther's success, but they were inveterate, and to their removal he addressed himself with relentless vigour. That he should show equal solicitude in the harder task of reforming the morals of a dissolute clergy was to be expected, and this he lost no time in attempting, for he recognised how futile were the Tridentine utterances unless they should be unsparingly enforced. Pius IV. had allowed two years to elapse in silence after the dissolution of the council, but Pius V. lost no time, and on 1 April, 1566, issued a brief commanding the Ordinaries of all Churches to execute with vigour the conciliar decrees against concubinary priests.¹ Then, as soon as the dangers of the Diet of Augsburg were safely passed, in June he addressed to Maximilian, to Albert of Bavaria, and to the German bishops letters in which, after alluding to the scandalous lives of the clergy as one of the leading causes of heretic success, he prescribed

¹ Pii PP. V. Bull, *Cum primum*, § 12 (Bullar, Roman. II. 191).

the most active measures of reform, for otherwise what remained of Catholicism in Germany would be extinguished. The bishops were ordered to make visitations throughout their dioceses, to investigate the morals of their clergy, to expel their concubines, and to punish the refractory with all the severity of the laws, depriving them of their benefices and of the functions which they polluted; moreover, that the reform might be thorough, these instructions were accompanied with faculties which placed the regular Orders under episcopal jurisdiction. As in all this they would need the support of the secular power, Maximilian and Albert were exhorted to lend to the prelates all aid and favour.¹

The immediate result of this was not encouraging. When Bernard Rasfelt, Bishop of Munster, in his synod of 1566 published the papal commands, the fury of his canons was so excited that they forced him to resign his bishopric and spend the rest of his days in obscurity. He was succeeded by Johann von Hoya, Bishop of Osnabruck and President of the Imperial Chamber, a man distinguished by birth and learning, who speedily wearied of the conflict and sought peace by imitating the example of his subordinates.² Three years later, in 1569, the Archbishop of Salzburg, in response to a fresh exhortation from Pius to reform his Church, replied that he and his suffragans had never ceased to attempt it, but that all their efforts had been fruitless and that he despaired of its accomplishment.³

Two years after this, in 1571, we have a summary of the condition of Germany in a confidential letter of November 16 to Philip II. from Fray Francisco di Cordova, the confessor to the Empress. The continued

¹ Ladenchii Annales ann. 1566, n. 251-4.—Hartzheim, VII. 231.

² De Thou, Hist. univ., Lib. XXXVIII. ann. 1566—Ladenchii Annales, ann. 1566, n. 256.

³ Dalham, Concil. Salisburgens., p. 556.

success of the Protestant movement he attributes to clerical disorders. Maximilian II., he says, "is regarded as a heretic, for he shows favour to heretics and admits all their preachers to audiences, which he denies to Catholics. He and the princes hold the Pope, the cardinals, and the bishops responsible for the failure of reform which would restore religion. Throughout all Germany the bishops neither preach nor celebrate Mass nor perform ecclesiastical functions, but seem to be laymen rather than clerics, while of the clergy at large there is scarce one without a wife or concubine. When the chapters elect bishops, they are required to swear that they will not reform the canons, and the monasteries are full of laymen and women. For all this there is no punishment, and the bishops and canons excuse themselves by saying that they merely live as the cardinals do. The one who is most scandalised by all this and who talks the most about it is the Emperor. The details are not fit to write, but it is certain that if the clergy were reformed, Germany would accept Catholicism, for the people are disgusted with the clashing of opinions, and, if the bishops would preach, the people would follow them, but as long as there is no reform the heresies increase day by day, and little by little the heretics obtain the bishoprics and benefices. I know, he concludes, that true reform would win back many heretics and their chiefs, and I think the Emperor would not be the last." ¹

¹ Döllinger, *op. cit.* I. 654.

At this period the Protestants had fair prospects of winning all Germany, but their progress was arrested, not by Catholic reform, but by the fierce doctrinal dissensions between Calvinists, Lutherans, and Philippists, who hated each other more than they did the common enemy. At the critical moment the Jesuits came, with their tireless labour and skilful policy; the Protestant line which had been steadily advancing was driven back, and finally the Thirty Years' War established the boundaries which have remained with little change.

Against the lukewarmness of Maximilian may be set the zeal of his brother, the Archduke Ferdinand, of whom de Avila writes to Philip II. 1 December, 1565, that it is said for certain that he secretly cast some heretic preachers into a well in his palace.—Döllinger, p. 645.

The German clergy were not without justification in shielding themselves behind the example of Rome, where Pius IV. had allowed the most public and scandalous immorality to flourish unchecked under his immediate supervision. In 1538 the *Consilium de Emendanda Ecclesiæ* had animadverted upon the cynical licentiousness of the Roman clergy in terms which show that not much improvement had taken place since Petrarch's description of the papal court,¹ and the intervening thirty years had not served to purify it. Pius V. included this among his reformatory efforts. He at first proposed to banish all the public women who would not give a pledge of reformation by immediate marriage, and, when forced to abandon this as impracticably harsh, he restricted their residence to certain houses, and forbade their plying their vocation in the streets by day or night. Although this admitted the necessity of the evil and only sought to restrain its public manifestation, such reform was deemed insufferable. The clergy were ashamed to offer open opposition, but urged the Senate to strenuous resistance. The remonstrance presented by that body not only shows the prevalent immorality, but also the conviction that immorality was inseparable from celibacy. It was represented that, if the proposed rules were enforced, the prosperity of the city would be destroyed and the rents of houses be reduced to nothing, and it was urged that, amid so vast a number of men condemned to celibacy, under such restrictions it would be impossible to preserve the virtue of the wives and daughters of the citizens. The contest was stubbornly continued until at length Pius was driven to declare that if further difficulties were interposed

¹ In hac enim urbe meretrices ut matronæ incedunt per urbem, seu mula vehuntur, quas affectantur de media die nobiles familiares cardinalium clericique. Nulla in urbe vidimus hanc corruptionem præterquam in hac omnium exemplari, habitant enim insignes ædes : corrigendus etiam hic turpis abusus.—Le Plat, *Monument. Concilii Trident.*, II, 604.

he would leave the city.¹ The Germans, moreover, were not mistaken when they included the cardinals among those whom they imitated, for Sixtus V. in 1586 decreed that no one who had children, even if they were legitimate, should be eligible to the cardinalate, because in no other way could assurance be had of the observance of their vows.²

If Pius V. met with opposition in the task of purifying the Augean stable of Rome, St. Charles Borromeo, encouraged and stimulated by his example, found himself involved in a more dangerous quarrel when he attempted, in the equally demoralised city of Milan, to enforce respect for the decrees of Trent. In 1569 he undertook to reform the canons of S. Maria della Scala, whose licentious mode of life was a scandal to the faithful. So persistently did they deny their subjection to his archiepiscopal jurisdiction, that after a long discussion his only resource for vindicating his authority was excommunication. The contumacious canons were still indisposed to yield, and, assembling in their church, they maltreated his messenger. Thinking that his presence might bring them to reason, he ventured himself to expostulate with them, and found them drawn up in their cemetery, with arms in their hands, and supported by soldiers whom they had hired. On reaching the gate, he dismounted from his mule and advanced towards them with his cross, which he had snatched from his cross-bearer. Unabashed by this symbol at once of religion and authority, the mutinous canons rushed upon him with shouts of "Spagna!" "Spagna!" brandishing their weapons and discharging their fire-arms at the cross in his hands—fortunately without injuring him. Having thus driven him off, they continued for some time in open

¹ De Thou, Hist. univ. Lib. xxxix.

² Sixti PP. V. Const. Postquam verus, § 16 (Bullar. Roman. II. 611).—"Certum nequeat suæ testimonium continentiæ exhibere."

rebellion, until they were at length obliged to submit, when Pius V. and Philip II. united their power in support of St. Charles.¹

Still greater was the peril to which the saint was exposed in his quarrel with the Umiliati. They were a branch of the Benedictine Order, founded in 1180 by the Milanese who escaped the destruction of their city by Frederic Barbarossa. Sharing in the general licence of the age, the excesses of the Umiliati became so infamous that they surpassed in turpitude the worst exploits of the unbridled youth of the city. Supported by the decretals of Pius, in 1568 St. Charles undertook to reduce the Order to the observance of monastic rule. The Umiliati resisted with so much energy and success that, after two years of contest, they were still defiant. Regarding St. Charles as the cause of all their troubles, Girolamo Lignana, Provost of S. Cristoforo di Vercelli, who assumed their leadership in 1570, engaged a monk of the order named Girolamo Donati to murder him. The blackness of the deed was not relieved by the circumstances under which it was attempted. While the holy archbishop was absorbed at midnight in his devotions, Donati stole into the oratory and discharged full upon him an arquebuss loaded with slugs. Some of the missiles struck St. Charles, but rebounded to the floor, leaving him unhurt, and the miraculous nature of his escape was proved by the depth to which others penetrated the walls. At this moment the policy of Philip the Catholic supported the disaffected and rebellious monks, and for some time yet they escaped the retribution due to their many crimes, but at length those concerned in the attempted murder were caught and executed, and the order of the Umiliati was broken up.²

¹ Fleury, Liv. CLXXI. chap. 104 et seq.

² Muratori, *Annal. ann.* 1569.—Henrion, *Hist. des Ordres Religieux*, I. 196.—Fleury, Liv. CLXXI. chap. 26.—De Thou, *Lib. I.*—The calm Muratori stigmatises the Umiliati as “*troppo scorretto e corrotto ordine*,” and Henrion, who cannot cer-

In fact, the Tridentine reform, so loudly heralded as a panacea for all the evils afflicting the Church, was everywhere confessedly a failure. When, in 1583, President d'Espeisses presented to Henry III. a memorial against the publication of the council in France, he drew one of his arguments from the greater corruption of the Italian Church, where, though the council was received without demur, yet none of its orders reforming the morals of the clergy received the least attention.¹ That the Tridentine canons in this respect were wholly inefficacious throughout Italy, and that the officials, with rare exceptions, did not venture to enforce them, can indeed be seen in the series of provincial councils held during the remainder of the century, from Lombardy to Naples.

The papacy had succeeded in crushing the reformers who had responded in so many Italian cities to the uprising in Germany; it had then convoked and managed at its will the great congress of Catholic Christendom which was to put an end at once and for ever to all the evils which had led to the schism; it had every opportunity and every motive for vindicating itself from the aspersions of its enemies, and yet we see it at once recur to the old machinery of local councils enacting canons whose frequency and wordy severity are the inverse measure of their efficiency. Had the promises of reform so liberally made been possible in their fulfilment, there had been no need of further legislation. A convocation of the ecclesiastics of each province to receive and publish the decrees

tainly be regarded as a prejudiced authority, declares that "les excès des Humiliés surpassoient ceux des laïques les plus débauchés." Pius V., in his bull suppressing the order, is equally emphatic, and vouches for the truth of the miracle by which the life of St. Charles was preserved.—Bull. Quemadmodum sollicitus (Mag. Bull. Rom. II. 326).

¹ Vû que par toute l'Italie on le vit reconnoître pour l'usage et observations de toutes les ordonnances, on n'en voit une seule entretenue de celles qui concerne la reformation de la vie et mœurs des ecclesiastiques. . . . Et ce peut dire pour ce regard que l'église n'est en autre lieu de la Chrétienté si dérégée et difforme qu'ès pays où le pape a commandement et puissance absolu.—Le Plat, VII. 259.

of Trent would have been all-sufficient. When, therefore, we see the endless iteration with which the guilty clergy were threatened with the Tridentine canons, and with other new or revived penalties—as at the councils of Milan in 1565 and 1582,¹ and at those of Manfredonia in 1567, of Ravenna in 1568, of Urbino in 1569, of Florence in 1573, of Naples in 1576, of Cosenza in 1579, of Salerno in 1596, of S. Severino in 1597, and of Melfi in 1597²—we can only conclude that the evil was irremediable, in spite of the well-meant efforts to suppress it or to throw off the responsibility of its existence.

In fact, the manner in which the Council of Trent was greeted by the clergy may be judged from its treatment in the archiepiscopate of Utrecht. Though Philip II. had authoritatively ordered its reception in 1565, we find the Duke of Alva in May 1568 issuing his commands to the prelates of the five Churches of Utrecht to offer no further opposition to it. Even so stern a ruler could not obtain immediate obedience, however, to so obnoxious a series of regulations, and they responded by pleading their ancient privileges. This availed them little, for in June he replied that his instructions were positive, and he proceeded to enforce them by sending royal commissioners to the province, empowered to carry them out. In July, therefore, the Archbishop assembled his clergy, and in conjunction with the commissioners issued a series of regulations designed to give effective force to the canons of the council. Visiting nunneries and haunting taverns, joining in dances and

¹ Concil. Mediolanens. ann. 1565 P. II. Const. xiv (Harduin. X. 661)—Concil. Mediolanens. ann. 1582 Const. xiv. (Ibid. p. 1117.)

² Concil. Sipontin. ann. 1567 De Vit. et Honest. Cleric.—Concil. Ravennat. ann. 568 De Vit. et Honest. Cleric. c. v.—Concil. Urbinat. ann. 1569 De Vit. et Honest. Cleric. c. vi.—Concil. Florent. ann. 1573 Rubr. xxxvii. c. 3, 4.—Concil. Neapol. ann. 1576 cap. xxii.—Concil. Consentin. ann. 1579 Sess. iv.—Concil. Salernit. ann. 1596 cap. xviii.—Concil. S. Severin. ann. 1597 De Vit. et Honest. Cleric.—Concil. Amalfitan. ann. 1597 De Vit. et Honest. Cleric. c. v.—(Labbei et Coleti Supplement. T. V. pp. 827-1331.)

hunting and indecent songs were forbidden. The clergy were ordered to shave their beards and to give up their concubines, whom they were not to retake or to replace. Even yet they did not yield, but while they were ashamed to claim the right to keep their female companions, they demurred as to the sacrifice of their beards, and the Archbishop was obliged to issue another peremptory command.¹

It was not, however, only concubinage which the Council of Trent failed to extirpate. Even the denial of sacerdotal marriage, which it had elevated to the dignity of a point of faith, was stubbornly opposed, and was not accepted until after a protracted struggle.

In 1569 we find the synod of the extensive and important province of Salzburg virtually dividing its clergy into two classes—those who haunt the taverns under pretext of getting their meals, but really for the purpose of indulging in drunken riots with their parishioners, and those who keep houses, with concubines under the guise of female servants, whom they secretly marry, and who are openly known by their husbands' names. To meet this condition of affairs, the synod devised an elaborate system by which the richer clergy were directed to keep as domestics respectable middle-aged married women with their husbands, while the poorer ecclesiastics were to club together for the same purpose.² This expedient proved as fruitless as its predecessors, for in 1572 Gregory XIII. complained to the Archbishop that in many places priests who were known to be married were permitted by their bishops to celebrate Mass and to handle

¹ The documents are in Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. VII. 199-201. For the condition of morals in the Church of Holland, see Synod. Harlem. ann. 1564; Synod. Ultraject. ann. 1564; Concil. Ultraject. ann. 1565 (Hartzheim, VII. 5, 22, 137). It was to the publication of the Council of Trent that William of Orange attributed the inevitable revolution which followed (Stradæ de Bell. Belgic. Lib. iv.).

² Synod. Salisburg. ann. 1569 Const. xxvii. cap. xviii., xix., xx., xxi., xxii. (Hartzheim, VII. 306-8.)

the sacred elements.¹ In spite of all this the evil continued unabated, and in 1616 the Archbishop of Salzburg, in his instructions for a general visitation, ordered that all priests should remove their concubines to a distance of at least six miles, and should not allow their illegitimate children to live openly with them, except under special licence from him.²

In 1565, Anthony, Archbishop of Prague, promulgated the Council of Trent in his provincial synod. He was a man of more than ordinary vigour; he had been the imperial orator at Trent, understood fully the views of the council, and was not likely to underrate either their importance or their authority. Armed with the Tridentine canons, he set actively to work and instituted a very thorough system of inquisitorial visitations, which ought to have succeeded if success were possible. Yet, after the lapse of thirteen years, in a special mandate issued by him in 1578 he deplors the obstinate blindness of many of his clergy, who still believed, with the heretics, that marriage was not incompatible with priesthood, while those who did not marry were guilty of the less dangerous error of maintaining concubines and children on the revenues of their benefices.³

The same wilful ignorance apparently existed in the diocese of Wurzburg, for Bishop Julius, in 1584, found it necessary, in his episcopal statutes, to discountenance clerical matrimony and to prove its nullity by laboriously quoting innumerable canons and decretals; and he even condescended to remind his priesthood that in taking orders they had willingly and knowingly entered into an agreement of continence, by the consequences of which they must be prepared to abide.⁴

¹ Concil. Salisburg. XLVII. (Dalham, Conc. Salisb. p. 583.)

² Visitat. Salisburg. ann. 1616 Tit. I. cap. vi. (Hartzheim, IX. 266.)

³ Decret. Reformat. Pragens. (Hartzheim, VII. 53.)

⁴ Statut. Rural. Julii Wirceburg. P. III. c. iv. (Gropp Script. Rer. Wirceburg. I. 471-4). It is somewhat remarkable that Bishop Julius attributes the prohibition of marriage to the Council of Nicæa. After describing the custom of the Greek Church,

A provincial synod of Gnesen, of which the date is uncertain, but which was probably held in 1577, deplored the insane audacity displayed by ecclesiastics in marrying, and threatened them with the Tridentine anathema.¹ This warning appears to have been completely disregarded, for the Bishop of Breslau, a suffragan of the metropolis of Gnesen, in opening his diocesan synod in 1580, still complained that many of his clergy were guilty of this perversity, and he was at some pains to disavow any complicity with it, or any connivance at the licentiousness which was prevalent among the unmarried.² In 1591 the synod of Olmutz asserted that many clerks in holy orders contracted pretended marriages, and were not ashamed of the families growing up publicly around them, while others indulged in scandalous concubinage with women, whom they styled housekeepers or cooks. In endeavouring to put an end to this state of affairs the synod manifested its estimation of the morals of the priesthood by renewing the hideous suggestions which we have seen in the tenth and twelfth centuries, for pastors were allowed to have near them the female relatives authorised by the Nicene canons, but, in view of the assaults of the tempter, were prudently advised not to let them reside in their houses.³ The disregard of the Tridentine canon continued, and as late as 1628, at the synod of Osnabruck, the orator who opened the proceedings inveighed in the vilest terms against the female companions of the clergy, who not only occupied the position of wives, but were even dignified with the title.⁴

he proceeds, " *Permissio vero et consuetudo illa duravit usque ad Nicænum concilium, in quo generali decreto abrogata est, statutumque ne aliquis habens uxorem consecratur sacerdos*"—a falsification which is equally singular whether it proceeded from ignorance or fraud, and an admission that celibacy was not of apostolic origin which was rare in a Catholic prelate of that period.

1 Synod. Gnesens. c. xxxiii. (Hartzheim, VII. 891.)

2 Synod. Wratislav. ann. 1580 (Hartzheim, VII. 890).

3 Synod. Olomucens. ann. 1591 c. xiii. (Hartzheim, VIII. 352.)

4 Synod. Osnabrug. ann. 1628 (Hartzheim, IX. 431). As usual, a distinction is

Ancillary to the questions of clerical marriage and concubinage was that of the provisions made for the benefit of the offspring of such unions. The Council of Trent had decreed that all such provisions should be deemed fraudulent, but, in spite of this, the transmission of ecclesiastical property continued as before, and in 1571 Pius V. found it necessary to supplement the conciliar decree with further positive legislation. In this he recognised his own Curia as the source of much of the evil by declaring null and void all dispensations granted for such purpose, and annulling all faculties for granting them.¹ It was not only the need of preserving the possessions of the Church; the scandal of sacerdotal families required repression, and this he sought to accomplish, in 1572, by another decree pronouncing such children incapable of receiving even the private and patrimonial property of their fathers.² How soon all this was forgotten is indicated by the synod of Augsburg, in 1610, which declared that it would enforce the Tridentine canon prohibiting the illegitimate sons of priests from holding preferment in their fathers' benefices, notwithstanding what dispensations they might produce.³

Thus the movement started by the vigour and inflexible purpose of Pius V. had at last succeeded in enforcing the Tridentine decree which prohibited priestly marriage, and in suppressing the almost universal demand for it throughout Catholic Christendom. In this he richly earned the gratitude of the Ultramontanism which regards the Church as a hierarchical organisation, directed as much to temporal

drawn between those who thus formed permanent though illicit connections and others who indulged in promiscuous licence—"alii vaga dissoluti lascivia, tanquam equi emissarii, ad incontinentissimum quodque scortum aut adulteram adhinnunt trahuntque ingentes liberorum spuriorum greges. Hæc in propatulo sunt; quæ vero in occulto fiunt ab ipsis, turpe est et dicere."

¹ Pii PP. V. Const. Quæ ordini (Bullar. Roman. II. 346).

² Pii PP. V. Const. ad Romanum (Bullar. Roman. II. 348).

³ Synod. Augustan. ann. 1610, P. III. cap. iii. § 1 (Hartzheim, IX. 58).

as to spiritual ends. This preponderating element at the Council of Trent, if we may believe Fra Paolo Sarpi, predicted that, if priests were allowed to marry, their affections would be concentrated on family and country instead of on the Church; their subjection to the Holy See would be diminished, the whole structure of the hierarchy be destroyed, and the Pope himself would eventually become a simple Bishop of Rome.¹ It is foreign to our purpose to discuss whether this would have occurred, and whether it would have been a misfortune to the Church and to the world, or whether, if marriage had been permitted, it might have resulted in a reunion of Christian believers. Its denial, at all events, rendered the division permanent, and it remains for us to see whether the counter-Reformation succeeded in removing the corruption which was admitted to have been one of the efficient causes in promoting the success of the Lutheran revolt.

Clear-sighted prelates were not wanting who proclaimed that the same causes continued to operate and to produce the same effect. Anthony, Archbishop of Prague, in his synod of 1565, took occasion to declare that the misfortunes of the Church were attributable to the dissoluteness of the clergy, and that the extirpation of heresy could best be effected by reforming the depraved morals and filthy lives of ecclesiastics.² At the Council of Salzburg, in 1569, Christopher Spandel, in the closing address, asked the assembled prelates what title was more contemptible or more odious than that of priest, in consequence of the licence in which the clergy as a body indulged.³ The clergy of France, assembled at Melun in July 1579, when addressing Henry III. with a request for the publication of the Council of Trent, assured him that the heresy which afflicted Christendom was caused

¹ Sarpi, *Hist. Con. Trident. Lib. VII.* (Opere II. 280.)

² *Statut. Diœces. Pragens. ann. 1565* (Hartzheim, VII. 26).

³ *Synod. Salisburg. ann. 1569* (Hartzheim, VII. 407).

by the corruption of the Church, and that it could only be eradicated by a thorough reformation.¹ Though the Inquisition took care that Spain should not be much troubled by heretics, yet the synod of Orihuella, in 1600, declared that the concubinage practised by ecclesiastics was the principal source of popular animosity against them.² These complaints were general. In 1599, Cuyck, Bishop of Ruremonde, published a work aimed at concubinary priests, in which he assured them that they and their predecessors were the cause of the ruin and devastation of the Netherlands for the last thirty years, for their vices had led to the contempt felt for the clergy, and thus to the heresy which had caused the civil wars. Those who kept their vows he asserts to be as rare as the grapes that can be gleaned after the vintage or the olives left after gathering the crop; but the only remedy he can suggest is increased vigilance and severity on the part of the prelates.³ Evidently the Tridentine canons had thus far been a failure. In 1609, at the synod of Constance, the Rev. Dr. Hamerer, in an official oration to the assembled prelates, deplored the continued spread of heresy, which he boldly told them was caused by the perpetually increasing immorality that pervaded all classes of the priesthood. The Reformation had begun, had derived its strength, and was still prospering through their weakness, which rendered them odious to the people and made the Catholic religion a by-word and a shame.⁴ In 1610, the Bishop of Antwerp, in a synodal address, agreed with Bishop Cuyck in attributing the evils which had so grievously afflicted the Church of Flanders for nearly half a century to the

¹ Le Plat, VII. 238.

² Synod. Oriolan. ann. 1600 cap. xxxviii. (Aguirre, VI. 457.)

³ Henr. Cuyckii Speculum Concubinariorum Sacerdotum, Monachorum ac Clericorum; Coloniae, 1599.

⁴ Synod. Constant. ann. 1609 (Hartzheim, VIII. 838). Another orator, Dr. Mayer, S.J., though more cautious in his deductions, was equally outspoken in his denunciations of the wickedness of the clergy (Ibid. p. 831).

same cause, and, while recounting the various successive efforts at internal reform made since the Council of Trent, he pronounced each one to have been a failure in consequence of the incurable obstinacy of the clergy.¹ Damhouder, a celebrated jurisconsult of Flanders, whose unquestioned piety and orthodoxy gained for him the confidence of Charles V. and Philip II., does not hesitate to speak of the clergy of his time as men who rarely lived up to their professions, and who as a general rule were scoundrels distinguished for their indulgence in all manner of evil.² In a similar mood the Bishop of Bois-le-Duc, in opening his synod of 1612, declared that the scandalous lives of the ecclesiastics were a source of corruption to the laity and a direct encouragement of heresy.³ So, in 1625, the synod of Osnabruck gave as its reason for endeavouring to enforce the Tridentine canons that the true religion was despised on account of the depraved morals of its ministers, whose crimes were a sufficient explanation of the stubbornness of the heretics. So little concealment of their frailty was thought necessary that they openly enriched their children from the patrimony of the Church, and decked their concubines with ornaments and vestments taken from the holy images, even as we have seen was the custom among the Anglo-Saxons of the tenth century.⁴

The Thirty Years' War proved a more effectual bar to the spread of heresy than these fruitless efforts to cure the incurable malady of the Church. After the Peace of Westphalia, there was no further need to appeal to the dread of proselytising Lutheranism as a stimulus to virtue, but still the same process of reasoning appears in exhorta-

¹ Synod Antverp. ann. 1610 (Hartzheim, VIII. 979).

² Damhouder *Rerum Crimin. Praxis* cap. xxxvii. No. 25 (Antverp. 1601).

³ Synod. Boscodunens. II. ann. 1612 (Hartzheim, IX. 200).

⁴ Synod. Osnabrug. ann. 1625 cap. v., x. Hartzheim, IX. 350.—Synod. Osnabrug. ann. 1628 (*Ibid.* p. 428).

tions to regain the forfeited respect of the community. Thus, in 1652, the Bishop of Munster expressed his horror at the obstinacy with which, in spite of fines, edicts, and canons, his clergy persisted in retaining their concubines, and he declared that the discordance between the professions and the practice of the priesthood rendered them a stench in the nostrils of the people and destroyed the authority of religion itself;¹ and in 1662 the synod of Cologne deplored that the notorious want of respect felt for the ministers of Christ was the direct result of their own immorality.² A doctrine even sprang up to the effect that it was not requisite to force a concubinarian to eject his companion if she was useful to him in his house-keeping or if it would be difficult for him to obtain another servant; and this became sufficiently formidable to entitle it to a place among the errors of belief formally condemned by the Roman Inquisition in its decree of March 1666.³

In France the influence of the Tridentine canons had been equally unsatisfactory. At a royal council held in 1560, which resolved upon the assembly of the States at Orleans, Charles de Marillac, Bishop of Vienne, declared that ecclesiastical discipline was almost obsolete, and that no previous time had seen scandals so frequent or the life of the clergy so reprehensible.⁴ From the proceedings of the Huguenot synod of Poitiers, in 1560, it is evident that priests not infrequently secretly married their concubines, and, when the woman was a Calvinist, her equivocal position became a matter of grave consideration with her Church.⁵ The only result of the Colloquy of

¹ Synod. Monasteriens. ann. 1652 (Hartzheim, IX. 786-7).

² Synod. Colon. ann. 1662 P. III. Tit. I. cap. 1 § iii. (Hartzheim, IX. 1006.)

³ Mag. Bull. Roman. Ed. Luxemb. 1742, T. VI. App. p. 2.

⁴ Pierre de la Place, *Estat. de Relig. etc.* Liv. III.

⁵ Quick, *Synod. Gall. Reform.* I. 18.

Poissy, in 1561, was that Catherine de Medicis prevailed upon the bishops to present a request to the King asking him to use his influence with the Pope to concede the marriage of priests and the use of the cup by the laity. Means were found, as we have seen, to prevent the former of these demands from being made, while the latter, when presented, was peremptorily refused.¹ In the existing condition of affairs, the Council of Trent could not reasonably be expected to effect much, for, as the orthodox Claude d'Espence informs us, the French prelates, like the Germans, were in the habit of collecting the "cullagium" from all their priests, and informing those who did not keep concubines that they might do so if they liked, but must pay the licence-money whether or no.² In 1564, the Cardinal of Lorraine, not long after his return from the council, held a provincial synod at Rheims, where he contented himself with declaring that the ancient canons enjoining chastity should be enforced.³ The next year, 1565, a synod held at Cambrai reduced the penalties to a minimum, and afforded every opportunity for purchasing immunity, by enacting that those who consorted with loose women, and who remained obdurate to warnings and reprehension, should be punished at the pleasure of the officials.⁴ Thus we find Pius V., 26 January, 1567, granting to Archbishop Maximilian full power to correct the depraved morals of his canons, in spite of the customary oath which he had taken not to interfere with them. Pius further seized the opportunity to urge him and his suffragans to labour strenuously in the good cause,

1 Fleury, *Hist. Eccles. Liv. CLVII. Nos. 37-42.*

2 Chavard, *Le Célibat des Prêtres*, p. 401.

3 Concil. Remens. ann. 1564, Stat. xvii. (Harduin. X. 477.)

4 Concil. Camerac. ann. 1565, Rubr. viii. c. 3. At this council, which was held in June 1565, the Council of Trent was formally adopted. As forming part of *Flandre française*, Cambrai may properly be considered as French, though Francis I., by the treaty of Madrid in 1526, had been compelled to surrender his sovereignty, and till a hundred years later it continued under Spanish dominion.

for the surest means of extirpating heresy was the reform of the clerical corruption that had occasioned it.¹ We may assume this to have stimulated the council held the same year to disregard clerical immunity by invoking the aid of the secular arm to remove the concubines of its clergy²—a course again suggested as late as 1631.³ The terms in which Claude, Bishop of Evreux, at his synod of 1576, announced his intention of taking steps to eject those who for the future should persist in their immorality show not only that such measures were even yet an innovation, but also indicate little probability of their being successful.⁴ The Council of Rheims, in 1583, while proclaiming that the Tridentine canons shall be enforced on all concubinary priests, manifests a reasonable doubt as to the amount of respect which they will receive in threatening that those who are contumacious shall be subdued by the secular arm.⁵ The Council of Tours, in the same year, deplors that the whole ecclesiastical body is regarded with aversion by the good and pious on account of the scandals perpetrated by a portion of them. To cure this evil, the residence of suspected women, even when connected by blood, is forbidden, as well as of the children acknowledged to be sprung from such unions, and various penalties are denounced against offenders.⁶ The Council of Bordeaux, in 1624, earnestly warns the clergy of the province not to allow their sisters and nieces to live in their houses, and especially not to sleep in the same room with them;⁷ and various other synods held during the period repeated the well-known regulations on

1 Pii V. Epistolar. Lib. quinque, Lib. I. Ep. ix. (Antverpæ, 1640.)

2 Concil. Camerac. ann. 1567 c. iii. (Hartzheim, VII. 216.)

3 Synod. Camerac. ann. 1631 Tit. XVIII. c. xiv. (Ibid. IX. 562.)

4 Claudii Episc. Ebroicens. Statut. cap. III. § 1 (Migne's Patrol. Tom. 147, pp. 244-5).

5 Concil. Remens. ann. 1583 cap. xviii. § 5 (Harduin. X. 1293).

6 Concil. Turon. ann. 1583 cap. xv. (Ibid. p. 1481.)

7 Concil. Burdigalens. ann. 1624 cap. xiii. § 2 (Harduin. XI. 96).

the subject, which are only of interest as showing how little they were respected.¹

Avignon and the Constat Venaissin, the portion of modern France then belonging to the Holy See, were not neglected by the vigilance of Pius V. In 1569 we find him writing to the Cardinals of Bourbon and Armagnac, his legates in charge of the territory, and also to the individual bishops, urging them to reform the corrupt and depraved morals of clergy and laity, to which the growth of heresy was largely ascribable; the clergy especially were to be looked after and be coerced with the full severity of the canons.² The usual lack of success attended this, for a Council held in Avignon in 1594, declares that the numerous decrees relative to the morals and habits of the clergy are either forgotten or neglected, and then proceeds, as was customary, to forbid the residence of suspected women.³

No one, in fact, who is familiar with the popular literature of France during that period can avoid the conviction that the ecclesiastical body was hopelessly infected with the corruption which, emanating from the foulest court in Christendom, spread its contagion throughout the land. If Rabelais and Bonaventure des Periers reflect the depravity which was universal under Francis I., Brantôme, Beroalde de Verville and Noël du Fail continue the record of infamy under Catherine de Medicis and her children.⁴ The genealogy of sin is carried

¹ Synod. Tornacens. ann. 1574 Tit. xii. c. 5, 6, 7 (Hartzheim VII. 780).—Synod. Audomarens. ann. 1583 Tit. xvi. c. 2 (Ibid. VII. 947). Concil. Burdigalens. ann. 1583 can. xxi. (Harduin. X. 1360).—Concil. Bituricens. ann. 1584 Tit. xlii. can. 1-4 (Ibid. X. 1503-4).—Concil. Aquens. ann. 1585 cap. de Vit. et Honestate Cleric. (Ibid. X. 1547.) Concil. Narbonnens. ann. 1609 cap. xli. (Ibid. XI. 96.)

² Pii V. Epistolae. Lib. III. Epist. xxi.

³ Concil. Avenionens. ann. 1594, can. xxxii. (Harduin. X. 1854.)

⁴ Du Fail, whose high official position in the Parlement of Rennes precludes the supposition of any tendency to Calvinism, devotes one of his discourses (Contes et Discours d'Eutrapel No. xx.) to the evils entailed by celibacy on the Church and on society, quoting the exclamation of Cardinal Contarini to Velly the French Ambassador, "O quæ mala attulit in ecclesia cœlibatus ille!" It is true that such stories as

on by Tallemant des Réaux, Bussy-Rabutin, and the crowd of memoir writers who flourished in the Augustan age of French literature. These show us how often the high places of the hierarchy were filled with men to whom the very name of virtue was a jest, and who could not be expected to enforce on their subjects the continence to which they themselves made no pretension. Yet it would be unjust not to keep in view also the lofty piety of such a prelate as Fénelon, or the austere virtue of Antoine Arnauld and his comrades of Port Royal. While the Jesuits and so-called moral theologians were smoothing the path of sin by the casuistry of Probabilism, there sprang up to resist them the Jansenistic Rigorism, which exercised wide influence on the side of godliness, in spite of unremitting persecution by the Holy See.

It is evident from all this that the standard of ecclesiastical morals had not been raised by the efforts of the Tridentine fathers, and yet a study of the records of church discipline shows that with the increasing decency and refinement of society during the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries the open and cynical manifestations of licence among the clergy became gradually rarer. It may well be doubted, nevertheless, whether their lives were in reality much purer. A few spasmodic efforts were made to enforce the Nicene canon, prohibiting the residence of women, but they were utterly fruitless, and were so recognised by all parties; and the energies of the arch-priests and bishops were directed to regulating the character of the hand-maidens, who were admitted to be a necessary evil. The devices employed for this purpose were varied, and repeated with a frequency which shows

“Frater Fecisti” are not historical documents, yet they have their value as indicating the drift of public feeling and the convictions forced upon the minds of the people by the irregularities of the clerical profession. The same lesson is taught by Boccaccio, Piers Plowman, Chaucer, Poggio, the Cent Nouvelles Nouvelles, and all the other records of the interior life of the fourteenth, fifteenth and sixteenth centuries.

their insufficiency; and it would be scarce worth our while to do more than indicate some sources of reference for the curious student who may wish to follow up the reiteration which we have traced already through so many successive centuries.¹ Among them, however, one new feature shows itself, which indicates the growing respect paid to the appearance of decency—complaints that concubines are kept under the guise of sisters and nieces.

That the monastic orders had profited more than the secular clergy by the Tridentine reformation may well be doubted. Laurent de Peyrinnis, one of the heads of the Order of Minims, in 1668, issued a code of regulations in which he showed that scandal was more dreaded than sin when he promulgated an exemption from excommunication in favour of those brethren who, when about to yield

¹ Le Plat, Monument. Concil. Trident. VII. 136.—Collect. Synod. Mechlin. Tom. I. pp. 39, 57.—Synod. Mechlin. ann. 1570 Tit. xiv. (Ibid. I. 118.)—Synod. Lovaniens, ann. 1574 (Ibid. I. 191).—Synod. Provin. Mechlin. ann. 1607 Tit. XVIII. c. viii. (Ibid. I. 395.)—Synod. Diœces. Mechlin. ann. 1607 Tit. XVII. c. vi. (Ibid. II. 237.)—Congregat. Archipresbyt. ann. 1613 (Ibid. II. 271).—Tertia Congregat. Episc. ann. 1624 (Ibid. I. 466).—Ibid. I. 514.

Synod. Augustan. ann. 1567 P. III. c. ii. (Hartzheim VII. 182.)—Synod. Constant. ann. 1567 P. II. Tit. i. c. 9 (Ibid. VII. 541).—Synod. Ruremond. ann. 1570 (Ibid. VII. 653).—Synod. Boscodunens. ann. 1571 Tit. XIV. c. ii. (Ibid. VII. 723).—Synod. Warmiens. ann. 1577 c. i. (Ibid. VII. 871).—Synod. Mettens. ann. 1604 c. xlvi., liii., lxii. (Ibid. X. 768–70.)—Synod. Brixiens. ann. 1603 De discip. cler. c. xvii. (Ibid. VIII. 576).—Synod. Namurcens. ann. 1604 Tit. VIII. c. vi. (Ibid. VIII. 623).—Synod. Constant. ann. 1609 P. II. Tit. xvii. c. 7 (Ibid. VIII. 906).—Synod. Mettens. ann. 1610 Tit. xi. c. xi. (Ibid. VIII. 962).—Synod. Antverp. ann. 1610 Tit. XVII. c. vi. (Ibid. VIII. 1003).—Statut. Visitat. Salisburgens. ann. 1616 Tit. I. c. vi. (Ibid. IX. 266.)—Synod. Iprens. ann. 1629 c. xx. (Ibid. IX. 496.)—Synod. Namurcens. ann. 1639 Tit. XIX. c. ix., x. (Ibid. IX. 592–3.)—Synod. Audomar. ann. 1640 Tit. XIV. c. vii. (Ibid. X. 802.)—Synod. Colon. ann. 1651 P. II. c. ii. § 1 (Ibid. IX. 742).—Synod. Hildesheim. ann. 1652 (Ibid. IX. 805–6).—Synod. Colon. ann. 1662 P. III. Tit. ii. c. 1, 2, 3 (Ibid. IX. 1008–11).—Statut. Synod. Trevirens. ann. 1678 c. xi. xii., xiii., xiv. (Ibid. X. 60.)—Statut. Synod. Argentinens. ann. 1687 De clericis addit. I. (Ibid. X. 180.)—Synod. Brugens. ann. 1693 Tit. v. § 2 (Ibid. X. 202.)—Cod. Canon. Mettens. ann. 1699 Tit. X. c. xviii. (Ibid. X. 245.)—Synod. Bisuntin. ann. 1707 Tit. II. c. xxv. (Ibid. X. 291.)—Synod. Culmens. et Pomesan. ann. 1745 c. ix. (Ibid. X. 517.)

Concil. Toletan. ann. 1565 Act. II. cap. xxii.; Act. III. cap. xix., xxv. (Aguirre V. 396, 405–6.)—Concil. Valentin. ann. 1565 Tit. II. cap. xviii., xix. (Ibid. 425.)—Concil. Toletan. ann. 1582 Act. III. Decret. xxxv. (Ibid. VI. 12.)—Concil. Tarraconens. ann. 1591 Lib. I. Tit. viii.; Lib. III. Tit. ii. (Ibid. 256, 271–3.)—Synod. Oriolan. ann. 1600 cap. xxxiii. (Ibid. 456.)

to the temptations of the flesh, or to commit theft, prudently laid aside the monastic habit.¹ Apparently this caution was exceptional for Chiericato deplors the constant scandal given by religious, who are not ashamed to be seen entering and leaving the houses of public prostitutes.² Another celebrated jurist of the Order of Minims bears testimony to the demoralisation of his brethren when he declares that if the severe punishments provided for unchastity by the statutes were enforced they would result in the destruction of all the religious congregations.³

That the awful sacrifice of the mass should be performed by a priest fresh from concubinary pollution, is a sacrilege, but even more to be dreaded would be the omission of the function which would reveal his weakness to his flock. For centuries the question has troubled the Church, and it has been forced to permit the sacrilege rather than to risk the exposure. The Council of Cambrai, indeed, devised a tolerably effective remedy, about the year 1300, when it ordered celebrants to confess daily to the episcopal penitentiaries,⁴ but this was applicable only to the cathedral town and even there was too cumbersome to be enforced. Aquinas was more considerate to human frailty when he asserted that if the sinful priest could not confess before celebrating, he could qualify himself by

¹ Ratio est quia tunc non dimittit habitum ut periculose vegetur, sed ut commodius fornicetur, vel liberius furetur.—Apud. C. Chabot, *Encyclopédie Monastique* p. 24 (Paris, 1827).

² Nihilominus frequentissimum est, etsi inobservata etiam in peccatum carnis . . . in Religiosis qui non verentur ingredi domus publicarum meretricum et exire ex ipsis absque rubare, quamvis videantur ac observentur a transeuntibus et ab aliis in eodem vico habitantibus, qui omnes gravissimum scandalum ultra peccatum carnis committunt et deturpant bonum nomen suæ Ordinis.—Clericati de Virtute Pœnitentiæ Decisiones, p. 215 (Venetiis, 1706).

³ Spatharius, *Aurea Methodus corrigendi regulares*, 1625, p. 57—"atque mea sententia, in totalem ordinis ruinam et destructionem singularem religionum" (Apud Chabot, op. cit. p. 95).

⁴ Concil. Camerac. ann. 1300-1310 (Hartzheim IV. 65).

making a vow to confess.¹ The Council of Trent prescribes preliminary confession for a priest conscious of mortal sin, but this is not always easy, for confession is complicated with questions of jurisdiction and reserved sins, and it adds that if this is impossible, he must confess subsequently as soon as practicable.² Jansenist rigour was too severe to permit this sacrilege, but even it had to provide for frailty and it offered the suggestion that the peccant ministrant should scratch his thumb with a knife, bind up his hand and proclaim himself incapacitated.³ The ordinary practice, however, with those who are scrupulous, seems to be to perform an act of contrition or to make a hasty confession in the sacristy before going to the altar.⁴

In the New World the licentiousness of the priesthood, as might be expected, began to vex the infant church as soon as it was organised among the heathen. Little more than half a century had passed since the voyages of Columbus, when Oviedo, the first chronicler of the New World, speaks of the licentiousness of the clergy as inviting the destruction of the Spanish Colonies, even as the marriage of the Greek priests had been punished by their subjection under the Turks.⁵ The earliest synods

1 S. Th. Aquinat. Summæ Supplem. Q. VI. Art. 5.

2 Concil. Trident. Sess. XIII. De Eucharistia, cap. xiii.

3 De Charmes, Theol. Universal. Diss. v. cap. vi. Q. 5, § 3.

4 Jo. Gersoni Regulæ Morales.—Casus Conscientiæ Benedicti P.P. xiv., October 1736 cas. 3.—Corella, Praxis Confessionalis. P. II. Tract. xii. cap. 1, n. 11.

Miguel Albert alludes to a case in which a fornicating priest was convicted of heresy for not confessing before celebrating mass, and alleging that the virtue of the sacred vestments which he wore effaced all sins.—Repertor. Inquisitorum, s. v. Confessio (Valentiæ, 1494).

See also a case decided in Rome, May 9, 1896, and reported in *Il Consulento Ecclesiastico*, Vol. I., p. 165, and another decided 8 March, 1897, in which a priest committed incest with his sister, whom he had intoxicated for the purpose, and celebrated mass the next day in order not to lose a handsome fee (*Ibid.* Vol. II. p. 160).

S. Alphonso Liguori (*Theol. Moral. Lib. VI. n. 585*) suggests a device for eluding the difficulty of reserved cases.

5 Oviedo Valdés, *Las Quinquagenas de la Nobleza de España*, I. 383 (Madrid, 1880).

and councils which were held contain the customary denunciations of concubinage and prohibitions for ecclesiastics to keep their children in their houses, to celebrate their baptisms and nuptials, and to be assisted by them in the ministry of the altar. Many, as we are informed by the first Council of Mexico, held in 1555, brought with them from Spain their concubines under the guise of relatives.¹ For the most part, however, they formed connections with the natives.

In fact, the institution of slavery and the subject populations among whom its ministers were scattered gave rise to fresh problems, which the Church sought perseveringly, but vainly, to solve. Thus, in New Grenada, before the conquest was fairly achieved, Bishop Barrios, of Santafé, held his first synod, in 1556, and there, after premising that the fruits of religion among the Indians depended upon the good example of their pastors, he proceeded to prohibit any priest stationed in an Indian town from having any Indian woman residing in his house; his food was to be cooked by men, or, if this was impossible, his female servant must be a married woman, residing with her husband under another roof²—a provision repeated by the synod of Lima in 1585.³ A curious experiment in dealing with the troubles arising from slavery is seen in the Mexican canons, which directed that if an ecclesiastic had children by his slave, the ownership of the woman was to be transferred to the Church and the children were to be set free. It will be remembered (vol. i. p. 206) that in 1022 the Church insisted upon the continued servitude

¹ Concil. Mexican. I. ann. 1555 cap. lvii.—The first and second Mexican Councils are not contained in Aguirre's collection, but were printed, together with the third, by Archbishop Lorenzana, in two folio volumes, Mexico, 1769. The Third Council has also been reprinted in Mexico, in 1858, as a manual of existing local ecclesiastical law.

² Constituciones Sinodales de Santafé, 1556 cap. iv. (Groot, Hist. Eccles. y Civil del Nuevo Reino de Granada, T. I. Append. ii. p. 497.)

³ Synod Dioec. Limens. III. ann. 1585 cap. xi., lxvii. (Aguirre, VI. 193, 198.)

of clerical bastards whose mothers were serfs of the Church ; and the contrast between this and the regulation which proclaimed the freedom of the children as a punishment inflicted upon the father is perhaps the sorriest exhibit that could be made of the character of those who were engaged in spreading the teachings of Christ among the heathen.¹

While there can be no doubt that much heroic self-devotion was shown in the efforts made to convert the new subjects of Spain, it is equally unquestionable that a majority of the ecclesiastics who sought the colonies were men of evil character. The councils held in the several provinces deplore the bad example which they set to their newly converted flocks, and the regulations which were issued time and again against their excesses show the impossibility of keeping them under control. In Peru, for instance, when in 1581 St. Toribio commenced the quarter of a century of labour as Archbishop which worthily won for him the canonisation accorded by Benedict XIII. in 1726, two councils had already been held in Lima, one in 1552 and the other in 1567, which had essayed a reformation of morals. He, in turn, lost no time in summoning a provincial council, which assembled in 1583, the decrees of which, in their denunciation of all manner of vices, show how ineffectual the previous efforts had been. The clergy were not disposed to submit tamely to the new restraints which Toribio sought to impose, and, while the active resistance which some of them raised was subdued, the underhand management of others was so far successful that the royal assent to the proceedings of the Council was delayed till 1591.² Notwithstanding the activity of Toribio, who, between 1583 and 1604, held three provincial councils and ten diocesan synods, who three

¹ Concil. Mexican. I. ann. 1555 cap. li.—Concil. Mexican. III. ann. 1585 Lib. v. Tit. x. § 8.

² Aguirre, VI. 51, 55.—The canons of the council directed against concubinage &c. are Act. III. c. 18, 19, 20, 23, 24 (Ibid. pp. 40–41).

times personally visited every portion of his vast archbishopric, and who repeatedly ordered his vicars to send secret reports of concubinary and dissolute priests, he was obliged, in the provincial council of 1601, to content himself with renewing the regulations of 1583, sorrowfully observing that they had received scant obedience, and that consequently the corruption and abuses prevalent among the clergy deprived them of usefulness among their Indian parishioners.¹ We can thus readily understand the grief with which the honest Fray Gerónimo de Mendieta, a contemporary, after depicting the eager docility with which the natives at first welcomed Christianity, contrasts it with the hatred which sprang up for the very name of Christian when they realised the hopeless wretchedness of their position under their new taskmasters; and the Fray does not conceal the fact that this was partly owing to the character of some of the clergy, while the better ones were disheartened and discharged their trusts mechanically, without expectation of accomplishing good.² This condition of morals did not improve with time. In his official report of 1736, the Marques del Castel-Fuerte, Viceroy of Peru, remarks that the greater portion of those of Spanish blood born in the colonies embraced an ecclesiastical life, as offering an easier and more assured career than any other. Surrounded by their Indian subjects, the pastors lived in luxury and licence, which their superiors did little or nothing to check. In 1728 the civil power was ordered to make an investigation into the morals of the priesthood, and especially to designate those whose concubinage was open and notorious—an invasion of the sacred immunities of the Church which provoked a storm against the secular authorities, although only an exami-

¹ Synod Dioc. Limens. III. ann. 1585 cap. xxxvi.—Synod. VIII. aun. 1594 cap. xxxvi.—Concil. Provin. Limens. III. ann. 1601 Act. II. Decret. iv. (Aguirre, VI. 197-8, 436, 479.)

² Mendieta, *Historia Eccles. Indiana*, Lib. IV. cap. xlvi. (Mexico, 1870.)

nation was proposed, and there was no attempt to be made of conviction or punishment.¹ There is therefore no reason to question the truthfulness of the description by Don Jorje Juan and Don Antonio de Ulloa, in an official report made about 1740, when they assert that the clergy of Peru, both secular and regular, live so licentiously and with such scandal and self-indulgence that, although all men have their weaknesses and human nature is fragile in Peru, yet it seems as though it were the special function of these ecclesiastics to exceed all the rest in the perverted habits of their disorderly lives—an assertion which the writers proceed to justify by abundant details of the most convincing character.²

That the monastic establishments shared in the general dissoluteness we may fairly conclude when we see the precautions which St. Toribio found necessary to preserve the purity of the spouses of Christ. Thus one regulation provides that no ecclesiastic shall visit a nun without a written permission, to be granted only by the Archbishop himself, or his Provisor; and so little confidence did he feel in the guardians whom he himself appointed, that he directs that the official visitors who inspected the nunneries should not enter them without some special and urgent reason.³ In fact, the report of Juan and Ulloa, declares that the regulars exceed the seculars in their disorders, which are so public and notorious as to fill one with horror.

¹ *Memorias de los Vireyes del Peru*, Lima, 1659, T. III. pp. 63-70.

² *Noticias secretas de America*, Sacadas à Luz por Don David Barry, p. 490 (London, 1826).

Juan and Ulloa were distinguished men of science, sent in 1735, to co-operate with a similar party from France in the measurement of an equatorial arc of the earth's surface. They carried instructions to make a confidential report on the resources, condition and administration of the colony, in fulfilment of which they traversed it from end to end. Their voluminous report lay hidden in the Spanish archives until unearthed and printed by Mr. Barry.

³ *Synod. Diœc. Limens. III. ann. 1585 cap. xli.—V. ann. 1588 cap. ix.* (Aguirre VI. 198, 216.)

A curious rule adopted by the first Council of Mexico in 1555 shows how much more scandal was dreaded than sin. In order, as it says, to avert danger and infamy from the clerical order and from married women, it prohibits the Fiscal, or prosecuting officer, from taking cognisance of cases of adultery committed by ecclesiastics, unless the husband be a consenting party, or the adulterer makes public boast of it, or the fact is so notorious that it cannot be passed over in silence; and even when action thus is not to be avoided, in no case is the name of the woman to be mentioned in the proceedings. The Provisors, however, are not forbidden to take notice of such crimes, but are allowed to settle them, if they can, with all due discretion.¹ As might be expected these regulations, by giving practical immunity, led to an increase in crime, and the third Council of Mexico in 1585 tells us that many of the clergy indulged in it, in preference to ordinary concubinage, in the confidence that they would not be prosecuted; but the amended rule adopted by the Council to meet this trouble differs so little from its predecessors, that we may reasonably doubt whether it was followed by any diminution in the evil.² And this, judging from Rivera's notes to his edition of 1859, is the existing state of ecclesiastical law in Mexico,³ although the Tridentine canon specially orders the Episcopal Ordinaries to proceed *ex officio* in all such cases, even of laymen.⁴

¹ Concil. Mexican. I. ann. 1555 cap. lxxxii.

² Concil. Mexican. III. ann. 1585 Lib. v. Tit. x. § 7.

³ Notes 57 and 229, pp. 452, 549.

⁴ Concil. Trident. Sess. XXIV. De Reform. Matrim. c. viii.—It requires some artful special pleading on the part of Rivera and of the authorities on whom he relies to reconcile this Mexican laxity with the instructions of the Council of Trent.

CHAPTER XXX

SOLICITATION

THE Church of the post-Tridentine period was brought into the strongest competition with the Reform, which had carried away nearly half of Europe and was seriously threatening to secure the rest. The needs of the counter-Reformation rendered obligatory efforts at internal purification, which had been superfluous during the ages of unquestioned theocracy, and there was no point in which this was more imperative than in the relations between the celibate priest and his spiritual daughters in the sacrament of penance. The power of the confessional, one of the most effective instrumentalities invented by the ingenuity of man for enslaving the human mind, was peculiarly liable to abuse in sexual matters. No one can be familiar with the hideous suggestiveness of the penitentials without recognising how frequent must be the temptations arising between confessor and penitent, while their respective relations render seduction comparatively easy, and unspeakably atrocious.¹ To deprive such relations of danger requires the confessor to be gifted with rare purity and holiness, and when these functions were confided to men such as those who composed the sacerdotal body, as we have seen it throughout the Middle Ages, the result was inevitable.

The scandals of the confessional were no new source

¹ For the brutal details of the questions which the confessor was required to ask of his penitents, female as well as male, see Burchardi Decretorum Lib. XIX. c. v. I dare not give even a specimen.

W.B.

of tribulation to the Church and the people. No sooner had the early custom of public and lay confession tended to fall into the hands of the priesthood than it was found necessary to call attention to the dangers thence arising. The first Council of Toledo, in 398, forbids any familiarity between the virgins dedicated to God and their confessors.¹ About the year 500, Symmachus calls attention to the spiritual affinity contracted between the confessor and his penitent, rendering the latter his daughter; he alludes to Silvester as having denounced guilty relations between them, and proceeds to decree not only deposition in such cases, but life-long penitence.² As sacerdotal confession gradually became customary, a decretal was forged—whether to give additional authority to the practice, or to impress upon the minds of confessors the necessity of prudence—by which the name of Celestin I. was used for a regulation confiscating all the possessions of the female delinquent and confining her in a monastery for life, while the seducer was warned that such sin with his spiritual daughter amounted to a grave case of adultery, for which he must be deposed and undergo penance for twelve years, provided, always, that the facts had become known to the people,³ thus indicating that scandal rather than sin was the danger most dreaded.

It was inevitable that this trouble should continue, as we have seen it do throughout the whole history of a celibate priesthood.⁴ So constantly was “solicitation”—*solicitatio ad turpiæ*, as it came to be technically called—

¹ Concil. I. Toletan. ann. 398 can. vi. For the gradual growth of confession and its conversion from public to auricular, see the author's “History of Auricular Confession and Indulgences,” 3 vols., Philadelphia, 1896. Confession to the priest was not made obligatory until the fourth Council of Lateran, in 1215–16.

² Gratian. Caus. xxx. q. i. can. 8.—Whether this decretal be authentic or not there is significance in Gratian's including it in his collection.

³ Gratian. Caus. xxx. q. i. can. 9, 10.—Although long practically obsolete these canons are quoted, in 1611, as still in force by Jacobus and Graffius, “Decisionum aurearum casuum conscientie,” P. II. Lib. I. cap. vi. n. 53 (Venetiis, 1611).

⁴ See Vol. I., passim, especially p. 435.

borne in mind that the mediæval canonists recognised that a parish priest known to be addicted to it forfeited his jurisdiction over his female penitents, who were at liberty to seek another confessor.¹ St. Bonaventura, indeed, declares that there are few parish priests free from this or from other defects that should incapacitate them.² That it was the subject of frequent and indignant reprehension on the part of those who sought to elevate and purify the church we may well believe. Calixtus II. freely assumes the perdition of the priest who thus betrays the sacred confidence reposed in him, denouncing him as a lion devouring sheep, as a bear attacking a traveller who has lost his way, as a fowler spreading lures for birds and attracting them with sweet sounds, while the woman he treats not as a partner in guilt, but as an unfortunate who finds destruction where she is seeking salvation.³ It is observable here that the fault is assumed to lie exclusively with the confessor, and such is likewise the case in the eloquent denunciations of Savonarola, who declares that the Italian cities are full of these wolves in sheep's clothing, who are constantly seeking to entice the innocent into sin by all the arts for which their spiritual directorship affords so much scope.⁴ For this there was virtual immunity. Like all other sins it was made a source of profit to the curia, which offered absolution and a dispensation to hold benefices for the moderate price of thirty-

1 S. Th. Aquinat. *Summæ Supplem.* Q. VIII. art. 4.—*Astesani Summæ Lib. v.* Tit. xiii. q. 2.—*Summæ Sylvestrina s.v. Confessor* I. ss. 10–11.

Guido de Monteroquer, however (*Manipulus Curatorum*, P. II. cap. iii. art. 9), says that when such a priest refuses to grant a licence to confess elsewhere, or there is no other priest accessible, the woman must confess to him, after prayer to God to resist his importunities.

2 S. Bonaventura, *Quære Fratres Minores prædicant* (Opusc. I. 405).

3 Calixtus II. *Serm. I. de S. Jacob* (Migne's *Patrolog.* T. 163 p. 1390).—The genuineness of these sermons has been doubted, but they are unquestionably, if not by Calixtus, by a writer nearly contemporary.

4 Perrens, *Jérôme Savonarole*, p. 71. See also Cornelius Agrippa, *De Vanitate Scientiar.* c. lxiv.

six *gros tournois*.¹ For those at a distance from Rome the local episcopal courts were equally lenient, if we may judge from the case of Alonso de Valdelamar, a priest of Almodovar, tried in 1535 by Blas Ortiz, vicar-general of the Archbishop of Toledo. The charges fully proved against him embraced the seduction of two of his female penitents and his refusal of absolution to a third unless she would surrender herself to him, besides a miscellaneous assortment of crimes—theft, blasphemy, cheating with bulls of indulgence, charging penitents for absolution and frequenting brothels. For all this he was sentenced to a fine of two ducats and the costs and fees of his trial, and to thirty days seclusion in the church to repent of his sins and fit himself for celebrating mass, after which he was free to resume his flagitious career.² The regular Orders seem to have been equally benignant with their delinquents. In the Mexican case of Fray Juan de Valdaña, guardian of the Franciscan convent of Suchipita, who made no secret of his affairs with his penitents, it was in evidence, on his trial by the Inquisition in 1583, that when remonstrated with, he asked what could his prelates do to him? it was only a dozen strokes of the discipline and a year's suspension from his guardianship.³

The Lutheran revolt, which found in the crime euphemistically termed Solicitation, a favourite point of attack, wrought a change in the view taken of it. The reforming Bishop of Verona, Matteo Ghiberti (died in 1543), decreed severe temporal punishments for all attempts on the virtue of female penitents, culminating in deprivation and perpetual imprisonment when the attempt was successful.⁴ In his case this was doubtless prompted by sincere con-

¹ Taxes des Parties casuelles, p. 79 (Lyon, 1564).

² Archivo histórico nacional de España, Inquisición de Toledo, Legajo 233, n. 100.

³ MSS. of David Fergusson, Esq.

⁴ Salzedo, *Práctica criminalis canonica*, p. 276 (Compluti, 1587).

viction of the iniquity of the offence, but even those who thought lightly of it recognised that the time had passed for its condonation. Bernal Díaz de Lugo, in 1543, intimated that improper relations between confessor and penitent are not much worse than ordinary concubinage, but that when they become publicly known they should be visited with deprivation and imprisonment, seeing that notoriety tends to prevent men from allowing their wives and daughters to confess and exposes the sacrament of penitence to heretical assault.¹ In the same spirit, Archbishop Carranza of Toledo, in 1558, tells us that the enemy took full advantage of this weak spot in the line of defence.² As the Council of Trent assumed that God would not deny the gift of chastity to a celibate priesthood, it could scarce refer to such a matter, even if the dread of scandal arising from any allusion to it had not imposed silence, and it adopted no provisions to lessen the evil. About that time, however, a preventive effort was commenced by the invention of the confessional. Hitherto the priest had heard confessions in the open, with the penitent at his knees or seated by his side, which gave ample opportunity for temptation and solicitation. To remedy this the confessional was gradually evolved—a box in which the confessor sits while the penitent outside pours the tale of his sin through a grille, neither being visible to the other. The earliest allusion to such a contrivance that I have met occurs in a memorial to Charles V., by Siliceo, Archbishop of Toledo, in 1547.³ In 1565 a Council of Valencia ordered its use, especially for the confession of women, and between 1565 and 1575 S. Carlo Borromeo introduced it in his province of Milan, while the Roman

¹ Bern. Diaz de Luco, *Practica criminalis canonica*, cap. 75, 76 (Venetiis, 1543).

² Carranza *Commentarius sobre el Catechismo*, Tercero Sacramento, cap. vii

³ Burriel, *Vida de los Arzobispos de Toledo* (Biblioteca nacional de España seccion de MSS. Ff. 194, fol. 9).

Ritual of 1614 prescribes its employment in all churches.¹ The command was obeyed but slackly, for the innovation had to win its way against the pronounced opposition of the priesthood, who objected to this seclusion from their penitents. In Spain we find the Inquisition, between 1710 and 1720, busy in endeavouring to enforce the use of the confessional and, as late as 1781, it issued a decree to be printed and sent to all parish priests and superiors of convents who were to post it in their sacristies. In this it alludes to its previous repeated orders and its sorrow at the evils arising from their non-observance or from the devices used to elude them, of which it gives a curious enumeration.²

A drawback to the advantages of the confessional was the opportunity which it afforded for laymen to ensconce themselves and hear confessions of women, whether from jealousy or to gratify prurient instincts, or because it enabled them to ask indecent questions. Such cases were not uncommon, and though the offenders were not liable to prosecution for solicitation, they were held subject to the Inquisition for suspicion of heresy. If the pretended confessor, however, ventured to administer absolution he came under the savage decrees of Paul IV., Gregory XIII., and Urban VIII., which prescribed burning alive for such sacrilege, although in Spain the Inquisition humanely modified this to service in the galleys.³

Mechanical devices, however, went but a little way to cure an evil so widespread and so persistent. If the

¹ Concil. Valentin. ann. 1565, Tit. II. cap. vii. (Aguirre V. 417.)—C. Mediolanens. I. ann. 1565 P. I. cap. vi. (Harduin. X. 653.)—C. Provin. Mediolanens. IV. ann. 1576 (Acta Eccles. Mediolanens. I. 146).—Rituale Roman. Tit. iii. cap. i.

² Archivo de Simancas, Inquisicion, Sala 39, Legajo 4, fol. 34, 55, 81.—Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisicion de Valencia, Legajo 9, n. 2, fol. 236; Cartas del Consejo, Legajo 16, n. 6, fol. 9.

³ Cozza, *Dubia selecta circa Solicitationem*, Dub. xxxviii. (Lovanii, 1760.)—Trimarchi de Confessore abutente Sacram. Pœnitentiæ, Tract. unicus, p. 147 (Genœ, 1636).—Bullar, Roman. II. 415; III. 142; IV. 144.—Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisicion de Valencia, Legajo 299, fol. 80.

mouths of mocking heretics were to be closed, some efficacious method must be found for the discovery and punishment of offenders. Yet this was surrounded with difficulties. The crime was secret and known only to the confessor and penitent, and the latter, whether she yielded or not, was deterred from volunteering a complaint by the notoriety which accompanied it, compromising her with husband or father, to say nothing of the dangerous enmity which she would excite. Strictly speaking, such matters were not covered by the seal of the confessional, but she could scarce know this in the face of assertions freely made to the contrary.¹ The spiritual courts, moreover, which held exclusive jurisdiction, were not, as we have seen, disposed to treat the offender harshly, and a not unnatural *esprit de corps* would lead them to reject accusations which could not be supported by witnesses and were so easily discredited. Then, beyond all else, was the ever-present dread of scandal to be aroused through the publicity of open trials, with the consequence of rendering confession odious and of affording comfort to the heretic. Thus the crime, although peculiarly heinous, was almost assured of impunity.

Yet there was in Spain a tribunal which, by its impenetrable secrecy, could avert scandal and by its special procedure could hope to procure convictions. This was the Inquisition, and, though its Apostolic jurisdiction was confined to heresy, yet heresy was an elastic term which, like charity, could be made to cover a multitude of sins. Pedro Guerrero, the reforming Archbishop of Granada, chanced to represent to Paul IV. the frequency of the crime and the necessity of some more efficacious means of repression.² Whether or not he directly suggested the interpellation of the Inquisition

¹ Rodriguez, Nuova Somma de' Casi de Coscienza, P. I. cap. 53.

² Archivo de Simancas, Inquisicion, Libro 939, fol. 374.

does not appear, but Paul resolved on tentatively trying the experiment, and, on 18 February, 1559, he addressed to the Inquisitors of Granada a brief in which he assumed that confessors who could so abuse their functions must hold unorthodox views as to the sacrament of penitence, rendering them suspect of heresy and subjecting them to the Holy Office. The inquisitors were thus authorised to prosecute such offenders and punish them at discretion, even to "relaying" them to the secular area for burning. As the case was heretical, the exemptions of the Regular Orders were withdrawn, and they were subjected to the jurisdiction of the Inquisition.¹

We have no records to inform us what was the result of this in Granada, but presumably it sufficed to indicate the extent of the evil and the increased efficacy of the new method for its discovery and punishment. Accordingly, Pius IV., by a bull of 14 April, 1561, addressed to Valdes, the inquisitor-general, empowered the Inquisition, throughout the Spanish dominions, to investigate and punish all confessors who solicited women in the act of confession, even to the extent of degrading and relaying them to the secular arm for punishment at its discretion. As before, all exemptions of the monastic Orders were withdrawn.²

The Inquisition was nothing loath to exercise this new power, and, to render it effective, in the next annual

¹ Bulario de la Orden de Santiago, Libro III. fol. 322 (Archivo hist. nacional).

The theologians did not find it easy to explain the "suspicion of heresy" inferred in solicitation, and constructed various theories to elucidate it.—Alberghirri, *Manuale Qualificatorum*, cap. xxxi. § 2, n. 1.

How nebulous was the subject appears from the fact that, as we shall see, in Italy the suspicion was held to be "vehement," and in Spain to be "light"—a distinction of importance in inquisitorial procedure, as the former entailed relaxation, or burning, in case of relapse.

² Pii PP. IV. Bull. *Cum sicut nuper* (Bullar. Roman. II. 48).

The definition of the crime in this bull, on which a good deal subsequently hinged, was rather vague. It alludes to the priests who "*sacramento poenitentiae in actu audiendi confessiones abutantur*," and describes their offence "*mulieres videlicet poenitentes ad actus inhonestos dum earum audiunt confessiones, alliciendo et provocando seu allicere et provocare tentando*."

publication of what was known as the Edict of Faith, solicitation was included among the offences which every one having knowledge was required to denounce to the Holy Office.¹ As this edict was solemnly published in the churches on a feast-day, at which the whole population was summoned to attend, it was a most effective means of acquainting the people with the new legislation and of inviting information from every source. Naturally it produced a sensation, although this has been absurdly exaggerated by hostile writers.² This bold abandonment of the traditional policy of the Church to cover such offences with the deepest silence evoked opposition which finds expression in a memorial presented to the Inquisition. This commences by deploring the crime which converts the sacrament into a snare for the ruin of souls; but, evil as is this, the evils of publicity are greater. The crime has always existed, for men are men and women are women, but the Church has never before attempted so novel a cure. It has always been the policy to conceal the offences of the clergy and not to risk the diminution of the reverence due to them. Scandal is the very thing to be avoided; the authority of the priesthood depends upon popular estimation, which should not be imperilled. To proclaim to the world that the confessional is thus abused is to deter people from seeking it; fathers and husbands will prevent their women from confessing, respect for the sacrament will be destroyed and Christianity will be overthrown. Besides, it is usually the women who are

¹ Archivo de Simancas, Inquisicion, Libro 939, fol. 107.

² González de Montes relates that when the edict was published in Seville in 1563, it brought to the Inquisition such a crowd of accusing women that twenty secretaries were unable to take down the depositions within the allotted term of thirty days, and the time had to be extended to four months, causing finally so great a popular ferment, and implicating so large a portion of the clergy, that the attempt had to be abandoned.—Reg. Gonsalvii Montani, Inquisitionis Hispan. Artes aliquot detectæ, pp. 184 sqq. (Heidelbergæ, 1567.)

See also Cipriano de Valera's account of the trouble in Seville.—Los dos Tratados, p. 271 (Reformistas antiguos Españoles).

the tempters, and, when their advances are repelled, they will bring false charges to ruin the innocent. Moreover, the comfort is to be considered which it will bring to the heretics, justifying their slanders on the morals of priests and friars. Altogether the document, which is not without learning, is a barefaced admission that morals and religion have nothing in common, and that the salvation of souls is of small account in comparison with the material interests of the Church.¹

It is easy to conceive how pressure of this kind increased; the Inquisition in time yielded, and, on 22 May, 1571, it instructed the tribunals that solicitation was no longer to be included in the edict, on account of the evils which it caused. The inquisitors were told to devise such other means as they could and to notify prelates to instruct confessors that, when penitents confessed to having been solicited, they must be admonished to denounce the offenders to the Holy Office. The result of this was not satisfactory after a few years' trial, and, on 2 March, 1576, an edict to be published in future was sent to the tribunals containing the crime of solicitation. The reason given is its great increase, and the inquisitors are taken to task for not acting upon the denunciations which they received.² This remained the settled policy of the Inquisition, and all who knew, directly or indirectly, of such cases, were required to denounce them under pain of major excommunication.

The chief sufferers under this new dispensation were the Regular Orders, for not only was the business of confession largely in their hands, but the temptation to abuse it was greater than among the secular clergy who had fuller opportunities for less dangerous indulgence. The Inquisition moreover was resolute in enforcing its jurisdic-

¹ Biblioteca nacional de España, Sección de MSS. S. 294, fol. 216.

² Archivo de Simancas, Inquisición, Legajo 1465, fol. 16.

tion over them and, when two Jesuit fathers, Sebastian Briviesca and Cristóbal Trugillo, who were guilty of the offence, were quietly conveyed out of Spain, it prosecuted and imprisoned, in 1587, Francisco Marcen, the Provincial of Castile, with fathers Francisco Labata and Juan López, for infraction of the edict commanding all cases to be reported to it.¹ Jesuit influence was powerful in Rome; Sixtus V. promptly evoked their cases to himself and, when the Inquisition demurred, he threatened Inquisitor-general Quiroga with deprivation of his office and cardinalate, which brought submission to his mandate.² Encouraged by this, the Jesuits laboured strenuously to obtain exemption for all the religious Orders, but the whole influence of Spain was brought to bear and, after a prolonged struggle, the Congregation of the Universal Inquisition, in the presence of Clement VIII, issued a decree, 3 December, 1692, declaring that the jurisdiction of the Spanish Inquisition was exclusive and that the superiors of the regulars could not exercise it. This was confirmed, in 1605, by Paul V. in a general constitution, revoking the jurisdiction of superiors in all cases pertaining to the Inquisition, and the question was permanently settled.³

Although Portugal had been added to the Spanish crown in 1580, the separate organisation of its Inquisition had been preserved and it was not until 1608 that Paul V. extended to it jurisdiction over solicitation in the same terms as those granted to the Spanish tribunals.⁴ That the Roman Inquisition should exercise the same power may be assumed as a matter of course.

In all these decrees the definition of the crime, as we have seen, was so loosely phrased that there was little

¹ Vatican Library, MSS. Ottobonian. Lat. 495.

² Archivo de Simancas, Graen y Justicia, Inquisicion, Legajo 621, fol. 139.

³ Bulario de la Ordui de Santiago, Lib. IV. fol. 109, 111.—Archivo de Alcalá de Herrerias, Hacienda, Legajo 1049.

⁴ Pauli PP. V. Bull. *Cum sicut nuper*, 16 September, 1648 (Trimarchi, op. cit. p. 7).

difficulty in evading the letter of the law, for in practice it was construed that technical solicitation was confined to women and that it must be committed during the very act of confession. As early as 1577 the Supreme Council of the Spanish Inquisition ruled that there was no penalty for soliciting penitents in the place assigned for confession if there was no confession, and soon afterwards that, if the confessor told the penitent that he did not wish to confess her, he was not to be prosecuted for soliciting her.¹ All this opened the door to so many evasions that the effectiveness of the bulls was seriously crippled. The churches were for the most part deserted, the attitude of penitent and confessor would disarm the suspicion of any one who chanced to observe them and amorous endearments and even incredible indecencies might easily be indulged in so long as there was no actual sacramental confession, as is shown by frequent and flagrant details in the trials. The Roman Inquisition sought to check these abuses by subjecting them to the Holy Office, in decrees of 10 July, 1614 and 6 February, 1619,² but these decrees seem not to have been accepted in Spain, for de Sausa, in 1623, repeats the assertion that there must be actual confession and that the opposite opinion is destitute of all probability. In this he is supported by an experienced inquisitor, about the same time, who says that when there is an assignation and only an external appearance of confession there is no sacrament and therefore no sacrilège.³

¹ Archivo de Simancas, Inquisicion, Legajo 1465, fol. 16.—MSS. of National Library of Lima, Protocolo 223, Expediente 5270.—“Confesores que con intento de solicitar á sur bijas de confesion dicen que no las quieren confesar, se puede dejar de proceder contra ellas.”

² Tremarchi, *op. cit.* pp. 10, 11.

³ Ant. de Sousa, *Opusculum circa Constit. Pauli V. Tit. 1, cap. 19* (Ulyssip. 1623). Biblioteca nacional de España, Seccion di MSS. B. 159, fol. 159.

The Roman Inquisition, by decree of 24 November, 1612, extended the operation of the bulls to the solicitation of males, which was accepted in Spain and announced to the tribunals, 8 May, 1613.—Archivo de Simancas, Inquisicion, Legajo 1465, fol. 16.

Another and even more dangerous evasion was evolved from the words of the bills, implying that solicitation must be in the act of confession. Probabilism and casuistry were developing rapidly and ingenious moralists were busy in demonstrating how all the sanctions of the moral law could be eluded. It was explained that if the confessor should make his advances before confession actually commenced, or wait until after it was concluded and absolution given, there would be no irreverence to the sacrament and consequently no suspicion of heresy for the Inquisition to punish. By no means all authorities assented to this, but it was defended by enough to render it probable and consequently safe in practice.¹ Then the question as to what acts and words amounted to solicitation opened a wide field for the dialectics of the casuists. The rule that whatever a priest does is to be interpreted favourably—that if he embraces a woman it is to be held that he is blessing her—was invoked to prove that winks and nods and praises of her beauty were not to be regarded as tempting her to evil. The more rigid moralists asserted that such acts were foreign to the sacrament and could only be construed as opening the way to further advances, while others held that unless the acts amounted to mortal sin they did not come within the papal bulls—that to tell the penitent that she was pretty and cultivate her friendship so as to be invited to her house might be imprudent but was not a mortal sin.² There was another question on which opinions were divided—whether a priest acting in the confessional as a pimp for the benefit of another, or urging the penitent to serve as a procuress for him, came under the definitions of the bulls.³

¹ Biblioteca nacional de España, ubi sup.—Henriquez, *Summa Theol. Moral. Lib. vi. cap. xvii. n. 42* (Venetiis, 1600).—Rod. á Cunha, pro SS. PP. Pauli V. *Statuto, Q. 5* (Benavente, 1611).—Ant. de Sousa, op. cit. *Tract. i. cap. xviii.*—Trimarchi, op. cit. p. 83.—Paranio de Orig. *Officii S. Inquisit. p. 878* (Matriti, 1598).

² Rod. á Cunha, op. cit. *Q. vii.*—Ant. de Sousa, op. cit. *Tract. i. cap. i.*

³ Rod. á Cunha, *Q. xvii.*—Ant. de Sousa, *Tract. I. cap. 14.*—The bull of 1622

It was evident that papal utterances of a more definite character were requisite if the efforts to suppress the crime were to have a measure of success and, in 1622, Gregory XV. attempted this in the comprehensive bull *Universi Dominici Gregis*. He not only confirmed the acts of his predecessors but extended their provisions over all the lands of the Roman obedience, constituting not only inquisitors but also episcopal Officials as special judges over all the clergy, including the exempted religious Orders, with exclusive jurisdiction, and full power to inflict punishment, even to degradation and relaxation to the secular arm. Moreover he sought to meet all the evasions by defining that solicitation, whether for the priest himself or for another, could occur either before or after confession, and when there was a pretext of it, provided it was in a place where confessions were heard, and he included illicit and indecent talk and acts within the definition.¹

The success of this well-intended measure scarce corresponded with its merits. At first Spain would have none of it. The Inquisition was exceedingly sensitive as to its exclusiveness of jurisdiction and the terms of the bull appeared to restore to the episcopal courts a cumulative cognisance of solicitation. By some means the Ordinary of Seville obtained a copy and showed it to the inquisitors. The Supreme Council of the Inquisition took

decided that acting as a priest was technically solicitation. As it said nothing about using the penitent as a procurer—which we are told was a more frequent practice—there were doctors who held that it did not subject the confessor to prosecution. Jo. Sanchez, *Disputationes Selectæ*, Disp. XI. n. 3, 4 (Lugduni, 1636)—Trimarchi, op. cit. pp. 53, 55.

¹ Bullar. Roman. III. 484.—“Qui personas, quæcumque illæ sint, ad inhonestas, sive inter se sive cum aliis, quomodolibet perpetranda, in actu sacramentalis confessionis, sive ante vel post immediate, seu occasione vel prætextu confessionis hujusmodi, etiam ipsa confessione non sequuta, sive extra occasionem confessionis in confessionario, aut in loco quocunque ubi confessionis sacramentales audiantur. seu ad confessionem audiendam electo, simulantes ibidem confessiones audire, sollicitare vel provocare tentaverint, aut cum eis illicitas et inhonestas sermones sive tractatus habuerint.”

alarm and promptly addressed a memorial to Philip IV., 14 January, 1623, dwelling eloquently upon the heinousness and frequency of the crime, the energy and vigour of the Inquisition in repressing it and the disastrous consequences of granting concurrent jurisdiction to the bishops. Confessors would be much emboldened in their evil courses by the comparative leniency of the episcopal courts; the secrecy which kept a knowledge of these affairs from husbands and kinsmen would be destroyed, and, if the two complainants necessary for a trial should apply, one to the bishop and the other to the Inquisition, the culprit would escape. The King was therefore asked to obtain the exemption of Spain from the operation of the bull, which was speedily arranged. Then, after some delay, in 1629, the Supreme Council sent copies of the bull to the tribunals as a guide in practice. There was some trouble with bishops who revendicated jurisdiction under it, but the Inquisition boldly asserted that it had a special brief conferring exclusive jurisdiction, though this it could never exhibit, and it finally made good its claim.¹

Elsewhere, the bull had a still more inhospitable reception. It was not accepted or published in either France or Germany. In France the assemblies of the clergy refused to receive it, declaring that it was unsuited to the customs of the country and that it tended to violate the seal of the confessional. It was even asserted to prove the fallibility of the Holy See, and an attempt to publish it, early in the eighteenth century, was suppressed.²

¹ Archivo de Simancas, Inquisicion, Libro 940, fol. 212; Legajo 1465, fol. 16; Gracia y Justicia, Inquisicion, Legajo 621, fol. 27.—Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisicion de Valencia, Legajo 1, n. 6, fol. 274, 393; Libro 7 de Autos, Legajo 2, fol. 114.—Biblioteca nacional, Seccion de MSS. D. 118, p. 148.

² Pontas, Dictionnaire de Cas de Conscience, I. 864 (Paris, 1741).—Lochou, *Traité du Secret de la Confession*, pp. 135, 144 (Brusselle, 1708).—Lenglet Du Fresnoy, *Traité du Secret invariable de la Confession*, pp. 283, 304–20.

In France, solicitation was a *cas royal*, cognisable by the secular courts. A spiritual director of a convent convicted of it was hanged and burnt in the Place Maubert, 23 June, 1673.—Du Fresnoy, *loc. cit.*

Germany was either indifferent or opposed. In 1666, Father Gobat states that the Papal decrees have not been commented upon by German moralists, either because they have not been received there and there is no expectation that they will be, or because the German women cannot be expected to trouble with their complaints such exalted personages as bishops and vicars-general, and he adds that he can name a number of vicars-general who have never received such a denunciation, save one, in a single instance.¹ Yet this absence of complaint was not due to the superior morality of the German priesthood. In 1733, Dr. Amort tells us that a few years previously the Franciscans of Bavaria had agreed to receive the bull in so far as to prohibit any of their confessors from absolving a penitent who had been solicited by one of their own Order, unless she would permit him to denounce the offender, an example which Amort wishes were followed elsewhere, as it would be very useful in repressing many scandals which afflict the German Church.² As the Roman Inquisition, in 1633, had ordered all superiors of religious houses, under pain of deprivation of office and of active and passive voice, to assemble the brethren once a year and admonish them as to the observance of the bulls, this shows how completely they had been ignored.³

When Gregory included illicit and indecent acts and words in his definition of solicitation, he merely opened a field of unlimited debate. Every moralist had his own standard, from the extreme of rigorism to the most abandoned laxity. Thus already, in 1635, there was a discussion whether handing a love-letter to a penitent in the confessional came under the definition ; if it was to be

1 Gobat, *Alphabetum Confessariorum*, n. 576-77.

2 Amort, *Dict. Selectt. Casuum Conscientiæ*, I. 704-5 (Aug. Vindel. 1733).—See Reusch (*Beiträge zur Geschichte des Jesuitenordens*, p. 236, München, 1894) for scandals recorded in the memoranda of a Jesuit visitor in South Germany.

3 Trimanchi, *op. cit.* p. 17.

read on the spot, it was generally so considered ; if to be read subsequently, the stricter theologians condemned it, while others argued that the woman had been absolved and reconciled to God, so that the sacrament was out of the way. It was not until 1665 that Alexander VII. condemned the proposition that love-letters could be thus given without incurring the penalties of solicitation.¹ It was a received rule among moralists that *parvitas materiæ*—or the trifling character of an offence such as theft—reduced mortal sins to venial, but it was likewise agreed that there was no *parvitas materiæ* in usury or lust. Whether there was in solicitation was a disputed point until, in 1661, the Roman Inquisition decided in the negative. Still this settled little, for at the same time it decided that praising the beauty of a penitent or giving her a present might be solicitation or not according to intention.² Thus the question of intention threw everything in doubt and justifies Bodonus in applying it to such utterances as “Remember me, for I love you,” “If I were a layman I would marry you,” “Wait for me at home, for I have to speak with you about a matter of importance,” and even advising a penitent to kill her husband, none of which justify denunciatio for they may be innocent.³ In 1741, Benedict XIV. endeavoured, in the bull *Sacramentum Pœnitentiæ*, to define the indefinable more accurately, but he could do little more than copy Gregory XV.⁴ Subsequently to this, St. Alphonso de

¹ Trimanchi, op. cit. pp. 48–50.—Bullar. Roman. T. VI. Append. p. 1.

² Berardi de Sollicitatione, p. 5 (Faventinæ, 1897).

³ Bodoni Sacrum Tribunal Judicum, cap. xxiii. n. 53–4, 60, 61 (Romæ, 1648); Ejusdem Manuale Consultorum, Sect. xxv. n. 91 (Romæ, 1693).

There were even doctors who held that a priest confessing a rich woman and taking advantage of her falling into stupor or delirium was not liable to denunciation, for in that condition she was no longer his penitent, and the papal bulls were directed not against fornicating priests, but soliciting confessors. Berardi, however, assures us (pp. 36–7) that the weight of authority is against this line of reasoning.

⁴ Bullar, Benedicti XIV. I. 23.

Liguori, the most authoritative moralist of modern times, inclines to the laxist view—not wholly, but in many of the debatable cases. He follows the laxist system in construing strictly the words of the papal decrees and limiting them to the letter, not developing their spirit. The effort to subject the crime to the Inquisition, since all other jurisdictions had failed to curb it, rendered necessary the figment of suspicion of heresy arising out of flagrant contempt for the sacrament. Thus, even in lands where there was no Inquisition and since the Inquisition has been abolished, the sacrament came to be the one thing vital; the relation between confessor and penitent and the morals involved were lost to sight. Any vileness might be committed unless it could be proved that the sacrament was made the direct instrument of seduction. This is Liguori's guide, and the only difference between him and the extreme laxists is that he sometimes brushes aside the flimsy casuistry by which they sought to justify the unjustifiable.¹ All this discussion is not merely academic; it is of the utmost practical importance in guiding the confessor in granting or refusing absolution to a woman who has been solicited, if she declines to denounce the offender, and the net result is to prove that solicitation is a purely technical offence, which has nothing to do with morals.

Another source of perplexity in this matter, arising from the indispensable confidences of the confessional, is the difficulty of determining the limits of indecency

¹ S. Alph. de Liguori *Theol. Moral. Lib. vi. n. 676-91.*

It is true that Berardi (*op. cit.* pp. 21-5) controverts Liguori's tendency to laxity, but nevertheless he remains the chief authority relied upon by the congregation of the Inquisition. Thus, in answer to a request for a definition as to the degree of guilt which would bring a confessor absolving his partner in guilt under the constitutions of Benedict XIV., it replied, 15 September, 1859, to consult approved authors and especially Liguori (*Il Consulenti ecclesiastico*, IV. 19, Romæ, 1899). In fact, his canonisation and elevation to the dignity of a Doctor of the Church imply that his writings have been closely scrutinised and found to be flawless.

permissible to a confessor with his penitent, so long as he abstains from positive acts about which there can be no doubt. Suggestive questions and ribald talk might be merely for the delectation which the moralists tell us holy men experience in discussing these matters, or they might be for the purpose of insidiously inflaming the passions and corrupting a prospective victim, or again they might come within the scope allowed to the confessor of acquainting himself accurately with the spiritual and moral condition of the penitent. Where the line is to be drawn is incapable of practical definition. It is for the confessor to decide how far his conscience or his brutality may lead him, and, if the penitent complains, each case has to be settled on its own merits. This was not always by any means easy. In 1786 a nun of the Convent of Santa Clara of Játiva complained of Fray Vicente González, and reported a number of irregularly indecent and wholly irrelevant questions which he repeatedly put to her in confession. Under the advice of the definator of his Order, she empowered him to denounce González to the Inquisition, whereupon the ordinary confessor of the Council intervened and persuaded the definator to write a letter withdrawing the charges. The licence which some confessors permitted to themselves was shown in the case of Fray Vicente Sarria, in 1773, in which his interrogations were brutally indecent and completely superfluous, and in that of Maestro Diego de Agumanes, in 1742, who used to discourse at length, with a young nun, on sexual matters in a manner most provocative of passion.¹ In fact, the details of some of these trials would be incredible if they were not matters of judicial record, with every evidence of authenticity, and it is difficult to estimate the

¹ Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisición de Valencia, Legajo 365, n. 46, fol. 26, 31; Inquisición de Toledo, Legajo 227, n. 7.

That this sort of instruction in the confessional was not unknown in Italy may be gathered from Cardinal Cozza's *Dubia selecta*, Dub. 30.

filthy contagion which such men spread in the confessional.

Gregory XV., in his bull of 1622, endeavoured to overcome the greatest obstacle to the punishment of offenders—the difficulty of inducing solicited penitents to denounce their seducers. It was the only mode by which the crime could be known, while the reluctance of the woman was almost insuperable. In Spain, as we have seen, the Inquisition sought to accomplish this by the Edict of Faith, excommunicating those who failed to do so, and by ordering confessors to admonish their penitents as to their duty, when, as sometimes happened, the woman would include her sin in making another confession. There were authorities who denied that she was under this obligation, arguing that no one is obliged to denounce an accomplice when it may involve his own infamy,¹ and it required the severest pressure to compel performance. Gregory essayed this in a clause ordering all confessors, who learn that a penitent has been solicited, to admonish her to denounce the culprit; any who should neglect this or teach their penitents that soliciting confessors were not to be denounced, were to be duly punished by the inquisitors or ordinaries. The Spanish Inquisition, accordingly, in 1629, granted faculties to inquisitors to punish all confessors who taught such erroneous doctrine,² and Urban VIII. issued an encyclical ordering that when episcopal approbations were issued to confessors, they should be instructed to require denunciation by all penitents who had been solicited.³ It illustrates the independence of the Gallican Church that it flatly contradicted these papal utterances. In 1707, with the support of the Faculty of Douai, the Sorbonne pronounced it to be a

¹ Biblioteca nacional, Seccion de MSS. B. 159, fol. 161.—Sayri *Clavis Regio Sacerd.*, Lib. XII. cap. xiv. n. 26, 32.

² Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisicion de Valencia, Legajo 1, Libro 6, fol. 274.

³ *Summa Diana*, s. v. *Denuntiare*, n. 9.

mortal sin for a confessor to oblige a penitent to denounce a priest who had seduced her in the confessional.¹

In Spain, the woman who failed to denounce incurred excommunication, and consequently was incapable of absolution until she did so, a rule enforced there as early as 1571, and at a later period elsewhere.² That it proved effective to some extent is seen in the fact that a large portion of the cases tried by the Spanish Inquisition derived from it their origin. Even the Edict of Faith was less productive in overcoming the deep-seated repugnance of women to expose their weakness, but, at some time or other, in making a general confession, they would chance to mention a slip of this kind, when denial of absolution would compel them to act. Yet that at best this was uncertain, is shown by the long interval which frequently occurred between the crime and its denunciation—in some cases twelve, fifteen, and even eighteen years.³

It was doubtless with the object of overcoming the repugnance of women to expose their shame that the Roman Inquisition, by a decree of 25 July, 1624, ordered that neither the penitent nor the confessor was to be questioned as to her consent, and that, if either of them volunteered the information, it was not to be entered on the record.⁴ The casuists, indeed, agreed that the woman, if interrogated, could deny, using the mental reservation that she had not so consented as to reveal it to the examiner.⁵ Be this as it may, the wholesome rule of the Roman Inquisition was long in winning its way in Spain, where the reports of the trials show that the unfortunate witness was spared nothing. Indeed, as late as 1750,

¹ Lochon, *Traité du Secret de la Confession*, pp. 197 sqq.

² *Archivo de Simancas, Inquisicion, Libro 939, fol. 107.*—Trimarchi, *op. cit.* pp. 95, 100, 104.

³ *Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisicion de Valencia, Legajo 365, fol. 10, 18, 35.*

⁴ *Cozza Dubia selecta, Dub. XIV.*

⁵ Trimarchi, *op. cit.* p. 119.

instructions to commissioners appointed to take depositions in these cases require them to ascertain and record all details with the utmost minuteness, no matter how obscene they may be.¹ Towards the close of its career, however, the Spanish Inquisition learned mercy, and instructions issued in 1816 require the examiner to warn the witness that she is not required to state whether she consented, and if she says that she did so, it is to be omitted from the record. It is likely, however, that this received scant respect, for, in 1819, the Supreme Council, in ordering the arrest of Fray Juan Montes, feels it necessary to call special attention to the rule.²

There was one thing which greatly reduced the pressure on the consciences of women, thus seduced, to denounce the delinquents—the habitual practice of the latter in granting them absolution for the sin committed. This destroyed the sin so effectually that it no longer counted before God or man; it need not be recited in any subsequent confession, and it could be denied without sin for it no longer existed.³ This was an old custom both with the concubinary priesthood and soliciting confessors, and, though it was deprecated by the schoolmen, the absolution was universally conceded to be valid as, indeed, it necessarily must be under the doctrine that the sacraments are not vitiated in polluted hands.⁴ In every way the practice was scandalous and demoralising; it gave the tempter an enormous advantage in overcoming the virtue

¹ Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisición de Valencia, Legajo 299.—“Á las quales procurara satisfacer con la mayor individuacion y claridad, declarando formalmente las palabras y acciones que intervinieron, por obscenas que sean.”

² Cartilla de Comisarios, §§ 9, 10 (Archivo de Simancas, Inquisición, Legajo 1473).—*Ibidem*, Libro 890.

³ Herzig, *Manuale Confessarii*, P. II. n. 52.—Gury, *Casus Conscientiæ*, I. 418; II. 872.—*Cf.* S. Alphonsus de Liguori, *Theol. Moral. Lib. III.* n. 162.

⁴ S. Th. Aquinat. *Summæ Supplem. Q. xx. Art. ii. ad. 1.*—Astesarri *Summæ*, Lib. v. Tit. xxxix. Q. 4.—*Summa Sylvestrina s.v. Confessio sacramentalis*, I. § 17; III. § 9.

of his penitent by promising her immediate pardon for their mutual sin, and it interfered greatly with the obligation of denunciation. It is therefore remarkable that Gregory XV., in his bull of 1622, should have omitted all reference to it. Apparently the abuse was so venerable and rested on foundations so dangerous to disturb that prudence counselled silence, while great canonists like Sánchez and Diana were found to argue that not only could the confessor absolve his partner in guilt, but that it was expedient for him to do so if it would soothe her conscience and avert defamation from her, and this although the relations between them were notorious.¹ Even in 1661, when the Roman Inquisition settled sixteen questions relating to solicitation, there was no allusion ventured to this.²

Had there been a sincere desire to put an end to the practice, a way could readily have been found by limiting the jurisdiction of the confessor in such cases, as had already been done by some thirteenth-century councils in the Low Countries. In 1661 the provincial synod of Cambrai revived their canons, and decreed that no confessor in such cases should have power to absolve, except *in articulo mortis*, a rule which was soon afterwards promulgated by the congregation of archpriests of the province of Mechlin.³ Rome was slow to follow the example. In 1665, it is true, Alexander VII., in condemning a number of propositions, included one which affirmed that absolution under such circumstances relieved the woman from the obligation to denounce, but he went no further.⁴ That such a proposition should have been defended shows the audacity of the latitudinarian moralists, but its condemnation did not affect the evil, which was left in the hands of

1 Summa Diana, s.v. Confessarius, n. 35 (Venetiis, 1646).

2 Berardi, de Sollicitatione, p. 5.

3 Hartzheim, III. 86; IV. 68; IX. 388.—Synodicon Mechlinense, II. 319.

4 Bullar. Roman. T. VI. Append. p. 1.

the episcopate. In the province of Mechlin the power to grant such absolutions was specially excepted in the certificates issued to confessors, but this accomplished little, and in 1698 the synod of Namur peremptorily inhibited the abuse.¹ In the province of Besançon a canon of 1689 declares that although the practice had long been forbidden, yet it continued to flourish, and a cure was sought in withdrawing the power to absolve such penitents — a regulation which had to be repeated in 1707.² In 1709 the Cardinal de Noailles, Archbishop of Paris, forbade it in his diocese, but Pontas informs us that such absolutions were valid everywhere, except where prohibited by episcopal authority, and Dr. Amort in 1732 makes the same statement as to Germany.³ This discreditable condition continued until the accession of Benedict XIV., who in his constitution *Sacramentum Pœnitentiæ*, in 1741, denounced the device of sacrilegious ministers of Satan rather than of God in absolving their partners in guilt, and erected into a general law what had previously been mere local regulations in some dioceses. He absolutely prohibited such absolutions for the future, except *in articulo mortis* when no other priest was to be had ; he pronounced them when granted to be null and void, and punished the attempt with *ipso facto* excommunication, removable only by the Holy See.⁴ In the next year, 1742, he extended these provisions to the Greek Churches in the Roman obedience, and four years later he showed how overmastering was the dread of scandal by permitting absolution *in articulo mortis* in all cases where another confessor could not be called in without exciting sus-

¹ Hartzheim, X. 219.

² *Ibid.* p. 323.

³ Pontas, *Dict. de Cas de Conscience*, I. 837.—Amort, *Dict. Select. Casuum Conscientiæ*, I. 932.

⁴ Bullar. Bened. PP. XIV. I. 23.—For a discussion on the subject see his *De Synodo diocesana*, Lib. VII. cap. xiv.

pcion, which was virtually a removal of the prohibition.¹

These well-intentioned measures had little practical result. To what extent the bulls were admitted in the various European states I have no means of knowing, but the synod of Namur, in 1742, felt it necessary to remind confessors that they could not absolve women whom they had seduced in the confessional, and in 1768 the Bishop of Ypres was obliged to recall the attention of his clergy to the bulls of Gregory and Benedict, and to threaten their transgressors with excommunication.² In 1775 the Apostolic Vicar of Cochin China had the effrontery to ask Pius VI. whether the provisions of Benedict XIV. applied to the Franciscan missionaries under his charge, and, if so, whether they could not be moderated, to which somewhat shameless questions Pius replied affirmatively as to the first and negatively as to the second; while the continuance of the abuse is shown by a pastoral letter of the Apostolic Vicar of Suchuen in 1803.³ The Spanish Inquisition, after some little delay, accepted the bull *Sacramentum Pœnitentiæ*,⁴ and in 1763 it told Padre Felipe Garcia Pacheco that his asserted ignorance of it did not relieve him from its operation. It produced, however, little or no practical effect. In the great majority of subsequent cases of solicitation the culprits had absolved the women, and the only result of the bull was that in their sentences they were told to secretly advise their penitents to repeat all subsequent confessions, as being invalidated, and, as

¹ Bull *Etsi pastoralis*, § ix. n. 5 (Concil. *Collectio Lacensis* II. 518).—*Constit. cxx.* § 3 (*Bullar.* I. 219).

² Hartzheim, X. 487, 638.

³ *Collectio Lacensis*, III. 554; VI. 646-7.

⁴ There was always delay in accepting papal utterances that had not been asked for. This bull must have occasioned considerable debate, for it was not until 22 December, 1743, that the papal nuncio transmitted to the Inquisitor-General, Manrique di Lara, two copies, with instructions to publish it in his diocese of Santiago.—*Bulario de la Orden de Santiago*, Lib. IV. fol. 283 (*Archiva histórico nacional*).

for themselves, to consult their consciences as to the irregularity of celebrating Mass while under the censures of the bull.¹ In this, as in so much else, the wholesome measures of the Holy See were virtually nullified in practice.

The confessor in search of easy victims had a resource in requiring male penitents, who confessed to carnal sins, to name their partners in guilt, when the knowledge thus gained could be utilised in selecting objects for solicitation. The custom was an old one, for the information thus sought might be used for good purposes as well as for evil. In the thirteenth century, Cæsius of Heisterbach disapproves of it, for though it may sometimes be serviceable, priestly proclivity to sin, he says, renders it dangerous.² Towards the close of the sixteenth century, Bartolomé de Medina declares that, if a confessor refuses absolution unless the penitent reveals the name of his accomplice, he should be denounced to the Inquisition as a heretic, and the penitent should be refused absolution until he makes the denunciation.³ It is somewhat remarkable that Benedict XIV. should have been the first to take action on this abuse. In 1745, in a brief addressed to Portugal, he prohibited utterly, as scandalous and pernicious, the custom of inquiring the name of the accomplice, and in 1746 he decreed excommunication, *latæ sententiæ*, reserved to the Holy See, on all who should teach it as being permissible. It was assumed that these briefs were confined to Portugal, and in a few months he was obliged to issue another declaring the prohibition to be general and to be enforced everywhere. Still another utterance was required in 1749, placing the offence in Portugal under

¹ A number of cases illustrating this will be found in the Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisición de Toledo, Legajos 1 and 2.

² Cæsius, Heisterb. Dial. Moral. III. cap. 28-31.

³ Bart. a Medina Instruct. Confessar. Lib II. cap. iv. De Complicibus, § 1 (Coloniæ, 1609).

the Inquisition.¹ I have not met with any formal grant of the kind to the Spanish Inquisition, but it assumed the power and, in spite of the papal prohibitions, until its suppression, there were cases brought before it of confessors who refused absolution unless the names of the guilty partners were revealed to them.² The abuse seems ineradicable. Pius IX., in the bull *Apostolicæ Sedis* (1849), deemed it necessary to decree reserved excommunication for all who should teach it to be lawful, and various recent councils have felt called to condemn the practice.³ Notwithstanding all this, in modern times it is agreed that there are circumstances under which the confessor is justified in demanding the name of the accomplice under threat of withholding absolution, and as such necessity must of course be left to the discretion of the confessor, the door is kept open to the misuse of the power.⁴

Seduction in the confessional was not wholly confined to one side. The relations of confessor and penitent expose both to temptation, and what is known as passive solicitation occurs when the woman is the tempter. As the matter is not referred to in the papal decrees, writers on the subject are very much at odds as to its treatment and what is to be done to either party. They discuss the liability of the confessor when the solicitation is mutual, and when he yields to threats of making an outcry after

1 *Benedicti PP. XIV. Constitt. Suprema*, July 7, 1745; *Ubi primum*, 4 June, 1746; *Ad eradicandam*, 28 September, 1746; *Apostolici ministerii*, 9 December, 1749. See also his *De Synodo diocesana*, VI. xi.

2 *Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisicion de Valencia, Legajo 100.*

3 *Collectio Lacensis*, VI. 159, 334.—*Acta Concilii Plenarii Baltimorensis*, 1866, p. 305.

4 *Schieler's Theory and Practice of the Confessional*, p. 354 (New York, 1906).

This work may be assumed to represent authoritatively the received practice of the Church, at least in Germany and the United States. It bears the imprimatur of Archbishop Farley of New York, it is translated under the supervision of the Rev. H. J. Heuser, Professor of Theology at Overbrook Seminary, and it has an Introduction by Archbishop Messmer, of Milwaukee. Moreover the publishers, Benziger Brothers, style themselves "Printers to the Holy Apostolic See."

he has rebuffed the temptress, and they draw distinctions between yielding on the spot and postponing the final act.¹ An authoritative decision was postponed until 1661, when the Roman Inquisition decided that the confessor was to be denounced, under the papal decrees, when the solicitation was mutual, and also when he yielded through fear, and nothing was said about the woman.² Subsequently to this Cardinal Cozza asserts that she is not liable to denunciation; she is not alluded to in the papal decrees, and the case, although equally an insult to the sacrament, is so rare in comparison with the converse that the Popes have not deemed it worthy of special animadversion.³ From this we may assume that the space devoted to the matter by the commentators, and their assertions of its frequency, may reasonably be attributed to their desire to minimise the guilt of confessors and exaggerate that of their penitents. Still, such cases did sometimes occur, and I have met with two or three in which the woman was denounced to the Spanish Inquisition.⁴

Classed with solicitation was a somewhat kindred abuse of the confessional known to the Inquisition as flagellation. This was prescribing the discipline as penance, and either administering it personally or causing its self-infliction in presence of the confessor, the penitent being stripped as far as necessary. As the lash could be ordered for any peccant portion of the body, this gave opportunity for the vilest indecency, and it was fully exploited by those of brutish instincts. In fact, it was not confined to the penitent, for confessors sometimes found gratification in

¹ Paramo de Orig. Officii S. Inquis., p. 886.—Rod. a Cunha, Q. ix. xi.—Ant. de Sousa, Tract. i. cap. 6, 7, 17.—Alberghini Man. Qualificatorum, cap. xxxi. § i. n. 10, 11, 17.—Trimarchi, pp. 193–212.—Bibl. Nacional de Espana, Seccion de MSS. V. 377, cap. xx. §§ 5, 10.

² Berardi de Sollicitatione, p. 5.

³ Cozza, Dubia Selecta, Dub. 9.

⁴ Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisicion de Valencia, Legajo 376.—Archivo de Simancas, Inquisicion, Libro 1006, fol. 25; Registro de Solicitantes, A. 7, fol. 2.

making the women discipline them, like Fray Francisco Calvo, who in 1730 denounced himself to the Inquisition of Madrid for having caused himself to be flagellated.¹ At first there was considerable doubt as to whether such cases came under the papal decrees, but it was finally decided to be a form of solicitation, and after this conclusion had been reached the Inquisition had no hesitation in prosecuting *flagelantes*.² Culprits were not treated with deserved severity, for the records show to what an extent the abuse was sometimes carried ; cases are not infrequent, and continue until the suppression of the Holy Office.³

It remains for us to see what was the practical application of the papal decrees directed against the abuse of the sacred relation established between the confessor and his spiritual daughters. As France and Germany had refused to receive the bull of Gregory XV., the matter remained as before in the hands of the bishops, who for the most part were indifferent, and, as we have seen, no effective measures were taken, beyond the occasional comminatory proceedings of synods, which serve rather to prove the existence of the evil than to promise its suppression, though occasionally, it is true, a prelate like Fénelon might instruct mission priests, to whom women should confess to have been solicited, to refuse absolution unless the penitent would authorise denunciation to be made to him.⁴ As he felt it necessary, moreover, to promise protection both to the woman and the mission priest, it indicates the risk to which were exposed all those who sought to obey the papal commands.

From such desultory and local attempts no remedy

¹ Archivo de Simancas, Inquisicion, Libro 1006, fol. 25.

² Ibid., Inquisicion de Logroño, Procesas de fe, Legajo 1.—De Sousa, Aphorismi Inquisitionis, Lib. I. cap. xxxiv. n. 40.—Alberghini, op. cit. cap. xxxi. § i. n. 19.

³ Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisicion de Valencia, Legajo 100.—Archivo de Simancas, Inquisicion, Libro 890.

⁴ Fénelon, Avis aux Confesseurs (Œuvres, Ed. 1838, II. 349).

could be expected of an evil so inveterate and widespread. In Italy and in Spain, however, the crime was subjected to the respective Inquisitions, which were armed with power and organisation sufficient for its suppression, if that were practicable under the conditions of human nature and the temptations and opportunities offered by the confessional to a celibate priesthood.

As regards Italy, the data are lacking to enable us to ascertain what use the Inquisition made of its faculties. The dread of scandal rendered secrecy the one essential matter. The culprit, if found guilty, was not sentenced and punished in public as an example, but in the chambers of the Holy Office, or in his convent if a member of a religious Order. No one was to know that the crime had been committed and expiated. Under such circumstances the inquirer can ask in vain for statistics or for instances to determine whether culpable leniency or wholesome severity was shown to offenders. We only know that nominally the prescribed regulations assume the crime to require stern repression. The suspicion of heresy implied in it was classed as vehement, and the culprit was obliged to abjure *de vehementi*, which assumed that he was to be burnt without ceremony in case of relapse. If he denied the accusation and the evidence was insufficient for conviction, he could be tortured, as was the practice of the Roman Inquisition in other crimes; or if he admitted the facts and denied evil purpose, he could similarly be tortured to discover his intention. If convicted, the bull of Gregory XV. prescribed a wide range of punishments, according to the degree of culpability, even to the culminating rigour of the stake. Although the latter extreme may be regarded as merely a deterrent threat, never intended to be executed, yet we are told that the punishment was five or seven years in the galleys, which was sufficient to inspire wholesome fear. In 1677, moreover,

the Roman Inquisition manifested a laudable desire to discover offenders by following Spanish example in an edict requiring all persons, under pain of excommunication *latæ sententiæ*, to denounce within a month all cases coming within their knowledge.¹

It is not stated, however, that this edict was ever repeated, as in Spain, and in practice there was much to soften the severity of the law. Obstacles to trial were interposed by a decree of the Inquisition, 17 July, 1627, providing that arrests were not to be made on the denunciation of a single penitent, but only a report was to be made to it. Two denunciations were required for arrest and imprisonment, and three, or according to some authorities, four, for conviction, the reason alleged being the untrustworthiness of female evidence and the difficulty otherwise of getting learned and conscientious men to confess women. Similarly, the punishment was much milder than the threat. For a single solicitation, duly proved, it sufficed to deprive the offender of his faculty to confess; if he had repeatedly solicited two women, deprivation of priestly functions was added; and if there had been scandal, a regular priest was to be perpetually secluded in a convent and a secular one in a hospital. If the penitent were the wife or daughter of a magnate, or if there had been many women concerned and much public scandal, then came degradation and the galleys.² Considering the extreme difficulty of inducing women to denounce their confessors, it will be seen that the chances of escape were great and the danger of severe penalties small. It is true that in 1745 the Roman Inquisition decreed that soliciting confessors incurred perpetual disability for celebrating Mass,³ but there was always the prospect of obtaining dispensations from an indulgent

¹ Trimarchi, pp. 288, 301, 302.—Berardi de Sollicitatione, p. 6.

² Trimarchi, pp. 289-92, 304, 306.

³ Berardi, *op. cit.* p. 126.

Mother Church, and all this legislation seems virtually to have become a dead letter, for, as we shall see hereafter, when Leopold I. of Tuscany endeavoured, in 1774, to reform the nunneries in his dominions, they were found to be the scene of the worst disorders between the nuns and their spiritual directors, and the reformatory efforts of Leopold met their chief opposition in the Roman Curia itself.¹

There was also always the resource, when a soliciting priest found himself in danger of denunciation, of denouncing himself, for those who spontaneously confessed were treated with exceptional leniency. According to rule, if he did this before denunciation, and had been guilty with only one woman, a severe reprimand sufficed, while, if two witnesses accused him, he was to be deprived of confessing.² One or two cases, however, of which we chance to have the record, would seem to show that self-denunciation conferred virtual immunity. The minim, Hilario Caone, of Besançon, was domiciled in Seville. He probably had intimation that he was about to be denounced, for he fled to Rome in 1653, and confessed to the Inquisition that in the church of San Francisco de Paula of Seville he had solicited some forty women, mostly with success. For this he was merely sentenced to abjure *de vehementi*, to visit the seven privileged altars of St. Peter's, and to recite the chapters of the Virgin weekly for three years. That this was the ordinary treatment of such cases may be inferred from that of Vincenzo Barzi, in the same year, who had a similar sentence on denouncing himself.³

¹ De Potter, *Vie de Scipion de' Ricci*, T. I. pp. 87 sqq. 258 sqq.

² Trimarchi, p. 310.

³ MSS. of Trinity College, Dublin, Class II. vol. iv. pp. 63, 294.

It should be added that this leniency did not extend to cases in which there had been a prior denunciation. In 1695 Dr. Agustín Velda, rector of La Sallana, was accused of solicitation before the tribunal of Valencia. To avoid arrest he fled to Rome, and presented himself before the Inquisition there, which ordered him to

In Spain, access to the voluminous archives of the Inquisition gives us for the first time an opportunity of acquaintance with these secrets of the confessional which the Church has always guarded so carefully from the profane, thus rendering possible a fairly accurate understanding of its attitude towards soliciting confessors. The Inquisition had accepted in good faith the jurisdiction conferred on it, but it always had a leaning in favour of clerical delinquents, and the rules which it established for this class of cases show how much more benignly it regarded this particular suspicion of heresy than other suspicions. It is true that no ecclesiastic could be arrested on any charge by a tribunal without referring the case to the Supreme Council and awaiting its orders, so that in this respect confessors had no advantage over their brethren, but, as, in Italy, two independent denunciations of solicitation were required, where one sufficed in ordinary heresy. Where denunciation was so difficult to secure, this was a most important advantage to the delinquents, and saved thousands of them from trial. A woman who chanced in a general confession to mention her sin with a previous confessor might be refused absolution until she denounced him. If she did so, the Inquisitors, after the introduction of postal facilities, sent letters of inquiry to all the other tribunals, to learn whether they had the culprit's name on their register of solicitors. If the replies were in the negative, the papers were filed away, and nothing more was done, unless at some future time another denunciation was made to some tribunal. Meanwhile the woman was left under the impression that her seduction by her confessor was too trivial a matter to require investigation, and the offender was left at liberty to continue his assaults on the virtue of his penitents.

Perhaps if, after the lapse of years, a second accusation came, the first accuser was dead and could not make the indispensable ratification of her testimony, so that the culprit had another respite. The records are full of cases in which a second denunciation did not come until ten, fifteen, and sometimes even twenty, thirty, or forty years after the first ; and there are many in which three denunciations are specified, showing that the first victim must have died before the second came forward. The prolonged impunity thus enjoyed by offenders whose offences must have been habitual shows how disastrous was the favour thus extended to them. The reason given for this double denunciation was the assumed unreliability of female testimony, but in ordinary heresy all witnesses were welcome, irrespective of sex, character, and almost of age ; while, if there was enmity or infamy, the accused, from whom the knowledge of their names was withheld, had to grope his way to identify and disable them. But in these cases the Inquisition saved him from all this and protected him, before it would act on the denunciation, by a searching inquiry into the character of the witness and any possible enmity that might exist.¹ Regrets were expressed that female testimony was admitted at all ; it was justifiable only because the nature of the crime admitted of no other, and writers like Páramo discredit it in advance with the customary monastic abuse of women.²

Another favour shown to the accused was immunity from torture. While in ordinary accusations of heresy a single witness sufficed to expose the defendant to the rack or strappado, in case of his denial, the confessor was exempt, no matter how many witnesses appeared against him. In the earlier time there was some question as to

¹ Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisición de Valencia, Legajo 365.

² Páramo, op. cit. pp. 867 871.—Rod. a Cunha, op. cit. A. XXII. n. 3.

this, and some dialectics as to fact and intention, but the question was settled on the common-sense basis that it would be a greater infliction for the uncertain than for the certain, as the penalties for conviction were not equal to torture.¹ When, however, doctrinal errors led to solicitation there was no hesitation in the use of torture to detect the aberrations of Illuminism, as in the case of the priest Manuel Madrigal, voted to torture to discover intention, "por solicitante, Molinista y flagelante," by the tribunal of Madrid in 1725.²

There was also the broad avenue to escape in the strictness with which the formulas of the papal utterances were construed. Solicitation is a purely technical crime, based on inferential misbelief as to the sacrament, and it is wholly unconnected with morals. The Church cares nothing as to the relations between confessor and penitent so long as the confessional and the sacrament are not involved, and even there the confidences deemed necessary in confession, the obligation on the confessor to acquaint himself with all details, afford ample opportunity for pruriency, which the casuist can approve or condemn with equal facility. All this is one of the incidents inseparable from auricular confession, and the Church can only make the best of it with vague general regulations, construed and enforced by imperfect human nature. The decisive importance attached to locality meets one constantly in the trials of these cases. In that of Fernandez Pujalon, parish priest of Ciempozuelos, before the tribunal of Toledo, in 1744, he confesses to vile indecencies committed with his penitent Sor Cayetana de la Providencia in the convent of Santa Clara, and chanced

¹ De Sousa, *Aphorismi Inquisit.* Lib. I. cap. xxxviii. n. 64, 65; *Ejusd. Opusc. circa Constit. Pauli PP. V. Tract. ii. cap. 13, 21.*—Biblioteca Nacional, Sección de MSS. V. 337, cap. xx. § 9.—Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisición de Valencia, Legajo 61.

² Archivo de Simancas, Inquisición, Legajo 876, fol. 208.

to mention that once in the parlour of the convent she said that she never indulged in this in the confessional, but that it was bad for Padre Colmenas and Sor Antonia Blanca, who had illicit relations in the confessional. The tribunal commissioned the superintendent of convents, Canon Miguel Barba, to examine Sor Cayetana as to when he should next visit Ciempozuelos, which he did in 1747, but she naturally did not care to implicate herself; Barba discreetly did not push his investigations, and the matter was dropped.¹ So, in the case of Fray Joseph Rives, tried in Valencia in 1741, the evidence of two of his penitents shows the beastliness of the practices employed to inflame the passions of the women, while arguments of his advocate are devoted to prove that the precautions which he took to evade the letter of the papal decrees proved his respect for the sacrament, and that technically he was not guilty. This was unavailing, but he escaped with deprivation of his faculty to confess and three years' exile from Valencia, Bocayente, and all royal residences.² It was to meet this customary line of defence that the tribunals, in their instructions as to taking testimony, always laid special stress on ascertaining the exact spot where the incriminating acts occurred; what would be guilt in the confessional would escape animadversion elsewhere.

Another favour shown to these delinquents was that, in place of being shut up *incomunicado* in the secret prison during trial, like ordinary heretics, they were at liberty and could devise means of defence. What these sometimes were is shown in the case of a priest who had been denounced, and who threatened to kill the confessor who had sent the denunciation unless he would write that the women had

¹ Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisición de Toledo, Legajo 229, n. 32.

² Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisición de Valencia, Legajo 365, n. 45, fol. 4.

In the sentences to temporary exile, which was a favourite punishment for minor offences, Madrid and royal residences are always included.

withdrawn their charges. More crafty was Dr. Joseph Soriano, vicar of Vinaroz, in 1796, against whom we find pending in the tribunal of Valencia two prosecutions, one for solicitation and another for the ingenious device of suborning several women to denounce him and then to retract.¹

When, in spite of all facilities for evasion, conviction was obtained, the punishment meted out to the criminal was singularly disproportionate to the moral turpitude of the offence and its damage to the Church and to society. In the first place, the dread of scandal shielded him from public reprobation and the shame of exposure, thus exempting him from what in Spain was one of the heaviest penalties visited on other crimes—the infamy inflicted on the lineage of one who had been penanced by the Inquisition. There was not only the secrecy in which all the operations of the Holy Office were jealously guarded, but the culprit was not exposed to view in an *auto da fe* like ordinary offenders—heretics, bigamists, blasphemers, petty sorcerers, and the like. From the earliest period, as soon as the form of procedure was reduced to rule, strict injunctions were issued that the sentence was to be read in the audience-chamber with closed doors, the only witnesses present being a specified number of members of the culprit's Order, if he were a regular, or priests of parish churches, if a secular. The same instructions prescribe as the punishment in all cases abjuration for light suspicion of heresy and perpetual deprivation of the faculty of confessing, to which might be added others suited to the gravity of the offence. Thus for frailes there might be a discipline inflicted in his convent, while the sentence was read in the presence of the assembled brethren, or, if the case were especially

¹ Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisición de Valencia, Legajo 365, n. 46; Legajo 100.

aggravated, a previous one in the audience-chamber also ; there might further be seclusion in a convent, suspension or deprivation of orders, of the right of voting and being voted for, as well as the last place in choir and refectory, together with penance for heavy sin, such as the discipline and prayer. For secular priests there might be exile or seclusion, or suspension or deprivation of functions and benefice, together with fines and secret discipline and fasts and prayers.¹ As regards fines, they were a favourite penalty for all offences, as they accrued to the tribunal inflicting them. They could not be imposed on the regulars, who held nothing, but the secular priests were sometimes rich and were valuable culprits. Thus in the case, alluded to above, of Fernandez Pujalon, parish priest of Ciempozuelos, a feature of his sentence was a fine of half his property, but his guilt was greatly enhanced by some heretical propositions that he had uttered.

Inadequate as all this may seem in comparison with the penalties habitually imposed by the Inquisition on other classes of offenders, it was rarely inflicted to the full extent, and as time wore on there appears to be a distinct tendency to regard the crime with increasing leniency. The indulgence, indeed, with which it was viewed, in spite of the rhetorical horror expressed in the utterances of popes and inquisitors, is reflected in the adjuration of a Cunha not to drive the delinquents to despair nor to impose more penalty than is just, and he thinks that it would be much better for the Inquisition to hand offenders over for punishment to their own prelates.² It is impossible, in fact, not to recognise a fellow feeling and a certain amount of sympathy, as for a matter in which any priest might involve himself, but the temper in which the Inquisition exercised the jurisdiction con-

¹ Archivo de Simancas, Inquisición, Legajo 1465, fol. 16.

² Rod. a Cunha, op. cit. Q. xxiv.

ferred on it can best be estimated from a few illustrative cases.

In 1594, in Mexico, the Dominican Fray Thomás Maldonado was tried on the evidence of five of his penitents. He made no defence, except alleging that his conduct with them had been jocular, and he presented witnesses as to his character, especially his prior, Fray Cristóval de Sepúlveda, all of whom testified to his being a good servant of God and a man of irreproachable life. While the trial was in progress, the prior asked for his release, as the convent wanted his services to take charge of some mills, to which the tribunal promptly assented. Finally he was sentenced to abjure for light suspicion, to be deprived of confessing women, and to exile for six years from the convent of Cuyvacan.¹ It is evident that his offence was regarded rather in the light of an indiscretion than of a crime. More severe, in 1674, was the sentence in Toledo of Fray Miguel Martin de Eugenio, whose powers of seduction had been exercised in a number of places. He was subjected to a "circular discipline" in his convent, he was deprived of confessing men and women, and was secluded for four years in a convent, where he was to have the last place in choir and refectory and to serve in the most humble positions; during the first year he had Friday fasting on bread and water, eating on the floor of the refectory, and he was deprived of voting and being voted for.² As regards the galleys, the only case that I have happened to meet in which they were imposed is that of the licentiate Lorenzo de Eldora, who was suspended from orders, in 1691, by the tribunal of Toledo, and condemned to the galleys for five years, with instructions at the expiration of the term to present himself to the inquisitors for further orders; but he was evidently deemed an incorrigible relapsed, as he had already been punished

¹ Proceso de Fray Thomas Maldonado (MS. penes me).

² Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisicion de Toledo, Legajo 1.

for the same offence by the Inquisition of Granada.¹ It must have treated him with undeserved leniency, and not have deprived him of the faculty of confession.

As a rule, however, the sentences were moderate, and grew more so as time wore on. In 1647 the Valladolid tribunal considered a reprimand sufficient for Padre Antonio Escobar, S.J., who was accused by a nun of the Monasterio de la Penitencia of Salamanca—a reformatory for loose women—although he had previously been denounced in Logroño, and the testimony obtained from there revealed almost incredible brutality on his part and on that of Padre Vilarde, S.J.² In 1649 the tribunal of Toledo merely deprived the licentiate Bernardo de Amor of the faculty of confessing, with four years of exile from Madrid, Toledo, and Andujar, although his offence was that of soliciting youths in the confessional.³

Progressive leniency is seen in the Toledo case, in 1763, of Felipe Garcia Pacheco, a priest with various dignities, who was condemned only to seclusion in a convent for six months, and was left in the enjoyment of his dignities and the faculty of confession, although the injunction cautiously to warn his accomplices that they must repeat the confessions made to him shows that his guilt was complete.⁴ The nineteenth century saw no increase in severity. In 1816 the case of Dr. Pedro Luceta must have been especially foul, for when his sentence was read before the twelve ecclesiastics in the audience-chamber, portions of the details of his offences were ordered to be omitted; but he was only deprived of confessing, with some spiritual exercises, one year's seclusion, and five years' exile from certain places. He was ungrateful for this leniency, and broke his seclusion, which was a more serious offence than

¹ Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisición de Toledo, Legajo I.

² Archivo de Simancas, Inquisición, Legajo 552, fol. 35.

³ Archivo histórico nacional, loc. cit.

⁴ Ibid. Legajo 2.

solicitation, for he was then sent to the presideo of Ceuta (implying hard labour as in the *bagne*) for the remainder of the six years, but he was allowed to return to Algeciras on the plea of ill-health.¹ In this same year the tribunal of Santiago, in sentencing Gerónimo González, priest of Requeijo, speaks of his *enormes delitas*, but only condemned him to spiritual exercises, a suspension of three months from celebrating mass, of one year from confessing men and perpetually women, and eight years' exile from certain places ; then, within three months, on the plea of ill-health, it allowed him to reside with his parents in Requeijo, warning him to avoid the taverns and highways, which had led to his misdeeds, and ordering the priest there to keep a watch over him. The case in 1818 of Fray Antonio de la Porteria y Vela, also in the Santiago tribunal, must have been especially atrocious, for he was perpetually deprived of both confessing and preaching, but beyond this he was subjected only to temporary exile from certain places and to two months' seclusion devoted to spiritual exercises.²

As in Italy, so in Spain, a favourite device to disarm severity, especially when accusation was expected, was self-denunciation, for the *espontaneado*, as he was called, earned a claim to merciful consideration, provided always that he expressed due contrition and made full confession of his misdeeds. A very large portion of the cases tried by the Inquisition are of this character ; in one list of a hundred and eight, thirty-two, or thirty per cent., are *espontaneados*.³ The customary impulse to this is seen in the case of Fray Nicholas de Madrid, who denounced himself to the tribunal of Madrid, 8 June, 1757. He was a trifle tardy, for a denunciation against him had been received two days before.⁴

¹ Archivo de Simancas, Inquisicion, Lib. 890 ; Lib. 435, n. 22.

² Ibid. Lib. 890.

³ Ibid. Lib. 1006.

⁴ Ibid. fol. 105.

As a matter of course, the *espontaneado* was apt to soften the details of his guilt and extenuate his offences as far as possible. In ordinary Inquisitorial procedure this only increased the culpability, for a confession which was the result of contrition was required to be complete, and the *diminuto* who partly withheld or palliated his faults was but a hardened sinner seeking to escape punishment. Confessors, however, were not ordinary criminals. It is true that, in the earlier period, during the first flush of exercising its new jurisdiction, the Inquisition pursued its ordinary course of testing the confession by examining witnesses, and if it found that the culprit was a *diminuto*, his self-denunciation did not save him from the customary penalties, but this severity was gradually relaxed. About 1640, an experienced inquisitor lays down the rule that, if a confessor accuses himself before there is any evidence against him, and if the women concerned are numerous, they are examined, and if they admit it, he is deprived of confessing; if they deny, as sometimes happens, the case is suspended with a warning to him; if there is but one woman, and the case is not grave, he is reprimanded without other penalty. If he accuses himself before there is more than one denunciation against him, the penalties are lighter than if he had not done so.¹

It could not have been long after this that the Inquisition manifested its indifference by simply accepting the self-denunciation without examining the women. In 1669 the licentiate Fernando de Valdés denounced himself to the tribunal of Santiago for having solicited in confession, with indecent acts, seven single and three married women, to whom, in a subsequent confession, he added a pregnant

¹ Biblioteca Nacional de Espana, Seccion de MSS. V. 377, cap. xx. § 8.

Suspension of a case was virtually acquittal, in the *estilo* of the Inquisition, which rarely acquitted. It, however, remained on record, and could be reopened if subsequent testimony came.

Reprimand and warning were an ordinary feature of all sentences rendered in the *sala* or audience-chamber of a tribunal.

woman and several others unmarried. The records were examined, and no previous accusation was found against him. Without summoning the witnesses, the tribunal reported the case to the Supreme Council, which ordered it simply to be suspended and the culprit to be reprimanded.¹ The fact that out of so many women solicited not one accused him indicates how few were the denunciations in comparison with the offences. The indifference of the tribunals grew with time. In 1724, Fray Manuel Pablo Herraiz denounced himself to the tribunal of Toledo for a somewhat complicated illicit connection with two penitents. Inquiries were sent to the other tribunals, with negative results. Without further action, the case was laid aside, and in 1732 the fiscal or prosecuting officer reported that there was nothing more to be done with it.² These cases indicate that the only danger incurred by the *espontaneado* was that some previous denunciation might be lying in the records awaiting a second, provided the tribunal took the trouble to make inquiry.

In time even this seems to have been abandoned, and so completely did it come to be understood that the *espontaneado* was not to be prosecuted that, in 1783, the Supreme Council interrogated the tribunals, asking whether they suspended such cases or dismissed the self-accuser with abjuration and absolution.³ So it continued until the extinction of the Inquisition. In 1815, Padre Fray Francisco Gómez Somoeroto, sacristan mayor of the Mercenarian convent of Madrid, denounced himself to that tribunal for solicitation and doctrines suspect of Molinism, and his case was suspended. In 1819 he was denounced for solicitation to the tribunal of Valladolid, and again the case was suspended.⁴

1 Archivo de Simancas, Inquisición de Santiago, Relaciones de Causas, Legajo 1.

2 Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisición de Toledo, Legajo 229, n. 40.

3 Ibid. Inquisición de Valencia, Legajo 16, n. 6, fol. 4.

4 Archivo de Simancas, Inquisición, Lib. 1002.

No class of ecclesiastics, privileged to hear confessions, was exempt from this contaminating sin, but the great mass of culprits belonged to the regular Orders. Llorente explains that the secular priests, having comparative wealth and freedom, were able to gratify their passions in ways less dangerous, and that it was precisely the Orders that were most rigid which produced the greatest number of culprits.¹ To verify this last assertion would require statistics of the different Orders now unattainable, and an accurate knowledge of the degree to which they devoted themselves to the duties of the confessional. A factor in their activity was the special faculties granted to the mendicant Orders to absolve for cases reserved to the Holy See, except those included in the *Cœna Domini* bull and six others specified in a decree of Clement VIII. in 1601—these mendicant Orders being Dominicans, Franciscans, Augustinians, Carmelites, Minims, Jesuits, and Servites.² This, of course, rendered their ministrations more attractive, and secured them a larger number of penitents, which helps to explain their undue proportion of offenders. In analysing an aggregate of 3775 cases I find that the great body of the secular clergy, including parish priests, vicars, canons, &c., contributed only 981, while the regular Orders furnished 2794.³

Spain was the only land in which solicitation was systematically prosecuted where the conditions were such as to remove some of the impediments to denunciation, and where the records are accessible. If any methods could reduce the abuse to a minimum, it was there, and, from what we learn as to its prevalence in Spain, we may reasonably infer that in other countries, where no such

¹ Llorente, *Historia Crítica*, cap. XXVIII. art. 1, n. 14.

² Trimarchi, *op. cit.* p. 279.

³ Archivo histórico nacional, Inquisición de Toledo, Legajo 233, MS. 108; Inquisición de Valencia, Legajo 66.—Archivo de Simancas, Inquisición, Lib. 1002,

machinery existed for its discovery and repression, it was even more prevalent.

It is thus only in the records of the Inquisition that an insight can be gained into this phase of ecclesiastical development, which has always been shrouded from public view with such anxious care. In exploring these records one seems to live in a world of brutal lust, where disregard of the moral law is accepted as a matter of course by all parties, where the aim of the confessor is to inflame the passions by act and speech, or to overcome resistance by coarse violence; where women regard it as natural that the awful authority of the priesthood is to be exercised to their undoing, and their consciences are to be soothed with pardon granted in the name of God by the hypocrite who has destroyed their honour; and where the inquisitor busies himself, not with the moral and spiritual questions involved, but with ascertaining whether certain technical rules have been violated. I have spared the reader all details, for the most debased pornographic literature can have nothing more foul to offer, and the divorce of morals from religion is complete.

Morals, in fact, have nothing to do with solicitation as viewed by the Church. The priest can indulge his passions with his penitents in safety, so long as he commits no technical offence and so long as the danger of scandal is not incurred. The Church sees nothing specially sinful in solicitation itself, notwithstanding the vehement rhetoric of papal utterances. In the forum of conscience it is classed with simple fornication—a mortal sin indeed, for in lust there is no *parvitas materiæ*, but one not calling for any special reprobation. Heinous offences are distinguished by being “reserved”—that is, absolution for them can be obtained only from the Holy See or from the sinner’s prelate. The Holy See has never reserved to itself the sin of seducing a penitent in the confessional.

Bishops have power in their dioceses to reserve to themselves what sins they choose, and occasionally some puritan prelate has done so with this. In 1635, while the bull of Gregory XV. was still the subject of discussion, Trimarchi tells us that it was thus reserved in the provinces of Geneva and Benevento, and in some dioceses of Naples, but nowhere else.¹ The consequence of this is that absolution can be given by any confessor, and the culprit is told that he need only confess to simple fornication, without mentioning that it has been with his spiritual daughter. He therefore obtains pardon from God on the easiest possible terms, his conscience is clear, and he is ready to repeat the offence. This forms a strange contrast with the excommunication directed against the victim who fails to denounce her seducer, for this is reserved to the Holy See, and we are expressly told that the censures of the bulls are directed against her and not against him.² May we not attribute all this to a callousness engendered by the prevalence of concubinage among a celibate priesthood, where the woman must in almost all cases necessarily be the penitent of the priest and thus be his spiritual daughter?

¹ Trimarchi, *op. cit.* p. 272.

² Trimarchi, p. 273.—Ant. de Sousa, *op. cit.* Tract. II. cap. xx.—Joh. Sanchez, *Disputationes Selectæ*, Disp. xi. n. 3, 4 (Lugduni, 1636).—*Potestatis Examen. Ecclesiasticum*, T. II. n. 601 (Venetiis, 1728).

For the modern aspect of this subject see below, in chapter XXXII.

CHAPTER XXXI

THE CHURCH AND THE REVOLUTION

IF the Council of Trent had thus failed utterly in its efforts to create that which had never existed—purity of morals under the rule of celibacy—it had at length succeeded in its more important task of putting an end to the aspirations of the clergy for marriage. With the anathema for heresy confronting them, few could be found so bold as openly to dispute the propriety of a law which had been incorporated into the articles of faith, and the ingenious sophistries and far-fetched logic of Bellarmine were reverently received and accepted as incontrovertible. Urbain Grandier might endeavour to quiet the conscience of his morganatic spouse by writing a treatise to prove the lawfulness of priestly wedlock, but he took care to keep the manuscript carefully locked in his desk.¹ A man of

¹ When Grandier was arrested and tried for sorcery, his papers were seized, and among them was found an essay against sacerdotal celibacy. Under torture, he confessed that he had written it for the purpose of satisfying the conscience of a woman with whom he had maintained marital relations for seven years (*Hist. des Diabes de Loudun*, pp. 85, 191). The manuscript was burnt, with its unlucky author, but a copy was preserved, which has been printed (*Petite Bibliothèque des Curieux*, Paris, 1866). In it Grandier shows himself singularly bold for a man of his time and station. The law of nature, or moral law, he holds to be the direct exposition of the Divine will. By it revealed law must necessarily be interpreted, and to its standard ecclesiastical law must be made to conform. He evidently was made to be burned as a heretic, if he had escaped as a sorcerer. The promise of chastity exacted at ordination he regards as extorted, and therefore as not binding on those unable to keep it; while he does not hesitate to assume that the rule itself was adopted and enforced on purely temporal grounds—“*de crainte qu'en remuant une pierre on n'esbranlat la puissance papale; car hors cette considération d'Etat, l'Eglise romaine pense assez que le célibat n'est pas d'institution divine ni nécessaire au salut, puisqu'elle en dispense les particuliers, ce qu'elle ne pourroit faire si le célibat avoit esté ordonné d'en haut*” (pp. 34-5).

bold and independent spirit, fortified by unfathomable learning, like Louis Ellies Du Pin, might secretly favour marriage, and perhaps might contract matrimony.¹ Du Pin's great antagonist, Bossuet, might incur a similar imputation, and be ready to partially yield the point if thereby he might secure the reconciliation of the hostile Churches.² All this, however, could have no influence on the doctrines and practice of Catholicism at large, and the principle remained unaltered and unalterable.

Yet it was impossible that the critical spirit of inquiry which marked the eighteenth century, its boldness of unbelief, and its utter want of faith in God and man, could leave unassailed this monument of primæval asceticism, while it was so busy in undermining everything to which the reverence of its predecessors had clung. Accordingly, the latter half of the century witnessed an active controversy on the subject. In 1758, a canon of Estampes, named Desforges, who had been forced to take orders by his family, published a work in two volumes in which he attempted to prove that marriage was necessary for all

¹ Notwithstanding his Sorbonne degree, Du Pin is said to have been secretly married, and to have left a widow, who even ventured to claim the inheritance of his estate. He was engaged in a correspondence with William Wake, Archbishop of Canterbury, with a view to arrange a basis of reconciliation of the Anglican Church with Rome, and, according to Lafitau, Bishop of Sisteron, in that correspondence he assented to the propriety of sacerdotal marriage.

² I cannot pretend to decide the controversy as to the alleged marriage between Bossuet and Mlle. Desvieux de Mauléon, nor to determine whether it is true that she and her daughters claimed his fortune after his death. Much has been written on both sides, and I have not the materials at hand to justify a positive opinion, though the extracts from La Baumelle's "*Mémoires de Madame de Maintenon*" given by the Abbé Chavard (*Le Célibat des Prêtres*, pp. 474 sqq.) would seem to show that there were good grounds for asserting the marriage. I believe, however, that there is no doubt of Bossuet engaging with Leibnitz and Molanus in a negotiation as to the terms on which the Lutherans could re-enter the Roman communion, and that he promised, in the name of the Pope, that Lutheran ministers admitted to the priesthood or episcopate should retain their wives. It is asserted that the proposed arrangement was nearly agreed to on both sides, when the pretensions of the House of Hanover to the English crown caused Leibnitz to withdraw from the undertaking.

ranks of ecclesiastics. The book attracted attention, and by order of the Parlement it was burnt, 30 September, 1758, by the hangman, and the unlucky author was thrown into the Bastille. These proceedings were well calculated to give publicity to the work: it was reprinted at Douay in 1772; a German translation was published in 1782 at Göttingen and Munster, and an Italian one, with some omissions, had already appeared in 1770, without an acknowledged place of publication. The Abbé Villiers undertook to answer Desforges in a weak little volume, the "Apologie du Célibat Chrétien," published in 1762, which consists principally of long extracts from the Fathers in praise of virginity. Even Italy felt the movement, and an anonymous work, entitled "Pregiudizi del Celibato," appeared in Naples in 1765, and was reprinted in Venice in 1766. Some more competent champion was necessary to answer these repeated attacks, and the learned Abate Zaccaria brought his fertile pen and his inexhaustible erudition to the rescue in his "Storia Polemica del Celibato Sacro," which saw the light in 1774, and which not long afterwards was translated into German. In 1781 appeared a new aspirant for matrimonial liberty in the Abbé Gaudin, who issued at Geneva (Lyons) his work entitled "Les inconveniens du célibat des prêtres," a treatise of considerable learning and no little bitterness against the whole structure of sacerdotalism and Roman supremacy. This was followed, in 1782, by Andreas Forster, in his "De Cœlibatu Clericorum Dissertatio," published at Dillingen, and dedicated to Pius VI., for the purpose of replying to the attacks of the innovating Catholics.

The latter, indeed, had some hope for the approaching realisation of their demands. The reforms which illustrated the minority of Ferdinand IV. of Naples excited the priests of Southern Italy to petition him for the right of

marriage, and Serrao, the Jansenist Bishop of Potenza, does not hesitate to say that the request¹ would have been granted if the unfriendly relations between the courts of Rome and Naples had continued much longer.¹ The Emperor Joseph II., amid his many fruitless schemes for philosophical reform, inclined seriously to the notion of permitting marriage to the priesthood of his dominions. In an edict of 1783 he asserted incidentally that the matter was subject to his control,² and the advocates for clerical marriage confidently expected that in a very short period they would see the ancient restrictions swept away by the imperial power. A mass of controversial essays and dissertations made their appearance throughout Germany, and the well-known Protestant theologian Henke took the opportunity of bringing out, in 1783, a new edition of the learned work of Calixtus, "De Conjugio Clericorum," as the most efficient aid to the good cause. It is a striking illustration of the temper of the times to observe that this work, so bitterly opposed to the orthodox doctrines and practice, is dedicated by Henke to Archdeacon Anthony Ganoczy, canon of the cathedral church of Gross-Wardein and apostolic prothonotary. The hope of success brought out other writers, and the movement made sufficient progress to cause some hesitation in Rome as to the propriety of yielding to the pressure.³

¹ Chavard, *Le Célibat des Prêtres*, p. 314-5.—Davanzati, Bishop of Canossa, was also in favour of abrogating the rule of celibacy.

² This view of the competence of the temporal power to regulate the question seems to have been widely received at this period. An anonymous work published in 1769 under the title of "*Recherches sur l'Etat Monastique et Ecclésiastique*," written by a good Catholic, asserts (p. 204), "Si le cas de donner des citoyens à la patrie devenoit urgent, le législateur, en autorisant le mariage des prêtres, n'entreprendroit rien sur le sacrement de l'Ordre."

³ Zaccaria, in the introduction to his "*Nuova Giustificazione*" (p. ix.), denies that the papal court entertained any idea of making the concession; but, in considering the question as to the power or duty of the Pope to alter the law of celibacy (*Diss. IV. cap. 6*), his remarks show clearly that the subject was discussed in a tone to afford the partisans of marriage reasonable grounds for hope.

Zaccaria again entered the lists, and produced, in 1785, his "Nuova Giustificazione del Celibato Sacro," in answer to the Abbé Gaudin and to an anonymous German writer whose work had produced considerable sensation. To this he was principally moved by a report that he had himself been converted by the facts and arguments advanced by the German, an imputation which he indignantly refuted in three hundred quarto pages.

The half-formed resolutions of Joseph II. led to no result, and the subject slumbered for a few years until the outbreak of the French Revolution. At an early period in that great movement, the adversaries of sacerdotal asceticism bestirred themselves in bringing to public attention the evils and cruelty of the system. Already, in 1789, a mass of pamphlets appeared urging the abrogation of celibacy. In 1790 the work of the Abbé Gaudin was reprinted, and was promptly answered by the prolific Maulrot. Even in Germany the same spirit again awoke, and a Hungarian priest named Katz published at Vienna, in 1791, a "Tractatus de conjugio et cœlibatu clericorum," in which he argued strongly for a change. In Poland these doctrines made considerable progress, for in 1801 we find a little tract issued at Warsaw vehemently arguing against those who imperil their souls by violating their vows and the laws of the Church.¹ In England a Catholic priest distinguished for talents and learning, Dr. Geddes, published in 1800 a work in which he denied the apostolic origin of celibacy, and urged that, at most, delinquents should only be punished by degradation from the priesthood, without disgrace. Indeed, he argued that the rule caused more proselytes to Protestantism than any other cause.²

¹ *Vetus et Constans in Ecclesia Catholica de Sacerdotum Cœlibatu Doctrina*, Varsaviæ, 1801.

² "A Modest Apology for the Catholics of Great Britain," published anonymously in 1800—a work singularly moderate and candid in its tone. Dr. Geddes had been

During this period it can hardly be supposed that the defiant immorality which characterised the eighteenth century had been favourable to the purity of a celibate priesthood. That the Church, indeed, had made but scanty improvement in the character of its ministers is visible throughout the literature of the age, and I need only allude to a few instances where efforts at reform revealed the prevailing corruption.

In France the attacks upon the vow of celibacy, to which allusion has already been made, seem to have given rise to a spasmodic attempt to regulate the Church. In 1760 an *arrêt* of the Parlement of Paris prohibited the organisation of religious congregations without express royal permission, verified by that body. The assembly of the clergy in Paris in 1766 produced no notable improvement, nor was greater success obtained when the temporal power intervened in the edicts of 1766 and 1767. Further effort apparently was requisite, and in the edict of March 1768, Louis XV. undertook to diminish in some degree the causes of the more flagrant disorders among the regular clergy. Men were not to be allowed to take the vows under the age of twenty-two, nor women under nineteen; and as the smaller religious houses were especially notorious for laxness of discipline, all were suppressed which could not number at least fifteen professed monks or nuns, except those attached to larger congregations. The ecclesiastical authorities, moreover, were emphatically commanded to make a thorough visitation, and to compel the observance of the rules of discipline of the several Orders.¹ The enforcement of this edict created no little excitement, and several of the smaller Orders narrowly escaped destruction in their endeavours to evade its

suspended from his functions in consequence of a translation of the Bible which he had published. See Allibone's Dictionary, I. 657.

¹ Dupin, *Manuel du Droit Pub. Ecclés. Française*, 4th Ed. Paris, 1845, p. 274.—*Edit de Mars 1768, concernant les Ordres Religieux* (Isambert, XXIII. 476).

provisions. That these efforts did not succeed in accomplishing their object we may well believe, even without the testimony of an eye-witness.¹ As for the secular clergy, when Louis XV. amused himself by ordering the arrest of all ecclesiastics caught frequenting brothels, the number of victims in a short time amounted to 296, of whom no fewer than 100 were priests actively engaged in the service of the altar.²

When the Grand-Duke Leopold of Tuscany undertook to reform the monasteries of his dominions and to put an end, if possible, to the abuse of the confessional, it led to a long diplomatic correspondence with the papal curia as to the jurisdiction over such cases. A public document of the year 1763 had already stated that the special crime in question had become less frequent, and attributed this improvement to the exceeding laxity of morals everywhere prevalent, for few confessors would be so foolish as to attempt seduction in the confessional when there was so little risk in doing the same thing elsewhere.³ Specious as this reasoning might seem, the facts on which it was based were hardly borne out by the investigations of Leopold shortly after into the morals of the monastic establishments. Nothing more scandalous is to be found in the visitations of the religious houses of England under Morton and Cromwell. The spiritual directors of the nunneries had converted them virtually into harems, and such of the sisters as were proof against seduction armed with the powers of confession and absolution, suffered every species of persecution. It was rare for them to venture on complaint, but when they did so they received no attention from their ecclesiastical superiors, and only the protection of the grand-ducal authority at length

¹ See Lasteyrie's *Hist. of Auricular Confession*, translated by Cocks, London, 1848, Book II. chap. iv., vi.

² Bouvet, *De la Confession et du Célibat des Prêtres*, Paris, 1845, p. 504.

³ Archives of Florence—Segreterio di Stato nella Reggenza, Filza 194, No. 6.

emboldened them to reveal the truth. The prioress of S. Caterina di Pistoia declared that, with three or four exceptions, all the monks and confessors with whom she had met in her long career were alike; that they treated the nuns as wives, and taught them that God had made man for woman and woman for man; and that the visitations of the bishops amounted to naught, even though they were aware of what occurred, for the mouths of the victims were sealed by the dread of excommunication threatened by their spiritual directors.¹ When it is considered that the convents thus converted into dens of prostitution were the favourite schools to which the girls of the higher classes were sent for training and education, it can readily be imagined what were the moral influences thence radiating throughout society at large, and we can appreciate the argument above referred to, as to the ease with which the clergy could procure sexual indulgence without recourse to the confessional. Leopold's chief assistant in this struggle was Scipione de' Ricci, Bishop of Pistoia and Prato, whose experiences in the investigation caused him to induce the Council of Pistoia, in 1786, to declare the duties of the confessional wholly incompatible with the monastic state, and, in view of the improbability of any permanent reform, to propose the abolition of the monastic Orders by restricting vows to the duration of a twelvemonth²—propositions which were not approved by the congregation of Tuscan prelates held at Florence in 1787, and which were scornfully condemned by Rome.³ Leopold, however, sought to palliate the evil by raising to the age of twenty-four the minimum limit for taking the vows, which the Council of Trent had fixed at sixteen, but

¹ De Potter, *Mémoires de Scipion de' Ricci*, I. 284 sqq.

² *Atti e Decreti del Concilio di Pistoja dell' anno 1786*, Pistoja, 4to, pp. 237, 239.

³ *Acta Congr. Archiep. et Episc. Hetruriæ Sess. XVIII.* (Bambergæ, 1790, T. I. p. 453).—*Bull. Auctorem fidei ann. 1794* §§ 80–84.

the benefit of this salutary measure was neutralised by the ease with which parents desiring to get rid of their children could place them in the institutions of the neighbouring states, such as Lucca and Modena.¹

Rome itself was no better than its dependent provinces, despite the high personal character of some of the pontiffs. When the too early death of Clement XIV., in 1774, cut short the hopes which had been excited by his enlightened rule, St. Alphonso Liguori addressed to the conclave assembled for the election of his successor a letter urging them to make such a choice as would afford reasonable prospect of accomplishing the much-needed reform. The saint did not hesitate to characterise the discipline of the secular clergy as most grievously lax, and to proclaim that a general reform of the ecclesiastical body was the only way to remove the fearful corruption of the morals of the laity.² When we hear, about this time, of two Carmelite convents at Rome, one male and the other female, which had to be pulled down because underground passages had been established between them, by means of which the monks and nuns lived in indiscriminate licentiousness, and when we read the scandalous stories which were current in Roman society about prelates high in the Church, we can readily appreciate the denunciations of St. Alphonso.³ A curious glimpse at the interior of conventual life is furnished by a manual for Inquisitors, written about this period by an official of the Holy Office of Rome. In a chapter on nuns he describes the scandals which often cause them to fall within the jurisdiction of the Inquisition, and prescribes the course to be pursued with regard to the several offences. Among those who were forced to take the veil, despair frequently led to the

¹ Chiesi (Rivista Cristiana, Dic. 1876 p. 470).—Concil. Trident. Sess. xxv. De Reg. et Mon. cap. xv.

² Panzini, Confessione di un Prigioniero, p. 333.

³ Vie de Scipion de' Ricci I. 289 : II. 373 sqq.

denial of God, of heaven, and of hell ; feminine enmity caused accusations of sorcery and witchcraft, which threw not only the nunneries, but whole cities, into confusion ; vain-glory of sanctity suggested pretended revelations and visions ; and these latter were also not infrequently caused by licentiousness, for in these utterances were sometimes taught doctrines utterly subversive of morality, of which godless confessors took advantage to teach their spiritual daughters that there was no sin in sexual intercourse. As in Spain, it was the practice of the Roman Inquisition to treat the offenders mildly, partly in consideration of the temptations to which they were exposed, and partly to avoid scandal.¹ The contaminating influence on society at large, emanating from a Church so incurably corrupted, was vastly heightened by the overgrown numbers of the clerical body. In 1775, for example, a census of the *terra-firma* provinces of Venice showed in that narrow territory no less than 45,773 priests, or one to every fifty inhabitants, while in the kingdom of Naples, exclusive of Sicily, there were, in 1769, one to every seventy-six.² Such overcrowding as this was not only in itself an efficient cause of disorder, but intensified incalculably the power of infection.

The virtues of the clergy, therefore, could offer but a feeble barrier to the spirit of innovation when the passions of the French Revolution were brought to bear upon the immunities and distinctive laws of the Church. The attack commenced on that which had been the strength, but which was now the weakness, of the ecclesiastical establishment. As early as 10 August, 1789, preliminary steps were taken in the National Assembly to appropriate the property of the Church to meet the deficit which had been

¹ *Prattica del Modo da procedersi nelle cause del S. Offitio*, cap. xxv. (MS. Bibl. Reg. Monacens. Cod. Ital. 598.)

² *Esaminatore*, Firenze, April 15, 1867, p. 100. In Spain, the census of 1768 gave the number of ecclesiastics, male and female, regular and secular, as 183,965.

the efficient cause of calling together the high council of the nation. This property was estimated as covering one-fifth of the surface of France, yielding with the tithes an annual revenue of three hundred millions of francs. So vast an amount of wealth, perverted for the most part from its legitimate purposes, offered an irresistible temptation to desperate financiers, and yet it was a prelate who made the first direct attack upon it. On 10 October, 1789, Talleyrand, then Bishop of Autun, introduced a motion to the effect that it should be devoted to the national wants, subject to the proper and necessary expenses for public worship; and on November 2 the measure was adopted by a vote of 568 to 346. This settled the principle, though the details of a transaction of such magnitude were only perfected by successive acts during the two following years. One of the earliest results was the secularisation of those ecclesiastics whose labours did not entitle them to support, a preliminary necessary to the intended appropriation of their princely revenues. This was accomplished by an act of 13 February, 1790, by which the religious Orders were suppressed, monastic vows were declared void, and a moderate annuity accorded to the unfortunates thus turned adrift upon the world.

The great body of the parochial clergy, patriotic in their aspirations, and suffering from the abuses of power, had hailed the advent of the Revolution with joy; and their assistance had been invaluable in rendering the Tiers-Etat supreme in the National Assembly. These measures, however, assailing their dearest interests and privileges, aroused them to a sense of the true tendency of the movement to which they had contributed so powerfully. A breach was inevitable between them and the partisans of progress. Every forward step embittered the quarrel. It was impossible for the one party to stay its course, or for the other to assent to acts which daily

became more menacing and revolutionary. Forced, therefore, into the position of reactionaries, the clergy ere long became objects of suspicion and soon after of persecution. The progressives devised a test-oath, obligatory on all ecclesiastics, which should divide those who were loyal to the Revolution from the contumacious, and lists were kept of both classes.¹ Harmless as the oath was in appearance, when it was tendered, in December 1790, five-sixths of the clergy throughout the kingdom refused it. Those who yielded to the pressure were termed *assermentés*, the recusants *insermentés* or *réfractaires*, and the latter, of course, at once became the determined opponents of the new *régime*, the more dangerous because they were the only influential partisans of reaction belonging to the people. To their efforts were attributed the insurrections which in La Vendée and elsewhere threatened the most fearful dangers. They were accordingly exposed to severe legislation. A decree of 29 November, 1791, deprived them of their stipends and suspended their functions; another of 27 May, 1792, authorised the local authorities to exile them on the simple denunciation of twenty citizens. Under the Terror their persons were exposed to flagrant cruelties, and a *prêtre réfractaire* was generally regarded, *ipso facto*, as an enemy to the Republic.

Under these circumstances, sacerdotal marriage came to be looked upon as a powerful lever to disarm or overthrow the hostility of the Church, and also as a test of loyalty or disloyalty. Yet the steps by which this conclusion was reached were very gradual. In the early stages of the Revolution, while it was still fondly deemed

¹ "D'être fidèle à la nation, à la loi, au roi, et de veiller exactement sur le troupeau confié à leurs soins." It was not only the objections of the King and of the Pope that rendered this oath unpalatable, but also the fact that it gave adhesion to the law for the secularisation of ecclesiastical property and of the monastic Orders. It was ordered in the *Constitution civile du Clergé*, Tit. II. Art. 21, 38 adopted July 12, and promulgated August 24, 1790.

that the existing institutions of France could be purified and preserved, the National Assembly was assailed with petitions asking that the privilege of marriage should be extended to the clergy.¹ These met with no response, even after the suppression of the monastic Orders. As late as September 1790, when the Abbé Professor Courmand, of the Collège de France, made a motion in favour of sacerdotal marriage in the assembly of the district of St. Etienne du Mont in Paris, the question, after considerable debate, was laid aside as beyond the competence of that body. It was not until 3 September, 1791, that Mirabeau introduced into the Assembly a decree providing that no profession or vocation should debar a citizen from marriage or be considered as incompatible with marriage, and forbidding the public officials and notaries from refusing to ratify any marriage contract on such pretext. Though no allusion was made in this to ecclesiastics, its object was evident, and was so admitted in the eloquent speech with which he urged its adoption—a speech which contained a very telling *résumé* of the arguments in favour of priestly marriage, but which, in its glowing anticipations of the benefits to be expected from the measure, affords a somewhat lamentable contrast to the meagreness of the realisation.² The principle, when once established, was considered of sufficient importance to deserve recognition in the Constitution of September 1791, a section in the preamble of which declares that the law does not recognise religious vows or any engagements contrary to the rights of nature or to the

¹ I have before me one of the pamphlets issued about this time (*Le Mariage des Prêtres*, Paris, Laclaye, 1790, 8vo, pp. 102), addressed to the Assembly. It is a tolerably calm and well-reasoned argument, basing its demand upon the usages of the primitive Church, the precepts of Scripture, the rights of nature, and public utility. The author asserts himself to be a priest well advanced in life, and he assumes that the corruption of society disseminated by the licentiousness of ecclesiastics is generally recognised and understood.

² This speech is printed in full from a MS. in the public library of Geneva, by the Abbé Chavard (*Le Célibat des Prêtres*, pp. 483-500).

constitution¹; and this was followed, as Mirabeau had proposed, by a decree of 20 September, 1791, which, in enumerating the obstacles to marriage, does not allude to monastic vows or holy orders.

Professor Cournand was probably the first man of position and character to take advantage of the privilege thus permitted, and his example was followed by many ecclesiastics who had won an honourable place in the Church, in literature, and in science. Among them may be mentioned the Abbé Gaudin of the Oratoire, the author of a work already alluded to on the evils of celibacy, who in 1792 represented La Vendée in the Legislative Assembly, and who in 1805 did not hesitate to publish a little volume entitled "Avis à mon fils âgé de sept ans"—although in the preface to his work in 1781 he had described himself as long past the age of the passions. Even bishops yielded to the temptation. Loménie, coadjutor of his uncle the Archbishop of Sens, Torné, Bishop of Bourges, Massieu of Beauvais, and Lindet of Evreux were publicly married. Many nuptials of this kind were celebrated with an air of defiance. Pastors announced their approaching weddings to their flocks in florid rhetoric, as though assured of finding sympathy for the assertion of the triumph of nature over the tyranny of man. Others presented themselves with their brides at the bar of the National Convention, as though to demonstrate that they were good citizens who had thrown off all reverence for the obsolete traditions of the past.

A nation maddened and torn by the extremes of hope, of rage, and of terror, which met the triumphal march of three hundred and fifty thousand hostile bayonets with the heads of its king and queen, which blazoned forth to

¹ La loi ne reconnaît ni vœux religieux, ni aucun autre engagement qui serait contraire aux droits naturels ou à la constitution.

Europe its irrevocable breach with the past by instituting festivals in honour of a new Supreme Being and parading a courtesan through the streets of Paris as the goddess of reason, was not likely to employ much tenderness in coercing its internal enemies, and chief among these it finally numbered the ministers of religion. To them it soon applied the marriage test. To marry was to acknowledge the supremacy of the civil authority and to sunder allegiance to foreign domination; celibacy was at the least a tacit adherence to the enemy and a mute protest against the new *régime*. Matrimony, therefore, rose into importance as at once a test and a pledge, and every effort was made to encourage it. Among the records of the revolutionary tribunal is the trial of Mahue, curé of S. Sulpice, 13 August, 1793, accused of having written a pamphlet against priestly marriage, and he was only acquitted on the ground that his crime had been committed prior to the adoption of the law of 19 July, 1793.¹ A decree of 19 November, 1793, relieved from exile or imprisonment all priests who could show that their banns had been published, and when, soon afterwards, at the height of the popular frenzy, the Convention sent its deputies throughout France with instructions to crush out every vestige of the dreaded reaction, those emissaries made celibacy the object of their especial attacks. Thus, in the Department of the Meuse, deputy De la Croix announced that all priests who were not married should be placed under surveillance; while in Savoy the harsh measures taken against the clergy were modified in favour of those who married by permitting them to remain under surveillance. One zealous deputy ordered a pastor to be imprisoned until he could find a wife, and another released a canon from jail on his pledging himself to marry. Many of those thus forced into matrimony were decrepit with years,

¹ Desmazes, *Pénalités Anciennes*, p. 222, Paris, 1866.

and chose brides whose age secured them from all suspicions of yielding to the temptations of the flesh. Such was the venerable Martin of Marseilles, who, after seeing his bishop and two priests, his intimate friends, led to the scaffold, took, at the age of 76, a wife nearly 60 years old. As an unfortunate ecclesiastic, who had thus succeeded in weathering the storm, fairly expressed it, in defending himself against the reproaches of a returned *émigré* bishop, he took a wife to serve as a lightning rod. These unwilling bridegrooms not infrequently deposited with a notary or a trusty friend a protest against the violence to which they had yielded, and a declaration that their relations with their wives should be merely those of brother and sister.

Yet in this curious persecution the officials only obeyed the voice of the excited people. The press, the stage, all the organs of public opinion, were unanimous in warring with celibacy, ridiculing it as a fanatical remnant of superstition, and denouncing it as a crime against the state. The popular societies were especially vehement in promulgating these ideas. The *Congrès fraternel* of Auch, in September 1793, ordered the local clubs to enlighten the benighted minds of the populace on the subject, and to exclude from membership all priests who should not marry within six months. A petition to the National Assembly from the republicans of Auxerre demanded that all ecclesiastics who persisted in remaining single should be banished; while a more truculent address from Condom urged imperiously that celibacy should be declared a capital crime, and that the death penalty should be enforced with relentless severity. In times so unsparing, when suspicion was conviction and conviction death, and when such were the views of those who swayed public affairs, it is not to be wondered at if many pious Churchmen, unambitious of the crown of

martyrdom, thought matrimony preferable to the guilotine or the noyade.

Indeed, the only source of surprise is that so few were found to betray their convictions. In the vast body of the Gallican Church it is estimated that only about 2000 marriages of men in orders took place after the Reign of Terror had rendered it a measure of safety. In addition to this, about 500 nuns were also married; and though this proportion is larger, it is still singularly small when we consider that these poor creatures, utterly unfitted by habit or education to take care of themselves, were suddenly ejected from their peaceful retreats and cast upon a world which was raging in convulsions so terrible.¹

This is doubtless attributable to the steadfast resistance which the better part of the clergy made to the innovation, in spite of the danger of withstanding the popular frenzy, and in disregard of the laws which denounced such opposition. Even the *assermentés*, who had pledged themselves to the Revolution by taking the oath of allegiance, were mostly unfavourable to the abrogation of celibacy, and the position thus maintained by the clergy gave tone to such of the people as retained enough of devout feeling still to frequent the churches and partake of the mysteries of religion. The existence of an active and determined opposition is revealed by an act of 16 August, 1792, guaranteeing the salaries of all married priests, thus showing that in some places at least their stipends had been withheld.

¹ I have not found it easy to form a satisfactory estimate of the number of French ecclesiastics previous to the Revolution. Le Bas (Dictionnaire Encyclopédique de l'Histoire de France, V. 218) gives a table showing an aggregate of 418,206 souls, of whom 235,147 may be considered as attached to the secular service, and 183,059 to the regular Orders and canons. Of these latter, 100,451 were men and 82,608 were women. On the other hand, M. Sauvestre (Congrégations Religieuses, pp. 5, 6) quotes from the Abbé Expilly a statement that in 1765 there were 79,000 monks and 80,000 nuns, while he shows that other contemporary authorities reduce the number of members of religious Orders in 1789 to 52,000 of both sexes. M. Charles Chabot (Encyclopédie Monastique, p. x., Paris, 1827) computes, after elaborate tabulation, the number of ecclesiastics, regular and secular, at 407,753 persons, enjoying a revenue of 127,610,576 francs.

Many pastors, indeed, were driven from their parishes by their congregations, in consequence of marriage, to put an end to which a decree of 17 September, 1793, ordered the communes to continue payment of salaries in all such cases of ejection.

There were not wanting courageous ecclesiastics who opposed the innovation by every means in their power. Although Gobel, Bishop of Paris, a creature of the Revolution, favoured the marriages of his clergy, a portion of his curates openly and vigorously denounced them, and Gratien, Archbishop of Rouen, addressed to him a severe reproach for his criminal weakness. The same Gratien excommunicated one of his priests for marrying, and published, 24 July, 1792, an instruction directed especially against such unions. For this he was thrown into prison, where he was long confined. Fauchet of Bayeux, for the same offence, was reported to the Convention, but was fortunate enough to elude the consequences. Philibert of Sedan issued, 20 January, 1793, a pastoral in which he more cautiously argued against the practice, and, after a long persecution, he was lucky to escape with a decree of costs against him. Pastorals to the same effect were also promulgated by Clément of Versailles, Héraudin of Châteauroux, Sanadon of Oléron, Suzor of Tours, and others.

The Convention was not disposed to tolerate proceedings such as these. To put a stop to them, it adopted, 19 July, 1793, a law punishing with deprivation and exile all bishops who interfered in any way with the marriage of their clergy. For a while this appears to have put a stop to open opposition, but when the Reign of Terror was past, and the Catholics saw a prospect of reorganising the distracted Church, one of the earliest efforts was directed to the restoration of celibacy. On 15 March, 1795, some *assermentés* bishops, members of the Convention, issued

from Paris an encyclical letter to the faithful, in which they denounced sacerdotal marriage in the strongest terms. Those who entered into such unions were declared unworthy of confidence; the fearful constraint under which they had sought refuge in matrimony was pronounced to be no justification, and even renunciation of their wives was not admitted as entitling them to absolution for the one unpardonable sin.¹ In a second letter, issued 15 December of the same year, this denunciation was repeated in even stronger terms.

In these manifestoes the bishops did not speak by authority. They could not threaten or command, for they were acting beyond or in opposition to the law. With the progress of reaction they became bolder. In 1797 the Church ventured to hold a national council, in which it forbade the nuptial benediction to those who were in orders or were bound by monastic vows, thus reducing their marriages to the mere civil contract, and depriving them of all the sanction of religion. The local synods which, encouraged by the fall of the Directory, were held in 1800, adopted these principles as a matter of course, and took measures to enforce them. That of Bourges even prohibited the churching of women who were wives of ecclesiastics.

This condemnation of the married clergy carried despair and desolation into the households of those who had offended, and upon whom the door of reconciliation was so sternly closed. Grégoire of Blois, a leading actor in all these scenes, records the innumerable appeals received from the unfortunates, who, torn by remorse and thus repudiated by the Church, begged in vain for the mercy which was incompatible with the respect due to the ancient and inviolable canons.

All this, however, was merely local action. The

¹ Lett. Encyc. 15 Mars, 1795, art. IX. (Grégoire, p. 109.)

Gallican Church had not yet been reunited to Rome. In reconstructing a system of social order, Napoleon speedily recognised the necessity of religion in the state, and, despite the opposition of those who still believed in the Republic, the Concordat of 1801 restored France to its place in the hierarchy of Latin Christianity. There is nothing in the Concordat interfering with the right of the priest, as a citizen, to contract marriage; but as, in all affairs purely ecclesiastical, the internal regulation and discipline of the Church were necessarily left to itself, the rights of the priest, as a priest, became of course subject to the received rules of the Church, which could thus refuse the nuptial benediction, and suspend the functions of any one contravening its canons. In consequence of the power thus restored, when the question soon after arose as to the legality of sacerdotal marriages contracted during the troubles, the cardinal-legate Caprara issued rescripts to those whose unions were anterior to the Concordat, depriving them of their priestly character, reducing them to the rank of laymen, and empowering the proper officials to absolve them and remarry them to the wives whom they had so irregularly wedded. This created a strong feeling of indignation among the prelates who had carried the tabernacle through the wilderness, and who while opposing such marriages most strenuously, regarded this intervention of papal authority as a direct assault upon the liberties of the Gallican Church. Their time was past, however, and their denunciations of this duplication of the sacrament were of no avail. Yet the legality of such marriages as civil contracts, and the unimpaired right of priests to contract them, were asserted and proved by Portalis, in his masterly speech of 15 April, 1802, before the Corps Législatif, advocating the adoption of the Concordat as a law, although he admitted that the Church could withhold its sanction and could exercise its discipline

while the feeling of the people rendered sacerdotal celibacy desirable.¹

One phase of the situation thus created was aptly illustrated in the curious affair of Prince Talleyrand's marriage, which attracted at the time the attention of Europe. Forced into the Church by family exigencies, and elevated to the bishopric of Autun, he had earned the permanent hatred of the hierarchy by throwing himself into the revolutionary movement, where he bore a leading part in the secularisation of ecclesiastical property and utilised his episcopal functions in consecrating the Constitutional bishops. This could not be condoned, even in view of the active assistance which, as Minister of Foreign Affairs, under the Consulate, he rendered in the negotiations for the Concordat. In these he had vainly sought to introduce a clause releasing from their obligations all ecclesiastics who had contracted marriage or had otherwise renounced their clerical status—a clause which would

¹ This speech of Portalis *père* is an admirable commentary on the Concordat, developing its causes and consequences with a rigidity of logic and an enlightened spirit of faith which are equally creditable to the head and heart of the distinguished orator. From the portion devoted to the subject of marriage I quote the following, as embodying a clear exposition of the intentions of those who negotiated the Concordat :

“ Quelques personnes se plaindront peut-être de ce que l'on n'a pas conservé le mariage des prêtres. . . . En effet, d'une part nous n'admettons plus que les ministres dont l'existence est nécessaire à l'exercice du culte, ce qui diminue considérablement le nombre des personnes qui se vouaient anciennement au célibat. D'autre part, pour les ministres mêmes que nous conservons, et à qui le célibat est ordonné par les réglemens ecclésiastiques, la défense qui leur est faite du mariage par ces réglemens n'est point consacrée comme *empêchement dirimant* dans l'ordre civil : ainsi leur mariage, s'ils en contractaient un, ne serait point nul aux yeux des lois politiques et civiles, et les enfans qui en naîtraient seraient légitimes ; mais dans le for intérieur et dans l'ordre religieux, ils s'exposeraient aux peines spirituelles prononcées par les lois canoniques : ils continueraient à jouir de leurs droits de famille et de cité, mais ils seraient tenus de s'abstenir de l'exercice du sacerdoce. Conséquemment, sans affaiblir le nerf de la discipline de l'église, on conserve aux individus toute la liberté et tous les avantages garantis par les lois de l'état ; mais il eût été injuste d'aller plus loin, et d'exiger pour les ecclésiastiques de France, comme tels, une exception qui les eût déconsidérés auprès de tous les peuples Catholiques, et auprès des français mêmes, auxquels ils administreraient les secours de la religion.” (Dupin, Manuel du Droit Public Ecclés. Française, 4ème éd. pp. 196-8.)

have covered his own case—but Pius VII. was obdurate, and, while promising to give to his legate Caprara faculties to absolve simple priests, he refused to comprehend bishops and members of the religious Orders.¹

The Concordat adopted in this shape left Talleyrand in an awkward position. A fascinating woman with a dubious past, known as Madame Grand, had for some years been his acknowledged mistress, doing the honours of his house. In the easy morality of the Directory this had caused no scandal, but Napoleon, in re-establishing order, insisted on external decency, and moreover, when relations were resumed with foreign powers, ambassadorial ladies murmured at being obliged to associate with a concubine. He therefore offered Talleyrand the peremptory alternatives of marrying Madame Grand or of dismissing her, and Talleyrand chose the former. Two pressing applications were made to the Holy See and urged with all the force that Napoleon could bring to bear, but in each case the only outcome was a brief enabling Talleyrand to be unfrocked, to be reduced to lay communion, deprived of sacerdotal functions, and authorised to lead a secular life, without a word as to marriage. Thus checked, Talleyrand made the best of the situation. He caused the second brief to be laid before the Council of State, which duly accepted it and ordered its registration, and it was officially gazetted in a concise form stating that it restored citizen Talleyrand to secular life. All the world assumed this as conferring on him the full privileges of the laity, and it was in vain that the Holy See caused the insertion in foreign journals of a statement that it reduced him to lay communion without relieving him of his vows. His civil marriage with Madame Grand was celebrated on 10 September, 1802, and the lady had the

¹ Bernard de Lacombe, *Le Mariage de Talleyrand (Le Correspondant, Paris, 25 Aout et 10 Septembre, 1905)*.

It is to this exhaustive article that I owe the details of this celebrated case.

satisfaction of styling herself Talleyrand-Périgord, or subsequently Princess of Benevento. A sacramental marriage, it is said, followed, performed quietly by the curé of Epinay, but the parish register of that place has disappeared and the assertion cannot be confirmed, though there is little reason to disbelieve it, for no one at the time, save the Curia, doubted the legal validity of the union.

The question of celibacy was not settled by the Concordat. Notwithstanding the certainty of ecclesiastical penalties following such infraction of the Tridentine articles of faith, the practice which had been introduced could not be immediately eradicated. Priests were constantly contracting marriage, and the question gave considerable trouble to the Government, which hesitated for some time as to the policy to be pursued. Portalis, in 1802, as we have seen, declared the full legality of such marriages, and the unimpaired right of ecclesiastics to contract them; and the provisions of the Code respecting marriage, adopted in 1803, make no allusions to vows or religious engagements as causing incapacity.¹ Yet in 1805, when Daviaux, Archbishop of Bordeaux, opposed the application of a priest named Boisset to the civil authorities for a marriage contract, Portalis, then Minister of Religious Affairs, on being appealed to, replied that the Government would not allow its officers to register such contracts. The local administrations sometimes assented to such applications and sometimes referred them to the central authority, until at length, in 1807, a definite conclusion was promulgated. This was to the effect that although the civil law was silent as regards such marriages, yet they were condemned by public opinion. The Government considered them fraught with danger to the peace of families, as the powerful influence of the pastor

¹ Code Civil, Liv. I. Tit. v.

could be perverted to evil purposes, and, if seduction could be followed by marriage, that influence would be liable to great abuse. The Emperor therefore declared that he could not tolerate marriage on the part of those who had exercised priestly functions since the date of the Concordat. As for those who had abandoned the ministry previous to that period and had not since resumed it, he left them to their own consciences. Thus in practice, although marriage was regarded as purely a civil institution, a limitation was introduced which was not authorised by the Code, which rested solely upon the authority of the Emperor, and which, far from indicating respect to the Church, was a flagrant insult. As Napoleon withdrew himself more and more from the principles of the new order of things, we find him disposed to take even stronger ground in opposition to the civil privileges accorded to the priesthood by the Concordat. The question of sacerdotal marriage continued to present itself under perplexing shapes, and at length the Emperor, on the eve of his downfall, perhaps with a view to propitiate the sacerdotal power, proposed to apply to married priests the penalty imposed by the law on bigamy.¹ It was too late, however: the Empire was rapidly vanishing, and these suggestions were soon forgotten in the hurrying march of events.²

¹ In an address to the Council of State, December 20, 1813, Napoleon said: "Le sacerdoce est une sorte de mariage; le prêtre étant uni à l'église comme l'époux à son épouse, il n'y aurait aucun inconvénient à appliquer au prêtre qui se marierait la peine de la bigamie: un tel ecclésiastique ne mérite aucun sorte de considération."—Bouhier de l'Ecluse, de l'Etat des Prêtres en France, Paris, 1842, p. 17.

² For many of the above details I am indebted to the curious but ill-digested little work, "Histoire du Mariage des Prêtres en France," published by Grégoire in 1826. Grégoire, though a priest of the *ancien régime*, was a sincere and consistent republican. A member of the States General, of the Convention, and of the Council of Five Hundred, elected Bishop of Blois by the voice of a people who knew and respected him, he preserved his ardent faith through all the excesses of the Revolution, and his democratic ideas in spite of the injuries inflicted on his class in the name of the people. The sincerity and boldness of his character may be estimated by a single example. When, on 7 November, 1793, Gobel, Bishop of Paris, appeared before the Convention with twelve of his vicars and publicly renounced his sacred

functions on the ground that hereafter there should be no other worship than that of liberty and equality, almost all the ecclesiastics in the Convention followed his example. To hold back at such a moment was dangerous in the extreme, yet Grégoire had the hardihood to utter a defiant protest. "I am a Catholic by conviction and by feeling, a priest by choice, a bishop by the voice of the people, but not from the people nor from you do I derive my mission, and I will not be forced to an abjuration." To him perhaps more than to any one else is attributable the skilful management which carried the Church through the storms and persecutions of the Revolution, but the same inflexibility which maintained his Catholicism through the ordeal of 1793 and 1794 caused him to stand by his republicanism long after it had gone out of fashion. He was not to be bought or bullied: the Legitimist was less tolerant than the Terrorist, and under the Restoration he was reduced almost to absolute indigence. Together with the other constitutional bishops, he had been compelled to resign his bishopric by order of the Pope after the Concordat of 1801, and he was too dangerous a man to be rewarded for his invaluable services to religion. He died in 1831.

CHAPTER XXXII

THE CHURCH OF TO-DAY

THE question of sacerdotal marriage was left in France, on the collapse of the Empire, in a curiously unsettled condition, giving rise to very remarkable contradictions in the judicial decisions which since then have from time to time been rendered by the tribunals as cases were brought before them.

Under the Restoration, a priest named Martin, an old *réfractaire* of 1792, committed the imprudence of marrying in 1815. Not long after he died without issue. His relatives contested the succession with the widow, and in 1817 the inferior court decided in her favour. The next year the court of appeals reversed the judgment on the ground that sacerdotal marriage had only been sanctioned indirectly by the legislation of the Revolution, and that the Charter of 1814 (Art. 6) had restored Catholicism as the religion of the state. In 1821, however, the final decision of the Court of Cassation settled the question in favour of the widow, thus legalising such unions, for the incontrovertible reason that the Code did not recognise vows or holy orders as causes incapacitating for marriage.¹

Even yet, however, the matter was not held to be finally disposed of. In 1828, Louis Thérèse Saturnin Dumonteil, a priest of Paris, who desired to contract marriage, failed to obtain from the courts the customary assistance required by the law to set aside the refusal of

¹ Grégoire, *op. cit.* p. 102.

his parents, who declined their assent to his projected union. The case was argued in all its bearings on civil and ecclesiastical law, and he found the tribunals resolutely opposed to him. When the Revolution of July unsettled the public mind with visions of the revival of the principles of '89, Dumonteil endeavoured to carry out his project. The lower court decided in his favour, 26 March, 1831, but the higher courts reversed the decision, and pronounced definitely that priests could not contract civil marriage,¹ and this in spite of the Charter of 1830, which simply affirmed Catholicism to be the religion of the majority of Frenchmen, while that of 1814 had declared it to be the religion of the state.

This curiously vexed question seemed incapable of positive solution. The case of Dumonteil apparently discouraged aspirants for clerical marriage during the next thirty years, for I have met with no allusions to any attempt in that direction until 1861. In that year M. de Brou-Laurière, a priest already debarred from his sacred functions, engaged himself in marriage with Mlle. Elizabeth Fressanges, of Deuille near Périgueux. On calling upon the mayor of the village to perform the ceremony and register the contract, that functionary refused to act. He was supported by the public authorities, and the expectant bridegroom was obliged to appeal to the tribunals to obtain his rights. The question was warmly contested and thoroughly argued, and it was not until a year had elapsed that the court of Périgueux rendered a decision ordering the mayor to perform his functions and to marry the patient couple. The case was then carried to the superior court at Bordeaux, which reversed the previous decision.

¹ Bouhier de l'Écluse, *op. cit.* It was apparently this case which led to the publication, under date of Monaco, 1829, of the "*Considerazioni imparziali sopra la legge del Celibato Ecclesiastico, proposte dal Professore C. A. P.*"—A tolerably well written summary of the arguments against the rule.

Again, in 1864, in the case of the Abbé Chataigneu, the court of Angoulême decided that a priest was, under the law of France, not competent to contract civil marriage.¹ On the other hand, in 1870 the court of Algiers, in the case of a M. Q——, delivered an elaborate decision to the effect that in France there is no law forbidding the civil marriage of priests.² Yet in 1878 the Court of Cassation confirmed a decision of the court of Rennes, pronouncing null and void the marriage of a priest, at the instance of his nephew and niece, to whom he had bequeathed his property by a will anterior to the marriage. When M. Loyson (Père Hyacinthe) married Mrs. Merriman, in 1872, the ceremony was performed in London, at the office of the registrar of marriages, and M. Loyson gave as the reason of his seeking a foreign land the refusal of the French officials to confirm the civil ceremony. So the Abbé Chavard, vicar of Marseilles, in 1874 went to Geneva for the same purpose, where he continued his priestly functions; and this leads me to regard as exceedingly improbable a public statement in the daily journals that priestly marriages occur in France at the rate of twenty or thirty a year. In fact, so lately as September 1883 there was before the courts a case which shows how uncertain is the question still in France. A certain Abbé Junqua was expelled from the Church and was condemned to three months' imprisonment for continuing to wear the priestly robes. He subsequently married and engaged in trade, when he failed, and his wife sought to secure her dowry from the bankrupt assets, but was resisted on the ground that her marriage was illegal under the Concordat, although the Church had itself deprived the husband of his ecclesiastical character. Yet at last, when in 1888 the Court of Cassation, the supreme tribunal in France,

¹ Talmadge's Letters from Florence, p. 166.

² Chavard, *Le Célibat des Prêtres*, pp. 525-30.

definitely decided in favour of priestly marriage, the decision was acquiesced in with scarce a remonstrance and hardly attracted attention. It is evident that the world moves.

In Switzerland I have met with two or three cases of such marriages, but they have no special significance. In one of them, occurring in Lucerne some fifty years ago, the priest left the Church in order to marry, and lived with his wife until her death, in 1880, when he permitted her to be buried as a Catholic, and had the mortification of seeing her name entered on the register, publicly exposed in the parish church, as an unmarried woman.

In Wiesbaden, in 1821, a priest named Koch, with the permission of the authorities, abandoned the priesthood and applied to the curé of the place to marry him, when, meeting with a refusal, he had the ceremony performed by a Protestant pastor, and was promptly excommunicated by the vicar of Ratisbon. Not deterred by this, in 1828 a hundred and eighty priests of Baden petitioned the secular power for permission to marry, and the Chamber of Deputies showed a disposition to grant the request. This effort was imitated in 1831 by the Catholic clergy of Silesia, but the movement was repressed by the Prussian Government; and in 1833, at Trèves, a clerical association was formed to carry out the same object.¹ These efforts led Gregory XVI., in the encyclical *Mirari vos* (15 August 1832), to urge the bishops to constant vigilance and earnest effort in defence of a law of the greatest importance, against a foul conspiracy which was daily extending. Some similar movements in Austria in the next decade led Pius IX., almost immediately after his accession to the papal chair, in his encyclical letter *Qui pluribus* (9 November, 1846), to repeat the words of his predecessor. In 1851, moreover, he took especial pains to stigmatise a

¹ J. M. Cayla, *Les Curés mariés par le Concile*, Paris, 1869.

work, published in Lima by Francisco de Paula in 1848, entitled "Defensa de la Autoridad de los Goberninos," which impiously sought to decentralise the Church, and which took strong grounds against enforced celibacy.¹

How immovable, indeed, is the position of the hierarchy on this matter is shown by the case of Panzini. Panzini is, or was, a Capuchin monk, who in 1854 conceived the idea that the greater part of the evils under which the establishment labours are the result of celibacy and its attendant immorality. He addressed to the Pope an anonymous memorial urging him to submit the question to the bishops then assembled in Rome, and followed this with two similar subsequent applications. Finally, in the troubles of 1859, anticipating the assembling of a European congress, he resolved to print an essay on the subject, addressed to all the bishops of the Church, thinking that the congress would afford him an opportunity of reaching them. The printer to whom he confided his manuscript promptly placed the dangerous matter in the hands of Cardinal Antonelli, when Panzini was at once thrown into prison and delivered to the Inquisition. After a trial which lasted six months, he was condemned to twelve years' incarceration and perpetual suspension from the sacerdotal functions which were his only source of livelihood. After two years of his sentence had expired, he was released at the instance of the Italian Government, and in 1865 he published his essay, rewritten from memory, under the title of "Pubblica Confessione di un Prigioniero dell' Inquisizione Romana ed origine dei mali della Chiesa Cattolica."

Now, Panzini's persecution arose solely from his affirming that enforced celibacy is impolitic and unnatural. He professed unbounded reverence for the Church in all matters of faith, and claimed that the point at issue was

¹ Litt. Apostol. Multiplices inter.

merely one of discipline on which the Church might make a mistake. Even here, however, he was careful to declare his measureless admiration for voluntary asceticism. Virginity he believed to be immensely superior to matrimony, and he anathematised as cheerfully as the Council of Trent could wish all who should proclaim the contrary. Even monasticism he defended as a state of perfection recommended by Christ. His sole objective point was the rigidity of the law which renders the single state indispensable to all ecclesiastics, and he essayed to prove that this is in direct antagonism to all the general principles of Catholic theology; that the purity which is its pretext is impossible to enforce, and that the effort itself is most disastrous to the Church and to the faithful. The authorities were not disposed to consider that these opinions were an allowable dissidence on matters of policy, and they hastened to brand them as heretical. In the sentence passed upon Panzini the Inquisition took occasion to stigmatise as heresy the assertion that enforced celibacy is contrary to nature, that it is a stumbling-block and the cause of perpetual transgression.¹ That this theory was enforced in practice so long as the Church could control the secular power is shown in the case of an Italian priest who, preferring to sanctify love by marriage rather than to indulge in illicit intrigue, married and fled with his bride to Africa, seeking among the infidel the liberty denied him in Christendom. Three children blessed his union, but the unrelenting vigilance of the Church discovered his retreat, when, with the aid of the French consulate, he was seized, carried back to Naples, and thrown into prison to repent indefinitely of his errors.²

There evidently could be no reasonable ground for expecting a change of policy in this respect on the part of

¹ Panzini, pp. 16, 58, 102, 143, 201, 401.

² *Ibid.* p. 123.

the Roman Curia, and this was recognised in 1866 by some Catholic priests of Hungary, who, desiring liberty of marriage, and seeing the futility of anticipating it at the hands of their superiors, united in petitioning the National Diet for the requisite permission. Yet in spite of the extravagance of supposing that a body which, since the Council of Trent, has become so thoroughly centralised as the Church, would listen to the wishes of its lower classes, there were not wanting those who imagined that the Council of the Vatican in 1870 would adopt the discipline of the Eastern Church and permit marriage to the inferior orders. Any such expectations were destined to be disappointed as soon as the preliminary machinery of the council became known. A *congregazione centrale* was appointed by Pius IX. in advance, consisting exclusively of cardinals connected with the Inquisition, and to this body was delegated the sole determination of the matters to be submitted to the council for discussion. Under this *congregazione*, and presided over by its members, were five *consulte*, to act as sub-committees on the subjects respectively confided to their deliberations. The *consulta* on faith and dogma was under the presidency of Cardinal Bilio, notorious as the compiler of the Syllabus of December 1864, and that on canons and discipline was committed to Cardinal Catarini, whose whole career had been passed in the Inquisition, and who had acquired a sinister fame by his rigorous punishment of all attempts at reform. If, as the Church asserts, the proceedings of general councils are under the immediate operation of the Holy Ghost, it will be seen what reverent care was observed to keep Him in due subjection, and to spare the Church the scandal of being brought by thoughtless innovators into opposition with Him.

As the destined outcome of the council was simply the dogma of papal infallibility, the hopes of the anti-celibacy

tarians were transferred to the schism precipitated by it, and known as that of the Old Catholics. In 1875 a Dean Suczinsky married the Baroness Gazewaska, and joined the schismatics, when the Prussian Government decided to protect him in the enjoyment of his temporalities, and his new brethren agreed to receive him, and thus committed themselves on the question of celibacy—a decision confirmed in 1878 by the synod of Bonn, which decreed, by a vote of 75 against 22, that the prohibition of the canons is not an obstacle to the marriage of ecclesiastics, or to the cure of souls by married priests. It required no common conscientiousness and strength of purpose for men like von Döllinger, von Schulte, Reusch, and their companions, upheld by their intimate knowledge of the past, to sever themselves from the Church in which they had been nurtured, when so many of those on whose cooperation they had relied allowed themselves to be coerced into subscribing to a doctrine the untenability of which they had exposed.¹ What, however, is to be the eventual outcome of their self-sacrifice time alone can determine. The struggle in France over the separation of Church and State shows that Ultramontanism is unyielding, and that the Vatican is resolved to rule or ruin. It is irreconcilable, and those who will not submit blindly to its demands have no choice but heresy or schism. This can scarce fail to broaden the movement of *Los von Rom*, which in Austria has already cost the Church so many thousand souls; and while most of these have gone over to the Evangelicals, the Old Catholics in the German portions of the Austrian Empire claim 23,000 members, and are growing at the rate of a thousand a year. In Bavaria and the Rhine lands they are said to be numerous, and in Switzerland the canton of Geneva alone numbers them

¹ See Goetz, Franz Heinrich Reusch : eine Darstellung seiner Lebensarbeit, Gotha, 1901.

at 4300. Holland has its share; and in the United States they have long been organised, having had about four thousand communicants as early as 1892. A cognate movement is on foot in France, where the uncompromising stand of the Vatican on the Law of Separation is directly provocative of schism. Akin to this is the separatist Polish National Church of America, which at the present moment is considering the question of abrogating priestly celibacy. It is useless to forecast the future, but he is blind to the portents of the times who does not recognise that there are elements at work which, if met with the eternal *non possumus*, may seriously threaten unity.¹

Another serious blow in the matter of marriage has been dealt by the adoption in successive Catholic states of what is known as civil marriage, by which matrimony is withdrawn from the exclusive control of the Church, and the sacrament and benediction are declared to be accidents not necessary to the legal status of husband and wife or to the legitimacy and heritable capacity of children. We have already seen that this was one of the legislative results of the French Revolution, and the example thus early set by France has been followed of late by Italy and Austria after its adoption in 1853 by Sardinia, as one of the earliest reformatory measures of Cavour. Yet the Church positively refuses to regard such marriages as entitled to respect. This is a trouble of old date, for when, in 1744, Benedict XIV. was informed that in Belgium parties who were obliged by the law to present themselves before the civil magistrate and declare their intention to be man and wife frequently neglected to invoke the ministration of the priest, he pronounced such marriages to be invalid,

¹ There may be possible promise of a new alignment in the report (January 1907), that Archbishop Messmer, of Milwaukee, publicly holds out the prospect that Episcopal clergymen may be received as priests in the Catholic Church without being obliged to abandon their wives.

and this was repeated by Pius VI. in 1791 and Pius VII. in 1808. It is therefore not surprising that when the project was under discussion in Italy, the *Unità Cattolica*, one of the papal organs, in its issue of 16 July, 1864, did not hesitate to assert that the establishment of civil matrimony was establishing the liberty of licentiousness, and that, after having scattered houses of ill-fame throughout Italy, it would convert the whole peninsula into one brothel. In a similar spirit, the Papal Penitentiary, 15 January, 1866, issued instructions reciting a decision of Pius IX. in secret consistory, 27 September, 1852, that civil marriage without the sacrament was nothing but a foul and destructive cohabitation, whence it was deduced that the civil authorities have no power over marriage or divorce, and Pius IX. followed this by an allocution of 30 October, 1866, denouncing it as leading to an organised system of scandalous concubinage.¹ When, in May 1868, Austria followed the example of Italy, Pius within a month delivered an allocution in which he not only condemned the "abominable law," but declared it to be null and void; and Cardinal Rauscher, Archbishop of Vienna, issued a manifesto in which he not only denied that the civil contract constituted marriage, and directed that children sprung from such unions should be entered on the parish registers as neither legitimate nor illegitimate, but gave positive instructions that absolution should be denied, even *in articulo mortis*, to all parties who had cohabited in such unions—thus stigmatising them as worse than concubinage. In a similar spirit, when, in 1869, civil marriage was proclaimed under the short-lived republic of Spain, the clergy, under inspiration from the Vatican, denounced it as concubinage, and threatened to suspend the celebration of the Mass. The law, in fact, excited much popular feeling, for it made the civil ceremony

¹ Appendix ad Concil. Plenar. Americæ. Latinæ, pp. 739-42.

essential, and declared that without it the solemnisation in church did not confer the legal status of man and wife, so that with the restoration of the monarchy it was promptly repealed, and an effort to restore it was rejected by an emphatic vote of the Cortes in February 1833. With the more liberal tendencies that have since prevailed, the matter has been again taken up, and its recognition has been the subject of fierce dissension. Leo XIII. was vigorous in his opposition to the innovation. In his first encyclical, issued 21 April, 1878, he declared that "citizens, profaning the dignity of Christian marriage, have adopted legal concubinage in place of religious matrimony"; and he returned to the attack in a special encyclical on the subject, published 10 February, 1880. In this he assumes that, as "by the will of Christ the Church alone can and ought to legislate and decide concerning sacraments, so it is out of the question to attempt to transfer any, even the smallest part, of her power to the government of the state," and therefore "judicial sentences on conjugal contracts, as to whether they have been entered upon rightly or wrongly," are a direct infringement of the rights of the Church, whether those judgments be adverse or not to the canons.¹

The earlier passages of this encyclical are so warm and eloquent a defence of the holiness of matrimony, as the natural condition of man decreed by God, that it would probably trouble its author to explain why so exalted and divine a state should be prohibited to the ministers of the God who devised it and fitted his creatures specially for it. It is easy, however, to account for the bitter and persistent opposition of the Church to the civil marriage laws without attributing it to the control which the monopoly of the sacrament gives it over the faithful, and the lucrative nature of the business thus brought to the Curia. More important

¹ Acta Leonis, PP. XIII., T. I. p. 54; T. II. p. 10.

than these is the fact that under the laws the State has the power to permit clerical marriage. For more than half a century such laws had existed in France, but as the French tribunals leaned towards upholding ecclesiastical celibacy, they were acquiesced in comparatively in silence. When Italy, however, followed the example, it was seen that the temper of the Italian Government would lead to construing them in a sense favourable to priestly liberty, and hence the opposition, which has been justified and intensified by the result. Immediately on the passage of the Civil Marriage Act, Dr. Prota, of Naples, an energetic reformer within the Church, in a letter of 30 October, 1865, advised all his clerical friends to marry and to persist in the exercise of their functions, "and the more who do so at once and simultaneously the safer for all, for the bishops will venture the less to persecute you in the face of public opinion." Accordingly, cases of priestly marriage commenced to occur, and when they were contested their validity was confirmed by the tribunals. The superior courts of Genoa, Trani, and Palermo successively decided in this sense; and finally, in 1869, occurred the case of Andrea Treglia, of the diocese of Salerno, which settled the question in Naples. The municipal officers of Vietri refused to marry him; the court of Salerno decided against him, but when the matter was carried up to the court of appeals of Naples judgment was rendered in his favour, and he was married forthwith—thus legitimating the unions of some fifty priests who had preceded him, without the question having been settled by the tribunal of last resort. In the organ of the reforming Catholics of Naples, the *Emancipatore Cattolica*, it was not without interest to see the successive marriages chronicled with the same satisfaction as that evinced by Spalatin in the stormy days of Luther.¹ In Austria the Church succeeded better in

¹ Naples was perhaps the first kingdom in Europe to promulgate a civil

maintaining its hold upon those who had once entered its service. The Civil Marriage Law encouraged a number of priests to marry, but in 1891 the journals announced a decision by the High Court of Appeals, in the case of one who abandoned the Catholic faith in 1870 and who married in 1879, to the effect that a man who had vowed a life of celibacy could not be released from his vow.

Yet the whole question is one of but slender practical importance. In no country is the Catholic Church subservient to the State. It controls its own sacraments, and no government is likely to venture upon interference with it in its own sphere. While therefore it may be deprived of the power to persecute and punish those of its members who enter upon civil marriage, it yet possesses the ability to deprive them of their functions, which in most cases is equivalent to depriving them of bread; and it has an unquestioned right to expel them from its communion. The priest who marries, therefore, is virtually separated from his Church and deprived of his means of livelihood—motives which, combined with the moral forces at work to keep men within the accustomed bounds, are quite sufficient to prevent defection from growing common, or to render marriage with a priest attractive to women above the lowest class. Even in the United States, where there is no legal impediment to priestly marriage, and the tone of society is such as rather to welcome those who escape from the pale of Rome, such cases are rare, although of late years they seem to be increasing. While, therefore, the civil marriage laws of Europe unquestionably loosen the ties which in this respect bind the priest to his Church, there are still sufficient material and moral forces at work to

marriage law and to withdraw matrimonial cases from ecclesiastical jurisdiction. This was one of the reforms of the minority of Ferdinand IV. about the year 1760. See Colletti's History of Naples, Horner's translation, I. 107.

prevent desertions from this cause from assuming any serious proportions.

The monastic Orders have not escaped the innovating spirit of modern times, and Catholic lands have followed, to a large extent, the example set in the sixteenth century by Henry VIII. and the German Protestant princes. The excessive multiplication of the "religious" and the enormous accumulation of property in mortmain were recognised as an evil calling for repression as soon as the old-time veneration for the Church declined in the irreverential spirit of the eighteenth century. The expulsion of the Jesuits from Portugal, France, and Spain, between 1759 and 1767, and the suppression of the Order by Clement XIV. in the bull *Dominus ac Redemptor*, 24 July, 1773, gave the impulse. The Emperor Joseph II., in a series of measures from 1772 to 1784, greatly reduced the religious Orders in his own dominions and suppressed the contemplative ones, which contributed nothing visible to the benefit of society.¹ His brother, Leopold of Tuscany, desired to abolish all the Orders and replace them with one which should serve as a retreat for pious souls, but he felt himself not strong enough, and ventured only on partial measures.² The French Revolution followed, with its decisive action of secularising all Church property by the decree of the National Assembly of 2 November, 1789, and the suppression of the Orders, 13 February, 1790. Germany yielded to the temptation, and by the *Reichsrecess* of 25 February, 1803, secularised the bishoprics and monastic foundations; everywhere but in Austria the religious houses were gradually suppressed, and their buildings

¹ Wetzer und Welte, *Encyclopädie*, VI. 1853.—Herzog, *Real Encyclopädie*, XIV. 50.

² Scaduto, *Stato e Chiesa sotto Leopolde I.* p. 296 (Firenze, 1885).

were converted into barracks, prisons, insane asylums, and the like.¹ In Spain, the Napoleonic invasion laid waste many convents, and the Cortes of Cadiz in 1813 decreed that none should be restored which had less than twelve inmates, and that there should not be more than one of each Order in any one place.² The Revolution of 1820 went further, suppressing the monastic Orders and consolidating the houses of the mendicants, all of which was revoked by the reaction of 1823.³ In the troubles following the death of Ferdinand VII. in 1833, the Regency was forced to rely on the Liberals: a policy was adopted of suppressing the religious Orders and secularising Church property, which during the ensuing fifteen years, amid various fluctuations, gradually destroyed them. The process was by no means always peaceable. In 1835 the revolutionary juntas rose against them, burning many of the houses, ejecting the inmates and slaying some of them. The decrees of 8 March, 1836, and 29 July, 1837, extinguished the convents with few exceptions; even the nuns were turned out and left to perish in misery, although the funds of their convents consisted largely of the dowers which they had brought.⁴ The Concordat of 1851, however, re-established the Orders devoted to works of charity and education; but the royal decrees issued in execution of these provisions placed them under Government supervision and subject to strict limitations,⁵ in spite of which they have flourished and multiplied largely, leading to political vicissitudes of which the end is not as yet apparent. In Portugal the process was more summary. The Emperor

¹ Wetzer und Welte, X. 1528-9.—Herzog, XIV. 52.—Brück, *Kathol. Kirche in Deutschland*, I. 3, 192.

² Lafuente, *Hist. Gen. de España*, XXV. 412.—*Collecion de los Decretas de las Cortes*, III. 211.

³ Lafuente, XXVII. 207.—Castillo y Maiyone, *Frailesmonia*, II. 236-7.

⁴ Castillo y Ayensa, *Negociaciones con Roma*, I. 120.—Vicinte de la Fuente, *Hist. Eclesiastica de España*, III. 497.

⁵ *El Concordato de 1851*, pp. 125-8, 145-6 (Madrid, 1882).

Pedro I. of Brazil, as regent for his daughter, Maria da Gloria, by decree of 15 August, 1833, suppressed the convents and the military Orders; the promised pensions of the ejected inmates were not paid, and they suffered the extremity of want.¹ When Italy ceased to be a geographical expression and was consolidated under Victor Emanuel, the law of 28 June, 1866, with its supplements of 15 August, 1867, and 19 June, 1873, completed the destruction of the religious houses, confiscated their property, and pensioned the inmates with from 144 to 600 lire per annum, according to their position. Two exceptions were made: Monte Cassino, the venerable mother of Western monachism, was spared, and provision was made for its maintenance as a national monument; while Savonarola's convent of San Marco was preserved, rather perhaps on account of its frescoes than of its associations. The process of ejection was summary. Panzini speaks with indignation of the files of soldiery sent to drive from their houses the terrified nuns, who were thrown upon a world with which they were by their training utterly unfit to cope;² and early in 1867 the journals reported that nearly all the inmates of the monasteries were dispersed, some of them returning to their families, some of them accepting refuge offered to them by the charitable, but most of them clubbing together and hiring houses in which to live as of old.

In France, under the Concordat of 1801, the re-establishment of monachism was strictly prohibited, but some organisations succeeded in forming themselves. Charitable associations of females were encouraged and flourished, while male brotherhoods which proved politically dangerous were crushed without ceremony. Even under the Restoration popular antagonism was still so strong that

¹ Wetzer und Welte, X. 1533.

² Panzini, *op. cit.* pp. 596-7.

the efforts made by Charles X., from 1825 to 1827, to introduce the Jesuits and other male Orders aroused strong opposition, and the elections of 1827 settled the question definitely in the negative.¹ The constitutional Government of Louis Philippe, from 1830 to 1848, showed itself persistently hostile ; but the Second Republic was more liberal, and the Second Empire ostentatiously sought the alliance of the Church. After the fall of Louis Napoleon, the reactionary Government of Marshal MacMahon continued this alliance, and the result was seen in the enormous growth of the regular Orders in wealth, members, and influence. This, after republicanism had been firmly established by the will of the people, became a serious menace to the tranquillity of the State, for by its vital principle monachism owes its allegiance first to the Holy See and secondarily to the land from which its members are drawn. A long struggle ensued, commencing with the Ferry laws on education in 1879—a struggle in which the expatriation of the monastic Orders became merely an incident, and culminating in the separation of Church and State. The struggle thus has assumed the wider aspect of the internecine conflict between mediæval theocracy on the one side and civil and religious liberty on the other. The issue is still undecided, and it is not for us to predict the result.

Nor has this anti-monastic movement been confined to the Old World, for the example of Europe has been followed in many of the former Spanish colonies. Paraguay led the way, in 1824, by suppressing all monasteries as useless, and Brazil, in 1829, prohibited the entrance of men devotees, thus condemning the existing institutions to gradual extinction. Mexico, by a series of laws from 1856 to 1863, suppressed the religious Orders and confis-

¹ Dutibleul, *Histoire des Corporations religieuses*, pp. 411 sqq. (Paris, 1846).—Dupin, *Droit ecclésiastique*, pp. 285–98.

cated their property. New Granada was even more prompt, by legislation commencing in 1852 and culminating in 1863. Venezuela did the same in 1874. Ecuador in 1899 secularised all ecclesiastical property, and Nicaragua is understood to be preparing for similar action.

So general a movement in both hemispheres, by nations professing Catholicism, cannot be explained simply by greed for the overgrown possessions of the Church, although that has unquestionably borne its share in tempting governments to replenish their exhausted treasuries. It is an evidence that mediæval monasticism has outlived the influences which fostered its growth to such enormous proportions, and that, whatever may have been its services of old, they no longer correspond to the wants of the present sufficiently to justify its absorption of so large a portion of the resources and productive energies of society. It further indicates the convictions of statesmen that such corporations, dissociated from their environment by the vow of celibacy, having interests distinct from those of their fellow citizens, indissolubly bound together and owing allegiance, not to their own rulers but to a foreign chief, are politically as well as economically undesirable.

It only remains for us to consider what is the present effect of celibacy on the moral condition of the Church, and whether it has succeeded, after fifteen centuries of fruitless effort, in at last obtaining a priesthood whose chastity is more than nominal. At the commencement of the struggle, the great apostle of asceticism, St. Jerome, calmed the fears of those who dreaded a diminution of population from the spread of vows of continence, by assuring them that few would be found to persevere to the end in a task so difficult as the maintenance of virginity.¹

¹ *Noli metuere ne omnes virgines fiant ; difficilis res est virginitas, et ideo rara,*

Has, then, human nature changed during the interval, and has the Church been justified in its assertion at the Council of Trent that God would not withhold the gift of chastity from those who rightly seek it, or permit us to be tempted beyond our strength?¹ It is certainly not so easy to answer this question now as we have seen it in former ages, when men were more plain-spoken and less decent, when offences against morality were committed more openly, and when they were denounced both by the Church and its enemies with a distinctness of utterance unfit for modern ears. Yet it is not impossible to find some evidence bearing on the question which may enable the impartial inquirer to arrive at a conclusion.

The Church is unquestionably violating the precept "Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God" when, in its reliance that the gift of chastity will accompany ordination, it confers the sub-diaconate at the age of twenty-two and the priesthood at twenty-five²—or even earlier by special dispensation—and then turns loose young men, at the age when the passions are the strongest, trained in the seminary and unused to female companionship, to occupy a position in which they are brought into the closest and most dangerous relations with women who regard them as beings gifted with supernatural powers and holding in their hands the keys of heaven and hell. Whatever may have been the ardour with which the vows were taken, the youth thus exposed to temptations hitherto unknown finds his virtue rudely assailed when in the confessional female lips repeat to him the story of lustful longings, and

quia difficilis. Incipere plurimorum est, perseverare paucorum.—Hieron. *adv. Jovin.* i. 36.

¹ Concil. Trident. Sess. xxiv. De Sacrament. Matrim. c. ix.

² Concil. Trident. Sess. xxiii. De Reform. c. xii. The Abbé Chavard relates (*Le Célibat des Prêtres*, p. 269) that he once asked the directors of a seminary whether the age for assuming the burdens of the priesthood ought not to be postponed to the fortieth year, and he was told that the Church must have priests, and that there were few indeed who would submit to its conditions after the age of illusions was passed.

he recognises in himself instincts and passions which are only the stronger by reason of their whilom repression. That a youthful spiritual director, before whom are thrown down all the barriers with which the prudent reserve of society surrounds the social intercourse of the sexes, should too often find that he has over-estimated his self-control, is more than probable.

This, of course, is merely *à priori* reasoning, and of itself proves nothing, except the extreme imprudence of a system which applies fire to straw and assumes that combustion will not follow. Doubtless there are cases in which the assumption is justified by the result—whole countries, indeed, where scandals are few. In Ireland, for instance, we rarely hear of immoral priests, though such cases would be relentlessly exposed by the interests adverse to Catholicism, and the proverbial chastity of the Irish women may be both a cause and a consequence of this. In the United States, also, troubles of the kind only come occasionally to public view; but here again the Church is surrounded by antagonistic Churches. At the same time it must be borne in mind that the extreme care with which the Church avoids scandal renders it impossible for one not within the pale to ascertain what may really be the relations between ecclesiastics and the female servants whom, as we shall see, they are permitted to keep in their houses.¹

¹ Possibly some insight into the moral status of the American priesthood may be obtained from the work of Father Müller, a zealous Redemptorist, which bears the approbation of Cardinal McCloskey and of the Redemptorist Superior. As regards chastity, he tells us that "God calls no man to any state or office without giving him at the same time the necessary graces" (Part II. p. 260). In spite of this he utters the warning, "The good priest should also beware lest he become too affectionate and familiar with some favourite niece or cousin, because she may easily become pitch and bird-lime" (Ibid. p. 278). One may gather from his long and fervid exhortation to beware of drink that intemperance is the besetting sin of the priesthood (Part IV. pp. 98-112), and he couples wine and women together in a manner to imply that the combination produces many blasted careers. "How many have renounced the priesthood altogether on account of women and drink? How many have apostatised and even turned preachers on account of women and

In lands where Catholicism is dominant I fear that there can be little doubt as to this, although Ernest Renan, a witness of unquestionable impartiality, whose clerical training gave him every opportunity of observation, declares emphatically that he has known no priests but good priests, and that he has never seen even the shadow of a scandal.¹ In spite of the Nicæan canon, on which the rule of celibacy has virtually rested, the Church, after a struggle of more than a thousand years, was forced to admit the "subintroducta mulier" as an inmate of the priest's domicile. The order of Nature on this point refused so obstinately to be set aside that the Council of Trent finally recognised women as a necessary evil, and only sought to regulate the necessity by forbidding those in holy orders from keeping in their houses or maintaining any relations with concubines or women liable to suspicion.² It is true that the severe virtue of St. Charles Borromeo refused to grant to a septuagenary priest a licence for more than a year for the residence of a sister equally aged, and forced him to apply annually for its renewal; it is also true that the Council of Rome, in 1725, allowed the residence of women only within the first and second degrees of kindred;³ but in modern times the Tridentine canon has been interpreted as allowing the residence of female servants or housekeepers, in view of the hardship of doing without domestics and the expense of employing men. In order

drink? How many have met an untimely end on account of women and drink?" (Part II, p. 275.) Müller's *The Catholic Priesthood*, New York, 1885.

¹ *Souvenirs d'Enfance et de Jeunesse*, Paris, 1883, p. 139. "Le fait est que ce qu'on dit des mœurs cléricales est, selon mon expérience, dénué de tout fondement. J'ai passé treize ans de ma vie entre les mains des prêtres, je n'ai pas vu l'ombre d'un scandale; je n'ai connu que de bons prêtres. La confession peut avoir, dans certains pays, de graves inconvénients. Je n'en ai pas vu une trace dans mon jeunesse ecclésiastique."

² Concil. Trident. Sess. xxv. De Reform. cap. xiv.

³ Convent. Episc. Mediolanens. ann. 1849 Sess. III. No. 18 (Collect. Lacens. VI. 717).—Concil. Roman. ann. 1725 Tit. xvi. c. iii. (ib. I. 372).

to meet the Tridentine caution to avoid suspicion, efforts have sometimes been made to define a minimum "canonical" age for these women, varying from thirty to fifty years, but usually placed at forty—a palliative which, as might be expected, accomplishes little, even when, as is not always the case, the rule is observed more scrupulously than by the device of dividing the canonical age and keeping two girls of twenty.¹ The careful provisions as to the age and character of these "Marthas," and the prohibitions of manifestations of undue familiarity with them—especially in public—are scrupulously enumerated in the latest assembly of Catholic prelates, the Plenary Council of Latin America, held in Rome in 1899.² These precautions are not uncalled for if there is truth in the state-

¹ For the varying legislation on this subject the reader may refer to C. Beneventan. ann. 1693 Tit. XVIII. c. iii. (Collect. Lacens. I. 44.)—Synod. Bahiens. ann. 1707 Ljb. III. (I. 854.)—C. Tarracon. ann. 1717 c. XXXI. (I. 779.)—C. Avenionens. ann. 1725 Tit. XXXVII. c. iii. (I. 554.)—Synod. Firmanens. ann. 1726 Tit. IX. (I. 599.)—C. Ebredunens. ann. 1727 c. v. No. 5 (I. 626.)—Synod. Nat. Hungar. ann. 1822 De Discip. renov. 3 (V. 940.)—C. Baltimor. IV. ann. 1840 Decr. X. (III. 72.)—Conv. Episc. Mediolan. ann. 1849 Sess. III. No. 18 (VI. 717.)—C. Turon. ann. 1849 Decr. XI. i. (IV. 268-9.)—C. Avenionens. ann. 1849 Tit. VI. c. v. No. 16 (IV. 348.)—C. Remens. ann. 1849 Tit. XII. c. ii. (IV. 129.)—C. Albiens. ann. 1850 Tit. I. Decr. v. No. 1 (IV. 411.)—C. Burdigal. ann. 1850 T. IV. c. xii. No. 3 (IV. 588.)—C. Bituricens. ann. 1850 Tit. VI. (IV. 1122.)—C. Tolosan. ann. 1850 Tit. IV. c. iv. No. 126 (IV. 1069.)—C. Senonens. ann. 1850 Tit. IV. c. iv. (IV. 904.)—C. Aquens. ann. 1850 Tit. v. § 2, c. ix. No. 1 (IV. 985.)—C. Rothomag. ann. 1850 Decr. XI. No. 3-5 (IV. 525.)—C. Lugdunens. ann. 1850 Decr. XVIII. No. 1-3 (IV. 475.)—Synod. Thurlesiens. ann. 1850 Decr. XVII. No. 14 (III. 785.)—Conv. Epp. Lauretan. ann. 1850 Sect. I. v. (VI. 778.)—Conv. Epp. Siciliae Tit. II. c. i. No. 9 (VI. 815.)—C. Auscitan. ann. 1851 Tit. IV. c. i. No. 147 (IV. 1200.)—C. Quebecens. I. ann. 1851 Decr. XIV. (III. 615.)—C. Westmonasteriens. I. ann. 1852 Decr. XXIV. No. 4 (III. 939.)—C. Quebecens. II. ann. 1854 Decr. XIV. No. 20 (III. 652.)—C. Armacens. ann. 1854 Decr. XXIII. (III. 852.)—C. Portus Hispaniae ann. 1854 Sect. II. No. 5 (III. 1100-1.)—C. Ravennat. ann. 1855 P. IV. c. iv. No. 3 (VI. 198.)—C. Scti. Ludovici II. ann. 1858 Decr. VII. (III. 318.)—C. Viennens. ann. 1858 Tit. v. c. vi. (V. 197.)—C. Strigonens. ann. 1858 Tit. VI. No. 9 (V. 53.)—C. Venetic. ann. 1859 P. II. c. xvii. No. 10-11 (VI. 317.)—C. Urbinatens. ann. 1859 P. II. Tit. VII. No. 148 (VI. 51.)—C. Pragens. ann. 1860 Tit. I. c. vi. No. 1 (V. 426.)—C. Coloniens. ann. 1860 Tit. II. c. xxxiv., xxxviii. (V. 378-80.)—C. Cincinnatiens. III. ann. 1861 Decr. IX. (III. 226.)—C. Coloniens. ann. 1863 Tit. IV. c. iv. (V. 670.)—C. Quitens. ann. 1869 Decr. IV. No. 2 (VI. 403.)—C. Ultrajectens. ann. 1865 Tit. VIII. c. iv. (V. 905.)—C. Pl. Baltimor. II. ann. 1866 Tit. III. c. vi. No. 164 (III. 446.)—C. Halifaxiens. ann. 1868 Decr. XVIII. (III. 751.)

² Acta et Decreta Concil. Plenar. Americae Latinae, p. 281 (Romae, 1900).

ment that statistics submitted to the council showed that in Latin America, of 18,000 priests three thousand were living in regular wedlock, four thousand in concubinage with their so-called housekeepers, and some fifteen hundred in relations more or less open with women of doubtful reputation.

Few priests, it may be assumed, have the self-denial to live without this female companionship, which is permitted by the Church as a matter of course. Indeed, the census paper officially filled in at the Vatican and returned in January 1882 stated the population of the palace to be 500, of which one-third were women. While, of course, it does not follow that the relations between these women and the grave dignitaries of the papal court may not be perfectly virtuous, still, considering the age at which ordination is permitted, it would be expecting too much of human nature to believe that, in at least a large number of cases among parish priests, the companionship is not as fertile of sin as we have seen it to be in every previous age since the ecclesiastic has been deprived of the natural institution of marriage. The "niece" or other female inmate of the parsonage throughout Catholic Europe still excites the smile of the heretic traveller, and is looked upon as a matter of course by the parishioner, while the prelates, content if open scandal be avoided, affect to regard the arrangement as harmless, knowing that it serves as a preventive of more flagrant and more public trouble, though the fact that this companionship is made the subject of discussion and regulation at virtually every council or synod or episcopal convention held by the Church shows that privately it is recognised as a necessary evil at best. Yet the old sophistry is not forgotten, which proves that such sin is less than the infraction of ecclesiastical laws. In a tract in favour of celibacy, published at Warsaw in 1801, with the extravagant laudation

of the authorities, argument is gravely made that as priestly marriage is incestuous, such adultery is vastly worse than simple licentiousness, the latter being only a lapse of the flesh, while marriage would be schism and arrogant disobedience, involving sin of a far deeper dye.¹

It would, of course, be vain to expect at the present day, from the rulers of the Church, the outspoken candour of the Middle Ages, when evils were denounced openly and in the coarsest terms. In those days councils could speak, because none but those connected with the Church were likely to be cognisant of their proceedings, while in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries the immorality of ecclesiastics was so notorious that no harm could arise from admitting it in the efforts made for its correction. In modern times, however, when an external veil of decency is to be maintained before the eyes of antagonistic critics, when scandal is of all things to be avoided, and when the proceedings of ecclesiastical bodies are carefully revised at Rome before they are allowed to become public, with the consciousness that they may be spread by the press before a world of hostile mockers, ready to jeer at the woes of the Church, only the most guarded allusions can be made to such subjects, and these only when the case is urgent.² When, therefore, we see that almost every council held in modern times has deemed it necessary to insist on the supreme importance of preserving chastity—lying, swearing, stealing, and other sins not being even alluded to; when the caution against undue familiarity with women, even devotees, is constantly urged; and when the relations between the priest and his servant are frequently indicated by directions that he

¹ *De Sacerdotum Cœlibatu Doctrina*, Varsoviæ, 1801, pp. 62-3.

² There is in Rome a standing congregation for the revision of provincial councils, consisting of twenty-five members—viz., seven cardinals, a secretary, and seventeen "consulters." It is connected with the Congregation of the Council of Trent.—Herzog's *Real Encyclopædie*, VII. 253.—Bangen, *Die Romische Curie*, p. 180 (Munster, 1854).

must not admit her to companionship at the table, or on walks and journeys, and especially in visiting fairs and merrymakings, it would be difficult not to recognise under this guarded phraseology an admission of the actual relationship existing between the good pastors and their female inmates, and a friendly warning, *si non caste saltem caute*.¹

It is not often that we can obtain an inside view of these matters, especially from a source that is at once well informed and not hostile, but such a view is afforded by an indignant remonstrance addressed, in 1832, to Monseigneur Sterckx, Archbishop of Mechlin, by the Abbé Helsen, who for twenty-five years had been a popular preacher in Brussels.² The abbé calls upon his prelate to enforce the Tridentine canon by banishing the women who are universally inmates of the houses of priests, and thus put a stop to the sin and the scandal which destroy the influence of the Church and spread immorality among the faithful. Even the bishops and dignitaries of the Church are not spared, and the archbishop himself is summoned to dismiss the "Petronilla" who had accompanied him from the curacy of Bouchout to the cathedral of Antwerp, and from Antwerp to the metropolitan See of Mechlin.³ Throughout this plain-spoken epistle the author assumes as a matter of course not only that the relations between the clergy and their servants are guilty, but that they are so recognised by every one—so notorious, indeed, as to need no proof; and as a natural consequence he regards the priesthood as a source of infection destructive to public morals. The cure is to be found in

¹ The Council of Ausch, in 1851, even ventures to allude to the grave inconveniences which may arise from the residence of a sister or aunt if young, and if there is not also the mother or a female servant in the house.

² Helsen, *Avis à l'Archevêque de Malines, Monseigneur Sterckx, sur les abus du Célibat des Prêtres*, 4to, Bruxelles, 1833.

³ Helsen, pp. 19-20.

putting a stop to these irregular unions: "If women were for ever banished from the houses of ecclesiastics vowed to celibacy, I think we should not see so great a number of prostitutes who ply their trade at night in our great cities, nor so many illegitimate children who curse their destiny as they multiply more and more around us. We ridicule the seraglio of the Grand Turk and the polygamy of the Moslem, but they too, on their side, ridicule the infinite number of strumpets with whom Christian Europe is deluged, and the custom of keeping as many concubines as can be afforded. Whence comes to us this shameful trade, so hurtful to society, which is found under our religion more than under any other? We dare not doubt that it is the result of our own misconduct; we dare not accuse only the heretics and the philosophers of modern times. No, no! the most poisonous spring is in us, among us, with us, and it will not dry up without us. Let us blush to our eye-balls; let us hide ourselves from public sight! Oh for the times and the virtues of the primitive Church! Why come ye not again?"¹ That this sort of scarcely veiled concubinage is, in fact, a fruitful source of prostitution can scarcely be doubted if, as Helsen asserts, the ordinary custom is, when one of these priest's servants becomes pregnant and cannot be saved by a prudent absence, to dismiss her and take another, perhaps younger and more attractive; and that this may occur repeatedly without the ecclesiastic being subjected to any special annoyance or supervision—unless, indeed, he is so ill-advised as to take pity on the unfortunate girl and refuse to send her away. In that case he becomes a public concubinarian, liable to the canonical penalties, with which he is sometimes disciplined. As Helsen indignantly exclaims, "Would the Mahometans tolerate such infamy in their fakirs and dervishes? The Japanese, the Chinese, the

¹ Helsen, pp. 74-5.

Hindus in their bonzes? The pagans in their Vestals? Our ancestors in their Druids? Even the Jews and Protestants have blushed for it, since they advise their Rabbis and ministers to marry rather than thus to contaminate themselves.”¹ Helsen does not fail to allude to the public familiarity of these servants with their employers—the familiarity condemned in almost the same words by many of the councils cited above—and it would seem the extreme of Pyrrhonism to doubt that almost universal concubinage is tolerated, even where on the surface there are no public scandals to attract the attention of the malicious.

There would therefore seem no reason to call in question the remarks of the Rev. William Chauncey Langdon, whose long residence in Italy as the agent of the American Episcopal Church gave him ample opportunity of observation. “I learned to regard a priest who had lived all his mature life openly and faithfully with a woman to whom of course he had not been married, by whom he had children now grown up, and for all of whom he was faithfully providing—with a relative respect as one who had greatly risen above the morality of his Church and of the society around him, and whose life really might be considered, on the dark moral background behind him, a source of relative light.”²

All this in fact may be inferred from sundry propositions presented to the Vatican Council in 1870. The Neapolitan bishops asked for legislation to check the frequency with which priests entered into civil marriage. They argued that the existing rule under which such offenders cannot be deprived until they have lain for a year under excommunication is inefficient, and that it would be much better to suspend them at once from office and benefice while

¹ Helsen, pp. 13, 16, 100.

² Report to the Italian Committee of the American Episcopal Church (*The Episcopalian*, Philadelphia, September 11, 1867).

awaiting the expiration of the year. The French bishops proposed that priests should be required to exclude women from their houses, or, if their services were indispensable, at least they should be of undoubted good repute and not less than forty years of age, except the near kindred permitted by the ancient canons. The German bishops also desired this question to be settled, and further suggested that, to avert the serious evils arising from the scandalous lives of priests, such offences as notorious fornication, manifest concubinage, drunkenness, and incorrigible prodigality he added to the legitimate causes for deprivation of benefice.¹ From all this it would appear that the old scandals still flourish, and that something more efficacious is needed than the reformatory legislation of Trent. The managers of the council were of the same mind, and prepared a constitution *De vita et honestate clericorum*, in which Chapter III. provided that a cleric living in concubinage or keeping a suspected woman in his house or elsewhere should be subjected to the Tridentine penalties, enforceable without the formalities of justice and solely on the strength of the facts; but bishops were warned that, to prevent the too facile aspersion of priests and the reproach to themselves of inconsiderate action, the evidence both of the offence and of the three warnings provided by the Council of Trent should be carefully preserved, to be used in case of appeal.²

Slender as was this provision for the cure of immedicable evils, it was not adopted. The work for which the council was assembled was accomplished, 16 July, 1870, when it accepted the *Constitutio dogmatica de Ecclesia Christi*, defining the infallibility of the Pope and his supreme jurisdiction over the whole Church. Its further existence was superfluous, and before another session was held the

¹ Concil. Collect. Lacensis. T. VII. pp. 813, 835, 873, 875.

² Ibid. p. 664.

Italian occupation of Rome, September 20, afforded an ostensible reason for its dissolution, which was effected October 20 by its suspension.¹

The fact is that if the priesthood is to be purified, some more summary process must be devised than the existing cumbrous formalities of ecclesiastical procedure. Few reforming bishops can be expected to undergo the expenses and delay incident to prosecutions, if we may judge from the recent case of Luigi Bidone, parish priest of Oliva Gessi. In 1901 he was accused before the Bishop of Tortona of keeping as a servant, with suspicion of evil relations, Angela Chiappano, a girl of twenty-two, in contravention of the synodal constitutions. The bishop ordered her dismissal, but Bidone retained her, in spite of the three successive commands, whereupon the bishop suspended him and deputed another priest to replace him. Other charges were brought against him of dissipating the parochial temporalities, and of having received 5071 lire for Masses never celebrated: the case was tried by the episcopal court, but it was not until 11 February, 1904, that he was formally deposed, nor till 17 June, 1905, that this judgment was confirmed by the Congregation of the Council of Trent.² The laws exist, as of old, and can be enforced, but more than common tenacity is requisite for their enforcement, in face of the labour involved and the dread of scandal.

It is not to be supposed that the Church suffers less than formerly from the solicitation of female penitents by confessors. Indeed, the numerous utterances on the subject during the last half-century would perhaps justify the assumption that the evil is increasing rather than that the Church is more alive to the duty of its repression, for in the forum of conscience it is not regarded as a more

¹ Concil. Collect. Lacensis. T. VII. p. 498.

² Il Consulente ecclesiastico, Ottobre 1905, 353.

heinous sin than of old. It is still not a reserved case, its commission does not incur excommunication, and absolution for it can be obtained from any confessor whom the culprit may select.¹ Even the disability to celebrate Mass, prescribed in 1745, was virtually nullified by a decision of the Congregation of the Inquisition, 18 March, 1863, that it is not *latæ sententiæ*, but *ferendæ*—that is, that it does not operate of itself, but as the result of a conviction and sentence pronounced.² As formerly, scandal is the one thing dreaded. All other considerations are of minor importance, and the subject is treated on the basis of the principle laid down by the Glossator: “Nothing is to be done that creates scandal . . . to avoid scandal the rigour of ecclesiastical law often yields.”³ To this end, the proceedings in all cases are conducted with the most impressive secrecy from the beginning to the end. When a priest obtains a delegation to receive a denunciation from an accusing penitent, which we shall see is a necessary preliminary, he is sworn in presence of his bishop to perform the duty faithfully and to observe inviolate secrecy, and this oath is taken on the gospels and not by merely touching the breast, as is customary with priests. All names are scrupulously suppressed, and what testimony is shown to the accused is to be so carefully disguised as not to give him an inkling as to the witness. All papers are to be kept by the bishop in a special cabinet to which even his vicar-general is debarred access, the accuser is kept in

¹ Il Consulente ecclesiastico, Vol. IV. p. 19 (1898).—Berardi, De Sollicitatione et Absolutione Complicis, p. 129.

This latter work, of which a second edition was issued at Faenza in 1897, shows the attention which the subject is attracting in recent times, and furnishes a contemporary view of the light in which it is regarded, with the received practice under late decisions.

² Il Consulente ecclesiastico, loc. cit. p. 20.

³ Gloss. in Cap. 5 Extra, Lib. I. Tit. xi.—Quoted approvingly by Berardi, p. 127 as also Liguori's dictum, “Superior peccata subditi sæpe potest dissimulare ad vitandas turbas et majora mala, quæ alioqui teneretur punire.”—Theol. Moral. Lib. II. Tract. iii. Cap. 2, Dub. 5, Art. 2, n. 52.

ignorance of the result, and when the case is ended it is to be buried in oblivion.¹ Under these circumstances it is impossible even to guess what may be the frequency of either the crime or its detection, but that it is kept in mind as an ever-present possibility is suggested by the recommendation that priests engaged in "missions" or revivals should always provide themselves with the necessary faculties to receive denunciations,² and by the frequent recurrence, in the councils of the nineteenth century, of injunctions that the confessions of women shall always be heard at times and in places open to public observation.³

There is the same difficulty as of old in defining the exact limits to which the confessor may go without subjecting himself to the definitions of the bulls of Gregory XV. and Benedict XIV. The licence allowed in the confessional is necessarily great, and the discretion of the confessor is a variable quantity. Even without evil intention on his part, the pure-minded penitent may be scandalised, and indecency, though perhaps not so common as in former times, would still seem to exist. We are told that some confessors are so habitually scurrilous that they forget themselves without seeking to corrupt their penitents, but the law is not simply for the punishment of guilt, but for the prevention of scandal. Yet impru-

¹ Instruct. S. Inquisit. Roman. February 20, 1867 (Collect. Concil. Lacensis. III. 553-6).—Berardi, *op. cit.*, pp. 134, 160, 223-4.

² Berardi, p. 190.

³ Concil. Baltimor. I. ann. 1829, Decr. xxv. (Collect. Lucens. III. 30-1.)—C. Baltimor. V. ann. 1843, Decr. ix. (III. 90.)—C. Australiens. I. ann. 1844, Decr. xii. (III. 1051.)—C. Thurlesens. ann. 1850, Decr. xii. 41 (III. 782.)—C. Rothomagens. ann. 1850, Decr. xvii. 3 (IV. 530.)—C. Tolosan. ann. 1850, Tit. iii. cap. 1, n. 70 (IV. 1054.)—C. Casseliens. ann. 1853 Tit. iii. (III. 837.)—C. Tuamens. ann. 1854, Decr. viii. (III. 860.)—C. Quebecens. II. ann. 1854, Decr. ix. § 7 (III. 639.)—C. Port. Hispan. ann. 1854, Art. iv. n. 1, 2 (III. 1098.)—C. Halifaxiens. I. ann. 1857, Decr. xiv. (III. 745.)—C. Viennens. ann. 1858, Tit. iii. cap. 7 (V. 169.)—C. Coloniens. ann. 1860, Tit. ii. cap. 15 (V. 351.)—C. Pragens. ann. 1860, Tit. iv. cap. 7; Tit. v. cap. 8 (V. 508, 543.)—Synod. Ultraject. ann. 1865, Tit. iv. cap. 8 (V. 830.)—C. Plenar. Baltimor. II. ann. 1866, Append. x. (III. 553.)—Concil. Plenar. Americæ Latinæ, ann. 1899, Tit. v. cap. 5, n. 549 (Romæ, 1900, p. 239).

dence is so exceedingly common and inevitable that, if it were subject to denunciation, who would venture to hear the confessions of women?¹ The discussion still goes on, as it did in the seventeenth century; there are still opposing opinions of greater or less laxity, into the details of which it is scarce worth while again to enter. We may content ourselves with the general impressions derived from the debate that the kind of talk which seems to be common between the confessor and his penitent must frequently lead to temptation difficult for average human nature to resist; that, amid the mass of conflicting opinions, the priest who avoids the grosser and more direct forms of seduction has the opportunity of attaining his object without running much risk, and that it is not the flagitious character of the act but the disrespect to the sacrament which is still the subject of repression.²

The offence thus is still technical and not moral, for the priest who learns the frailty of a penitent and visits her the next day is not subject to denunciation.³ The laxity of this strict construction is seen in the decision of a case, 6 June, 1898, in which the laundress of a priest was accustomed to confess to him. On one occasion she confessed to adultery, when he told her to wait for him in the ante-room of the monastery. There, after some talk about his clothes, he made indecent advances, and subsequently when she attended Mass he would beckon to her from his confessional and make appointments to visit her at her house, finally taking her and supporting her as his mistress. The decision by the Congregation of the Inquisition was that he was not guilty of solicitation under the bulls, for although some authorities hold that a priest is guilty who makes use of knowledge gained in the confessional, this cannot be accepted in practice, for the

¹ Berardi, pp. 28-9, 39-40.

² *Ibid.* pp. 32-43.

³ *Ibid.* p. 147.

somewhat significant reason that it would hinder the full confession of such sins because of its imposing on the penitent the obligation of denouncing the confessor who takes advantage of the knowledge.¹ Liguori lays down the rule that, where there is doubt, the confessor is not to be denounced; there must at least be moral certainty: appearances may deceive, while on the other hand solicitation may be so shrewdly disguised as to render it difficult of recognition or proof.²

When these preliminary difficulties are solved by the confessor to whom the woman reveals the fact of her having been solicited—for it is assumed that denunciations are made only under pressure of a refusal of absolution for not denouncing—the rules of procedure are not such as to facilitate conviction and punishment. In 1867 the Congregation of the Inquisition addressed all archbishops, bishops, and ordinaries, complaining that the papal constitutions on the subject were neglected, and that abuses had crept in, both as to penitents denouncing guilty confessors and as to the punishment of the latter. It therefore urged the prelates everywhere to greater vigilance and vigour, and gave a summary of the current practice of the Inquisition, which affords us an insight into the methods deemed sufficient for the repression of this persistent and perennial abuse.³ The success of the Holy See since the seventeenth century in making good its claims on the obedience of the faithful is warrant sufficient for assuming that this utterance has been accepted as authoritative, and that it has nowhere been treated with the contempt shown by France and Germany for the decrees of Gregory XV.

As formerly, the woman solicited is compelled to accuse

¹ *Il Consulente ecclesiastico*, III. 373.

² *S. Alph. le Liguori, Theol. Moral. Lib. VI. Tract. iv. n. 702.*

³ *Instruct. S. Inquisit. Roman, 20 February, 1867 (Collect. Concil. Lacens. III. 553).*

the culprit, and Pius IX. in the great bull *Apostolicæ Sedis*, 12 October, 1869, which superseded the old bulls *In Cœna Domini*, included among those subject to excommunication *latæ sententiæ* women who neglected to do so within a month after the commission of the offence.¹ It is, however, apparently impossible to induce them to do this, and it is only when they chance to confess their sin to some other confessor and are refused absolution that they are compelled to do it, although the rule is absolute that they are not to be interrogated as to consent. Strictly speaking, the denunciation should be made before a notary, but it is excessively difficult to secure this, and a special faculty must be obtained from the bishop to enable the confessor to take it. When obtained he forwards it to the bishop, keeping no copy, burning all memoranda and returning the faculty, so that all trace of the matter shall be destroyed. The denunciation is then sent to the Roman Inquisition, and its orders are awaited.²

Strict as are the injunctions to denounce, there are various ways in which they can be eluded. Dispensations relieving the penitent from the duty can be obtained from the bishop, the Inquisition, or the Papal Penitentiary. Danger to life, reputation, or property, whether of herself or her near kindred, relieves her of the obligation; even close kinship, gratitude for favours received, and friendship serve as an excuse.³ Confessors who do not admonish their penitents of this duty are liable to punishment, but they are advised to abstain from initiating inquiries about the matter; they are warned not to be over-zealous in starting denunciations without close investigation, and are told not to admonish the penitent if, on the one hand, they

¹ Acta Pii PP. IX. T. V. p. 66.

² Berardi, op. cit. pp. 85, 89-94, 224.

³ Ibid. pp. 154-7, 164, 175-8.—Consulente ecclesiastico, IV. 13-15.

Schieler, however (*Theory and Practice of the Confessional*, pp. 374-5), is much stricter as to the reasons exonerating the penitent from denunciation.

feel convinced that she will not obey, and thus incur mortal sin, or, on the other, if her character is such as to cause apprehension that she may talk about it and thus create scandal. Anything, in fact, which may lead to a knowledge of the affair is sufficient to prevent its prosecution.¹ In 1880 the Inquisition issued further instructions, saying that it often happened that denunciations contained allusions to other solicited penitents, who had not been examined, as they should have been and must be in future ; also that prosecutions frequently failed because the denunciations were not in proper form, wherefore it sent a formula to be followed in all cases. In 1897 additional instructions were issued, relative to the investigations as to the character of the accuser and accused, which were necessary as a guide in weighing the credibility of the denunciation.²

It is evident that there is no little difficulty in obtaining denunciations and in formulating them properly, but when this is accomplished the culprit is still reasonably safe, for no action is taken, except to have him watched, until three separate ones have been transmitted against him—a thing which can happen but rarely.³ When such an accumulation occurs, they are duly investigated, and if he is found guilty the only punishment indicated is deprivation of the faculty of hearing confessions, leaving to the bishop the commutation of the other penalties into spiritual exercises. In practice, however, we are told that when the offender is a parish priest he is simply forbidden to hear confessions outside of his parish, and is required to resign it within a given time.⁴ Inadequate as these

¹ Berardi, pp. 180, 182, 189.—*Consulente ecclesiastico*, IV. 13, 14, 16.

² Berardi, pp. 116, 225.

³ *Instruct. S. Roman. Inquis. ubi sup.*

⁴ *Ibid.*—Berardi, pp. 126, 128.

Schieler, however (*op. cit.* p. 375), says nothing about episcopal commutation of the other penalties prescribed in the papal briefs, which are assumed to be still in force.

provisions must seem for an offence so grievous, they can be greatly reduced by self-denunciation. One who accuses himself before any evidence has been received against him escapes with spiritual penances and the advice to avoid confessing those whom he has solicited, and it is the same if a single accusation has been sent in; if there are several accusations against him and he presents himself and confesses before the trial is ended, he obtains a mitigation of the customary sentence.¹ It would appear from all this that the active legislation on the subject of recent years is rather an indication of the prevalence of the trouble than of a sincere desire to eradicate it by measures of suitable vigour and severity.

Even the long-standing abuse of the absolution of the accomplice is still existent. Various councils in the nineteenth century felt impelled to call attention to the prohibitions uttered by Benedict XIV.,² and the Inquisition of recent years has found it necessary to issue repeated decrees on the subject. An obscure decision, 16 May, 1877, led to the assumption that the censures of the bull *Sacramentum Pœnitentiæ* could be eluded by the confessor leading his accomplice to omit allusion to their mutual sin in the confession to him in which he absolved her—either persuading her that it was no sin, or that, as it was already known to him, there was no necessity of mentioning it. To meet this the Inquisition, 19 February,

¹ *Instruct. S. Roman. Inquisit. ubi sup.*—*Cf. Benedicti PP. XIV. De Synodo Diocesana, Lib. VI. cap. xi. n. 8.*

² *Concil. Tuamens. ann. 1817, Decr. xvii. (Coll. Lacens. III. 765).*—*C. Australiens. I. ann. 1844, Decr. xiii. (III. 1052).*—*C. Remens. ann. 1857, cap. vi. n. 57 (IV. 211).*

While it is admitted that, since Benedict XIV., the jurisdiction of the seducer over the seduced is forfeited, still it revives when she is absolved of the sin by another priest; but she should be admonished not again to resort for confession to her accomplice, which assumes that he is undisturbed in the performance of his sacred duties, although his guilt has been revealed. When some too zealous dioceses adopted a rule forbidding seducers from hearing the confessions of their accomplices, the Congregation of the Council of Trent emphatically ordered it to be withdrawn.—*Schieler, op. cit. pp. 355-6.*

1896, decided that the excommunication could not be thus evaded, as it would virtually neutralise the bull. A decree of 9 November, 1898, specified certain cases in which the delinquent was excused from personal application to the Papal Penitentiary for absolution, but when, in 1899, a bishop in a foreign land asked whether this applied to one of his priests who had confessed to absolving an accomplice, but who declared that his duties and his poverty precluded him from appearing before the Penitentiary, the answer was in the negative.¹ Evidently in the struggle with human nature the Church is not wholly successful.

Perhaps its success might be greater if it exerted its powers unreservedly, but such is its dread of scandal that rather than incur the risk of publicity it prefers to shield the criminal. If the punishment cannot be secret, there must be no punishment and no admission of priestly weakness.

How powerfully and how unscrupulously its influence is exerted to this end may be judged from a few examples. In 1817, at Availles, in France, the sacristan complained to the mayor that his daughter was received every night by the curé, to the scandal of the people. The mayor thus invited entered the priest's house suddenly one night, and found the girl in *déshabille*, hidden in a corner. He drew up an official statement of the facts and forwarded it to the authorities, and the response to this was his summary dismissal from office on the ground of having violated the domicile of the curé and increased the scandal.² A case which attracted much attention at the time was that of Antoine Mingrat, who as priest of Saint-Aupe, near Grenoble, created scandal by his amours, when, in place of being punished, he was transferred to Saint-Quentin.

¹ *Consulente ecclesiastico*, I. 78 ; IV. 296.

² Bouvet, *De la Confession et du Célibat des Prêtres*, p. 516 (Paris, 1845).

Here he was attracted by a young married woman named Marie Gérin. An unsuccessful attempt upon her virtue rendered it necessary to despatch her. He choked her to death in the parsonage, and dragged the body three-quarters of a league to the Isère, where he cut off the legs and threw the fragments into the river. Suspicion pointing to him, he was about to be arrested, when he escaped across the frontier and found refuge in Savoy. Protected by a mysterious influence, he was never surrendered, although he was condemned to death *in absentia* by the court of Grenoble, 9 December, 1822, and the only result was the persecution of the family of his victim, who had dared to complain.¹ Similarly, in 1877, the Abbé Debra, condemned at Liége in default, for no fewer than thirty-two offences, was, after proper seclusion in a convent, given a parish in Luxembourg by the Bishop of Namur.² In the case of the Abbé Mallet, which occurred in 1861, the Church was unable to save the culprit from punishment, but did what it could to conceal his crimes from the faithful. As a canon of Cambrai, he seduced three young Jewish girls and procured their confinement in convents under pretext of labouring for their conversion. One of his victims lost her reason in consequence of her sufferings, and the court of Douay condemned him to six years at hard labour—a sentence which was announced by an orthodox journal thus: “M. le chanoine Mallet de Cambrai, accusé de détournement de *mineurs* pour cause de prosélytisme religieux, a été condamné à six ans de reclusion”—where the skilful use of the masculine “*mineurs*” and the characterisation of his offence as religious proselytism elevate the worst of criminals into a martyr for the faith.³ It is quite within the bounds of

¹ L'impunité de Mingrat, ou la police de Charles X., Paris, 1830.

² Wahu, op. cit. p. 423.

³ Sauvestre, op. cit. p. 144. It is by this policy that the Church renders itself responsible for the evil committed by its members. No human organisation is

probability that, as such a martyr, he may since the expiration of his sentence have been enjoying, in some cure of souls, the opportunity of repeating his missionary experiments.

It is evident from these various causes that the criminal records can give only the barest suggestion as to the extent of crimes thus committed in secret by a class shielded by influences so powerful. The records of the *ministère de la justice*, moreover, are not in France open to the public, and the only mode of obtaining even an approximate idea of the number of prosecutions in these cases is to gather them from the journals in which they chance to appear as items of news. An attempt to effect this has been made by Dr. Wahu, and though from the nature of the case necessarily imperfect, it affords some interesting and suggestive statistics. His list extends from the beginning of 1861 to April 1879, and is thus tabulated :—

1861	3 cases.
1862	2 "
1863	1 "
1864	1 "
1866	2 "
1867	3 "
1868	3 "
1869	3 "
1872	10 "
1873	6 "
1875	5 "
1876	1 "
1877	16 "
1878	35 "
1879 (January to April)	19 "

without its share of the weak or vicious, and there is no lack of scandals in the Protestant denominations; but in these there is a wholesome jealousy which usually seeks at once to cast out and punish the offender. Thus when, in July 1867, the Rev. Mr. Wendt, at an orphan institution near Philadelphia, was discovered to be tampering with the virtue of the children under his charge, those who were most nearly connected with the management of the asylum were the first to take steps for his prosecution, and, as soon as the necessary legal proceedings could be had, he was undergoing a sentence of fifteen years' solitary confinement without a voice being raised in palliation of his crime.

In all 110 cases, of which nearly one-half were brethren connected with educational institutions.

The earlier years of this list must be necessarily imperfect, and, indeed, M. Charles Sauvestre has given details of nine cases occurring in schools in 1861,¹ all which have escaped Dr. Wahu, but, even making allowance for the impossibility of hunting up all the fugitive records of the past, the increase during recent years is not to be regarded as indicating an increase of immorality. It rather proves how powerful were the forces protecting the Church and repressing publicity under the Second Empire. The absence of cases in 1870-1 is probably attributable to the preoccupations of the Franco-Prussian War and its consequent troubles. While the presidency of M. Thiers, in 1872, yielded 10 cases, the reactionary government of Marshal MacMahon showed but 12 cases in four years. After the fall of MacMahon the number rapidly increases, the first four months of 1879 affording no fewer than 19 cases. Whether since then this rate of progression has been maintained I have no means of knowing, but it is to be hoped that the breaking up of the unauthorised orders and the increased vigilance of the authorities, aided by an aroused public sentiment, have led to a decrease in the dismal record. One deplorable feature of many of these cases is the large number of victims frequently represented in a single prosecution, and that the perpetrator had often been afforded the opportunity of continuing his crimes in successive situations. Thus, in the affair of the Abbé Debra, at Liége, in 1877, there were 32 offences charged against him; and, of those occurring in the single year 1878, Frère Marien was condemned for no fewer than 299, Frère Mélisse, at Saint-Brice, for 50, Frère Climène at Candé, Mazé, and Martigné-Ferchaud, for 25, and Frère Adulphe at Guipry, Saint-Meloire-des-

¹ Op. cit. pp. 138-44.

Ondes, and Pleurtuit, for 67. It would be a libel on human nature to assert that this catalogue of sin does not represent more than an average of wickedness, and the responsibility for the existence of so shocking a condition of morality must, at least in part, be attributed to the rule of celibacy.

Irrespective of questions of morality, the rule of celibacy in modern society is harmful to the State in proportion as it contributes to the aggrandisement of those who enforce it. A sacerdotal caste, divested of the natural ties of family and of the world, with interests in many respects antagonistic to the communities in which its members reside, with aims which, from the nature of the case, must be for the temporal advancement of its class, is apt to prove a dangerous element in the body politic, and the true interests of religion as well as of humanity are almost as likely to receive injury as benefit at its hands, especially when it is armed with the measureless power of confession and absolution, and is held in strict subjection to a hierarchy. Such a caste would seem to be the inevitable consequence of compulsory celibacy in an ecclesiastical organisation such as that of the Catholic Church, and the hierarchy based upon it can scarce fail to become the enemy of human advancement, so long as the priest continues to share the imperfections of our common nature. How little the aims of that hierarchy have changed with the lapse of ages may be seen in the pretensions which it still advances, as of old, to subject the temporal sovereignty of princes and peoples to the absolute domination of the spiritual power. The temper of Innocent III. and Boniface VIII. is still the leading influence in its policy, and the opportunity alone is wanting for it to revive in the twentieth century the all-pervading tyranny which it exercised in the thirteenth. Even the

separation of Church and State is condemned as a heresy, and as the State is denied the privilege of defining the limits of its own authority, and as the right of the Church to use force is asserted, it would be difficult to set bounds to the empire which is its rightful heritage, and of which it is deprived by the irreligious tendencies of the age.¹

Yet, in spite of its reactionary efforts, and of its antagonism to the progress which has made the centuries since the Reformation the most important in the annals of civilisation, the Church has still a part to play, more or less beneficent as its rulers may be more or less sagacious. Conservatism has its uses, and mankind at large has not outgrown the necessity of the bridle as well as of the spur. There were ages in which the Church was the leader in knowledge and enlightenment; that it has become obscurantist is due to the use which it made of its leadership to so organise its temporal and spiritual domination that further development of human intelligence could only be accomplished through revolt, and it thus became the enemy in place of the friend of advancement. The policy then adopted rendered a reactionary position inevitable, because in support of its theocratic aspirations it framed a system of dogma assumed to be of divine revelation and therefore unalterable as the will of God. Entrenched behind this, it has, with varying success, defended its position for more than three centuries. From the storms of the Revolution it emerged with centralised Ultramontanism triumphant over the particularism known as Gallicanism and Jansenism—a triumph which culminated in the Council of the Vatican. This was too complete, and since then signs have not been lacking of a growing restlessness which may be provoked to schism or may be soothed by wise concessions. The spirit of the age is not

¹ Syllab. Dec. 1864, No. xix., xlii., liv., lv.

propitious for relentless discipline which will tolerate nothing but blind obedience, and the Church may find that only by yielding can it preserve its unity. The lesson of the sixteenth century should not be forgotten, when unwisdom cost it nearly half of its membership.

INDEX

- ABBEY** lands, disposition of, in Germany, ii. 63-4, 66; England, ii. 91-2, 130; Scotland, ii. 164-5; confiscated in France, ii. 306-7; Italy, ii. 337
- Abbo**, St., of Fleury, inculcates beauty of purity, i. 176; murdered by his monks, i. 177
- Abbot of Crossed Friars**, immorality of, ii. 97
- Abbot of Langdon**, immorality of, ii. 88
- Abbot of Walden**, secret marriage of, ii. 105
- Abbots, of Hungary in fifteenth century**, ii. 19; execution of English, ii. 97; parliamentary, ii. 98
- Abelard**, description of monastic life by, i. 319; marriage of, i. 324; "Sic et Non" by, i. 389; speculations addressed to Heloise by, i. 433, *note*; on abuse of confessional, i. 436, *note*
- Abingdon**, abbey of, i. 193
- Absalom of Scania**, i. 301
- Absolution**, marketable commodity in Rome, i. 443; given by "soliciting" priests to penitents, ii. 272; by "soliciting" priests forbidden by Benedict XIV., ii. 274; by "soliciting" priests forbidden in Greek Church, ii. 274; by guilty confessors denounced, ii. 273
- Abstinence (sexual) in pagan priesthood**, i. 42
- Abstinentes**, heresy of, i. 20
- Abuse of confessional** (*see* Confessional)
- Abyssinian Church**, customs of, i. 99
- Accomplice**, immunity of, i. 355, *note*
- Acephali**, vagabond monks, i. 122
- Adalbero of Metz** ordains sons of priests, i. 178
- Adam de la Halle** on Alexander IV., i. 414
- Adamites**, i. 470
- Adam of Marisco**, i. 357
- Adela of Flanders**, seeks to enforce celibacy, i. 312; miraculous cure of, ii. 23, *note*
- Adelaide of Savoy**, Damiani asks interposition of, i. 239
- Adolph of Nassau**, ii. 34, *note*
- Adrian I.** asserts morality of his clergy, i. 153
- Adrian VI.**, receives complaint, Diet of Nürnberg, ii. 34, *note*; reproaches Diet of Nürnberg, ii. 49; compares Luther to Mahomet, ii. 60
- Adulphé, Frère**, prosecuted for 67 offences, ii. 361-2
- Adultery by ecclesiastics**, Council of Mexico on, ii. 250
- Adulterous wives**, of priests to be put away, i. 27; of Calvinist ministers ii. 152
- Ælfric, St.**, of Canterbury, pastoral letter of, i. 199
- Æneas, Sylvius** (*see* Pius II.)
- Africa**, Church of, Siricius enforces celibacy on, i. 64; celibacy not openly resisted in, i. 74
- African Church**, celibacy discussed in Carthage, i. 74; Donatist monks in, i. 118, *note*
- Agapetæ**, scandals of, condemned by Council of Elvira, i. 43; Council of Ancyra in 314, i. 47; arouse St. Jerome's indignation, i. 47-8; Epiphanius testifies against, i. 48; worthy attention Nicene fathers, i. 48
- Age**, minimum, for vows, in early Church, i. 109, 116; in eighteenth century, ii. 302; for subdiaconate and priesthood, ii. 340; canonical, for women resident with priests, ii. 343
- Agen, Manichæism in 1100**, i. 244
- Agnes, Empress**, made regent, i. 224; deprived of regency, i. 235
- Agumanes, Diego de**, indecency of, in confessional, ii. 269
- Agrippa, Cornelius**, on the clergy, ii. 37; licences to sin, ii. 55, *note*; character of Roman prelates, ii. 57, *note*
- Aix la Chapelle**, Council of, in 836, i. 156; 817, i. 156, *note*
- Alain Chartier**, Archdeacon of Paris, on clerical morals, ii. 9
- Alain de l'Isle**, "Universal Doctor," on clerical morals, i. 396-7

- Alberic, Cardinal, and heretics, i. 463
 Alberic of Marsico, crimes of, i. 176
 Alberic of Ostia, legate to England, i. 341
 Albero of Liège permits priestly marriage, i. 295
 Albero of Mercke, heresy of, i. 230, *note*
 Albero of Verdun, efforts at reform by, i. 318
 Albert II. (Emperor) fines concubinary priests, ii. 12
 Albert of Bavaria, asks for clerical marriage, ii. 195; presents request to Pope, ii. 208; letter from Pius V. to, ii. 223
 Albert of Brandenburg, becomes Lutheran, i. 457, ii. 63; founds hereditary dukedom of Prussia, i. 457
 Albert, Primate of Germany, ii. 63, *note*
 Albert of Hamburg, exhorts clergy to continence, i. 211; measures of reform by, i. 221
 Albert of Mainz, addresses Frederic of Saxony on marriage, ii. 42; imprisons married priest, ii. 43
 Albert, Miguel, and Mass of immoral priest, ii. 245, *note*
 Albigenses, heresy of, i. 245; attacked by St. Bernard, i. 409; tenets of, i. 459-60
 Albin defends sacerdotal marriage, i. 51
 Alby, heresy in, i. 464
 Alcántara, Order of, i. 454
 Alcobaga, Abbot of, head of Order of St. Michael, i. 456
 Alcuin on disorders of Saxon nunneries, i. 190
 Alobert of Le Mans, shameless licentiousness of, i. 318
 Aldhelm, St., on errors of faith and discipline, i. 188
 Alemanni, unchastity of, i. 131, *note*
 Alexander II., estimate of St. Peter Damiani, i. 217; addresses Milanese on heresies, i. 253; suppresses the Liber Gomorrhianus, i. 219, *note*; enforces reform, i. 237; is discouraged, i. 241; protects the Jews, i. 242; authorises war against priestly marriage, i. 254; sends legation to Milan, i. 266; efforts in Spain by, i. 371; sends letter to William the Conqueror, i. 329; death of, i. 242; enforcement of celibacy attributed to, i. 266
 Alexander III., on married canons, i. 326; ceaselessly attempts reform in England, i. 342; strives with Barbarossa, i. 393; on dissolution of marriage, i. 396; thinks of introducing discipline of Greek Church, i. 402; on hereditary transmission of benefices, ii. 174, *note*
 Alexander IV., on licentious ecclesiastics, i. 413; on corruption of laity by priests, i. 436
 Alexander VI., character of, i. 428; grants marriage to Portuguese military Orders, i. 455
 Alexander VII., on love-letters in confession, ii. 267; on denunciation of a confessor, ii. 273
 Alfonso the Wise admits clerical celibacy not apostolic, i. 14
 Alfonso VI. (Castile) asks for a legate, i. 372
 Alfonso VIII., expedition of, to Portugal, i. 374; becomes a canon and marries following year, i. 375-6
 Alfonso I. (Portugal) founds Orders of St. Avis and St. Michael, i. 455, 456
 Alfred on chastity of nuns, i. 191
 Algiers, court of, decides on civil marriage of priests, ii. 324
 Alphonso Liguori, St., on clerical corruption, ii. 245, *note*
 Altmann of Passau, enthusiastic papalist, i. 271; renounced for piety, i. 273; expelled by Henry IV. i. 273; returns to diocese, i. 273
 Alva, Duke of, success of, ii. 73; issues commands to prelates at Utrecht, ii. 230
 Alvarez Pelayo on Spanish clergy, i. 412
 Amalfi (*see* Melfi)
 Amandus of Maestricht, i. 141, *note*
 Amandus, Bishop, papal legate to Spain, i. 371
 Amaury of Bèze, i. 469
 Ambrogio Caterino disputes with Luther, ii. 41
 Ambrose, St., admits ancient custom of non-celibacy, i. 66; synod under auspices of, condemns Jovinian, i. 69; general of Order of Camaldoli, ii. 8; succeeds in labours for celibacy, i. 81
 Ambrose, St., of Camaldoli and amorous abbot, ii. 8
 Amedeus of Savoy, ii. 27
 America (*see* United States, Canada, and Spanish Colonies)
 Ammonius Saccas and Neo-Platonic philosophy, i. 28
 Ammonius, St., triumphs over the flesh, i. 220, *note*
 Amort, Dr., on morals in eighteenth century, ii. 266
 Anabaptists, ii. 68
 Anaclet (anti-pope) enforces celibacy, i. 294
 Anastasius (Emperor), insurrection against, i. 118
 Anathema for disbelief in celibacy, ii. 204
 Ancarone, opinion of, upon concubines of priests, i. 421
 Ancyra, Council of, in 314, allows marriage of priests, i. 47; denounces agapetæ, i. 47

- Andrea of Vallombrosa on Milanese clergy, i. 247, *note*
- Andreas of Lunden on concubines, i. 231, *note*
- Andrew, Bishop of Tarentum, case of, i. 138, *note*
- Angelric, priest of Vasnaw, publicly married, i. 162
- Angers, demoralisation of clergy in, ii. 8
- Anglican bishops, marriage of, ii. 146
- Anglican clergy, restrictions on marriage of, ii. 122; flexibility of faith of, ii. 140; evil influence of marriage of, ii. 145-6; position of, according to Macaulay, ii. 149
- Anglican Church, the, ii. 77-149; Queen Elizabeth, estimate of the, ii. 141
- Anglican ritual, marriage service in, ii. 122
- Anglo-Irish Church, disorders of, i. 361
- Anglo-Saxon Church, disorders of, i. 168; celibacy enjoined in, i. 39
- Angoulême, amour of Archdeacon of, i. 325
- Anjou, Council of, in 453, i. 82
- Ann of Cleves, marriage of, ii. 115
- Annates, increase of, by Popes, ii. 33; withdrawn by Henry VIII., ii. 85
- Anse, Council of, in 990, i. 181
- Anselm, St., on sacraments of sinful priests, i. 229, *note*; reforms by, i. 331, 332; exiled, i. 334; death of, i. 337
- Anselmo di Badagio, afterwards Pope Alexander II., i. 235, 246; sent to Milan, i. 251 (*see* Alexander II.)
- Anthony, Bishop of Ephesus, crimes of, i. 90
- Anthony, Archbishop of Prague, ii. 232, 235
- Anthony, St., retires to the desert, i. 105; has many followers, i. 117
- Antichrist, anticipation of, ii. 9
- Antidicomarianitarians, heresy of, i. 68
- Antoin, married canons of, i. 326
- Antonelli, Cardinal, imprisons Panzini, ii. 326
- Antwerp, synod of, in 1610, ii. 236
- Apel, John, punished for marrying, ii. 49
- Apocalypse Golia, i. 345
- Apollinaris of Rhodéz, i. 132, *note*
- Apollo, compulsory celibacy of priestesses of, i. 43
- Apostolic canons on digami, i. 24; permit priestly marriage, i. 40, 44
- Apostolic constitutions on digami, i. 24; allow retention of wives married before ordination, i. 28; regarding widows, ii. 27
- Apostolici, heresy of, i. 105, *note*
- Apologie du Célibat Chrétien, ii. 299
- Appeals to Rome, immunity caused by, i. 158-9; effect of, i. 398; forbidden by Alexander IV., i. 414; forbidden in cases of immorality by Council of Trent, ii. 206
- Ap Rice visits monastic houses in England, ii. 87, 105
- Aquinas, St. Thomas, admits that Christ did not enforce celibacy, i. 13; on sacraments of sinful priests, i. 229, *note*; on vows, i. 396, *note*
- Arab monachism, nature of, i. 46, *note*
- Arabic version of Nicene canons, i. 111
- Aranda, Council of, in, 1473 ii. 17
- Arbuckle, Friar, disputes with Knox, ii. 167
- Archembald of Sens, evil example of, i. 175
- Archives, Spanish, researches in, ii. 249, *note*; recent access to, ii. 283
- Arechis of Beneventum, edict of, i. 143
- Aretno, abuses in Church of, i. 168
- Arfastus of Thetford, i. 329
- Arialdo, St., candidate for archbishopric, Milan, i. 246; accompanies Erlembaldo to Rome, i. 254; is excommunicated, i. 250; procures excommunication of Archbishop Guido, i. 255; put to death by satellites of Guido, i. 256; miracles at tomb of, i. 256
- Arianism, celibacy under, i. 135
- Arith, William, on abuses, ii. 155,
- Arles, Council of, in 314, i. 43, *note*; in 443, i. 82
- Armagh, hereditary Archbishops of, i. 361
- Armagnac, Cardinal of, Pius V. urges reforms on, ii. 241
- Armenia, Council of, in 1362, i. 96, *note*; hereditary priesthood in, i. 96
- Arnaldo de Peralta attempts reforms, i. 379
- Arnold of Brescia drives Eugenius III. from Rome, i. 388
- Arnolfo, a reformer, fate of, i. 424
- Arran, Regent, favours Reformation, ii. 158; power wrested from, ii. 162
- Artemis, celibate priestesses for, i. 43
- Arthur of Brittany, a canon of Tours, i. 376, *note*
- Articles, Thirty-nine, clerical marriage in, ii. 140
- Articles, Forty-two, clerical marriage in, ii. 121
- Articles, the Six, enacted by Parliament, ii. 111; heretics burned under, ii. 97, *note*; modification of, ii. 115; repeal of, ii. 117; popular call for restoration of, ii. 120; virtually revived under Mary, ii. 137; repealed under Elizabeth, ii. 137
- Arundel of Canterbury on Lollards, i. 476
- Asceticism, foreign to Hebrew tradition, i. 4; of early Christians, i. 17; of heretical sects, i. 20; stimulated by Buddhism, i. 22; growing tendency towards, i. 22; Neo-Platonism borrows

- from, i. 28; is influenced by Manichæism, i. 34; after combat, Church virtually assents to, i. 36; triumph of, is not undisturbed, i. 39-40; of pagans of the Empire, i. 42; furthered by prohibition of women as ministers, i. 56; demands artificial purity, i. 57; not yet an article of faith and discipline, i. 57; Bonosus, Jovinian, and Vigilantius, leaders against, i. 67; voluntary, in fourth century, i. 53; becomes obligatory, i. 59; voluntary in the East, i. 88-9; not adopted in Armenia, i. 96; fanciful views regarding, i. 269, *note*; gains adherents among laity, i. 287; in Irish Church, i. 184, 360; virtually ignored in Spain in twelfth century, i. 376; in middle ages, i. 431; rigid, of monk of Vallis Dei, i. 448; of military Orders, i. 451, 454; of Albigenses, i. 463; of Petrobrusians, i. 463; opposed by Brethren of the Free Spirit, i. 470; of Wickcliffe, i. 475; of Hussites, i. 479; Clement VII. on Lutheran stigmatising of, ii. 151; Hosius, Bishop of Ermeland, on, ii. 192
- Ashera, worship of, i. 4
- Assembly, National, secularises Church property, ii. 306-7; legalises clerical marriage, ii. 309
- Assermentés, ii. 308
- Assideans, i. 8
- Astorga, Bishop of, on Tridentine canons, ii. 207
- Astrolabius, son of Abelard, i. 324
- Athanasius, St., testifies to freedom of priests to marry, i. 52-3
- Athenagoras, references by, to chastity and marriage, i. 19; on second marriage, i. 23; on asceticism, i. 113
- Athravas, hereditary transmission by, i. 6
- Atto of Vercelli, on female ministrations, i. 57; on marriage of priests, i. 167
- Attys, myth of, i. 42
- Auditors, Manichæan, i. 37
- Augsburg, Council of (tenth century), i. 48, *note*; in 952, i. 171; Diet of, in 1530, ii. 64; "Confession" of, ii. 65; synod of, in 1548, ii. 187; Diet of adopts code of reformation, ii. 186
- Augsburg formula of reformation, ii. 188; formula published, ii. 191; confession of, examined by Cochläus, ii. 210, *note*
- Augustin of Canterbury and celibacy, i. 185-6
- Augustin, St., special pleading of, on Jewish priesthood, i. 5, *note*; on marriage, i. 38; promotes asceticism, i. 75; succeeds in labours for celibacy, i. 81; describes morals of wandering monks, i. 112; says that marriage of nuns is binding, i. 114; on danger arising from female residence, i. 157, *note*
- Augustin, rule of, adopted by military Orders, i. 451
- Augustinians, of Gloucester, suppression of, ii. 96; Martin Luther belongs to Order of, ii. 43, 44; of Wittenberg throw open their doors, ii. 44; enfranchise themselves at Nürnberg, ii. 51
- Aunts, residence of, forbidden for priests, i. 156
- Aurelian, St., of Arles, rule of, i. 125
- Aurelius, St., advocates celibacy, i. 74; proposes canon ordering married priests to leave wives, i. 75
- Auricular confession, commencement of, ii. 252, *note*
- Ausch, *Congrès fraternel* of, in 1793, ii. 312
- Austin Friars of Gloucester suppressed, ii. 96
- Austria, enforcement of celibacy in, i. 300; "Old Catholics" in, ii. 329; civil marriage in, ii. 330
- Autun, Prince Talleyrand Bishop of, ii. 317; marries, ii. 317
- Auvergne, Council of, in 535, i. 84, *note*
- Auxerre, Council of, in 578, i. 84, *note*; persecution of celibates in, ii. 312
- Availles, case occurring at, in 1817, ii. 358
- Avellana, monks of, i. 217
- Avesbury, nunnery of, shamelessness of abbess of, i. 343
- D'Avesnes, case of, i. 399-400
- Avignon, residence of Popes in, i. 425; scandalous morals of, i. 425; Council of, in, 1594, ii. 241
- Avila, Pedro de, ii. 214; envoy of Philip II. to Pius IV., ii. 216-17
- Avis, Order of, i. 455
- Avranche, Council of, in 1172, i. 394
- Ayenbite of Inwyt, i. 434, *note*
- BABEUS grants ecclesiastical marriage, i. 98-9
- Babueus, Patriarch of Seleucia, excommunicates Barsuma, i. 98
- Bachelors ineligible for episcopate, i. 27, *note*
- Badegisilus of Le Mans, i. 132, *note*
- Baden, priests of, petition for leave to marry, ii. 325
- Baithusin, hereditary priesthood of, i. 5
- Baldric of Dol, i. 312
- Bale, Bishop of Ossory, controversial writing of, ii. 118
- Bâle, Council of, in 1432, i. 477, *note*; Hussites reconciled at, i. 477, *note*; clerical marriage suggested at, ii. 26, canons of, affirmed in Scotland, ii. 159
- Balfour, Andrew, ii. 157
- Balsamon on legislation of Greek Church, i. 93, *note*
- Balthazar Cossa, afterwards John XXIII., i. 426
- Balthazar Sturmius, married monk, ii. 45

- Baltimore, Council of, in 1829, ii. 352
- Bamberg, troubles of, in 1431, ii. 11 ; morals of clergy in 1505 in, ii. 58, *note*
- Bandello, Bishop, on clerical immorality in Italy, ii. 57
- Bangor, morals of clergy in, ii. 105-6
- Baptism by immoral priests, i. 187, 437 ; repetition of, refused by Ecgberht, i. 187
- Baptisma igneum*, ii. 63
- Barba, Canon Miguel, superintendent of convents, ii. 286
- Barbarians, the, and the Church, i. 130-40 ; superior morality of, i. 86
- Barbarossa, strife of, with Alexander III., i. 393 ; not allowed to enter Fulda, ii. 23, *note*
- Bardsey, Culdees of, i. 367, *note*
- Bari, military Bishop of, i. 209
- Baronius on Gregory of Nazianzum, i. 53, *note*
- Barrios, Bishop of Santafé, regulations of, ii. 246
- Barry, Mr., researches of, in Spanish archives, ii. 249, *note*
- Barsuma, Metropolitan of Nisibi, i. 98
- Bartelot, John, on bribes by Abbot of Crossed Friars, ii. 97, *note*
- Bartholomew of Bracara demands reforms, ii. 198
- Barzi, Vincenzo, has light punishment for solicitation, ii. 282
- Basil, St., strict enforcement of canon by, i. 88, *note*
- Basilica of Leo the Philosopher, quoted by Photius, i. 93
- Basilides, heresy of, i. 21
- Basinus of Treves, i. 145
- Bastardy increased by enforced celibacy, ii. 347
- Bathing, promiscuous, rebuked by Cyprian, i. 31
- Baumgartner, August, speaks at Council of Trent, ii. 178, 221
- Bavaria, marriage of nuns forbidden in 772, i. 153, *note* ; demand for clerical marriage in, ii. 75, 194-6 ; rising in, to demand priestly marriage and cup for laity, ii. 201, *note* ; "Old Catholic" movement in, ii. 329
- Beards, clergy insist on wearing, ii. 281
- Beatoun, Cardinal, immorality of, ii. 157-8
- Beauvais, Massieu, Bishop of, publicly married, ii. 310
- Bede, the Venerable, on Aaron's linen breeches, i. 63, *note* ; praises St. Columba's disciples, i. 185
- Beggars' Petition, the, ii. 90
- Beggars, legislation against, under Henry VIII., ii. 94
- Beggards in Germany, i. 469 ; errors of, i. 471, *note*
- Béguines, brotherhood of, i. 469
- Belgium, Mgr. Sterckx, Archbishop of Mechlin, addressed on morals in, ii. 346
- Bellarmino, Cardinal, on story of Paphnutius, i. 51 ; far-fetched logic of, on celibacy, ii. 297
- Beltis, Babylonian, i. 4
- Benchor, monastery of, i. 360, *note*
- Benedict VIII. enforces celibacy, i. 206
- Benedict IX., scandalous life of, i. 208 ; driven out of Rome, i. 214 ; returns, and sells papal dignity, i. 214 ; reinstated as Pope, i. 218
- Benedict XIII. canonises St. Toribio of Peru, ii. 247
- Benedict XIV., bull on "solicitation" by, ii. 267, 274 ; denounces inquiry of name of partner in guilt, ii. 276 ; on civil marriage, ii. 330
- Benedict of Camin on clerical morals, ii. 19
- Benedict the Levite on residence of female relatives, i. 157, *note*
- Benedict, St., of Nursia, i. 122, *note*, 123 ; rule promulgated by, i. 124-5 ; becomes universal, i. 125 ; supplemented by Louis le Debonnaire, i. 154 ; adopted by military orders, i. 451
- Benedictine Order, saints in the, i. 126 ; contentions of, with Franciscans, i. 415 ; peaceful arts owe preservation to, i. 445
- Benefices held, by tenure of chastity, i. 382 ; bestowal of, on servants, ii. 173 ; hereditary (*see* Hereditary transmission)
- Benefit of clergy extended to concubines of priests, i. 421
- Benevento, "Madame Grand" becomes Princess of, ii. 318-19
- Benzo, Bishop, account of Hildebrand by, i. 231, *note* ; use of term "Paterini" by, i. 249, *note* ; on Nicolitism, i. 284, *note*
- Berardi, on confessional, ii. 267, *note*, 351, *note* ; on laxity in Liguori, ii. 268, *note*
- Berengaria of Barcelona, i. 376
- Berenger of Tours, on priestly marriage, i. 307
- Bernald of Constance disputes on celibacy, i. 50-1 ; disbelieves story of Paphnutius, i. 51
- Bernard, St., reforms by, i. 319 ; miracle wrought by, i. 321-2 ; on barbarism of Ireland, i. 361, *note* ; hymn by, on St. Malachi, i. 362, *note* ; on dissolution of priestly marriage, i. 389 ; on the Albigenses, i. 409 ; on Petrobusians, i. 463 ; on licentiousness of Rome, i. 430 ; on revival of Manichæism, i. 409

- Bernard of Font Cauld on Waldenses, i. 468
- Bernard of Tiron preaches reform, i. 311
- Bernhardi, Bartholomew, pastor, marriage of, ii. 42
- Bernhardus Baptisatus, ii. 4
- Beroalde de Verville, ii. 241
- Bertolf, Duke of Carinthia, has menacing letter from Pope Gregory, i. 277
- Bertrand, St., of Comminges, miracle of, i. 325
- Berytus, synod of, i. 86
- Besançon, synod of, in 1689, ii. 274
- Beth Sopherim uphold doctrine of future life, i. 8
- Beverege, John, burnt, ii. 166
- Beza, Theodore, on Anglican priestly marriage, ii. 139, *note*
- Bèze, charter to monastery of, i. 320
- Bhagavad-gita and Christianity, i. 99, *note*
- Bhikshus and Bhikshunis (Buddhist), i. 101
- Bidone, Luigi, priest of Oliva Gessi, case of, ii. 350
- Bigamy of priests in tenth century, i. 194; in eleventh century, i. 200; in twelfth century, i. 295; caused by celibacy, i. 338
- Bigorre, legalised concubinage in, i. 231, *note*
- Bilio, Cardinal, author of the *Syllabus*, ii. 328
- Bird, Bishop of Chester, repudiates wife, ii. 126, *note*
- Bisantio of Bari, i. 209
- Bishops, marriage of (*see* Marriage)
- Bishop of Le Mans son of priest, i. 241
- Bishops, to be husband of one wife, i. 26; number of digamous, i. 26, 183; retain wives, in Coptic Church, i. 100; must have witnesses to purity of living, i. 147; nominated by Merovingians, i. 132; immoral character of many, i. 133; to provide security for diocesan property, i. 137; increase of power for, i. 152; military, i. 175, *note*; debate in assembly of German, i. 178; warlike character of, in tenth century, i. 175, *note*; in eleventh century, i. 209; openly married in Rome itself, i. 210; Damiani declaims against depravity of, i. 233; disaffected at synod of Pavia, i. 259; Scandinavian, take concubines to visitations, ii. 2; ordered to eject concubines or lose preferment, ii. 6; ordered by Henry VIII. to arrest married priests, ii. 107; deprived under Edward VI. and Mary, ii. 126; under Elizabeth, ii. 126; French, ordered not to interfere with priests' marriages, ii. 314
- Bishoprics, hereditary in Brittany, i. 312; in Ireland, i. 361; created from English monasteries, ii. 99-100
- Blacater, Bishop, persecutes Lollards, ii. 155
- Blanca, Sor Antonio, illicit relations in confessional, ii. 286
- Blas Ortiz, Vicar General of Toledo, tries immoral priest, ii. 254
- Blood-letting of monks, i. 156
- Boccaccio, plain speaking of, i. 432
- Bodonus on "intention" in confessional questions, ii. 267
- Bohemia, enforcement of celibacy in, i. 293-4; Calixtins in, i. 480; Maximilian of, ii. 199, 210, 211; communion in both kinds for, ii. 212
- Bois le Duc, synod of, in 1612, ii. 237
- Boisset, Father, appeals to civil authorities for marriage, ii. 319
- Bologna, Balthazar Cossa legate in, i. 427
- Bonafede, Niccolò, Bishop of Chiusi, ii. 15
- Bonaventura, on absolution, i. 431, *note*; on abuse of confessional, i. 436, *note*; quoted by Boussard, ii. 27-8; on priests and female penitents, ii. 253
- Boniface of Canterbury, i. 353
- Boniface of Lausanne, i. 423
- Boniface, St., asceticism of, i. 142; assists Carloman to reform morals, i. 144; relations with Gervilius, i. 146; admits universal licentiousness, i. 146; advised by Pope Zachary to leave Milo to divine vengeance, i. 145; reforms Frankish clergy, i. 147; falls under sword of Frisians, i. 150; appeal of, to Cuthbert of Canterbury, i. 188
- Bonizo deposed and martyred, i. 263
- Bonn, "Old Catholic" synod of, in 1878, ii. 329
- Bonner, Bishop, deprives married priests, ii. 125, *note*; visitation of London by, ii. 126; scandals concerning, ii. 135
- Bonosiacs, i. 67
- Bonusus opposed to ascetic spirit, i. 67; denounced by Siricius, i. 67; and followers, by Council of Capua, i. 67-8; followers of, referred to in Penitential St. Columban, i. 68
- Book of Discipline, Knox, ii. 164
- Books of canon law burned by Luther, ii. 41
- Bora, Catharine von, escapes from convent of Nimptschen, ii. 50; marries Luther, ii. 51
- Bordeaux, Council of, in 1624, ii. 240
- Borgia, Roderic, character of, i. 428
- Borromeo, St. Charles of, ii. 227
- Bosnia, heretics of, i. 462, *note*
- Bossaert d'Avesnes, case of, i. 398-9
- Bossu d'Arras, Le, on Alexander IV. i. 414
- Bossuet, probable marriage of, ii. 298

- Botoa, monastery of, i. 374
 Bouhier de l'Ecluse, ii. 323, *note*
 Bourbon, Cardinal of, ii. 241
 Bourges, Council of, in 1031, i. 207; in 1528, ii. 173; in 1800, ii. 315; Torné, Bishop of, publicly married, ii. 310
 Bourne, Sir John, complains of dean and chapter, Worcester, ii. 142; quarrels with Dr. Sandys, ii. 148
 Boussard, Geoffroi, dissertation of, on priestly continence, i. 15, ii. 27
 Boyer on "droit de marquette," i. 441, *note*
 Bracton on position of concubines, i. 231, *note*
 Bracara, Archbishop of, ii. 198
 Braga, Councils of, i. 84, *note*
 Brahmanism, asceticism of, i. 7
 Branda, Cardinal, reforms of, ii. 7
 Brantôme, on shameless papal court, i. 426; on Cardinal de Châtillon, ii. 153, *note*; on morals under Catherine de Medicis, ii. 241
 Brazil, suppression of monasteries in, ii. 338
 Breclislas of Bohemia, i. 290
 Bremen, Council of, in 1266, i. 303
 Bremen, Archbishop of, receives letter from Pius IV., ii. 222, *note*
 Breslau, Council of, in 1416, i. 419; in 1580, ii. 233
 Brethren of the Free Spirit, i. 469; resuscitation of, ii. 68
 Bribes to avert suppression of monasteries, ii. 93, *note*
 Brice, St., story of, concerning paternity of child, i. 79-80
 Bridfrith, Life of St. Dunstan, i. 192, *note*
 Bristol, see of, created, ii. 100
 Britanny, Church of, i. 134, *note*; priestly marriage in, i. 312
 British clergy, corruption of, i. 183; Church, discipline of, i. 184; in ninth century, i. 198
 Brivesca, Sebastian, guilty priest, quietly sent away, ii. 216
 Brothels, kept by prelates, ii. 57; Louis XV. orders arrest of priests frequenting, ii. 303
 Brou-Laurière, M. de, case of marriage of, ii. 323
 Brixen, schismatic synod of, in 1080, i. 284
 Brück, "Kirche in Deutschland," ii. 336, *note*
 Brunhilda appeals to Gregory the Great, i. 139
 Bruno of Toul created Pope as Leo IX., i. 218
 Bruno, St., reforms by, i. 319; founds Grande Chartreuse, ii. 23, *note*
 Brunswick, chapter of, in 1476, ii. 18
 Brut y Tywysogion on married priests, i. 198
 Buccer insists on priestly marriage, ii. 72, *note*
 Buchanan, David, on Langland, ii. 78, *note*
 Buddha, reduces Sankhyism to religious system, i. 6-7; supposed virgin birth of, i. 22
 Buddhism, many observances of Latin Christianity derived from, i. 23; monastic orders of, i. 101-2
 Bulgaria, Manichæism transmitted through, i. 244, 459
 Bulgarian Church, rules for, i. 161
 Bull, Pius III., suppressed, ii. 185
 Bull, papal, Exsurge Domine, ii. 40; Injunctum nobis, ii. 131; Ad canonum, ii. 174, *note*; Quenadmordum sollicitus, ii. 229, *note*; Cum sicut nuper, ii. 258, *note*; Universi Domini Gregis, ii. 264; Sacramentum Pœnitentia, ii. 267, 275, 357; Etsi pastoralis, ii. 275, *note*; Apostolicæ sedis, ii. 277; Dominicus ac Redemptor, ii. 335; In œcna Domine, ii. 355
 Burchardi Decretorum, ii. 251, *note*
 Burchard, master of ceremonies to Alexander VI., i. 429
 Burckhardt of Worms on celibacy, i. 206
 Burdino, Maurice, anti-pope, i. 385
 Bure, Idelette de, wife of Calvin, ii. 151
 Burghley tries to restrain Queen Elizabeth, ii. 143
 Burgos, Council of, in 1080, i. 372
 Burial, Christian, denied to married priests, i. 225; to concubines, i. 380
 Burmah, number of "lamas" in, i. 103
 Burnet, Bishop, on English monasteries ii. 90, 98, 99; on date of Beggars' Petition, ii. 91, *note*; on matrimonialists under Edward VI., ii. 118; on Anglican doctrine and worship under Edward VI., ii. 121; on Articles of English Church, ii. 140, *note*
 Burning alive threatened for married priests in 1524, ii. 48
 Bussy-Rabutin, ii. 242
 Butler, John, on priestly marriage, ii. 109, *note*
 CABASSUT on apostolic canons, i. 41, *note*
 Cadalus, elected anti-pope, i. 235; party of, broken up, i. 237
 Cadam, transaction of, in 1553, ii. 69-70
 Cadiz, Cortes of, in 1813, ii. 336
 Cæsarea, synod at, i. 58
 Cæsarius, St., of Arles, on marriage of nuns, i. 123; rule of, i. 125
 Cæsarius of Heisterbach, on influence of priesthood, i. 431; on priestly "solicitation," ii. 276
 Caietano, Cardinal, at Diet of Augsburg, ii. 46
 Cain Patraic, i. 360
 Caisho, priest of, ii. 134, *note*

- Calabria, celibacy enforced in, i. 78, 395
 Calatrava, Knights of, allowed to marry, i. 454
 Calini, Archbishop, reports from Trent, ii. 202
 Calixtins, the, i. 479
 Calixtus I., Hippolytus enumerates evil ways of, i. 25
 Calixtus II., enforces celibacy in France, i. 323; scanty success of, i. 385; lines written on, i. 349; sermon of, on abuse of confessional, ii. 253; declares marriage dissolved by orders, i. 385-6
 Calixtus, work on celibacy by, ii. 300
 Calne, Council of, in 978, i. 198
 Calvi, Donato, on religious orders, i. 104-5, *note*
 Calvin, Confession of Faith, ii. 151; marriage of, ii. 151
 Calvinism, ii. 150-170
 Calvinists, marriage of, ii. 152; dispute with Lutherans and Philippists, ii. 225, *note*; marriage of Calvinist woman to priest, ii. 238
 Calvo, Fray Francisco, denounces himself for improper flagellation, ii. 279
 Camaldoli, monks of, i. 213; demoralisation of, ii. 8
 Cambrai, Manichæism at, in 1025, i. 244; man burned at, for Hildebrandine doctrine, i. 282, 312; neglects to adopt Augsburg Formulary, ii. 191; Council of, in 1300, ii. 244; 1550, ii. 191; 1565, ii. 239; 1661, ii. 273
 Camin, synod of, in 1454, ii. 20, *note*
 Campeggi, Cardinal, persecutes married priests, ii. 48; sent to Germany to check heresy, ii. 57; co-legate in Queen Katherine's divorce, ii. 83; assists in suppression of monasteries, ii. 83
 Canonical age for women resident with priests, ii. 186
 Canons, apostolical (*see* Apostolical)
 Canons, regular, institution of, i. 152; of Fécamp, expulsion of, i. 179, *note*; discussion on marriage of, i. 317; forced to cloistered life, i. 319; marriage of, in twelfth century, i. 326; hereditary in England, i. 330; replace Culdees in Scotland, i. 367; laxity of rule of, i. 375-6; demoralisation of, in fifteenth century, ii. 15; unclerical habits of German, in fourteenth century, i. 422, *note*; morals of, in Brunswick in 1476, ii. 18; Gardiner ordered to eject from Westminster, ii. 126, *note*
 Canterbury, Christ Church, in eleventh century, i. 199; number of married clergy in archdeaconry of, ii. 139, *note*
 "Capacities" given to ejected monks, ii. 93
 Capito, Wolfgang Fabricius, persecutes married priests, ii. 43; is married, ii. 48
 Caprara, Cardinal, legate, on married priests, ii. 316
 Capua, Council of, in 389, i. 68
 Caraffa, Cardinal, becomes Pope, ii. 131; head of commission for reform, ii. 133
 Cardinalate, childlessness requisite for, ii. 227
 Cardinal's College, Ipswich, Wolsey's foundation, ii. 83
 Cardinal's College, Oxford, Wolsey's foundation, ii. 82
 Carloman seeks aid of Church, i. 144; endeavours to reform Church, i. 148; enters monastery of Monte Casino, i. 151
 Carlostadt, advocates priestly marriage, ii. 43; treatise of, ii. 43
 Carolingians, the, i. 141-63
 Carmelites, miraculous scapular of, i. 415; Franciscan attacks in "Creed of Piers Ploughman," i. 439, *note*
 Carmelite convents, male and female, at Rome, with underground communication, ii. 305
 Carnarvonshire, complaint regarding priests in, ii. 16-17
 Carpocrates, heresy of, i. 20
 Carracioli, Bishop of Troyes, married, ii. 152, *note*
 Carranza, Archbishop of Toledo, on "solicitation," ii. 255
 Carterius, Bishop, case of, i. 26
 Carthage, Council of, in 348, i. 109; third and fourth Councils, in 397 and 398, i. 74; fifth Council of, in 401, i. 75
 Carthusian asceticism, i. 448
 Carthusians of London resist Henry VIII., ii. 85-6
 Cashel, Archbishop, interrogates Clement III. on children of bishops, i. 363
 Cashel, Council of, in 1171, i. 364
 Cassander, George, advocates priestly marriage, ii. 210
 Cassation, Court of, ii. 322, 324
 Cassianus, heretical views of, i. 20
 Cassianus, John, abbot of St. Victor, Marseilles, i. 122
 Cassiodorus relates story of Paphnutius, i. 52
 Caste, priestly, hereditary transmission would create, i. 347
 Castel-Fuerte, Marques del, ii. 248
 Castillo y Ayensa, ii. 336, *note*
 Castration of Galli, i. 42
 Casuistry, applied to "solicitation," ii. 263, 271; effect of, on morality, ii. 276
 Catalini, work on Congregation of Index, ii. 184, *note*
 Catarini, Cardinal, president of Consulta, on canons and discipline, Vatican Council, ii. 328
 Catarino, Ambrogio, controversy with Luther, ii. 41

- Caterina, St., de Pistoia on immorality of confessors, ii. 304
- Cathari, heresy of, i. 245, 459
- Catharine von Bora, ii. 50, 51
- Catherine de Medicis and the Council of Trent, ii. 221-2; request on priestly marriage and cup for laity, ii. 239
- Catholicism, observances of, borrowed from Buddhism, i. 23
- Catholics "Old," ii. 329
- Catholics, persecution of, in Scotland, ii. 169-70
- Caumont, case of married priest in, i. 310
- Cavour introduces civil marriage in Sardinia, ii. 330
- Cayetana de la Providencia, Sor, case of, ii. 285-6
- Céle-dé or Culdee, i. 366
- Celestin III. sends legate to Bohemia, i. 293; on hereditary transmission of benefices, i. 404
- Celestin I. (pseudo) on abuse of confessional, ii. 252
- Celibacy, argument as to early practice of, i. 12; St. Jerome admits lack of injunction for, i. 13; first command to clergy to practise, i. 59, 62; decretal of Siricius to Archb. Himerius on, i. 63; evidence that discipline of, was new, i. 65; Jovinian denies efficacy of, i. 69; decretal of Siricius opposed by Vigilantus, i. 71; decretal of Siricius made compulsory in Gaul and Spain, i. 72; progress of, not effectually resisted, i. 74; not enforced by third or fourth Council of Carthage, 74-5; Church in Gaul neglects rule of, i. 78; resisted after decretals of Siricius, i. 78; Western Church committed to, i. 81; numerous councils discuss, i. 83; in West, matter of discipline, not doctrine, i. 94; canons of Quinisext on, i. 94; laxity of practice of, i. 96; views of Abyssinian and Coptic Christians on, i. 99-100; Saxon Church regardless of, i. 203; zeal of Gregory VII. for, i. 260; attributed to Gregory I. and Gregory VII., i. 139, 266; Alexander II. and Leo IX. on, i. 266; great influence of, upon Church, i. 267; enforcement of, causes riots in Passau, i. 273; of military orders, i. 451, 454; of heretical sects, i. 459; Wickcliffe's views upon, doubtful, i. 474; attacked by John Laillier, ii. 29; Luther stigmatises rule of, ii. 41; Bernhardt stigmatises rule of, ii. 42; numerous books in sixteenth century ridicule, ii. 103; a point of faith, in Council of Paris, 1528, ii. 172; dispensations from vows of, ii. 173-4; supported by better part of clergy, Reign of Terror, ii. 313; question of, not settled by Concordat, ii. 319
- Celibates, disabilities of, removed, i. 107
- Celsus of Armagh, i. 361
- Celtic Churches, original pure simplicity of, i. 360
- Cenobites, beginning of society of, i. 105; janizaries of Cyril, i. 117
- Cent Nouvelles Nouvelles*, ii. 242, *note*
- Ceres, celibacy of priestesses of, i. 43
- Cesarini, Cardinal, refuses to dissolve Council, ii. 10
- Ceuta, hard labour in, ii. 291
- Ceylon, number of monks in, i. 103
- Chabot, M. Charles, computes number of French ecclesiastics, ii. 313, *note*
- Chalcedon, Council of, in 451, i. 118
- Chaldean and Mazdean belief in future life, i. 8
- Chalons, Council of, in 893, i. 162
- Charibert, laws of, on forcible marriage, i. 134
- Charity of monastic orders, i. 446, ii. 101
- Charity and education, Concordat of 1851 re-establishes orders devoted to, ii. 336, 337
- Charlemagne, carries out Church organization, i. 152-3; representations to Adrian I. by, i. 153
- Charles, Archduke, asks for clerical marriage, ii. 212
- Charles Borromeo, St., ii. 227; orders use of confessional box, ii. 255
- Charles-le-Chauve argues against papal pretensions, i. 159
- Charles the Lame, i. 420
- Charles Martel, oppresses the Church, i. 145; condemned to eternal torture, i. 146; tomb of, opened, i. 146
- Charles IV. (Emperor) urges reform, i. 422, *note*
- Charles V., policy of, in 1530, ii. 64; temporises with Reformation, ii. 69, 72; issues the Interim, ii. 73; demands dispensations for married priests, ii. 74; accepts Reformation, ii. 75-6; demands reassembling of Council of Trent, ii. 75; objects to transfer of Council to Bologna, ii. 74; seeks to reform German Church, ii. 179, *note*
- Charles VII. (France) fines concubinary priests, ii. 12
- Charles VIII., Neapolitan conquest by, ii. 31
- Charles IX. (France) favours clerical marriage, ii. 197
- Charles X. tries to introduce Jesuits, ii. 338
- Charles de Valois intervenes in Flanders, i. 400
- Charter House, fate of monks of, ii. 85-6
- Charter of Oswald's Law, i. 195
- Chartrier, Alain, on condition of Church, ii. 9

- Chartreuse, strictness of rule of, ii. 23, *note*
- Chassidim (Assideans of the Vulgate), i. 8
- Chastity, of barbarians praised by Salvianus, i. 131; feudal tenure by, i. 176; gift of to be obtained by seeking, i. 409; Archbishop of Trèves on, ii. 187; sacrifice of, i. 4; vows of, introduced, i. 30; perversion of vows of, i. 142-3; vow of, necessary for holy orders, i. 207
- Chastity, proverbial, of Irish women, ii. 341
- Chataigneu, Abbé, court of Angoulême on, ii. 324
- Chatelleraut, Duke of, ii. 163
- Châtillon de, Bishop of Beauvais, married, ii. 153, *note*
- Chaucer, description of priest's wife and children, i. 420; plain speaking of, i. 432; *Personne's Tale*, i. 437
- Chavard, Abbé, *Le Célibat des Prêtres*, ii. 298, *note*, 300, 309, 340, *notes*: marries at Geneva, ii. 324
- Chelsea, Council of, in 787, i. 190; canons of, i. 190
- Chepstow, Abbess of, accuses Dr. London, ii. 97
- Chereगत, legate, on priestly immunity, ii. 49, *note*
- Chertsey, reformation of monastery of, i. 195
- Chester, see of, created, ii. 100
- Chichester, Bishop of, on commission to try married bishops, ii. 125
- Chiericato and religious scandals, ii. 244
- Childebert, laws of, on forcible marriage, i. 134
- Children cause ineligibility to episcopate, i. 93; to cardinalate, ii. 227
- Children of ecclesiastics (*see also* Hereditary transmission), in tenth century, i. 165, 166, 170; Otho the Great issues edict on, i. 170; Church stripped to benefit, i. 175; Adalbero of Metz does not refuse ordination to, i. 178; disabilities of, in the eleventh century, i. 207; yet openly provided for, i. 210; considered ineligible for ordination, i. 215; admitted to holy orders by Alexander II., i. 241; Archdeacon of Salzburg bewails ordination of, i. 295; follow father's profession in Poland, i. 301; pronounced infamous, i. 303; given as hostages in Friesland, i. 304; Paschal II. addresses Anselm on, i. 335; Thibaut of Etampes on, i. 335; treated as legitimate in deed of thirteenth century, i. 354; Gwentian code on, i. 358; Archbishop of Cashel questions Clement III. on, i. 363; recognised in diocese of Salamanca, i. 379; ineligible for knighthood, i. 404; fathers not to officiate at marriage of, ii. 17; not to assist fathers in the Mass, ii. 17; dispensations for, ii. 21; taxes of penitentiary for, ii. 55; position under Edward VI., ii. 122; Queen Mary repeals Act legitimating, ii. 124; formally legitimated under Elizabeth, ii. 138; may inherit property of parents, ii. 153-4; promotion of, prohibited in Scotland, ii. 160; daughters not to be married to barons or lairds, sons not to be barons or lairds, ii. 160; dispensations for legitimation of, ii. 219; not to live with parents in Salzburg, ii. 231-2; prohibited from holding father's benefices, ii. 234; enriched with patrimony of Church, ii. 237
- China, development of Buddhism in, i. 102
- Christ College, Oxford, founded by Wolsey, ii. 82; endowed by confiscated monasteries, ii. 82
- Christian Church, puritanism of early, i. 19
- Christianity, purifying influence of, i. 441
- Chrodegang, St., of Metz, rule of, i. 152
- Chrysostom, St. John, extravagant praise of virginity, i., 90
- Church, Catholic, morals of (*see* *Morals*)
- Church, the Ante-Nicene, i. 17; the Latin, great fact in history of civilisation, i. 1; accession of property due to celibacy, i. 61; early characteristics of Greek, i. 87; severity of discipline in Latin, i. 93; independent organisation of Latin, i. 130; oppressed by Austrasian mayors of palace, i. 142; grows independent of secular control, i. 163; responsibility of, i. 442; corruption of, discussed in Vienna, ii. 193, *note*; subservient in no country to State, ii. 334; present reactionary efforts of, ii. 363; part still to be played by, ii. 363
- Church lands, fate of, in Scotland, ii. 163-4; in England, ii. 90; in France, ii. 306-7
- Churching of priests' wives forbidden, ii. 315
- Ciempozuelos, case of Sor Cayetana in, ii. 285-6
- Circilliones, vagabond monks, i. 122
- Circular discipline, ii. 289
- Cirita, Juan, case of, i. 124, *note*
- Cistercian discipline, St. Malachi initiates his attendants in, i. 362
- Cities, monks not allowed to enter, i. 119
- Citra, justiciary of, fines clerical concubines, i. 420-1

- Civil marriage, ii. 330; absolution denied to parties contracting, ii. 331; made essential by law, ii. 332
- Civilisation helped by monachism, i. 126, 445; helped by puritanism, i. 445
- Clair sur Epte, treaty of, i. 158
- Clairvaux, story of monk of, i. 321-2
- Clarembald, Abbot, evil reputation of, i. 342
- Claude of Evreux attempts reform, ii. 240
- Claude of Macon, ii. 173
- Clemanges, De, on condition of Church, i. 426, ii. 1, 4
- Clement II., appointed by Emperor Henry III., i. 214; tries to suppress simony, i. 215
- Clement III., on self-mutilation, i. 30, *note*; on children of bishops, i. 363
- Clement IV., enforces celibacy in Austria and Denmark, i. 303; bulls from, to Wolsey, ii. 82, 83, 84; on hereditary transmission, ii. 174
- Clement VIII. on jurisdiction of Spanish Inquisition, ii. 261
- Clement X., i. 415
- Clement III. (anti-pope), on concubinage, i. 284; death in 1100, i. 288
- Clement of Alexandria, on heresies, i. 20, *note*; on the Virgin, i. 67-8, *note*
- Clement, Bishop, a "pestilent heresiarch," i. 149
- Clement of Versailles, pastoral of, on priestly marriage, ii. 314
- Clement XIV. suppresses Order of Jesuits, ii. 335
- Clergy, Anglican, Macaulay's estimate of, ii. 149; French, antagonistic to Revolution, ii. 307; resistance to celibacy, i. 211, 249, 263, 270, 273
- Clermont, Councils of, in 1095 and 1130, i. 317, 387
- Cleves, Duke of, asks for priestly marriage, ii. 194
- Olimène, Frère, prosecuted for 25 offences, ii. 361
- Clotair I., law on forcible marriage, i. 134
- Clotair II. on monastic excesses, i. 128, *note*
- Clovesho, Council of, in 747, i. 189
- Cnut, ecclesiastical laws of, i. 201
- Cochin China, Apostolic Vicar of, appeals to Pius VI., ii. 275
- Cochläus, John, on Confession of Augsburg, ii. 210, *note*
- Coelestin III. on hereditary transmission, i. 404
- Coklaw, Thomas, marriage of, ii. 166
- Colet, John, good work of, in sixteenth century, ii. 78; on vices of the Church, ii. 78-9
- Colloquy of Poissy in 1561, ii. 238-9
- Colmenas, Padre, illicit relations in confessional, ii. 286
- Cologne, Manichæism in, in 1146, i. 245; Council of, in 1260, i. 418; 1306, i. 470; 1423, ii. 7; 1527, ii. 171, *note*; speech of "Orator" at Council of, ii. 171, *note*; Herman von Wied, Archbishop of, ii. 176; Archbishop of, issues Augsburg Formula, ii. 188; deplors licence of times, ii. 188
- Coloman, King, enforces celibacy in Hungary, i. 298
- Colonies, Spanish, immorality of clergy in, ii. 245, 247-8
- Columba, St., asceticism of, i. 142; rule of, i. 185; establishes Christianity in Scotland, i. 185
- Columban, St., Penitential of, i. 68
- Comedians forbidden to perform in nunneries, ii. 189
- Commendone, legate, holds out hope of clerical marriage, ii. 194; sent by Pius V. to Augsburg, ii. 218
- Commings, miracle in, i. 325
- Communion in both elements, in early Church, i. 35; refused to laity, i. 35; demanded in Bohemian Church, i. 480, ii. 212; open question at Diet of Augsburg, ii. 66; people of Merseberg demand, ii. 72; demanded by Emperor Ferdinand, ii. 193; by Duke of Bavaria, ii. 75; granted to Germany, ii. 209; withdrawn, 212
- Comparative merits of virginity and marriage, i. 37, 38, 432; ii. 204
- Comparative morality of secular and regular clergy, ii. 294
- Compiègne, marriage of priests in, i. 326
- Compostella, Council of, in 1114, i. 376
- Concordat, of 1516 with Francis I., ii. 55; 1801, ii. 316; re-establishment of monachism forbidden by, ii. 337; of 1851, ii. 336
- Concordia discordantium canonum, i. 390
- Concubinage, punishment for, under Justinian, i. 92; less objectionable than matrimony, i. 166; prohibited in Councils of Anse and Poitiers, i. 181; less odium attached to, in Middle Ages, i. 230, *note*; of escaped priest of Clairvaux, i. 321; denounced by John of Crema, himself guilty of, i. 338-9; not defended as a right in thirteenth century, i. 357; condemned under pressure in Spain, i. 378; difficulty in suppressing, i. 379; attempts to suppress, in thirteenth century, i. 380; scale of confiscation for those guilty of, i. 381; Antonio Fluviano upon, i. 456; priest practising, guilty of heresy, i. 478; curious German tract against, ii. 54; capital punishment for, changed to confiscation, ii. 115; universality of, a reason for condoning, ii. 176; clergy of Mainz, Trèves, and

- Cologne in league to defend, ii. 178 ; pronounced heretical, i. 478 ; forbidden by Augsburg code, ii. 186 ; Archbishop of Trèves, mandate against, ii. 187 ; provision against, in Council of Trent, ii. 206 ; forbidden at Utrecht, ii. 230-31 ; callousness concerning, ii. 296 ; in United States, ii. 344 ; toleration of, almost universal, ii. 348
- Concubines of clergy, in Spain, i. 136 ; to be visited with stripes and shaving, i. 171 ; openly kept by canons, St. Ursman and Antoin, i. 326 ; a bishop confesses to keeping, i. 355 ; position of, less odious in Middle Ages, i. 230, *note* ; in Scotland, i. 231, *note* ; excommunication and "burial of asses" for, i. 380 ; Cortes of Castile on shamelessness of, i. 382 ; Pedro the Cruel, orders concerning, i. 382 ; not to be kept openly, i. 411 ; Ferdinand and Isabella fine, ii. 17 ; legends concerning, i. 414 ; fined by Charles the lame, i. 420 ; *de familia clericorum*, i. 421 ; scourged in Trani, ii. 15-16
- Confessio Golæ on celibacy, i. 353, *note*
- Confession of Augsburg, ii. 65 ; refutation of, ii. 66
- Confession of Faith, Calvinistic, ii. 151, 169
- Confession, auricular, commencement of, ii. 252, *note* ; dispensation from, ii. 173-4
- Confessional, abuse of, in Middle Ages, i. 435 ; celebrants ordered to use daily, ii. 244 ; Council of Trent on, ii. 245 ; Miguel, Albert, on priest misusing, ii. 245, *note* ; scandals of, ii. 251 ; casuistry regarding solicitation in, ii. 263 ; difficult to determine limits of indecency in, ii. 268-9 ; filthy contagion spread in, ii. 269-70 ; secrets of, in Spanish archives, ii. 283
- "Confessional, Theory and Practice of the," Schieler, i. 277, *note*
- Confessional box, first evolved, ii. 255 ; to be used in all churches, ii. 256 ; priests oppose seclusion of, ii. 256
- Confessors, exempt from torture by rack, ii. 284 ; denounced, not in secret prison during trial, ii. 286 ; St. Caterina di Pistoia on immorality of, ii. 304 ; rules for, with regard to "denunciation," ii. 355-6
- Confiscation of estates of married priests, i. 92
- Congregation of the Index, Fr. Catalini on, ii. 184, *note*
- Congregation, of the Inquisition, ii. 219 ; Lords of (Scotland), ii. 168
- Conjo, convent of S. Maria in, i. 376
- Conrad, King of Lombardy, i. 260
- Conrad, legate, holds Council of Mainz, i. 418
- Conrad of Prague, the Hussite, i. 47
note
- Conrad of Wurzburg, imprisons two married canons, ii. 49 ; on immorality of clergy, ii. 58, *note*
- Consilium de emendanda ecclesia, ii. 183 ; on Index Librorum Prohibitorum, ii. 184 ; translated by Luther, ii. 184
- Constance, enforcement of celibacy in, i. 272 ; Assembly of, in 1094, i. 290 ; Œcumenical Council of, deposes John XXIII., i. 426-7 ; Council of, orders burning of Huss and Jerome of Prague, ii. 3 ; failure of Council of, ii. 5 ; marriage of clergy suggested at Council of, ii. 25 ; synod of, in 1567, ii. 58, *note* ; synod of, in 1609, ii. 236
- Constantine, assembles first General Council (of Nicæa), i. 46 ; encourages monachism, i. 107
- Constantine Copronymus persecutes monks, i. 97, *note*
- Constantine of St. Symphorian, i. 178
- Constantinople, Council of, in 381, i. 88-9 ; in 400, i. 90 ; in 680, i. 94
- Constat Venaissin, ii. 241
- Constitutions, apostolical (*see* Apostolical)
- Constitution of 1791, clerical marriage in, ii. 309
- Contarini, Cardinal, on commission for reformation, ii. 183 ; on evils of celibacy, ii. 241, *note*
- Continece overbalanced by pride, i. 19
- Continece, vows of (*see* Chastity)
- Consulento Ecclesiastico, ii. 245, *note*
- Convention, National, on bishops and priestly marriage, ii. 314
- Convents (*see* Nunneries and Monachism)
- Conventuals, ii. 21
- Converts from Catholicism, marriage of, ii. 152
- Convocation of 1536 on heresy and celibacy, ii. 106 ; of 1538 on celibacy, private Masses, and communion in one kind, ii. 109 ; of 1554 enforces celibacy, ii. 127 ; of 1557, legislation of, ii. 133
- Coptic Church, customs of, i. 99
- Cordova, Fray Francisco di, on success of Lutheranism, ii. 224
- Cormecte, Thomas, wandering preacher, ii. 25 ; burned at stake, ii. 26
- Cornelius Agrippa, ii. 37
- Cornaro, Cardinal, ii. 202
- Corruption of laity by clergy, i. 323, 370, ii. 237
- Cosmo, Bishop of Prague, i. 290
- Cosmo, Dean of Prague, married, i. 293 ; relates case of married priest, i. 293
- Cossa, Balthazar, afterwards John XXIII., i. 426
- Councils vary on canonical age for women, ii. 343

- Councils, revision of proceedings at Rome, ii. 345, *note*
- Countesses, priests' wives rank as, i. 312
- Cournaud, Abbé, proposes clerical marriage, ii. 309; marriage of, ii. 310
- Court of Augmentations, ii. 92
- Courts, mixed, for married priests, i. 308
- Coutances Cathedral, no Mass in, for seventy years, i. 158
- Cowl, Luther's wearing of, ii. 44-5
- Cows as source of ecclesiastical revenue, i. 363
- Cox, Bishop, on Queen Elizabeth's Injunctions, ii. 143
- Cozza, Cardinal, on abuse of confessional, ii. 269, *note*; on papal decrees on confessional, ii. 278
- Cranach, Lucas, present at Luther's marriage, ii. 51; portrait of Luther's bride by, ii. 52
- Cranmer, Confutation of Unwritten Verities, ii. 81; intercedes for Patmore, ii. 104; secret marriage of, ii. 105; on celibacy for ejected monks, ii. 113; second wife of, niece of Osiander, ii. 114
- Creed of Piers Ploughman, on foreign prelates, i. 354, *note*; on corruption of clergy, i. 438; on Carmelites, i. 439, *note*
- Cremona, reform of priesthood in, i. 256, *note*
- Cristofori di Vercelli, ii. 228
- Cristóval de Sepúlveda and solicitation, ii. 289
- Cromwell, Thomas, and English religious houses, ii. 87-8; exaggerated accounts of monasteries sent to, ii. 88-9; bribes tendered to, ii. 93, *note*; favours priestly marriage, ii. 105, does not enforce harshest measures, ii. 115; fall of, ii. 115
- Crossed Friars, case of abbot of, ii. 97
- Culdees, i. 366; rule of, relaxed, i. 366; disappearance of, i. 367
- Cullagium (*see* Licences)
- Cumad Espuc, virgin bishop, i. 360
- Cunegunda, St., asceticism of, i. 204, *note*
- Cunibert of Turin reproached for laxity, i. 239
- Cuno of Ratisbon, i. 215
- Curia, denounced by Cormecte, ii. 26; power of, in Germany, ii. 39
- Cuthbert of Canterbury, reforms Saxon Church, i. 188; holds Council of Clovesho, i. 189
- Cuthbert of London prohibits Beggars' Petition, ii. 91, *note*
- Cuyck, Bishop Ruremonde of, on corruptions, ii. 236
- Cynog, Book of, rules for married priests, i. 359
- Cyprian, St., rebukes promiscuous bathing, i. 31; shows consideration for human weakness, i. 32; compares virginity and marriage, i. 37
- Cyril, St., Cenobites, janizaries of, i. 117
- Cyrrillus converts Bohemia, i. 290, *note*
- DABRALIS of Spalatro degraded by Leo IX., i. 220
- Daimbert of Sens and conduct of his dignitaries, i. 317
- Dalmatia, priestly marriage in tenth century, i. 220; relaxation of canons in, i. 241; enforcement of celibacy in, i. 299; synod of, in 1199, i. 300
- Damasus I. (Pope) asserts clerical celibacy, i. 63
- Damasus II., pontificate of twenty-one days of, i. 218
- Damhouder, juriconsult of Flanders, on character of clergy, ii. 237
- Damiani, St. Peter, relates story of Alberic of Marsico, i. 176; bewails fate of responsible abbots, i. 177; goads Clement II. to efforts for reform, i. 216; story of life of, i. 216-18; essay of, paints depravity of time, i. 219; supports Alexander II. against anti-pope, i. 235; nearly loses life while on mission, i. 237; in deadly peril at Milan, i. 251
- Dampierre, Guillaume de, case of, i. 399
- Dancing mania considered due to vitiated baptism, i. 437
- Danes, effect of incursions of, i. 158
- Danes, Pierre, Bishop of Vaur, repartee of, at Council of Trent, ii. 34, *note*
- Darius, Silvester, papal collector in England, ii. 39
- Daughters (*see* Children)
- Davanzati, Bishop, favours clerical marriage, ii. 300, *note*
- Daviaux of Bordeaux forbids clerical marriage, ii. 319
- David I., reforms of, i. 367
- Deacons, allowed to marry, i. 28, ii. 121; marriage of, forbidden, i. 77, 92, 171, 299, 300, 303, 331, 394
- Deacon, case of married, left in peace, i. 327
- Deaconesses, ordination of, in early Church, i. 56; marriage of, forbidden, i. 104, *note*
- Deans of Friesland, i. 304
- Death penalty, for marrying a nun, i. 109; for seducing a nun, i. 154; for clerical marriage under Six Articles, ii. 112
- Déaz de Luzo, Bernardius, canon lawyer, ii. 176
- Débra, Abbé, case of, ii. 359; 32 offences of, in one year, ii. 361
- Decretals, false, on clerical celibacy, i. 154-5

- Decretum Gratiani, compilation of, i. 13; denies apostolic origin of celibacy, i. 13
- Defilement for Jewish priests, i. 5
- De Captivitate Babylonica Ecclesiæ, ii. 41
- De la Croix on immoral priests, ii. 311
- De Matrimonia Sacerdotum, ii. 29
- De Vanitate Scientiarum, ii. 37, *note*
- Delfino, nuncio, i. 201
- Demeter, hierophants of, maintain continence, i. 42-3
- Democratic element in Church, i. 268
- Denis, St., Council of, in 995, i. 177
- Denmark, position of concubines in, i. 231, *note*
- Denunciation, duty of, by seduced women, ii. 270, 272, 281; often slighted or disbelieved, ii. 284; decision on case of, in 1898, ii. 353
- Denunciation, self-, ii. 291, 292, 357
- Denunciations, two required for case to be heard in Italy, ii. 288; second often after delay of years, ii. 284
- Desforges, on clerical marriage, ii. 298; book of, burned, ii. 299
- Desiderius of Monte Cassino, afterwards Pope Victor III., i. 210
- Devonshire rebels demand the Six Articles, ii. 120
- Devotees allowed to return to the world, i. 30
- Diabolic possession of priests' wives, i. 280
- Diaconate, women admitted to, i. 56
- Dialogus Naturæ et Sophiæ de Castitate Clericorum, i. 440
- Diego Gelmirez, commanded to reform diocese, i. 373; reforms of, do not include celibacy, i. 374; accompanies Alfonso VIII. to Portugal, i. 374-5; experiences of, on expedition, i. 374-5; founds convent of S. Maria of Conjo, i. 376
- Diet, German, complaints of, in 1510, ii. 32
- Diet, Hungarian, in 1498, ii. 19
- Diether, Archbishop, case of, ii. 34, *note*
- Digami, subject to penance, i. 24; not admissible to holy orders, i. 25, 91, 94, 138; Eastern Church preserves early tradition concerning, i. 91; numerous in Church, i. 94; Gregory I. enforces neglected laws on, i. 138; Theodore of Canterbury, orders concerning, i. 187; prevalence of, in British Church, i. 183; condemned by Council of Spalatro, i. 170; ineligible in Anglo-Saxon Church, i. 187; recognition of, in eleventh century, i. 238; not allowed in Milan, i. 247; condemned in Hungary, i. 297; some reformers condemn, ii. 53
- Dilapidation of Church property, i. 165, ii. 71
- Dimetian Code on sons of priests, i. 358
- Dimitri of Dalmatia assumes crown, i. 299
- Dionysius of Corinth reproves attempt to make celibacy compulsory, i. 21-2
- Dionysius, King, founds Order of Jesus Christ, i. 455
- Disabilities of married priests, i. 358-9; of "soliciting" confessors nullified, ii. 351
- Dispensations, papal, evil influence of sale of, i. 397, ii. 14-15; power of, debated, ii. 27; for unchastity, i. 148; for married priests, ii. 74, 183; for concubinage, ii. 55; from vows of chastity, ii. 173-4; for marriage in England, ii. 209, *note*; for priests abusing confessional, ii. 253-4, 281-2; relieving penitents from obligation to "denounce," ii. 355
- Diversity of opinion, Act for abolishing, ii. 111
- Divorces of married priests in England, ii. 114-15, 128
- Dogma, celibacy a matter of, ii. 172
- Dolcino, leader of heretical sect, i. 471
- Döllinger and "Old Catholic" movement, ii. 329
- Dominicans, influence of, i. 467
- Donati, Girolamo, engaged to murder St. Charles Borromeo, ii. 228
- Donatist heresy, i. 118, *note*; approached by Theodore of Canterbury, i. 186-7; Nicholas II. trenches upon, i. 228, *see note*; revived by Innocent II., i. 294; condemned by Lucius III. i. 229, *note*
- Döring on sale of indulgences, ii. 14, *note*
- Dormitantius, nickname of St. Jerome for Vigilantius, i. 72
- Dorothea of Denmark, marriage of, ii. 63
- Dortmund, synod of, in 1005, i. 178
- Down, St. Malachi's episcopate of, i. 361
- Dracontius, marriage of, acknowledged by St. Athanasius, i. 53
- Dress, clerical, regulated at Constance, ii. 5
- Drogo of Terouane persecutes Brethren of Watton, i. 313
- Droit de marquette, i. 441
- Douai, Faculty of, ii. 270; Desforges' book on priestly marriage reprinted at, ii. 299
- Dualistic theory in Manichæism, i. 33; recognised in Catharan creed, i. 459
- Dublin, Council of, in 1186, i. 364; 1217, i. 365
- Dumontel, Louis Thérèse Saturnin, case of, ii. 322-3
- Dunbar, Bishop of, immorality of, ii. 157
- Dunstan, St., monastic vows of, i. 192; exacts severe penance for King Edgar, i. 193; summons Council which punishes

- unchastity, i. 196; preserved from accident at Calne Council, i. 198
- Du Pin, Louis Ellies, on clerical marriage, ii. 298
- Dupin on discipline of Orders, ii. 302, *note*; on Droit ecclésiastique, ii. 338, *note*
- Duprat, Cardinal, efforts at reform by, ii. 172
- Durand, Bishop William, advocates clerical marriage, ii. 25
- Durham, Council of, in 1220, i. 350, *note*
- Durham, Bishop of, to report on married priests, ii. 125
- EADMER** on canons enforcing celibacy, i. 334-5, *note*, 337-8
- East Anglia, defence of monasteries in, i. 197
- Eastern Church, divergence of, i. 87; rules as to celibacy, i. 91; monachism of, i. 116-17
- Easter, different computations of, i. 185, *note*
- Ebionim (or Poor Men), i. 11; honour virginity, i. 12; tainted by heresies allowing immorality, i. 21
- Ebrard, history of Watten by, i. 313, *note*
- Eccelesiastical procedure and immunity, i. 159-60
- Eccelesiastics, children of (*see* Children); immorality of (*see* Morals)
- Ecgberht (King) and St. Boniface, i. 146
- Ecgberht of York, condemns priestly irregularities, i. 187; appealed to by Bede, i. 188
- Eck, Dr. John, views of, on clerical celibacy, i. 15; confers with Melancthon, ii. 72
- Ecuador, ecclesiastical property secularised in, ii. 339
- Edgar the Pacific, remorse of, i. 192-3; St. Dunstan's condition for absolution of, i. 193; charter of "Oswald's Law" by, i. 195; purifies many religious houses, i. 195-6; restores obsolete discipline, i. 196; charter of last year of reign of, i. 196
- Edict of Faith, "solicitation" in, ii. 259, 270
- Edict of Pacification, ii. 153
- Edict of Rousillon, ii. 153
- Edinburgh, Council of, ii. 159, *note*; appoints a commission, ii. 160
- Edith, wife of Edward the Confessor, anecdote of, i. 205
- Edmund I., laws of, regarding clerical immorality, i. 191
- Education, Ferry laws on, ii. 338
- Edward and Guthrun on clerical immorality, i. 191
- Edward the Martyr supports Dunstan, i. 197
- Edward, Bishop of Scaren, i. 338
- Edward VI., robbing of monasteries under, ii. 101, *note*; succeeds to throne, ii. 116; funeral of, in Westminster Abbey, ii. 123; mortuary Mass for, in presence of Queen Mary, ii. 123
- Eggard of Sleswick, attempts to reform clergy, ii. 20; forced to abandon see, ii. 20
- Egypt, purity demanded of priests in, i. 42; neglect of celibacy in, i. 90
- Egyptian monasteries, commencement of, i. 109
- Eldora, Lorenzo de, condemned to galleys, ii. 289
- Elect, Manichaean, i. 37
- Election of Pope limited to Roman clergy, i. 235
- Eleuchadio, Abbot of Fiano, son of a priest, i. 209
- Elfhere, Ealdorman of Mercia, supports married priests, i. 197
- Elfritha, intrigues against Edward, i. 197; seeks alliance of secular clergy, i. 198
- Elizabeth, Queen, number of bishops deprived under, ii. 126; allows no innovations till Parliament assembles, ii. 136; repeals Mary's legislation, ii. 136; dislike of, for marriage of clergy, ii. 138; insolence of, to Archbishop Parker's wife, ii. 141
- Elna, Council of, in 1027, i. 370
- Elphege of Winchester and St. Dunstan, i. 192
- Elvira, Council of, in 305, on digami, i. 25
- Emanuel, King, and marriage of military orders, i. 455
- Emancipation of nuns in 1523, ii. 50
- Emancipatore Cattolica*, ii. 333
- Embden, Count of, promotes marriage of nuns, ii. 64
- Emmo of Wittewerum on priestly marriage, i. 303-4
- Empire, Roman, licentiousness under, i. 18
- Empire, Second (French), fall of, ii. 338
- Emser, Jerome, epithalamium on Luther, ii. 52, *note*
- Encomium Moræ, ii. 36-37, *note*; on first Index Expurgatorius, ii. 37, *note*
- Encrations, heresy of, i. 34
- Encyclical letters (Leo. XIII.) on civil marriage, ii. 332
- Encyclical, papal, Mirari vos, ii. 325; Qui pluribus, ii. 325
- Enforcement of celibacy, in fourth century, i. 66-86; by Gregory I. i. 138; in eighth century, i. 148; attributed to Gregory VII., i. 266; difficulties attending, i. 271-3; in twelfth century, i. 291; in Bohemia, i. 293-4; in Germany, i. 294; in Hungary, i. 297; in Poland, i. 300-1; in Sweden, i. 302; in Denmark, i. 303; in Friesland, i. 304; in

- France, 306; in Normandy, i. 308; in Flanders, i. 313; by Calixtus II. i. 323; modified by Lanfranc, i. 330; by Henry I. of England, i. 340; in Ireland, i. 364; in Scotland, i. 367-8; in Spain, delay in, i. 373; continual legislation for, i. 412; influence of, on world at large, i. 430; after Œcumenical Council, Constance, ii. 5-6; in series articles, University of Oxford, ii. 9; called "a devellishe thinge," ii. 104, *note*; maintained by Henry VIII., ii. 103; abandoned under Edward VI., ii. 117, 118; maintained under Queen Mary, ii. 134; relaxed under Queen Elizabeth, ii. 139; new ideas on, in Scotland, ii. 162; in France in sixteenth century, ii. 172
- Engelheim, synod of, in 948, i. 171
- England, Anglo-Saxon priests corrupt in, i. 183; celibacy at first enforced in, i. 186; sacerdotal marriage introduced in, i. 191; disorders of, in tenth century, i. 191; reformation attempted, i. 192; fails, i. 196; Church in, under Cnut, i. 201; position of concubines in, i. 201, *note*; Edward the Confessor, i. 203; Manichæism in twelfth century in, i. 245; papal collector in, bound by oath in 1517, ii. 39; power of Pope in, abolished by proclamation, ii. 85; visitation of monastic houses in, ii. 87; assault on monasteries, in Beggars' Petition, ii. 90; acknowledgment of papal authority a crime in, ii. 95; reconciled to Rome, ii. 129; wives of Elizabethan clergy in, ii. 145-6; marriage established by connivance rather than as a right, ii. 149
- Enham, Council of, in 1009, i. 200
- Eon de l'Etoile, i. 465
- Epaone, Council of, in 513, i. 57, *note*; 517, i. 84, *note*
- Epiphanius, on self-mortification, i. 20, *note*; on Ebionites, i. 21; declares Church based on virginity, i. 39; on agapete, i. 48; stigmatises Antidocmariantarians, i. 68; compiles "Panarium," i. 89; asceticism of, i. 89
- Episcopissa, i. 175
- Epistolæ Obscurorum Virorum, ii. 37
- Erasmus, on religious immorality, i. 444, *note*; relation of, to the Reformation, ii. 35; on purgatory, ii. 35; on indulgences, ii. 40, *note*
- Erchenbald on infanticide, i. 156
- Erfurt, synod of, in 1074, i. 274
- Eriberto of Milan, episcopate of, i. 245; reported marriage of, improbable, i. 245, *note*
- Erlinaldo, St., popular chief, at Milan, i. 246; becomes leader of Paterins, i. 254; seeks fresh cause of quarrel with Guido, i. 257; mortally wounded, i. 259
- Ermeland, synod of, in 1497, ii. 20, *note*
- Ernest of Magdeburg, cynicism of, ii. 14
- Ernest of Salzburg, ii. 190
- Erskine, Lord, refuses to sign Book of Discipline, ii. 164
- D'Espeisses, President, on Italian morals, ii. 229
- D'Espense, Claude, on perpetual virginity of the Virgin, i. 69, *note*; on clerical morality, ii. 239
- Espontaneado, or self-denunciation, ii. 291, 293
- Essenes, asceticism of, i. 9; John the Baptist belonged to, i. 10; probably James of Jerusalem belonged to, i. 10
- Ethelbald of Mercia, epistle of St. Boniface to, i. 156
- Ethelred the Unready and incursions of Danes, i. 198
- Ethelwold, St., austerity and zeal of, i. 194; legend concerning, i. 194
- Eucharist, adopted by Manes in Mazdean form, i. 35; ordeal of the, i. 356
- Eucherius, St., vision of, i. 146
- Eugenius II. on concubinage, i. 230, *note*
- Eugenius III., dissolves marriage of priests, i. 388-9; is warned by St. Bernard, i. 430; convicts Eon de l'Etoile, i. 466
- Eugenius IV. releases Order of Calatrava from obligation of celibacy, i. 454; dissolves Council of Bâle, ii. 10
- Eulalius condemns his son Eustathius, i. 58
- Euphronius of Autun, i. 82
- Euphronius of Tours, i. 132, *note*
- Euron Abbey, i. 318
- Eusebius condemns priestly marriage, i. 44
- Eustathius, Bishop, horror of priestly marriage, i. 57-8
- Eutyches, career of, i. 118
- Eutychian controversies, i. 118
- Evangelical doctor, Wickcliffe the, i. 477, *note*
- Evenus, of St. Melanias, i. 311
- Evreux, synod of, in 1576, ii. 240; Bishop Lindet of, publicly married, ii. 310
- Excalceati, heresy of, i. 20
- Exile, punishment of, for "solicitation," ii. 286, *note*, 290
- Expilly, Abbé, on number of French ecclesiastics, ii. 313, *note*
- Expulsion of monks for disobedience or discontent, i. 111
- Exuperius, St., inclined to favour Vigilantius, i. 72
- FAH-HIAN finds thousands of Buddhist monasteries in Ceylon, i. 103
- Fail, Du, ii. 241, *note*
- Faith, celibacy as a matter of, ii. 172; priestly marriage not held to be point of, ii. 140

- Faith, Edict of, ii. 259, 270
 False decretals on clerical chastity, i. 154
 Farcius of Abingdon, case of, i. 269, *note*
 Farley, Archbishop of New York, ii. 277, *note*
 Fasting in penance, i. 184; severe, for case of "solicitation," ii. 289
 Fauchet of Bayeux, ii. 314
 Faustinus on separation from wives, i. 76
 Faustus the Manichæan, i. 37
 Fécamp reformed by Richard the Fearless, i. 179, *note*
 Feini civilised, prior to times of St. Patrick, i. 360
 Felix of Nantes., story of, i. 133
 Fellows of universities, celibacy of, ii. 143
 Felony, priestly marriage is, in "Six Articles," ii. 112
 Fénelon, lofty piety of, ii. 242; on priestly "solicitation," ii. 279
 Ferdinand, Archduke, zeal of, ii. 225, *note*
 Ferdinand, Emperor, asks for cup for laity, i. 480; demands General Council, ii. 49; tolerates Protestantism, ii. 69; on German monasteries, ii. 89; on clerical immorality, ii. 178, 191-2; asks for clerical marriage, ii. 195-6; demands of, at Council of Trent, ii. 199
 Ferdinand of Aragon supports Ximenes, ii. 21
 Ferdinand IV. of Naples, reforms of, ii. 299; enacts civil marriage, ii. 333-4, *note*
 Fergusson, David, MSS. of, on Mexican clerical irregularities, ii. 254, *note*
 Ferrers, Alexander, speaks plainly of priests, ii. 156; plain speaking of, construed as heresy, ii. 157
 Ferry laws on education, ii. 338
 Ferry of Orleans, murder of, and its cause, i. 414
 Feudal system, independence of, i. 212; tenure of, by chastity, i. 176
 Fifteenth century, the, ii. 1-30
 Fiscal prosecuting officer, ii. 250
 Fischer, Frederick, punished for marrying, ii. 49
 Fish, Simon, Beggars' Petition said to be written by, ii. 91, *note*
 Fishponds, absurd stories of bodies of children in, i. 139
 Flagellantes, prosecuted by Inquisition, ii. 279
 Flagellation, opportunities given by, for indecency, ii. 273
 Flamen Dialis, second marriage forbidden to, i. 24
 Flanders, enforcement of celibacy in, i. 312; case of Bossaert d'Avesnes in, i. 398-9; character of post-Tridentine Church of, ii. 236
 Florence, synod of, in 1057, i. 224; Council of, in 1573, ii. 230; congregation of, in 1787, ii. 304
 Focaria, term of, first introduced, i. 344
 Foix, Cardinal de, papal legate, i. 384
 Fontaneto, Council of (1058), on priestly marriage, i. 250
 Fontevraud, nuns of, i. 343
 Forcheim, Diet of, in 1077, i. 282
 Formal vow dissolves marriage, i. 386, 396
 Forster, Andreas, defends celibacy, ii. 299
 Fortescue, Sir John, on case of married priest, i. 393
 Foulques of Rheims consulted on clerical marriage, i. 162
 Fox, Bishop of Winchester, ii. 81
 France, celibacy introduced in, i. 62; difficulty in enforcing celibacy in, i. 78; popular support of celibacy in, i. 79; constant efforts to enforce celibacy in, i. 83; morals of, in fifth century, i. 84; monasticism in seventh century in, i. 128; state of Church in, under Merovingians, i. 182; in eighth century, i. 143; in ninth century, i. 153; in tenth century, i. 167, 177; Council of Bourges in 1031, i. 207; of Rheims in 1049, i. 221; heresies in, of eleventh and twelfth centuries, i. 244; celibacy again enforced in, i. 306; Council of Paris, i. 307; immorality of clergy in, not exceptional, i. 412; Council of Paris (1521) describes monastic life in, ii. 89; effort of Church in, to check Lutheranism, ii. 172; willingness in, to see celibacy abolished, ii. 197; Bishop of, suggests old men for priesthood, ii. 197; depraved clerical morals in sixteenth century, ii. 241; bull on "solicitation" not accepted in, ii. 265; spasmodic attempts in, to regulate Church, ii. 302; question of priestly marriage during Revolution, ii. 301, 307; Church property in, ii. 306-7; cruelty to priests in, under Reign of Terror, ii. 308; estimates of number of ecclesiastics in, ii. 313, *note*; marriage of clergy in, under Concordat, ii. 316; Napoleon decides against priestly marriage in, ii. 320; civil marriage in, ii. 330; bishops on women residents in priests' houses in, ii. 349
 Francis Joseph, Emperor, and Leo XIII., i. 458
 Francis, St., of Assisi, on unquestioning obedience, i. 113, *note*; annual visits of, to purgatory, i. 415
 Francis I., favours League of Schmalkalden, ii. 69; Melancthon submits Articles to, ii. 70
 Francis II. marries Mary Queen of Scots, ii. 159

- Franciscan, a, turns Wickliffite, i. 438
 Franciscans, contend with Benedictines, i. 415; legends of, i. 415; Order called "Seraphic," i. 438; of Cochinchina, exemptions asked for, ii. 275
 "Fratres Fecisti," ii., 242, *note*
 Fredegonda, contentions inflamed by, i. 141
 Frederic of Lorraine becomes Pope Stephen IX., i. 225
 Frederic Barbarossa, strives with Alexander III., i. 393; visits Fulda, ii. 23, *note*
 Frederic II., on Milanese heresies, i. 249, *note*; on children of ecclesiastics, i. 399; Neapolitan code of, i. 416
 Frederic of Saxony, eludes question of clerical marriage, ii. 42; married pastor seeks preferment from, ii. 46; sponsor for Pastor Gunther's child, ii. 47
 Frederic, King of Denmark, and Albert of Brandenburg, ii. 63
 Frediswood, St., priory of, suppressed, ii. 82
 Frere, Mr., on clergy deprived under Queen Mary, ii. 128
 Fressanges, Mlle., case of, ii. 323
 Freysingen, Council of, ii. 13; Pius V. addresses abbots and priors of, ii. 58, *note*
 Friars, preaching, support Queen Katharine, ii. 84
 Fricius disputes with Orzechowski, i. 209, *note*
 Frideswide, St., treatment of remains of, ii. 132, *note*
 Fringe, John, married priest in England, case of, i. 393
 Froude, on systematic immorality of priests, ii. 16-17, *note*; on Ap Rice and Thomas Cromwell, ii. 105, *note*
 Fulbert of Chartres on military bishops, i. 175, *note*
 Fulbert of Paris and Heloise, i. 324
 Fulda, Abbey of, strict rule of, ii. 23, *note*
 Future life, doctrine of, not held by Jews, i. 4; derived from Chaldean and Mazdean sources, i. 8
- GAGARIN, Father, on "The Russian Clergy," i. 98, *note*
 Galicia, Council of, in thirteenth century, i. 377
 Gall, St., severe asceticism of, i. 141-2
 Galleys. Lorenzo de Eldora condemned to, ii. 289
 Galli, castration of, i. 42
 Gallican Church (*see* France)
 Gallicanism, Ultramontanism triumphs over, ii. 363
 Gangra, provincial Council of, i. 58
 Ganoczy, Archdeacon, Henke dedicates book to, ii. 300
- Gardiner, Bishop, celebrates mortuary mass for Edward VI., ii. 123; sits in judgment on married bishops, ii. 125; scandals concerning, ii. 135
 Garendon, monastery of, ii. 88
 Gasquet, "Henry VIII. and the English Monasteries," ii. 89, *note*; pious and laborious rehabilitation of monasteries, ii. 89; on Beggars' Petition, ii. 91, *note*
 Gaudin, Abbé, defends priestly marriage, ii. 299; represents La Vendée in Assembly ii. 310; "Avis à mon fils, âgé de sept ans," ii. 310
 Gaulo of Paris, i. 317
 Gauthier de Châtillon, i. 346
 Gauthier, St., de Pontoise, i. 307
 Gazewaska, Baroness, marries Dean Suzzinsky, who becomes "Old Catholic," ii. 329
 Gea-Eurysternus, priestesses of, to be celibate, i. 42
 Gebhardt of Constance, election of, i. 272
 Gebhardt of Eichstedt, created Pope as Victor II., i. 215; legend of miracle concerning, i. 224
 Gebhardt of Ratisbon urges claims of Archpriest Cuno, son of a priest, i. 215
 Gebhardt of Salzburg ordered to enforce celibacy, i. 269
 Geddes, Dr., on apostolic origin of celibacy, ii. 301
 Gelasius, St., Pope, on second marriages, i. 24; on marriage of nuns, 123
 Gelasius of Cyzicus on Paphnutius, i. 52
 Gemma Ecclesiastica, i. 403, 435, *note*
 Genebaldus of Laon, story of marriage and penance of, i. 132-3
 Geoffrey Boussard, tract of, i. 15, ii. 27
 Geoffrey of Chartres fails in reforms, i. 319
 Geoffrey of Llanthony, case of, i. 269, *note*
 Geoffrey of Rouen enforces celibacy, i. 323-4
 Gérard of Angoulême, i. 325
 Gérard of Florence made Pope, i. 225
 Gérard of Lorsch interrogates Leo. VII., i. 169
 Gérard of Munster assists deans of Friesland, i. 304
 Gérard of Nimeguen on clerical morality, ii. 56
 Gérard of Sabina, reforms of, i. 420
 Gerbert of Aurillac, afterwards Pope Silvester II., i. 181; pays little attention to incontinence, i. 181-2
 Germany, virtue of Teutonic tribes of, i. 86; reforms in, attempted by Carloman, i. 144; condition of Church in tenth century, i. 169; Council of Mainz in 1049, i. 220; heresies in eleventh and twelfth centuries, i.

- 244-5; enforcement of celibacy by Gregory VII. in, i. 274; princes of, intrigue against Gregory VII., i. 278; papalists in, called Paterini, i. 283; rebellion of Henry V., i. 291; supremacy of papacy established in, i. 291; Geroch of Reichersperg on heresies in, i. 392; hereditary transmission of benefices in, i. 404; children of ecclesiastics in thirteenth century, i. 416; children of ecclesiastics, testamentary provisions for, i. 418; state of monachism in fifteenth century, i. 422; Marian or Teutonic Order founded, i. 457; Waldensian heresy in, i. 460; Brethren of the Free Spirit in, i. 469; Inquisition in, i. 470; Cardinal Branda's crusade against Hussites, ii. 7; Pope's letters-patent prove depravity in, ii. 7; synod of Ermeland scandalised by immorality in, ii. 20, *note*; signs of coming Reformation in, ii. 32; Leo X. appeals for tithe for war from, ii. 38; reformed doctrines take hold of, ii. 58; contest of two parties at Augsburg, ii. 64-5; Confession of Augsburg, ii. 65; Anabaptists in, ii. 68; negotiations with Henry VIII., ii. 109; suggestions to leave with Pope decision of question of marriage, ii. 110; Lutherans not connected with Council of Trent, ii. 180; Lutheranism under heel of Charles V., ii. 181; scarcity of priests in, ii. 197, *note*; ill fitted to deal with Italy in diplomacy, ii. 202; Lutherans triumphant on accession of Pius V., ii. 218; Francisco di Cordova on successful Lutheranism, ii. 224; bull on "solicitation" not published in, ii. 265; "Old Catholic" movement in, ii. 329; bishoprics and monastic foundations secularised, ii. 335; exclusion of women from priests' houses proposed in, ii. 349
- Geroch of Reichersperg, on sacraments of sinful priests, i. 229, *note*; on Nicolitan and Simoniacal heretics, i. 392
- Geronda, Council of, in 517, i. 84, *note*; 1068, i. 371; 1078, i. 371, 1257, i. 380
- Gerónimo de Mendieta, ii. 248
- Gerson, on introduction of celibacy, i. 14, 440; on abuse of confessional, i. 436, *note*; stigmatises nunneries, ii. 1; on concubinage, ii. 2; answers Zabarella, ii. 25
- Geruntius (King) addressed by St. Aldhelm, i. 188
- Gervilius of Mainz and St. Boniface, i. 146
- Gervinus of St. Riquier, anecdote of, i. 205
- Ghaerbald of Liège, canons of, i. 153
- Gherardo Segarelli, heresiarch, i. 471; burned in 1300, i. 471
- Ghiberti, Matteo, reforming Bishop of Verona, ii. 264
- Gieus, Li, de Robin et de Marion, i. 438, *note*
- Gilbert, Bishop, papal legate in Ireland, i. 361
- Gilbert of Chichester on abuse of confessional, i. 435, *note*
- Gilbert, de la Porrée, teaching of, condemned, i. 388
- Gildas describes British clergy as corrupt, i. 183
- Giles Cantor, heresy of, i. 470
- Giovanni Gauberto, St., life of, as anchorite, i. 213
- Giraldus Cambrensis, on apostolic warrant for celibacy, i. 14; Gemma Ecclesiastica by, i. 220, *note*; dispute over election to St. David's, i. 344; death, about 1220, i. 347; comments on Church matters in Wales, i. 358; exhortations in Gemma Ecclesiastica, i. 403
- Giuliano Cesarini, Cardinal, ii, 10
- Glastonbury, abbey of, i. 193
- Glossator, the, on scandal, ii. 351
- Gloucester, Augustinians of, suppressed, ii. 96; see of, created, ii. 100
- Gnesen, clerical marriage in, i. 301; synod of, in 1577, ii. 233
- Gnostics, heresy of, i. 20
- Gobat, Father, on papal decrees, ii. 266
- Gobel, Bishop of Paris, favours priestly marriage, ii. 314; opposed by Grégoire of Blois, ii. 320-1, *note*
- Godsons of bishops, wer-gild for, i. 186
- Godstow, last of English abbeys, ii. 99
- Golias Episcopus, i. 339, *note*
- Gomorrhians, Liber, i. 219, *note*
- González, Fray Vicente, accused by nun, ii. 269
- González, Gerónimo, case of solicitation by, ii. 291
- Goodacre, Anne, ii. 170
- Gostar, Manichæism at, in 1052, i. 244
- Gotefrido, Archbishop of Milan, i. 257; defence against Erlembardo, i. 258
- Gotfrid of Wurzburg, will of, i. 418
- Goths, Spanish, immorality of, i. 135
- Grace Dieu, monastery of, ii. 88
- Grace, Pilgrimage of, ii. 94
- Graffus on abuse of confessional, ii. 252
- Gran, synod of, in 1099, by Primate Seraphin, i. 297; in 1450 and 1480, ii. 19
- Granada, New, suppression of monasteries in, ii. 339
- Granada, Pedro Guerrero, reforming Archbishop of, ii. 257
- Grand, Madame, and Talleyrand, ii. 318
- Grandier, Urbain, on priestly marriage, ii. 297, *note*; tried for sorcery, ii. 297, *note*

- Gratian, on celibacy, i. 13 ; on dissolution of priestly marriage, i. 390-1
- Gratian, Archbishop of Rouen, on priestly marriage, ii. 314
- Greek Church, characteristics lead to schism, i. 87-8 ; rules as to celibacy, i. 88 ; residence of suspected women forbidden in, i. 97 ; Swedes regarded as schismatics of, i. 302 ; efforts of Council of Lyons to reunite, i. 407 ; Stanislas Hosius of Ermeland on customs of, ii. 192
- Grégoire of Blois, on repudiated clergy, ii. 315 ; "Histoire du mariage des Prêtres en France," ii. 320, *note* ; opposes Gobel, ii. 321, *note*
- Gregory, St. Theologus, Bishop Nazianzum, i. 53 ; son of a married ecclesiastic, i. 53
- Gregory the Great, declaration on monastic life and marriage, i. 39 ; monastic reforms by, i. 126-7 ; statesmanship of, i. 137 ; enforcement of celibacy by, i. 138 ; conversion of England, i. 185, 186 ; story related by, i. 434, *note*
- Gregory II., condemns marriages of nuns, i. 142 ; appealed to by St. Boniface, i. 143
- Gregory VI., miracle at death causes papal funeral honours, i. 219, *note*
- Gregory VII., discredits story of Paphnutius, i. 51 ; causes its condemnation at Roman synod, i. 51 ; refuses ordination to illegitimates, i. 242, *note* ; excommunicated by disaffected bishops, i. 259 ; urges Erlombaldo to persevere, i. 260 ; early life of, i. 264 ; wild dreams of ecclesiastical supremacy, i. 264 ; persistent advocate of celibacy, i. 267 ; stories of, i. 263-9 ; renews legislation of Nicholas II., i. 269 ; enforces celibacy on Siegfried of Mainz, i. 275 ; authorises laity to disown incontinent priests, i. 276-7 ; opposed by German princes, i. 278 ; called "præceptor impossibilium," i. 296
- Gregory VIII. prevents abolition of celibacy, ii. 402
- Gregory IX. and Swedish priests, i. 302
- Gregory X. on corrupting influence of prelates, i. 436
- Gregory XIII. complains of marriage of priests, ii. 231 ; savage decrees on false confessors, ii. 256
- Gregory XV. on abuse of confessional, ii. 264 ; bull of Benedict XIV., copies definitions of, ii. 267
- Gregory XVI., encyclical, "Mirari vos," on priestly marriage, ii. 325
- Gregory, St., of Nazianzum on priestly marriage, i. 53
- Gregory of Tours, on nomination of bishops, i. 132, *note* ; on enforcement of celibacy, i. 134, *note*
- Gregory of Vercelli convicted of incest, i. 222
- Greyfriars of Perth, Knox reports as luxurious, ii. 165
- Grillandus, Papal Vicar, Rome, reports case, ii. 58-9
- Grindal, Archbishop, Elizabeth's dislike of sermons expressed to, ii. 141, *note* ; on residence of women with clergy, ii. 145 ; on position of married clergy, ii. 147
- Grosseteste, Robert, of Lincoln, supports regularity, while opposing papal encroachment, i. 356 ; inveighs against corruption of papal court, i. 425
- Guala, Cardinal, constitutions of, i. 410
- Guarino of Modena requires oath of chastity, i. 176
- Guastalla, Council of, in 1106, i. 292
- Guerrero, Pedro, reforming Bishop of Granada, ii. 257
- Guibert de Nogent, case of, i. 316
- Guibert of Ravenna, on concubinage, i. 284 ; driven out of Rome, i. 285
- Guido, Cardinal, enforces celibacy in Austria, i. 300 ; in Denmark, i. 303
- Guido di Valate, made Archbishop of Milan, i. 246 ; swears to destroy Simoniacal heresy, i. 252 ; imposes penitence on himself, i. 252 ; is excommunicated, i. 255 ; expelled from Milan, i. 256 ; resigns archbishopric, i. 257
- Guilielmus Appulus on Nicholas II., i. 232, *note*
- Gunther, Pastor, Elector Frederic sponsor for child of, ii. 47
- Gunzo Grammaticus, i. 169, *note*
- Guthrun on clerical immorality, i. 191
- HAARLEM, synod of, in 1564, ii. 231, *note*
- Habit, monastic, efficacy of, i. 415
- Hainscheidt, ancient monastery of, ii. 64
- Hali Meidenhad, i. 348, *note*
- Hamburg, reforms at, i. 221 ; Council of, in 1406, i. 415, *note*
- Hamerer, Dr., on clerical corruption, ii. 236
- Hamilton, Patrick, Scottish proto-martyr, ii. 162, *note*
- Hamilton, Catherine, escape of, i. 162, *note*
- Hamilton, Archbishop, licentiousness of, ii. 158
- Hanno of Cologne earns canonisation, i. 237
- Hardouin of Anger condemns clerical immorality, ii. 8
- Heads of colleges, position of wives of, ii. 146
- Heisterbach, Cæsarius of, on influence of priesthood, i. 431 ; on priestly "solicitation," ii. 276

- Helena, Queen of Adiabene, Nazirate vow of, i. 6
- Heliodorus of Trica, rigorous asceticism of, i. 91
- Helisacar, Abbot, ii. 23, *note*
- Héloise, reforms convent, i. 319; marriage of, i. 324
- Helsen, Abbé, on women resident in priests' houses, ii. 346, *note*
- Helvidius, heresy of, i. 67, *note*
- Henke, edition of Calixtus, ii. 300
- Henning, Bishop, ii. 20, *note*
- Henrician or Petrobusian heresy, i. 463
- Henry II. (Emperor), on sons of priests, i. 178; endeavours to enforce celibacy, i. 206
- Henry III. (Emperor) desires Church reform, i. 214; appoints Suidger Pope Clement II., i. 214; conscientious labours, of for papacy, i. 226; makes Bruno of Toul, Pope, i. 218; President d'Espèisses presents memorial to, ii. 229; assembly of Melun addresses, ii. 235
- Henry III., Bishop of Liège, his sixty-five children, i. 417
- Henry IV. (Emperor), accession of, as an infant, i. 224; has offer of golden crown, and title of Patrician, i. 235; appoints Tedaldo Bishop of Milan, i. 259; voluntary humiliation of, at Canosa, i. 259; expels Altmann of Passau, i. 273; protects simoniacal and married priests, i. 283; triumphs over the Church, i. 287; mission of two legates to, i. 270, *note*
- Henry V. (Emperor), rebellion of, i. 291
- Henry I. (France) attempts to enforce celibacy, i. 207
- Henry III. (France), edicts of pacification, ii. 153
- Henry I. (England) confiscates property of priests, i. 334; summons Council in London, i. 336; enforces regulations of Council, i. 337, 340
- Henry V. (England) persecutes Lollards, i. 476, ii. 3; attempts reform, ii. 9
- Henry VIII. (England) favours League of Schmalkalden, ii. 69; confirms incorporation of Christ Church, Oxford, ii. 83; miserable quarrel of, with Rome, ii. 85; divorce of, from Queen Katharine, ii. 85; supreme head of Church of England, ii. 85; enriches Treasury by secularising Church property, ii. 86, 99; excommunicated by Paul III., ii. 94; opposes priestly marriage, ii. 103, 107; title of Defender of the Faith, ii. 103; decides against proposals of Schmalkaldic League, ii. 109; death of, ii. 116; refuses connection with Council of Trent, ii. 180
- Henry of Huntingdon, i. 198, *note*; son of a priest, i. 331, *note*; on John of Crema, i. 339, *note*; on system of "cullagium," i. 340-41, *note*
- Henry of Norwich, married cleric with legitimate children, i. 354
- Henry the Petrobusian, i. 463, 464
- Henry of Ravenna supports anti-pope, i. 237
- Henry of Salzburg, i. 295, *note*
- Henry of Speyer, i. 278
- Hepburn, Prior Patrick, immorality of, ii. 156
- Hera, compulsory celibacy for priestesses of, i. 43
- Heraclius, celibate priestesses of, i. 43
- Héraudin of Châteauraux on priestly marriage, ii. 314
- Hercules (Gaditanian), celibacy of priests for, i. 42
- Hereditary Levitical priesthood, i. 5
- Hereditary tendency in Greek Church, i. 97
- Hereditary transmission, Gregory VII. and danger of, i. 267
- Hereditary priesthood allowed by Alexander II., i. 241-2
- Hereditary transmission, of benefices in Ireland, i. 361; Friesland, i. 304; Normandy, i. 312; in bishopric of Toul, i. 320; forbidden at Rheims, i. 323; condemned by Lucius II., i. 341; would create sacerdotal caste, i. 347; Innocent III. forbids in Ireland, i. 364; claimed under Lucius III., i. 397; Cœlestin III. upon, i. 404; Bishop Martin of Camin on, ii. 20; in fifteenth century, ii. 21; Clement VII. issues bull on, ii. 174; Scottish Queen Regent petitioned on, ii. 174
- Heresies, the, i. 459-81; a device for extirpating, ii. 110, *note*
- Heresy, Thirty Years' War bars spread of, ii. 237
- Heresy, "vehement," culprit to abjure "de vehementi," ii. 280
- Heresy, Lutheran, justified by clerical corruption, ii. 57, 171, 177, 190, 192, 225
- Heretics, outwardly orthodox, i. 460
- Herluca, vision of, i. 281
- Herman von Wied of Cologne attempts reform, ii. 176-7
- Hermann, Bishop of Prague, i. 290
- Hermann (King) condemns priestly marriage, i. 235
- Herraz, Fray Manuel Pablo, self-accused of "solicitation," ii. 293
- Heuser, Rev. H. J., professor of theology, Overbrook, ii. 277, *note*
- Heydeck, Baron, marries a nun, ii. 62
- High Commission, Court of, ii. 140, *note*
- Hilarion introduces monachism into Palestine, i. 106, *note*
- Hilary of Poitiers, instance of a married bishop, ii. 42
- Hildebert of Le Mans tries to reform clergy, i. 318; poem attributed to, i. 349, *note*

- Hildebrand the Monk, i. 218; all-powerful at papal court, i. 230-1; far more shrewd than Damiani, i. 240; sent on mission to Milan, i. 251; requires subjection to Rome, i. 251
(For further story, see Gregory VII.)
- Hildebrandine doctrine, man burned at Cambrai for upholding, i. 282; slow progress of, i. 305; revived in Catharan heresy, i. 460; "Poor Men of Lyons" hold, i. 468
- Hildebrandine reforms not altogether successful, i. 262
- Hilles, Richard, on the Six Articles, *ii. 115, note*
- Himerius of Tarragona and new discipline of celibacy, i. 64
- Hincmar of Rheims on appellate jurisdiction of Rome, i. 159, 430
- Hioen Tshang describes Buddhist monasteries, i. 103
- Hippolytus on self-mortification, i. 20, *note*
- Hippolytus of Portus on digami, i. 25
"Historia Tripartita" contains story of Paphnutius, i. 52
- Hof, immorality of priests in, *ii. 54-5*
- Holland, "Old Catholic" movement in, *ii. 330*
- Honorius (Emperor), forbids "mulieres extraneæ," i. 49; persecutes Jovinian, i. 70; edict of, in 420, i. 79, 82
- Honorius I. addresses Scottish clergy, i. 185, *note*
- Honorius II. (anti-pope), i. 235
- Honorius III., orders enforcement of laws, i. 326; denounces laxity in Ireland, i. 365; approves rules of Order of Santiago, i. 453
- Hooper, Bishop, on effect of Six Articles, *ii. 116*; questions by, for visitations, *ii. 121*
- Horn, Bishop, on position of married clergy, *ii. 147*
- Hosius, Bishop, on celibacy, *ii. 192*; on communion in both kinds, *ii. 215*
- Hospitallers, the, i. 451; suppressed in England, *ii. 98*
- Hostility to Church in fifteenth century, *ii. 9*
- Hoya, Johann von, Bishop of Osnabruck, *ii. 224*
- Hubert, Abbot, marriage of, i. 162
- Hugh, Bishop of Die (see Hugh of Lyons), i. 308
- Hugh of Grenoble, i. 269, *note*
- Hugh of Lincoln, anecdote told of, i. 343
- Hugh of Lyons, reproved by Gregory VII., i. 310; efforts by, in Brittany, i. 312
- Hugh, Archbishop of Rouen, character of, i. 179; on marriage in orders, i. 392
- Hugo of Constance, Zwingli's demand on, *ii. 45*
- Hugo of Silva Candida at Council of Geronda, i. 371
- Hugo, Cardinal, speech of, at Lyons, i. 424
- Huguenots, priestly marriage among, *ii. 151-2*
- Hugues, Archbishop of Rouen, and Eon de l'Etoile, i. 465-6
- Humbert of Silva Candida, on Greek errors, i. 223; arguments used by, i. 236, *note*
- Humphrey, Lawrence, epigram on Dr. Richard Smith, *ii. 119, note*; on position of married clergy, *ii. 147*
- Hungary, introduction of celibacy in, i. 297; fines exacted by Church in, *ii. 18*; some priests petition diet in, *ii. 328*
- Huss, John, on sacraments of sinful priests, i. 230, *note*; heresy of, i. 460; reformer rather than heresiarch, i. 477
- Hussites, negotiations with, in Magdeburg, Passau, and Bamberg, *ii. 11*
- Hyacinthe, Père, marriage of, *ii. 324*
- Hyde, Council of, miraculous mandate by crucifix at, i. 197
- Hydroparastitæ heresy, i. 34
- Hypatia, Synesius, philosophic disciple of, i. 90; tragedy of, i. 118
- IBAS, Metropolitan of Edessa, accusation against, i. 86
- Idelette de Bure marries Calvin, *ii. 151*
- Ignatius, St., allusions to abstinence from marriage, i. 19
- Ilchi, Chinese Tartary, Buddhist monasteries in, i. 103
- Ildefonso, St., attacks Jovinian and Helvedius, i. 68
- Ilgenhal, Elector John of Saxony forbids election of abbot in, *ii. 64*
- Illegitimates, ineligible to priesthood in Coptic Church, i. 100; in Latin Church, i. 241-2
- Illegitimacy of children of ecclesiastics, i. 92; of Anglican clergy, sixteenth century, i. 147
- Illuminism, aberrations of, *ii. 285*
- Images burned at Smithfield, *ii. 108*
- Immorality, arising from vows of celibacy, i. 31; less reprehensible than marriage, i. 165, 236, 434; favours shown to, i. 395
- Immorality of Church (see Morals)
- Immunity, caused by appellate power of Rome, i. 158; by forms of ecclesiastical procedure, i. 159; for adultery by priests, *ii. 253*; from torture for confessors, *ii. 284*
- Impositions regarding relic and images, *ii. 97*
- Ina, King, adopts monastic life, i. 187
- Incest, resulting from celibacy, i. 156; common in Ireland, i. 363; diminished

- by marriage, i. 212; shocking case of, in Rome, ii. 245, *note*
- Indelibility of priesthood, i. 386
- Index Expurgatorius, the first, ii. 37, *note*
- Index Librorum Prohibitorum, ii. 184
- India, influence of, on Jewish thought, i. 6
- Indians, bad example of Spanish priests among, ii. 248
- Indians of New Granada, Bishop Barrios makes rules for, ii. 246
- "Indulgence, the St. Peter's," preached in Woerden, ii. 50
- Indulgences, a marketable commodity, i. 443; suspicions regarding use of money from, ii. 13
- Infallibility of Pope, ii. 328, 349
- Infanticide result of laws of celibacy, i. 31, 108, 156
- Infessura, character of Sixtus IV., i. 428, *note*
- Injunctions to clergy and laity, Queen Elizabeth, ii. 138
- Innocent of Rhodéz, i. 132, *note*
- Innocent I., complains of marriage between priests and widows, i. 27; in supporting celibacy does not refer to Nicene canon, i. 49; condemns the Bonosiacs, i. 68; condemns Vigilantius, i. 72; enforces celibacy in Calabria, i. 78
- Innocent II. driven from Rome, i. 294; prohibits priestly marriage at Liége, i. 294; dissolves marriage of priests, i. 388
- Innocent III., enforces celibacy, i. 301, 302; reforms convent of St. Agatha, i. 319; excommunicates Otho IV. and John of England, i. 345, *note*; requires ejection of sons of priests, i. 348; regards himself responsible for English Church, i. 349; sends legate to Ireland, i. 364; refuses application of Bossaert d'Avesnes, i. 399; summons Christian world to Vatican Council, i. 405; decisions of, i. 400; decisions of, on digami, i. 434-5; approves principles of Order of Santiago, i. 453; brings back to fold heretics of Bosnia, i. 462, *note*
- Innocent IV., enforces celibacy in Sweden, i. 302; gives judgment on marriage of Bossaert d'Avesnes, i. 399-400; responds to appeal of abandoned wives, i. 401
- Innocent VIII., licentious character of, i. 428; forces Laillier to recant, ii. 29
- Inquisition, Congregation of, addresses archbishops, bishops, and ordinaries, ii. 354
- Inquisition, issues instructions on denunciation in 1880, ii. 356; in 1897, ii. 356; decision of, February 19, 1896, ii. 358; decree of, on November 9, 1898, ii. 358
- Inquisition in Germany, i. 470; occupied with heretics, i. 472; forces recantation of John of Oberwesel, ii. 28
- Inquisition, Roman, extends operation of bulls on solicitation, ii. 262, *note*; orders observance of bulls, ii. 266; on questions of "intention" in confessional questioning, ii. 267; orders no question on "consent" to be asked, ii. 271; settles sixteen cases of solicitation, ii. 273; pronounces on questions regarding solicitation, ii. 273; exacts denunciation under pain of excommunication, ii. 281; declares soliciting confessors disabled from saying Mass, ii. 281; Hilario Caone confesses to forty charges before, ii. 282; condemns Panzini's work on celibacy, ii. 326
- Inquisition, Spanish, teaching of, on celibacy and marriage, ii. 204; heretics and the, ii. 236; requires use of confessional box in confessions, ii. 256; orders laymen to serve in galleys if giving absolution, ii. 256; crowds of accusing women throng, ii. 259, *note*; solicitation no longer to be included in edict of, ii. 260; case of Fray Vicente González, ii. 269; on denunciation by penitents, ii. 270; change of attitude of, regarding solicitation, ii. 272; accepts bull Sacramentum Pœnitentiæ, ii. 275; pronounces on number of denunciations required for conviction, ii. 281; condemns Lorenzo de Eldora to galleys, ii. 289
- Inquisitors, manual for, chapter on nuns, ii. 305
- Insermentés clergy, ii. 308
- Interdict on England, i. 344-5; on Milan, i. 258
- Interim instituted by Charles V., ii. 73, 185
- Interpretation of Scripture, Poor Men of Lyons claim the, i. 468
- Isabella of Castile supports Ximenes, ii. 22
- Isidor of Pelusium on neglect of celibacy, i. 91, *note*
- Isidor, St., of Seville, on impostors, i. 128
- "Isidor Mercator," i. 155
- Isidorian forged decretals, i. 155
- Italy, enforcement of celibacy in 384 in, i. 69; resistance to celibacy in, i. 78; condition of morals in fifth century, i. 85; apostle of, St. Benedict of Nursia, i. 123; monachism reformed in, by Gregory I., i. 126-7; state of Church in, sixth century, i. 136; state of Church in, eighth century, i. 142; Charlemagne and Roman clergy in, i. 153; state of Church in, tenth century, i. 164; RATHERIUS OF VERONA, com-

- plaints of, i. 167; Atto of Vercelli, complaints of, i. 167; Guarino of Modena and Alberic of Marsico, i. 176; Silvester II. lightly treats celibacy in, i. 181; state of Church in eleventh century, i. 208-10; S. Giovanni Gualberto and austerities, i. 213; Henry III. and the papacy, i. 214-15; St. Peter Damiani and, i. 216; vain attempts at reform in, i. 222; Damiani and Hildebrand foremost figures in, i. 226; Council of Melfi in 1059, i. 231; schism of Lombard clergy in, i. 235; anti-pope Cadalus repudiated, i. 237; failure of attempts to reform, i. 240-1; reforms in Milan, i. 244-62; condition of regulars in sixteenth century, ii. 89; abuse of confessional in, ii. 269, *note*; priest guilty of solicitation in, not publicly punished, ii. 280; two denunciations required before consideration of case, ii. 283; case of Panzini and the Inquisition in, ii. 326; consolidated under Victor Emanuel, ii. 337, 350; suppression of religious houses in, ii. 337
- Ivo of Chartres, on the canons, i. 317; reproves measureless scandal, i. 318-19
- JACOBINES, number of, i. 99
- Jacobus quotes canons, ii. 252 *note*
- Jacopo della Marchia, ii. 18; rebukes immorality, forced to fly, ii. 19
- Jainas, the, i. 22, *note*
- Jalikhah, Church of, independent of Rome, i. 369
- James of Jerusalem Nazirite and probably Essene, i. 10
- James IV. of Scotland protects Lollards, ii. 155
- James V., attempts at reform under, ii. 158
- Jameson, Margaret, marriage of, ii. 166
- Jan de Backer (Pistorius) of Woerden, case of, ii. 50; burned alive, ii. 50
- Jane of Flanders, i. 398
- Jansenism, Ultramontanism triumphs over, ii. 363
- Jansenistic rigorism, ii. 242
- Jean d'Hullier, puritan Bishop of Meaux, i. 477, *note*; condemned by Sorbonne, i. 477, *note*
- Jean Laillier condemned by Sorbonne, ii. 29
- Jean de Rély on morals of the Church, ii. 15
- Jean de Varennes accused of heretical teaching, i. 472
- Jephtah's daughter, story of, illustrates Jewish views of virginity, i. 5
- Jerome, St., on origin of celibacy, i. 13; on virgin birth of Buddha, i. 22; contempt of, for marriage, i. 38; denounces agapetæ, i. 47-8, 81; denounces Bonosiac heresy, i. 68; roundly abuses Jovinian, i. 69; quarrels with Vigilantius, i. 71; uses coarse invective against Vigilantius, i. 72; successful labour for ecclesiastical celibacy, i. 81; urges custom of Antioch, Alexandria, and Rome, i. 89; on difficulty of maintaining virginity, ii. 339
- Jerome of Prague on Huss, i. 478
- Jerusalem, impression produced by capture of, i. 403
- Jessopp, Dr., prints deed of thirteenth century, i. 354; on miscreants who robbed monasteries, ii. 101, *note*
- Jesuits, guilty of solicitation favoured by Sixtus V., ii. 261; influence of, powerful in Rome, ii. 261; try to gain exemption for religious orders, ii. 261; Reusch on Order of, ii. 266, *note*; expelled from Portugal, France, and Spain, ii. 335; Order of, suppressed by Clement XIV., ii. 335; attempt by Charles V. to introduce, opposed, ii. 338
- Jesus Christ, Portuguese Order of, i. 455
- Jews, relation of, to asceticism, i. 4-12; polygamy of, i. 26
- Jodocus of Lubec, deputy of papal legates, ii. 74, *note*
- John IV. reproves laxity of Saxon monasteries, i. 188
- John XII., extreme depravity of, i. 165
- John XIII., holds Council of Ravenna, upholding celibacy, i. 172; St. Dunstan procures bull from, i. 195
- John XXII., Emperor Ludwig undertakes to depose, i. 401
- John XXIII., brutal licentiousness of, i. 426-7; convokes Council of Constance, ii. 3; releases Hospitaler from vow on payment of 600 ducats, ii. 14-15
- John, King of England, Innocent III. places interdict on kingdom of, i. 344-5, 405
- John Merlaw of Fulda relaxes rules, ii. 23, *note*
- John of Alexandria (Eleemosynarius), i. 138, *note*
- John of Crema, hypocrisy of, i. 338; visits Scotland, i. 367
- John of Engheim, murder of, i. 417, *note*
- John of Frankfort on papal authority, ii. 14, *note*
- John of Leyden, ii. 24
- John of Liège, i. 417, *note*
- John of Lisieux, i. 319
- John of Niklaushausen (rustic prophet), ii. 24; burned at stake, ii. 24
- John (Ruchrath) of Oberwesel, ii. 28
- John of Pirna, i. 472
- John of Rouen, i. 308
- John of Salisbury, i. 319
- John of Saxony forbids election of Abbot Ilgenthal, ii. 64

- John of Utrecht prohibits men entering nunneries, i. 422, *note*
- John, St., of Jerusalem, Knights of, i. 451
- John, St., the Evangelist, condemns the Nicolites, i. 21
- John the Baptist undoubtedly an Essene, i. 10
- Jonas, Justus, on Luther's marriage, ii. 51
- Joseph II., reforms monastic orders, i. 450; inclines to priestly marriage, ii. 300; reduces religious orders in his possessions, ii. 335
- Jovian on marriage of sacred virgins, i. 109
- Jovinian, claims equal merit for maidens, wives, and widows, i. 37-8; opposes ascetic spirit, i. 67; attacked by St. Ildefonso, i. 68; condemned by St. Ambrose and Siricius, i. 69; driven to Milan, i. 69; abused by St. Jerome, i. 69; openly assembles followers at Rome, i. 70; scourged and exiled to rock of Boa, Dalmatia, i. 70
- Juan, Don Jorje, ii. 249
- Judæ, Leo, marries a béguine, ii. 46
- Judah and Tamar, story of, i. 5
- Judhæel of Dol, simony and marriage of, i. 311
- Julian (Emperor) on Syrian asceticism, i. 42, *note*
- Julian, Cardinal, legate to Ireland, i. 364
- Julius, Bishop of Wurzburg, ii. 232
- Julius III., grants powers to Cardinal Pole, ii. 125, *note*, 130; bull of indulgence for England, ii. 130; re-convokes Council of Trent, ii. 181
- Junqua, Abbé, case of, ii. 324
- Jurisdiction, appellate, of Rome, i. 158; of seducer over seduced forfeited, ii. 357, *note*
- Jus prima noctis, i. 441
- Jusspolii enforced by Robert the Frisian, i. 313
- Justification, by works, doctrine of, i. 129; by faith, doctrine in Scottish Reformation, ii. 162
- Justin Martyr on chastity and marriage, i. 19
- Justinian, constitution on ecclesiastical marriage, i. 92; adds provision to legislation on monachism, i. 120
- Juvenal on shameless papal court, i. 426
- KARSGENG, Our Lady of, ii. 155-6
- Katharine of Aragon divorced, ii. 83
- Katz, work on celibacy, ii. 301
- Keledeus or Culdee, i. 366
- Killore, John, burned, ii. 166
- King's College, Cambridge, enriched by spoils of monasteries, ii. 83; Windsor enriched by spoils of monasteries, ii. 83
- Kirkham, Bishop of Durham, prohibits priestly marriage, i. 353-4
- Knade, James, married priest of the Reformation, ii. 42
- Knights, of Avis, i. 455; of St. John of Jerusalem, i. 451; of Rhodes, or of Malta, i. 451; of Santiago, i. 455; of Marian Order, i. 457
- Koch of Wiesbaden, case of, ii. 325
- Kokkius, Dr., denounces clerical immorality, ii. 13
- Kolderup-Rosenvinge, Latin text of Cnut's laws, i. 202
- Kopp, Leonhard, helps nuns to escape, ii. 50
- Krishna, similarity of, to Christ, i. 99, *note*
- Kyle, Lollards of, ii. 155
- LABATA, Francisco, imprisoned, ii. 261
- La Baumelle, Mémoires de Mme. de Maintenon, ii. 298, *note*
- Lactantius, condemns asceticism, i. 40; denounces hermit's life as that of beast, i. 106
- Ladak, lamas in, i. 103
- Ladislav, St., introduces celibacy into Hungary, i. 297
- Lafitau, Bishop of Sisterion, on priestly marriage, ii. 298, *note*
- Lafuente, ii. 336, *note*
- Lagrèze, Histoire du Devil dans les Pyrénées, i. 441
- Laity, corrupted by clergy, i. 320, 343, ii. 237; in favour of priestly marriage, i. 301, ii. 48; in favour of celibacy, i. 279; ii. 108, 148
- Lambert of Artois enforces celibacy, i. 315
- Lamentatio ob Cœlibatum Sacerdotum, ii. 25
- Lämmer on scarcity of priests, ii. 197, *note*
- Lancisky, synod of, i. 301
- Landolfo, leader of Paterins, wounded, i. 254
- Lands of Church, in German Reformation, ii. 64, 65; in England, ii. 92, 130; in Scotland, ii. 160; in France, ii. 335; in Italy, ii. 337
- Lanfranc, moderation of reforms of, i. 329
- Langdon, Abbot of, "drunkennest knave living," ii. 88
- Langdon, Rev. William Chauncy, on clerical morality, ii. 348
- Langlande, on foreign prelates, i. 354, *note*; on venality of officials, i. 358, *note*; on the Church, ii. 77
- Langssac, M. de, instructions on, at Trent, ii. 197
- Lanzo of Milan, i. 245
- Laodicea, Council of, in 352, i. 56
- Laon, case of married sub-deacon of, i. 400
- La Réole, monks of, kill St. Abbo, i. 177

- Lara, Manrique di, Inquisitor-General, ii. 275, *note*
- Lateran, Council of, in 1123, i. 385, *note*; in 1179, i. 363; in 1215, i. 405; in 1870, ii. 349
- Latimer, Bishop, an intermediary, ii. 93, *note*
- Latin America, Plenary Council in 1899, ii. 343
- Latin Church dominates history of modern civilisation, i. 1
- Laurentius, Gallus, i. 434, *note*
- Lausanne, clergy of, drive out bishop, i. 423
- La Vendée, insurrections in, ii. 308
- Lawney, chaplain to Duke of Norfolk, *bon mot* of, ii. 113, *note*
- Lead, value of, in English monasteries, ii. 99 *note*
- League of Schmalkalden formed, ii. 67
- Le Bas, estimate of number of French ecclesiastics, ii. 313, *note*
- Lecky, History of European Morals, i. 117, *note*; History of Rationalism, i. 450, *note*
- Lefèvre d'Étaples, ii. 150
- Legacies, to Church restricted, i. 61; void, to priests' children, treated as legitimate, i. 382
- Legitimation, letters of, ii. 161
- Leibnitz on Lutherans returning to Roman communion, ii. 298, *note*
- Leo I., on marriage between priests and widows, i. 27; treats recalcitrant Cenobites tenderly, i. 115
- Leo VII. answers inquiry of Gerard of Lorsch, i. 169
- Leo IX., ascends pontifical throne, i. 218; takes Monk Hildebrand to Rome, i. 218; degrades Dabralis, i. 220; Council of, at Mantua, broken up, i. 222; death of, i. 223
- Leo X., character of, ii. 34; propositions of, opposed in Diet of Augsburg, ii. 38; issues bull against Luther, ii. 40; feeble efforts of, for reform in morals, ii. 55; Wolsey applies to, ii. 81
- Leo XIII., concessions of, to Francis Joseph, i. 458
- Leo and Anthemius forbid monks to go beyond monasteries, i. 119
- Leo Marsicanus on Alberic of Marsico, i. 176, *note*
- Leo the Isaurian, i. 144
- Leo the Philosopher, regulations in basilica, i. 92, 93, *note*; orders recalcitrant monks to return to convent, i. 120
- Leonistæ, St. Ambrose countenances tradition of, i. 66
- Leopold of Austria, Bishop, dispensations for marriage, ii. 219
- Leopold of Tuscany tries to reform religious houses, ii. 282, 303
- Leptines, synod of, in 743, i. 148
- Lerida, Council of, in 1250, i. 379-80; 1314, i. 380
- Lhassa, monasteries and lamas in, i. 103
- Liber de Amabili Ecclesiæ, Concordia (Erasmus), ii. 62, *note*
- Liber Gomorrhianus, i. 219, *note*
- Licences, to sin, tribute known as collation, i. 309; inveighed against in Apocalypsis Golia, i. 345-6; condemned by Lateran Council, i. 406; for concubinage must in all cases be paid, ii. 239; bishops sell to women, for immorality, ii. 55, *note*
- Licentiousness, treated more lightly than marriage, i. 165, 236, 434-5; of clergy treated as result of celibacy, ii. 211; regarded as a matter of course, i. 412; of Middle Ages, i. 423
- Liège, Manichæism in, in 1025, i. 244; priestly marriage in, in twelfth century, i. 295; Bishop of, on corruption of priesthood, ii. 193, *note*; Council of, in 1131, i. 294, 387; heretics in, i. 464; Bishop of, on gift of continence, ii. 193, *note*
- Lignana, Girolamo, attempts to murder St. Charles Borromeo, ii. 228
- Liguori, St. Alphonso de, on papal decrees, ii. 268; letter to conclave for election of Pope, ii. 305
- Lillebonne, Council of, in 1080, i. 308
- Lima, synod of, in 1585, ii. 246; in 1552 and 1567, ii. 247
- Lincoln, case of subdeacon of, i. 396, *note*
- Lindet of Evreux, marriage of, ii. 310
- Link, Wenceslas, Vicar Augustine Order, marriage of, ii. 46
- Lisieux, case of Archdeacon of, i. 435, *note*; synod of, in 1055, i. 308
- Litchfield, Saxon Bishop of, i. 329; visitation of diocese of, ii. 87
- Liturgy, the new, enforced in 1549, ii. 120
- Livonia, privilege in, for sons of priests, i. 416
- Lizka makes short work with heretics, i. 471
- Llandaff, Bishop of, on commission to try married bishops, ii. 125
- Llorente on secular and regular priests, ii. 294
- Lochon on secrets of the confessional, ii. 271, *note*
- Lollards, the, i. 476; declaration of Archbishop of Canterbury on, i. 476; of Kyle, ii. 155
- Loménie, coadjutor of Archbishop of Sens, married, ii. 310
- London, Dr., abbess of Chepstow accuses, ii. 97; chronicles troubles of ejected monks, ii. 113, *note*
- London, married priests deprived, in 1554, ii. 124; enumeration of married

- priests in archdeaconry of, ii. 139; Council of, in 1075, i. 329-30; in 1102, i. 331; in 1108, i. 336; in 1126, i. 338; in 1237, i. 350
- López, Father Juan, imprisoned, ii. 261
- Lords, House of, delays priestly marriage, ii. 117
- Lorraine, Cardinal, instructions of, at Trent, ii. 197
- Los von Rom, movement of, ii. 329
- Loserth on immoral priests in Prague, i. 478, *note*
- Lothair, Emperor, tries to enforce celibacy, i. 294
- Louis le Débonnaire attempts to reform Church, i. 129, 153; makes seduction of nun capital offence, i. 154; prohibits practice of letting blood, i. 156
- Louis le Gros, conditions of charter at Compiègne, i. 326
- Louis IX. arbitrates for children of Margaret of Flanders, i. 399
- Louis XII. and relics of St. Denis, i. 256, *note*
- Louis XV., on disorders among regular clergy, ii. 302; orders arrest of priests frequenting brothels, ii. 303
- Louis Philippe, ii. 338
- Louise of Savoy, Clement VII. addresses brief to, ii. 151
- Louvain, University of, urges reform on Philip II., ii. 191
- Love letters handed in confessional, discussion on, ii. 266-7
- Loyola, Ignatius, Life of, by Ribadeneira, ii. 175, *note*; scandalised by Spanish morals, ii. 175
- Loyson, M. (Père Hyacinthe), case of, ii. 324
- Lucca, sacerdotal marriage in, i. 262
- Lucerne, priest's wife disowned in, ii. 325
- Luceta, Dr. Pedro, foul case of solicitation by, ii. 290
- Lucius II. on hereditary priesthood, i. 341
- Lucius III., on sacraments of sinful priests, i. 229, *note*; on hereditary benefices, i. 397-8; on rules for Templars, i. 452; condemns the Waldenses, i. 467
- Lucretia Borgia, i. 428, *note*
- Ludeña, Doctor Juan de, disputes on priestly marriage, ii. 203
- Lugo, Bernal Diaz de, on scandal attaching to immorality, ii. 255
- Lunden, Archbishop of, on priestly marriage, i. 302; question on digami by, i. 434
- Lupus of Troyes on celibacy, i. 82
- Luther, mistake to credit, with Reformation, ii. 35; ninety-five propositions of, ii. 39; progress of, very slow, ii. 40; changes views of priestly marriage, ii. 40, 41; Leo X. issues bull against, ii. 40; burns books of canon law at Wittenberg, ii. 41; preaches on clerical marriage, ii. 46; marriage of, ii. 51; defends digami, ii. 53; at enmity with Anabaptists, ii. 68
- Lutheran colleges crowded on account of question of celibacy, ii. 196
- Lutherans dispute with Calvinists and Philippists, ii. 225, *note*
- Lyons, Poor Men of, i. 468
- Lyons, Council of, in 1274, i. 407, 436; efforts at, to reunite Greek Church, i. 407; in 1528, ii. 173
- MACAULAY, LORD, on Anglican clergy, ii. 149
- MacClosky, Cardinal, ii. 341, *note*
- Macedonia, celibacy enforced in, i. 91
- Macliaus of Brittany, story of, i. 133-4
- MacMahon, Marshal, reactionary government of, ii. 338
- Macon, Council of, in 581, i. 133; Claude, Bishop of, ii. 173
- Madrid, "soliciting" priest temporarily exiled from, ii. 286, *note*, 290
- Madrigal, Manuel, voted to torture by inquisitors, ii. 285
- Maesse-pegnes, i. 201, *note*
- Magdeburg, Council of, in 1403, i. 439, *note*; letter of Archbishop of, points to papal rapacity, ii. 14
- Mahavira, legend of, i. 22, *note*
- Mahue, curé of S. Sulpice, on priestly marriage, ii. 311; tried for pamphlet, ii. 311
- Maiden Bradley, morals of prior of, ii. 98, *note*
- Mainardo, Cardinal, mission of, to Milan, i. 257
- Mainerio Boccardo, provisions of will of, i. 262
- Mainz, Council of (1049) forbids simony and marriage, i. 220-1; enforcement of celibacy in, i. 274; revolt at, against Rodolf of Swabia, i. 282; Diet of, in 1085, i. 285; metropolitan synod of, in 1549, ii. 190; Diether, Archbishop of, case of, ii. 34, *note*; Archbishop of, upon points of discipline, ii. 218; Council of, in 888, i. 157, *note*; in 1049, i. 220; in 1075, i. 275; in 1225, i. 418; in 1527, ii. 47, *note*
- Majorca, troubles in, with regard to canons, i. 382
- Majorian, laws of, respecting nuns in 458, i. 116
- Malachi, St., reforms of, i. 362; visits St. Bernard at Clairvaux, i. 362
- Malatesta, Carlo, of Rimini, on concubines of priests, i. 421
- Maldonaldo, Fray, accused of solicitation, ii. 289

- Mallet, Abbé, case of, ii. 359; heinousness of offence of, concealed by orthodox journal, ii. 359
- Malta, Knights of, i. 451; accusations against, i. 453; suppressed in England, ii. 98; Knight of, married, ii. 154
- Malvern, Great, prior of, offers bribe to Cromwell, ii. 93, *note*
- Manasses of Rheims forced to abandon violent measures, i. 314
- Mancio of Chalons, indecision of, i. 162
- Manes, *sai-disant* envoy of Christ, career of, i. 33
- Manfredonia, Council of, in 1567, ii. 230
- Manichæism, enthusiastically accepted, i. 33; condemns marriage, i. 34; eucharist in, according to Mazdean form, i. 35; revived by Albigenses, i. 35; early, of St. Augustin, i. 75; Milan headquarters of, i. 244; heresy of, extirpated at stake, i. 244; revival of, in eleventh century, i. 244; Milan a nest of heresy of, i. 249, *note*
- Manigold of Veringen, case of, i. 280-1
- Mansfield, married priest of, imprisoned, ii. 43
- Mansi on twenty-ninth canon of first Council of Arles, i. 43, *note*
- Manual for Inquisitors, chapter on nuns, ii. 305
- Mantua, Council of (1053), broken up, i. 222; Council of, in 1067, i. 237
- Mapes, Walter, satirical verses by, i. 339, 343, 353
- Mar Abba forbids priestly marriage, i. 99
- Marcellin, Abbé, on "droit de marquette," i. 441, *note*
- Marcen, Francisco, Provincial of Castile, imprisoned, ii. 261
- Marcian (Emperor) restricts monachism, i. 119
- Marcion, heresy of, i. 20
- Marcus, heresy of (Marcosian), i. 20
- Margaret of Flanders, story of, i. 399
- Margaret of Parma and Council of Trent, ii. 222, *note*
- Maria da Gloria, ii. 337
- Maria S. della Scala, canons of, Milan, ii. 227
- Mariana, on married clergy in Spain, i. 370
- Marian Order, the, i. 457
- Marian persecution, in England, ii. 135; reaction in England, ii. 123
- Marien, Frère, prosecuted, 299 offences, ii. 361
- Marillac, Bishop Charles de, on discipline, ii. 238
- Marino, a married priest and miracle-worker, i. 209
- Marino of Ostia condemns priestly marriage, i. 171
- Marisco, Adam de, i. 357
- Marozia, influence of, i. 164-5
- Marquette, droit de, i. 441
- Marriage, lofty teaching of Christ concerning, i. 10; stigmatised as means of transmitting original sin, i. 36; Brahmanical and Buddhist views of, i. 34; Manichæism condemns, i. 36; not allowed in orders, i. 28, 79; persisted in by clergy, i. 83; custom concerning, in Greek Church, i. 97; custom concerning, among Nestorians, i. 98; St. Jerome's contempt for, i. 38; St. Augustin on, i. 38, 75; St. Martin of Tours on, i. 38; not dissolved by monastic vows, i. 127; not contemplated in Irish Church, i. 184; Council of Melfi endeavours to check, i. 231-2; Councils of Vienne and Tours prohibit, i. 232; marriage, clerical, openly defended by chaplains of Godfrey of Tuscany, i. 234; habitual among Piedmontese, i. 238; comparative mild decretal against, i. 241; St. Gregory, St. Augustin, and St. Victor on dissolution of, i. 386-7, *note*; stigmatised with degrading epithet by Alexander III., i. 395; gradually given up in Latin Church, i. 403; homily of thirteenth century against, i. 431; a mortal sin, according to Catharan heresy, i. 459-60; heresy to teach, as preferable to celibacy, ii. 204; dispensations for, in England, ii. 209, *note*; implies heresy, ii. 219
- Marriage of bishops, prohibited, i. 28; in fourth century, i. 53; in Eastern Church, i. 93; in Africa, i. 95; not allowed in Greek Church, i. 97; Mar Abba forbids, i. 99; prohibited at Council of Augsburg, i. 171; practised in Gaul and Gothic Spain, i. 133, 135; in eighth century, i. 149; in tenth century, i. 177; in eleventh century, i. 209, 221, 232, 234; ends in separation from wives in Hungary, i. 298; for three generations in Quimper, i. 312; in Rennes, Vannes, and Nantes, i. 312; Saxon Bishop of Litchfield, i. 329; English bishops, i. 341-2; Bishops Peter, Philip, Spiridon of Cyprus, and Hilary of Poitiers, ii. 42; gives wives title of countesses, i. 312; allowed under Edward VI., ii. 121; sanctioned under Elizabeth, ii. 145; Archduke Leopold of Austria, dispensation for, ii. 219
- Marriage of deacons, permitted, i. 28; forbidden, i. 77, 92, 171, 299, 300, 331
- Marriage of monks, permitted in fourth century, i. 53; forbidden by Justinian, i. 120; forbidden by Gregory the Great, i. 127; St. Bernard on, i. 389; common in ninth century, i. 158; in thirteenth century, i. 401; forbidden

- by William of Cologne, i. 422, *note* ;
by Archbishop of Cologne, ii. 194,
note
- Marriage of nuns** made by Jovian a
capital crime, i. 109; Councils of
Valence and Rome endeavour to check,
i. 113; renders inadmissible to penance
during husband's life, i. 115; Leo I.
upon, i. 115-16; Pope Symmachus for-
bids, i. 123; Recared I. interposes con-
cerning, i. 135-6; Gregory II. declares
to be an open practice, i. 142; for-
bidden by Pope Zachary, i. 149; homily
against in thirteenth century, i. 348;
pronounced void in 1630, ii. 154; pro-
hibited by Archbishop of Cologne, ii.
194, *note* ; under Reign of Terror, ii.
313
- Marriage of priests**, in early Church, i.
13, 14, 15, 28; restricted to single mar-
riage, i. 28; Council of Neocæsarea on,
i. 24; forbidden by Council of Elvira,
i. 43; not forbidden by Council of
Nicaea, i. 46-7; definitely prohibited in
385, i. 62; forbidden by canon law, i.
77; gradually discontinued in Western
Church, i. 66; custom of Eastern
Church regarding, i. 89; the rule in
Armenian Church, i. 96; obligatory
for parish priest in Greek Church, i.
98; skilfully tacit permission of, by
Nicholas I., i. 161-2; synod of En-
gelheim declares, incestuous, i. 171;
Council of Augsburg forbids, i. 171;
in Italy, in sixth and eighth centuries,
i. 136, 143; in Merovingian France, i.
131-2; prohibited in eighth century,
i. 152; reappears in ninth century, i.
162; common in tenth century, i. 169,
171; forbidden in tenth century, i. 171;
in British Church, i. 183; in Saxon
England, i. 186; in Wales, i. 198; uni-
versal in eleventh century, i. 210; in
Southern Italy, i. 231; in Tuscany, i.
234; creates a political party, i. 236;
becomes a heresy, i. 236; struggle over,
in Lombardy, i. 247; persecution of, i.
279; cases of, in Trèves, i. 279-80;
penalties inflicted on, i. 289; in Bohe-
mia, i. 293; in Germany, i. 292; in
Hungary, i. 297; in Dalmatia, i. 299;
in Austria, i. 300; in Poland, i. 300;
in Sweden, i. 301; in Denmark, i. 303;
in Friesland, i. 303-4; in France, i. 306;
in Normandy, i. 309-10; in Brittany, i.
311; in Flanders, i. 312; in England,
i. 330, 331, 341; in Wales, i. 358; in
Ireland, i. 365; in Spain, i. 370; delay
in abrogating, i. 373; forbidden by
Alfonso the Wise, i. 378; continued in
Spain and Portugal, i. 383; St. Bernard
on, i. 389; Gratian on, i. 390; advoca-
ted by Alexander III., i. 402; appa-
rently condemned by Wickliffe, i. 474;
allowed by Lollards, i. 476; condemned
by Hussites, i. 479; advocated by
Bishop William Durand, ii. 25; advoca-
ted in fifteenth century, ii. 28-9; com-
mencement of, in Reformation, ii. 46;
demanded by Zwingli, ii. 45; accepted
by Luther, ii. 46; favoured by the
people, ii. 53; persecuted by the
Church, ii. 48; recognised under Inter-
rim, ii. 73; dispensation for, by Paul
III., ii. 74; recognised by Transaction
of Passau, ii. 75; advocated in England,
in 1530, ii. 103; commenced in Eng-
land, ii. 103-4; refused by Henry VIII.,
ii. 103, 107; capital offence under Six
Articles, ii. 112; permitted under
Edward VI., ii. 117, 118; popular re-
pugnance for, ii. 119-20; suppressed
under Queen Mary, ii. 124; admitted
by Queen Elizabeth, ii. 137; matter of
Anglican faith, ii. 140; uncertainty
regarding, affects clergy, ii. 149; re-
sented by Catholics under Elizabeth,
ii. 148; a matter of course for Hugue-
nots, ii. 151; dispensations for, sale of,
ii. 183; demanded at Council of Trent,
ii. 192; prevalence of, ii. 195; matter
of, prejudged at Trent, ii. 199; papal
dispensations for, ii. 208; pressed for
by Maximilian II., ii. 211-12; in post-
Tridentine Church, ii. 231, 232, 233;
denounced by Inquisition, ii. 204; in
French Revolution, ii. 311; causes loss
of stipend, ii. 313; under the Con-
cordat, ii. 316; varying policy con-
cerning, in France, ii. 314; accepted
by "Old Catholics," ii. 328-9; in the
United States, ii. 334
- Marriage of sub-deacons** (*see* Sub-deacon)
- Marriages**, second, denounced by Justin
Martyr, i. 23; allowed by St. Paul, i.
23; Pope St. Gelasius on, i. 24; for-
bidden to priesthood, i. 25; St.
Augustine on, i. 76, *note* ; Council of
Spatatro forbids to ecclesiastics, i.
170; in eleventh century often pom-
pously celebrated, i. 238; forbidden
to Milanese clergy, i. 247 (*see also*
Digami)
- Married priests**, ordered to separate from
wives, i. 75; orders concerning, at
second Council of Tours, i. 134; orders
at third Council of Toledo, i. 135;
deprivations of, i. 153; Rome full of,
under Stephen IX., i. 225; ordered
by Nicholas II. to separate from wives,
i. 229-30; further orders for, i. 234;
pronounced incapable of holding office,
i. 303; mixed courts for trial of, i.
309; persecution of, i. 316; Charles V.
on, ii. 67; Melanchthon on cruelties to,
ii. 114; divorcees of, ii. 114
- Martène**, Don, i. 279
- "**Marthas**," servants of priests, ii. 343

- Martin, case of, in 1817-21, ii. 322
- Martin I., advice of, to Amandus, i. 141, *note*
- Martin V., election of, ii. 5; favours of, to John XXIII., i. 427; attempts reform, ii. 6-7
- Martin, Dr. T., at trial of Cranmer, i. 222, *note*; treatise by, on celibacy, ii. 126, *note*
- Martin of Battle Abbey, i. 343
- Martin of Camin, on clerical morals, ii. 20; tries to reform his clergy, ii. 20
- Martin, St., of Tours, on marriage, i. 38
- Martyrdom compared with virginity, i. 37; of English monks, ii. 86
- Marullus on Innocent VIII., i. 428, *note*
- Mary of Guise, ii. 162
- Mary, Queen, and obsequies of Edward VI., ii. 123; persecution under, ii. 135
- Mary Queen of Scots, ii. 165, 170
- Mary, St., of Egypt, i. 107
- Mass, disputation on, in Scotland in 1560, ii. 163; said by concubinary priests, ii. 244
- Masses for the dead, similar to Mazdean rite, i. 34-5; maintained by Henry VIII., ii. 93
- Masses of married priests to be rejected, i. 228, 296, 308, 332
- Massieu of Beauvais, marriage of, ii. 310
- Massipia, name for legalised concubine, i. 231, *note*
- Materialism of Mosaic law, i. 4
- Maternity, dissuasions from, i. 431-2
- Mathison, John, and Anabaptists, ii. 68
- Matilda, Countess, and married priests of Lucca, i. 260-1; St. Anselmo implores intervention of, i. 263
- Matthew Paris on Milanese heresies, i. 249, *note*
- Matthew of Salzburg, attempted reforms of, ii. 177
- Matthias Carvinus on priestly morals, ii. 19
- Maud of Ramsbury, i. 341-2
- Mauger, Archbishop, character and marriage of, i. 180
- Mauléon, Mlle. Desvieux de, ii. 298, *note*
- Maulrot, answer of, to Gaudin, ii. 301
- Maurice of Saxony, ii. 73; fresh treason of, ii. 75
- Maurice de Sully, powers granted to, i. 398
- Maurilio, St., of Rouen, i. 180
- Mauritanian nuns, case of, i. 114-15, *note*
- Maximilian of Bohemia, suspected of Lutheranism, ii. 199; favours priestly marriage, ii. 210; pressing demands on Pius V., ii. 212; letter from Pius V. to, ii. 223; less zealous than Ferdinand, ii. 225, *note*
- Maya, virgin mother of Buddha, i. 22
- Mayer, dissertation by, on Catherine von Bora, ii. 52
- Mazdeism, wholesomeness of religion of, i. 6
- Meat, abstinence from, discountenanced, i. 40
- Mechlin, certificates to confessors in, ii. 274
- Medicine, profession of, incompatible with priesthood, i. 269, *note*
- Medina, Bartolomé de, on abuse of confessional, ii. 276
- Meinhard of Trèves, indiscreet reformatory zeal of, i. 296; obliged to leave bishopric, i. 296
- Melanchthon on Luther's marriage, ii. 51, *note*; prepares statement of Protestant belief, ii. 65; apology for Confession of Augsburg, ii. 65, *note*; declared a traitor, ii. 71; addresses Henry VIII., ii. 109, 114
- Melchior of Wurzburg on condition of clergy, ii. 190, *note*
- Melfi, Council of, in 1059, i. 231; in 1089, i. 289; in 1284, i. 420; in 1597, ii. 230
- Méliste, Frère, prosecuted for fifty offences, ii. 361
- Melun, Assembly of, in 1579, ii. 235
- Men of intelligence, i. 470
- Menco, Abbot, on questions for decision of Church, i. 305
- Mendelsham, married vicar of, ii. 107
- Mendicant Orders (Dominicans, Franciscans, Augustinians, Carmelites, Minims, Jesuits, and Servites), ii. 294
- Mendicancy forbidden in Reformation, ii. 44
- Merit, comparative, of virginity and marriage, i. 37, 38, 432
- Merlaw, John, abbot, ii. 23, *note*
- Merovingians, papacy in hands of, i. 132; contentions destroy dynasty of, i. 141
- Merriman, Mrs., marries Père Hyacinthe, ii. 324
- Merseberg, people of, demand priestly marriage and cup for laity, ii. 72
- Messiah, the, of Mazdeism, i. 22, *note*
- Methodius converts Bohemia, i. 290, *note*
- Metz, sons of priests ordained in, i. 178; Council of, in 888, i. 157, *note*; siege of, ii. 75
- Mexico, first Council in, ii. 246; canon rules adopted by, ii. 250; suppression of monasteries in, ii. 338
- Miguel, Albert, on Mass said by sinful, unconfessed priests, ii. 245, *note*
- Milan, synod of, in 1098, i. 261; head of northern vicariate of Italy, i. 244; headquarters of Manichæism, i. 244; Paterian faction causes riots in, i. 250-1; more riots in, i. 255; under an interdict, i. 258; independent of Rome,

- i. 246; submits to Rome, i. 252; synods of, in 1565 and 1582, ii. 230; reforms in, by St. Charles Borromeo, ii. 227
- Military bishops in tenth and eleventh centuries**, i. 175, *note*
- Military orders, celibacy of**, i. 451
- Military service enforced on monks**, i. 108, *note*
- Mill, Walter, trial of**, ii. 167
- Miller of Trompington, wife of, Chaucer**, i. 420
- Milo, Archbishop of Rheims, later of Trèves**, i. 145
- Minden, Dean of, miracle reported concerning**, i. 321
- Mingrat, Antoine, murder by**, ii. 358-9
- Minims, Order of**, ii. 243; Hilario Caone, of order of, confesses "solicitation," ii. 282
- Minimum age for vows**, ii. 302
- Ministers, Calvinist, severe discipline for**, ii. 151-2
- Minncke, Heinrich, burned as Manichean**, i. 462
- Minucius, Felix, on marriage and celibacy**, i. 19
- Minuto, Cardinal, mission of, to Milan**, i. 256-7
- Mirabeau on marriage as no bar to any profession**, ii. 309
- Modena, troubles in**, i. 263
- Modest Apology for the Catholics of Great Britain**, ii. 301, *note*
- Molanus on terms for re-entering Roman communion**, ii. 298, *note*
- Molinism, suspicion of doctrines of**, ii. 293
- Monachism**, i. 101-129; model of, in Buddhism and Brahminism, i. 101-2; vow of, matter of volition in early Church, i. 105; Eastern and Western, i. 116-17; difficulties in West regarding, i. 121; practical character of Western, i. 124; made irrevocable, i. 127; source of power and wealth to Church, i. 129; disorders of, under Carolingians, i. 155, 158; reforms attempted in tenth century, i. 175; in Irish Church, i. 184; in Anglo-Saxon Church, i. 188, 200, 205; condition of, in France, i. 318; in early Scottish Church, i. 366; degrading regulations of, i. 411-12; good and ill effects of system of, i. 445-8; Wickliffe's attack on, i. 473; struggle about, in France, ii. 338; in mediæval times and in present day, ii. 339-41
- Monasteries, Bhikshus and Bhikshunis, organised**, i. 101; residence in, ordered in East, i. 119; not necessary in West, i. 128; entrusted to episcopal care, i. 151; women excluded from, ii. 23, *note*; treatment of, in Reformation, ii. 63-4; suppression of, under Henry VIII., ii. 83-4; condition of English, exaggerated, ii. 87-8; broken up in Scotland, ii. 164; suppressed in France, ii. 335; Spain, ii. 335; Italy, ii. 337; Paraguay, ii. 338; Brazil, ii. 338; Mexico, ii. 338; New Granada, ii. 339; Venezuela, ii. 339; Ecuador, ii. 339
- Monks, persecuted by Iconoclasts**, i. 97, *note*; many infected with Eutyochianism, i. 118; insubordination of, i. 118, 120; vagabond, i. 122; numerous in Coptic Church, i. 100; subjected to military service, i. 108, *note*; wandering, described by St. Augustin, i. 112; St. Benedict, i. 122, *note*; Smaragdus, i. 129; confined to their monasteries, i. 119; wives of, must become nuns, i. 127; punishment of, for unchastity, i. 114, 147; custom of letting blood, i. 156; ministers of altar selected from, in Saxon England, i. 203; married priests replaced by, i. 333; residence of, with nuns, in Spain, i. 373; ordered to sleep singly, i. 412; pensioned when monasteries suppressed, ii. 95; ejected, held to vows of chastity, ii. 113; in Scotland ordered to leave patrimony, ii. 163; business of confession largely in hands of, ii. 260; S. Caterina di Pistoia on immorality of, ii. 304; marriage of (*see* Marriage)
- Monluc, Jean de, Bishop of Valence**, ii. 152, *note*; description of French clergy by, ii. 173
- Montariol, abbey of, and "droit de marquette,"** i. 441, *note*
- Montanists oppose second marriage**, i. 24, 27
- Monte Casino, founded by St. Benedict**, i. 124; not suppressed by Victor Emanuel, ii. 337
- Monte Fiascone, Bishop of, on Protestants, at Council of Trent**, ii. 182, *note*
- Monterouer, Guido de, on priests and female penitents**, ii. 253, *note*
- Montes, Gonzalez de, on women and priests in Seville**, ii. 259, *note*
- Montesa, Order of**, i. 455
- Monumenta Franciscana**, i. 439, *note*
- Morals, clerical, described by Cyprian and Tertullian**, i. 31; reforms of, Council of Nicæa on, i. 46; how affected by introduction of celibacy, i. 81; as described by Salvianus, i. 85; equally bad in Oriental and Western Church, i. 86; described at Council of Elvira, i. 108, *note*; by St. Jerome, i. 108; St. Augustin, i. 112; indicated by St. Theodore Studita, i. 121; described by St. Benedict of Nursia, i. 122, *note*; St. Isidor of Seville, i. 128; Smaragdus, i. 129

- Morals**, of bishops in Merovingian France, i. 132-3; of clergy in Italy, in sixth century, i. 136; of clergy in France in eighth century, i. 143; of clergy in France in ninth century, i. 156; of clergy in England in tenth century, i. 192; in monasteries in eleventh century, i. 205; of married clergy in Milan, eleventh century, i. 237-8; clerical, in Germany in twelfth century, i. 295; clerical, in France in eleventh century, i. 317; clerical, corrupt laity, i. 320, 343; clerical, in England in twelfth century, i. 338; clerical, in England in thirteenth century, i. 347; clerical, in Ireland in fourteenth century, i. 365; clerical, in Scotland in thirteenth century, i. 368; clerical, in Spain in fourteenth century, i. 383; clerical, in Church of twelfth century, i. 396-7, 403; clerical, in Church of thirteenth century, i. 409-10; clerical, in Rome, i. 424; of monasteries in fourteenth century, i. 422, *note*; in papal court, i. 424-5; in mediæval Church, i. 435; in Bohemian Church, i. 478; clerical, in fifteenth century, ii. i. 7, 8-9, 15, 20; clerical, in sixteenth century, ii. 54, 57; clerical, in English Church of sixteenth century, ii. 81-2; in English monasteries, ii. 87-9; clerical, in Brunswick in 1476, ii. 18; clerical, in Bangor, ii. 145; clerical, in Scotland, ii. 154-5, 159-60, 166; clerical, in Germany, described by Cassander and Wicelius, ii. 210-11; clerical, in Rome, in sixteenth century, ii. 226; clerical, in post-Tridentine Church, ii. 229; clerical, in Bohemia, ii. 235; clerical, in Spanish colonies, ii. 246, 247-8; clerical, in the Low Countries, ii. 237; clerical, in France, ii. 239; in the confessional, ii. 253-4; in America, ii. 341, *note*, 344; clerical, in the modern Church, ii. 339-45; have nothing to do with solicitation, according to Church views, ii. 295
- More**, Sir Thomas, satirises vices of Church, ii. 79; accusation against Luther by, ii. 80; on sheep farming, ii. 120, *note*; on Utopians, ii. 80, *note*
- Morone**, Cardinal, legate of Holy See, report by, ii. 71; reports, in 1542, ii. 177; on scarcity of priests in Germany, ii. 197, *note*; sent to Vienna, ii. 200; terms made with Ferdinand by, ii. 201; requests urged by Ferdinand to, ii. 209
- Morrison**, Sir Richard, on assumption of Church lands, ii. 131
- Mortal sin**, Wickliffe's definition of, i. 474
- Morton**, Archbishop, visitation by, ii. 16; calls condition of monasteries deplorable, ii. 89
- Mosaic dispensation**, materialism of, i. 4
- Mothers**, residence of, forbidden in priests' houses, i. 156, 410
- Mucius the Holy**, story of blind obedience of, i. 112-13
- Muhlberg**, battle of, breaks power of Protestants, ii. 73
- Mulier subintroducta**, i. 47
- Müller**, Father, on moral status of American priests, ii. 341, *note*
- Muncer**, John of Niklaushausen precursor of, ii. 24
- Munster**, synod of, in 1566, ii. 224; impossibility of reform in, ii. 238; Rasfelt, Bishop of, publishes papal commands, ii. 224
- Muratori** on the Umiliati, ii. 228-9, *note*
- Murner**, Dr. Thomas, on immoralities of priests and nuns, ii. 89
- Mutilation**, practice of, i. 29; advocated by Sextus Philosophus, i. 30
- Mylitta**, i. 4
- Mynecena**, i. 201, *note*
- Myrc**, John, Instructions for parish priests, ii. 17, *note*
- Mystic rewards** for virginity, i. 431-2
- NALANDA**, the Sangharama (Buddhist monastery) of, i. 103
- Namur**, synod of, in 1698, ii. 274; in 1742, ii. 275
- Nanno**, Count of Verona, protects married priests, i. 173
- Nantes**, Council of, in 895 or 660; i. 157, *note*; Edict of, ii. 154
- Naples**, children of ecclesiastics in, i. 416; position of priests' concubines in, i. 420; clerical marriage proposed in eighteenth century in, ii. 299-300; number of clergy in, ii. 306; priestly marriage in, ii. 333; Council of, in 1576, ii. 230
- Napoleon** re-establishes religion, ii. 316; allows Church to regulate question of marriage, ii. 316; takes up case of Talleyrand and Madame Grand, ii. 318; decides against priestly marriage, ii. 320
- Napoleon**, Louis, fall of, ii. 338
- Narbonne**, Council of, in 1551, ii. 173, *note*
- National Assembly** and Church property, ii. 306-7
- Nature**, crimes against, i. 155, 412
- Nausea**, Frederic (Blancicampianus), at Council of Mainz in 1527, ii. 47, *note*
- Nazirites**, ascetic vow of, i. 5
- Neapolitan Code**, the, i. 416
- Neocæsarea**, Council of, i. 24
- Neo-Platonism**, elevated mysticism of, i. 28
- Nestorians** as missionaries, i. 99; controversies of, i. 118

- Nestorius, Patriarch of Constantinople, heresy of, i. 98
- Netherlands, reception of Council of Trent in the, ii. 222, *note*; troubles in, caused by clerical corruption, ii. 236-7
- Neustria, reforms in, i. 148
- New Granada, suppression of monasteries in, ii. 339
- Nicaea, first General Council held at, i. 46; canon of, does not refer to celibacy, i. 49; no interference for some time after Council, with married priests, i. 52; canon of, renewed by Greek Church, i. 97; enforced by Gregory I., i. 138; enforcement of, attempted in 744, i. 148-9; enforcement in England in twelfth century, i. 336
- Nicaragua, question of secularising Church property in, ii. 339
- Nicetas Pectoratus, defence of Greek Church by, i. 223
- Nicholas de Clemanges (*see* Clemanges)
- Nicholas I., orders deposition of immoral priests, i. 158; rules for trial of priests, i. 160; skilfully tacit permission of priestly marriage, i. 161-2
- Nicholas II., election of, i. 225; canon of, on mass of non-celibate priests, i. 228; controlled by Hildebrand, i. 231; intervenes in Milanese troubles, i. 250-1; canons on celibacy renewed by, i. 269; enforces celibacy in France, i. 306
- Nicholas III. and efforts to reunite Greek Church, i. 407
- Nicholas V., regulations of, ii. 13; sincerely desirous to effect good, ii. 15
- Nicholas the Deacon, i. 21
- Nicholas, Fray, de Madrid, denounces himself, ii. 291
- Nicolites, heresy of, permits immorality, i. 21; name given to advocates of priestly marriage, i. 236; heresy of, to be extirpated, if possible, in Milan, i. 252; condemned by enormous Council of Piacenza, i. 261; condemned by Council of Bremen, i. 303
- Nigel of Ely revolts against Stephen, i. 341
- Niklaushausen, John of, ii. 24
- Nimptschen in Misnia, escape of nuns in, ii. 50
- Nismes, residence of priests' relations forbidden in, i. 411
- Nix, priest of Caisho, case of, ii. 134, *note*
- Noailles, Cardinal de, on absolution by sinful confessor, ii. 274
- Nobla Leyczon, la, i. 467
- Nonna, St., mother of St. Gregory Theologos, i. 53
- Norbert, St., reforms of, i. 319
- Nordhausen, Council of, in 1105, i. 291
- Norfolk, married priests ejected in, ii. 128
- Norfolk, Duke of, suppresses Pilgrimage of Grace, ii. 95; introduces Six Articles, ii. 111
- Normandy, condition of Church in tenth century, i. 179; enforcement of celibacy in twelfth century, i. 323-4
- North, Sir Edward, obtains the Charter House, ii. 86
- Northmen, effect of incursions of, i. 158
- Northumbrian priests, rules for, i. 194, *note*
- Norway, rights of illegitimates in, i. 231, *note*
- Nucius Nicander on English monasteries, ii. 90, 98, *note*
- Nullity of marriage in orders, i. 385; enforced at Council of Trent, ii. 204
- Nunneries, disorders in, under Carolingians, i. 156; in Saxon England, i. 190; in tenth century, i. 175; in twelfth century, i. 318-19; 343; in thirteenth century, i. 325; in fourteenth century, i. 422, *note*; in fifteenth century, ii. 2, 6; in sixteenth century, ii. 89-90; Dr. Murner on immorality in, ii. 89; abuse of confessional in, i. 435; proposal to place under episcopal control, ii. 89-90; visited by comedians in sixteenth century, ii. 189; men ordered not to visit, in Utrecht, ii. 230; Leopold I. tries to reform, in Tuscany, ii. 282; priestly "solicitation" in, case of Sta. Clara of Játiva, ii. 269; case of convent in Cuyvacan, ii. 289; case of convent de la Penitencia of Salamanca, ii. 290; case of Mercenarian Convent, Madrid, guilty mayor of, ii. 293; scandalous condition of, in Tuscany, ii. 303
- Nuns, shaving of head prohibited for, i. 114, *note*; punishment of, for unchastity, i. 147; seduction of, a capital offence, i. 154; scandalous lives of, under Carolingians, i. 155-6; test for virtue of, i. 356; residence of, with monks, in Spain, i. 373; wives of monks must become, i. 401; ordered to sleep singly, i. 412; Lollards denounce, i. 476; apostate, claimed by Church, ii. 49, *note*; emancipation of, in Reformation, ii. 50; numbers of, in England, ii. 116; married, divorce of, ii. 127; corruption of, by confessors, ii. 184, 304; account of, in manual for inquisitors, ii. 305-6; not to be visited by ecclesiastics without written permission, ii. 249
- Nuns, marriage of (*see* Marriage)
- Nürnberg, Diet of (1510), complains of Roman rapacity, ii. 34, *note*; reproached, in 1522, by Adrian VI., ii. 49; in 1523, desires to enforce canons, ii. 49; complaint laid by Diet of, before Pope, ii. 59-60; senate of, deprives Franciscans and Dominicans of superintendence, ii. 60, *note*

- Nurses of priests' children, honourable position of, i. 374
- Nursia, asceticism of priest of, i. 139-40
- OATH, of Knights Templars, i. 451; prescribed for French clergy, ii. 308
- Obedience, monachial, nature of, i. 112
- Observances common to Catholicism and Buddhism, i. 23; and Mazdeism, i. 35
- Observantines, ii. 21
- Odo of Canterbury lays small stress on celibacy, i. 191
- Odo of Toul excommunicates immoral monks, i. 404
- Ogilby, Marion, ii. 158
- Old Catholics, schism of, ii. 329
- Olmutz, synod of, in 1342, i. 419; in 1413, i. 479, *note*; in 1591, ii. 233
- Orange, Council of, in 441, i. 77; William of, and Council of Trent, ii. 231, *note*
- Ordeal in ecclesiastical trials, i. 160
- Ordericus Vitalis somewhat scandalised by Robert of Rouen, i. 179
- Order of Widows, apostolic, i. 103
- Orders, military, i. 451
- Orders, religious, abolition of, recommended, ii. 183
- Orders, holy, reduced by Wickliffe to priesthood and diaconate, i. 473
- Ordination, dissolves marriage, i. 385; declared indelible, i. 386; of priests' sons allowed by Adalbero of Metz, i. 178; priests' sons ineligible for, i. 215; sacrament of, attacked by Luther, ii. 41; superior to that of marriage, i. 386
- Orestes nearly loses his life in tumult, i. 117
- Origen, views of, on celibacy distinct from asceticism, i. 19; on self-mutilation, i. 29
- Origenism, civil strife concerning, i. 71
- Orihuella, synod of, in 1600, ii. 236
- Orleans, Council of, reference at, to Bonosiacs, i. 68; Manichæism at, i. 244
- Ormanetto, Niccolo, mission of, to Bavaria, ii. 201, *note*
- Orthodox Brethren, i. 480
- Orsiesus, rule of, i. 110
- Ortlibenses, heresy of, i. 469
- Orzechowski, Stanislas, case of, ii. 208, *note*, 209, *notes*
- Osber, Council of, in 1062, i. 237
- Osbern, Life of St. Dunstan by, i. 192-3, *notes*
- Osiander on perpetual virginity of the Virgin, i. 68-9, *note*
- Osius, Bishop of Cordova, leading member, Council Elvira, i. 43
- Osnabruck, synod of, in 1628, ii. 233; in 1625, ii. 237
- Osnabruck, von Hoya, Bishop of, ii. 224
- Osoarius on marriage of military orders, i. 455-6
- Ossory, synod of, in 1320, i. 365; Bishop of, ii. 118
- Oswald, St., reforming zeal of, i. 195
- Oswalde's law, charter of, i. 195
- Otfrid of Watten, story of, i. 313
- Othlonius, i. 220, *note*
- Otho I. deposes John XII., i. 165; edict of, concerning sons of ecclesiastics, i. 170
- Otho IV., league of, with John of England, i. 345, *note*
- Otho of Constance supports clergy against Gregory VII., i. 271; angrily accused by Gregory, i. 272; restored to communion at Ulm, i. 272; joins imperialist party, i. 272; Gebhardt elected in place of, i. 272
- Otto, Cardinal, at Council of London, 1237, i. 350
- Otto of Ostia, mission of, at Constance, i. 272
- Ottoboni, constitutions of, long remained English Church law, i. 355
- Oviedo on priestly marriage, in Spanish colonies, ii. 245
- Oxford, Council of, in 1222, i. 350, *note*; University of, on Wickliffe, i. 473, *note*; reforms proposed by, ii. 9; see of, created, ii. 100; Dr. Richard Smith tries to stir tumult in, ii. 119
- PACHECO, Cardinal, ii. 214; reads to Pius IV. letter from Philip II., ii. 216
- Pacheco, Padre Felipe Garcia, and the Spanish Inquisition, ii. 275, 290
- Paderborn, synods of, in 1548 and 1549, ii. 190
- Pagan priests, restrictions on, i. 42
- Pagi on Council of Nantes, in 660 or 895, i. 157, *note*
- Paleario, Aonio, on Council of Trent, ii. 180, *note*
- Palencia, Council of, in 1129, i. 376; in 1383, i. 382
- Palestine, monachism introduced into, i. 106, *note*
- Palladius (*see* Patrick, St.)
- Pallavicini, on immorality of clergy, ii. 193, *note*; on marriage of clergy, ii. 194, *note*
- Panormitanus (*see* Tudeschi)
- Pantheism of Brethren of the Free Spirit, i. 469
- Panzini on celibacy and attendant immorality, ii. 326; delivered to Inquisition, ii. 326; released by Italian Government, ii. 326; republishes essay, ii. 326
- Papacy, degradation of, in tenth and eleventh centuries, i. 164; released from secular subjection, i. 225-6; election of, limited to Roman clergy, i. 235; power of, culminates, under Innocent III., i. 408; legate of, refuses

- obedience to, ii. 10; supremacy of, abolished in England, ii. 85; restored in England, ii. 124; abolished in Scotland, ii. 169; abolished in Gallican Church, ii. 316
- Papal court, immorality of, i. 424-5; rapacity of, ii. 14; reluctance in, to reassemble Council of Trent, ii. 182; number of women in, ii. 344
- Papal dispensations (*see* Dispensations)
- Papal infallibility in Vatican Council, ii. 328, 349
- Papal Penitentiary, i. 411, ii. 55, 175; on civil marriage, ii. 331; case of poverty preventing priests' appearance before, ii. 358
- Paphnutius, story of, i. 50
- Paraguay, suppression of monasteries in, ii. 338
- Páramo discredits female testimony, ii. 284, *note*
- Paris, Council of, in 615, i. 128; 1074, i. 307; 1212, i. 326, 411; 1323, i. 437, *note*; 1521, ii. 89; 1528, ii. 172; Huguenot synod of, ii. 151
- Parker, Archbishop, marriage of, ii. 117, *note*; estimates number of deprived clergy, ii. 127; nominated to see of Canterbury, ii. 137; somewhat modifies Queen Elizabeth's dislike to married clergy, ii. 138; orders return of clergy, ii. 139; Queen Elizabeth's insolence to wife of, ii. 141; confidences of, to Burghley, ii. 144; addressed on case of Anne Goodacre, ii. 170
- Parlement of Paris on religious organisation, ii. 302
- Parliament, English, confirms supremacy under Henry VIII., ii. 85; enacts the Six Articles, ii. 111; modifies the Six Articles, ii. 115; legalises clerical marriage, ii. 118; reactionary measures of, under Mary, ii. 124
- Parliament, Scotch, of 1542, ii. 158; 1560, ii. 161, *note*
- Parliamentary abbots, in 1539, ii. 98
- Parma, stormy times in, i. 263
- Partidas Las Siete, i. 14
- Partner in guilt, absolution by, ii. 272-3
- Paschal II., endeavours to enforce celibacy, i. 292; receives repentant ecclesiastics, i. 292; enforces celibacy in Denmark, i. 303; Brittany, i. 312; Flanders, i. 315; orders reforms in Spain, i. 373; on ministrations of married priests, i. 333; on children of priests, i. 335
- Passau, enforcement of celibacy in, i. 273; Council of, in 1284, i. 419, *note*; revolt against bishop, in, ii. 11; Transaction of, ii. 75, 182
- Pastoral, earliest French, i. 437-8
- Paterin faction causes bloodshed in Milan, i. 250
- Paterins, opprobrious name for Cathari, i. 245; German papalists called, i. 233
- Patmore, Thomas, condemned by Bishop Stokesley, ii. 104
- Patra, the Buddha's begging dish, i. 23
- Patrick, St., classification of comparative merit by, i. 37; traditional Christianising of Ireland by, i. 183
- Paul, St., liberalism of, regarding Jewish law, i. 11; text from, implies marriage of apostles, i. 13; asceticism of, i. 17; specifies monogamic condition necessary for deacons, priests, and bishops, i. 26
- Paul III., interferes between Melancthon and John Eck, ii. 72; Charles V. breaks with, ii. 74; grants dispensations to married priests, ii. 74; attempts reform, ii. 89; excommunicates Henry VIII., ii. 94; orders reform for French clergy, ii. 173; failure of reforms of, ii. 192
- Paul IV., on English Church lands, ii. 131; savage decrees of, on pretended confessors, ii. 256; on "solicitation" by confessors of Granada, ii. 257-8
- Paul V. on jurisdiction of Spanish Inquisition, ii. 261
- Paul of Samosata, the heresiarch, i. 32
- Paul the Thebæan first anchorite, i. 105
- Paula, Francisco de, work against enforced celibacy, ii. 326
- Pauline epistles, commentary on, by Lefèvre d'Étaples, ii. 150
- Pavia, synod of, in 1022, i. 206; schismatic synod of, in 1076, i. 259, 260
- Payne, Peter, i. 477, *note*
- Peckham, Archbishop of Canterbury, applies to Rome, i. 355
- Pedro I. of Brazil suppresses convents and military orders, ii. 337
- Pedro the Cruel, orders of, concerning clerical concubines, i. 382
- Pedro de Luna, papal legate, i. 382
- Pelagius II. relaxes rule of celibacy, i. 136
- Pelayo, Alvar, i. 383, 384, 412, ii. 175, *note*
- Peñafiel, Council of, in 1302, i. 380
- Penance, term of, for infraction of canons, i. 184
- Penitential of Theodore on marriage, i. 39
- Penitentials, coarseness and suggestiveness of, ii. 251
- Penitentiary, papal, i. 411
- Penitentiary, taxes of the, ii. 55
- Penitents, prototypes of St. Mary of Egypt, i. 107; difficult to induce to denounce confessors, ii. 270
- Pepin d'Heristal, i. 142
- Pepin le Bref assembles synod at Soissons, i. 148; carries out work of Carloman and Boniface, i. 151

- Périgord, Manichæism at, in 1147, i. 245
 Persecution, Marian, ii. 135; of Manichæism, i. 34
 Persecution, of monks by Leo the Isaaurian, i. 97, *note*; by Valens, i. 108, *note*; of married priests, i. 279; of Catholics in Scotland, ii. 169-70; of celibacy under the Terror, ii. 311
 Person's, Tale, the, i. 437
 Perth, monasteries destroyed in, ii. 164
 Peru, corruption of Church in, ii. 247
 Perushim, i. 9
 Peter, St., descriptive words of, regarding Christ, i. 11
 Peter d'Ailly of Cambrai, i. 436, *note*; realises need of reform, ii. 4
 Peter of Antioch, i. 118
 Peter Cantor deploras inferiority of clerical morals, i. 320, 461
 Peter, Cardinal, urged to suppress clerical marriage, i. 239
 Peter, Cardinal of Capua, holds synod of Lancisky, i. 301
 Peter Martyr, tumult in Oxford against, ii. 119; exhumation of wife of, ii. 132
 Peter the Venerable relates miracle, i. 321
 Peter de Vinea, i. 346
 Peter Waldo, i. 466
 Peterborough, abbot of, offers bribe to Cromwell, ii. 93, *note*
 Peterborough, creation of see of, ii. 100
 Petrarch, opinion of papal court, i. 426, *note*
 Petrusian heresy, i. 463
 Peutwitz, escape of nuns from, ii. 51
 Peyrinis, Laurent de, regulations of, ii. 243
 Pfaffenkind, i. 417
 Philastrius on self-mortification, i. 20, *note*
 Philibert of Sedan on clerical marriage, ii. 314
 Philip of Burgundy, Bishop of Utrecht, ii. 56
 Philip of Savoy, career of, i. 353-4, *note*
 Philip II., petitioned by University of Louvain, ii. 191; opposed to concessions to heretics, ii. 200; opposes clerical marriage, ii. 214, 215; begged by Pope to send influential representative to Trent, ii. 200; representatives of, support Cardinal Commendone, ii. 218; opposes St. Charles Borromeo, ii. 228; orders reception of canons of Trent, ii. 222
 Philippians dispute with Calvinists and Lutherans, ii. 225, *note*
 Philo-mysticism proves influence of Western thought, i. 9; Phœbe, deacon at Cenchrea, i. 56
 Photinus, heresy regarding the Virgin, i. 67
 Piacenza, Bishop of, supports anti-pope Cadalus, i. 235; great Council of, in 1095, i. 261; Bishop of, deposed and murdered, i. 263
 Pibo of Toul asks papal decision on priestly marriage, i. 289
 Picardi, i. 480
 Picards, the, i. 469
 Pichardus, i. 470
 Pictish Church, neophytes of, i. 185
 Pier-Leone, anti-pope, stained with foulest crimes, i. 424
 Piero di Carbario, i. 401
 Pierre d'Ailly, i. 470
 Pierre de Bruys burned alive, i. 463
 "Piers Ploughman," quotations from, i. 354, 438, 439, *note*, 444; ii. 78
 Pietro Igneo, Bishop of St. Albano, i. 263
 Pietro, schismatic Bishop of Lucca, i. 263
 Pilgrimage of Grace, the, ii. 94
 Pinytus of Gnosen tries to make celibacy compulsory, i. 22
 Pisa, Council of, failure of attempts of, ii. 3
 Pistoia, troubles in, i. 263; Sta. Caterina di, ii. 304; Bishop Scipione de Ricci of, on the confessional, ii. 304; Council of, in 1786, ii. 304
 Pius II., admits the marriage of clergy of primitive Church, i. 14; favours clerical marriage, ii. 27; increases annates of Mainz, ii. 34, *note*
 Pius III., elaborate bull of, ii. 185
 Pius IV., on origin of celibacy, i. 15; admits story of Paphnutius, i. 51; reconvenes Council of Trent, ii. 182; temporises with demand for priestly marriage, ii. 194; swears prelates to support vows of chastity, ii. 198; concedes cup to German laity, ii. 209; treatment of Orzechowski by, ii. 209, *note*; pressed by Maximilian II. on clerical marriage, ii. 212; vacillates, ii. 214, 217
 Pius V., admits that clerical immorality causes heresy, ii. 58, *note*; accession of, ii. 217; character of, ii. 217; reforms by, ii. 223; suppresses the Umiliati, ii. 229, *note*; legislates on property for priests' children, ii. 234; enforces Tridentine canons, ii. 234; grants power to Archbishop Maximilian, ii. 239
 Pius VI. on abuse of confessional, ii. 275
 Pius VII. opposes Talleyrand on priestly marriage, ii. 318
 Pius IX., on dissolution of priestly marriage, i. 390, *note*; encyclical letter of, Qui pluribus, ii. 325; organisation of Vatican Council, ii. 328; denounces civil marriage, ii. 331

- Platonic union between the sexes, i. 31
 Poggio, lesson taught by, ii. 242, *note*
 Poissy, Colloquy of, on perpetual virginity of Virgin, i. 69, *note*; result of Colloquy, ii. 238-9
 Poitiers, synod of, in 1000, i. 181; stormy synod of, in 1078, i. 308; Huguenot synod of, in 1560, ii. 238
 Poland, enforcement of celibacy in, i. 300; member of Diet of, complains of papal rapacity, ii. 14, *note*; clerical celibacy questioned in fifteenth century, ii. 29; sacerdotal marriage asked for at Diet of, ii. 192; sacerdotal marriage and communion in both kinds asked for in, ii. 192; doctrine of priestly marriage advances in, ii. 301
 Pole, Cardinal, legate powers of, ii. 125, *note*; forbids withdrawal of priests, ii. 133; death of, ii. 135; assists Cardinal Caraffa, ii. 183
 Polish National Church of America, ii. 330
 Polity, Civil and Ecclesiastical Institutes of, i. 203
 Polygamy of Moslems compared with Christian morals, ii. 347
 Pomerania, clerical morals of, in fifteenth century, ii. 19
 Pomeranus present at Luther's wedding, ii. 51
 Poor Men of Lyons, the, i. 468
 Pope, John of Pirna denounces the, as anti-Christ, i. 472
 Pope, Simon, appeal of, ii. 125
 Popes, conflicting claims of three, i. 214
 Popes, rival, i. 235
 Poppo of Brixen made Pope, i. 218
 Popular desire for clerical celibacy, i. 79, 279; invoked by Church, i. 276-7
 Population, influence of celibacy upon, i. 449
 Portalis, speaks on clerical marriage, ii. 316; quotation from speech of, ii. 317, *note*
 Portera y Vela, Fray Antonio de la, atrocious case of, ii. 291
 Portugal, added to Spanish Crown, 1580, ii. 261; military orders in, i. 455; jurisdiction in, for priestly "solicitation," ii. 261; offences in, put under Inquisition, ii. 276; Benedict IV. addresses brief to, ii. 276
 Postal facilities for inquisitors, ii. 283
 Poverty, not required in primitive monachism, i. 111; enforced in rule of St. Tetradius, i. 125; of Irish Church, i. 363; of Scottish Church, ii. 164; of Waldenses, i. 466-7; of Franciscans, i. 471
 Poynette, Bishop, controversial writing of, ii. 118; Apologie for the godly marriage of priestes, ii. 126, *note*
 Præmure for recognising papal authority, ii. 95; derivation of name, ii. 95, *note*
 Pragmatic sanction of 1483, ii. 12
 Prague, enforcement of celibacy in, i. 293-4; University of, condemns Wickliffe, i. 477, *note*; Council of, in 1420, i. 479, *note*; synod of, in 1565, ii. 232, 235
 Pratimoksha, oldest sculpture of Buddhism, i. 102
 Pregiudizi del Celibato, ii. 299
 Premonstratensians, i. 318
 Prerogatives, royal, disavowed as head of Church, ii. 124
 Priests, children of (*see* Children)
 Priests, divorce of (*see* Divorce)
 Priests, immorality of (*see* Morals)
 Priests, adulterous wives of, to be put away, i. 27; responsible for parish property, i. 137; wives of, in Italy, in eighth century, i. 142-3; punishment of, for unchastity, i. 147; disorders caused by wives of, i. 167; purgation of, in Saxon England, i. 202; wives of, reduced to slavery, i. 221, 289; resist celibacy, i. 238, 249, 262-3, 275; obliged to join in wolf hunts, i. 370; power and privileges of, i. 442; corrupt the laity, i. 318, 431, 434, ii. 59-60, 177, 346; not to be consecrated without testimonial for character, ii. 191; corruption of, surpassing that of other men, ii. 193; scarcity of, in Germany, ii. 197, *note*; set bad example to converts in Spanish colonies, ii. 247; cruelly treated in Reign of Terror, ii. 308
 Priesthood, hereditary (*see* Hereditary)
 Priesthood incompatible with profession of medicine, i. 269, *note*
 Priestly caste, danger of creating, i. 166
 Primitive Church, asceticism in, i. 17; marriage permitted in, i. 14
 Procedure, ecclesiastical, gives practical immunity, i. 159
 Procopius, St., marriage of, i. 210; the Hussite, i. 480
 Prodicus, originator of mystic libertinism of Gnostics, i. 20
 Promotion dependent on celibacy, i. 77
 Property, Church, threatened by priestly marriage, i. 137; dilapidation of, in tenth century, i. 165; in sixteenth century, ii. 71; left under Queen Mary in private hands, ii. 130; transmitted to children of ecclesiastics, ii. 234
 Property, monastic, confiscated in Germany, ii. 65; Scotland, ii. 163; France, ii. 306-7; Italy, ii. 337
 Prosecution of priests, many victims for each, ii. 361
 Prostitution encouraged by celibacy, ii. 347
 Protá, Dr., on civil marriage, ii. 333

- Protestant belief, Confession of Augsburg, ii. 65
- Pujades, on *Ferma despoli forçada*, i. 442, *note*
- Pujalon, Fernandez, of Ciempozuelos, immorality of, ii. 285
- Puricelli, on marriage of Eriberto of Milan, i. 245, *note*; on Ambrosian tradition, i. 247-8, *note*
- Puy, Raymond du, organises Knights of St. John, i. 451
- QUADRIPARTITUS, ii. 332, *note*
- Quedlinburg, Diet of, in 1085, i. 285
- Quick, Synodican, in *Gallia Reformata*, ii. 151, *note*
- Quietist monks, i. 8, *note*
- Quimper, diocese of, hereditary descent in, i. 312
- Quinisext in Trullo, i. 94; canons of, i. 94
- Quiroga, Inquisitor-General, threatened by Sixtus V., ii. 261
- RADULPHUS of Ardens on clerical morals, i. 320, *note*
- Rag-pickers, known as Patari, i. 249, *note*
- Rainaldo of Fiesole, dissolute life of, i. 209
- Ranald and Raymond, father and son, both priests, i. 167
- Raoult of Poitiers, i. 320
- Rapacity of papal court, ii. 14; calls for reform, ii. 33; proved by case of Archbishop Diether, ii. 34, *note*
- Rasfelt of Munster forced to resign bishopric, ii. 224
- Ratharius of Verona, on priests' sons as priests, i. 167; priests of diocese of, all married, i. 169; troubles in diocese of, i. 172-4
- Ratisbon, Council of, in thirteenth century, i. 296; Bishop of, in 1512, issues canons, ii. 56; Council of, in 1524, ii. 48; Diet of, in 1532, ii. 69; in 1541, ii. 72
- Ratramnus of Corvey on Nicene canons, i. 48, *note*
- Rauscher, Cardinal, denounces civil marriage, ii. 331
- Ravenna, Council of, in 967, condemns priestly marriage, i. 172; in 997, i. 181-2; in thirteenth century, i. 296; in 1568, ii. 230
- Raymond of Galicia, i. 375
- Raymond du Puy founds Knights of St. John, i. 451
- Recared I. enforces celibacy, i. 135
- Recherches sur l'Etat Monastique et Ecclésiastique, ii. 300, *note*
- Reconciliation of imperialist clergy, 1106, i. 292; of Anglican clergy, ii. 133; of England to Rome ii. 130
- Reformation in Germany, the, ii. 31-76; caused by clerical corruption, ii. 57, 171, 177, 192, 223-4; in England, ii. 77-149; in Scotland, ii. 154-70
- Reforms proposed at Constance, i. 427; at Basle, i. 427; at Trent, ii. 206
- Regency, Council of the, ii. 49
- Reggio, troubles in, i. 263
- Relics, false, sold by monks, i. 112; ridiculed by Erasmus, ii. 35-6; impostures of, in England, ii. 97
- Rély, Jean de, Bishop of Angers, ii. 15
- Renan, Ernest, on morality of clergy, ii. 342
- Renaud, Archbishop of Rheims, protects Flemish priests, i. 314
- Requesens, Luis de, ii. 214
- Residence of female relations, forbidden to priests, i. 156, 410; canon of Nicæa on, i. 46; law of Honorius on, i. 49; prohibition of, enforced, i. 88, *note*; in Greek Church, i. 97; Gregory I. on, i. 1. 138; forbidden in 744, i. 149; with priests, legislation on, i. 154; tolerated in Spain, i. 370, 376; Archbishop Grindal on, ii. 145; Hermann von Wied on, ii. 176-7; over forty years old, allowed by Augsburg Code, ii. 186
- Residence, of sisters and nieces forbidden by Council of Bordeaux, ii. 240; of women regulated in Spanish colonies, ii. 246; with priests in United States, ii. 341, *note*; in Vatican, ii. 344; discussed in modern Councils, ii. 345-6
- Residence of illegitimate children with clerical fathers forbidden in Scotland, ii. 160
- "Reserved" offences, ii. 295; seduction never included among, ii. 295, 351
- Resistance of clergy to celibacy, i. 237-8, 249, 263, 270-1, 275
- Responsibility of the Church, i. 442
- Restitution, form of, for restored priests, ii. 128, *note*
- Restrictions on monachism, by Valens, i. 108, *note*; by Majorian, i. 116; in the East, i. 118
- Restrictions on clerical marriage by Queen Elizabeth, ii. 138
- Results of celibacy, i. 409-11
- Reusch, on the Order of Jesuits, ii. 266, *note*; and the "Old Catholic" movement, ii. 329
- Revolution, French, question of priestly marriage in, ii. 301; Church property in, ii. 306-7; marriage encouraged under, ii. 311
- Rheims, Council of, in 874, i. 160; in 1049, i. 221; in 1119, i. 322; in 1130 and 1131, i. 387; in 1583, ii. 240
- Rhine lands, "Old Catholic" movement in, ii. 329
- Rhodes, Knights of, i. 451

- Ribadeneira, disciple and biographer, Ignatius Loyola, ii. 175
- Richard Fitz-Neal, son of a bishop, made Bishop of London, i. 342
- Richard of Albano, i. 315
- Richard of Dover reports to Thomas Cromwell, ii. 96
- Richard of Marseilles, papal legate to Spain, i. 372
- Richard the Fearless, i. 179
- Richmond, Thomas, case of, i. 477 *note*
- Richstich-Landrecht, children of clerks in, i. 417, *note*
- Rig Veda, the, on Tapas, i. 8, *note*
- Rigobert, St., Archbishop of Rheims, i. 145
- Rivera on ecclesiastical law in Mexico, ii. 250
- Rives, Fray Joseph, tried in Valencia for solicitation, ii. 286; evades letter of papal decrees, ii. 286
- Robber Synod at Ephesus, i. 118
- Robert d'Arbrissel, i. 311, 319
- Robert d'Artois marries a widow, i. 315
- Robert de Curzon, Cardinal, i. 411
- Robert the Frisian, i. 312, 313
- Robert the Good (Naples), i. 421
- Robert the Hierosolymitan of Flanders, i. 314
- Robert the Pious, indifferent about celibacy, i. 207; assembles Council of Bourges, i. 207; sentence of excommunication on, i. 211; causes heretics to be burned, i. 244
- Robert of Rouen, publicly and openly married, i. 179
- Robles, Life of Ximenes by, ii. 22, *note*
- Rodolf of Bourges on residence of female relatives, i. 157, *note*
- Rodolf of Swabia, revolt against, i. 282; menacing letter from Pope Gregory, i. 277
- Rome, synod of, in 1079, i. 51; in 384, i. 62, 113; Councils of, in 721 and 732, i. 142; Council of, in 745, i. 149; 826, i. 230, *note*; 1051, i. 221; 1057, i. 225; 1059, i. 228; 1063, i. 237; 1066, i. 255; 1074, i. 269; 1725, ii. 342; Latin American Council held in, ii. 343; pseudo Council in, under Silvester, i. 50, 136; avarice of, ii. 14, 33; brothels kept by prelates in, ii. 57, *note*; England reconciled to, ii. 129; Germany oppressed by, ii. 33; heretics forbidden in, i. 70; Ireland under authority of, i. 361; influence of, extended to Spain, i. 371; limits of jurisdiction of, i. 88; demoralising effect of, i. 158, 398, 430; licentiousness of, acknowledged by Alexander IV., i. 413; morals of pagan, i. 18; of Christian, i. 85, 210, 226; pilgrims deterred from visiting, i. 165; reforms in, by Pius V.; ii. 223; supremacy of, asserted over Milan, i. 252; toleration in, of sacrilege and lust, ii. 59
- Romuald the priest and his wife, property confirmed to, i. 143
- Romuald, St., disciples of, i. 217
- Rosceline addressed by Thibaut of Etampes, i. 335
- Rota, priest of, fate of, i. 281
- Rothius on the Nicolites, i. 21, *note*
- Rouen, Archbishops of, in tenth century, i. 179; Council of, in 1072, i. 308; in 1148, i. 466; in 1189, i. 397, *note*; in 1581, ii. 154
- Rousillon, Edict of, in 1564, ii. 153
- Ruchrath, John, of Oberwesel, ii. 28
- Rules of monachism, early, i. 110
- Rule of St. Augustin, i. 319; St. Benedict, i. 124, 151; St. Cassianus, i. 122; St. Cæsarius of Arles, i. 125; St. Chrodegang, i. 152; St. Columba, i. 185; St. Orsiesius, i. 110; St. Tetradius, i. 125
- Rupert of Duits, on priestly marriage, i. 295
- Russel, Lord, suppresses insurrection in Devon, ii. 120
- Russian Church, customs of, i. 97-8
- Rusticus of Narbonne, i. 78
- SACCOFORI, heresy of, i. 34
- Sacerdotalism, celibacy a requisite of, i. 267; irrevocable nature of, i. 386
- Sacrament of marriage inferior to that of ordination, i. 385-6, 388
- Sacraments of sinful priests, i. 187, 230, *note*, 437, 460, 473; ii. 6, 272
- Sacrilege and lust, toleration for, ii. 59
- Sadducees, doctrine of, as to future life, i. 8
- Sadoleto on commission for reform, ii. 183
- "Sæculum Obscurum," i. 164
- Saignet, Guillaume, writes *Lamentatio ob Cœlibatum Sacerdotum*, ii. 25
- St. Agatha, shamelessness of nuns at, i. 319
- St. Albans, shameless immorality of monks of, ii. 16
- St. Andrews, Archbishop of, at baptism of James VI., ii. 161, *note*
- St. Asaphs, Bishop of, sits in judgment on married priests, ii. 125
- Sta. Caterina di Pistoia, ii. 304
- St. Cornelius, church of, at Compiègne, i. 326
- St. Denis, Council of, in 995, i. 177; abbey of, disorders in, i. 319
- St. Fara, convent of, i. 318-19
- St. Francisco de Paula of Seville, church of, case of "solicitation" in, ii. 282
- St. Gildas de Ruys, abbey of, i. 319
- St. Iago of Compostella, church of, i. 374
- St. Isidor of Seville, i. 128

- St. John, Knights of, i. 451; Order of, broken up in England, ii. 98
- St. Marco, preservation of, ii. 337
- St. Michael, Order of, i. 456
- St. Norbert, Order of, i. 319
- St. Omer, synod of, in 1099, i. 314
- S. Pelayo de Antealtaria, abbot of, paragon of brutish sensuality, i. 377
- St. Peter's of Sens, abbey of, i. 175
- St. Riquier, abbey of, strict rules of, ii. 23, *note*
- St. Sabina, Cardinal of, enforces celibacy in Sweden, i. 303, *note*
- St. Stephen, church of, in Aretino, i. 168
- St. Toribio of Peru, ii. 247
- St. Ursmar, married canons of, i. 326
- St. Vitus, monks of, reformed by Gregory I., i. 127
- Saints, number of, in Benedictine Order, i. 126
- Salamanca, Council of, in 1335, i. 381
- Salerno, Council of, in 1596, ii. 280
- Salvianus, on condition of morals, i. 85-6; admires chastity of barbarians, i. 131
- Salzburg, disorders of, in the twelfth century, i. 295; synod of, in 1537, ii. 177; in 1549, ii. 190; Archbishop of, on synod at, ii. 194; exhorted by Pius V., ii. 224; instructs clergy on morality, ii. 232
- Sampson, Thomas, on position of married clergy, ii. 147
- Sanadon of Oléron on clerical marriage, ii. 314
- Sánchez on solicitation, ii. 273
- Sanders, on Cranmer's time-serving, ii. 114, *note*; on delay in authorising priestly marriage, ii. 137, *note*; on wives of Elizabethan clergy, ii. 145
- Sandys, Bishop, on delay in authorising priestly marriage, ii. 137
- Sangharama, Buddhist, i. 103
- Sangreal, likeness to Patra of Buddhism, i. 23
- Sankhya, philosophy of, i. 6; Buddha reduces philosophy of, to a religion, i. 6-7
- Sannazaro on Innocent III. and Alexander VI., i. 428-9, *note*
- Sannyasis, class of, instituted by Brahminism, i. 7
- San Severino, Council of, ii. 230
- Santa Clara of Jativa, nuns of, and confessors, ii. 269, 285
- Santafé, Council of, in 1556, ii. 246
- Santiago, Order of, i. 453
- Saoshiyans, the Zend Messiah, i. 22, *note*
- Sarabaitæ, vagabond monks, i. 122
- Saragossa, Council of, in 381, i. 107
- Sarah, abbess, fortitude of, i. 220, *note*
- Sardinia, civil marriage enacted in, ii. 330
- Sarpi, Fra Paolo, on Council of Trent, ii. 201, *note*, 204, *note*; on Council of Trent and priestly marriage, ii. 235
- Sarria, Fray Vicente, brutal superfluous questions of, in confessional, ii. 269
- Satan, place of, in a characteristic legend, i. 434; in legend related by St. Thomas of Cantimpré, i. 436
- Sausa, de, on confession and solicitation, ii. 262
- Sauvestre, M., estimates number of French ecclesiastics, ii. 313, *note*; gives details of clerical prosecutions (schools), ii. 361
- Savonarola, on ecclesiastics of his day, ii. 15, *note*; on morals in nunneries, ii. 22; on priests as wolves in sheep's clothing, ii. 253; convent of (San Marco), preserved under Victor Emanuel, ii. 337
- Savoy, harsh measures against clergy in, ii. 311
- Sbinco of Prague, reforms by, i. 478
- Scandal more dreaded than sin, ii. 243, 250, 252, 259, 274, 351
- Scandals of agapetæ, i. 43
- Scandinavia, morals of bishops in, ii. 2
- Scania, demand for priestly marriage in, i. 301
- Scaren, English Bishop of, plunders see, i. 338
- Schening, Council of, in 1248, i. 302
- Schieler, "Theory and Practice of the Confessional," ii. 277, *note*, 355, *note*
- Schism, the Great, i. 426
- Schmalkalden League of, i. 67; negotiations with Henry VIII., ii. 109, 113
- Schmidt, Johann, Bishop of Vienna, ii. 70, *note*
- Schulte, von, and the "Old Catholic" movement, ii. 329
- Schweinfurth, negotiations at, ii. 69
- Scipione de' Ricci on confessional, ii. 304
- Scotland, Church of, founded by St. Columba, i. 185; claim of see of York on, i. 185; celibacy in early Church of, i. 185; position of concubines in, i. 231, *note*; enforcement of celibacy in, i. 367; constitutions of Ottoboni disregarded in, i. 368; Reformation in, ii. 155; fast progress of Reformation in, ii. 159; abrogation of celibacy in, ii. 161-2
- Secrecy of inquiries into priestly morals, ii. 351
- Seduction of nuns made a capital offence, i. 154; of penitents by confessors, ii. 252
- Segarelli, Gherardo, forms heretical sect, i. 471; dreadful death of, i. 472
- Segenfrid of Le Mans, evil example of, i. 175
- Selle, Hendrik, vengeance of heretics, against, i. 470

- Sendomir, agreement of, i. 481
 Sens, Archbishop of, at Council of Trent, ii. 204
 Separation, Law of, ii. 330
 Seraphim Order, the, i. 438
 Seraphim of Gran on marriage, i. 297-8
 Sergius III., unconcealed dissoluteness of, i. 164
 Serfs, ordination of, i. 178
 Serrao, Bishop of Potenza, on priestly marriage, ii. 300
 Servants, priests' wives considered as, ii. 145
 Servitude of sons of priests, i. 178; of wives of priests, i. 221, 289
 Severus repeals Majorian's laws, i. 116, *note*
 Seville, Council of, in 1512, ii. 17; Archbishop of, in 1546, ii. 176; crowds of women accuse priests at, ii. 259, *note*
 Sextus, Philosophus, advocates practice of mutilation, i. 30
 Shakespeare, plain speaking of, i. 432
 Shaving, clergy demur as to regulations for, ii. 231
 Shaxton, Bishop, opposed to Six Articles, ii. 112, *note*
 Sheep farming, Sir Thomas More on, ii. 120, *note*
 Shrewsbury, hereditary benefices in, i. 330
 Sicily, monachism reformed in, by Gregory I., i. 127; celibacy in, i. 138
 Siedeler, Jacob, married priest, fate of, ii. 43
 Siegfried, Archbishop of Mainz, a trimmer regarding celibacy, i. 271; troubles of, in matter of celibacy, i. 274-6
 Siena, Council of, in 1423, ii. 10
 Siete Partidas (Las), code known as, i. 14; celibacy enjoined in, i. 378
 Sigismund, Emperor, advocates clerical marriage, ii. 26
 Silesia, heresy of John of Pirna in, i. 472; clerical marriage asked for in 1831, ii. 325
 Siliceo of Toledo, first reference to confessional box, ii. 255
 Silvester I., supposed Roman Council held by, i. 50, 136
 Silvester II. on celibacy, i. 181
 Silvester III. elected Pope by faction of rebels, i. 214
 Simancas, Bishop, on married priests, ii. 219
 Simoneta, Cardinal, ii. 215
 Simoniacal priests, sacraments of, i. 229, *note*
 Simony, in eleventh century, i. 215; condemned under heavy penalties at Mainz, i. 220-1; abandoned at Milan, i. 252; Council of Milan (1098) severe on, i. 261-2; Gregory VII. inhibits, i. 271; Lanfranc represses, i. 329-30; St. Thomas à Becket attacks, i. 345
 Simplicius, St., of Autun, story of, related by St. Gregory of Tours, i. 80
 Sin, its influence on priest officiating in sacraments, i. 228; mortal, defined by Wickcliffe, i. 473-4
 Siricius, supporting celibacy, does not refer to Nicene canon, i. 49; addresses epistle to Himerius, i. 63; urges celibacy, i. 64-5; denounces Bonosus, i. 67; condemns Jovinian, i. 69; makes priestly celibacy compulsory in Gaul and Spain, i. 72; orders imprisonment of unchaste monks and nuns, i. 114
 Sister, residence of, with priest forbidden, i. 156
 Sithieu Abbey, ii. 23, *note*
 Sitten, synod of, in 1500, ii. 20
 Six Articles, the (*see* Articles)
 Sixtus III., treatise of, on chastity, i. 39; trial of, for seduction of nun, i. 86
 Sixtus IV., vices of, i. 428
 Sixtus V. and cases of guilty Jesuits, ii. 261
 Slave, children of, by ecclesiastic emancipated, ii. 246
 Slavery, Christian, by Moors, i. 442, *note*
 Slavery, for wives of priests, i. 221, 289; for sons of priests, i. 178, ii. 246-7; for vagabonds, under Edward VI., ii. 102
 Slaves, female, union of, with priests, ii. 246
 Slavonic Church, connection with Greek, i. 290, *note*; adherence of, to priestly marriage, i. 300
 Sleiden on organised concubinage, i. 440, *note*
 Sleswick, clerical morals in fifteenth century, ii. 20
 Smaragdus on monastic impostors, i. 129
 Smith, Dr. Richard, on priestly marriage, ii. 119
 Smith, Sir Thomas, on celibacy, ii. 148, *note*
 Smithfield, images burned at, ii. 108
 Socrates, relates story of Paphnutius, i. 50; on observance of celibacy, i. 91
 Soissons, synod of, in 744, i. 148; Manichæism at, in 1114, i. 244
 Solicitation, by priests, ii. 251-96; cases of, to be tried by Inquisition, ii. 257-8; evasion of rules against, ii. 262, 263; Gregory XV. defines, ii. 264; difficult to induce disclosure of, ii. 270, 281; in Spain, woman excommunicated on refusal to disclose, ii. 271; where woman is tempter, ii. 277; by priests, wide range of punishments for, ii. 280, 281; means disability for saying Mass, ii. 281; self-denunciation for, ii. 282; punishment

- for, disproportionate, ii. 287; sentence for, read with closed doors, ii. 287; punishment for, varies for regulars and seculars, ii. 287-8; guilty Jesuits quietly sent away, ii. 261; Labata, Marcen, and López imprisoned for, ii. 261; case of Fray Vicente González, ii. 269; case of Maestro Diego de Agumanes, ii. 269; suspicion of heresy implied in, ii. 280; Dr. Augustin Velda, rector La Sallana, accused of, ii. 282, *note*; Dr. Joseph Soriano of Vinaroz accused of, ii. 287; Fray Thomas Maldonado, light sentence for, ii. 289; Fray Miguel Martin de Eugenio, severer sentence for, ii. 289; Padre Antonio Escobar, S.J., reprimanded for, ii. 290; Padre Vilarde, S.J., implicated in, ii. 290; Bernardo de Amor guilty of, ii. 290; Felipe Garcia Pacheco leniently treated for, ii. 290; Dr. Pedro Luceta, foul case of, ii. 290; Gerónimo González of Requeijo, case of, ii. 291; Fray Antonio de la Portería y Vela, case of, ii. 291; Fray Nicholas de Madrid denounces himself for, ii. 291; Fernando de Valdés, case of, ii. 292; Fray Manuel Pablo Herraiz, case of, ii. 293; Padre Fray Francisco Gómez Somoerto, case of, ii. 293; in modern times, ii. 350; case of, in 1898, ii. 353-4
- Somerset, Protector, and the Protestants, ii. 116
- Sons of priests (*see* Children)
- Sorbonne, the, condemns Jean d'Huillier, i. 477, *note*; condemns Jean Laillier, ii. 29; descends to no argument with Melanchthon, ii. 71; condemns commentaries by Lefèvre d'Étaples, ii. 150; pronounces on solicitation in confessional, ii. 270-1
- Soriano, Dr. Joseph, accused of solicitation and suborning, ii. 287
- Sormitz, escape of nuns from, ii. 51
- Southampton, Earl of, ii. 116
- Sozomen relates story of Paphnutius, i. 50
- Spain, Inquisition in (*see* Inquisition); celibacy, enforced in, by Siricius, i. 72; disregarded in, i. 64; continual efforts for celibacy in, i. 83; morals of, in fifth century, i. 84; monasticism in seventh century, i. 128; celibacy in Arian Church of, i. 135; reforms in, attempted by Catholicism, i. 135; concubines, position in, i. 231, *note*; enforcement of celibacy in, i. 369; priestly marriage universal in, i. 370; delay in abrogating priestly marriage in, i. 373; immorality of clergy in, i. 377; military orders in, i. 453; demoralisation in fifteenth century, ii. 17; Ximenes and Franciscans of, ii. 21; morals of, in sixteenth century, ii. 175, 176; concubinage of ecclesiastics in, 236
- Spain, colonial Church of, ii. 245; abuse of confessional in, ii. 257; solicitation systematically practised in, ii. 294; civil marriage agitated in, ii. 331; denounced by clergy in, ii. 331
- Spalatin and priestly marriages, ii. 46, 47, *note*; letter from Luther to, upon nuns, ii. 53
- Spaldwick, vicar of, scandal caused by, ii. 134, *note*
- Spanish colonies (*see* Colonies)
- Spelman believes in orders of married and unmarried monks, i. 201
- Spifame, Bishop of Nevers, married, ii. 152, *note*
- Spiridon, Bishop of Cyprus, married, ii. 42
- Spiti, number of lamas in, i. 103
- Straddha, i. 7
- Standards of morality, i. 324, 431
- Stapleton, admiring biographer of More, ii. 80, *note*
- Stephen IX., Pope, installed, i. 225; forces Damiani to become Bishop of Ostia; i. 225; suffering Milanese clergy apply to, i. 250
- Stephen of England, turbulent reign of, i. 342; siege of Devizes, i. 341
- Sterckx, Archbishop, Mechlin, admonished by Helsen, ii. 346
- Stoer, Stephan, pastor of Liestal, on marriage, ii. 46, *note*
- Stokesley, Bishop of London, condemns Thomas Patmore, ii. 104; on suppression of monasteries, ii. 92
- Strappado in Inquisition, ii. 284
- Strassburg, popular protection of married priests in, ii. 48; synods of, in 1548 and 1549, ii. 190
- Stromata, third book, by Clement of Alexandria, i. 20, *note*
- Strype, account of Henry VIII. and Carthusians, ii. 85-6; on career of Dr. London, ii. 97, *note*; on Henry VIII. and priestly marriage, ii. 104, *note*; Cranmer's second marriage, ii. 114, *note*; Dr. Richard Smith, ii. 119, *note*; clergy, ii. 122; dispensations for marriage, ii. 209, *note*; exhumation, Peter Martyr's wife, ii. 132, *note*; married clergy of London, ii. 139; married clergy and Queen Elizabeth, ii. 141, *note*; Sir John Bourne and Dr. Sandys, ii. 148, *note*
- Sturmius, Balthazar, marriage of, ii. 45
- Sub-deacons, allowed to marry, i. 28; forbidden to marry, in 530, i. 92; to separate from wives, i. 138; marriage of, forbidden, in 952, i. 171; removed when married from benefices, i. 289, *note*; celibacy of, in Dalmatia, i. 299;

- marriage of, in Hungary, i. 299; canons suspended for, in Austria, i. 300; celibacy of, in Denmark, i. 303; rules for, in England, i. 332; exceptions for, in favour of immorality, i. 395
- Sub-deacon Bossaert of Flanders, hard case of, i. 398-9
- Sachuen, abuse of confessional in, ii. 275
- Suczinsky, Dean, marries Baroness Gatzwaska and joins Old Catholics, ii. 329
- Suffolk, Duke of, suppresses insurrection, ii. 94
- Suger of St. Denis imprisons Eon de l'Etoile, i. 466
- Suidger of Bamberg, afterwards Clement III., i. 214
- Sulpicius Severus, St., owner of slave, Vigilantius, i. 70; inclined to favour reforms of Vigilantius, i. 72
- Sulpitius of Bourges, i. 132, *note*
- "Sum of Scripture, The," ii. 103, *note*
- Suppression, of monasteries, in Germany, ii. 53, 63-4, 335; in England, ii. 83-4, 99; means adopted for, ii. 97; of monasteries not carried out in Austria, ii. 335; of monasteries in France, ii. 335; in Spain, ii. 336; in Italy, ii. 337; in Paraguay, Brazil, and Mexico, ii. 338; in New Granada, Venezuela, and Ecuador, ii. 339
- Susani, Marquardo de, work of, upholding celibacy, ii. 217, *note*
- Suzor of Tours, pastoral on priestly marriage, ii. 314
- Swabia, enforcement of celibacy in, i. 277
- Sweden, enforcement of celibacy in, i. 302; Englishmen, as bishops in, i. 338; case of English bishop in, i. 338
- Swithun, St., openly married, dispensation from Leo III., i. 190
- Switzerland, recognised system of priestly concubinage, i. 440; movement in, by Zwingli, ii. 45; immorality of priests in sixteenth century, ii. 57; case of priest's wife disowned in, ii. 325; Old Catholic movement in, ii. 329
- Syllabus of 1864 on dissolution of marriage, i. 390, *note*
- Symmachus, Pope, prohibits marriage of nuns, i. 123; on confessors and penitents, ii. 252
- Synesius, Bishop of Ptolemais, case of, i. 90
- Synodicon in Gallia Reformata, Quick, ii. 151
- Szamland, Bishop of, ii. 63
- TAAS, nominal reconciliation of Hussites of, i. 477, *note*
- Taborites, i. 479; no chance for, in England, ii. 78
- Tacitus on morals of Germans, i. 131
- Taillard resists priestly marriage in Prussian Poland, i. 16
- Talassium of Angers on celibacy, i. 82
- Talesperianus of Lucca, charter of, i. 143
- Tallemant des Réaux, ii. 242
- Talleyrand secularises Church property, ii. 307; marries, ii. 317
- Talmadge, "Letters from Florence," ii. 324, *note*
- Talon, Omer, on marriage of apostates, ii. 154, *note*
- Tapas, virtue of, i. 7
- Tarragona, Council of, in 1336, i. 381
- Tatianus, heresy of, i. 20
- Taxes of the penitentiary, i. 411, ii. 55, 175
- Tedaldo, Archbishop of Milan, i. 259; leader of disaffected bishops, i. 259
- Templars, military Order of, i. 451; accusations against, i. 453
- Temporalities of Church endangered by marriage, i. 61, ii. 23
- Tenure of chastity, benefices held by, i. 176
- Terbinthus, i. 34, *note*
- Terouane, marriage of priests in, i. 326
- Terror, position of priest under Reign of, ii. 308; persecution of celibacy under Reign of, ii. 311; number of priestly marriages under Reign of, ii. 313
- Tertullian, opposed to second marriages, i. 24, 25; on perpetual virginity of Virgin, i. 67, *note*; on merits of widows and virgins, i. 104, *note*
- Test, marriage, of civil supremacy, ii. 311
- Tetradius, St., rule of, i. 125
- Tetzel, Luther on, ii. 40
- Teutonic Knights, Order of, i. 457; Baron of Heydeck, of, ii. 62; tribes, virtue of, i. 86
- Theodore à Niem, on John XXIII., i. 427, *note*; on Scandinavian bishops, ii. 2
- Theodore of Canterbury, Penitential of, on marriage, i. 39, *note*
- Theodore of Verdun opposes policy of Gregory VII., i. 277-8
- Theodore Studita, St., on monastic morals, i. 121
- Theodoric Vrie on Teutonic clergy, ii. 3
- Theodosius the Great, edict of, against Manichæans, i. 34; orders monks to remain in desert, i. 119; repeals order, i. 119; prohibits shaving of nuns, i. 114, *note*
- Theodotus of Corvey, success of, i. 269, *note*
- Theodulf of Orleans on incest, i. 156
- Theodwin and Albert (Cardinals) at Avanches, i. 394, *note*
- Theophilus of Alexandria, rigour of, i. 434, *note*

- Theophylact on *unius uxoris vir*, i. 27, *note*
- Therapeutæ, i. 10, *note*
- Thessalonica, celibacy enforced in, i. 91
- Thibaut of Etampes on children of priests, i. 335
- Thirty Years' War, the, ii. 237
- Thomas Aquinas, St. (*see* Aquinas)
- Thomas à Becket, on simony, i. 345; Henry II. absolved at Avranches for murder of, i. 394
- Thomas of Cantinpré, legend related by, i. 436
- Thomas of Walden on Wickliffe, i. 474
- Tibet, number of monks in, i. 103
- Tibullus on purity required for sacrifice, i. 42, *note*
- Tiers-Etat supreme in National Assembly, ii. 307
- Tithes seized by laity, i. 310
- Toledo, first Council of, i. 115; in 398, ii. 252; forbids familiarity between virgins and confessors, ii. 252; Council of, in 400, i. 76; in 531, i. 84, *note*; in 589, i. 84, *note*; in 597 and 633, i. 84, *note*; in 653, i. 84, *note*; in 675, i. 84, *note*; Archbishop Caranza of, on immorality, ii. 255; Archbishop Siliceo of, first reference to box used in confessional, ii. 255; tribunal of deprives Bernardo de Amor, ii. 290
- Toribio, St., of Peru, ii. 247; on corruption of clergy, ii. 247, 249
- Torné of Bourges publicly married, ii. 310
- Tortosa, Council of, in 1429, i. 384
- Toulouse, Manichæism at, in 1018, i. 245; Council of, in 1056, i. 306
- Tournon, Cardinal Archbishop, ii. 173
- Tours, Council of, in 460, i. 83, *note*; in 567, i. 134; in 925, i. 167; in 1060, i. 232, 306; in 1096, i. 317, *note*; in 1163, i. 394; in 1583, ii. 240
- Trani, married Bishop of, deposed, i. 232; nearly all priests in, with families, ii. 15
- Treason, English abbots attainted of, ii. 97
- Treglia, Andrea, case of, settles question of priestly marriage for Naples, ii. 333
- Tréguier, residence of priests' relatives forbidden in, i. 410
- Trent, Council of, ii. 171-220; expectations regarding, ii. 72; authorises dispensations for married priests, ii. 74; abuses laid before, by Sebastian of Portugal, ii. 175; Lutheran heresy regarded as due to priestly immorality, ii. 178; sessions of, often interrupted, ii. 182; proposals on priestly marriage, ii. 199; three electors unite in appeals to, ii. 201; diplomacy prevents serious debate on celibacy, ii. 202; discussion at, on power of Pope to dispense, ii. 203; canons on matrimony, ii. 204, 207; failure of reforms of, ii. 211; canons not received in France, ii. 222, *note*; enforcement of canons of, in Utrecht, ii. 230; on confessor conscious of mortal sin, ii. 245; on age for ordination, ii. 304; on gift of chastity, ii. 255, 340
- Trent, Council, Congregation of the, ii. 350
- Trèves, persecution of married clergy in, i. 279; morals of clergy in twelfth century, i. 296; Archbishop of, and immoral priests, ii. 187; effort for clerical marriage in, ii. 325; synod of, in 1548, ii. 187, *note*; in 1549, ii. 188, *note*
- Triologus, Wickliffe, i. 475
- Tribur, Assembly of, in 1076, i. 283
- Tridentine canons, ii. 153, 232
- Trimarchi on a reserved bull, ii. 296
- Trinidad and Merced, Orders of, i. 383
- Trithemius, Abbot, describes Benedictine monastery, ii. 89
- Tropea, sister of Pier-Leone, i. 424
- Trosley, Council of, in 909, i. 160, *note*
- Troyes, synod of, in 1107, i. 292; 1128, i. 451
- Trugillo, Cristóbal, guilty priest, quietly sent away, ii. 261
- Tsadukim (Sadducees) opposed to theory of future life, i. 8
- Tudeschi, Nicholas (Panormitanus), advocates priestly marriage, ii. 26
- Turin, Council of, i. 77
- Turner, John, penance of, for marriage, ii. 128
- Tyndale, "The Obedience of a Cristen Man," ii. 103, *note*
- ULLOA, Don Antonio de, ii. 249
- Ulric, St., of Augsburg addresses Pope on celibacy, i. 171; first subject of papal canonisation, i. 172, *note*
- Ulric, Duke of Bohemia, makes St. Procopius abbot of Zagow, i. 210
- Ulric, abbot of Tegernsee, testifies to polygamy by priests, i. 211
- Ultramontaniam, ii. 234, 329; triumphant over Gallicanism and Jansenism, ii. 363
- Umbilicarii, i. 8, *note*
- Umiliati, struggle with St. Charles Borromeo, ii. 228; Order of, broken up, ii. 228
- Unchastity, punishment of, for monks and nuns, i. 147; forgiveness for, in false decretals, i. 154-5; punished as homicide, i. 196
- United States, "Old Catholic" movement in, ii. 330; no legal impediment in, to priestly marriage, ii. 334; report of Italian committee of American Episcopal Church, ii. 348, *note*

- University fellows, celibacy of, ii. 143
- Urban II., on sacraments of sinful priests, i. 229, *note*; creates Conrad king of Lombardy, i. 260; reconciles Milanese clergy, i. 261, *note*; holds Council of Piacenza, i. 261; publishes decree against married priests, i. 289; reduces wives of priests to slavery, i. 289; appealed to by Flemish priests, i. 314; and the Crusades, i. 316; decretal of, in 1090, i. 385
- Urban III. enforces celibacy in Dalmatia, i. 299
- Urban VIII., on abuse of confessional, ii. 256; issues encyclical on abuse of confessional, ii. 270
- Urbino, Council of, in 1569, ii. 230
- Urgel, Council of, in 1286, on priestly immorality, i. 380; in 1364, threatens excommunication to disobedient priests, i. 381
- Urraca, Queen, i. 375
- Useria, supposed wife of Eriberto of Milan, i. 245, *note*
- Utopia, Sir Thomas More, ii. 80, *note*
- Utraquists (Calixtins) of Bohemia, i. 480
- Utrecht, condition of nunneries in, fourteenth century, i. 422, *note*; reception of Council of Trent in, ii. 230; Assembly of, in 1076, i. 277-8; synod of, in 1568, ii. 230
- VAGABOND monks, i. 112, 121-2, 128
- Vagabondage, Act to punish, ii. 94
- Valdafia, Fray Juan de, case of, ii. 254
- Valdelamar, Alonso de, case of, ii. 254
- Valdés, Inquisitor-General, Archbishop of Seville, ii. 178; receives bull of Paul IV. on solicitation, ii. 258
- Valdés, Fernando de, many cases of solicitation, ii. 292
- Valencia, Council of, in 1255, i. 379; in 1565, orders use of confessional box in confessions, ii. 255
- Valens, persecution by, i. 108, *note*
- Valentinian (Emperor) punishes immoral ecclesiastics, i. 60
- Valentinus originates mystic libertinism of Gnostics, i. 20
- Valesians, sect of, i. 29
- Vallis Dei, rigid asceticism of a monk of, i. 448
- Vallombrosa, monks of, i. 213
- Vanaprasthas, class of, invented by Brahminism, i. 7
- Varahran I. persecutes Manichæism, i. 33
- Vargas, reports apprehensions to Philip II., ii. 200, 202, *note*; Philip's rigorous policy executed by means of, ii. 214
- Vatican, number of women in, ii. 344; resolved to rule or to ruin, ii. 329; Council in 1870, ii. 328; dogma of papal infallibility at Council of, ii. 328
- Vedas, doctrine of the, respecting Tapas, i. 7
- Veil, taking of the, a marriage with Christ, i. 114
- Velda, Dr. Augustin, of La Sallana, accused of solicitation, ii. 282, *note*
- Venality of officials, i. 337, 346, 357, 384, 397, 406, 411, 421, 429, ii. 12, 19, 61
- Venantius of Syracuse, i. 127, *note*
- Venezuela, suppression of monasteries in, ii. 339
- Venice, relaxation of canons in, i. 241; number of priests in, ii. 306
- Ventimiglia, nuncio, negotiates with Maximilian II., ii. 212
- Vercelli, troubles of married priests in, i. 174
- Verdun, reform of monks in, i. 318; Bishop of, at Council of Trent, ii. 204
- Veringen, case of Count and Countess of, i. 280-1
- Verneuil, synod of, in 755, i. 151
- Vernon, Council of, in 845, i. 158
- Verona, reforming Bishop of, ii. 254
- Verses, satirical, on clergy, i. 351-2
- Vertfeuil, extent of heresy in, i. 464
- Vestal virgins, i. 43
- Victor II., attempts to reform, i. 224; enforces celibacy in France, i. 306
- Victor III. on Italian Church, i. 210
- Vienna, Council of, in 1267, i. 300
- Vienne, Council of, in 1060, i. 232; in 1312, i. 470; Charles de Marillac of, on coelestiasical discipline, ii. 238
- Vigilantius, slave of St. Sulpicius Severus, i. 70; sent to St. Paulinus and St. Jerome, i. 71; leaves St. Jerome and denounces celibacy, i. 71; spread of doctrines of, i. 72; abandoned by St. Sulpicius and St. Exuperius, i. 73
- Vihara, Buddhist monastery, i. 101
- Villiers, Abbé, defends celibacy, ii. 299
- Villiers de l'Isle, Adam, i. 457
- Virginity, extravagantly praised by orthodox fathers, i. 36; compared with marriage, i. 37, 38; laudation of, by St. John Chrysostom, i. 90; exhortations on, i. 105, *note*; Bede and Aldhelm uphold, i. 187; praised by Damiani, i. 240; homily of thirteenth century on, i. 431; extolled by Laurentius Gallus, i. 434, *note*; Luther writes on, ii. 40; Dr. Sandys of Worcester on, ii. 148; Panzini praises, though opposes enforced celibacy, ii. 327
- Virgins, priests to marry no women but, i. 27; some reformers regard as only wives for priests, ii. 53
- Visconti, nuncio, correspondence on Trent Council, ii. 203
- Visitation, of monasteries by Archbishop Morton, ii. 16; of religious houses in Tuscany, ii. 303

- Vitalis of Mortain preaches reform, i. 311
- Vitry, Jacques de, case of, ii. 14-15
- Vitus, St., monks of, thought themselves free to marry, i. 127
- Vladislas II., Diet held by, ii. 19; on clerical immorality, ii. 19
- Vows of chastity, when introduced, were voluntary, i. 30; barely tolerated in early Church, i. 40; at first temporary in character, i. 1, 105; gradually regarded as permanent, i. 115; treated by Gregory the Great as irrevocable, i. 127; ordered for sub-deacons, i. 138; infanticide one result of, i. 156; more potent than sacrament of marriage, i. 386, 396; of military orders, i. 451; Luther on, "De Votis Monasticus," ii. 44; minimum age for taking, ii. 302; declared void in France in 1790, ii. 307; release from impossible under civil marriage law, ii. 334
- Vrie, Theodoric, denounces Teutonic clergy, ii. 3
- WAHU, Dr., tabulated list by, of clerical prosecutions, ii. 360; on prosecution of teachers, in monastic schools, ii. 361
- Wake, Archbishop, correspondence of, with Dupin, ii. 298, *note*
- Waldemar I. of Denmark, i. 301
- Waldemar II. on concubines, i. 231, *note*
- Walden, marriage of abbot of, ii. 105
- Waldenses, i. 460
- Waldeck, Count of, treatment of, by Church, ii. 64
- Wales, celibacy in early Church of, i. 188; state of Church in ninth century, i. 198-9; priestly marriage in thirteenth century, i. 347; persistence of priestly marriage in, i. 359
- Walter of Orleans on residence of female relations with priests, i. 157, *note*
- Warham, Archbishop, visitation of, ii. 81
- Warsaw, synod of, ii. 209, *note*
- Wartburg, Luther's enforced seclusion in, ii. 42
- Watten, priory of, i. 313
- Wedlock (*see* Marriage)
- Weiss Berg, battle of, in 1620, i. 481
- Wenceslas (King) of Bohemia, reforms by, i. 479
- Wendt, the Rev., heavy sentence for immorality, ii. 360, *note*
- Wergild for son of a bishop, i. 186; for priest in Saxon England, i. 201, *note*; for priest in Northern Germany, i. 416
- West, first General Council of the, in 1123, i. 385
- Western monachism, i. 121, 124
- Westminster, Council of, in 1127, i. 340: in 1138, i. 341
- Westmoreland, Earl of, insurrection of, in 1569, ii. 148
- Weston, Dr., tells a married priest Queen Mary is not to be "censed" by him, ii. 123
- Wetzer und Welte, ii. 336, *note*
- Wexford, immoral priests of, i. 364-5
- Whitby, synod of, in 664, i. 185, *note*
- Wiburn, Percival, on wives of clergy, ii. 147
- Wicelius (George Witzel) embraces Lutheranism, ii. 210
- Wickliffe, on sacraments of sinful priests, i. 230, *note*, 460; reforming zeal of, i. 473; views on celibacy a disputed point, i. 474
- Widows, priests forbidden to marry, i. 27; order of, in primitive Church, i. 103; compared with virgins, i. 37; vows of chastity taken for shameful reasons by, i. 142-3
- Wied, Hermann von, attempts at reform by, ii. 176-7; embraces Lutheranism, ii. 177, *note*
- Wilfreda, St., i. 193
- Wilhelm, Archduke of Austria, i. 458
- William of Bavaria on Church corruptions, ii., 190
- William of Canterbury, letter from St. Anselm, i. 332
- William of Cantilupe enforces celibacy, i. 351
- William of Cologne forbids marriage of monks, i. 422, *note*
- William of Hilderness, i. 470
- William of Malmesbury on the Anglo-Saxon Church, i. 205, *note*
- William of Newburgh on Eon de l'Etoile, i. 466, *note*
- William of Orange on Council of Trent, ii. 231, *note*
- William of Paderborn fails to reform, i. 422
- William of St. Sabina, legate to Spain, i. 380
- William of Strassburg excommunicates married priests, ii. 48
- William the Conqueror, enforces celibacy in Normandy, i. 308; permits marriage in Brittany, i. 311; neglects reform in England, i. 328
- William the Lion, on concubines, i. 231, *note*; persecutes the clergy, i. 368
- Willibrod, St., asceticism and holy life of, i. 142
- Winchester, reform of monastery at, i. 195; Council of, in 1070, i. 329; in 1076, i. 330
- Windsor, synod of, in 1070, i. 329

- Wine of eucharist, in early Church, i. 35 ; abstinence from, not recommended, i. 40
- "Wine and women," Father Müller on, ii. 341, *note*
- Wishart, George, tried for heresy, ii. 166
- Wisigoths, laws of, on Church property, i. 137
- Wisigoths of Spain, immorality of Church of, i. 135
- Witgar of Mendlesham, i. 343
- Witnesses, ordeal for, i. 159-60 ; married priests not admitted as, i. 359
- Wittenberg, Luther nails his ninety-five propositions to church door, ii. 39 ; burns books of canon law at, ii. 41 ; monastery doors thrown open at, ii. 44
- Witzel, George, twice changes religion, ii. 210
- Wives of clerics, adulterous, to be put away, i. 27 ; rated below maidens, i. 38 ; forbidden at Council of Elvira, i. 43 ; not forbidden at Council of Nicæa, i. 46-7 ; forbidden by Damasus, i. 63 ; forbidden by Siricius, i. 63-4 ; forbidden in Gaul and Spain, i. 76-7 ; permitted in Eastern Church, i. 91, 94 ; through the fourth century, i. 48, 53, 59, 82 ; wives of bishops, retention of, i. 90 ; to be separated, i. 95 ; wives of clerics, custom in Russia regarding, i. 97-8 ; under the Franks, i. 132-3 ; in Gothic Spain, i. 135 ; to be treated, as sisters, i. 139-140 ; cause depreciation of property, i. 167 ; in Anglo-Saxon times, i. 203-4 ; fidelity of, i. 238 ; sufferings of, i. 280 ; reduced to slavery, i. 289 ; seizure of, threatened, i. 314 ; treatment of in England, i. 332, 337, 350 ; assist at altar in Germany, i. 392 ; liable to death under Six Articles, ii. 112 ; position of, in Elizabethan Church, ii. 145-6 ; assumed to be serving women, ii. 145 ; vilified at synod of Osnabruck, ii. 233 ; churching not allowed for, ii. 315
- Wolf, Christian, on Paphnutius, i. 52
- Wolfgang, Fabricius Capito, ii. 43 ; marriage of, ii. 48
- Wolfgang of Ratisbon, St., inculcates chastity, i. 175
- Wolf hunts, priests obliged to join, i. 370
- Wolsey, Cardinal, no ascetic, ii. 81 ; founds Cardinal's College (now Christ Church), Oxford, ii. 82 ; co-legate for Queen Katharine's divorce, ii. 83 ; fall of, ii. 84
- Women, intimacy with, forbidden to pagan priesthood, i. 42 ; not allowed in temple of Hercules, i. 42 ; not prohibited from serving in churches, i. 56 ; residence of, with priests forbidden in Greek Church, i. 97 ; not to enter chamber of bishop unaccompanied, i. 133 ; Cuthbert of Canterbury opposes pilgrimages of, i. 189 ; residence of, with clerical relatives forbidden, i. 410 ; not allowed in Cistercian monasteries, ii. 23 ; church struck by lightning after attendance of, ii. 23, *note* ; denouncing priests for solicitation (*see* Solicitation)
- Wood, T., on position of Anglican clergy, ii. 149, *note*
- Worcester, reformation of monks in, i. 195 ; Sir John Bourne's complaint of chapter of, ii. 142
- Worms, Diet of, in 1076, i. 278
- Wright, political songs of England, i. 343, *note*
- Wriothlesley, Chancellor, ii. 116
- Wurzburg, Bishop of, seizes John of Niklaushausen, ii. 24 ; synod of, in 1548, ii. 190 ; Bishop Melchior of, ii. 190, *note* ; wilful ignorance of canons in, ii. 232
- Wu-Tsung destroys Buddhist monasteries, i. 102
- Wyatt's rebellion suppressed, ii. 124
- Wynname, Dean, disputes with Knox, ii. 167
- XIMENES reforms Franciscans, ii. 21
- YOGA system, severity of, i. 7
- York, Wolsey attempts reformation in diocese of, ii. 81 ; claim of, on Scottish Church, i. 185 ; Council of, in 1195, i. 350, *note* ; Archbishop of, and the Six Articles, ii. 111
- Ypres, abuse of confessional, in 1768, ii. 275
- Yves of Chartres (*see* Ivo)
- ZABARELLA, Cardinal, advocates priestly marriage, ii. 25
- Zabolos, synod of, in 1092, i. 297
- Zaccaria, Abate, suggestions of, on origin of celibacy, i. 15 ; on Nicene canon, i. 49, *note* ; on Gregory of Nazianzum, i. 53-4, *note* ; on dissolution of priestly marriage, i. 394, *note* ; on proceedings at Council of Bologna, ii. 74, *note* ; defence of celibacy, ii. 299 ; Storia Polemica del Celibato Sacro, ii. 299 ; Nuova Giustificazione del Celibato Sacro, ii. 301
- Zachary, Pope, advice of, respecting Milo, i. 145 ; addresses epistle to Franks, i. 148 ; writes to Carloman

- and Pepin, i. 149; furthers objects of
 Outhbert of Canterbury, i. 189
- Zago, Zabo, account by, of Coptic Church,
 i. 100
- Zagow: abbey of, foundation of, i. 210
- Zuñiga, Luis de, ii. 214
- Zurich letters, ii. 147, *note*
- Zurich, priests of, defend their women
 i. 422; nuns in, free to leave con-
 vents, ii. 46
- Zwilling, Gabriel, preaches against mon-
 asticism, ii. 44
- Zwingli, Ulrich, demands priestly mar-
 riage, ii. 45; marriage of, ii. 46